“People! We live in a challenging age and a difficult time ...”. This is one of the many statements that still ring true, and it is not surprising that *Nahj al-balāghah (The Way of Eloquence)* has remained one of the most revered Arabic texts among both Sunni and Shi‘i Muslims. These speeches, letters, and sayings attributed to ʿAlī ibn Abī Ṭālib, cousin and son-in-law of the Prophet Muḥammad, one of the key figures in Islamic history and considered an outstanding orator, were compiled around CE 1000. This volume, with Tahera Qutbuddin's splendid scholarly edition and masterly translation, is a major achievement.

– Geert Jan van Gelder, Laudian Professor of Arabic Emeritus, University of Oxford

Translating the sermons and sayings of Imam ʿAli, “the gate to the city of knowledge,” is a momentous task. Dr. Qutbuddin has not only encapsulated the thoughts and ideas of Imam ʿAli accurately, but she has also beautifully preserved the fluency, flow and tempo of *Nahj al-balāghah's* sermons and sayings in English through her selective choice of words and flowing structure. I strongly recommend this translation to the specialist and casual reader alike.

– Syed Muhammad Rizvi, Principal Director, Shiʿa Research Institute, Toronto, and Head, Council of Shiʿa Muslim Scholars of North America

Few works in Arabic contain the depth of wisdom and eloquence found in *Nahj al-Balāghah*, the fourth-century AH collection of the statements of Imam ʿAli b. Abi Talib. My journey with the text—published and lauded by the Egyptian reformer Muhammad Abduh—began more than fifty years ago at the Beirut Religious Seminary where I was required to memorize sections to hone my speaking skills; later, at al-Azhar University in Cairo, my professor Dr. Abd al-Halim Mahmoud made me recite from a sermon for my oral exams. This new edition of *Nahj al-Balāghah*, edited by a scholar of Arabic rhetoric, utilizes the oldest and most reliable manuscripts and includes an erudite and in-depth introduction, ensuring its place as a core reference for scholars and researchers. I congratulate Professor Qutbuddin on this outstanding academic achievement.

– Ridwan al-Sayyid, Dean of the College of Postgraduate Studies and Research, Mohamed Bin Zayed University for Humanities, Abu Dhabi

“Below the speech of the Creator but above the speech of created beings”—this is how commentator Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd (d. ca. 1258) famously described *Nahj al-Balāghah*, recognizing this collection as the pinnacle of eloquence in the Arabic language. Tahera Qutbuddin presents in this volume a painstaking new edition of this monument of Arabic literature, based on the oldest and most reliable manuscripts and thorough consideration of the commentarial tradition. Her brilliant translation is faithful to the original text, precise, and elegant, capturing the force of pithy aphorisms, the cadence of Arabic oratory, and contemplative reflection on the trials and tribulations of human experience, the ethical quandaries of social and political life, and the wonders of the natural world.

– Devin J. Stewart, Samuel Candler Dobbs Professor of Arabic and Middle Eastern Studies, and Chair of the Department of Middle Eastern and South Asian Studies, Emory University
Nahj al-Balāghah
Nahj al-Balāghah

The Wisdom and Eloquence of 'Alī
A Parallel English-Arabic Text

Compiled by
al-Sharīf al-Raḍī (d. 406/1015)

Edited and translated by
Tahera Qutbuddin

BRILL

LEIDEN | BOSTON
Dedicated
with deepest gratitude

to my revered father,
Syedna Khuzaima Qutbuddin,
and to his successor, my revered brother
Syedna Taher Fakhruddin,
Dā'īs of Amīr al-Mu‘minīn and disseminators
of his pure knowledge.
## Contents

Acknowledgments  XI
Abbreviations  XIII

Introduction  1

Note on the Edition and Translation: Manuscripts and Methodology  28

Detailed Contents  56

**TEXT AND TRANSLATION**

*Nahj al-Balāghah: The Eloquence and Wisdom of ʿAlī*

Raḍī’s Introduction  98

1 Orations  106

2 Letters  530

3 Sayings  678
   Section on Rare Words  752
   (cont. Sayings)  760

Raḍī’s Conclusion  824

Glossary of Names, Places, and Terms  827
Appendix of Sources for the Texts of *Nahj al-Balāghah*  863
Bibliography  914
Index of Names and Places  944
Index of Terms  952
Index of Qur’an, Hadith, Poetry, and Proverbs  970
فهرس المفاهيم الدينية والأخلاقية (Index of Religious and Ethical Concepts)  994
Acknowledgments

I first encountered Ali’s wisdom and eloquence in classes I took as a child with my learned father, Syedna Khuzaima Qutbuddin. In early morning “sabaq” sessions in Mumbai, and during community trips to various towns and villages in India and worldwide, my siblings and I would memorize a saying and he would explain its life lessons. ٌّشَهنمؤملا،لقعلاىنغلاىنغأ،ةميركةثاروملعلا،دفنياللامةعانقلا،ٌّشَب، بش، القِناة مال لا ينفَد، and many more. These texts and lessons sparked an enduring passion, and I began academic work with Nahj al-Balāghah at Ain Shams University in Cairo, where I wrote my MA thesis with Professor Ahmad El Naggar on its ethical and historical themes. Then in my first year in Harvard’s PhD program, Professor Roy Mottahedeh showed me a facsimile edition of a 5th/11th-century manuscript owned by the Ma’rashi library in Qum. I wrote, they generously sent me a copy, and that was the beginning of my Nahj al-Balāghah manuscript collection. I also had enriching conversations about the text with my distinguished Doktorvater, Professor Wolfhart Heinrichs, and I contemplated writing my dissertation on Imam Ali’s life and teachings before realizing that I needed to go slowly in approaching such a complex topic. Over the years, I published studies, critical editions, and translations of Ali’s words, including A Treasury of Virtues: Sayings, Sermons, and Teachings of ʿAli, with the One Hundred Proverbs, and I continued to gather manuscripts. Finally in the past decade, I focused on editing and translating Nahj al-Balāghah.

Throughout my journey, the guidance and blessings of my revered father, Syedna Khuzaima Qutbuddin, and his eminent son and successor, Syedna Taher Fakhruddin, have been my source of strength. The prayers showered by my beloved mother, Sakina busaheba, sustained my courage. My dearest husband, Abduz-Zahir Mohyuddin, gave caring support and excellent advice, and Hyder, my darling son, supplied love and technological help. My wonderful and learned Qutbuddin family—especially Syedi Dr Abdeali bhai, Syedi Dr Husain bhai, Dr Aziz bhai, and Dr Bazat-Safiya behena—offered insightful ideas.

In the project’s final stages, numerous scholars provided generous assistance: Professor Devin Stewart gave detailed feedback on the full document, Dr Tynan Kelly spent several hundred hours helping to prepare the Appendix of Sources, my meticulous copy editor Dr Linda S. George waved her magic wand over my prose, and Dr Hasan Ansari shared ideas and manuscripts. Many individuals and institutions facilitated the acquisition of manuscripts from world
libraries, including University of Chicago Librarian Dr Marlis Saleh, Dr Ayse Polat, Professor Robert Gleave, Mr Reza Hemyari, Dr Ali Haider, Professor Bilal Orfali, the Library of Arabic Literature at NYU-Abu Dhabi, and the London Alulbayt Foundation. Dr Mahdi Mojtahedi of the Amir al-Muminin Ali a.s. Specialized Library in Mashhad shared a PDF of Dr Qays Bahjat Attar's edition with his permission, and Mr Muhammed Sabbaghi brought me a physical copy from Iran. Professors Ridwan El Sayyed, James Montgomery, Shawkat Toorawa, and Muhammed Rustom gave constructive advice, Hatim Zakiyuddin saheb shared various Ali-related Tayyibi manuscripts, and my brilliant and enthusiastic Nahj al-Balāghah seminar students at the University of Chicago offered perceptive suggestions. Several colleagues answered queries about the text's dissemination, and I note their contribution in the Introduction's relevant footnotes.

At Brill, senior acquisitions editor Mr Abdurraouf Oueslati steered the project through its various stages with perfect kindness and expertise. I am also grateful to Brill's anonymous reviewer for their positive endorsement, Islamic Translations series editor Professor Ayman Shihadeh and Brill's Middle East acquisition editors for accepting my book, Dr Aisha Moussa who paginated the indexes, Pieter te Velde and Brill's excellent production and marketing teams, and the Shi'a Research Institute of Toronto who enabled free download of the e-book PDF by sponsoring Open Access.

To all who helped with this project, which is so dear to my heart, I offer heartfelt thanks.

جَزَاكُمُ اللهُ خَيْرًا

28 March, 2024
19 Ramadan, 1445
Abbreviations

A (أ)  Sulaymaniye Aya Sofya manuscript
'A  ‘Abduh’s commentary
B  Bahrani’s commentary
Ch (چ)  Chester Beatty manuscript
D (د)  Imam Reza Mashhad manuscript
Elr  Encyclopaedia Iranica
EI²  Encyclopaedia of Islam, 2nd edition
EI³  Encyclopaedia of Islam, 3rd edition
F  Ibn Funduq’s commentary
fol. folio
Gh  Mughniyyah’s commentary
H (ه)  Rampur Raza manuscript
H  Ibn Abi al-Hadid’s commentary
K (ك)  Sulaymaniye Reisulkuttab manuscript 2
L (ل)  Mumtaz ul Ulama Lucknow manuscript
Q (ق)  Iraqi National Museum manuscript
M (م)  Mar’ash manuscript
ms, mss manuscript, manuscripts
N (ن)  Naṣiri manuscript
r  recto
R  Rāwandī’s commentary
S (س)  Sulaymaniye Reisulkuttab manuscript 1
Sh (ش)  Shahrastānī manuscript
T (ت)  Topkapi manuscript
v  verso
Y (ي)  Ya’qūbī Tehran University manuscript
Z (ز)  Maulana Azad Aligarh manuscript
Introduction

“Below the words of the creator and above the words of his creatures”

The eminent Sunni commentator Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd (d. ca. 656/1258) endorsing a common line of praise for ‘Āli’s words.¹

Over fourteen centuries, across five continents, and among many faith denominations, scholars and laypeople alike have drawn on the deep wisdom stored in the eloquent words of ‘Āli ibn Abī Ṭālib (d. 40/661).² Cousin, son-in-law, and ward of the Prophet Muḥammad, ‘Āli was the first male to accept Islam, the first Shi‘i Imam, and the fourth Sunni Caliph. Revered as a sage and religious authority, he is also lauded as Islam’s master orator. ‘Āli’s words—including first and foremost his dazzling orations, as well as his pithy sayings and magisterial letters—span a wide spectrum of preaching, philosophy, and government. They offer profound reflections on the majesty of the creator, fervent warnings on the transience of this world, and urgent exhortations to prepare for the imminent hereafter. They encompass pious sermons counseling virtue, earnest directives to cultivate the intellect, and reverent praise for the Prophet Muḥammad. They animate rousing battle and political speeches, passionately maintaining righteousness. They instruct in strict dispatches to tax-collectors, urging compassion. They inscribe erudite letters to governors, demanding justice. And they contain a host of timeless maxims offering religious, pragmatic, and character-building wisdom. All these themes and more are articulated in

¹ Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd, Sharḥ Nahj al-balāghah, 1:24; the same laudation, with some variation in language, is offered by Rāwandī (d. 573/1177, Shi‘i), Minhāj al-barā‘ah, 1:4: “below the words of God and his Messenger, and above the words of humans” (مالكقوفوهلوسروهللامالكنودرشبلا); and Muḥammad ‘Abduh (d. 1905, Sunni), Sharḥ Nahj al-balāghah, 1:6: “the most noble and eloquent of words after the words of God and the words of his Prophet” (أشرف الكلام وآبلبه بعد كلام الله تعالى وكلام نبيه).
² The attribution to ‘Āli, here and throughout, is to be understood in light of complexities discussed in the next section, “Collection of ‘Āli’s Words: Orality, Authenticity, Written Sources, and Influence on Litterateurs”: viz., many of the texts attributed to ‘Āli are probably genuine remnants, some with modifications, some even verbatim, but interpolations, modifications, and texts of later provenance are also likely to be in the mix. To determine probable authenticity, we must assess individual texts—rather than the compilation as a whole—based on early and wide provenance and compatibility with the literary and historical milieu of ‘Āli’s time.

Accolades for 'Ali's words and wisdom would fill volumes, but suffice it to say that friend and foe alike have paid them homage: 'Ali's follower Ḍirār ibn Ḍamrah (fl. 1st/7th c.), for example, declared that "wisdom spoke upon his tongue." The chancery head of the intensely anti-'Alid Umayyads, 'Abd al-Ḥamīd al-Kātib (d. 132/750), who is venerated as the father of Arabic prose, credited his training in the art of eloquence to "memorizing the orations of 'Ali." The ultimate tribute is paid in the lines I have cited in the epigraph above, in which 'Ali's words are extolled as being "below the words of the creator and above the words of his creatures."

*Nahj al-Balāghah* is the most celebrated compilation of 'Ali's words, and one of the most influential texts of the Arabic Islamic literary heritage. Widely acclaimed as a masterpiece of Arabic literature and font of Islamic wisdom, it has been avidly cited, studied, commented on, and memorized across the Islamic world continually for more than a thousand years. In this volume, I present a critical Arabic edition based on the earliest extant manuscripts, dating from the 5th/11th through the 7th/13th centuries, three of which were checked against a manuscript authorized by Raḍī himself, side-by-side with my carefully researched English translation. For the translation, I took a long, deep dive into the text, along with a careful reading of its major commentaries and a collation of the history and literature of the early Islamic period; all the while, I paid close attention to the graphic imagery that underpins the Arabic phrases and the parallelism of their pithy cadences. My hope is to have produced an accurate edition and a lucid translation that captures some of the depth and brilliance of the original.

---


An appreciation of ʿAlī’s renown is essential for understanding the resounding reception of his compiled words, just as his biography is essential to contextualizing their doctrinal and political content. Since ʿAlī’s words collected in the present volume directly speak to events in his life, a sketch of the main episodes and actors of his time will help the reader situate their consequence, and a summary of his legacy will help explain their dissemination.

ʿAlī ibn Abī Ṭālib ibn ʿAbd al-Muṭṭalib ibn ʿAbd al-Muṭṭalib ibn Hāshim was born around 600 AD in Mecca, according to some reports, inside the Holy Kaaba, to the Hāshimite chieftain Abū Ṭālib and the Hāshimite noblewoman Fāṭimah bint Asad. When he was just an infant, his older cousin Muḥammad, an orphan whom ʿAlī’s parents had raised, asked for his charge, and ʿAlī grew up in the care of the future Prophet of Islam. ʿAlī was approximately ten years old when Muḥammad began his call to the new religion, and he immediately accepted Islam. He prayed for two years alone with Muḥammad and Muḥammad’s wife Khadijah before others joined the fold. Around twenty-three at the time of Muḥammad’s migration to Medina, ʿAlī played a vital role in establishing Islam in its nascent stage. His valor in the battles of Badr, Uḥud, Khaybar, and Khandaq against the Meccans and their allies would become legendary, as would his sagacity and erudition. Both Sunni and Shiʿi Muslims recount numerous hadiths from the Prophet praising ʿAlī, among the most famous of which are the following: “I am the city of knowledge and ʿAlī is its gateway”; “ʿAlī is to me as Aaron was to Moses”; and “You, ʿAlī, are my brother in this world and the next.”

Soon after Muḥammad settled in Medina, ʿAlī married Muḥammad’s youngest daughter, Fāṭimah al-Zahrāʾ, and had four children with her: Ḥasan, Ḥusayn, Zaynab, and Umm Kulthūm. Muḥammad’s line continued solely through them, and the line through Ḥusayn would become an important locus for the Shiʿi doctrine of the imamate. According to the Shiʿa, Muḥammad appointed ʿAlī as his successor on 18th Dhū al-Ḥijjah in the year 10/632, at the caravan stop of Ghadīr Khumm, enroute from Mecca to Medina after his last pilgrimage, uttering the

---


famous line, “Whoever takes me as his master, ‘Alī is his master.” The Sunnis also narrate this hadith, and they interpret the declaration as praise for ‘Alī’s high station, rather than a designation of succession.

Muḥammad died a few months later, in 11/632, and ‘Alī led the burial preparations. Though upholding his right to the succession, he ceded command to the first three Sunni caliphs, Abū Bakr, ‘Umar, and ‘Uthmān. For the next twenty-five years, which saw the consolidation of the Muslim polity in the Arabian Peninsula and its expansion into Syria, Egypt, Iraq, and Iran, ‘Alī retreated from direct involvement in governing. The history books recount that he spent those years collecting and collating the texts of the Qur’an and teaching Ḥasan and Ḥusayn.

In 35/656 in Medina, a group of irate Muslims assassinated ‘Uthmān, accusing him of nepotism; in the turbulent aftermath and after repeated solicitations, ‘Alī accepted the caliphal pledge of allegiance from the Muslim community in Medina and across most of the Islamic empire. He ruled until 40/661, when he, too, was assassinated. Most of ‘Alī’s recorded sermons, letters, and sayings are woven into the political and military fabric of those four difficult years. They articulate morality and conviction and champion justice and charity.

As caliph, ‘Alī was forced to fight three groups of Muslims who rebelled against his strict ideas of equity and equality: the first two were armies brought against him by prominent individuals, who, in furtherance of their political ambitions, falsely accused him of complicity in ‘Uthmān’s murder; the third were rebels from his own army.

‘Alī fought the first pitched battle of his caliphate just outside Basra, in Iraq, in 36/656, four months after he was proclaimed caliph. His challengers were the Prophet’s widow ʿĀʾishah and the Quraysh Emigrants Ṭalḥah and Zubayr. Famed as the Battle of the Camel, it was named for the animal ʿĀʾishah rode onto the battlefield, serving as a metaphor for its rider. The so-called ‘associates

of the Camel” were recruited mostly among the Basrans, while ‘Alī was supported by many from neighboring Kufa, a few groups from Basra, and several distinguished Emigrants and Allies, close Companions of the Prophet who had accompanied ‘Alī from Medina. The battle ended swiftly in a clear victory for ‘Ali. Tālḥah and Zubayr were killed, ‘Ā’ishah was sent back to Medina, and their erstwhile supporters pledged allegiance to ‘Alī.

‘Alī stayed on in Iraq, with Kufa becoming his de facto capital, pressed to deal with the other grave challenger on the horizon, the Umayyad governor of Damascus, Mu‘āwiyah. Mu‘āwiyah was ‘Uthmān’s cousin, and son of one of Muḥammad’s chief enemies, Abū Sufyān, many of whose pagan family members ‘Alī had slain on the battlefield; he refused to accept ‘Alī as caliph. ‘Alī sent his associate Jarīr—earlier ‘Uthmān’s governor in Hamadhān—to Damascus to convince Mu‘āwiyah to pledge allegiance. Mu‘āwiyah responded with a call to arms. In 37/657, the two clashed at the Battle of Ṣiffīn, on the banks of the Euphrates at the border of Iraq and Syria. Mu‘āwiyah was supported by his Umayyad clan and many tribesmen from Syria. His main advisor was ‘Amr ibn al-‘Āṣ, commander of the Muslim army that had conquered Egypt three decades earlier, recalled by ‘Umar on charges of corruption. ‘Alī’s army consisted of several Companions of the Prophet from Medina, and many tribesmen from Iraq. ‘Alī challenged Mu‘āwiyah to a duel, but Mu‘āwiyah, aware of ‘Alī’s reputation as an intrepid warrior, refused. Battle commenced and continued for ten days. ‘Alī himself—then around sixty years of age—took up the sword. Tens of thousands were killed. Then, as the tide slowly turned in ‘Alī’s favor, Mu‘āwiyah’s army famously raised pages of the Qurʾan on spears as an appeal for arbitration. ‘Alī initially rejected the suggestion as a ruse. Ironically, many of his own Iraqi commanders insisted he accept, and he gave in, stipulating that the arbitrators must rule according to the Qurʾan. ‘Alī then attempted to appoint his cousin, the learned ‘Abdallāh ibn al-‘Abbās as arbitrator, but he was overruled, and, again ironically, his commanders insisted that he appoint the dismissed governor of Kufa, Abū Mūsā al-Ash‘arī, who, in the lead-up to the Battle of the Camel, had publicly directed them not to support ‘Alī. Mu‘āwiyah appointed ‘Amr. The two arbitrators met a few months later at Dūmat al-Jandal, in southern Syria. Their judgment—which, given their back-stories, was to be expected—had cataclysmic consequences: Abū Mūsā ruled against ‘Alī. ‘Amr ruled for Mu‘āwiyah. The Syrians rejoiced. The Iraqis were thrown into disarray.

The rumblings of Iraqi dissatisfaction crescendoed in the renegade movement of the so-called Kharijites, “Seceders.” Under the leadership of ‘Abdallāh ibn Wahb, four thousand men “seceded” from Kufa and ‘Alī’s following. With the rallying cry, “No rule but God’s!” they took up arms against him. ‘Alī fought them at the Battle of Nahrawān in 38/658, on the banks of the Tigris River in
Iraq. A thousand Kharijites were persuaded to leave the battlefield before the fighting began, a few took flight during the battle, four hundred wounded were pardoned, and the rest, including their leader, were killed.

Having dealt with the immediate danger, ‘Ali attempted to resume the fight against Mu‘āwiyah. But the Iraqi tribesmen were tired, and ‘Ali spent his final months urging them to mobilize. Meanwhile, Mu‘āwiyah was gaining ground. He took over Egypt, where his ally ‘Amr ibn al-‘Āṣ tortured and killed ‘Ali’s ward and governor, Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr. Mu‘āwiyah also reportedly poisoned Mālik al-Ashtar, one of ‘Ali’s staunchest supporters, who had been enroute to Egypt to take over the governorship from Muḥammad. From Damascus, Mu‘āwiyah sent raid after raid against the cities of Arabia and even to the heart of Iraq.

‘Ali was praying in the Grand Mosque in Kufa at dawn on 19th Ramaḍān 40/661, when the Kharijite agent Ibn Muljam (or Ibn Muljim) struck him a deathblow. He lived for two more days, during which he counselled his followers to piety and appointed his son Ḥasan as his successor. He died on 21st Ramaḍān, at sixty-one years of age.

‘Ali is a familiar figure in medieval Islamic histories. Chronicles refer to him frequently in their accounts of the Prophet’s mission, the reigns of Abū Bakr, ‘Umar, and ‘Uthmān, and his own caliphate. Biographical works usually include a long entry on ‘Ali, with chapters on his acceptance of Islam, his excellent character, the praise for him expressed by the Prophet, his juridical decisions, physical appearance, garments, seal and armor, marriages and children, death, eulogies composed in his memory, and his sermons and sayings. Several monographs recount his battles, notably The Battle of Ṣiffīn (Waqʿat Ṣiffīn) by the early author Naṣr ibn Muzāḥim al-Minqārī (d. 202/818). Martyrologies of ‘Ali are also many, second in number only to those written about his son Ḥusayn, the martyr of Karbala; fourteen are listed by the Shi‘i bibliographer Āghā Buzurg al-Tihrānī (d. 1970), including the lost martyrology of the early author Abū Mikhnafa (d. 157/773). Numerous medieval works are devoted to cataloging ‘Ali’s merits, including works by well-known Sunni hadith scholars: Nasā‘ī (d. 303/915), Book of Virtues: The Excellence of ‘Ali ibn Abī Ṭālib (Kitāb al-Khaṣā‘īṣ fī fadl ‘Ali ibn Abī Ṭālib), Ibn al-Maghāzīlī (d. 483/1090), Qualities of ‘Ali ibn Abī Ṭālib (Manāqib ‘Ali ibn Abī Ṭālib), Ṣibṭ Ibn al-Jawzī (d. 654/1256), Reminder for the Elite (Tadhkirat al-khawāṣṣ), and numerous others. ‘Ali also figures prominently in devotional poetry composed through the centuries by Shi‘i as well as Sunni poets.

Although events of ‘Ali’s life are portrayed in similar fashion by most historians, he is perceived differently by different denominations. For Sunnis, ‘Ali is a pious and austere man, a close Companion of the Prophet, and the fourth...
Rightly Guided caliph of Islam. His knowledge of Islamic doctrine and law, his love for Islam and his closeness to the Prophet Muḥammad, his heroic role in the early battles of the Muslims, and his principled and pious rule are all applauded. *Tafḍīlī* Sunnis (“Upholders of ‘Alī’s Superiority”), who also revere the first three caliphs, believe that ‘Alī was the most excellent individual after the Prophet. For Sufi mystics, many of whom are *Tafḍīlī* Sunnis, ‘Alī is the first link after the Prophet in the chain of mystic masters, and they regularly quote his ethical and doctrinal statements in manuals of spiritual guidance. For the Shi’a, ‘Alī is the spiritual and temporal successor of the Prophet, the infallible Imam, divinely guided and able to perform miracles. His descendants are believed to inherit this role, and allegiance to them is considered necessary for salvation. The Shi’a—short for *Shi‘at ‘Alī*, or “followers of ‘Alī”—have branched out into several denominations, based on the line of succession they accept as legitimate. The majority in the present time are the Twelver Shi’a—to whom our compiler, Raḍī, belonged—and they form the bulk of the population in Iran, Iraq, and Lebanon. The Fatimid-Ismāʿīlī Shi’a ruled a large part of the Islamic empire from the 10th to the 12th centuries AD with their seat in Cairo and are now located primarily in South Asia, in the two main denominations, Tayyibis and Nizāris. The Zaydi Shi’a—earlier also a large presence in the region of the Caspian Sea—are concentrated today in Yemen. Some smaller branches, such as the Nuṣayrī denomination, proclaim ‘Alī’s divinity. Such groups are often termed Exaggerators (*Ghulāt*) in Islamic doctrinal works.

Muslims know ‘Alī by several titles that signify his preeminent stature. He is hailed by Shi’a and Sunnis as “God’s lion” (Arabic: *Asad Allāh*, Persian/Urdu: *Shēr-ē Khudā*), and “Ḥaydar” or “Ḥaydarah” a king among lions, stemming from his proverbial prowess in battle. He is petitioned as “Dispeller of hardships” (Persian/Urdu: *Mushkil kushā*). He is praised as “Murtaḍā,” the one with whom God is pleased. He is lauded as the “Waṣī,” the Prophet’s legatee. And he is referenced as the “Imām,” an authoritative religious leader. The Shi’a also revere him as “Ṣāqi-ye Kawthar” (Cupbearer of the Pool of Kawthar in Paradise), “Ṣīd-dīq” (Greatest Supporter of the Prophet), “Mawlā” (Master, a reference to the aforementioned Ghadir Khumm hadith, “Whoever takes me as his master, ‘Alī is his master”), and “Amīr al-mu‘minīn” (Commander of the Faithful). This last is the most used of his titles in Shi’a circles; Sunnis apply the title to all Muslim caliphs, including ‘Alī.

‘Alī’s shrine in the city of Najaf, in southern Iraq, is visited annually by hundreds of thousands of pilgrims. His caliphate is upheld as a model for just rule, and his words and teachings are revered as repositories of inspired wisdom. ‘Alī had declared to his associate Kumayl, “Those who hoard wealth are dead even
as they live, whereas the learned remain as long as the world remains—their persons may be lost, but their teachings live on in the hearts of men” (§ 3.133). ‘Ali’s legacy lives on in the hearts of men.

2 Collection of ‘Ali’s Words: Orality, Authenticity, Written Sources, and Influence on Litterateurs

‘Ali lived in a world where the principal mode of production, transmission, and collection of words was oral. In his time, written Arabic texts were rare. Although ‘Ali himself served as one of the Prophet’s scribes in Medina and wrote down Qur’anic passages as they were revealed, written transcription by him and his few lettered compatriots was carried out with rudimentary instruments and limited to important documents. Most verbal materials from the early period were initially related and preserved for a century or more chiefly by means of oral transmission, until, after paper was introduced from China in the early 2nd/8th century, writing burgeoned and they were systematically transcribed in books.

It is fair to ask the question: Are ‘Ali’s words as transcribed in the present volume genuine? The short answer is that substantial portions could be authentic, some in gist, and some—especially those with striking images and rhythmic lines—verbatim. ‘Ali was one of the most revered personages of early Islam, his eloquence was proverbial, and during the four years of his caliphate, he preached long and frequently to large, public audiences, and so it is likely that many recorded materials attributed to him are genuine. Moreover, given the consistent attribution to ‘Ali of certain Qur’an-based themes and nature-oriented images, and given their compatibility with the historical and literary ambience of the time, it is likely that they represent a true picture of his teachings.

The longer, technical back-story to that assessment—based on detailed research grounded in empirical data and orality theory in my recent book, *Arabic Oration: Art and Function*—is as follows: It is true that the extended period of oral transmission for early Arabic verbal materials meant that many inaccuracies entered the written corpus. It is also true that there were many drivers to false ascriptions, as well as instances of rhetorical “improvements.” Nevertheless, there is clear evidence for the existence of a genuine core of texts. As

---


10 For example, the earliest manuscripts M, Sh, N, and H render the last sentence of or-
scholars of orality theory have established, formal verbal productions of oral communities are rooted in “mnemonics”—i.e., memory aid techniques, such as intense rhythm and graphic imagery. In addition to producing beautiful language, these constitute a physiological aid to memorization. Neuroscientists explain memory formation through the propensity of the brain to organize information in patterns. The process is called “neuronal entrainment.” Children today learn the ABCs, for example, through a melody. Imagine trying to memorize a random list of letters without that jingle! Rhythm is present even in writing societies. In an oral society, it is a primary characteristic. Like the Qurʾan, like orations and sayings by other leaders from this period, ‘Alī’s words were rhythmic and visual. These rhetorical features—combined with the attested powerful memories of oral societies—ensured that many orations and sayings were captured. ‘Alī’s family and close associates were the first narrators. Early transmitters narrated materials partly in substance and partly verbatim. This hybrid mode fell somewhere between the meaning-based transmission of historical reports and the near-literal transmission of the Qurʾan and poetry.\textsuperscript{11}

Moreover, as Gregor Schoeler has convincingly demonstrated,\textsuperscript{12} oral circulation in this society was increasingly supplemented by scholarly notetaking. Four reservations expressed by modern authors—e.g. Aḥmad Amīn, Fajr al-Islām, 1:148–149; and Ṣafāʾ Khulūṣī, The Authenticity of Nahj al-Balagha, 31–35—apply to a handful of Nahj al-balāghah texts, which, they say: contain (1) later philosophical terms such as “the where” (al-ayn) and “eternal-ness” (al-azaliyyah); (2) detailed descriptions, unusual for the period, of animals like the ant and the peacock; and (3) prophecies about future events, such as the Zanj rebellion. Also, (4) some sermons are long and would be difficult to memorize on the fly. The possibility of later provenance for some of these texts, or at least of modifications, remains high. As a caveat to the caveats, though, it is also possible that technical terms were inserted into original texts, and shorter pieces were later stitched together into lengthier scripts. And it could be argued that the prophecies are cryptically worded and plausible, and that copious descriptions of animals are also found in pre- and early Islamic poetry. As in all compilations of early Islamic materials, some parts are likely genuine, while others may be later additions or modifications. As mentioned earlier, we must examine individual pieces, rather than the compilation as a whole, to determine probable authenticity.

\textsuperscript{11} Four reservations expressed by modern authors—e.g. Aḥmad Amīn, Fajr al-Islām, 1:148–149; and Ṣafāʾ Khulūṣī, The Authenticity of Nahj al-Balagha, 31–35—apply to a handful of Nahj al-balāghah texts, which, they say: contain (1) later philosophical terms such as “the where” (al-ayn) and “eternal-ness” (al-azaliyyah); (2) detailed descriptions, unusual for the period, of animals like the ant and the peacock; and (3) prophecies about future events, such as the Zanj rebellion. Also, (4) some sermons are long and would be difficult to memorize on the fly. The possibility of later provenance for some of these texts, or at least of modifications, remains high. As a caveat to the caveats, though, it is also possible that technical terms were inserted into original texts, and shorter pieces were later stitched together into lengthier scripts. And it could be argued that the prophecies are cryptically worded and plausible, and that copious descriptions of animals are also found in pre- and early Islamic poetry. As in all compilations of early Islamic materials, some parts are likely genuine, while others may be later additions or modifications. As mentioned earlier, we must examine individual pieces, rather than the compilation as a whole, to determine probable authenticity.

\textsuperscript{12} Schoeler (Genesis of Literature, 71–72, 77–78) discusses the composition of Ibn Isḥāq’s Maghāzī as a teaching collection of notes. He also discusses an earlier work with the same name by ‘Urwah ibn Zubayr as a hypomnema notebook, collected by his students and used as a teaching aid (ibid., 17).
ing. Over the century following 'Alī's death of primarily oral transmission, we see a steady increase of concurrent written transcription. Like the Prophet's hadith, a fraction of 'Alī's words was probably transcribed during his lifetime or immediately afterward; we are told of a written collection titled Khuṭab Amīr al-Muʾminin 'ālā l-manābir fī l-juma' wa-l-aʾyād wa-ghayrihā (Orations of the Commander of the Faithful upon the Pulpit on Fridays, Eids, and Other Occasions) by Zayd ibn Wahb al-Juhanī (d. 96/715), who fought in 'Alī's army at Ṣiffin and Nahrawān.13

Through the following centuries, 'Alī's words were recorded in books by major historians, litterateurs, and compilers.14 From the late 2nd/8th and early 3rd/9th centuries, Kufan scholars—including Abū Mikhnaf Lūṭ ibn Yahyā (d. 157/773), Ibrāhīm ibn Ḥakam al-Fazārī (d. 177/793), Maṣʿadah ibn Ṣadaqah al-ʿAbdī (d. 183/799), and Ibn al-Kalbi (d. 206/820)—produced dedicated compilations of 'Alī's words; this is as one would expect, given the presence of 'Alī and his most loyal followers in Kufa. Scholars from Baghdad—including Wāqidī (d. 207/823), Minqarī (d. 212/827), and Madāʾinī (d. 224/829)—also compiled 'Alī's words. All these works have been lost. The last three scholars, however, include many of 'Alī's texts in their extant histories, as do other 3rd/9th- and 4th/10th-century historians from far-flung parts of the Muslim empire with disparate denominational affiliations: Ibn Hishām (d. 218/833, after Ibn Ishāq, d. 151/768), Ibn Saʿd (d. 230/845), Balādhurī (d. 279/892), Abū Ishāq al-Thaqafī of Isfahān (d. 283/896), Yaʿqūbī (d. 284/897), Ṭabarī (d. 310/923), Ibn Aʾtham (d. 314/926), al-Qāḍī al-Nuʿmān (d. 363/974), and many more. The above–mentioned Juhanī, who served in 'Alī's army, is the chief source for Abū Mikhnaf's lost work on 'Alī's battles, which is cited in turn by Ṭabarī in his celebrated History. Literary anthologists, including Jāḥiẓ (d. 255/868), Ibn Qutaybah (d. 276/889), Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih of Spain (d. 328/940), Maṣʿūdī (d. 345/956), and Ibn Shuʿbah of Ḥarrān (fl. 4th/10th c.), also include large numbers of 'Alī's orations, and many praise them profusely. Jāḥiẓ is said—though this attribution is uncertain—to have produced a concise compilation of 'Alī's maxims titled Miʾat kalimah (Hundred Proverbs), that I have edited and translated.15 Jāḥiẓ also quoted 'Alī abundantly in his accepted works and praised him as the archetypal paradigm of eloquence. Early Muʿtazilī thinkers such as Iṣkāfī (d. 240/854) record 'Alī's orations on the unity of God. Chancery-manual

13 Ţūsī, Fihrist, 130, after Minqarī (d. 212/827), on the authority of Abū Mikhnaf (d. 157/773).
14 See detailed list in ’Abd al-Zahrāʾ, Maṣādir, 1:454–486.
authors such as the Egyptian Naḥḥās (d. 338/950) present whole chapters on ‘Alī’s orations as part of the scribe’s curriculum. Twelver Shi‘i jurists such as Kulaynī (d. 329/941) and Ibn Bābawayh (d. 381/991) include numerous citations of ‘Alī’s words in their works. The Shāfi‘ī–Ash‘arī scholar Māmaṭīrī (d. ca. 360/971) compiled a large volume of ‘Alī’s words and interactions.

In the 4th/10th, 5th/11th, and 6th/12th centuries, major independent collections of ‘Alī’s words were compiled and are still extant. The earliest surviving compilation is the Kitāb al-Tawḥīd (The Book of God’s Unity), compiled by the aforementioned Fatimid-Ismā‘īlī Shi‘i scholar al-Qāḍī al-Nu‘mān (d. 363/974), which contains two long sermons on God’s oneness, titled The Pearl (Durrah) and The Unique Sermon (Waḥīdah), with Nu‘mān’s commentary. Next is the present volume, compiled by Raḍī in 400/1010, Nahj al-Balāghah (The Way of Eloquence). Then came Dustūr ma‘ālim al-ḥikam (A Compendium of Signposts of Wisdom) by al-Qaḍī al-Quḍā‘ī (d. 454/1062), which I have edited and translated; Quḍā‘ī’s main source appears to have been Māmaṭīrī’s Nuzhat al-abṣār. Subsequent compilations were dedicated to ‘Alī’s aphorisms: Nathr al-la‘ālī (Scattered Pearls) by Ṭabarisi (d. 548/1153), and Ghurar al-ḥikam (Radiant Maxims) by Āmidī (d. 550/1155). Kaydārī (d. after 576/1180), who also wrote a commentary on Nahj al-Balāghah, collected ‘Alī’s verse into a Dīwān titled Anwār al-‘uqūl (Lights for Intellects). Of less certain provenance, an anonymously compiled book of supplications titled al-Ṣaḥīfah al-ʿAlawiyyah (ʿAlī’s Parchments) is also attributed to ‘Alī, as is a short compilation of Prophetic hadith titled Ǧaḥīfat ʿAlī ibn Abī Ṭālib (Scrolls of ‘Alī ibn Abī Ṭālib). Additionally, Twelver Shi‘is regularly recite a supplication ‘Alī is said to have taught his devotee Kumayl, known by the latter’s name as Du‘ā’ Kumayl (The Kumayl Supplication). Finally, Fatimid Ṭayyibīs believe that ‘Alī composed Kitāb al-ʿIlm (The Book of Knowledge), which he bequeathed to his sons Ḥasan and Ḥusayn, and which is now with the Imam in seclusion.

In the emergent Islamic civilization, ‘Alī’s words influenced major litterateurs and scholars of Islam across denominational boundaries. Among early orators, ‘Alī’s words were favorite sources—memorized, alluded to, or quoted in full. Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd compares ‘Alī’s influence on orators to the influence of the preeminent pre-Islamic poet Imru’ al-Qays on poets. The pro-Umayyad ascetic preacher of Basra al-Ḥasan al- Баş ī (d. 110/728) was guided by ‘Alī’s pious themes and language, as was the Syrian preacher Ibn Nubātah al-Khaṭīb

(d. 374/985), who had memorized a large number of ‘Ali’s orations. Among scribes, ‘Ali’s words were equally effective. I have mentioned ‘Abd al-Ḥamīd’s acknowledgment that he had “learned eloquence by memorizing the orations of ‘Ali,” and Naḥḥās’s allocation of four chapters of the Eloquence section in his chancery-manual to ‘Ali’s words. Tributes were also paid by early prose writers who recorded ‘Ali’s words and praised them, and I have mentioned some of these litterateurs earlier. Mas‘ūdī, who recorded many of ‘Ali’s texts, noted that scholars in his time had memorized more than 480 of ‘Ali’s speeches, which they frequently quoted. ‘Ali’s orations had special resonance among those who held to the theological school of the Muʿtazilah, to whom Raḍī and several of his compilation’s commentators belonged, and among whom Iskāfī was mentioned as having recorded ‘Ali’s texts. These rationalist scholars acknowledged their debt to ‘Ali on the fundamental subject of God’s unity. And ‘Ali’s influence was not limited to prose. Numerous wisdom-verses by the poet-prodigy Mutanabbī (d. 354/955)—who, it should be noted, grew up, as did ‘Abd al-Ḥamīd al-Kātib, in ‘Ali’s capital, Kufa—are distilled from ‘Ali’s words.

3 Al-Sharīf al-Raḍī (d. 406/1015): Career and Works

Best known as compiler of Nahj al-Balāghah, al-Sharīf Abū al-Ḥasan Muḥammad ibn al-Ḥusayn al-Ḡūrī al-Raḍī—in short, al-Sharīf al-Raḍī, or simply Raḍī—was an eminent Twelver Shiʿi Muʿtazilī thinker, a prominent political personage in the Abbasid-Būyid realm, and one of the most notable scholars of his time. He was born in 359/970 in Baghdad and was a lifelong resident of this city. His family was descended from the Prophet Muhammad and ‘Ali, his grandfather being the great-grandson of Imam Jaʿfar al-Ṣādiq, and Raḍī was thus closely connected with the Shiʿī imamate. His father had held the post of Chief of the Prophet’s Descendants (Naqīb al-ashrāf) in Baghdad; Raḍī was appointed aide to his father at the young age of twenty, and after him as Naqīb for the entire Abbasid realm. His extraordinary standing is illustrated by the

---

18 For ʿAlī’s words, see Mourad, Early Islam between Myth and History, 85. For Ibn Nubātah, see Ibn Taghrībirdī, al-Nujūm al-zāhirah, 4350.
20 Mas‘ūdī, Murūj al-dhahab, 3172.
fact that he was given this high appointment ahead of his elder brother, al-
Sharīf al-Murtaḍā, also a distinguished scholar, who would occupy the post
after Raḍī’s death. Additionally, Raḍī was put in charge of the annual Pilgrimage
to Mecca and appointed Chief Judge over the Court of Petitions.

Raḍī studied various disciplines with famous scholars. His teachers included
the grammarians Sīrāfī (d. 368/979), who died when Raḍī was nine, Fārisī
(d. 377/987), and Ibn Jinnī (d. 392/1001), the aforementioned preacher Ibn
Nubātah al-Fāriqī al-Khaṭīb (d. 374/984), the historian Marzubānī (d. 384/994),
the Twelver Shi‘i hadith scholar Mufīd (d. 413/1022), and the Mu‘tazīlī theolo-
gian al-Qāḍī ʿAbd al-Jabbār (d. 415/1024). His students included the poet Mihyār
al-Daylamī (d. 428/1037).

Raḍī enjoyed the patronage of the Buyid sultan Bahāʾ al-Dawla (r. 379–
403/989–1012), who ruled in the name of the Abbasid caliph al-Qādir (r. 381–
422/991–1031). Toward the end of his life, he had a showdown with Qādir regard-
ing the Prophetic lineage of the rival Fatimid dynasty. Qādir was shown Raḍī’s
verses expressing his wish to live in the Fatimid realm,23 and the caliph insisted
he sign a manifesto denouncing the Fatimid lineage. Raḍī refused, and Qādir
stripped him of his official positions. Most sources report the incident thus
from Raḍī’s colleague, the litterateur Hilāl al-Ṣābī (d. 448/1056), but a later
report states that Raḍī submitted and signed; likely, his name was inserted
after his death to lend credence to the Abbasid claim of legitimacy.24 It is also
reported that Raḍī believed himself worthier of the caliphate than the Abbasids
and was poisoned by them.

Raḍī died in 406/1015 at the relatively young age of forty-seven. Attesting
to his prominence and popularity, his funeral was attended by the grand vizier
Fakhr al-Mulk, as well as judges, scholars, and other state dignitaries, and a large
number of the people of Baghdad. Several elegies were composed in his mem-
ory.

Raḍī was an outstanding poet and scholar with sixteen substantial books to
his name; high praise is recorded for his poetry and his prose from contem-
poraries as well as later scholars. His works include studies of the literary and
grammatical features of the Qur’an and hadith, works of history and biogra-
phy, anthologies of poetry, and glosses on books of jurisprudence and grammar.
Eight works are extant, listed here in chronological order of composition:

1. Dīwān (Collected Poetry), 684 poems in about 10,000 verses, containing
   panegyric for ʿAlī and the family of the Prophet, as well as rulers and

23  Raḍī, Dīwān, 2:120.
24  Jiwa, “The Baghdad Manifesto,” 42–43. Raḍī’s brother Murtaḍā is also reported to have
    signed the document.
viziers, laments for Ḥusayn ibn ‘Alī and for the poet’s family and friends, censure of the age, love, vaunt, and miscellaneous other themes, composed over Raḍī’s lifetime, starting from 369/980, when he was ten years old.

2. *Rasāʾīl* (Letters), literary epistles exchanged with Hilāl al-Ṣābī, in about a thousand folios, of which only a small portion composed between 380/990 and 384/994 is extant.

3. *Khaṣāʾīṣ al-aʾīmmah: Khaṣāʾīṣ Amīr al-muʿminīn* (Qualities of the Imams: Qualities of the Commander of the Faithful), a compendium of ‘Alī’s biography, virtues, and pithy sayings composed in 383/994. In his introduction, Raḍī explains that he planned to record the virtues of the Twelve Imams to refute an Abbasid detractor, but was able to complete only the section on ‘Ali (82 pages in the 1986 Beirut edition). *Nahj al-Balāghah* is an expansion of the “sayings” section of this earlier work.

4. *Nahj al-Balāghah* (The Way of Eloquence), a compilation of orations, letters, and sayings attributed to ‘Ali, composed in 400/1010 (the text of the present volume—more on this work below).

5. *Majāzāt al-Qurʾān* or: *Majāz al-Qurʾān* (Figurative language of the Qur’an), also titled *Talkhīṣ al-bayān fi majāzāt al-Qurʾān* (Summary Exposition of the Qur’an’s Figurative Concepts), composed in 401/1011, extant almost in full, with chapters arranged according to the order of the Surahs.

6. *Maʿānī al-Qurʾān* (Themes of the Qur’an), also titled *Ḥaqāʾiq al-taʾwīl fī mutashābih al-tanzīl* (True Realities of Interpretation Regarding Ambiguous Verses of Revelation), a large multi-volume *tafsīr* work composed in 402/1011, of which only volume 5 (itself 376 pages in the Cairo edition) is extant, also with chapters arranged according to the order of the Surahs.

7. *Al-Majāzāt al-nabawiyyah* (Figurative Language of Prophecy), also titled *Majāzāt al-āthār al-nabawiyyah* (Figurative Language of Prophetic Hadith), composed between 400/1010 and 406/1015, containing literary and theological commentary on 360 hadiths.

8. *Amthāl* (Proverbial Verses), a compilation of unknown date, partially preserved in Ibn al-Zahrā’ī’s (d. 677/1278) abridgment, *Mukhtāṣar Amthāl al-Sharīf al-Raḍī*.

The following eight works are lost:


---


11.  
Al-Ziyādāt fī shīr Ibn al-Ḥajjāj (Additions to Ibn al-Ḥajjāj’s Poems).
12.  
Mukhtār shīr Abī Isḥāq al-Ṣābī (Selections from Abū Isḥāq [Ibrāhīm] al-Ṣābī’s Poems).
13.  
Ta‘līq Khilāf al-fuqahā’ (Annotation of “Jurists’ Disagreements”), perhaps an annotation of the work better known as Ikhtilāf al-fuqahā’ (Jurists’ Differences) by Ṭabarī.
14.  
Ta‘līq fī al-Īḍāḥ li-Abī ʿAlī (Annotation of Abū ʿAlī [al-Fārisī’s] “Elucida-
tion”), on Arabic grammar.
15.  
Sīrat wālidihi al-Ṭāhir (Biography of [Raḍī’s] Father, Ṭāhir).
16.  
Akhbār quḍāt Baghdād (Reports about Baghdad’s Judges).

4  Nahj al-Balāghah: The Wisdom and Eloquence of ‘Ali

The full Arabic title of the present volume is Nahj al-balāghah min kalām Amīr al-mu‘minīn ‘Alī ibn Abī Ṭālib ṣalawāt Allāh ‘alayhi, which translates literally as The Way (or: Well-Trodden Track, or: Clear Course) of Eloquence: Selections from the Words of the Commander of the Faithful ‘Alī ibn Abī Ṭalib, God’s blessings on him. As Raḍī tells us in his Introduction, his main criterion for the selection of texts was eloquence, which is why he chose this title for his compilation. Sure enough, it includes some of the most beautiful and powerful expressions in the Arabic language. Compiled in 400/1010, its fame almost immediately took wing—within a few short decades, Nahj al-Balāghah had become one of the most celebrated texts of the Arabic Islamic heritage.

4.1  Form and Organization

Nahj al-Balāghah is a collection of texts—mostly excerpts, ranging roughly from a few lines to a page or two in most standard editions—divided into three genre-based sections: 232 orations (sing., khūṭbah), 78 letters (sing., risālah or kitāb), and 429 sayings (sing., ḥikmah), the latter containing aphorisms as well as slightly longer sayings. Into these three sections are integrated texts from

27  Numbers vary slightly in different editions, depending on how an editor separates or amalgamates certain pieces. In a few cases, there is a difference of opinion as to the genre of the texts—Raḍī, for example, lists § 30, § 1.212, § 1.215 as orations, whereas some other scholars list them as epistles (for details, see my notes for these texts). Raḍī also sometimes lists parts of a single text in different chapters: for example, he places § 1.147, a text he identifies as ‘Ali’s deathbed testament, under Orations, and what he says is another part of the same text, § 2.23, under Letters. In what is probably a counterintuitive proposition for modern readers, a text could in some cases fall into both categories, oral and written. It could have been first delivered as an oration, then transcribed and disseminated as an
subsidary genres, such as testaments (sing., waṣḥiyah or ‘ahd), supplications (sing., du‘ā’), questions and answers, responses to reports, and counsel to individuals. A subsection in the Sayings section contains nine lines with rare words (gharīb), followed by Raḍī’s explications. The compilation is prefaced with Raḍī’s introduction explaining the stimulus for his undertaking, his method of compiling, and the broad compass and immense value of the contents.

Within each section, the compilation’s sequence is based on the order in which Raḍī happened to find his texts, rather than a methodical consideration of chronology or theme.28 A handful of texts are followed by Raḍī’s comments on their virtuosity. Most texts are prefaced by a phrase that goes something like “From an oration (or: letter, or: words) by him.” A few texts are preceded by a line or two of context, but the circumstances are not systematically noted, in conformity with the practice of most literary anthologists of Raḍī’s time.

4.2 Sources

Also consistent with the practice of other literary anthologists—such as Ibn ‘Abd Rabbih (d. 328/940) and Tha‘ālibī (d. 429/1039), for example—Raḍī does not systematically note the provenance of his texts. However, in the past fifty years or so, scholars including al-Khaṭīb ʿAbd al-Zahrāʾ and Imtiyāz ʿArshī have meticulously listed extant early books in which the compilation’s texts appear, sometimes with full or partial transmission chains (isnād); an updated list is provided as an Appendix of Sources to the present volume. Some of the earlier books could be Raḍī’s actual sources,29 but more work is needed to determine concrete lines of textual transmission. It is likely that Raḍī also sourced from early books and documents that are now lost.

For a handful of texts in Nahj al-Balāghah, Raḍī does furnish the name of a source. For orations, he notes ‘Alī’s associates Nawf al-Bikālī (§ 1.180) and Dhi‘lib al-Yamānī (the latter through Aḥmad ibn Qutaybah, through ‘Abdallāh ibn Mālik ibn Dajnah, § 1.231). For letters, Raḍī mentions Wāqidī’s Kitāb al-Jamal (Book of the Camel, § 2.75), Iskāfī’s Kitāb al-Maqāmāt (Book of Exhortations, § 2.54), Saʿīd ibn Yaḥyā al-Umawī’s (d. 249/863) Maghāzī (Expeditions, from the

Themes may be located using the present volume’s Detailed Contents and Indexes, and through published concordances, including Muḥammad, al-Mu‘jam al-mawḍūʿī li-Nahj al-balāghah; Muḥammad and Dastī, al-Mu‘jam al-mufahras li-alfāẓ Nahj al-balāghah; and Bayḍūn, Taṣnīf Nahj al-balāghah. Chronology—for the texts I was able to situate—is noted in the footnotes to the present volume’s translation.

See a brief list of tentative sources in the introduction to the Appendix of Sources.
author’s father, d. 184/809, after Ibn Isḥāq, § 2.78), and a copy in the hand of Ibn al-Kalbī (§ 2.74). For sayings, he cites ‘Alī’s great-grandson Imam Muḥammad al-Baqir (d. 117/735, § 3.79), Tha’lab (d. 291/904, § 3.405), Abū ‘Ubayd’s (d. 224/838) Gharīb al-ḥadīth (Rare Words from the Hadith, § 3.248), and ‘Alī’s associates, Nawf again (§ 3.95), and Kumayl ibn Ziyād al-Nakha’ī (§ 3.133, § 3.242).

As a result of the early oral transmission of these materials, different sources offer assorted renderings of the same piece, and Raḍī sometimes includes more than one rendering in his compilation; aware of the phenomenon, he mentions it in his Introduction and flags texts that are repeated. Another consequence of the initial oral transmission is that a handful of texts attributed to ‘Ali in one source are attributed elsewhere to others, and Raḍī identifies some of these ascriptions as well.

4.3 Contents: Contemporary History and Islamic Teachings

The contents of Nahj al-Balāghah straddle two broad overlapping areas: contemporary history and Islamic teachings. Given the multipurpose function of oration, themes from each of these two areas intermingle and recur. Historical material in the volume is grounded in the final four-year period of ‘Alī’s life, when he ruled as caliph of the Muslim empire. The texts depict the ethos of ‘Alī’s time. They contain subtleties of event trajectories, particularly ‘Alī’s accession to the caliphate and his battles. They offer nuanced portraits of historical personalities, above all, of ‘Alī himself, but also of influential individuals from his caliphate. They portray his sons, Ḥasan, Ḥusayn, and Muḥammad (ibn al-Ḥanafiyyah), his brother ‘Aqil ibn Abī Ṭālib, his ward Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr, and his cousin ‘Abdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās. They praise staunch followers including Abū Dharr al-Ghifārī, ‘Ammār ibn Yāsir, Mālik al-Ashtar, and al-Ḥārith al-Hamdānī, and refer to various governors, commanders, judges, and tribal chieftains, some of whom he chastised, as he did al-Ash’ath ibn Qays. They describe adversaries, chiefly Muʿāwiyyah and ‘Amr ibn al-ʿĀṣ, but also Ṭalḥah and Zubayr, as well as Muʿāwiyyah’s principal supporters and commanders. They present contextual shades in political and doctrinal positions, including proto-Shiʿi and proto-Sunni stances, as well as the evolution of the Kharijites. As mentioned above, most of the compilation’s texts are from ‘Alī’s caliphate, but several also refer to events and individuals earlier in his life, and they include copious praise for the Prophet Muḥammad and tribute to Muḥammad’s first supporters. A few texts date from ‘Alī’s pre-caliphate years, and these include a eulogy to his wife Fāṭimah, a letter to his close associate Salmān al-Fārisī, and interactions with and about the Sunni caliphs ‘Umar and ‘Uthmān. In addition to actual data,

30 To locate names and themes within the volume, see Detailed Contents and Indexes.
the historical texts portray the personal struggle, bringing into relief the human aspect of ‘Alī’s history and his impression of the events and persons therein.

‘Alī’s teachings, the second large content area of Nahj al-Balāghah, comprise facets of doctrine, philosophy, ethics, counsel, and practical wisdom. Growing up under Muḥammad’s care, ‘Alī was continuously exposed to the Qur’ānic revelation. Permeated by its vocabulary and themes, his words urge worship of the creator, promote awareness of the transience of human life, and highlight the urgent need to prepare for the imminent hereafter.31 Combining piety with virtue, they exhort truth, gratitude, and patience, and extol the benefits of living a modest and temperate life.32 Taking the middle ground between secular humanism and insular faith, they advocate an inseparable blend of individual devotion and dynamic social engagement. Consistently, they highlight the eminence of reason and learning. Numerous texts feature a detailed parsing of God’s transcendent oneness. Many describe the marvels of God’s creation, mostly the heavens, the earth, and the human being, but also, in a couple of texts, the peacock, the bat, and the ant. Several texts laud the stature of the Prophet’s family. Some contain down-to-earth instructions and acute observations of human behavior. Many portray the art of just leadership, predating true justice on compassion, wisdom, integrity, pluralism, and accountability to God.33 They advocate strongly for the socially disadvantaged. They preach kindness to animals. A few contain legal rulings, judgments pronounced by ‘Alī for actual cases. Yet others are supplications: some implore God’s forgiveness and aid, one prays for rain, one at the start of battle beseeches God’s protection and victory, and one, a daily morning prayer, contains thanks and entreaties.34 Three texts of counsel are grounded in specific Qur’ānic verses.35 In sum, the teachings of ‘Alī—a learned philosopher, a pious ascetic, a just leader, a governing caliph, a brave warrior, and an astute commander—bring together disparate elements of the human experience.

31 Qutbuddin, “‘Alī’s Contemplations on this World and the Hereafter in the Context of His Life and Times”; Qutbuddin, “The Sermons of ‘Alī ibn Abī Ṭālib: At the Confluence of the Core Islamic Teachings of the Qur’an and the Oral, Nature-Based Cultural Ethos of Seventh Century Arabia.”
34 Supplications: general (§ 1.222, § 1.224), for rain (§ 1.141), at the start of battle (§ 2.15), daily morning prayer (§ 1.213).
35 § 1.218, § 1.219, § 1.220.
Some longer, thematically focused texts have special names. Five named orations are Ethereal Forms (Ashbāḥ), on the creation of the universe; The Crusher (Qāṣiʿah), which castigates Lucifer and factionalism; The Radiant (Gharrāʾ), which contemplates human mortality and counsels preparation for the imminent hereafter; The Roar of the Camel Stallion (Shiqshiqiyah), on ‘Ali’s right to the caliphate; and The Oration to Hammām: Description of the Pious (Khuṭbat Hammām fī ṣifat al-muttaqīn), which lists the myriad virtues of those who truly deserve the epithet pious. In the Letters section, two long texts are the Testament of Counsel for Hasan (Waṣṣyyat al-Ḥasan), in which ‘Ali cataloged ethical and practical advice for his son, and the Letter of Appointment for Mālik al-Ashtar (ʿAhd al-Ashtar), in which he laid out for Ashtar, whom he was sending to govern Egypt, the moral backbone required for righteous rule. In the Sayings section, two are particularly lengthy and distinct: The Four Pillars of Faith (Daʿāʾim al-īmān) are parsed as patience, conviction, knowledge, and struggle against evil; Knowledge is Better than Wealth (al-ʿIlmu khayrun mina l-māl) is a text of advice to Kumayl al-Nakha’ī.36

4.4 Style: Oral Aesthetics of Rhythm and Imagery
Rhythmically cadenced and stunningly visual, Nahj al-Balāghah reflects ‘Ali’s oral milieu.37 ‘Ali’s orations and sayings, even his written letters, breathe the aesthetic of orality, articulated in mnemonics and metonymy. Mnemonics—memory aid techniques—manifest in intensely rhythmic prose with condensed sentences and balanced parallelisms, and graphic and often startling natural and lifeworld imagery, with extended verbal metaphors and gripping dramatization. Language is grounded in the features and movements of the camel and of other desert animals, lifeworld objects, and cosmic phenomena. Abstract concepts are made immediate and relevant through concrete physical images. Metonymy—evocation by association—manifests in skillful allusion to historical and literary context. Alongside emphatic grammar structures and rhetorical questions, these stylistic devices also served as audience-engagement techniques that invited the audience to participate in the speech act with internal response, and sometimes overt answers, comments, and

36 Ashbāḥ, §1.88; Qāṣiʿah, §1.193; Gharrāʾ, §1.80; Shiqshiqiyah, §1.3; Khuṭbat Hammām, §1.191; Waṣṣyyat al-Ḥasan, §2.31; ‘Ahd al-Ashtar, §2.53; Daʿāʾim al-īmān, §3.26; al-ʿIlmu khayrun mina l-māl, §3.133.

actions. The texts are further characterized by fine-grained, condensed vocabulary and a high, dignified linguistic register.

Eloquence is a crucial component of preaching, and as scholars of literature have argued, it “tacitly persuades.” A brilliant exposition is more effective than a clumsy harangue, and beautiful language more likely to evoke a positive response than a plodding lecture. In combination with Qur’anic validation and rational argumentation, ‘Alī attempted to stir the hearts and minds of his audience with verbal artistry. Moreover, there is a religious flavor, a focus on piety, in all modes of ‘Alī’s speech, undergirding even the material produced in a political or military context. At the same time, his words also have a distinctly local flavor, a cultural texture grounded in desert topography, tribal society, nomadic lifestyle, and the rich poetic tradition of the Arabian Peninsula.

4.5 Commentaries and Response Works

*Nahj al-Balāghah* has generated an extraordinary number of response-works, including commentaries, translations, supplements, and abridgments by Shi‘i, Sunni, and Arab Christian scholars in medieval and modern times, as well as glosses, concordances, works on sources, and thematic essays by present-day scholars. In my rough estimate, the number of serious extant works in this category ranges around 500, many in multiple volumes.

Depending on the cataloger’s range, the number of known commentaries on *Nahj al-Balāghah* lies somewhere between 81 and 210. After the Qur’an, this is perhaps the largest number of commentaries generated by any Arabic work—compared with approximately 40 on Mutanabbi’s *Dīwān*, 70 on Bukhārī’s *Ṣaḥīḥ*, and 20 on Ḥarīrī’s *Maqāmāt*, three of the best-known Arabic Islamic works. Most *Nahj al-Balāghah* commentaries are in Arabic; some are in Persian and other Islamic languages. Most comment on the full compilation; some comment on a specific longer text, and a few of these latter commentaries are in verse.

Some of the best-known full commentaries on *Nahj al-Balāghah* are the following (all in Arabic, except the three noted as Persian):

- Early Twelver Shi‘i commentators include ‘Ali ibn Nāṣir al-Sarakhsī (fl. 6th/12th c.), Quṭb al-Dīn al-Rāwandī (d. 573/1177), Quṭb al-Dīn al-Kaydari (d. after 576/1180), and Ibn Maytham al-Baḥrānī (d. 679/1280).
- Early Sunni commentators include Ibn Funduq al-Bayhaqī (d. 565/1170) from Khurasan, who wrote one of the earliest commentaries, and relied on

---

the lost, and possibly the first, *Nahj al-Balāghah* commentary of Aḥmad ibn Muḥammad al-Wabrī (fl. early 6th/12th c.), from Khwārazm. (Sarakhshī also quotes Wabrī). Prominent Sunni authors whose commentaries are lost include Fakhr al-Dīn al-Rāzī (d. 606/1209) and Saʿd al-Dīn al-Taftāzānī (d. 793/1390).

- Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd al-Muʿtazīlī (d. ca. 656/1258) is the best-known (early Sunni) commentator of all, whose celebrated commentary in 20 volumes itself generated numerous response works. Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd—who also composed Seven Odes in Praise of ʿAlī—writes in his introduction that “the noblest branch of learning is knowledge of God … ʿAlī’s words kindled that fire … the Muʾtazilah … masters of theology, from whom all others learned this skill, are ʿAlī's students and emulators.” He adds that ‘Ali is “leader of the eloquent and lord of the articulate … oratory and epistle-writing began with him.”

- The Yemeni Zaydī Shiʿī Imam al-Muʾayyad bi-llāh Yaḥyā ibn Ḥamzah (d. 749/1348) wrote a commentary in six volumes. He traced his license to teach the compilation back to Raḍī himself, by way of a sequence of licenses granted by Zaydī scholars. Other Zaydī commentators are Fakhr al-Dīn ‘Abdallāh ibn al-Hādī (d. at the end of the 8th/14th c.) and Yahyā ibn Ibrāhīm al-Jahḥāf (d. 1102/1690).

- Safavid-era Twelver Shiʿī Sufi scholars who wrote commentaries include Ilāhī-Ardabīlī (fl. ca. 9th/15th c., Persian), ʿAbd al-Bāqī Danīshmand (d. after 1039/1630), and Niẓām al-Dīn al-Jīlānī (d. 1053/1643).

- Commentaries by modern Egyptian-Sunni-Azharī scholars include the famed introduction-cum-wordlist by the Grand Mufti of Egypt Shaykh Muḥammad ‘Abduh (d. 1905), which was later expanded by Shaykh Ḥusayn al-Marṣafī (d. 1935) and then by Muḥammad Muhṣīr al-Dīn ‘Abd al-Hāmid (d. 1972). In the introduction, ‘Abduh speaks of his first encounter with *Nahj al-Balāghah*, saying, “I felt I was witnessing a radiant intellect … which had detached itself from the divine procession and connected itself to the human soul.” He goes on to declare that memorizing and studying the compilation “are essential to those who seek the precious gems of Arabic and wish to rise in its ranks.”

43 Details of the latter two may be found in Ansari and Schmidtke, “The Literary-Religious Tradition among Seventh/Thirteenth-Century Yemeni Zaydis (11): Appendix II,” 220.
Modern Iranian Twelver Shi'i commentators include Muḥammad Taqī Naqāvī, Muḥammad Taqī al-Tustarī, Nawwāb Lāhijānī (d. ca. 1824), and the Grand Ayatollah Mahmūd Ṭāliqānī, the last two writing in Persian. A modern Lebanese Twelver Shi'i commentator is Muḥammad Jawād Mughniyyah. The commentaries discuss lexical, grammatical, and rhetorical matters, and sometimes provide historical context and transmission history. The longer commentaries include extensive historical, doctrinal, thematic, and literary annotation, as well as further texts attributed to ʿAlī and other historical figures. As we should expect, each commentator interprets ʿAlī's statements, both historical and doctrinal, according to his own denominational approach.

Numerous abridgments of selections from *Nahj al-Balāghah* have been compiled:

- 3 medieval abridgments: Abū al-Saʿādāt al-Isfahānī's (d. 634/1237) published work, *Maṭlaʿ al-ṣabāḥatayn* (Two Suns Rising), transcribes the Sayings section from *Nahj al-Balāghah* alongside the ethical hadith of the Prophet Muḥammad compiled by Quḍāʿī (d. 454/1062) in *Kitāb al-Shihāb* (*Light in the Heavens*, which I have edited and translated). Two further selection volumes are extant in manuscript form: *al-Nafāʾīs* (Precious Words) by Niẓām al-Dīn al-Muṯahhar (fl. 8th/14th c., Sunni), and *al-Ṭarāʾif* (Marvelous Words) by an anonymous author.

- More than 34 modern selections (called *mukhtārāt* or *muntakhabāt*).

*Nahj al-Balāghah* has been translated into more than 15 languages:

- A medieval Persian translation by Fathallāh Kāshānī (d. 988/1580) titled *Tānbīh al-ghāfilīn* (Waking the Heedless) is possibly the oldest translation.

- Numerous modern translations have been published in Persian, many in Urdu and Turkish, and several in other Asian languages, including Kazakh, Armenian, Chinese, and Thai, as well as a number of European languages, including English, French, German, Spanish, Russian, Italian, Romanian, Polish, and Croat. Many translations, including perhaps all the English translations published to-date, have been rendered indirectly, via Persian.

Also, many modern compilations style themselves as supplements (*mustadrakāt*) to *Nahj al-Balāghah*, notably the 8-volume compilation by Muḥammad Bāqir Maḥmūdī.

---

4.6 Dissemination: Manuscripts, Study, Admiration, and Controversy

In addition to the vast number of response works generated in the medieval Middle East by *Nahj al-Balāghah*, its immediate and wide circulation is evident in the hundreds of manuscripts produced in different parts of the Muslim world dating from as early as the 5th/11th century—many in Iraq and Iran, but also across the Islamic lands, from India (in later medieval times) in the East, through Khurasan in Central Asia, through Yemen in the Arabian Peninsula, toward the West to Turkey, Syria, and Egypt.⁴⁹ Of these, many manuscripts were produced in markedly Sunni communities, particularly in Khurasan—such as the manuscript of Yaʿqūb al-Naysābūrī (d. 474/1081), from which our manuscript Y was transcribed—from an early time.⁵⁰ And in the 9th/15th–10th/16th-century (Ḥanāfī Sunni) Ottoman caliphate, compilations of ʿAlī’s words were the centerpiece of the Topkapi Palace library’s oration collection, used, among other things, to teach palace scribes.⁵¹ Another example of the esteem with which Sunni scholars viewed the work is evidenced by the Ottoman scholar and head of the chancery (*Raʾīs al-kuttāb*) Ahmad Efendi Taşköprüzade (d. 968/1561), who systematically cites ʿAlī’s texts from *Nahj al-Balāghah*, alongside Qurʾan and hadith, in his commentary on Ījī’s *Şerhu’l-Ahlaki’l-Adudiyye* (Book of Good Character);⁵² he does not mention the *Nahj al-Balâghah* by name, though we know that he knew the text well—the Sulaymaniye library in Istanbul holds several manuscripts in its “Raʾīs al-kuttāb” collection, with ownership marks, including one with his name inscribed on the flyleaf in his own hand (MS “S” in the present volume; see also MS “K”). *Nahj al-Balâghah* entered China in the 19th and 20th centuries, when Chinese Muslims went to the Middle East and brought back religious texts, as well as Indonesia and Malaysia, where Muḥammad ʿAbduh’s ideas were influential during that period.⁵³ Perhaps with some minor exceptions,⁵⁴ the two regions in the pre-

---

⁴⁹ Ṭabāṭabāʾī lists 172 early manuscripts dating from the 5th/11th through the 12th/18th centuries in worldwide collections. Muttaqī lists 458 manuscripts through the early 14th/20th century. Details in Note on the Edition.

⁵⁰ Ansari, “Tāzah-hā-yi darbāra-yi riwāyat *Nahj al-balāghah*.” For details of our Y manuscript, see Note on the Edition in the present volume.


⁵² Taşköprüzade, *Şerhu’l-Ahlak*, 37, 43, 49, 67, 69, 73, 75, 81, 83, 87, 89, 91, 93, 95, 97. I thank Sarah Aziz for this reference.

⁵³ I thank Sachiko Murata and Wang Xi (Chinese Academy of Social Sciences, Beijing) for the information on China, and Karim Crow and Asna Husin for the information on Malaysia and Indonesia.

⁵⁴ John Morrow notes two citations of ʿAlī’s words—that do not, however, mention *Nahj al-balâghah* specifically—in Aljamiado traditions among Spanish Moriscos (Muslims who
modern Islamic world where *Nahj al-Balāghah* does not appear to have made inroads are Umayyad Spain and Umayyad-influenced (post-Fatimid) North Africa, which were both, for the most part, intensely anti-Shi‘i.\(^{55}\) The dissemination question—which awaits more thorough exploration—is an important one and speaks to many aspects of religious, scholarly, literary, and political life in the premodern and modern Islamic world.

Study of *Nahj al-Balāghah* and admiration for the compilation are pronounced among all branches of the Shi‘a, as well as among Sunnis and Arab Christians, in medieval and modern times. A few quotations by the compilation’s commentators have been cited earlier. The following snapshot of other authors who expressed high regard for the collection, with a few soundbites from their laudations, further underscores the esteem in which *Nahj al-Balāghah* was, and continues to be, held:

- Twelver Shi‘i reverence for *Nahj al-Balāghah* is well documented through the ages. In recent times, Āghā Buzurg al-Tihrānī (d. 1970) writes: “After divine revelation, no book has come into existence more bonded to God’s word than *Nahj al-Balāghah*.\(^{56}\) Among the Ṭayyibi Ismā‘īlī Shi‘a, the compilation is an integral part of the religious curriculum. It is quoted abundantly in sermons and works of history and doctrine, including the works of the Yemeni *Dā‘ī* Sayyidnā Ḥātim Muḥyi al-Dīn (d. 596/1199) and Sayyidnā Idrīs ‘Imād al-Dīn (d. 872/1468), and the Indian *Dā‘ī* Sayyidnā Tāhir Sayf al-Dīn (d. 1665); these authors also pronounce benedictions on Raḍī.\(^{57}\) The latter quotes from *Nahj al-Balāghah* in a full 65 instances in his annual *Rasā‘il Ramaḍānīyyah* (Ramaḍān Treatises); in one instance, he prefaces the quotation with explicit reference to the compilation’s title, saying: “Wisdom spoke on ‘Ali’s tongue, and the *way of eloquence* (*nahj al-balāghah*) became clear through his exposition. Belief and conviction increase whenever a believer

---

\(^{55}\) There seem to be no manuscripts of *Nahj al-balāghah* from these two regions, no mention in scholarly curricula or biographies, and no citations in books. See the text’s absence from Fierro’s 8th–15th c. AD bio-bibliographical database, *History of the Authors and Transmitters of al-Andalus* (hata- https://www.eea.csic.es/red/hata/). Ibn ‘Abd Rabbih however, as mentioned earlier, includes several orations attributed to ‘Ali in his anthology, *al-‘Iqd al-farid*, which is mainly influenced by the Islamic East.

\(^{56}\) Tihrānī, *Dharī‘ah*, 4144.

hears his words.”

Among the Nizārī Ismāʿīli Shiʿa, quotations are found in early works of Khwājah Qāsim Tushtarī (died after 533/1139) and Naṣīr al-Dīn al-Ṭūsī (d. 672/1274). Sayf al-Dīn, *Zubdat al-burhān*, 31. Elsewhere, Sayf al-Dīn says: “Orations and sayings of the Commander of the Faithful ‘Ali ibn Abī Ṭālib are stairways to the True Realities. Their way is the heart-healing ‘Way of Eloquence,’ and their lines are lines of divine light” (*Dabw ghadīr haqq*, 134).


62 Quotes and references in Keizoghani and Nafchi, “The Greatness of *Nahj Al-Balagha* and the Words of Imam Ali from the Perspective of Modern Christian Figures.”


– In the past two centuries, distinguished Sunni Arab writers have continued to pay tribute. The Iraqi Salafi al-Ālūsī (d. 1924) called *Nahj al-Balāghah* “an ember from the fire of God’s speech, and a sun that radiates the Prophet’s eloquence.” The Egyptian Zakī Mubārak (d. 1952) wrote that it “bequeaths manliness, nobility, and loftiness of the soul, hailing from an indomitable spirit who faced danger with a lion’s resolve.” His fellow Egyptian scholar ‘Abbās Maḥmūd al-Aqqād (d. 1954) wrote a book on ‘Ali titled *Abqariyyat al-Imām* (The Genius of the Imām)—assuming everyone would recognize that the quintessential Imam is ‘Alī—in which he declared that ‘Ali’s words in *Nahj al-Balāghah* encompass “divine wisdom.”

– *Nahj al-Balāghah* is also extolled broadly by Arab Christian scholars. They include the Jordanian Rūkus ibn Zāʾid ‘Uzayzī (b. 1903), the Syrian ‘Abd al-Masiḥ Anṭākī (d. 1923), and numerous Lebanese scholars, including Luwīs Maʿlūf (d. 1946), Būlus Salāmah (d. 1979), Amin Nakhlah (d. 1976), Fuʿād Afrām al-Bustānī (d. 1994), and Ḥannā al-Fākhūrī (d. 2011). The Lebanese scholar Nāṣīf al-Yāzijī (d. 1871) declared that anyone who wished to excel in eloquence “should memorize the Qurʾan and *Nahj al-Balāghah*.” Another Lebanese scholar, Jurj Jurdāq (d. 2014), memorized the collection by the age of thirteen, and engaged with it deeply in a five-volume work on ‘Ali that he titled *Imam ʿAlī: Ṣawt al-ʿadālah al-insāniyyah* (Imam ‘Alī: The Voice of Human Justice).
– *Nahj al-Balāghah* also continues to be admired in present-day India, where it forms a regular part of the curriculum in Shi‘i as well as many Sunni madrasas.64

I am not sure why, compared to other compilations of ‘Ali’s words, *Nahj al-Balāghah* has become the target of a certain amount of sectarian controversy.65 It is true that the volume includes the Shiqshiqiyyah oration (§1.3), in which ‘Ali claims his right to Muḥammad’s succession. But Jāḥiẓ, Ṭabarī, Ibn Hishām, and Ibn ‘Abd Rabbih, for example—four famous and respected early Sunni scholars—cite sermons, conversations, and letters by ‘Ali that contain similar themes.66 And large parts of the Shiqshiqiyyah itself are recorded much before Raḍī by the early Sunni-Mu‘tazilite author Abū al-Qāsim al-Balkhī (d. 319/931), and the Sunni-Shāfi‘i-Ash‘arī scholar ‘Alī ibn Mahdī al-Ṭabarī al-Māmaṭīrī (d. ca. 360/971).67 The Testament of Ashtar (§2.53 in the present volume), too, another unfairly maligned text (by, for example, Wadād al-Qāḍī, “An early Fāṭimid political document”), is recorded not only in the Twelver Shi‘i Iraqi narrative tradition by Ibn Shu‘bah al-Ḥarrānī (fl. 4th/10th c.) and Raḍī (d. 406/1015), but also in a distinct Fatimid Ismā‘īlī Shi‘i Egyptian narrative tradition by al-Qāḍī al-Nu‘mān (d. 363/974), and in a yet further and distinct Zaydi Shi‘i Yemeni narrative tradition in an unpublished manuscript in the Ambrosiana library in Milan.68 It appears that it was almost three centuries after Raḍī, when the Damascene historian Ibn Khallikān (d. 681/1282) first raised doubts about the compilation’s authenticity, that it began to be viewed in some quarters as a “Shi‘ī”—code for “seditious”—text. Several pro-Umayyad Damascus authors—including, notably, Ibn Taymiyyah (d. 728/1328)—followed Ibn Khallikān’s lead.69 This limited group of detractors notwithstanding, *Nahj al-Balāghah*...
**Introduction**

*ghah* continues to be memorized, studied, and cited avidly across wide reaches of the Islamic world. This brilliant ecumenical text rightly belongs to the collective heritage of Islam, the communal legacy of Arabic, and the shared inheritance of humanity.

5 **Concluding Remarks**

Of the numerous compilations of ‘Alī’s words, *Nahj al-Balāghah* towers above the rest in its fame. With a winning combination of brilliant prose and deep wisdom, it has enjoyed unprecedented currency through the centuries, being widely read and highly acclaimed throughout the Islamic world. On the one hand, the collection has become a benchmark for high style, the exemplar par excellence for those who would follow the Arabic “way of eloquence.” On the other hand, ‘Alī’s wise teachings have resonated with Muslims throughout the past fourteen centuries, and they continue to hold immense consequence today. As a system of values, they promote a just and compassionate vision of Islam. In strife-torn Muslim-majority lands, they could unify Shi‘īs and Sunnis in their common faith. The divide between Shi‘ism and Sunnism, to put the issue in simplistic terms, is largely based on the perception of ‘Alī’s role as first Imam versus fourth Caliph. His own words and his example can and should be used not to create divisions between groups but to bring people together, to heal. As universal teachings of ethics, moreover, ‘Alī’s words transcend time, place, and affiliation. They embody the best values we all possess. They teach harmonious relations with all humans—for, as ‘Alī reminds us, people are “are either our brothers in faith or our peers in creation.”

Note on the Edition and Translation: Manuscripts and Methodology

The manuscripts and methodology used to prepare the present volume are described in the following pages. My hope is to have produced a highly accurate critical edition and translation of *Nahj al-Balāghah*, based on the earliest and most important extant manuscripts, and on a carefully constructed stemma.

1 Manuscripts

As can be expected for a text of such fame, several hundred manuscripts are extant in collections in the Middle East and worldwide,\(^1\) some dating from the 5th/11th century just decades after Raḍī finished his compilation in 400/1010. To prepare my edition, I have consulted fourteen of the earliest manuscripts, dating from the 5th/11th through the 7th/13th centuries,\(^2\) some examined for the first time in modern scholarship. These manuscripts are valuable not only because of their early provenance, but also because of their eminent genealogies: eight are copied or corrected by renowned scholars, and three even trace their lineage to Raḍī’s own autograph manuscript.

1.1 Summary List of Manuscripts

The following is a summary list of the manuscripts—five primary and nine secondary—consulted for the present edition:


\(^2\) I collected copies of eleven additional early manuscripts dating from the 7th–9th/13th–15th centuries, located in Iranian and Turkish libraries; I eventually decided not to consult them for the present edition, realizing that they would clutter the apparatus without adding anything new. All the manuscripts are relevant, however, to the text’s reception history, which awaits detailed study.

© TAHERA QUTBUDDIN, 2024 | DOI:10.1163/9789004682603_003

This is an open access chapter distributed under the terms of the CC BY-NC-ND 4.0 license.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sigla</th>
<th>Date</th>
<th>Library</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Catalog number</th>
<th>Special Merit</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>M</td>
<td>م 469/1077</td>
<td>Mar'ashi</td>
<td>Qum, Iran</td>
<td>3827</td>
<td>Checked against manuscript read out to Raḍī</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sh</td>
<td>ش 5th/11th c.</td>
<td>Shahrastānī</td>
<td>Baghdad, Iraq</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Perhaps earliest manuscript, 406/1015 or 1016</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>N</td>
<td>ن 494/1101</td>
<td>Naṣīrī</td>
<td>Tehran, Iran</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>Early manuscript</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H</td>
<td>ه 553/1158</td>
<td>Rampur Raza</td>
<td>Rampur, India</td>
<td>1190</td>
<td>Copied from Faḍlallāh al-Rāwandī’s 511/1158 MS, which was checked against Raḍī’s autograph copy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Y</td>
<td>ي 608/1212</td>
<td>Tehran University</td>
<td>Tehran, Iran</td>
<td>1782</td>
<td>Copied from Ya‘qūbī’s 474/1081 MS, which was checked against Raḍī’s autograph copy</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Table 2** Secondary manuscripts

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sigla</th>
<th>Date</th>
<th>Library</th>
<th>Location</th>
<th>Catalog number</th>
<th>Special Merit</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>L</td>
<td>ل 510/1116</td>
<td>Mumtaz ul Ulama</td>
<td>Lucknow, India</td>
<td>—</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Z</td>
<td>ز 538/1144</td>
<td>Maulana Azad, AMU</td>
<td>Aligarh, India</td>
<td>485</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>D</td>
<td>د 544/1149</td>
<td>Imam Reza</td>
<td>Mashhad, Iran</td>
<td>13847</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Q</td>
<td>ق 565/1170</td>
<td>Iraqi National Museum</td>
<td>Baghdad, Iraq</td>
<td>356</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S</td>
<td>س 567/1171</td>
<td>Sulaymaniye</td>
<td>Istanbul, Turkey</td>
<td>REISULKUT-TAB 942</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ch</td>
<td>چ 588/1192</td>
<td>Chester Beatty</td>
<td>Dublin, Ireland</td>
<td>5451</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td>آ 598/1202</td>
<td>Sulaymaniye</td>
<td>Istanbul, Turkey</td>
<td>AYASOFYA 4344</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>T</td>
<td>ت 615/1218</td>
<td>Topkapi Palace</td>
<td>Istanbul, Turkey</td>
<td>Aḥmad III 2556</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>K</td>
<td>ل 684/1285</td>
<td>Sulaymaniye</td>
<td>Istanbul, Turkey</td>
<td>REISULKUT-TAB 943</td>
<td>—</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1.2 The Manuscripts' Contents

The manuscript evidence shows that Raḍī’s original *Nahj al-Balāghah* consists of three main sections of ‘Ali’s words: 232 orations, 78 letters, and 429 sayings, including 9 sayings in a subsection on rare words; some texts are followed by
Raḍī’s brief commentary. The anthology is bookended by Raḍī’s introduction and brief conclusion.

Two ancillary aspects of the manuscripts’ contents are as follows:

**Sequence of Orations**: A set of eight orations—§ 1.183–190—are arranged in two different sequences:

- **Sequence 1** is the one followed in the present edition. It is found in primary manuscripts M and Sh, and secondary manuscripts Z, S, Ch, A, T, and K.
- **Sequence 2** is as follows: Oration § 1.182 is followed by § 1.191–232. Orations § 1.183–190 come after § 1.232, the final oration in Sequence 1; § 190 (*Qāṣiʿah*) is the final oration in Sequence 2. Sequence 2 is found in primary manuscripts N, Y, and H, and secondary manuscripts L, D, and Q.

**Addenda**: A number of manuscripts contain the following post-Raḍī addenda (details are noted in the individual manuscript descriptions that follow this section):

- **Additional texts**: Several manuscripts contain extra texts attributed to ʿAlī—six orations (§ 1.233–238), one letter (§ 2.79), and seventeen sayings (§ 3.430–446)—that are inserted at the end of each of the three sections. The insertions are early, perhaps from Raḍī’s lifetime and perhaps with his approval, but they were not part of his original compilation.³ Other than K and Ch, all manuscripts signal the inserted sayings as additions (*ziyādah*), and earlier scholarship has noted their insertion. Y, H, and L also signal the added orations, and H and L the added letter—in modern scholarship, the present edition is the first to identify their insertion.

- **Supplements**: Some manuscripts contain up to four supplements inserted right after Raḍī’s conclusion (and others contain further ad hoc supplements):
  - Three sets of verses in praise of *Nahj al-Balāghah* by: (1) Abū Yūsuf Yaʿqūb ibn Aḥmad al-Naysābūrī (d. 474/1081, who also penned an important lost manuscript of *Nahj al-Balāghah* consulted by some of our manuscripts); (2) his son Abū Bakr al-Ḥasan ibn Yaʿqūb (d. 517/1123); and (3) the grammarian ʿAlī ibn Aḥmad al-Fanjkurdī (d. 513/1119).
  - Inscriptions of ʿAlī’s signet-rings (*nuqūsh khawātimiḥi*).

- **Marginalia**: All manuscripts contain a larger or smaller number of study notices, marginalia, and stamps of ownership.

³ According to Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd (Ḥ 20:180) and Baḥrānī (B 1029), whose comments are cited at the end of the present edition’s notes. As Raḍī mentions in his conclusion, he left spaces at the end of each of his three sections for himself or others to write in additional texts, and scholars appear to have done so.
I have transcribed the additional texts in the edition and translation notes, but not the supplements or marginalia.

1.3 Primary Manuscripts
For the present edition, I have relied primarily on five precious manuscripts, all probably originating in Iraq and Iran. The first three—M, Sh, and N—are each claimed by specialists, as detailed below, to be the oldest known manuscript of the work. They were transcribed in the 5th/11th century by scholars either contemporaneous to the compiler, Raḍī (d. 406/1015), or a generation or two after him; Sh may even be from as early as 406/1015 or 1016. M is especially valuable because it is said to have been checked against a manuscript corrected by Raḍī, but the other two manuscripts also go back to Raḍī’s original:
of the others making up the five primary manuscript sources, H was transcribed from the early 6th/12th manuscript of the scholar Faḍlallāh al-Rāwandī, and Y from the manuscript of the aforementioned 5th/11th-century scholar-poet Yaʿqūb al-Naysābūrī, both parent manuscripts said to have been copied from Raḍī’s manuscript. In terms of preservation, manuscript Y is complete, while M, Sh, N, and H are nearly complete, missing only the first few folios and a few inner ones.

The following are details of my primary manuscripts, in approximate chronological order:

[M] or [M]: Marʿashī Manuscript: Iranian manuscript dated 469/1077, located in the library of Ayatollah al-Marʿashī, Qum, catalog no. 3827, in two parts, published in a single-volume facsimile edition titled Nahj al-balāghah: Muṣawwaraḥ min nuskhah makhṭūṭah nādirah min al-qarn al-khāmis, edited by Maḥmūd al-Marʿashī (Qum: Maktabat Ayatollah al-Najafī al-Marʿashī, 1406/1986); the full manuscript is available online. The final folio 171v (p. 335 of facsim. ed.) contains a mostly undotted date: (سبع وتسعين) that can be read as “sanata tisʿin [or: sabʿin] wa-sittīna wa-arbaʿi-miʾah (in the year nine [or: seven] and sixty and four hundred).” Afandī (Riyāḍ al-ʿulamāʾ, 49) confirms the 469AH dating.

Part 1—fols. 1r–91v (pp. 1–174 of facsim. ed.)—includes Raḍī’s introduction and orations §1.1 to §1.186. Part 2—fols. 92v–171v (pp. 176–335 of facsim. ed.)—begins with oration §1.187 and goes to the end of the compilation.

Afandī, Riyāḍ al-ʿulamāʾ, 2:87, in his biography of the copyist, Ibn al-Muʿaddib. Afandī adds that Ibn al-Muʿaddib received a license to transmit the text from his teacher, Jaʿfar ibn
Nahj al-Balāghah scholar ‘Abd al-‘Azīz Ṭabāṭabā’ī calls it “one of the oldest and most valuable manuscripts” of Nahj al-Balāghah, “perhaps even the most valuable of them all.”

- The copyist is the well-known scholar Abū ‘Abdallāh al-Ḥasan ibn al-Ḥusayn al-Mu‘addib al-Qummi (d. early 6th/12th c.). Place is not mentioned.
- The manuscript is almost complete in 171 folios, numbered in the facsimile edition in 335 pages. The opening folios (Raḍī’s introduction, orations § 1.1–18), and folio 24r (orations § 1.55–59) are missing, and the facsimile edition inserts folios from later manuscripts to complete the text—in the present edition, I do not consult the inserted folios. The Sayings section is also missing a substantial portion (§ 3.132–355, § 3.429). A few sayings are in a different sequence than in some other manuscripts.
- The manuscript is written in clear Naskh script, though cramped in some places and difficult to read, fully dotted and vocalized. Numerous study notices, corrections, variant readings, and lexical explanations are provided in different hands in the margins.
- The added orations are transcribed without signaling the insertion. The added letter is transcribed by a later hand in the margin without flagging the insertion. The added sayings are not included.
- Oration texts are arranged in Sequence 1.
- Blessings for the Prophet Muhammad are invoked throughout with the formula, “God’s blessings and peace on him and his descendants” (ṣalla llāhu ‘alayhi wa-ālihi). Blessings for ‘Ali are invoked with the formula “peace on him” (‘alayhi al-salām).
- Raḍī’s explanatory remarks are not prefaced by the copyist’s added phrase found in several other manuscripts, viz., “The Sayyid [al-Raḍī] said.”

[ش]: Shahrastānī Manuscript: Early 5th/11th-century manuscript, possibly dated 406/1015 or 1016, located in the private library of Ayatollah Hibatal-Muḥammad ibn al-‘Abbās al-Dūrīstī, and that the well-known early commentator of the text Qūṭ al-Dīn al-Rāwandī (d. 573/1177) transmitted in turn from him (ibid., 2:79); see more on Ibn al-Mu‘addib in ibid., 2:43, 49.

9 There are two cases of misnumbering in the facsim. ed.: (1) Fol. 42v (pp. 75–76) and fol. 43r (p. 77) are incorrectly numbered and switched around; the editor is mistaken in noting that three folios after fol. 43 are missing. (2) The numbering jumps from fol. 109 to fol. 111—there is no fol. 110—but no text is missing.
10 The date is transcribed on the penultimate folio as “the month of Rajab, in the [Hijri] year four hundred and [undotted number].” An entry on a prefatory folio clarifies the undotted number as six, saying, “This manuscript was written in Rajab, 406AH [1015 or 1016AH].”
lāh al-Shahrastānī in al-Kāẓimiyyah, Baghdad, Iraq\textsuperscript{11} beautiful facsimile printing by Alulbayt Foundation (London: Muʿassat Āl al-Bayt li-Iḥyāʾ al-Turāth, 2013). \textit{Majallat al-Murshid al-Baghdādiyyah} (vol. 2, no. 2, 1927, p. 75) deems it the oldest known manuscript; and a notation on the final folio states that the esteemed Iraqi scholar Hibat al-Dīn al-Ḥusaynī al-Shahrastānī (d. 1967) has certified it as the oldest extant manuscript.

- Place is not mentioned, and the copyist’s name is unreadable.
- The manuscript is almost complete in 175 folios. The first three folios of Raḍī’s introduction are missing,\textsuperscript{12} and there is some water damage throughout, especially on the last folios. The manuscript is written in clear Naskh script with Kufic undertones, the latter also suggesting early provenance. It is fully dotted and vocalized, with headings in red. The same red is used for some corrections in the margins and the text. Other corrections, variant readings, and lexical explanations are provided in several different hands, in black, in the margins.
- Oration texts are arranged in Sequence 1.
- The original manuscript contains the fuller blessings formula throughout for the Prophet Muḥammad as “God’s blessings on him and his descendants” (ṣallā llāhu ʿalayhi wa-ālihi). The phrase “and his descendants” (wa-ālihi), has been brushed out in most (though not all) places and overwritten with “and grant him peace” (wa-sallam), possibly signaling a “correction” by an overzealous Sunni reader. Blessings for ‘Alī are invoked with the formula “peace on him” (‘alayhi al-salām).
- The added orations are transcribed in the margin in a different hand. The added letter is transcribed in the original without flagging. The added sayings are transcribed in the original and flagged in red with the line, “Extra texts added from a manuscript written in the lifetime of the compiler” (ziyādah min nuskhah kutibat fī ‘ahd al-muṣannif).
- The final folios transcribe Yaʿqūb’s and Ḥasan’s verses in praise of \textit{Nahj al-Balāghah}, which would appear to be a later addition.
- Raḍī’s explanatory remarks are prefaced with the line, “The Sayyid [al-Raḍī] said.”

\textsuperscript{11} Listed by Ṭabāṭabāʾī, “Fī Riḥāb,” 29:8 MS § 148.
\textsuperscript{12} Also, folios containing oration § 1.80.6 (from: \textit{satarahā ʿankum}) to § 1.88.7 (to: \textit{aw sāʾin ḥāfid}) are misplaced in the facsimile edition, where they are transcribed within § 1.104.

\textsuperscript{11} To complicate matters, though, the final folio contains verses of praise for the work by Yaʿqūb, who died in 474\textsuperscript{AH}, and his son Ḥasan, who died in 517\textsuperscript{AH}, with blessings for the deceased invoked for both—if the manuscript date of 406\textsuperscript{AH} is correct, as it appears to be, the verses must be a later addition.
– The copyist is Faḍlallāh ibn Ṭāhir ibn al-Muṭahhar al-Ḥusaynī. The date is transcribed as 494/1101.15 Place is not mentioned.
– The manuscript is almost complete in 162 folios, numbered in the facsimile edition in 324 pages, with the first 15 or so folios missing: the manuscript begins at § 1.32.16 The manuscript is written in clear Naskh script, fully dotted and vocalized. Numerous corrections, variant readings, and lexical explanations are provided in different hands in the margins. The orthography is archaic—e.g., عثمان with no alif after mīm.
– Oration texts are arranged in Sequence 2.
– Blessings for the Prophet Muhammad are invoked with the formula, “God’s blessings and peace on him” (ṣallā ilāhu ‘alayhi wa-sallam), consistently leaving off the phrase “and his descendants” (wa-ālihi), probably signaling Sunni affiliation—notably, a few pious epithets present in most other manuscripts are also omitted, such as “the queen of all women” (sayyidat al-nisāʾ) for the Prophet’s daughter and ‘Alī’s wife, Fāṭimah (§ 1.200). Blessings for ‘Alī are invoked with the formula “peace on him” (ʿalayhi al-salām).
– The added orations are not included. The added letter is transcribed without flagging it as an insertion. The added sayings are transcribed and titled in red with the line, “Extra texts added from an excellent Iraqi manuscript” (ziyādah kutibat min nuskhah sariyyah ʿIrāqiyyah).
– The final folios transcribe Yaʿqūb’s, Ḥasan’s, and Fanjkurdī’s verses in praise of Nahj al-Balāghah, probably a later addition.
– Raḍī’s explanatory remarks are prefaced with the line, “The Sayyid [al-Raḍī] said.”

13 Listed by Ṭabāṭabāʾī, “Al-Mutabaqqī,” 5:64, ms § 3.
14 Faḍlallāh transcribes Yaʿqūb’s verses (p. 316) and says they “were written by Yaʿqūb in his own hand in his manuscript of this work,” perhaps indicating that he had seen the verses in Yaʿqūb’s manuscript and thus, presumably, the rest of the manuscript too.
15 The 494/1101 dating is corroborated by the fact that the final folios contain Yaʿqūb’s and Ḥasan’s verses in praise of Nahj al-Balāghah and the copyist pronounces the formula of blessings for the deceased for the former, and a prayer for the long life of the latter—thus confirming the dating of the manuscript between the deaths of the two men, in 474/1081 and 517/1123 respectively.
16 The facsim. ed. has inserted folios from a later manuscript to fill this lacuna—those are not consulted in the present edition.
**[A] or [H]: Rampur Raza Manuscript.** Manuscript dated 553/1158, located in the Rampur Raza Library in Rampur, Uttar Pradesh, India, catalog no. 1190, in two parts. A beautiful single-volume facsimile edition has been published under the auspices of the Government of India’s Ministry of Culture, with an introduction in English, Arabic, Farsi, Urdu, and Hindi by the Library’s director, S.M. Azizuddin Husain (Rampur: Rampur Raza Library Publication Series, 1433/2012). A microfilm is owned by the Central Library of Tehran University, catalog no. 5046. The manuscript is copied from an earlier manuscript dated 511/1117, transcribed by the eminent scholar Faḍlallāh al-Kāshānī al-Rāwandī (d. 571/1175, author of a lost commentary on *Nahj al-Balāghah*), which was copied directly from Raḍī’s own manuscript. Presumably copying from Rāwandī’s manuscript, moreover, the copyist of our manuscript transcribes in a colophon on the saying at §3.354 (fol. 164r) Raḍī’s contextualizing comments, prefaced with the words, “[Perused] in Raḍī’s copy (fī nuskhat al-Raḍī).”

- The copyist is ‘Abd al-Jabbār ibn al-Ḥusayn bin Abī al-Qāsim al-Farāhānī. He transcribed the manuscript in Jawsaqān near Rāwand, in Isfahan.
- The manuscript is almost complete in 169 folios: The first folio of Raḍī’s introduction is missing, as are a couple of folios from the first part of volume two, from the beginning of oration §1.191 to just before the beginning of oration §1.192. There is water damage on the lower end of the first few folios.
- The manuscript is written in clear Naskh script, fully dotted, and vocalized, and has some corrections and annotations in the margins.
- Oration texts are arranged in Sequence 2.
- The added orations, letter, and sayings are transcribed, and all three sets are flagged by a line that states, “Additional texts added from a manuscript written in the lifetime of the compiler.”
- Ya’qūb’s and his son’s verses are not present in the facsimile edition, though they may be present in the original manuscript.

---

18 The first part contains Raḍī’s introduction to the end of oration §1.182, with a tag saying it is the end of part one. The second part contains oration §1.183–190, followed by the chapter on letters, etc., to the end of the book.
19 The sequence of added orations in ms H is different than their sequence in the other manuscripts, and the same as ms Y, viz., §1.238, 1.237, 1.233, 1.236, 1.234. These are followed by the phrase, “end of additional texts” (intahat al-ziyādah), then another phrase, “[another] additional [oration] from a Baghdad manuscript” (ziyādah min nuskhah Bagh-dādiyyah), followed by the added oration §1.235.
Blessings for the Prophet Muhammad are invoked throughout with the formula, “God’s blessings on him and his descendants” (ṣallā llāhu ‘alayhi wa-ālihi). Blessings for ‘Ali are invoked with the formula “peace on him” (‘alayhi l-salām).

Raḍī’s explanatory remarks are prefaced with the line, “The Sayyid [al-Raḍī] said.”

[イ] or [Y]: “Ya’qūbī” Tehran University Manuscript. Manuscript dated 608/1212, located in the Central Library (al-Maktabah al-Markaziyyah) of Tehran University, catalog no. 1782. A facsimile copy is preserved in the library of the Ṭabāṭabāʾī Foundation (Bunyād-i Muḥaqiq Ṭabāṭabāʾī) in Qum, catalog no. M/214. The manuscript was copied from Ya’qūb al-Naysābūrī’s manuscript, which was copied from or checked against Raḍī’s original manuscript.

The copyist is ʿAlī ibn Ṭāhir ibn Abī Saʿd. Place is not noted, but since the manuscript derives from Ya’qūb al-Naysābūrī’s manuscript, it too could be from Nishapur.

The manuscript is complete in 193 folios, also numbered as 386 pages. It is written in a rough but clear hand and is fully dotted and vocalized. The orthography is archaic. It contains numerous variants and lengthy annotations in the margins that appear to be in the original copyist’s hand.

In the Sayings section, the introductory phrase in most manuscripts preceding each text—viz., “ʿAlī, peace be on him, said” (wa-qāla ʿalayhi l-salām)—is mostly, though not always, absent.

Oration texts are arranged in Sequence 2.

The added letter is transcribed without flagging it as an insertion, but the added orations and sayings, which are also transcribed, are flagged by a line that states, “Additional texts added from a manuscript written in the lifetime of the compiler.” As for the added sayings, the copyist states (p. 384) that he copied them from Ya’qūb’s manuscript.

---

21 As seen from the colophon on p. 2.
22 Another colophon states that “Raḍī wrote in his own hand here on the margin of his [original] manuscript” a lexical explanation for a word transcribed in saying §3.436 (p. 383). There is a similar colophon for saying §3.355 (p. 359). Ṭabāṭabāʾī (“Al-Mutabaqqī,” 577) says, “it appears that [Ya’qūb] copied his manuscript from al-Sharīf al-Raḍī’s original manuscript in his own hand.”
23 The facsimile edition’s sequence of folios containing orations §1.88–111 is jumbled.
24 The added orations are in a different order than several other manuscripts, presented in two parts: The “Additional texts” title is followed by five added orations (§1.238, 237, 233).
Though copied from Ya'qūb's manuscript, the manuscript does not appear to contain Ya'qūb's or his son's verses—perhaps the folios that contained them are lost.

Blessings for the Prophet Muhammad are invoked throughout with the formula, “God's blessings on him and his descendants” (ṣallā llāhu ʿalayhi wa-ālihi), and sometimes, “Peace upon him” (ʿalayhi l-salām). Blessings for 'Alī are invoked with the formula “peace on him” (ʿalayhi al-salām). The pious epithet for Fāṭimah, dropped from §1.200 of manuscript N, is also dropped from Y.

Raḍī's explanatory remarks are prefaced with the line, “The Sayyid [al-Raḍī] said.”

1.4 Secondary Manuscripts
I have consulted nine further manuscripts from the 6th/12th and 7th/13th centuries in order to transcribe the initial few folios that are missing from all but Y of the primary manuscripts, and for a further check of substantive variants throughout. These manuscripts also have important scholarly pedigrees. Among them, K was copied from the manuscript of the famous premodern editor of texts 'Alī ibn Muḥammad ibn al-Sakūn (or: Sukūn, d. ca. 600/1204).25

The following are details of my secondary manuscripts in chronological order:

[Л] or [L]: Mumtaz ul Ulama Lucknow Manuscript. Manuscript dated 510/1116, located in the Mumtaz ul Ulama Library in Lucknow, India.26 A facsimile copy is located in the library of the Theology Faculty (Dāneshkadeh-yi Ilahiyāt), Ferdowsi University, Mashhad, catalog no. 77.

- Copyist and place are not noted. The date is written in a different hand on the margin of the final folio.
- The manuscript is almost complete in 158 unpaginated folios; the last lines of letter § 2.11 to the middle of § 2.31.11 appear to be missing, while parts of the

---

236, 234, in this order), followed by a line stating, “End of extra texts” (intahat al-ziyādah), followed by another line stating, “In a Baghdadi manuscript there is an addition from an oration by [‘Alī] in which he speaks of Muḥammad’s family,” followed by oration § 1.235.

25 Ibn al-Sakūn was born in Ḥillah, and lived in Baghdad, Medina, and Damascus. His biography is transcribed from Muḥibb al-Dīn Ibn al-Najjār, Mīrzā Afandī, Yāqūt al-Ḥamawī, and other medieval scholars by ʿAṭṭār in the Introduction (pp. 10–13) of his 2016 ed. of Ibn al-Sakūn’s Nahj al-Balāghah manuscript.

26 Listed cursorily by Ṭabāṭabāʾī, “Al-Mutabaqqī,” 5:67, ms § 11; listed also by Waseem and Naqavi, Nahjul Balagha, 30.
first folios, and most of the final eight folios, have water damage. It is written in mostly clear Naskh script, fully dotted and partially vocalized, with some annotations and corrections in the margins. The first line of Raḍī’s brief conclusion is transcribed as it appears in the other manuscripts, but the next two lines, which are blurred, appear to contain a different prayer formula.

– Oration texts are arranged in Sequence 2.
– The added orations, letter, and sayings are transcribed, and all three sets are flagged by a line that states, “Additional texts added from a manuscript written in the lifetime of the compiler.”
– Seven lines of verse by an unnamed poet in praise of ‘Ali’s words, in the same hand, are appended after Raḍī’s conclusion.


– The copyist is ‘Ali ibn Abī al-Qāsim ibn ‘Alī al-Ḥājj. Place is not noted.
– The manuscript is complete in 173 folios. It is written in clear Naskh script, fully dotted and vocalized, with some corrections and annotations in the margins.
– A colophon on the final folio notes that the manuscript was checked against the copy of a scholar named Afḍal al-Dīn Ḥasan ibn Fādar al-Qummī. Several ownership marks are found at the beginning and end of each of the two parts.
– Oration texts are arranged in Sequence 1.
– The added orations, letter, and sayings are included but not flagged as insertions.

[2] or [D]: Imam Reza Mashhad Manuscript. Iranian manuscript dated 544/1149, located in the Imam Reza Library in Mashhad, catalog no. 13847, from the Waqf endowment of the library of Fāḍil Khān al-Khurāsānī al-Tūnī (d. 1060/


27 Listed by Ṭabāṭabāʾī, “Al-Mutabaqqī,” 5:69, ms §15; listed also by Waseem and Naqvi, Nahjul Balagha, 30.
28 Part 1 contains Raḍī’s introduction to the end of oration §1.190, with a line stating it is the end of part one. Part 2 contains oration §1.191 to the end of the book.
1650).\(^{29}\) A facsimile copy is preserved in the library of the Ṭabāṭabāʾī Foundation in Qum, catalog no. M/203, and a microfilm in the Central Library of Tehran University, catalog no. 2134.

- The copyist is Muḥammad ibn Muḥammad ibn Aḥmad al-Naqīb, who finished writing the manuscript in Sabzevar (previously known as Bayhaq, in NE Iran, near Mashhad).

- The manuscript is almost complete in 183 folios, numbered in a later hand in 366 pages, with the first folio of Raḍī’s introduction missing. A couple of folios from within the first oration (§1.1.2–1.1.7) and sayings §3.195–332 are also missing.\(^{30}\)

- The manuscript is written in clear Naskh script, fully dotted, and mostly vocalized, and it has some corrections and annotations in the margins.

- Oration texts are arranged in Sequence 2.

- The added orations are not included. The added letter is transcribed without flagging it as an insertion. The added sayings are transcribed and titled in red, “Additional texts added from a manuscript written in the lifetime of the compiler.”

- The final folios transcribe Yaʿqūb’s and Hasan’s verses in praise of Nahj al-Balāghah.


- The copyist is Muḥammad ibn Saʿīd ibn al-Ḥusayn al-ʿĀmirī. Place is not noted.

- The manuscript is complete in 243 folios,\(^{32}\) written in clear Naskh script, fully dotted and vocalized, with one- or two-word lexical and grammatical annotations in somewhat blurred red, in the margins or between the lines.

- Oration texts are arranged in Sequence 2.

- The added orations are not included. The added letter is transcribed without flagging. The added sayings are transcribed and titled in red, “Additional texts added from a manuscript written in the lifetime of the compiler.”

- The final folios transcribe Fanjkurdī’s verses in praise of Nahj al-Balāghah.

\(^{29}\) Listed by Ṭabāṭabāʾī, “Al-Mutabaqqī,” 5:69–70, ms §16.

\(^{30}\) Ṭabāṭabāʾī (“Al-Mutabaqqī,” 5:70) incorrectly states that the last folios containing sayings §210–350 are also missing.


\(^{32}\) Two folios—containing sayings §3.345 to the middle of §3.352—are misplaced, and come at the end of the volume, after the copyist’s name and Fanjkurdī’s verses.
[س] or [S]: Sulaymaniye Ra’is al-Kuttāb Manuscript 1. Manuscript dated 567/1171, located in the Sulaymaniye Library in Istanbul, catalog no. Reisul-Kuttab 942. The manuscript was part of the collection of Ra’is al-kuttāb Aḥmad ibn Muṣṭafā ibn Khalil (Ṭashkubrizādah, d. 968/1561) whose ownership mark is on the cover folio, along with his name in his own hand.

– The copyist is ‘Alī ibn Muḥammad ibn Abī Saʿīd ibn Manṣūr. Place is not noted.
– The manuscript is complete in 172 folios, written in clear Naskh script, fully dotted and partially vocalized, with some annotations and corrections in the margins.
– Oration texts are arranged in Sequence 1.
– The first three of the six added orations are transcribed, and the first fifteen of the seventeen added sayings, without noting for either set that they are insertions. The added letter is also transcribed without flagging.

[ج] or [Ch]: Chester Beatty Manuscript. Manuscript dated 588/1192, located in the Chester Beatty library in Dublin, catalog no. 5451.

– The copyist is Aḥmad ibn al-Muʾayyad ibn ʿAbd al-Jalīl ibn Muḥammad. The place is not noted. An ownership notice on the cover folio with the name Sadīd al-Dīn Yusuf ibn Muṭahhar Ḣilli [= al-ʿAllāmah al-Ḥillī (d. 726/1325)] is written in Persian, with the mark of a library whose name is blotted out, also in Persian.
– The manuscript is complete in 169 folios. It is written in clear Naskh script, fully dotted and vocalized, and has numerous marginal variants and annotations.
– Oration texts are arranged in Sequence 1.
– The added orations are transcribed, as are the first fifteen of the seventeen added sayings, without noting for either set that they are additions. The added letter is also transcribed without flagging.


– The copyist is Muḥammad ibn Aḥmad ibn ʿAbd al-Raḥīm al-Fāmī al-Harawī. Place is not noted.

33 Listed by Ṭabāṭabāʾī, “Al-Mutabaqqī,” 5:72, MS § 23.
35 Not listed by Ṭabāṭabāʾī, “Al-Mutabaqqī.”
The manuscript is complete in 187 folios, written in clear Naskh script, fully dotted and vocalized, with headings of new orations, etc., in red. It contains numerous marginal variants and explanations in the same red.

Oration texts are arranged in Sequence 1.

The six added orations are not included. The added letter is transcribed without flagging. The added sayings are transcribed and titled in red, “Extra texts added from a manuscript written in the lifetime of the compiler.”

Raḍī’s conclusion is followed by: the text of ‘Alī’s seal rings; a further added oration (the alif-less oration titled Badihah or The Spontaneous), reported by Muḥammad ibn al-Sā‘īb al-Kalbī from Abū Ṣāliḥ (fols. 183v–185v); and Ya‘qūb’s, Ḥasan’s, and Fanjkurdī’s verses in praise of Nahj al-Balāghah.


The copyist is ʿAbd al-Ghafūr ibn ʿAbd al-Ghaffār ibn Aḥmad ibn Marzawayh al-Kātib. Place is not noted.

The manuscript is complete in 357 folios, with no lacunae, but the copyist has left out Raḍī’s final texts in each section: the manuscript ends at oration § 1.224 (missing eight texts, § 1.225–232), at letter § 2.72 (missing five texts, § 2.73–78), and at saying § 3.407 (missing twenty-one texts, § 3.408–429). The added orations, letter, and sayings are also not included.

Oration texts are arranged in Sequence 1.

The manuscript appears to be either a special display copy or one used sparingly by Ottoman royalty: It is written in clear, handsome Naskh script, fully dotted and vocalized. Chapter headings are decorated with extensive gold illumination. Phrases introducing individual pieces are centered and sized larger. Only two variants, written in the margin in a different hand, are noted in the entire manuscript.

[ك] or [K]: Sulaymaniye Raʾīs al-Kuttāb Manuscript 2. Manuscript dated 684/1285, located in the Sulaymaniye Library in Istanbul, catalog no. REISULKUT-TAB 943.38 The manuscript is copied from the manuscript of the aforementioned scholar Ibn al-Sakūn (d. ca. 600/1204). Like S, this manuscript was also part of the collection of Raʾīs al-kuttāb Ƭāshkubrizādah (d. 968/1561).

36 Oration § 1.231 is also missing, and § 1.177 is (mis)placed between § 1.230 and § 1.232.
37 Listed by Ṭabāṭabāʾī, “Al-Mutabaqqī,” 5:77, Ms § 34.
38 Not listed by Ṭabāṭabāʾī, “Al-Mutabaqqī.” Used by Āṭṭār (he calls it ms “S-T”) in his 2016 edition of Ibn al-Sakūn’s copy of Nahj al-Balāghah (see his description of the manuscript in ibid., 38–43).
– Place is not noted, and a gold-bordered rectangle after the date which may have contained the copyist’s name is pasted over with a blank piece of paper.
– The manuscript is almost complete in 225 folios, with just a few folios missing in the middle (folio 85, oration §1.163–172). It is written in beautiful and clear Naskh script, fully dotted and vocalized, with red rondelles separating the phrases, up to the end of folio 187. There are many corrections and variants in the margins in different hands, annotations in Arabic, Persian, and Ottoman Turkish. The title folio has numerous ownership marks, Waqf notices, and hadith praising ‘Alī. The title folio and final folio contain verses in the genre of renunciation of worldliness. The final folio also contains, after the sign-off, additional texts attributed to ‘Alī.
– Oration texts are arranged in Sequence 1.
– The added orations, letter, and sayings are transcribed, without noting that they are insertions.
– An earlier unreadable form of pious invocation attached to ‘Alī’s name in the manuscript has been systematically erased and replaced with “May God be pleased with him (raḍiya llāhu ʿanhu),” presumably changed from a Shiʿite formula to a Sunni one.

1.5 Manuscript Family Tree
Based on four classification matrixes that will be discussed shortly, I have constructed the following family tree to show the relationships between my fourteen manuscripts. In conjunction with the matrixes, the relative chronology in the stemma provides a visual of possible parentage and sibling relationships. Some of the later manuscripts could derive from the earlier ones, or from manuscripts related to the earlier ones.

MANUSCRIPT GROUPS: The manuscripts may be divided into two broad groups:

Group 1: primary manuscripts M and Y, and secondary manuscripts Z, S, Ch, T, and K.

Group 2: primary manuscripts Sh and N, and secondary manuscripts D, Q, and A.

N.B.: primary manuscript H and secondary manuscript L possess features from both groups.

CLASSIFICATION MATRIXES: Four matrixes have been used to construct the stemma, weighted in the following order: (1) the principal matrix is variants in wording, then (2) sequence of texts, then (3) presence or absence of added
Extant manuscripts consulted in this edition are listed in rectangular boxes. Of these, the five primary manuscripts—M, Sh, N, H, Y—are denoted by their assigned letter and name. The nine secondary manuscripts—L, Z, D, Q, S, Ch, A, T, and K—are denoted only by their assigned letter.

Lost parent manuscripts are listed in oval boxes. Of these, the known parent manuscripts—Yaʿqūb al-Nayṣabūrī, Faḍlallāh Rāwandī, and Ibn al-Sakūn—are listed by name. Assumed parent manuscripts are denoted by Greek letters: α for Raḍī’s original manuscript, and β, γ, δ, and ε for manuscripts copied or derived therefrom.

Solid lines of descent denote known parentage. Broken lines denote assumed parentage.

**FIGURE 1**
*Nāḥj al-Balāghah* manuscript family tree, 5th–7th/11th–13th c.
orations, and/or (4) supplements. The place where a manuscript was copied would also have been a useful matrix but unfortunately this data is mostly not available. Raḍī, as we know, compiled *Nahj al-Balāghah* in Baghdad, Iraq. Among our fourteen manuscripts, only two name the place where they were written: near Rāwand, in Isfahan, for H, and Sabzevar, in NE Iran, for D. Also, M’s copyist was from Qum, Iran, so it may have originated there; and Ya’qūb (whose manuscript is the parent of Y) lived in Nishapur, so his manuscript probably originated there. It should be noted, moreover, that the manuscript genealogy is not always clear cut, and a handful of apparently contradictory positionings—discussed briefly below—complicate stemma relationships.

### Table 3 Matrixes of manuscript family tree

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Matrix</th>
<th>Group 1</th>
<th>Group 2</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. Variants of words</td>
<td>M Y {H} / {L} Z S Ch T K</td>
<td>Sh N {H} / {L} D Q A</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. Added orations</td>
<td>present: M Y {H} / {L} Z S Ch K</td>
<td>absent: Sh N / D Q A [T]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. Ya’qūb and Ḥasan verses</td>
<td>absent: M Y H / {L} Z [Q] S Ch T K</td>
<td>present: Sh N / D A</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**N.B.:**
- Manuscripts in this table are listed in chronological order: primary manuscripts are listed first and followed by a slash; secondary manuscripts are listed after the slash.
- Square brackets signal manuscripts that in that particular matrix are not with their variant-matrix group.
- Curly brackets are used for the Mixed Group manuscripts, H and L.

**Matrix 1: Variants of Words**

Based on the variant matrix, manuscripts are clustered in the two groups listed in Table 3 above. A sample list of seventeen substantive variants within the *Nahj al-Balāghah* text, and variant-based manuscript distribution, is provided in Table 4:

---

39 Note that H and L contain almost an equal number of variants from both groups. A—which is categorized in Group 2—contains three variants from Group 1.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text no.</th>
<th>M</th>
<th>Sh</th>
<th>N</th>
<th>H</th>
<th>Y</th>
<th>L</th>
<th>Z</th>
<th>D</th>
<th>Q</th>
<th>S</th>
<th>Ch</th>
<th>A</th>
<th>T</th>
<th>K</th>
<th>Variants</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1.27</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>بالإسما / بالإسما</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.27</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>بالإسما / بالإسما</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.80.11</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>بالإسما / بالإسما</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.102.2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>بالإسما / بالإسما</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.161.1</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>بالإسما / الإبدا</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.166</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>بالإسما / الإبدا</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.170.2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>بالإسما / الإملا</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.171.2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>بالإسما / الإملا</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.183.2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>بالإسما / الإملا</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text no.</td>
<td>M</td>
<td>Sh</td>
<td>N</td>
<td>H</td>
<td>Y</td>
<td>L</td>
<td>Z</td>
<td>D</td>
<td>Q</td>
<td>S</td>
<td>Ch</td>
<td>A</td>
<td>T</td>
<td>K</td>
<td>Variants</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------</td>
<td>----</td>
<td>----</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>----</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
<td>---------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.183.2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>٪١٨٣.٢</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.196</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>٪١٩٦</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.10</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>٪٢٠</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.28.2</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>٪٢٨٢</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.45.4</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>٪٤٥٤</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.33</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>٪٣٣</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.137</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>٪١٣٧</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.237</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>٪٢٣٧</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Note on the Edition and Translation**

TABLE 4  *Nahj al-Balāghah* manuscript variants (cont.)
Matrix 2: Sequence of Orations
Our manuscripts transcribe *Nahj al-Balāghah*’s orations in two different sequences, and these have been described earlier as Sequence 1, which is followed in the present edition, and Sequence 2, which is not.

Matrix 3: Added Orations
The six orations inserted into Raḍī’s original (§ 1.233–238) are found in all manuscripts in Group 1, except T (which is missing all end texts anyway), and they are also found in H from the Mixed Group. The added letter (§ 2.79) is transcribed in all our manuscripts and is thus not particularly useful as a matrix for mapping the family tree. Similarly, the added sayings (§ 3.439–446) are also present in all our manuscripts except M and T. Two manuscripts, S and Ch, include only fifteen out of seventeen added sayings, and they may be more closely related to each other than to others in their group.

Matrix 4: Ya‘qūb’s and Ḥasan’s verses
Ya‘qūb’s and Ḥasan’s verses in praise of *Nahj al-Balāghah* are found in all manuscripts of Group 2, except Q. In Sh and N, though, these are presumably later additions, as these manuscripts predate the poets. Further supplementary materials are also found in some Group 2 manuscripts:
- Fanjkurdī’s verses in praise of *Nahj al-Balāghah* are transcribed in N, Q, and A. In N, this is presumably a later addition, as the manuscript predates the poet.
- Inscriptions of ‘Ali’s signet rings are transcribed in D and A.

NB: Lost Parent Manuscripts
Some of our manuscripts derive from three lost parent manuscripts transcribed by the following scholars:
- Ya‘qūb al-Naysābūrī (d. 474/1081), who copied his manuscript from, or checked it against, Raḍī’s original. Our manuscript Y is copied from it, N’s copyist consulted it, and the copyists of D and A—because they contain Ya‘qūb’s verses—may have consulted it or a manuscript derived from it.
- Faḍlallāh al-Rāwandī (d. 571/1175), who copied his manuscript in 511/1117 from Raḍī’s original. Our manuscript H is copied from it.
- Ibn al-Sakūn (d. ca. 600/1204). Our manuscript K is copied from it.

---

Surprisingly, Group 1’s manuscript Y—said to be copied from Ya‘qūb’s own manuscript—does not contain Ya‘qūb’s verses. Perhaps they were present in the original Y, and in H, and the end folios containing them are lost.
From the late 1800s onward, *Nahj al-Balāghah* has been printed numerous times, including the printing with Muḥammad ʿAbduh's commentary, first published by al-Maṭbaʿah al-Adabiyyah in Beirut in 1885. Most *Nahj al-Balāghah* printings are trade editions which do not mention any manuscripts at all, and their texts contain unflagged insertions of headings and words, as well as numerous errors.

Two mistranscriptions are egregious and stem from anti-Shiʿi bias:

- §3.174: The original, transcribed thus in all the early manuscripts that I consulted and all the medieval commentaries that I looked at,⁴¹ is as follows: “How strange! So, the caliphate can be justified through the Prophet's companionship, but not through companionship and kinship together?” (وَالعِجَابُ أَنَّكُونَ الخَلافَةَ بِالصِحَاحَةِ وَلَا تَكونَ بِالسَّ حِحَةِ وَالقُرْآنِ). In the print editions, this is changed by dropping a few words in the middle—ةباحصلابنوكتالو—to mean something quite different: “How strange that the caliphate is justified through companionship and kinship!”.⁴²

- §3.237: The original, transcribed thus in all my primary manuscripts, and all except S and Ch of the secondary manuscripts, is as follows: ... فَرَضَ اللَّهُ (God has mandated the imamate as a system of governance for the community.) In modern printings, deriving perhaps from the later manuscript tradition (cf. S and Ch, just mentioned), the word *imāmah* (imamate) is changed to *amānah* (trustworthiness), by replacing the letter “M” with “N.”⁴³

Modern critical editions have been published by two scholars:

- Hāshim Mīlānī, Najaf: Maktabat al-Rawḍah al-Ḥaydariyyah, 2009. Milānī consulted the manuscripts I have labelled M and D, and two more from the 6th/12th century located in Iranian libraries.

- Qays Bahjat ‘Aṭṭār, Qum: Muʿassasat al-Rāfid, 2010. ‘Aṭṭār consulted the 5th/11th century manuscripts I have labelled M and N, and two more partial, undated ones, presumably from the 6th/12th or 7th/13th century. In a different edition (Najaf: al-ʿAtabah al-ʿAlawiyyah al-Muqaddasah, 2016), in which he focused on establishing Ibn al-Sakūn’s vocalization of *Nahj al-Balāghah*,

---


⁴³ E.g., ʿAbduh, *Sharḥ Nahj al-balāghah*, 512, § 252. The original Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd commentary appears to have transcribed *imāmah*, and the later manuscript tradition appears to have changed it to *amānah*: the text before the commentary has *amānah* (H 19:86, § 249), but the explanation (H 19:90) has retained the original *imāmah*. 
ʿAṭṭār consulted two manuscripts derived from Ibn al-Sakūn’s original manuscript, including the manuscript I have labelled K, and another, also from the 7th/13th century. Although these are welcome and relatively accurate editions, Milānī and ʿAṭṭār do not use my primary manuscripts Sh, Y, or H, nor my secondary manuscripts L, Z, Q, S, Ch, A, and T. Neither scholar flags the added orations or letter as insertions. Neither constructs a manuscript stemma or lays out a concerted methodology. Furthermore, they do not note the substantive variants in an efficient manner: Mīlānī notes only some substantive variants; his focus is on providing meanings of difficult words. ʿAṭṭār in his 2010 edition—an otherwise excellent edition and remarkably free of typographical errors—lists all differences in vocalization. This is a redundant, or, at best, a secondary exercise, and it has come at a cost: the profusion of vocalization differences in the notes obscures the fewer, scattered substantive variants. The original vocalization is not ascertainable in any case, for there is no evidence to suggest that Raḍī vocalized his compilation let alone to establish the exact vowels that ʿAlī used in his oral deliveries. ʿAṭṭār also lists all variants noted in the manuscripts’ margins—this adds to the reception data (albeit sketchily, because we don’t know for the most part when these variants were added to the margins or by who), but it further obscures the manuscripts’ text collation. These editions are also not easily available.

3 This Edition

In formulating a new critical edition of *Nahj al-Balāghah*, I have relied principally on my five primary manuscripts: the three earliest extant 5th/11th-century manuscripts of *Nahj al-Balāghah*, M, Sh, and N, as well as Y, which was copied from a 5th/11th-century manuscript, and H, which was copied from an early 6th/12th-century manuscript. As noted earlier, M is believed to have been copied from a manuscript authorized by Raḍī, and the parent manuscripts of H and Y are said to have been copied from Raḍī’s own manuscript. Substantial variants among these primary manuscripts are relatively few in number.

The manuscript history of the text is extremely complicated, and each of the manuscripts passed through many hands, so—despite best efforts to untangle study notices and colophons—it is extremely difficult to fully tease out what corrections were made, when they were made, by whom they were made, and which other manuscripts or resources were used to make them. Also, it is sometimes difficult to ascertain the original transcription from a later correction. Despite recourse to these precious early manuscripts, then, it is still not possible to definitively determine the entirety of Raḍī’s original text (or,
for that matter, his sequence of orations). In the case of some textual variants, the early manuscripts often present two choices that appear equally plausible in the historical, grammatical, and rhetorical context. Indeed, oftentimes the copyists themselves offer two possible readings, marked with the word *maʿa* (both), meaning both readings, according to them, are equally plausible. However, using the method described below, I believe I have constructed the close-to-best version we can hope to attain—barring somebody finding Raḍī’s autograph manuscript!

3.1 **Substantive Features of this Edition**

- The present edition relies principally on the five primary manuscripts M, Sh, N, H, and Y. Of these, there is no one manuscript, and no one group, which consistently gives an indisputably better reading. Although some scholars have claimed one or the other of these as the best manuscript, I do not agree that there is a clear frontrunner. So, where the primary manuscripts differ, I use my best judgment: where they are strongly weighted toward one reading, I prioritize that majority reading; where they are nearly equally distributed, I choose the reading I deem most appropriate to the literary and historical context.
- I footnote all substantial variants occurring in my primary manuscripts. The secondary manuscripts from the 6th/12th and 7th/13th centuries are invoked only for variants in the first folios that are missing from the primary manuscripts, and for the substantive variants listed in Table 4 above.
- The manuscripts contain numerous variations in minor components such as conjunctions, prepositions, orthography, number, tense, and gender within ʿAlī’s texts, and more so within Raḍī’s headers and explanations. For these minor variations, I mostly follow M. I do not footnote these variants except in the few cases where they make a substantive difference to the meaning, for this would obscure the significant variants while not adding to our understanding of the material. ʿAṭṭār in his 2010 edition has listed all minor variations and the interested reader can find them there.
- In sequencing orations, I follow the primary manuscripts M, Sh, and others described earlier as Sequence 1.
- I transcribe the inserted orations, letter, and sayings following each of the three main chapters, under the sub-heading *زيادة على الأصل*, set apart from the original text by the sub-heading and a smaller font.

3.2 **Formal Features of this Edition**

- Except for lines from the Qur’an and poetry, which are fully vocalized, I vocalize only those parts of the text where the meaning and correct vocalization may not be obvious to an educated reader of classical Arabic.
For accessibility, I number the texts, divide them into paragraphs, and add minimal punctuation. I present 'Ali’s words in a larger font, and Raḍī’s occasional comments in a smaller font, to further distinguish between the two. I follow standard rather than archaic orthography (e.g., إِحْيَاٰحُقُّ versus إِحْيَاٰحُقُّ). Manuscripts differ in rendering pious formulae attached to the name of God and exalted personages in Islam (details were provided earlier for the primary manuscripts). I follow the majority reading, which, I believe, would follow Raḍī’s original rendering. Note, however, that some formulae may be copyist additions or modifications. A few lines of poetry are cited in the text, and I identify their meters in the footnotes. Section headings are original from the manuscripts, and I retain them. The titles provided in most Nahj al-Balāghah printings are later copyist additions that are not found in the earliest manuscripts, and I do not transcribe those. I have used ‘ for quotations from the Qur’an, and ⟨ ⟩ for hadith, proverbs, and half-lines of poetry. I have used ⟨ ⟩ also for citation of phrases from the text that Raḍī is explaining in his subsequent commentary, and for variants in my footnotes.

4 Previous Translations

Beginning in the middle of the twentieth century, several English translations of Nahj al-Balāghah, full or partial, were published in Iran and South Asia, most of them produced via a previous Persian translation. They render some lines effectively, but, for the most part, there is room for improvement: they are inaccurate in places and their English is frequently pedantic. Two partial translations—selections from the sayings translated by Thomas Cleary (1996), and the Testament of al-Ashtar (§ 2.53) translated by William Chittick (1981)—are fairly accurate and idiomatic.

---

44 E.g., § 1.88: Ashbāḥ, the name of an oration which speaks of the creation of sky and angels, in my translation, “Ethereal Forms,” which several prior translators have incorrectly rendered as “Skeletons” (https://www.al-islam.org/nahjul-balagha-part-1-sermons/sermon-91-praise-belongs-god-who, accessed May 18, 2023).
45 Cleary, Living and Dying with Grace: Counsels of Hadrat Ali.
46 Chittick, A Shi‘ite Anthology, 67–89.
This Translation

Translating *Nahj al-Balāghah* has been a supremely daunting task. The oceans of meaning infused into its lines cannot be fully plumbed, for a translation loses native implications and associations, while at the same time adding foreign ones. Neither can the eloquence of the Arabic be matched, for the texture of the language and its rhythms and metaphors cannot be reproduced. What I have attempted to do—given that any who set out on this path, no matter how careful and prepared they may be, can only fall short—is to come as close to the original as I can, both in meaning and in beauty.

Two guiding principles drive my methodology: First—to quote Aristotle—the whole is greater than the sum of its parts, and word-by-word translation fails to capture the clear simplicity of ‘Ali’s expositions. Au contraire, it can lead to a meaningless conglomeration of high-sounding words, as has happened in prior renditions. Instead, it is important for the translator to read each original Arabic sentence as a single unit, to understand ‘Ali’s concepts, with all their rich nuances, as best as she can, then render them forcefully into cogent English. Another aspect of this first principle is to bear in mind the context—historical, political, religious, cultural, and literary, among others—which is crucial for accurate translation. Accordingly, I have consulted the major *Nahj al-Balāghah* commentaries for lexical, contextual, and idiomatic insights, the major premodern lexicons for early usages of Arabic words, and historical and literary works, as well as books from various other genres from the classical Arabic library, for both the specific and the larger milieu of each text. Yet another aspect of this principle is maintaining the formal register. The Arabic of *Nahj al-Balāghah* is different than more informal conversations reported from ‘Ali’s time, or even the more formal narrative prose of early histories; nowhere is the tone colloquial or chatty. Its texts deal with the serious subjects of salvation, succession, and war, and the translation attempts to maintain that gravitas. Yet, it is also important to bear in mind that ‘Ali’s orations and letters were meant to be understood by their contemporary addressees. Since the audience was usually large and public, accessible vocabulary was presumably chosen, and, with some exceptions, rare words were avoided. Although the lexicon seems archaic to us now, that was not the case in its time. Keeping my translation in line with what I believe was the author’s intent of clarity, I endeavor to render the text into lucid, modern English.

My second principle—which is particular to literary translation—is to maintain, as far as possible, the aesthetic spirit of the original. The first aspect of this principle is to preserve where possible the rhythm, especially the parallelism and pithy cadences, of the Arabic words. The second aspect is to keep the
culture-specific imagery intact where possible, and not substitute it with foreign or anachronistic renderings. The third and most difficult aspect is to bring out the desert-and-camel metaphors that underpin the vocabulary, especially the verbs, which most prior translations have erased. An especially complicated example in which a heap of camel imagery is infused into a single verb, *fawwaqa*, is § 1.74: 

I have translated this line with some (warranted, I think) prolixity as “The Umayyads stingily throw at me my share of Muḥammad’s inheritance, piece by piece, like those who allow a camel-calf to suckle its mother only lightly, at intervals.” Others have expunged the imagery to translate the line as, “The Umayyads are allowing me the inheritance of Muḥammad bit (by bit).” Yet another challenging line is § 1.80.4: 

which I have translated as “Throats choke on sweat like a camel chokes on its bridle-straits.” Others have removed the underpinning animal image to translate the line as, “Sweat would choke the throat.” Bringing in the underlying metaphorical associations of the Arabic words, while preserving the clarity and vigor of the English, has called for a delicate—and highly challenging!—balance.

Additionally in this translation, I have:

- Added words to unpack the dense Arabic, but only minimally, preserving apparently deliberate ambiguities.
- Modified syntax and morphology for an idiomatic English rendering,
- Replaced pronouns with names, and added the name of fame, where needed for clarity.
- Changed some pronouns for idiomatic English rendering, sometimes changing third grammatical person to first, or singular to plural, when denoting generic humans, plural to singular when primarily denoting the speaker, ‘Alī, and so on.
- Translated a single Arabic word differently in different places, depending on context—e.g., *ʿāmil* is translated variously as “governor,” “agent,” “administrator,” or “tax-collector”; *ḥaqq* is sometimes rendered as “truth,” and sometimes as “right,” while its opposite, *bāṭil*, is sometimes rendered as “falsehood” and sometimes as “wrong.”
- Where the referent is clear, used lowercase for pronouns and adjectives referring to God.
- Used my own translations of Qur’anic verses, to maintain consistency and to highlight a given verse’s meaning in its context.
- Omitted pious invocations attached to the name of God, and of the Prophet...
Muḥammad, ‘Alī, and other revered figures, for a smoother reading (these are preserved in the Arabic text).

- Replaced “Commander of the Faithful” in a few places with “ʿAlī.”
- Retained the masculine gender in generic references to humans, following classical Arabic practice.
- Translated some technical religious terms differently from their conventional English rendering, to better reflect the spirit of the word: e.g. I translate “Islam” as “commitment to God’s will” (rather than “submission”); taqwā as “piety” or being “conscious of God” or “godfearing” (rather than “fear of God”); zuhd as “rejection of worldliness” or “indifference to the world” (rather than “rejection of the world” or “asceticism”); and bidʿah as “heresy” or “heretical innovation” and not simply “innovation.”
- Sometimes used the neutral form ‘it’ for pronouns referring to the world (dunyā), while at other times, when the context is clearly playing to the metaphor of the world as temptress, the feminine ‘she’ (note that the word dunyā is feminine in Arabic).
- Translated the standard post-benedictions phrase, ammā baʿdu (lit. “As for what comes after”), as “And now to the matter at hand.” I have removed the phrase whenever it occurs at the beginning of a text, and sometimes also after the beginning “from” line (it is retained in the Arabic).
- Removed the prefacing words, “ʿAlī said,” from most places in the Sayings section (they are retained in the Arabic).
- As in the edition, presented the text of ‘Alī’s words in a larger font, and Raḍī’s occasional prefaces and comments to ‘Alī’s text in a smaller font.
- Used « » for quotations from the Qurʾan, and ⟨ ⟩ for hadith, proverbs, and half-lines of poetry.
- I have varied between the more formal “do not” and the less formal “don’t”—and done the same for other contractions—to best fit the register of each text.
- To identify Raḍī’s occasional comments, I preface them with his name followed by a colon, viz., “Raḍī:.” The notation appears in some manuscripts too, in some places with the first-person pronoun (“I say”), but more frequently as “The Sayyid [al-Raḍī] said (wa-qāla al-sayyid),” where the use of the honorific “al-sayyid” indicates a copyist addition.
- As in the Edition, I have transcribed the additional orations, letter, and sayings, following each of the three main chapters, under the sub-heading “Additional Orations” (or: Letter, or: Sayings), set apart from the original text by the sub-heading and a smaller font.

Where available from the commentaries and historical sources, I have provided in a note for each text, its context, date, and place; I have also identified
unnamed individuals therein. Further details of people, places, and terms are provided in the Glossary. Additionally, I have provided notes to unpack cryptic lines, but minimally, since this is a translation and not a commentary. A modern English commentary—particularly on the pithy sayings—would be a wonderful addition to the *Nahj al-Balāghah* library, but that is a project for another time!

47 When a text is dated to ‘Ali’s caliphate without a specific year, I have transcribed the dates of his full reign, 35–40/656–661, in order to avoid confusion. It should be noted however that ‘Ali was pledged allegiance in the last month of 35 AH, and most of the texts from his caliphate are from early 36 AH onward. ‘Abd al-Zahrā’, *Maṣādir Nahj al-balāghah*, contains further context for some texts, accompanied by primary source quotes.
Detailed Contents

*Nahj al-Balāghah: The Wisdom and Eloquence of ‘Alī*

Raḍī’s Introduction  p. 98

**Section 1: Orations:** Chapter containing selections from the Commander of the Faithful’s orations and directives, including selections from his addresses that may be likened to orations, spoken in charged gatherings, famous battles, and times of danger

1.1 Creation of sky, earth, angels, Adam, and prophets, and the hajj

“I praise God. Yet no speaker can articulate his praise”

(الحمد لله الذي لا يبلغ مدحه القائلون)  p. 106

1.2 Following Siffin, state of the people before Muḥammad, praise for the Prophet’s family

“I praise God, seeking the completion of his favor”

(أحمده استناما لعمته)  p. 114

1.3 “The Roar of the Camel Stallion” (*Shiqshiqiyyah*), on the caliphate

“By God, that man donned its cloak knowing that I am the pivot to its grinding stone”

(أما والله لقد تقمصها ابن أبي فلان وإنه ليعلم أن حلي منها محل القطب من الرحا)  p. 118

1.4 Following the Battle of the Camel

“Through us you received guidance in the dark night”

(بنا أهديتم في الظلام)  p. 122

1.5 To ‘Abbās and Abū Sufyān following the Prophet’s death, regarding the succession

“People! Cut through the waves of rebellion by boarding the ark of salvation”

(آيا الناس شقوا أمواج الفتنة بسفن النجاة)  p. 124

---

1 The majority of *Nahj al-Balāghah* texts do not have titles. The descriptors here are thus my own, drawing on the content of the text, on Raḍī’s remarks if there are any, and context from the history books. For each piece, I have also added the first line of both the translation and the Arabic.
1.6 When advised not to fight Ṭalḥah and Zubayr
“By God, I shall not behave like the hyena that, sleeping through a prolonged barrage of pebbles, is captured”
(p. 124)

1.7 Censuring a group of his challengers
“They made Satan master of their affairs and he made them his partners”
(p. 126)

1.8 Before the Battle of the Camel, about Zubayr
“He declares that he pledged allegiance with his hand but not his heart”
(p. 126)

1.9 Before the Battle of the Camel, in response to a speech by Talḥah
“They thundered and blazed but that is the way of cowards”
(p. 126)

1.10 During one of his battles
“Hark! Satan has mustered his host and armed his cavalry and infantry”
(p. 126)

1.11 Instructions to Ibn al-Ḥanafiyyah at the Battle of the Camel, charging him with the banner
“Mountains may move, but you should not”
(p. 128)

1.12 Following victory at the Battle of the Camel
“... Our fight has been witnessed by a mighty host in the loins of men”
(p. 128)

1.13 Following the Battle of the Camel, criticizing Basra and rebuking its people
“You fought for the woman and followed the camel”
(p. 128)

1.14 In Basra, following the Battle of the Camel
“Young land is close to the sea and far from the sky”
(p. 130)

1.15 In Medina after he became caliph, on returning ʿUthmān’s land grants to the treasury
“By God, even if the money had been spent to wed women”
(p. 130)
1.16 In Medina, when he became caliph
“I guarantee the truth of what I say and stand as surety for my pledge”
(Dhammi bima aqul rahimah waana ba zumma)

1.17 Censuring self-styled authorities
“The most hateful creatures in God’s eyes are of two kinds”
(An abguz al旭laaqatililah rijaalan)

1.18 Censuring scholars who follow their whims
“When a case comes to one of them, he passes judgment based on his capricious opinion”
(Tird al旭al旭m al旭al旭aqqiyah ... fikhum fihibna rayaalha)

1.19 When Ash‘ath challenged him on the pulpit
“What do you know about what goes against me”
(Woma ydirik ma aleyi)

1.20 What comes after death
“If you saw what the dead see”
(Faanikum lu waaima ma qad aain man matiin makum)

1.21 The swift passage of life
“The end is ahead of you and the dreaded hour drives your caravan to the waterhole”
(Faan al旭al旭aqqiyah amamak waan waaraam al旭al旭aqqiyah ta旭hadeekum)

1.22 Before the Battle of the Camel, on his opponents’ responsibility for ‘Uthmân’s killing
“Hear me! Satan has roared to his followers”
(Ala waan al旭shaytan qad damaa rizbe)

1.23 Unimportance of wealth, value of kin
“God’s command descends from the sky to the earth like raindrops”
(Faan al旭旭mir al旭旭amr al旭旭in al旭旭in al旭旭ismail al旭旭i al旭旭i al旭旭a旭旭i al旭旭addar al旭旭al旭旭ar al旭旭qantir al旭旭al旭旭ur)

1.24 Urging followers to fight for truth
“By my life, no softness or weakness shall hold me back from fighting those who challenge the truth”
(Wal旭旭meri ma aleyi .. mantal man k旭旭al旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭 .. from al旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭 .. from al旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭)

1.25 Censuring followers for not fighting in the cause of truth
“I only have you, Kufa”
(Ma haayi .. ila al旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭旭)
1.26 The Arabs before Islam, ʿAlī's situation when Muḥammad died, 'Amr ibn al-ʿĀṣ's corrupt deal with Muʿāwiyah  
"God sent Muḥammad as a warner to all peoples"  
(إنَّ الله يبعث محمدًا نذيرًا للعالمين)  
p. 144

1.27 Censuring followers for not fighting Muʿāwiyah, after Sufyān al-Ghāmidī's attack on Anbar  
"Jihad is a door to heaven that God has opened for his special devotees"  
(إنَّ الجهاد باب من أبواب الجنة فتحه الله الخاصة أولاهما)  
p. 146

1.28 Eid sermon containing pious counsel  
"The world has shown its back and proclaimed its farewell"  
(إنَّ الدنيا قد أدّرت وأذنت بوداع)  
p. 148

1.29 Censuring his followers, after Ḍaḥḥāk's attack on pilgrims at Thaʿlabiyyah  
"People! You are together in body but divided in aspiration"  
(أَيَّا الناس الجماعة أَبْدَانِهِم المَخْتَفِة أَهُوَم)  
p. 150

1.30 About ʿUthmān and his assassination  
"If I had commanded it I would be a killer"  
(لو أمرت به لكنت قاتلا)  
p. 152

1.31 Instructions to ʿAbdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās before the Battle of the Camel, to speak with Zubayr, not Ṭalḥah  
"Don't speak with Ṭalḥah, for you will find him a bull with twisted horns"  
(لا تلقين طلحة فإِن تلقه تُجْدَه كأَنَّهُ عاقِصًا قرنه)  
p. 152

1.32 Four categories of men who seek to rule, pious counsel  
"People! We live in a challenging age"  
(آيَّا الناس إننا قد أصبحنا في دهر عشود)  
p. 154

1.33 At Dhū Qār, before the Battle of the Camel  
"God sent Muhammad when no Arab read scripture"  
(إنَّ الله سبحانه يبعث محمدًا صلى الله عليه وآله وليس أحد من العرب يقرأ كُبْرَا)  
p. 156

1.34 After the Battle of Nahrawān, urging followers to fight Muʿāwiyah  
"Shame! I am tired of rebuking you!"  
(أَفَ كم قَد سَمِيت عتَابًا)  
p. 158

1.35 After the arbitration  
"I praise God even though this age has brought a great calamity"  
(الحمد لله وإن أتي الدهر بالخطاب القادح)  
p. 158
1.36 Before the Battle of Nahrawân, warning the Kharijites
“I warn you! Take heed or you will soon be corpses strewn at the bend of this river”
(فأنا ننذير لكم أن تصبحوا سوسيًا بالأضياء هذا النهر) p. 160

1.37 After the Battle of Nahrawân, describing his precedence in Islam, and his situation after the Prophet's death
“I answered Muḥammad's call when others held back”
(فقطت بالأمر حين فشلوا) p. 162

1.38 On doubt's resemblance to truth
“Doubt is called doubt because it resembles truth”
(وأنا ح湿地 الشبهة شبيهة لأنها تشبه الحق) p. 162

1.39 Censuring followers for not fighting, after the attack on ‘Ayn al-Tamr
“I am tested with followers who do not obey my command”
(منيب يمن لا يطيع إذا أمرت) p. 164

1.40 About the Kharijites' statement, “No rule save God's!”
“The statement is true, but the intent is false”
(كلمة حق يرد بها باطل) p. 164

1.41 ‘Alī and his enemy
“Loyalty is honesty's twin”
(إن الوفاء توأم الصدق) p. 166

1.42 In Basra, following the Battle of the Camel, pious counsel
“People! I fear most for you two things”
(بئه الناس إن أخوف ما أخف علكم أنتان) p. 166

1.43 When advised to hasten in attacking Mu‘āwiyah
“If I prepared to battle the Syrains while Jarīr is still with them, I would close the door to reconciliation”
(إن استعادي لحرب أهل الشام وجرير عندهم إغلاق للشام) p. 168

1.44 Following Maṣqalah's defection to Mu‘āwiyah, after the Banū Nājiyah incident
“May God strike Maṣqalah with shame!”
(يقبي اللهو مصقلة) p. 168

1.45 Eid sermon with pious counsel
“I praise God, never uncertain of his mercy”
(الحمد لله غير مقطوع من رحمته) p. 170
1.46 Supplication when marching on Syria

"God, protect me from the hardships of travel"

(آلهِمِّي أَعُوذُ بِهِم مِّن وَعَاءِ السَّنَرِ)

p. 170

1.47 Prophecy about Kufa

"I see you, Kufa, stretched like raw leather on display at the Market of 'Ukāz"

(كَأْتِي بِكِ يا كُوَّفَا تَمِينَ مَدَةَ الأَدْمِيِّ الْعَكَاشِ)

p. 170

1.48 Informing of his instructions to his vanguard, when commencing the march on Syria

"I praise God whenever night spreads and darkens"

(الَّذِي بَلَى وَقْبَ لِي وَغَضِبَ)

p. 172

1.49 God's transcendence

"Praise God, who is concealed in unseen mysteries"

(الَّذِي بَلَى خَفْيَاتِ الأَمْوَرِ)

p. 172

1.50 After the arbitration

"Revolt begins with the indulgence of whims"

(إِذَا بِدَأَ وَقْعُ الْفَتْنِ أَهوَاءَ تَبْعُ)

p. 172

1.51 Urging his army to fight at Ṣiffīn, when Muʿāwiyah blocked access to water

"By this act, they beg to be fed the victuals of war"

(قَدْ أَسْتَطَعَمُوْمَ الْقُتَالِ)

p. 174

1.52 Eid of Sacrifice sermon with pious counsel, sacrificial animal

"Harken! The world has severed its rope"

(أَلَا وَإِذَا الْدُّنْيَا قَدْ تَصَرَّمَتِ)

p. 174

1.53 The Medinans’ eagerness to pledge allegiance to him as caliph, reasons to fight the Syrians

"They crowded me like parched camels jostling at the waterhole"

(فَنَادِكُوا عَلَيْ ةِدَاكِ النَّبِيِّ الْهُنَّ يَوَمَ وَرُوُدُّهَا)

p. 176

1.54 To troops at Ṣiffīn, allaying their impatience to begin fighting

"You taunt, ‘All these excuses to avoid death!’"

(أَلْمَا فَوْلِكُمْ أَكْلُكُمْ ذَلِكْ نَكَاهَةَ الْمُوتِ)

p. 176

1.55 At or after the Battle of Ṣiffīn, describing Muḥammad’s Companions’ sincerity and courage

"We fought in support of God’s Messenger and killed our fathers"

(وَلَقَدْ كَتَبَ نَزَاخُ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ لَنْ نَقتِلْ آبَا نَا)

p. 178
1.56 Prophecy and instructions for the future
"After me, you will be ruled by a man with a large maw and a massive belly"
(أما إنه سيظهر عليك بعدي رجل رحب البالعوم) p. 178

1.57 To the Kharijites at Nahrawān
"May you be wiped out by sandstorms!"
(أصابكم حاصب) p. 180

1.58 Before the Battle of Nahrawān, when told that the Kharijites had escaped
"Their deaths are written on this side of the clear water"
(مصارعهم دون النطفة) p. 182

1.59 When warned about Ibn Muljam's intent to assassinate him
"I am protected by God's shield"
(وإن علي من الله جنت حصينة) p. 182

1.60 Censure of this world
"Hear me! The world is an abode from which you cannot be saved except within it"
(ألا وإن الدنيا دار لا يسلم منها إلا فيها) p. 184

1.61 Counsel to consciousness of God
"Be conscious of God, O servants of God, and outrace your imminent end with good deeds"
(واتقوا الله عباد الله وبادروا آجالكم بأعمالكم) p. 184

1.62 God's transcendence
"No state for God precedes another state"
(الذي لم تسبي له حال حالا) p. 186

1.63 Instructions to troops at Siffin
"Muslims! Sheathe yourselves in God's awe ... bite down hard on your back teeth"
(معاصر المسلمين أستمعوا الخشية ... وعضوا على التواغد) p. 186

1.64 Following the Prophet's death, response to report about the Assembly at the Portico
"Did you not remind them of the Messenger's directive"
(فهل أحستتم عليهم بأن رسول الله وصى) p. 188

1.65 When Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr was killed, and the Umayyads took over Egypt
"My own choice for governor of Egypt was Hāshim ibn ‘Utbah"
(وقد أردت تولية مصر هاشم بن عتبة) p. 190
1.66 Censuring followers for not fighting, after Ibn Bashīr’s attack on ‘Ayn al-Tamr
“How long should I coax you and blandish you? How long must I handle you gingerly as a young camel whose hump a heavy load would crush?”

p. 190

1.67 In the predawn hour of the day in which he was struck his death-blow
“Sleep overtook me as I sat, and the Messenger appeared before my eyes”

p. 192

1.68 Following Ṣiffīn, censuring followers for agreeing to a truce on the verge of victory
“Iraqis! You are like a pregnant woman who, at full term, delivers a stillborn child”

p. 192

1.69 Invoking blessings on the Prophet and praising him
“God, unfold of lands unfolded”

p. 192

1.70 About Marwān, when he offered the pledge to ‘Ali after the Battle of the Camel
“Did he not pledge allegiance to me right after ‘Uthmān was killed?”

p. 194

1.71 To the Shūrā Council, when they resolved to install ‘Uthmān as caliph
“You know full well that I have more right to the caliphate than anyone else”

p. 196

1.72 When the Umayyads accused him of complicity in ‘Uthmān’s killing
“Is the Umayyads’ own knowledge of my character not enough to stop them from injuring me?”

p. 196

1.73 Pious counsel
“May God have mercy on the man who listens to wisdom and retains”

p. 198

1.74 Response to a gift sent by Saʿīd ibn al-ʿĀṣ, ‘Uthmān’s governor in Kufa
“The Umayyads stingily throw at me my share of Muḥammad’s inheritance, piece by piece”

p. 198
1.75 A frequent supplication
“God, forgive my sins—you know more about them than I do”

1.76 To an associate who cited astrological portents and warned him against marching on the Kharijites
“Do you presume to guide me to the hour in which those who advance are shielded from injury?”

1.77 To the Basran army following their defeat at the Battle of the Camel, oblique censure of ‘Ā’ishah
“People! Women are deficient in faith”

1.78 Pious counsel
“People! To reject worldliness is to desire little”

1.79 Censure of the world
“How do I describe a world that begins in weariness and ends in death”

1.80 The Radiant Oration (Gharrā‘), lengthy pious counsel
“Praise God, exalted in his might and near through his grace”

1.81 ‘Amr ibn al-‘Āṣ’s hypocrisy and ‘Alī’s virtue
“How strange! The Harlot’s son tells the Syrians that I have a streak of foolishness”

1.82 God’s transcendence, paradise, pious counsel
“I bear witness that there is no god but God, who has no partner. He is the first, for there was nothing before him”

1.83 Pious counsel
“God knows your thoughts and discerns your feelings”

1.84 Pious versus immoral scholars, the Prophet’s family
“Servants of God! The most beloved of his servants ... keeps his passions under control”
1.85 In Medina, early in ʿAlī’s caliphate, describing the errant
“God has not crushed tyrants of any era except after a long respite”
(إِنَّ اللَّهَ لَا يَقْصُصُ جَبَّارِيَّ الدُّهْرِ قَدْ أَلَا بَعْدَ مُهِيلِ)
p. 222

1.86 On the Prophet’s mission
“God sent Muḥammad when an age had gone by without prophets”
(أَرْسَلَهُ عَلَى حَيْنَ فَتْرَةً مِنَ الرَّسَلِ)
p. 222

1.87 God’s transcendence, pious counsel
“God is recognized without being seen”
(الْحَمْدُ اللَّهِ الَّذِي لا يَقْبُرُهُ الْمَعَ)
p. 224

1.88 The Oration on Ethereal Forms (Ashbāḥ), on God’s transcendence, his creation of skies, angels, the earth, and prayer
“Praise God, whom withholding does not make richer”
(الْحَمْدُ اللَّهِ الَّذِي لَا يُقِيرُ الْمَعَ)
p. 226

1.89 After ʿUthmān’s death, when entreated to assume the caliphate
“Leave me and seek another”
(دَعُونِي وَأَتَمَسْوَ الْغِرِيْ)
p. 242

1.90 ʿAlī’s virtue, prophecy of the Umayyads’ harsh governance after him
“People! I have gouged out the eyes of revolt”
(أَيَا النَّاسَ فَأَعْفَأْتُ عَنْ اسْتِيَائِهِ)
p. 242

1.91 God’s transcendence, the Prophet’s ancestry, pious counsel
“Blessed is God! Vaunting aspirations cannot attain him”
(فَبَارِكَ اللَّهُ الَّذِي لَا يَلْبِغُهُ بَعْدَ الْحَمْمِ)
p. 246

1.92 Muḥammad’s mission
“At the time when God sent Muḥammad as a prophet, people wandered in confusion”
(بَعْثَهُ وَاللَّادِي ضَلَّلَهُ فِي هِيَةِ)
p. 246

1.93 God’s transcendence, the Prophet’s ancestry and mission
“Praise God! He is the first—there was nothing before him”
(الْحَمْدُ اللَّهِ الْأَوْلَيْ فَلاَ شَيْءٌ قَبْلَهُ)
p. 248

1.94 After the arbitration, chastising followers for disobedience, comparing them unfavorably to the Prophet’s Companions
“God may have granted the tyrant a reprieve, but he will surely apprehend him”
(وَلَوْنَ اِبْنُ اللَّهِ الْمُظَلِّمُ فَلَنْ يَفْوِتُ أَخَذَهُ)
p. 248
1.95 At Ṣiffīn, censuring the Umayyads

"By God, they will continue thus until they commit every forbidden act"

(وَالَّذِينَ لا يَزْنُونَ حَتَّى لا يُدْعَوْنَ إِلَيْهِ عَلَّمَةً إِلَّا أَسْتَهْلَوْهُ)

p. 252

1.96 Friday sermon early in ‘Alī’s caliphate, pious counsel

“We praise him for favors past and seek his help for what is to come”

(تمَّمْهُمُ عَلَيْهِ مَرْحَمَةٌ وَمَعْلُوَمَةٌ)

p. 252

1.97 Muḥammad and his family

“Praise God who extended his grace to all creatures”

(الْحَمْدُ لِلَّهِ الْمُتَكَبِّرِ)

p. 254

1.98 God’s transcendence, prophesy of an epic battle

“He is the first before every first”

(اًهَيْلُ إِلَى الْأَوَّلِ ِقُلُّ كَلَّا أَوَّلًا)

p. 254

1.99 Judgment day, prophecy of coming seditions

“One day, God will assemble all who went before and all who came after”

(وَذَلِكَ يَوْمٌ يَجْعَلُ اللَّهُ لَا يَذِيعُ نَارَهُ فِي الْأُولِيَاءِ وَالْآخِرِينَ)

p. 256

1.100 Pious counsel, praise of the learned, prophecy of difficult times to come

“Look at the world with the eyes of those who have little interest in her”

(انظروا إِلَى الْدُنْيَا نَظْرَ الزَّاهِدِينَ فِيهَا)

p. 258

1.101 ‘Alī’s support of the Prophet’s mission

“God sent Muḥammad as a prophet when no Arab read scripture”

(فَإِنَّ اللَّهَ سَبِعَةً بَعْثَ مُحамَّدًا صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَلَيَسَ أَحَدٌ مِنَ الْعَرَبِ يَقْرأُ كَبَابًا)

p. 260

1.102 In Medina early in ‘Alī’s caliphate, a leader’s accountability to God, pious counsel

“God sent Muḥammad as a witness, a herald, and a warner”

(بَعْثَ اللَّهُ مُحَمَّدًا شِهِبًا وَيَلْحَبُّهُ وَنَذِيرًا)

p. 262

1.103 Islam and its Prophet

“Praise God who paved the path of Islam”

(الْحَمْدُ لِلَّهِ الَّذِي شَرَعَ الْإِسْلَامَ)

p. 264

1.104 At Ṣiffīn, praising the right wing’s return to battle

“I saw you turn away from your battle lines and fall back”

(وَقَدْ رَأَيتُ جَوَالِكَ أَخْدَامَكَ عَنْ سَفُوفِكَ)

p. 266
1.105 God's majesty, the Prophet as a physician healing hearts, censure of followers for errant ways, warning of evil times

“Praise God, who appears to his creation through his creation”

(الحمد لله المتجلى خلقه جلبه) p. 268

1.106 God as creator and sustainer, angels, humans’ blind love for the world, imminence and horrors of death, praise for the Prophet and his family

“Everything bows to him, and everything exists through him”

(كل شيء خشوع له وكل شيء قام به) p. 270

1.107 Worship rites and God's remembrance

“The deeds that bring you closest to God are the following”

(إن أفضل ما توسل به الموسلون إلى الله) p. 276

1.108 Censure of the world

“I warn you against this world, for it is sweet and lush and surrounded by temptations”

(فأنا أحدكم الدنيا فإنها حلوة خضرة حفظ بالشواتات) p. 278

1.109 Angel of death

“Do you sense his presence when he enters a home”

(هل تخس به إذا دخل منزلًا) p. 282

1.110 Warning of life’s transience, censure of followers

“I warn you of this world: it is a home from which you will be uprooted”

(وأحدكم الدنيا فإنها منزل قلعة) p. 282

1.111 God's favors, pious counsel, and this world

“Praise God who has linked praise with favors and favors with thanks”

(الحمد لله الواصل الحمد بالنعم والنعم بالشكر) p. 284

1.112 Supplication for rain

“God, our mountains are parched, and our plains have filled with dust”

(اللهم قد أتصاحت جبالنا وأغيرت أرضنا) p. 288

1.113 The Prophet, followers’ reluctance to fight, warning of a despot to come

“God sent Muḥammad to call toward truth and bear witness to people”

(أرسله دعاءاً إلى الحق وشاهدًا على الحق) p. 290

1.114 Wealthy who fail to help the needy

“You don’t spend your wealth for the one who has provided it”

(فلا أموال بذلتها لذي زقها) p. 292
1.115 Praise of supporters, following the Battle of the Camel
“You are my supporters in the cause of truth and my brothers in faith”
(أتمّ الأنصار على الحقّ والإخوان في الدين) p. 292

1.116 Chastising supporters for apathy in the wake of a Syrian raid
“What is wrong with you? What you propose is not the right course or the proper way!”
(ما لكم لا سُدّتم لِرشد ولا هديتم لِقيد) p. 294

1.117 ‘Ali’s virtues, pious counsel
“By God! I have been taught the transmission of God’s messages”
(نيدلايفناوخإلاوّقحلاىلعراصنألامتنأ) p. 294

1.118 After the arbitration, to the emerging Kharijite faction
“This is how one who relinquishes a sound position is rewarded!”
(هذا جزء من ترك العقدة) p. 296

1.119 Reminding the Kharijites of their push for the arbitration, ‘Ali’s service to Islam
“When the Syrians raised leaves from the Qurʾan on spears—using trickery”
(أتم تقولوا عند رفعهم المصاحف حيلة) p. 298

1.120 Instructions to troops ahead of Ṣiffīn
“If any of you finds composure in his heart when meeting the enemy”
(وأي أي أمرئ منكم أحّس من نفسه رباطة جاش عند الكفاء) p. 298

1.121 Chastising followers for refusing to fight, presumably after Ṣiffīn
“I see you now, scuttling away like a group of thorn-tailed lizards”
(وأتي أنظر إليكم تكَّمّمون كشيش الوضِّابة) p. 300

1.122 Instructions to troops during Ṣiffīn, exhortation to fight for God’s cause
“Place the armor-clad in front and the unprotected behind”
(فقدِّموا الدارع وأخروا الحاس) p. 300

1.123 To the Kharijites, saying arbitration was sought from the Qurʾan
“I did not appoint men to arbitrate—I sought arbitration from the Qurʾan”
(إنّا لم نحكم الرجال وإنّا حكّمنا القرآن) p. 302

1.124 Response to complaints when ‘Ali levelled treasury stipends
“Do you urge me to seek victory by oppressing the people I rule?”
(أنا مروي أن أطلب النصر بالجور فيم وتليت عليه) p. 304
1.125 To the Kharijites
"Even if you insist—and you do so wrongly—on believing that I have sinned and erred"
(فإن أمُّكم إلَّا أن تَزعموا أنني أخطأت) p. 304

1.126 To Aḥnaf, foretelling epic fighting in Basra, interpreted as the Zanj revolt
"Listen, Aḥnaf! I see him marching with troops that raise no dust"
(يا أحنف كأني به وقد سار بالجيش الذي لا يكون له غبار) p. 306

1.127 Transience of life, corrupt trade practices
"Servants of God! You, with all that you desire of this world, are lodgers with fixed timespans"
(عباد الله إنكم وما تأملون من هذه الدنيا أثواباء مُوجلون) p. 308

1.128 To Abū Dharr al-Ghifārī when ʿUthmān exiled him to Rabaddah
"Abū Dharr, you were roused to anger in God’s cause"
(يا أبا ذر إلَّة غضبت الله) p. 310

1.129 Chastising followers for disobedience, ‘Ali’s righteousness
“You divided souls and fragmented hearts!”
(أَنَّهَا النَّفوسِ المُخْتَلَفَةِ وَالْقُلُوبِ المُشْتَتَة) p. 310

1.130 Pious counsel
“I give praise to God for what he has taken away and what he has granted"
(أَمُّه به ما أخذ وأعطى) p. 312

1.131 God’s omnipotence, the Qur’an’s guidance, Muḥammad’s mission, censure of this world
“This world and the hereafter have submitted their reins to God"
(وأتقادت له الدنيا والآخرة بارزُتها) p. 314

1.132 Response to ʿUmar’s query on personally marching against the Byzantines
“God has guaranteed to followers of this faith that he will protect their land"
(وقد توكلَّل الله لأهل هذا الدين بإغزاع الحوزة) p. 316

1.133 To Mughirah ibn al-Akhnas, who offered to ʿUthmān that he would handle ‘Ali
“You son of a barren, cursed father”
(يا أبن الغَّيْبِي الأَبَر) p. 316
1.134 Early in ‘Ali’s caliphate, on the Medinans sitting out the conflict
“Your oath of allegiance to me was not sworn on an impulse”
(لم تكن بيعكم إياي فلنة) p. 318

1.135 Preceding the Battle of the Camel, censure of Ṭalḥah and Zubayr, reminder of entreaties to ʿAli to assume the caliphate after ʿUthmān’s death
“By God, they have no cause to fault me”
(والله ما أنكروا متكرا) p. 318

1.136 Prophesy of epic fighting in Iraq
“He will bend passion to conform to guidance”
(يعطف الهوى على الهدى) p. 320

1.137 During the Shūrā Council
“No one will outpace me in calling to the truth”
(ان يسرع أحد قلبي إلى دعوة حق) p. 322

1.138 Forbidding the shaming of people for their sins
“It befits those who are protected … to show compassion to sinners”
(فإاقما ينغي لأهل العصمة … أن يرحموا أهل الذنوب) p. 322

1.139 Forbidding giving ear to rumors
“People! Whoever knows his brother to have strong faith and good ways should not give ear to the rumors men spread about him”
(آي الناس من عرف من أخي وثيقة دين وسداد طريق فلا يسمع متهم فيه أفوايل الرجال) p. 324

1.140 Urging giving to the needy and forbidding gifts to the undeserving
“A person who distributes gifts in unsuitable quarters ... earns only the praise of the immoral”
(وليس لواضع المعروف في غير حقه … من الحك فيما أتي إلا محضة الناس) p. 324

1.141 Supplication for rain
“Hark! The earth that carries you”
(ألا وإن الأرض التي تحملكم) p. 324

1.142 Praise of prophets and Muḥammad’s family, censure of enemies
“God singled out messengers and sent them bearing the revelation”
(بعث رسله بما خصّص به من وحيه) p. 326

1.143 The world’s vicissitudes, heretical innovations
“People! You are targets in this world at which the fates shoot their arrows”
(آي الناس إنا أتمنى في هذه الدنيا غرث تتلسل فيه المايا) p. 328
1.144 Response to 'Umar's query on personally marching against the Persians

“In this matter, victory or defeat will not hinge on how large the number of troops is or how small”

(إن هذا الأمر لم يكن نصره ولا خيالااته بكتره ولا بقله)

p. 330

1.145 Muḥammad's mission, warning of difficult times

“God sent Muḥammad to turn his servants away from worship of idols”

(فبعث محمدًا بالحق ليخرج عباده من عبادة الأوثان)

p. 332

1.146 Before the Battle of the Camel, criticizing Ṭalḥah and Zubayr

“Each of the two wants the caliphate”

(كل واحد منهما يرجم الأمر له)

p. 334

1.147 Pious counsel, just before ‘Alī’s death

“People! Each person shall meet what he flees as he flees”

(أي الناس كل أمرئ لاقى ما يفر منه في فراره)

p. 336

1.148 Sedition-mongers

“There those others went right and left, travelling the paths of error”

(أخذوا يمينا وشمالا ظعا في مسائل الغي)

p. 336

1.149 Pious counsel, coming seditions

“I ask him for aid against Satan’s expulsions and evictions”

(وأستعينه على مداج الشيطان ومزاجره)

p. 340

1.150 In Medina early in ‘Alī’s caliphate, God’s transcendence, God’s religion

“Praise God, who demonstrated his existence through his creatures”

(الحمد لله الدال على وجوده بخلقه)

p. 342

1.151 Enroute from Medina before the Battle of the Camel, pious counsel

“Such men, during the respite granted them by God, fall into error”

(وهو في ميلة من الله يهوي مع الغافلين)

p. 344

1.152 The family of the Prophet

“An intelligent person possesses a keen heart”

(وتأت قلب النبي به يبصر أمه)

p. 346

1.153 Marvelous creation of the bat

“Praise God! Descriptions are too feeble to plumb his core”

(الحمد لله الذي أخشرت الأوصاف عن كنه معرفته)

p. 350
1.154 To the people of Basra after the Battle of the Camel, his righteousness, oblique criticism of ʿĀʾishah, on sedition, and pious counsel

“At that time, whoever is able to bind himself totally to God should do so”

p. 352

1.155 Pious counsel

“Praise God, who made praise the key to his remembrance”

p. 354

1.156 The Prophet, the Umayyads, prophesy of a quick end to their rule

“God sent Muḥammad after a period without prophets”

p. 356

1.157 ʿAlī’s forbearance and care for the people

“I protected you well and strove to keep you safe”

p. 358

1.158 Placing hope in God, Muḥammad, Moses, David, and Jesus

“His command constitutes judgment and wisdom”

p. 358

1.159 The Prophet, pious counsel, life’s transience

“God sent Muḥammad with brilliant light”

p. 364

1.160 Response when asked: How is it that your tribe has driven you away from this station?

“You man of Asad! Your mount’s girth is loose, and you fire without aim”

p. 366

1.161 God’s transcendence, human creation

“Praise God, who created his servants”

p. 368

1.162 Advice to ʿUthmān, a little before his death

“People have gathered behind me, and they have sent me to negotiate”

p. 370

1.163 The marvelous creation of birds, especially the peacock, marvels of paradise

“God created wondrous creatures”

p. 374
1.164 Censuring the Umayyads, chastising followers for weakness and straying
“Let your young emulate your elders, let your elders nurture your young”
(ليتَؤْمَرُ سنَّةٌ صغيركُمْ بكبيركُمْ وَبَيركُمْ كبيِّركُمْ)
p. 380

1.165 Pious counsel, injunctions to care for the earth and animals
“God has revealed a book to guide you”
(إِنَّ اللَّهُ سَيِّئَانَاهُ أَنْزَلَ كِتَابًا هادِيًا)
p. 382

1.166 When urged to punish ‘Uthmān’s assailants
“Brothers, I am not unmindful of what you know, but how do I enforce retribution”
(لا إخوتاه إني لست أجهل ما تعلمن ولكن كيف لي بقوه)
p. 382

1.167 Before the Battle of the Camel, ‘Ali’s righteousness, his challengers’ iniquity
“God sent a messenger, a guide, with a book that speaks”
(إِنَّ اللَّهُ بَعِثَ رَسُولًا هادِيًا يَكْبَرُ نَاطِقًا)
p. 384

1.168 Injunction to a Basran to pledge allegiance
“If the people you represent had sent you as a scout to find out where the rains are falling”
(أَرَأَيْتُ لَوْ أَنَّ الَّذِينَ وَرَاءَكَ يعْتَمِكُ رَأَيْنَاهَا تَنْتَغَيْ فِم مِساَقَ الْقُطَّ)
p. 384

1.169 Prayer and address just before the Battle of Ṣiffīn
“God, O Lord of the lofty sky and layers of air”
(اللَّهُمَّ رَبُ السَّقَفِ المرفوع والجو المكفوف)
p. 386

1.170 Criticizing associates of the Camel, defending his right to the caliphate
“Praise God, from whom one sky does not conceal another”
(الحمد لله الذي لا تواري عنه سماه)
p. 388

1.171 Criticizing associates of the Camel, defending ‘Ali’s right to the caliphate, pious counsel
“Muḥammad was the trustee of God’s revelation”
(أَمْين وحِيِّه)
p. 390

1.172 In Medina when associates of the Camel revolted, Ṭalḥah’s complicity in ‘Uthmān’s killing
“I have never been one to be shaken by threats of battle”
(قد كنت وما أهدد بالحرب)
p. 392
1.173 ‘Alī’s closeness to the Prophet, censure of followers for moving away from God

“O heedless people who go not unheeded!”

(أَيُّهَا الْعَالَمُونَ غَيْرَ الْمُغْنِولِ عَنْهُمْ)

p. 394

1.174 Urging godliness, adherence to the Qurʾan, good deeds, and the licit

“Profit from God’s revelation”

(اتَّفَعَاءُ بِبِيَانِ اللَّهِ)

p. 394

1.175 Criticizing the arbitrators

“Your majority opinion settled on choosing two arbitrators”

(فَأَجَمعُ رَأْيُ مَلاَكُمْ أَنَّ أَخْتَارَوْا رَجُلينَ)

p. 400

1.176 In Medina early in ‘Alī’s caliphate, God’s transcendence, pious counsel, past events

“No matter can preoccupy him, no time can alter him”

(لا يَشْغِلُ شَانُهُ وَلَا يَعْبُرُ زَمَانُ)

p. 402

1.177 On God’s transcendence, in response to Dhi’lib’s question: “Have you seen your Lord?”

“Eyes do not see him through physical observation”

(لا تَدْرِكُ الْعِيْونُ بِمَشَاهِدَةِ الْعَبْرِانِ)

p. 402

1.178 Censuring associates for disobedience and apathy, condemning Muʿāwiyah and ‘Amr

“I offer praise to God for the affairs he has ordained”

(أَحْمَدَ اللَّهَ عَلَى مَا قَضَى مِنْ أُمُرِ)

p. 404

1.179 Condemnation of faction who left Kufa to join the Kharijites

“«Away with» them, «as the Thamūd were done away with!»”

(بَعْدُ هُمْ كَمَا بَعْدَهُمْ)

p. 406

1.180 God’s transcendence and creation, ubi sunt questions, God’s proof, martyrs of Siffin, call to jihad

“Praise God, to whom all creation arrives”

(الْحَمْدُ اللَّهِ الَّذِي إِلَيْهِ مَصَارِفُ الخَلَالِ)

p. 406

1.181 Praise of God, the Qurʾan’s guidance, pious counsel

“Praise be to God, recognized without being seen”

(الْحَمْدُ اللَّهِ الَّذِي مَعْرُوفٌ مِنْ غِيرِ رُؤْيَةِ)

p. 412

1.182 To the Kharijite Burj ibn Mus’hir, who shouted, “No rule save God’s!”

“Silence! May God disfigure you, you toothless driveller!”

(أَسْكُتُ قَيْبَحُ اللهِ بَيْنَ أَثْرِمْ)

p. 418
1.183 God's transcendence, the Prophet, God's marvelous creation, including the ant and the locust

“Praise God! Senses do not grasp him”

(الحمد لله الذي لا تدرك الشواهد)

p. 418

1.184 God's transcendence and creation

“Those who assign him a form have not acknowledged his oneness”

(ما وحده من كيبه)

p. 422

1.185 Praise of those “whose names are recognized in the heavens but remain unknown on earth,” prophesy of difficult times

“I would offer my father and mother as ransom for that host”

(آلا بأبي وأمي هم من عده)

p. 428

1.186 Piety, imminence of death

“People! I counsel you to be conscious of God and to give abundant thanks for his bounties to you”

(أوصيك أيا الناس يثقوا الله وكثر حمده على آلهائه إلهكم)

p. 430

1.187 Kinds of belief, migration, ‘Alī’s deep knowledge, urging people to learn from him before the arrival of sedition

“Some people’s hearts are firm and steadfast in belief”

(فمن الإيمان ما يكون ثابتا مستقرا في القلوب)

p. 430

1.188 Describing the pious and urging piety, recognition of God, God’s messenger, and his family

“I offer praise to God in thanks for his blessings”

(أحمده شكرًا للإعماه)

p. 432

1.189 Urging piety and preparation for the hereafter

“Praise God, whose praise is pervasive”

(الحمد لله الفاقي حمده)

p. 436

1.190 The Crushing Oration (Qāṣi‘ah) containing censure of Lucifer, tribal factionalism, and pride, on lessons provided by past nations who incurred exemplary punishments, Moses’ and Adam’s humility, placement of God’s Sacred House in a barren land, ubi sunt, chastisement of Muslims for straying from the path of truth, and description of ‘Alī’s closeness to the Prophet

“Praise God, who donned robes of might and pride”

(الحمد لله الذي لبس العر والكبراء)

p. 438

1.191 Oration to Hammām, describing the truly pious

“When God created people ... The pious in this world are people of virtue”

(فلتمتوق فيها هم أهل الفضائل)

p. 460
1.192 Hypocrites who feign faith
“*We praise God for having guided us toward obedience*”

1.193 Pious counsel
“*Praise God! He has revealed traces of his authority*”

1.194 The Prophet’s mission, pious counsel
“*God sent Muhammad when no waymark was raised*”

1.195 ‘Ali’s loyalty and special closeness to the Prophet
“*Muhammad’s true companions know*”

1.196 Urging piety, God’s knowledge, Islam, Muhammad’s mission, the Qur’an
“*He knows the bellowing of beasts in the forest*”

1.197 Ritual prayer, the alms-levy, and upholding trust
“*Be diligent in the matter of the ritual prayer*”

1.198 Condemning Mu‘āwiyah, declaring his own uprightness
“*By God, Mu‘āwiyah is not more astute than I, but he deceives and lies*”

1.199 Dissociating from evil people, Thamūd’s slaughter of God’s camel mare
“*People! Do not be nervous about following the path of guidance because its followers are few*”

1.200 Address to the Prophet at his graveside, after the death of Fāṭimah
“*Salutations to you, Messenger of God, from me and from your daughter who has come to stay with you*”

1.201 Pious counsel, preparation for the hereafter
“*People! The world is a passage and the hereafter your permanent home*”
1.202 Pious counsel, nearness of death

“Gather your supplies—May God have mercy on you!—for the call has come to depart”

(نَجِّهِوُا رَحْمَةُ اللَّهِ فَقَدْ نُودِي فِيكمُ بالرَّحِيل)

p. 480

1.203 To Ṭalḥah and Zubayr, who rebuked ‘Alī for levelling stipends

“You rebuke me for a small matter”

(الَّذِي تَعَمَّمَ يِسِيرًا)

p. 480

1.204 To supporters at Ṣiffīn who cursed the Syrians

“I don’t like you to curse! Rather, describe their deeds”

(إِنْيَ أَكْرِمَ لَكُمْ أَن تَكُونُوا سَباَبِينَ)

p. 482

1.205 At Ṣiffīn, when Ḥasan rushed into the fray

“Help me! Restrain this lad!”

(أَمْلِكَوْا عِنْي هَذَا الْعَالَم)

p. 484

1.206 At Ṣiffīn, when ‘Alī’s army insisted on accepting Mu‘āwiyah’s call for arbitration

“People! You have followed my command ... but now warfare has worn you out”

(أَيَا النَّاس إِنَّمَا بَلَّ أَمَٰرِي مَعَمِّك عَلَى مَا أَحْبَبَ حَتَّى نَيْكَتُمُ الحَرْب)

p. 484

1.207 ‘Alā’ al-Ḥārithī’s lavish house, his brother ‘Āṣim’s self-denial

“What will you do with this large house here in this world?”

(ما كنت تصنّع بسعة هذه الدوار في الدنيا)

p. 484

1.208 Four kinds of hadith reporters

“Reports current among people today include both the right and the wrong”

(إِنَّ فِي أُمِّي النَّاس حِكَمًا وَبَطَالًا)

p. 486

1.209 God’s sublime craftsmanship

“Through his supreme power and sublime and wondrous craftsmanship, God produced dry, solid earth from the raging, crashing, ocean masses”

(وَكَانَ مِن أَقْدَارِ جَبَرِيل وَبَيِّنَ تَطَافَ صَنْعَتِهِ أَنْ جَعَلَ مِن مَّاءِ الْاَلْخَازِرِ الْمَتَراَكِمَ المُقَاَصِفَ بَيِّنَّا جَامِدًا)

p. 488

1.210 For God to bear witness against those who were holding back from fighting for the truth

“God! I ask you, O greatest witness, to bear witness over any of your servants who hear my words”

(اِلْهُمَّ أَيْمَّا عَفَوْدِي عِنْ عَبَّادِكِ سَمِعْ مَقَالَتِي الْعَادِلَة)

p. 490
1.211 God's transcendence, praise of the Prophet

“Praise God—exalted beyond comparisons to created beings”

(p. 490)

1.212 Praise for those entrusted with preserving God’s knowledge

“I testify that God is the fount of justice”

(p. 492)

1.213 ‘Ali’s frequent supplication

“Praise God who brought me to this morning alive and healthy”

(p. 492)

1.214 At Ṣiffīn, describing ‘Ali’s and his subjects’ rights, forbidding flattery

“God has given me rights over you … you have rights over me”

(p. 494)

1.215 After the Battle of the Camel, describing opponents’ crimes in Basra

“God! I ask your help against the Quraysh! They have severed my kinship”

(p. 498)

1.216 After the Battle of the Camel, while passing corpses of Ṭalḥah and ʿAbd al-Raḥmān ibn ‘Attāb

“Abū Muḥammad sleeps here this morning, an exile from his home!”

(p. 500)

1.217 A pious man

“This man resuscitated his intellect and killed his sentient soul”

(p. 500)

1.218 Horrors of death, reciting Q Takāthur 102:1–2: «You are obsessed with gathering more and more until you visit your graves.»

“What a goal, and how distant!”

(p. 500)

1.219 Those who remember God, reciting Q Nūr 24:37: «They are men whom neither commerce nor trade distract from God’s remembrance.»

“God has made his remembrance the burnish for your hearts”

(p. 506)

1.220 Arrogant humans, reciting Q Infiṭār 82:6: «O human, what has deceived you into neglecting your Generous Lord?»

“Of all who could be questioned, you have the most unstable arguments”

(p. 508)
1.221 ‘Alī’s refusal to give treasury funds to ‘Aqīl, or to accept Ash‘ath’s inap-
propriate gift
“By God! I would prefer to lie on a bed of three-pronged Sa‘dān thorns”
p. 512

1.222 Supplication for honest wealth
“God! Protect my countenance through prosperity”

1.223 Censure of this world
“This is a residence encircled by trials and renowned for deceit”

1.224 Supplication for comfort and guidance
“God! You are the greatest comforter for those who love you”

1.225 An upright Companion
“May God cherish the land that produced that man!”

1.226 The fervor of the pledge to him as caliph
“You pulled my hand toward you, and I resisted”

1.227 Consciousness of God, approaching death, and renunciants
“Consciousness of God is the key to righteousness”

1.228 At Dhū Qār before the Battle of the Camel, praising the Prophet
“God’s Messenger proclaimed what he had been commanded to pro-
claim”

1.229 To ‘Abdallāh ibn Zama‘ah who asked for money from the trea-
sury
“These funds do not belong to me, and they do not belong to you”

1.230 The Prophet’s family, people of ‘Alī’s age
“Hark! The tongue is but an instrument wielded by men”
1.231 Differences among people according to the clay from which they are fashioned
"What differentiates them is the source of their clay"
(إذا فرق بينهم مادة طينهم) p. 522

1.232 Address to the Prophet while preparing his body for burial
"May my father and mother give their lives for you! Your death has cut short what the death of no other has"
(بأبي أنت وآمي لقد أقطع بموت ما لم ينقطع بموت غيرك) p. 522

Additional Orations p. 524

**Section 2: Letters:** Chapter containing selections from the Commander of the Faithful’s dispatches and letters to his enemies and his regional governors, including selections from instructions to his tax-collectors and testaments to his family and companions

2.1 To the people of Kufa, as ʿAlī marched on Iraq from Medina, on events preceding and after ʿUthmān’s death
"I write to inform you of what happened to ʿUthmān"
(فأنا أخبركم عن أمر عثمان) p. 530

2.2 To the people of Kufa, after the victory at the Battle of the Camel at Basra
"Residents of Kufa, may God reward you on behalf of your Prophet’s family!"
(وجراكم الله من أهل مصر عن أهل بيت نبيكم) p. 532

2.3 To his judge, Shurayh, who had just bought a large house: a “contract"
"Shurayh, soon there will come to you one who will not look at your written contract"
(يا شریح أما إن سياتح من لا ينظر في كتابك) p. 532

2.4 To Ibn Ḥunayf, governor of Basra, when ʿAlī, Zubayr, and ʿĀʾishah marched there, and many residents turned against ʿAlī
“If they reenter the canopy of obedience, then that is what we desire"
(فإن عادوا إلى ظل الطاعة فذاك الذي نحب) p. 534

2.5 To Ashʿath, governor of Azerbaijan, who had embezzled treasury funds
“Your governorship is not a meal for you to devour"
(وإن عملك ليس لك بطعمه) p. 534
2.6  Sent with Jarīr following the Battle of the Camel, to Mu’āwiyyah, persuading him to pledge allegiance  
“The same people who pledged allegiance to Abū Bakr, 'Umar, and 'Uthmān pledged allegiance to me”  
(إِنَّهُ بابِنِيّ القُومِ الذين بابعو أبا بكر وعمر وعثمان)  
p. 536

2.7  To Mu’āwiyyah, toward the end of the Battle of Ṣiffīn  
“I have received from you a string of advice, enclosed in an embroidered epistle”  
(فَقَدْ أَتِنَا مَنِكَ مُوَعَّدًا مُوصِلاً ورَسَالَةً مُحَبَّرةً)  
p. 536

2.8  To Jarīr, emissary to Mu’āwiyyah, before the Battle of Ṣiffīn, pressing for a decision  
“When you receive my letter, tell Mu’āwiyyah that he must take a final decision”  
(إِذَا تَلَقَّى كَتَابًا فَاحْمَل مَعَاوِيَة عَلَى الْفَصُّ)  
p. 538

2.9  Before the Battle of Ṣiffīn to Mu’āwiyyah, who had accused ʿAlī of envying the earlier caliphs  
“Our tribe decided to kill our Prophet and extirpate our root”  
(فَارَادَ قُوْمَآ خَلَّنَ بَيْنَّا وَآجِيَّاحُ أَصْلُنا)  
p. 538

2.10  To Mu’āwiyyah, just before marching to Ṣiffīn  
“How will you fare when the robes with which this world adorns herself … are stripped off?”  
(وَكِيْفَ أَنَّ صَانِعًا إِذَا تَكَشَّفَتْ عَنْكَ جَلَابِيْبُ مَا أَنَّ فِيهِ مِنَ دُنيَّا فَقَدْ تَحْجَتْ بِزِينَتِهَا)  
p. 540

2.11  Instructions sent from ʿAlī’s camp at Nukhaylah to Ziyād ibn al-Naḍr and Shurayḥ, commanders of his vanguard to Syria  
“When you reach the enemy, or when they reach you, set up camp just before the high ground”  
(إِذَا نُزِّمَتْ بَعْدُ أَوْ نَزَّلَ بِكِمْ فَلْيُكْنِي مَعَسَّرَمِ فِي قَلْبِ الأَشْرَافِ)  
p. 542

2.12  Instructions sent from Kufa to Maʿqil, commander of troops who were likely sent against the Kharijite Ḥurayth in Ramhormoz  
“Fear God, whom you must meet ... and fight only those who fight you”  
(أَنْتَ اللَّهُ الَّذِي لَا بَدِّلُ لَهُ مِنْ لَقَاهُ ... وَلا تَقاَطِعُ إِلَّا مِنْ فَاتَكَلِكَ)  
p. 542

2.13  To Ziyād ibn al-Naḍr and Shurayḥ, commanders of the vanguard to Syria, appointing Ashtar over them  
“I have appointed Mālik ibn al-Ḥārith al-Ashtar over both of you”  
(وَقَدْ أَمَرَ عَلَيْكُمَا ... مَالِكَ بَنَ الحَارِث الأَشْتَرِ)  
p. 544

2.14  Instructions to the army just before the Battle of Ṣiffīn  
“Don’t attack them unless they attack you first”  
(لا تَقْتِلُوا هُمْ بَكِّرًا تَقْتِلُوا)  
p. 544
2.15 Battlefield supplication

“God, it is to you that our hearts flow”

(اللَّهُمَّ إِلَيْكَ أَفْضِتَ القُلُوبُ)

p. 544

2.16 Instructions to the army at the Battle of Ṣiffīn

“Don’t hesitate to retreat then assail, to withdraw then attack”

(لاَ تَشْتَدُّ عَلَيْكُمْ فَرَّةٌ بعدها كُرْرَةٌ)

p. 546

2.17 To Muʿāwiyyah at Ṣiffīn, refusing to make him governor of Syria, denying that they were peers

“You demand Syria, but I’m not about to give you today what I refused you yesterday”

(فَأَمَّا طَلْبُكَ إِلَّا الشَّامَ فَأَيْنِ لَمْ أَكُنْ لِأُعْطِيكَ الْبَيْتَ مَنْ تَعْنَاكَ أَمْسَ)

p. 546

2.18 After the Battle of the Camel to ʿAbdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās, governor of Basra, instructing kindness to Tamīm tribesmen

“Know that Basra is where Iblīs landed after his fall from grace”

(وَأَمْلَى أَنَّ الْبُسُرَةَ مَيْطِبٌ إِلَيْهِ)

p. 548

2.19 To ʿAmr ibn Salamah, governor of Isfahan, in rebuke for harshness to the populace

“The Dihqān landowners in your province have complained of your harshness”

(فَإِنَّ دَاوُوَانَينَ أُهِلَ بَلَدَكَ شَكِّوْكُمْ مِنْكَ غَفُوُّا)

p. 548

2.20 To Ziyād, deputy governor of Basra, warning against misappropriating treasury funds

“I swear this by God, in all truth: If I hear that you have misappropriated funds”

(وَإِنَّيْ أَقْبَمْ بِاللَّهِ قُسْمًا صَادِقًا لَنْ تُبْلُغَ مَنْ بَلَغَ نَغْيُهُ مِنْ فِئَةِ الْمُسْلِمِينَ)

p. 550

2.21 To Ziyād, deputy governor of Basra, warning against extravagance

“Turn from extravagance to moderation”

(قُدِّعِ الْإِسْرَاءِ مَقْتَدِصًا)

p. 550

2.22 To ʿAbdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās in Mecca, following his misappropriation of treasury funds, counselling focus on the hereafter

“A man is gladdened by obtaining a thing that he was not going to lose”

(فَإِنَّ الْمُرَءَ يُسَرِّهِ ذَرَّةٌ مَا لم يُكْنِ لِي مَيْنُوُهُ وَيُسَوِّهُ فَوْتُ مَا لم يَكْنِ لِي مَيْنُوُهُ)

p. 550

2.23 Testament to family and close associates after the death blow

“This is my testament to you: Do not assign partners to God”

(وَصَنْتُي لَكُمْ أَلَا تَشْرُكُوا بِاللَّهِ شِيَئًا)

p. 552
2.24 ‘Ali’s will, written after Ṣiffīn, regarding distribution of properties

“This is what I—God’s servant, ‘Ali ibn Abī Ṭālib, Commander of the Faithful—have directed with regard to my property in the pursuance of God’s pleasure”

(هذا ما أمر به عبد الله علي بن أبي طالب أمير المؤمنين في ماله أن يганه وجه الله)

p. 552

2.25 Instructions to tax collectors about compassion to subjects when assessing their herds, and care while bringing animals to the treasury

“Set out in consciousness of God”

(انطلق على تقوى الله)

p. 554

2.26 To Mikhnaf, sent to collect taxes, warning against abusing subjects or misappropriating funds

“‘Ali commands his tax collector to be conscious of God in private affairs and hidden acts”

(أمره يتقى الله في سراي أمره وخفيات أعماله)

p. 558

2.27 To Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr on his appointment as governor of Egypt, instructing piety, fairness, and kindness

“Lower your wing over them”

(أخفض هم جناحك)

p. 558

2.28 Before the Battle of Ṣiffīn to Muʿāwiyah, who again accused ‘Ali of envy toward the first three caliphs, virtues of the Prophet’s family, iniquities of Muʿāwiyah’s clan

“I received your letter in which you speak of how God selected Muḥammad”

(فقد أناني كتبك تذكر فيه أصلفنا الله محمدًا)

p. 562

2.29 To the people of Basra, following Muʿāwiyah’s seizure of Egypt, when Muʿāwiyah sent Ibn al-Ḥaḍramī to foment dissent in Basra, and ‘Ali’s commander Jāriyah defeated and killed him

“You know this well: You severed your rope of allegiance earlier and seceded from the community”

(وقد كان من أنشر حيلكم وشفاقكم)

p. 570

2.30 To Muʿāwiyah, presumably before the Battle of Ṣiffīn, persuading him to obedience

“Fear God in all that you do”

(فائق الله فيما لديك)

p. 572
2.31 The Testament of Ḥasan, written on the way back from Ṣiffīn, containing lengthy pious counsel

"From a father who admits the power of time"

(من الوالد الذي برن اعت商品房) p. 572

2.32 To Muʿāwiyah, presumably in the lead-up to Ṣiffīn

"You have destroyed a whole generation of people"

(وأوديت جيلاً من الناس) p. 594

2.33 To Qutham, governor of Mecca, a few months before ‘Alī’s death, warning of Muʿāwiyah’s agents fomenting dissent during the hajj

"My agent in the west has written to inform me that a group of Syrians ... are being sent to Mecca this hajj season"

(فإن غني بالغرب كتب إلي يعلمني أنه وجه على المسم أناس من أهل النام) p. 596

2.34 To Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr, governor of Egypt, extolling Ashtar and explaining ‘Alī’s reasons for sending him to take over

"I have learned that you are distressed at my sending Ashtar to take charge of your region"

(وقد بلغني موجدتك من سرير الأشتر إلى عملك) p. 596

2.35 To ‘Abdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās, praising Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr, who had been killed in Egypt, and describing ‘Alī’s unsuccessful efforts to send aid

"Egypt has been conquered, and Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr—may God have mercy on him!—has gained martyrdom"

(فإن مصر قد فتحت محمد بن أبي بكر رحمه الله قد أسلم) p. 598

2.36 To ‘Aqīl in Medina, describing Ḥujr’s fight against Daḥḥāk, who had raided Iraq, condemning the Quraysh and declaring ‘Alī’s resolve to continue fighting in the path of truth

"I dispatched a large army of Muslims to fight him"

(فرتحت إليه جيشًا كثيرًا من المسلمين) p. 598

2.37 To Muʿāwiyah, before the Battle of Ṣiffīn, accusing him of using ‘Uthmān’s killing for his own benefit, and of abandoning him earlier, when asked to aid him

"Great God! How fervently you cling to your outlandish passions"

(فسبحان الله ما أشد رومك لأهواء المبدهة) p. 600

2.38 To the people of Egypt, when appointing Ashtar as governor

"... I have sent you one of God’s own servants, who neither sleeps during the days of danger"

(فقد بعثت إليكم عبدًا من عبار الله لا يائم أيام الخوف) p. 602
2.39 Warning to ʿAmr ibn al-ʿĀṣ before marching on Šīffīn
"You have subordinated your faith to the worldly gain promised to you by a man whose deceit is plain"
(فَإِنَّكَ جَعَلْتَ دِينًا بَعْضًا لِدَنَّاهُ أَمْرًا فَظَاهَرَ غَيْهِ)

p. 602

2.40 To a governor, possibly ʿAbdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās, who had misappropriated funds
"I am informed that you have done something, which, if you have done it, means you have angered your Lord"
(فَلَايِنَّكَ عَنْكَ أَمْرًا إِنَّكَ فَعَلْتَهُ فَقَدْ أَحْطَتْ رِبَّكَ)

p. 604

2.41 Sent shortly before ʿAlī’s death, possibly to ʿAbdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās in Mecca, rebuking him for misappropriation of funds
“I had shared my charge with you”
(فَلَايِنَّكَ أَشِرْتُكَ فِي أَمْنِيَّ)

p. 604

2.42 To ʿUmar ibn Abī Salamah, governor of Bahrain, recalling him to participate in the march on Syria, and replacing him with al-Nuʿmān ibn Ḥajān
“I have appointed al-Nuʿmān ibn Ḥajān over Bahrain”
(فَلَايِنَّيْنَى أَشِرْتُكَ فِي إِمْنِيَّ)

p. 606

2.43 To Maṣqalah, governor of Ardashīr, rebuking him for misappropriation of treasury funds
“I am informed that you have done something, which, if you have done it, means that you have angered your Lord”
(فَلَايِنَّكَ أَمْرًا إِنَّكَ فَعَلْتَهُ فَقَدْ أَحْطَتْ إِلَهَكَ)

p. 608

2.44 To Ziyād, warning against Muʿāwiyah’s blandishments
“I have learned that Muʿāwiyah wrote to you in an attempt to befuddle your mind and dull your blade”
(وَقَدْ عَرَفَ أَنَّ مَعَاوِيَةَ كَتَبَ إِلَيْكَ يَسْتَرْلَكَ وَيَسْتَغْلِبَ غَزْبَكَ)

p. 608

2.45 To Ibn Ḥunayf, governor of Basra, rebuking him for favoring the wealthy, Fadak, which was taken from his family, his own renunciant ways and compassionate governance, censure of the world, pious counsel
“Ibn Ḥunayf, I am informed that one of Basra’s grandees invited you to a feast and you rushed to go”
(فَلَايِنَّيْنَى أَنَّ رِجَالًا مِنْ فَيْنَّيْهَا أَهْلُ البَصْرَةِ دَعَعَكَ إِلَى مَأْدَبَّ فَأَسْرَعَتْ إِلَيْهَا)

p. 610
2.46 To Ashtar, governor of Naṣībīn, recalling him after the arbitration, sending him to Egypt
"You are one of those whose support I rely on to establish our religion"
(إِنَّكَ مَنْ أَسْتَظَهَرْتُ به ٍ إِلَى إِقَامَةِ الْدِّينِ)
p. 616

2.47 Testament of counsel for Ḥasan and Ḥusayn after the death blow, and for ʿAlī’s family, urging restraint in blood retaliation
“I counsel you both to remain conscious of God. Do not seek this world even if it seeks you”
(أُوْصِيْكَٰا بِتَقُوَّى اللَّهِ وَأَنْ لاَ تَبْعَى الدَّنْيَا وَإِنْ يَعْتَكُكَ)
p. 616

2.48 To Muʿāwiyah at Ṣiffin, reluctantly accepting arbitration, warning him against treachery, and underscoring ʿAlī’s submission to the ruling of the Qur’an
“Treachery and lies kill a man’s faith and ruin his worldly affairs”
(وَإِنَّ الْبَغْيَ وَالزَّوْرُ يَتَرَكْنَا بِالرَّسُولِ ﷺ وَدِينَهُ وَدَنِيَّةَ)
p. 618

2.49 Warning to ʿAmr ibn al-ʿĀṣ, sent from Nukhaylah, just before the march on Syria
“This world distracts you from the next”
(فَإِنَّ الْدَّنْيَا مُسْتَغْفُرَةَ عَنْ غَيْرِهَا)
p. 620

2.50 To his commanders, declaring his principled policies and offering pious counsel
“It befits those in authority”
(فَإِنَّ حَقَّاً عَلَى الْوَلِيِّ)
p. 620

2.51 To tax collectors, instructing justice and compassion, and warning against unfair seizure of property from subjects, whether Muslim, Christian, or Jew
“Whoever fails to care about his end, fails to safeguard himself by advancing provisions for his soul”
(فَإِنَّ مَنْ لَمْ يُحِذِّرْ مَا مَوْئِلٌ إِلَيْهِ لَمْ يَقْدَمْ لنَفْسِهِ ما يُحْذِرُهُ)
p. 620

2.52 To governors on timings of the ritual prayers
“Pray the noon prayer when the sun casts a shadow equal to a squatting goat”
(فَصُلُّوا بالَّنَاسِ الْظُّهْرِيَّةَ حِينَ تَغْيِّرُ الْبَرْقُاءَ مِثْلَ مَرْضِيْضِ الْعَنْطَزِ)
p. 622
2.53 The Testament of Ashtar (ʿAhd al-Ashtar) on his appointment as governor of Egypt, lengthy instructions on fair, kind, and astute governance, pious counsel

“This is what God’s servant, ‘Ali, Commander of the Faithful, commands Mālik ibn al-Ḥārith al-Ashtar, in the epistle he writes appointing him governor of Egypt”

p. 624

2.54 To Ṭalḥah and Zubayr, preceding the Battle of the Camel, urging them to return to the fold

“Although you deny this now, you know that I did not approach the people”

p. 646

2.55 To Muʿāwiyah in the lead-up to the Battle of Ṣiffīn, urging him to return to the path of truth

“God created this world for the hereafter”

p. 648

2.56 To Shurayḥ, when appointing him commander of the vanguard to Syria, pious counsel

“Be conscious of God every morning and every night”

p. 650

2.57 Sent from Dhū Qār to the people of Kufa, urging them to join ‘Ali in fighting the associates of the Camel at Basra

“I have marched from my hometown as either oppressor or oppressed”

p. 650

2.58 To the garrison towns, describing the Battle of Ṣiffīn

“Events began thus: We and the Syrians faced off”

p. 650

2.59 To Aswad ibn Quṭbah, commander of Ḥulwān, pious counsel

“A ruler’s passions, if they lean in one direction”

p. 652

2.60 To administrators through whose lands ‘Ali’s army was marching

“I have dispatched troops who, God willing, will pass through your lands”

p. 652

2.61 To Kumayl, governor of Hit, rebuking him for failing to defend against Sufyān ibn ‘Awf’s attack

“A man’s neglect of what he has been charged with”

p. 654
2.62 To the people of Egypt, sent with the newly appointed governor Ashtar, on events after the Prophet's death, 'Ali's righteousness, the Umayyads, urging the Egyptians to fight for the truth

“God sent Muhammad as warner for the world”

(فَانَ اللَّهِ سَيِّباهِ بِعَجّ مُحَمَّدًا نَذِيرًا لِلْعَالَمِينَ) p. 654

2.63 To Abū Mūsā, governor of Kufa, when he urged the people not to support 'Ali in the Battle of the Camel, rebuking and dismissing him from his post

“I am told that you have spoken words that go both for you and against you”

(فَقُدْ بَلَغَني عَنْكَ قُولُهُ وَعَلِيْكَ) p. 658

2.64 To Mu‘āwiyah, presumably in the lead-up to the Battle of Ṣiffīn, who had written accusations and demands

“Yes, my clan and yours were on terms of affection and unity, as you say”

(فَإِنَّا كَأَنْ نَحْنُ وَأَنْتُمْ عَلَى مَا ذَكَرْتُمْ مِنَ الْأَفْخَامِ وَالْجَمَاعَةِ) p. 658

2.65 After the Battle of Nahrawān, to Mu‘āwiyah, who had demanded that 'Ali appoint him successor

“This is the time for you to understand fully the affairs swiftly unfolding before your eyes”

(فَقُدْ أَنْ لَكَ أَنْ تَتَنَفَّعْ بِالْحَمْلِ الْبَاسِرِ مِنْ عَيَانِ الأَمْوَاتِ) p. 662

2.66 To ʿAbdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās, likely sent from Kufa to Mecca, shortly before 'Ali's death

“A man is overjoyed by gaining a thing he was not going to lose”

(فَإِنَّ العَدِيدَ لَيْبَرُّهُ بِالْشَّيْءِ الَّذِي لَمْ يَكُنْ لِيْفُوْهُ) p. 664

2.67 To Qutham, governor of Mecca, on leading the hajj, teaching the pilgrims, and disbursing charity

“Lead the hajj among the people and remind them to revere these, God's special days”

(فَأَقْمُ لِلنَّاسِ الحَجَّ وَذِكْرُوهُمْ بِأَيَّامِ اللَّهِ) p. 664

2.68 To Salmān, before 'Ali's caliphate, pious counsel

“This world is like a snake”

(فَإِنَّ مَثَلَ الدُّنْيَا مَثَلُ الْحَيَّةِ) p. 664

2.69 To Ḥārith, pious counsel

“Hold fast to the Qur'an and embrace its counsel”

(وَمَسِكِّ بِحَلِّ القُرآنِ وَأَنْتَصِحُهُ) p. 666
2.70 To Sahl, governor of Medina, telling him not to grieve over defectors

“I have learned that men from your town are stealing out to join Mu‘āwiyyah”

(فقد بلغني أن رجالاً من قَبَلَك يَتَسَلَّلون إلى معاوية)

p. 668

2.71 To Mundhir, governor of Iṣṭakhr, chastising him for misappropriation of treasury funds

“I was deceived about you by your father’s piety”

(فَإِنَّ صَلاَح أَبِيك عَزْرِيّ منك)

p. 668

2.72 To ʿAbdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās in Mecca, containing pious counsel

“You will not exceed your lifespan or be granted sustenance that is not yours”

(فَإِنَّك لَست بِسابق أَجْلَك وَلَا مَرْزَوقٍ مَا لَيْسَ لَكِ)

p. 670

2.73 To Mu‘āwiyyah, possibly after the arbitration, rejecting his demands to make him successor

“I attribute to weak judgment … the fact that I exchanged letters with you”

(فَأَّنَّى عَلَى الْتَرْدُدُ فِي جَرَبِكِ … لَمْ يَمَهْنَ رَأِيٍّ)

p. 670

2.74 Treaty between the tribes of Yemen and Rabī‘ah

“This is what the people of Yemen … have agreed upon”

(هَذَا مَا أَجْتَمعُ عَلَيهِ أَهْلِ يَمِينِ)

p. 672

2.75 From Medina early in ʿAlī’s caliphate to Mu‘āwiyyah, explaining recent events and instructing him to take the pledge of the caliphate for ʿAlī in Syria

“… You know that I was justified both in my efforts for your clan and in turning away from them”

(فَقَد عَلِمْتَ إِذَا فَيْكَ إِفْخُمْ إِمَّرَاطِي عَنْكِ)

p. 672

2.76 To ʿAbdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās, while appointing him governor of Basra after the Battle of the Camel

“Be generous with your attention”

(سُعُ النَّاس بِوجَهَكَ)

p. 674

2.77 To ʿAbdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās, sent to debate the Kharijites

“Don’t argue with them on the basis of the Qur’an”

(لا تَخَاطِبُهم بِالْقُرْآنِ)

p. 674

2.78 To Abū Mūsā in the lead-up to the arbitration

“The state of the people is such that many have bartered away most of their allotted share”

(فَإِنَّ النَّاس قد تَغِيّرٌ كَثِيرٌ مِنْهُمْ عَنْ كَثِيرٍ مِنْ حُظُّهُمْ)

p. 674

Additional Letter

p. 676
Section 3: Sayings: Chapter containing selections from the Commander of the Faithful’s wise sayings and words of counsel, including selections from his answers to questions and short texts from all genres of his literary production [Includes aphorisms and short texts not listed here, and the following longer pieces]:

3.1 First aphorism in Sayings chapter
“In times of sedition, be like a young camel buck”
(كن في الفتنة كأن اللبَن) p. 678

3.26 Four pillars of faith, four pillars of unbelief, four branches of doubt
“Faith stands on four pillars: forbearance, conviction, justice, and struggle against evil”
(الإيمان على أربع دعائم على الصبر واليقين والعدل والجهاد) p. 684

3.33 Warning to Hasan about whom not to befriend
“My dear son, remember four things from me”
(يا بنى أحفظ عنى أربعًا) p. 688

3.69 Addressing this world, Dirār’s report
“World, O world, get away from me!”
(يا دنيا يا دنيا إلى كِئِل عنيّ) p. 696

3.70 Destiny and the march on Syria
“Woe! Perhaps you think destiny is final”
(وَيَهُك لَعَلَّكّ فَلَنَت قَضَاء لازمًا) p. 696

3.73 Five traits of character
“I counsel you to five traits so precious it is only right that you should whip your camels to reach them”
(أوصيكم بخمس لو ضربتم إليها آيات الإبل لكانت لذلك أهلا) p. 698

3.95 To Nawf al-Bikālī, pious counsel, David and Jesus as exemplars
“Nawf, blessed are those who reject worldliness”
(يا نوفر طلبي للفاعدين في الدنيا) p. 704

3.99 Vagaries of the heart
“There is a piece of flesh attached to the jugular vein”
(لقد علق بينياط هذا الإنسان بقضعة) p. 706

3.110 Clans of Quraysh, Hāshim
“Makhzūm are the sweet blossoms of Quraysh”
(آمَّا بوخزوم فريحانة قريش) p. 710
3.112 When a man laughed while following a funeral procession
“We behave as though death were decreed for everyone other than ourselves”
(وَكَانَ الْمَوْتُ فِي هَا عَلَى غَيْرَنَا كَبِيبٍ)
p. 712

3.119 Address to residents of graves
“O people of desolate abodes”
(يا أهل الديار المحشبة)
p. 714

3.120 To a man who criticized this world
“You who reproach this world—do you choose to be deceived by her yet censure her?”
(أَيُّهَا الْدَّارُ الَّذِينَ أُتْبِعُ بِهِ وَاتْبَعُونَا مِمَّثَلَهَا)
p. 714

3.124 The Qur’an’s promise
“Whoever is granted four gifts will not be refused four others”
(وَمَنْ أُوْصِيَ أَرْبَعًا لَا يُصِيرُ أَرْبَعًا)
p. 718

3.133 To Kumayl on the virtues of knowledge, vaunt of his own knowledge, and the continuity of God’s proof through one who upholds it in all ages
“Kumayl, these hearts are like vessels, and the best are those that best receive and store”
(يا كِيلِ بن زِياد إن هَذِهِ القَلُوبُ أُوْعَيْهْ نَفْحِيْهَا أُوْعَاهَا)
p. 720

3.136 Pious counsel in Kufa after the Battle of Nahrawān
“Do not be one of those who expect the hereafter without work”
(لا تَكُنْ مَنْ يَرْجُو الآخِرَةَ بِغَيْرِ الْعَمْل)
p. 722

3.237 Reasons for the Shari‘ah laws
“God has mandated belief to purify you from polytheism”
(فَرضَ اللَّهُ الإِيمَانَ تَطَهِّرًا مِنَ الشَّرِّكِ)
p. 746

3.245–253 Section on Rare Words: A selection from ‘Ali’s sayings that need lexical explanations

3.245 First aphorism in Rare Words Section
“When that happens, religion’s queen bee will rest its abdomen on the ground”
(فَإِذَا كَانَ ذَلِكَ صَرْبٌ يَعْصَوبُ الْدِّينَ بَذَّنَبِهِ)
p. 752
3.263 The Ka'bah's ornaments
“At the time when the Qur'an was revealed to the Prophet, there were four kinds of property”
(إنَّ الْقُرآنَ أَنَزلَ عَلَى النَّبِيَّ وَالأَمْوَالَ أَرْبَعَةَ)
p. 764

3.275 The Prophet
“In a time now past, I had a brother whom I loved in God's name”
(كَانَ لِي فِي مَنْسُوبٍ أَخُنِّي فِي اللَّهِ)
p. 768

3.277 Condolence to Ash'ath on the death of his son
“Ash’ath, it is fitting that you mourn your son”
(يَا أَشْعَثُ إِنْ تُحْزِنَ عَلَى أَبْنَكَ)
p. 770

3.319 A believer
“A believer shows his joy in his face and hides his sorrow in his heart”
(الْمُؤْمِنُ يَبْشِرُ بِمَشَافِعِهِ وَيَكْبِرُ بِسَرْحِهِ)
p. 782

3.327 Pious counsel
“Words are remembered, intentions are tested, and «every soul is mortgaged to what it has earned.»”
(الْكَعْبَةُ مُحْفُوظَةُ وَالْسَرْرَاءِ مَبْلَوَةُ وَكُلُّ نَفْسٍ يَمْثَلُ مَكْسَبَتُ رَحْمَتِي)
p. 784

3.359 Pious counsel
“People! The stuff of this world is like rotten grass”
(يَا أَيُّهَا النَّاسُ مَتَاعُ الْدُنْيَا حُطَامُ مَوْيَهُ)
p. 790

3.353 Counsel to Jābir
“The world is sustained by four types of people”
(الْمَوْعِظَةُ الْأَقْلَالِ مَوْعِظَةُ الْقَبَّالِ)
p. 794

3.358 On sustenance being decreed and the need for contentment
“Sustenance is of two types”
(الْقَدْرُ وَالْأَزْقَانُ)
p. 796

3.367 How to apportion time
“The believer divides his time into three parts”
(قَطَاعُ الْأَحْيَانِ ثَلَاثَ سَاعَاتٍ)
p. 800

3.387 Spending wealth for good
“My dear son, do not leave your wealth for others to inherit”
(بَنٌّيُّ أَخَوٍّ لا تَعْطِفْنَ وَرَكَانَكَ شَيْئًا مِنَ الْدُنْيَا)
p. 804

3.388 How to seek God's forgiveness
“May your mother be bereaved! Do you know what it means to beg God's forgiveness?”
(لَبِّكَ أَمْكُ أَدْرِي ما الْسَعْفَةُ)
p. 806
3.403 God's special devotees

“God's special devotees are those who perceive the world's reality”

(إنَّ أُولياء اللَّه هم الذين نظروا إلى باطن الدنيا)

p. 810

3.429 Last aphorism in Sayings chapter

“Many are seduced by praise”

(رب مفتون بحسن القول فيه)

p. 816

Additional Sayings

p. 818

Raḍī’s Conclusion

p. 824
Text and Translation

..
Nahj al-Balāghah

The Wisdom and Eloquence of 'Alī

Compiled by al-Sharīf al-Raḍī (d. 406/1015)
بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم

أما بعد حمد الله الذي جعل الخدمة ثمنًا لنعمانه ومعادًا من بلاله ووسيلًا إلى جانبه 
وسببًا لزيادة إحسانه. والصلاة على رسوله نبي الرحمة وإمام الأئمة وسرار الأمة 
المتخبة من طبقة الكرم وسلالة المجد الأقدام ومغفر الفخور المعرق ورفع العلاء 
المثير المرور. وعلى أهل بيته مصباح الظلم وعصم الأمم ومنار الدين الواضحة ومثقل 
الفضل الراجحة. صلى الله عليه أجمعين صلاة تكون إزاء لفضلهم ومكافأة لعملهم 
وكفاء لطيب فرعهم وأصلهم ما أنثر جز ساطع وخلية تجم طالع.

فإِنَّكَ فِي عَفْوَانِ السَّنَةِ وَغَضَابَةِ الغَضَّةِ الْغَسَنِ أَبْدَأْتَ بِتَأْلِيفِ كِتَابٍ فِي 
خَصَاصّ الأَلْبَاءِ عَلَى الْسَلَامِ يَشَاءَلَ عَلَى مَحَايَنِ أَخْبَاهُم وَوَجَاهَ كَلَامِهِمُ الْحَدَائِقِ 
عَلَى غَرْضِ ذِكْرِهِ فِي صَدْرِ الْكِتَابِ وَجُلْطَةِ أَمَامِ الكَلَامِ. وَفَرَغَ مِنَ الْخَصَاصِ الْأَلْبَاءِ 
تَخَصُّ أَمِيرَ الْمُؤُمِنِينَ عَلَى عَلَيِّ كَلَامِ الْسَلَامِ وَعَايَتَهُ عَنِ إِثْمِ بَعْثِ بَقِيَّةِ الْكِتَابِ 
مَحَاجَاتِ الآيَاتِ وَمَا مَطَلَّ الزَّمَانِ. وَكَتَبَ قَدْ بَوَيْتَ مَا خَرَجَ مِنَ الْأَبْوَاَبِ وَفَصَّلَهُ فَصَّلًا فَجَاوَ 
آَحْرَهَا فَصِلَ يَتَضَمَّنُ مِحَايَنَهُ مَا نَقْلَ عَنْهُ عَلَيْهِ السَلَامِ مِنَ الْكَلَامِ الْقَصِيرِ فِي 
الْمَوْاعِظَ الْحَكِيمَةِ وَالْأَمَالِ الْأَدْبِ دَوَنَ الخَطَّبِ الطَّوِيلَةِ وَالْكِتَابِ الْمُسْتَوِيَةِ.

فَأَشْتَخَصَ جَمَاعَةٌ مِنَ الْأَصْدَاقِةِ مَا أَشْتَقَّ عَلَى الْفَضْلِ الْمُقَدِّمِ ذَكَرَهُ مَعْجِبٌ 
بِبَيْدَائِهِ وَمَتَعِجِبٌ مِنَ نَواصِعِهِ وَسَأْلُونِي عِنْدَ ذَلِكَ أَنْ أَبْدَأْ بِتَأْلِيفِ كِتَابٍ يَحْتَويَ عَلَى 
مُخَتَّارِ كَلَامٍ أَمِيرِ الْمُؤُمِنِينَ عَلَى الْسَلَامِ فِي جَمِيعِ فَنُوْحِهِ وَمُتَشْعِبَةِ غَصْوَانِهِ مِنْ خَطِبَ 
وَكِتَابٍ وَمُوَاعِظَةٍ وَأَدْبٍ عَلَى أَنْذَكَرَ مَا يَتَضَمَّنُ مِنْ نَجَاحِ البَلَاغَةِ وَغَرَافِ الفَصَاحَةِ 
وَوَجَاهِرِ الْعَرَبِيَّةِ وَثَوَابِ الْكَلَامِ الْمِنْطِقِيَّةِ الْمِدْنِيَّةِ وَالْدَرْويَةِ مَا لَا يَوْجَدُ مُجَمَّعًا فِي كَلَامِ وَلَا مَجْمَعًا 
رَزَزَ، سَ، جَ، كَ، إِلَى كَلَامٍ: "الْمَتَخَّدِبِ، يُمَعَّيْنَ، ٣۴۰۰ تَبْدُأ مُخْطَطَةٌ هُمَّ مِن هُنَا.*
Raḍī’s Introduction

In the Name of God, the Compassionate, the Merciful

0.1 I praise God, who made praise the return for his favors, the refuge from his trials, the way to his garden, and the means to obtain yet more of his beneficence. May God shower blessings on his Messenger—the Prophet of mercy, the Imam of all Imams, lantern for the community, the one fashioned from the clay of honor, the scion of ancient nobility, the deep-rooted tree of glory, and the leafy, fruit-bearing bough of grandeur. May God shower blessings on the people of his house. They are lamps in the darkness, protectors of the nations, brilliant beacons of faith, and weighted scales of virtue. May God shower them with blessings that equal their virtue, requite their endeavors, and match the bouquet of their fragrant bough and root, for as long as the morning gleams bright and the stars rise and set.

0.2 In the days of my eager youth, motivated by a goal that I described in its introduction, I began compiling a book about the qualities of the Imams that included their beautiful sayings and bejeweled maxims. I finished transcribing the qualities of the Commander of the Faithful, ʿAlī, but fate put obstructions in my path and destiny cast delays, such that I was prevented from finishing the rest. I had divided the part I had already written into chapters and sections, and, at its end, I had placed a section on short sayings narrated from ʿAlī, including words of counsel, aphorisms, maxims, and directions for refined behavior; I had excluded the longer orations and more expansive letters.

0.3 A group of my friends were especially enthralled with this section. Astonished by the marvels of the Commander of the Faithful’s words and amazed by their limpid clarity, they asked me to compile a book that would offer a selection in all its manifold categories and branches, including orations, letters, statements of counsel, and directions for refined behavior. They knew full well that these pieces offered wonderful eloquence and rare expressions, jewels of Arabic, and gems of earthly wisdom and spiritual sayings, which are assembled

---

1 Raḍī, Ḳhāṣāʾīṣ al-aʾimmah, 36–38. As noted in the present volume’s Introduction, Raḍī’s purpose in writing it was to refute an Abbasid (presumably Sunni) detractor.
2 Raḍī, Ḳhāṣāʾīṣ al-aʾimmah, passim. The section on ʿAlī includes details of his appointment (naṣṣ) by the Prophet, some of his celebrated miracles, poetry in his praise and poetry describing his appointment at Ghadīr Khumm, the events of his caliphate, the grace enjoyed by those who visit his shrine, and a selection from his sayings and sermons.
الأطراف في كتاب. إذ كان مولاناً أمير المؤمنين عليه السلام مشرع الفصاحة وموردها ومنشأ البلاغة ومولدها ومنه عليه السلام ظهر مكونتها وعنه أخذت قوائمه وأعماله.

1. فأتيهم إلى البتداء بذلك عالمًا بما فيه من عظم النفع وانتشار الذكر ومذخر الأجر. وأعتقد به أن أيين عن عظيم قد أمير المؤمنين عليه السلام في هذه الفضيلة ماضفة إلى المحسن الدروة والفضائل الجمئة وأنه عليه السلام أبرزد ببلوغ غايتها من جميع السلف الأولين الذين إذما يؤثر عنهم منها القليل النادر والنشاط الشراد فأما كلامه عليه السلام فهو البحر الذي لا يسجد والجم الذي لا يحاصل. وأردت أن يسوي في التمثال في الإفتخار به صلى الله عليه بقول الفردود رحمة الله عليه:

"أولئك أسى قصبي مماثليهم، إذا جمعتنا يا جرير المجامع".

2. ورأيت كلامه صلى الله عليه يدور على أقطاب ثلاثة أولاً الخطب والأوامر وثانيًا الكتب والرسائل وثالثاً الحكم والمواضع. فأجمعته بتوقيف الله على البتداء بختبار محاسن الخطب ثم محاسن الكتب ثم محاسن الحكم والأدب مفردًا لكل صنف من ذلك بابًا وفضلاً فيه أوراقًا لتكون مقدمة لا استدراك ما عسا خذّ عجلًا يقع إليها آجلًا. وإذا جاء شيء من كلامه عليه السلام الخارج في أثناء حوار أو جواب سؤال أو غرض آخر من الأعراض في غير الأحاء التي ذكرتها وقررت القاعدة عليها نسبته إلى ألق الأبواب به وأشدها ملاحظة لفرضه. وربما جاء فيما أختاره من ذلك فصول غير مسبقة ومحاسن كل غير منتظمة لأشيء أورد النكت والنع والوجه ولا أقصى التأريخ والسق.

البحر: الطويل، 3، ت، ل، س، ونسخة في ي: كذا. ه، ل، ق، وأصل ي: "المحبة".
nowhere else, neither in spoken words nor in written books. Indeed, the Commander of the Faithful is the fountainhead of elocution and its wellspring, the cradle of eloquence and its birthplace. It is from him that its secrets became known, and its rules were learned. He is the model for every articulate orator, his the words used by every persuasive preacher. Moreover, he was the first, while they came trailing, he forged ahead, while they lagged behind. His words were anointed with divine knowledge and perfumed by prophetic discourse.

0.4 I answered my friends’ appeal and began the book, knowing it would bring me great benefit, redolent fame, and lasting reward. My purpose was to demonstrate the Commander of the Faithful’s lofty station in this particular virtue, in addition to his numerous other qualities and abundant merits, and to highlight his singular attainment among the earliest Muslims. Of their words, we find a few sporadic pieces and occasional lines, while his are a bottomless ocean, an overwhelming torrent. With great pride in my own descent from him, I beg your leave to cite here a testimonial verse by Farazdaq:

These are my ancestors, Jarīr, bring on yours!
Who will be your boast in our gatherings?

0.5 ‘Ali’s verbal heritage, I have found, revolves around three poles: orations and directives; letters and epistles; and sayings and counsels. I have, with God’s guidance, selected and transcribed his most beautiful orations, then his most beautiful letters, then his most beautiful sayings and directions for refined behavior. For each of these categories, I have dedicated its own separate chapter. In each chapter, I have left several pages blank, in case I have missed something that I might discover later. Whenever I have come across material from his oeuvre that was spoken in a conversation, or in answer to a question, or that belongs to a genre different than the ones around which I have structured my compilation, I have placed it in the chapter to which it is most suited, the one closest to it in form. Some sections therefore may not be fully harmonious in their coordination and some sayings may not be systematically arranged. My goal is to transcribe pithy sayings and dazzling expressions; consistent and methodical recording is not my intention.

---

1 Farazdaq, *Dīwān*, 360, from a poem beginning (ةحامسلاجرلاريتخٱيذلااّنم). Farazdaq (d. ca. 110/728) was a famous Umayyad-era poet best known for his satirical exchanges (*naqā‘īd*) with another eminent poet, Jarīr (also d. 110/728). Both were from the tribe of Tamim, Farazdaq from the sub-tribe of Mujāshiʿ of the Dārim clan, Jarīr from the clan of Kulayb ibn Yarbūʿ. Farazdaq also composed praise poetry for the Umayyad caliphs, as well as for the Shi‘i Imam, ‘Ali’s grandson and namesake, ‘Ali Zayn al-‘Ābidin.
ومن نجاهته عليه السلام التي أنفرد بها وأمن المشاركة فيها أن كلامه الورد في الزهد والمواعظ والتذكير والزواج إذا تأمله المتأمل وفكر في المفكر وخلق من قلبه أن كلام مثبه ممن عظم قدره ونفذ أمره وأحاط بالرافق ملكه لم يتعوضه الشك في أنه من كلام من لا حظ له في غير الزهدة ولا شغل له غير العبادة فدفع في كسر بيت أو أقطع في سفح جبل لا يسمع إلا حسنه ولا يرى إلا نفسه. ولا يكاد يوقن بآته كلام من ينغمس في الحرب مصانًا سيفه فقت الرماة ويد من الأبطال ويعود به ينطف دماً ويقطر من جها، وهو مع تلك الحال زاهد الزهاد وبدل الأبدال؛ هذه من فضائله العجيبه وخصوصة اللطيفة التي جمع بها بين الأضداد وألّف بين الأشنا وكثيراً ما أذكر الإخوان بها وأستخرج مجيهم منها وهي موضوع للعبارة بها والفكر فيها.

وربما جاء في أثناء هذا الاختيار اللفظ المردد والمفعول المكرر والعذر في ذلك أن روایات كلامه عليه السلام تختلف اختلافًا شديدًا فربما أتفق الكلام المختار في رواية فنقل على وجهه ثم وجد بعد ذلك في رواية أخرى موضوعًا غير وضوحه الأول إما زيادة مختارة أو لفظ عبارة فقتضي الحال أن يعاد استطلاعًا للاختيار وغيرة على عقول الكلام وربما بعد العهد أيضًا، بما اختير أولًا فأعيد بعضه سهواً ونسبانًا لا قصدًا واعتمادًا. ولا أدع مع ذلك أنني أحيط بأفطار جميع كلامه عليه السلام حتى لا يشذ عن منه شاذًا ولا يبدَّد نادًه بل لا أبُعد أن يكون القاصر عنى فوق الواقع إلى الحاصل في رقتي دون الخارج من يدي وما علي إلا بذل الجهد وبلاغ الوسعي وعلى الله سبحانه نهج السبيل ورشاد الدليل إن شاء الله تعالى.

أبدًا مخطوطة ش من هنا.
0.6 Among the marvels unique to ‘Alī that no one else shares with him is the following: if a person were to ponder his words of renunciation, counsel, remembrance, or admonition, if he were to parse them thoroughly—while putting aside the knowledge that they were spoken by a man of lofty stature whose commands people followed and who ruled over a multitude—he would have no doubt that these are the words of one who knows nothing but renunciation, whose sole occupation is worship, who has withdrawn to a lonely corner or leads a solitary life at the foot of a mountain, hearing no other voice and seeing no other person. He would never imagine that they could have been spoken by a man who rushed into the fray of battle brandishing his sword, striking off men’s heads and cutting down warriors, then returning with it dripping blood and gore. Yet, ‘Alī was also the most pious of renunciants and the greatest of God’s deputies.\(^1\) This—his combination of opposites and conjunction of contraries—is one of his most marvelous virtues and sublime characteristics. I often remind my companions of this quality and they are moved to wonder, for it offers lessons and provokes contemplation.

0.7 In my selection of material, it is possible that some words repeat and certain themes recur; the redundancy is occasioned by the strong variation in different narrations of ‘Alī’s words. It could be that I have transcribed a piece as I found it in one narrative, then I came across it in another, somewhat different from the first, either in having a choice supplement, or a more eloquent turn of phrase, which led me to repeat it, to shore up my compilation and preserve these wondrously wise novelties. Or it could be that some time had gone by since my first selection and I repeated a text, not deliberately and intentionally, but in error or forgetfulness. Even so, I do not claim that I have gathered all the prominent pieces of ‘Alī’s words such that no stray escaped my lasso and no breakaway absconded. Indeed, it is likely that the pieces I have missed are more numerous than the ones I found, and the examples I have tracked down are fewer than the ones that slipped from my grasp. The most I can do is to endeavor to the best of my ability. It is God—if he wills—who shows the path and guides aright.

\(^{1}\) Lit. ”of the substitutes,” (abdāl, sing. badal), refers to “certain righteous persons, of whom the world is never destitute; when one dies, God substitutes another in his place” (Lane, *Lexicon*, s.v. “B-D-L”).
8. ورأيت من بعد تسمية هذا الكتّاب بنكّه البلاغة إذ كان يفتح للناظر فيه أبوابها ويركّب عليه طلاّبها وفيه حاجة العالم والتعلّم وفجّيّة البليغ والزاهد ويمشي في أمّاته من جيّب الكلام في التوحيد والعدل وتنزيه الله سبحانه عن شبه الخلق ما هو بلال كلّ علة وشفاء كلّ علة وجلاء كلّ شبهة. 9. ومن الله سبحانه استمّدّ التوفيق والعصمة وأخّذ التسديد والمعونة وأستعيده من خطأ الجنان قبل خطأّ اللسان ومن زلة الكلام قبل زلة القدم وهو حسبي ونعم الوكيل.
0.8 I have decided to name this book *Nahj al-Balāghah* (The Way of Eloquence), for it opens doors of eloquence for its readers and helps them acquire its tools. In it, both scholar and student can find something that speaks to them, and through it, both orator and renunciant can fulfill their desires. Within its pages, you will see marvelous expositions on God’s unity and justice, on stripping God of attributes that would render him like his creatures,¹ and expositions that assuage thirst, cure sickness, and dispel doubt.

0.9 I ask God for guidance and protection. I appeal to him for direction and aid. I ask him to protect my heart before my tongue errs, and my tongue before my foot slips. God is my sufficiency and the best guardian.

---

¹ Raḍī’s mention of “God’s unity and justice” and his words about “stripping God of attributes” speak to his Muʿtazilī beliefs.
باب المختار من خطب أمير المؤمنين صلى الله عليه وأوامره ويدخل في ذلك المختار
من كلمة الجامع جرى الخطاب في المقامات المحضورة والمواقف المذكورة
والخطوب الواردة

1.1 فن خطبة له عليه السلام يذكر فيها أبداء خلق السماوات والأرض وخلق آدم عليه السلام

الحمد لله الذي لا يبلغ مدحه القائلون ولا ي嘘 نعمة العادون ولا يؤذ من حقه
المجتهدون الذي لا يدركه بعد الحرم ولا يناله غضب الفتن الذي ليس لصفته حد
محدود ولا نعت موجود ولا وقت محدود ولا أجل محدود فطر الخلائق بقدرته ونشر
الريحان برحمته وود بالصخر ميدان أرضه. أول الذين معناه وكال معرفته التصديق
به وكال التصديق به توحيده وكال توحيده الإخلاص له وكال الإخلاص له نفي
الصفات عنه لشهادته كل صفة أنها غير الوصف وشهادته كل موصوف أنه غير الصفة.
فإن وصف الله سبحانه فقد قره ومن قره فقد شاه ومن شاه فقد جزاه ومن جزاه فقد
جهل ومن جهل فقد أشار إليه ومن أشار إليه فقد حده ومن حده فقد عده ومن قال
فإن فقد ضمه ومن قال علام فقد أخيل منه. كأن لا عن حدث موجود لا عن عدم
مع كل شيء لا بمقارنة وغير كل شيء لا بمزايدة فاعل لا بمعنى الحركات والآية بصير
إذا لا منظور إليه من خلقه متوحد إذ لا سكن يستأس به ولا يستوحش لفظه.

اش: كذا ه. ونسخة في ش: (نعماءه). ي: (فقهه).
Orations

Chapter containing selections from the Commander of the Faithful’s orations and directives, including selections from his addresses that may be likened to orations, spoken in charged gatherings, famous battles, and times of danger

1.1 From an oration by ʿAlī, in which he spoke of the creation of sky and earth, and the creation of Adam:¹

1.1.1 I praise God. Yet no speaker can articulate his praise, no reckoner can count his favors, and the most diligent cannot give him his due. Soaring thoughts cannot reach him and deep minds cannot fathom him. He cannot be described, for he is beyond the limits of demarcated boundaries, existing depictions, tallied times, and protracted lifespans. His power created the universe and his mercy sent forth rain-bearing winds. Then, to curb its oscillation, he pegged the earth with massive rocks. The first part of religion is knowledge of God. Knowledge of him is perfected by belief in him. Belief in him is perfected by the declaration of his oneness. Declaration of his oneness is perfected by sincere allegiance to him. Sincere allegiance to him is achieved by negating all attributes ascribed to him, by the testimony of every attribute that it is separate from the thing described, and by the testimony of each thing described that it is separate from the attribute.² To describe God is to ascribe associates to him. To ascribe associates to him is to ascribe duality to him. To ascribe duality to him is to divide him. To divide him is to undervalue him. To undervalue him is to depict him. To depict him is to circumscribe him. To circumscribe him is to quantify him. To ask, “In what?” is to confine him. To ask, “On what?” is to make another space empty of him. God is a being but not by coming into being. He is existent but not after non-existence. He is with all things but not by association. He is other than all things but not by detachment. He is an agent but not by movement or instrument. He was all-seeing when there was no creature to be seen. He existed in solitude when there was no friend in whose familiarity he could take comfort, or by whose absence he would be distraught.

¹ The first section (§1.1.1) is from ʿAlī’s oration to the Kufans, urging them to regroup to fight Muʿāwiyah, after the Battle of Nahrawān in 38/658. Kulaynī, Kāfī, 1:134.
² I.e., the attribute and the thing described are two separate things, they are part of a pair and have “two-ness,” and, as such, neither label can be applied to God, who is one.
1.1.2 أنشأ الخلق إنشاء وأبداؤه أبداء بلا روية أوجالها ولا تجربة أستفادها ولا حركة أحدثها ولا حماية نفس أضطرب فيها أحوال الأشياء لأوقاتها ولام بين مختلفاتها وغرز غرائزها وألزمها أشباحها حالمًا بها قبل أبدائها محيئًا بعدودها وانتهائها عارفًا بقرائنها وأحناها. ثم أنشأ سبئته فتق الأجزاء وشق الأرگاء وسكالك الهواء فأجزي فيها ماء متلاطمًا تباّرها متراكبًا زخارف حملها على متن الريح العاصفة والزرع القاصفة فأمرها برده وسلطها على شده وقرنها إلى حد الهواء من تحتها تُريد والماء من فوقها دقيق ثم أنشأ سبئته ريجًا اعتقتم مهبها وأدان مرّاً وأعصف محرًا وأبد منشأها فأمرها بتصفق الماء الزخارف واثارة موج البحر فخضته مضغ السقات وعصفت به عفصة فضاء ترد أولاً إلى آخر وساجيه إلى ماهره حتى عبّ عبابه ورمي بالبرد ركمه فوقع في ماء منفتق وجه منفتق فسوّى منه سبع سواحات جعل سفلاً موجًا مكافوًا وعلياه سقفاً محفوظًا وسكاً مرفعًا يفبرع عند يدعها ولا دسار ينتظر ظلمة ثم زُينت زينة الكواكب وضيا السواحات وأجزي فيها سراجًا مستطيًا وقيرًا منيرًا في تلك دائرة وسقف سائر ورقم ماهر.

1.1.3 ثم فتق ما بين السواحات العلي للآخر من أطوارها من ملائكته منهم سيجود لا يركعون وركوع لا ينتصمون وصفاً لا يباليون ومسحبون لا يسألون لا يغشون نوم العيون ولا سوء العقول ولا رفوة الأبدان ولا غفلة النسيان ومنهم أمناء على وحي وأمنة على رسله وختلفون بقصائه وأمرهم ومنهم الحفاظة لعباده والسدنة لأوراق جناته ومنهم الثابتة في الأراضي السفلى أقدامهم ومارقمة من السماء العليا أعناقهم والخارجة من الأقطار أركانهم والنصوص لقوائم العرش أنقاصهم ناكسة دونه أبصارهم متلفعون تحته بأجنحتهم مضروبة بينهم وبين من دونهم حجب العزة وأستار القدرة لا يتوهمهم بتصوير ولا يجرون عليه صفات المصنوعين ولا يجدونه بالأماكن ولا يشيرون إليه بالنظام.
1.1.2 God created the world and gave it a beginning. He did this without long mulling, prior experience, generated movement, or stirring aspiration. He made all things in their proper time and combined their parts. He accorded them a particular nature and gave them a specific form. He knew them before he gave them a beginning, cognizant of their limits and consequences, and aware of their connections and complexities. Then he rent the ether, tore up the sky and air, and unleashed a torrent roiling with crashing waves. He placed the torrent on the back of a stormy wind, a raging tempest. He ordered the wind to hold the torrent in check, dispatched it to fetter the flood, and compelled it to restrict the advancing surf. Below, the air was vast and empty. The water gushed above. Then, he created a barren wind, its control permanent, its current tempestuous, and its perfume wafting. He commanded it to whip up the rolling waters and bring forth mighty waves. The wind churned up the water like cream in a churning skin and tossed it about in the sky, flipping it end over end and mixing the still and the shifting, until it frothed and bubbled and threw up a mountain of foam. Raising the frothy mixture in the expansive layers of air, in the vast ether, God molded seven skies—the lowest of them a frozen wave, and the loftiest a well-preserved canopy, an elevated firmament—with no pillar for support, and no nails or ropes to bind. Then he ornamented the sky with beautiful stars and bright lights. He set therein a radiant sun and a glowing moon, gliding in that spinning sphere, that moving sky, that flowing, studded expanse.

1.1.3 Then God rent the lofty skies and filled them with ranks of his angels: some continually prostrate, never bowing, others bow, never standing straight, yet others stand in rows, never quitting that position, and yet more chant litanies of his praise, never tiring. Drowsy eyes do not impede them, nor wandering minds, exhausted bodies, or forgetfulness occasioned by lack of heed. Among them, too, are angels God has entrusted with his revelation. Constituting God's tongues to his apostles, they come and go with his decrees and commands. Some are charged with protecting his servants, others are gatekeepers at the doors of his Garden. Yet others have feet firmly fixed in the nethermost regions of the earth, while their necks extend beyond the highest heaven, their flanks stretch beyond the land mass, and their shoulders reach the posts of God's throne. They lower their gaze before him and spread interlocked wings underneath, separated from those below by veils of might and cloaks of power. They do not attempt to picture their Lord through imagination, or apply to him the attributes of created beings, or demarcate him within a location, or depict him with comparisons.
1.1.4 منتها في صفحة خلق آدم عليه السلام

ثم جمع سحاته من حزن الأرض وسهمها وعذبها وسبكتها تربة سيّبها لماء حتى خلت ولاطها بالبللة حتى لزمن جبل منها صورة ذات أحياء ووصول وأعضاء وفصول أجدها حتى أُستمسكت وأُصلدها حتى صلصته لوقت محدود وأُجل معلوم ثم نُفخ فيها من روح فعلت إنسانًا ذا آذانه يملىها وقوّيتصرف بها وجوارج يخدمها وأدوات يحقّبها ومعرفة يفرّق بها بين الحق والباطل والأدوار والمشام والأوان والأجناس معجوونًا بطيئة الأدوار المختلفة والشهاب المؤلفة والأضداد المتبادلة والأخلاط المتباعدة من الحر والبرد والبللة والبُجود والمساء والسرور.

1.1.5 وأستأذى الله سحاته الملائكة وديعته لديهم وعهد وصيّته إليهم في الإذاعات بالسجود له والخنوع لنكمته فيقال (هَسْيِلْبِإاَّلِإاْوُدَجَسَفَمَدآِلْاوُدُجْسٱ) وقبله اعتظمتهم الحيمة وجعلت عليهم الشروعة وتعّزرّوا بخلاقة النار وأسوينوا خلق الصلح فاعظه الله النظرية أنكشفًا للسّمحة وأستطاعًا للبليلة وإنجازًا للعده فقال (إِنَّكَ مِنَ النَّاظِرِينِ إِلَىُّ يُومِ الْوَلَدَ) ثم أسكن سحاته آدم دارًا أرغم فيها عيشه وآمن فيها محذّته وحذّره إبليس وعداؤه فأغزره إبليس نفاسة عليه بدار المقام ومرافقه الأبرار فعاب اليقين يشتهّي والعزمية ووهبه وأستبدل باللذة وجالاً وابغطر ندمًا ثم بسط الله سحاته له في توبيه ولقاه كلمة رحمة ووعده المرد إلى جنبه فأبهبه إلى دار البليلة وتناسل الذرة.

1.1.6 وأصطفى سحاته من ولهة أبناء أخذ على الوحي ميثاقهم وعلى تبليغ الرسالة أمانة لما بدر أكثر خلقه فين أفلحتم حقه وانهذوا الأنداد معه وأجتنبهم الشطرين عن معرفته واقطعتهم عن عبادته فهو يبعث فيهم رسله ووطر إليهم أبناءه ليستّداوهم ميثاق فطرته ويجذروهم منسي نعمته ويجتنبوا عليهم بالتبليغ ويثيروا لهم: 

َش، ه: كدا ي: (لاستعملها). *ش، وأضيف في ه مع علامة الصحّة: كدا، ي، وأصل ه: 

1.1.4 From the same oration, describing the creation of Adam:

God gathered soil by sifting coarse earth and fine, sweet earth and salty. He rinsed it with water until it became pure and clean, and moistened and kneaded it until it was smooth and malleable. With this mixture, he molded a form with curves, joints, limbs, and nodes. He let it dry until it hardened, setting it aside for a fixed period of time, until it became firm. Then he breathed into it of his spirit, and it stood before him as a human being. This being had faculties it could harness, a mind it could engage, limbs it could yoke to its service, parts it could use as instruments, and perception with which it could differentiate between right and wrong, tastes and smells, colors, and species. Its clay was a blend of disparate entities, assembled forms, warring opposites, and dissimilar mixtures: hot and cold, wet and dry, painful and joyous.

1.1.5 Then God commanded his angels to fulfill the trust with which he had charged them and discharge the covenant he had enjoined—to prostrate humbly, deferentially, before Adam, in recognition of the honor he had received from God. God said, «Prostrate before Adam, and they all prostrated except Iblīs»¹ and Iblīs’s tribe. Pride held them back and wretchedness took over when they boasted of their creation from fire and scorned the creation of clay. God gave Iblīs a respite so that he could earn yet more of God’s wrath, to complete the trial and fulfill the pledge. He said, «You have been placed among those who have been granted respite until the day of destiny.»² As for Adam, God gave him a home, with a good life therein and a safe dwelling. He warned him of Iblīs and of Iblīs’s enmity. Iblīs misled Adam, for he was jealous of Adam’s heavenly abode and pious companions. Adam was deceived—he exchanged certainty for doubt and resolve for weakness, his bliss was replaced by fear, his deception was followed by regret. Afterward, God accepted his plea for forgiveness, spoke words of mercy, and promised him a return to paradise, but he nevertheless cast Adam into the abode of tribulation, where his descendants would multiply for generations.

1.1.6 From Adam’s descendants, God selected prophets, exacting a pledge from them to convey his revelation, and entrusting them with delivering his message. As time passed, most people altered God’s covenant, denied what they owed him, and ascribed partners to him. The devils had driven them away from their earlier recognition of him, stopping them from his worship altogether. God dispatched messengers and a succession of prophets to restore people to their

1  Qur’an, Baqarah 2:34, Ṭâhâ 20:16, Isrâ’ 17:61. Iblīs refers to Lucifer.
11.7 إلى أن بعث الله سبحة محضا صللى الله عليه إنجاز عدته وتعليم نبوته مأخوذًا على النبيين ميثاقه مشهورة اسماته كريمًا ميلاده وأهل الأرض يومئذ ململ متفرقة وأهواء منتشرة وطرائق مشتتة بين مشبه الله خلقه أو ملحد في آسمه أو مشير إلى غيره فدهاهم به من الضلالات وأنقذهم بما من الجهاله. ثم أختار الله سبحة محض صلى الله عليه وآله لقاءه ورضي له ما عانده وأكرمه عن دار الدنيا ورغب به عن مقام البلوى فقبضبه إليه كريمًا صلى الله عليه وعلى آله وخلص فيكم ما خلقته الأنباء لأمها إذ لم يتكرههم هملاً بغير طريق واضح ولا عالم قائم كتاب رحب مبينًا خلاله وحراهم وفضاءهم ورفائضه ونعامته ومنسوخه وخرشه وزعاته وخاصه وعبره وأمثاله ومرسله وحدوده ومحكمه ومستقبله مفسراً جمله مبينًا غامضه بين ما خذ ميثاق علمه وموسع على العباد في جهله وبين مثبت الكتاب فرضه معلوم في السنة نسخه وواجب في السنة أخذه مرخص في الكتاب تركه وبين واجبه وقعته وزائل في مستقبله ومابين بين محارمه من كبير أو عد عليه نبرائه أو صغير أرصده له غفائه وبين مقبول في أدناه وموسع في أقصاه.

original pledge. He directed his prophets to remind people of the divine favors they had forgotten, establish the truth by conveying his message, and revive their numbed intellects. He instructed his prophets to show people the signs of his power: the sky raised above, and the earth spread below, livelihoods that sustained life, and lifespans that ended in death, suffering that made people age, and relentless calamities. Never in all this time did God allow his creation to be left without a prophet, a revealed scripture, a sure proof, or a clear path. The scanty number who answered did not stop God’s messengers, nor the multitudes of their repudiators. Each messenger had his successor named for him, each successor was identified by his predecessor. In this manner, generations went by, and ages passed. Fathers died, and sons took their place.

1.1.7 So it was, until God sent Muḥammad to fulfill his promise and complete the line of prophecy. All earlier prophets had been made to affirm Muḥammad, whose qualities had been made known to them, with a binding oath. His birth, when it came, brought auspicious blessings. At that time, the earth’s inhabitants were divided into numerous faiths with different notions and divergent views. One group likened God to his creatures, another rejected his name, and a third looked to a separate deity. Through Muḥammad, God saved the people from their errant ways. Because of his eminence, he delivered them from ignorance. Then God summoned Muḥammad to meet with him and desired for him the blessings to be enjoyed at his side. Raising him from the vileness of this worldly abode and lifting him from this place of tribulation, God brought him into his presence, honored and esteemed. For you, he left you what earlier prophets left their communities, they did not abandon their followers without guidance, without a clear path or a signpost. Muḥammad, too, left you your Lord’s Book, and he fully elucidated its contents: the licit versus the illicit, recommended virtues versus required mandates, abrogating verses versus abrogated ones, licenses versus decrees, specifics versus generalities, lessons versus parables, free verses versus restricted ones, and clear verses versus ambiguous ones. He explained the Book’s subtleties and clarified what was obscure, including things whose knowledge is required for all God’s servants, versus others, ignorance of which is excused; things whose mandate is established in the Book while their abrogation is shown in the Sunnah, versus others whose practice is commanded in the Sunnah while vacating them is permitted in the Book; and things that were compulsory in their time, versus others whose directive subsequently ceased. He differentiated among the Book’s prohibitions of grave sins which incur the punishment of the Fire, versus smaller transgressions which hold the prospect of God’s forgiveness; of acts acceptable in minimal form, versus those that earn maximum reward.
1.1.8 منها

وقام عليمي فرح ببيته الذي جعله قبلاً للآثام يردونه ورود الأعاصم ويحتون إليه وله
الخانم جعله يسحاته علامة لوضعهم لظمته وإذانهم لعزّته وأختار من خلقه سُمّاءً
أجابوا إليه دعواه وصدّقوا كلمته ووقفوا مواقف أبنائه وتشبّوا بخلالاتهم المطفيين
بعرشيه يحرون الأرباح في متجر عبادته ويتبادرون عنده مؤعد مغفرته. جعله يسحاته
للإسلام عمّا وعُلاً حَرَّماً فرض حّبّه وأوجب حقّه وكتب عليم وفادته فقال
يسحاته: "وَلِلّهِ عَلَى الْأُمَّةِ هُدًىٰ الْبِيْتِ مِنْ أَسْتَطَاعَ إِلَيْهِ سَبِيلًا وَمِنْ كَفْرَاءٍ فَإِنَّ اللَّهَ غَنِيٌّ عَنِّ
الْكَافِرِينَ".

ومن خطبة له عليه السلام بعد أنصافه من صفين

1.2

1.2.1 أحمده أستناداً لمعتمدته وآستسلاماً لعزّته وآستعذباً من معيصته وأستعينه فاقه
إلى كفاهيته إنّه يضلّ من هذا ولا يাكن من عادته ولا ينفر من كفاه فإنه أرحب ما
وزن وأفضل ما ضَنّ. وأشهد أن لا إله إلا الله شهادة ممتنعة إخلاصها معتقدًا مصاصها
نهنّى بها أليّدًا ما أبقاها ونذّرها أن هاويل ما بلغنا فإنّها عزيمة الإيمان وفتحة الإحسان
ومرضاة الرحمان ومدّحه السفاح. وأشهد أن محمّدًا ﷺ ورسوله ﷺ بالدين المشهور
والعلم المثير والكتاب المسطور والثور الساطع والضياء اللامع والأمر الصاعد إزاحة
الشبهات واختجاجًا بالبينات وتخفيضًا بالآيات وتخريجًا للمثالات. والناس في فتى أنجّد

اش، ي: كذا ه: أضيفت "وحدة لا شريك له".
1.1.8 From the same oration:
God mandated the rite of pilgrimage to his House, which he commanded you to face in prayer. He directed you to race to the House like cattle to water, like doves to seed, demonstrating your prostration before his greatness and your submission to his power. He selected true listeners to answer his call, believe in his word, stand in the stations of the prophets, and follow the example of angels who circumambulate his throne. These pilgrims obtain abundant profit through their worship of him, and they speedily secure his forgiveness. God characterized his House as Islam's lofty banner and made it a sanctuary for all who seek shelter. Mandating pilgrimage to it, he commanded you to submit its due and come to it, and he decreed, «Pilgrimage to the House is compulsory for all who are able to find a path. As for those who disbelieve, they should know that God has need of no one from all the worlds.»

1.2 From an oration given by ʿAlī during his return from Ṣiffīn:

1.2.1 I praise God, seeking the completion of his favor, submitting to his might, and entreating his protection against sin. I beseech him, needing only his all-sufficing aid. Whomsoever God guides never goes astray, whomsoever he abhors never endures, and whomsoever he suffices never wants. His praise is the weightiest commodity placed on the celestial scales, and the best treasure one can hoard. I testify that there is no god but God—I render this testimony with firm sincerity and true belief. We, all of us, shall cling to it for as long as God gives us life, relying on it to dispel the terrors we must face, for it is the requirement of our faith and the key to God's gifts, it pleases the Merciful and banishes Satan. I testify that Muḥammad is God's servant and messenger and acknowledge that God sent Muḥammad with a celebrated religion, a legacy of knowledge, a transcribed scripture, brilliant light, gleaming radiance, and clear command. All this, in order to remove doubts, establish proofs, caution with portentous signs, and warn against God's punishments. When Muḥam-

1 Qurʾan, Āl ʿImrān 3:97. God's House (Bayt Allāh) is the Kaʿbah in Mecca.
2 In 37/657. Alternatively, Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd (Ḥ 1:143) states that the last line of § 1.2.2, which speaks of truth being restored to its owners, cannot be placed at the time of ʿAlī's leaving Ṣiffīn but has to have been spoken early in his caliphate, immediately after the pledge of allegiance to him in 35/656.
3 Reading ʿilm. Or, reading ʿalam, "a time-honored banner."

al-Sharif al-Radī - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
فيها حبل الدين وتزعزع عهده nuis وتأخذ النجر وتتشتّت الأمر وضاقت المخرج وعي المصدر فذهของเขา خالص وعمى شام عصى الرحمان ونصر الشيطان وخذت الإيمان فأنهرت دعائيته ترقّبها ومعالمة ودرجت بها وعفت شرّ ك. أطاعوا الشيطان فسلموه مسالكاه ووردوا مناهال بهم سارت أعلامه وقامت لواهم في فتق داستهم بأحلافهما ووطنتهما باذغلافها وقامت على سناكمه: فهم فيها تأكيد حارون جاهلون مفتوحون في خير دار وشر جيران نومهم سهود وكم لهم دروع بآرض عالمها ملجم وجالها مكرم.

1.2.2 ومنها يعني آللنبي صلى الله عليه وسلم: هم موضع سرّ ولجأ أمره وعبيبة علبه ومؤهل حكمه وكهوف كتابه وجبال دينه بهم أقام آخرون ظهروا وأذهب آخرون عرفاءه.

منها في المناقشتين زرعوا النجور وسقوا الغور وحصدوا الثور.
لا يقاس بالله محمد صلى الله عليه وسلم من هذه الأمة أحد ولا يسوّى بهم من جريت نعمتهم عليه أبداً هم أساس الدين وعماد الاقين إليه بنيّ الغالي وبهم يتحقق التالي ولهم خصائص حق الولاية وفيهم الوصية والوراثة الآن إذ رفع الحق إلى أهله وتقل إلى منتقه.

mad arrived,1 people were embroiled in seditions. Religion's rope was severed, conviction's foundations were shaken, principles were scattered, the community was shattered, the egress had narrowed, and a way out could not be seen. Right guidance was not recognized, and the blindness was total. The Merciful Lord was disobeyed, Satan was abetted, and faith had no support. Its pillars had come crashing down, its features were distorted, its paths had fallen into disrepair, and its trails had worn away. In obedience to Satan, people had followed his ways and alighted at his watering hole. With their support, his banners were raised high, and his pennants were unfurled. This was a time when sedition was ascendant, when people were crushed by its steeds and trampled under its hooves. Enmeshed in its throes, they were in a state of convulsion, lost, confused, and ignorant. They lived in the best of abodes but with the worst of neighbors. They lived in a land where the learned were demeaned and the ignorant esteemed. Here, slumber had turned into insomnia and kohl had been replaced by tears.

1.2.2 From the same oration, referring to the Prophet's family:
They are the embodiments of God's mystery, the foundations of his creed, the vessels of his knowledge, the harbors for his wisdom, the havens for his scriptures, and the peaks of his religion. Through them, he straightens religion's back when it becomes crooked, and calms its limbs when it trembles.

From the same oration, referring to the hypocrites:
They sowed immorality, watered it with arrogance, and reaped perdition.

No one from this community may be compared to Muḥammad's family, and no one blessed by God's favors may be equated with them in this regard. They are the pillar of religion and the column of certainty. The exaggerator must return to their position, and the laggard must join up with it. Theirs is the right of allegiance, theirs the Prophet's testament and inheritance. Now, in this moment, truth has been restored to its owners and returned to its home.

---

1 After H:137. These lines, from “fī fitanin,” to the end of the section, have alternatively been read as a reference to the seditions in ‘Ali's time.
1.3 ومن خطيته المعروفة بالشقيقية:

1.3.1 أما والله لقد تقمصهما ابن أبي فلان، وإن الله ليعلم أن محبلي منها محل القطب من الحنا يغدر عني السيل ولا يرق إلى الطرف. فسعت دونها ثوبًا وطربت عنها كشحاً وطلقت أرتباءً بين أن أصول بيد جدًا أو أصير على طفية عمياء يهرم فيها الكبير ويشب فيها الصغير ويكدح فيها مؤمن حتى يلقى فيها ربه. فرأيت أن الصبر على هاتان أخي فصبرت وفي العين قذيد وفي الحلق شبي أري تراهي نهأ.

1.3.2 حتى مضى الأول لسبيله فدلنا بها إلى فلان بعده.

ثم تمتّل عليه السلام:

شَتَّانَ مَا يِضْمَحُ عَلَى كُرْهَا وَيَوَمُ حَيْانِ أَخِي جَابَرَ.

فما عجبًا، والياً هو يستقبلها في حياته إذ عقبها لآخر بعد وفاته لشدّ ما شفّها ضرعيها. فصبرها في حوزة خشنة يغلم غلمانها ويخشى مسها ويكثر العثر والاعتدار منها.

١ ي، ش: اقتبس”; والمقدّسة.
٢ ش: كذا، كلام “فلان” مشتقة مكان كلمة محيث
٣ لعلها “خفيفة” ى سقطت “ابن أبي”، ولكن باع لفظة “فلان” باع رمّا حيث محيث “ابن أبي” ى سقطت “ابن أبي” ى أضف فوف للفظة “فلان” “ابن أبي خفيفة”.
٤ ش، ه، م علامة الصحّة، ويبدو أصل ي، كذا، ومصّحة في ي، ونسخة في ش، (شيشب).
1.3 From an oration by 'Ali known as Shiqshiqtíyyah—"The Roar of the Camel Stallion":

1.3.1 By God, that man donned its cloak knowing that I am the pivot to its grinding stone—its stream flows from my summit and no soaring bird can reach my heights. I draped a curtain across it and turned my face away. I weighed two options: strike with an amputated hand or endure a blind darkness that renders adults infirm and children old, in which believers continue to brave toil and turmoil until they meet their Lord. I saw that forbearance was the judicious choice. So I endured—but my eyes filled with dust and my throat choked as I saw my inheritance looted.

1.3.2 Thus it was, until the first went on his way, tossing it to another after him.

Then 'Ali recited a testimonial verse:

O how different my days today, always in the saddle, and the days spent in the company of Jābir's brother, Ḥayyān!

How strange that he should wish to give it up during his lifetime yet secure it for another after his death! The two divided the milk from its udders between them! This next one corralled it to a stony field, where any who ventured sustained deep wounds and experienced rough passage. How often did people stumble in this terrain, and how often did they make excuses for stumbling!

---

1 Delivered in Raḥbah, south of Kufa, toward the end of 'Ali's caliphate, in response to Ibn 'Abbās's query about the Prophet's succession, according to Mufīd (Irshād, 287). Sīdī (Tadhikirah, 124) states it was delivered on the pulpit of the Prophet's Mosque in Medina in 35/656, soon after 'Ali was pledged allegiance as caliph, in response to a person calling out to him, "What kept you back until now?", but this earlier dating is unlikely given the reference in the final section (§ 1.3.4) to the three groups who rebelled against him. "It" in the first line is the caliphate, and "that man" (lit. Ibn Abī fulān, "son of so-and-so") is Abū Bakr, the first historical caliph. The second individual (§ 1.3.2) is Umar, and the third (§ 1.3.3) is 'Uthmān; "his clan" refers to the Umayyads. This oration is controversial because of its political content, but it is not so different from materials recorded by the earliest historians: Ibn Hishām (Sīrah, 2:489–490), Tabārī (Tārikh, 4:231–233, 57–8), Yaʿqūbī (Tārikh, 2:126), and Ibn Qutaybah (Imāmah, 1:28–33), all note 'Ali's refusal to accept Abū Bakr as caliph until forced to do so. They also record 'Ali's declarations about his right to the caliphate immediately after Muḥammad's death, and during the deliberations of 'Umar's Shūrā council. For details of this issue and further primary sources, see Madelung, The Succession to Muḥammad, 28–33, 141, and passim; and Madelung, "Shī'a," EJ. The Shi'i commentators read the oration as proof of 'Ali's imamate, while the Sunni commentators read it as an articulation of 'Ali's superiority over all other Companions of the Prophet. B 153–155; R 1122; H 156–159; ʿA 565.

2 By the pre-Islamic poet Aʿshā Maymūn (d. ca. 7/629), Dīwān al-Aʿshā, 147, § 18, verse 57.
فصاحها كراكب الصعبة إن أنتقى لها خراج وإن أسس لها تطحم فإن الناس لعمر الله
بخط وشماس وتلون وأعراض. قصرت على طول المدة وشدّة الحبوة.

1.3.3 حتّى إذا مضى لسليمه جعلها في جماعة زعم أنه أحدهم فين الله ولله شورى.
أعرض الريب في مع الأول منهم حتّى صرت أقرٍّ إلى هذا النظائر لكنّى أسففت إذ
أسفنا وصرت إذ طاروا فصغي رجل منهم لضنعه ومال الآخر لصبره مع هن وهن إلى
أن قام ثالث القوم ناجحاً حضنيه بين نهيل ومعتله وقام معه نبأ أنه يضمنى مال الله
 تعالى خضم الإبل نبتة الربع.

1.3.4 إلى أن أنتظى عليه فله واجه عليه عمله وكبت به بطنته. فما راعى إلا الناس
إلي كُرُف الضعيف ينتالون عليّ من كل جانب حتّى لقد وُفِئ الحسان وشغّ عطافي
مجتمعين حوليّ كربضة الغنم. لما نهست بالمرّ نكتت طائفة ومرقت أخرى وفسق
آخرون كأنهم لم يسمعوا الله سببان يقول: «تلك البلاد الآخرة تجعلها للدينين لا يزيدون
 prevalوا في الأرض ولا فساداً وعلامةً لشفترين.» بل وسعته ووسعها ولكنّهم
حلبت الدنيا في أعطهما وراهم زوجها. أما والذي فاق الحبة ورأى النسمة لولا حضور
الحاضر وقيام الحبّة بوجود الناصر وما أخذ الله على العلماء ألا يقاروا على كفّة ظالم ولا
سغب مظلوم لألقى حبلها على غاربها وسقفت آخرها بكسأس أوّلها ولأنها دنياً كم
هذه أزهد عندي من غفوة عنز.

اش، ونسخة في ي: كذا، ه، وأصل ي: (وجه).
Any who traversed it rode a bucking camel—tighten its rein and slit its nose or loosen the ropes and be thrown. By God, the community was struck by kicking feet and rearing hooves and tormented with caprice and obstruction. I endured—but it was a long time and a harsh affliction.

1.3.3 Thus it was, until, when he went on his way, he handed it over to a group of people he supposed I belonged with. Dear God, what a Council! Was there doubt regarding my stature, even in comparison with the first of them, that I was now being equated with these laggards! But I moved with them, falling when they fell and flying when they flew. Even so, one of them turned away from me because of an old grudge, another inclined toward someone else because he was related to him by marriage, along with this one and that one, until the third stood up, bosom swelling with pride, amid his dung and fodder. His clan stood up with him, munching on God’s property like a herd of camels munching on spring grass.

1.3.4 Thus it was, until its strands came apart in his hands and his own actions delivered the death blow. It was greed that brought him to the ground. Then suddenly, people were flocking to me, thick as a hyena’s mane, trampling Ḥasan and Ḥusayn and rending my own shirt, pressing in on me from every side like a surging herd of camels. But when I rose to undertake its charge, one group of rebels broke their pledge, another deserted the faith, and a third went astray. Had they never heard God’s words, <<We shall reserve the hereafter for those who do not seek to exalt themselves on the earth or spread corruption. The good end is for the godfearing>>? Yes, by God, they heard and understood it, but the world appeared bejeweled to their eyes and her ornaments dazzled them. I swear by him who split open the seed, the one who created living beings—were it not for those who appealed to me in that time, if the presence of supporters had not made it my binding duty, if God had not taken a pledge from the learned that they would not permit tyrants to ravage or the subjugated to starve, I would have flung the caliphate’s reins onto its shoulders and offered the same cup to its latest emissary that I had offered to its earliest one. If not for this, you would have seen that your world means less to me than the sneeze of a goat.

---

1 Sa’d ibn Abī Waqqāṣ. R 1:122; Ḥ 1:184, 189.
2 ʿAbd al-Raḥmān ibn ʿAwf. Ḥ 1:189.
3 Similar lines in §1.53, §1.135.2, §1.226.
4 Qur’an, Qaṣaṣ 28:83.
1.3.5 قالوا وقام إليه رجل من أهل السود عند يهود يدته إلى هذا الموضع من خطيته فتناول كتاباً فأقبل ينظر فيه. فلما فرغ من قراءته قال له أبن عباس رحمة الله عليه يا أمير المؤمنين لو أطروذت مقالتك من حيث أفضت فقال هذه يأتي باب عباس تلك شقشقة هدرت ثم قرت قال أبن عباس فوالله ما أسفت على كلام قط كأنني على ذلك الكلام آلا يكون أمير المؤمنين عليه السلام بلغ منه حيث أراد.

1.3.6 قوله عليه السلام في هذه الخاتمة كراكب الصعبة إن أشق لها خرم وإن أسسل لها تحقمل يريد أنه إذا شدد عليها في جذب الزمام وهي تنازعه رأسها خرم ألفها وإن أخى لها شيئة مع صعوبتها تحقمت به فلم يملكها. قال أشق الناقة إذا جذب رأسها بالزمام فرفعه وشققتها أيضا. ذكر ذلك أبن السكيت في إصلاح المنطق. وإنما قال أشق لها ولم يقل أشقته لأنه جعلها في مقابلة قوله (أرسل لها) فكان عليه السلام قال (إنه رفع لها رأسها بالزمام) بمعنى أمسهها عليها.

1.4 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام أنها أهتدت بكم في الظلام وستستم العلياء وتنافجتم عن السرار. وقر سمع لم يفقه الوعيدة كيف يراعي النبأة من أصدته الصيحة ريب جنان لم يفارقه الخفقان. ما لزت أننظر لكم عواقب الغدر وأتونكم محليه المغتربين سترني عنكم جلباب الدين ويصركم صدق النية أحق لكم على سنن الحق في جواد الضمالة حيث تلقون ولا دليل وتحترون ولا تهمون اليوم أنطق لكم العجماء ذات البيان عرب رأي أمرئ تخلف عني ما شكلت في الحق
1.3.5 When ʿAlī reached this point in his oration, a visitor from the countryside handed him a petition, and he paused to look at it. When he had finished reading, Ibn ʿAbbās asked, “Commander of the Faithful, will you not continue your speech where you left off?” “No, Ibn ʿAbbās,” ʿAlī replied, “that was the roar of a camel stallion that burst out then subsided.” Ibn ʿAbbās remarked, “By God, I have never regretted the loss of any words as much as I regret the loss of these—if only the Commander of the Faithful had completed what he began!”

1.3.6 Raḍī: ʿAlī’s words in this oration: “Any who traversed it rode a bucking camel—tighten its rein and slit its nose, or loosen it and be thrown,” mean that if the rider were to pull strongly on the reins of a bucking came while it pulled the other way, he would slit its nose, but if he were to slacken them a little, then that, coupled with the camel’s recalcitrance, would mean that the camel would throw him off, for he would be unable to control it. It is said, “He tightened the reins of the camel mare” (ashnaqa l-nāqata), when someone pulls back the camel’s muzzle with the nose-rein and lifts it up; the basic form of the verb (shanaqa) is also used—Ibn al-Sikkīt mentions this in Iṣlāḥ al-manṭiq (Correcting Speech). ʿAlī said, “He tightened for it its reins (ashnaqahā)” (using the preposition li-) rather than “He tightened its reins (ashnaqa lahā)” (with the camel as direct object), because he wanted to preserve the parallelism with “if he loosened them (aslasa lahā),” where he also used the preposition li-. It is as though ʿAlī said, “if he raised the camel’s head upward with the nose-rein,” meaning that he held the camel tightly by means of it.

1.4 From an oration by ʿAlī:

Through us you received guidance in the dark night, mounted the camel’s lofty hump, and emerged from a moonless night into the light of dawn. How deaf are the ears that don’t hear the mourners’ wails! Can people whom a clap of thunder fails to awaken be expected to heed a gentle voice? How calm is the heart that shudders in fear of God! I knew you would be treacherous, for I saw you donning seduction’s garb. But I wear the robe of religion, and it has prevented me from harming you, though my righteous spirit showed me clearly what you were. I stood up to guide you back to the trodden path of truth, from all those trails where you had wandered without a guide, where you had dug for water but found none. Today I have made mute signs, eloquent ones, speak to you. Those who held back from me have strayed. I never doubted the truth since it

---

1 Li- is the usual form of this preposition, but it changes to la- before pronominals, as it has here and a few lines below.
2 After the Battle of the Camel in 36/656, posthumously addressing Ṭalḥah and Zubayr, and their defeated followers. R 136, after Miskawayh; H 1:289; B 164.
مذا أريته لم يوجس موسى خيفة على نفسه أشفق من غلبة الجهَّال ودول الضلَّال اليوم
توافقنا على سبيل الحقّ والباطل من وق بعَما لم يظَّما.

1.5 ومن كلام له عليه السلام لمّا قبض رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله وخطبه العبَّاس وأبو سفيان أبن حرب في أن يَبِعُه بالخلافة
آبِه الناس وكَثَرَوا أمواج الفتن بسفن النجاة وعرَّجوا عن طريق المناقرة وضعوا جُنان المفاخرة. أفلح من نحص يبحث أو أستلم فأراح. ماء آمن ولقمة يغص بها أكلها ومجتئي الأميرة لغير وقت إِنَباعها كَلازرع بغير أرضه فإن أقل يقولوا حرص على الملك وإن أسكت يقولوا جزء من الموت هُباث بعد اللَّثْب واللَّيْك وَاللَّه لاَبْن أَبى طالب
آس بالموت من الطفل يبدي أَمَّه بل أندمجت على مكُون عَم لومت به لآضطراب
اضطراب الأشرية في الطويل البعيدة.

1.6 ومن كلام له عليه السلام لمّا أشير عليه بالآَل يتبَّع طلحة والزبير ولا يرصد لهما القتال
واللَّه لا أكون كلاضبيع تتام على طول اللَّدِم حتى يصل إليها طالبيا ويختله راصدها
was shown to me. Moses was not fearful for his life—what he feared was the dominance of the ignorant and the control of the errant. Today, we faced off on the battlefield, one on the side of right, the other on the side of wrong. A man who knows he will find water does not feel thirst.

1.5 An address ‘Alī delivered when God’s Messenger passed away, and ‘Abbās and Abū Sufyān came to him offering the pledge of caliphal allegiance:

People! Cut through the waves of rebellion by boarding the ark of salvation. Leave the path of dissension and cast off the crown of pride. Success comes to those who rise when they have support, or yield and let people be. This affair resembles murky water, or a morsel that chokes those who swallow it. One who plucks before his time gains as little as one who plants in another’s field. If I say something now, they will respond, “He covets power.” If I remain silent, they will cry, “He is afraid of being killed!” No, indeed, ⟨not after the small calamity and the large one⟩! By God, Abū Ṭālib’s son is more comfortable with death than an infant at his mother’s breast! But I hold knowledge of mysteries. Were I to reveal them to you, you would tremble like ropes hanging down deep wells.

1.6 From an address ‘Alī delivered when advised not to pursue Ṭalḥah and Zubayr or make preparations to fight them:

By God, I shall not behave like the hyena that, sleeping through a prolonged barrage of pebbles, is captured by the stealthy hunter. I call on men who have

---

1 Refers to the Qur’anic story of Moses (Qur’an, Hūd 11:70, Tāhā 20:67), and compares ‘Alī’s story to it.
2 In 11/632, in Medina. Ṭabrisī (Iḥtijāj, 1:127) cites the first three lines as part of a note ‘Alī wrote to Abū Bakr, after he had denied Fāṭimah her right to inherit the orchards of Fadak. ‘Abbās ibn ‘Abd al-Muṭṭalib was ‘Alī and Muḥammad’s uncle. Abū Sufyān was Muʿāwiyah’s father and Muḥammad’s arch foe, before he converted to Islam following the Prophet’s conquest of Mecca. The two—‘Abbās and Abū Sufyān—were close associates.
3 Proverb signifying all sorts of calamities (etiology in Maydānī, Majma’, 192), signifying that ‘Alī has faced death on the battlefield throughout his life.
4 In Rabadḥah, near Medina, in 36/656, enroute to Iraq in the lead-up to the Battle of the Camel (Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 4:455–456), or in Dhū Qār, soon after arriving in Iraq (ibid., 4:457–458); ‘Alī’s son Ḥasan is named as his interlocutor.
5 See similar phraseology in § 1.146. The signification of the simile is being naively unaware of danger despite ample warning. In medieval Arab lore, the hyena (ḍabu’) is reputed to be a stupid animal. Easily tricked by the hunter who throws pebbles to draw it out, it emerges from its den, thinking to find prey, and is killed. Hyenas were apparently hunted as food; their meat is considered licit in the Shāfiʿī and Ḥanbali schools of law, and a delicacy in present-day Saudi Arabia (Osborne, “Hyena Burger?”). B 170; R 149; H 224; Ibn Manẓūr, Lisān, s.v. “L-D-Gh”; Jāḥiẓ, Ḥayawān, 6:38, 7:48; Damīrī, Ḥayāt al-ḥayawān, 2:206. For further details and sources, see Viré, “Ḍabu’,” 812.
ولكني أضرب بالمقبل إلى الحقّ المدير عنه ولباس المطيع العاصي المريب أبداً حتّى يأتي علي يومي. فوالله ما زلت مدفوعًا عن حقّي مستأثراً علي منذ قبض الله نبيّه صلى الله عليه حتى يوم الناس هذا.

1.7 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام

أتخذوا الشيطان لأمرهم ملاكًا وأتخذهم له أشراً كفخاص وفرّ في صدورهم ودبّ ودرج في حجورهم فنظر بأعيينهم ونطق بأنثرين فركب بهم الزائل وزينهم الخطط فعل من قد شرك الشيطان في سلطانه ونبت بالباطل علي لسانه.

1.8 ومن كلام له عليه السلام يعني به الزبير

يزعم أنه قد باع بهد وليه بقلبه فقد أفرّ بالبيعة وآدم على الوليفة فليأت عليها بأمر يعرف وإلا فليدخل فيما خرج منه.

1.9 ومن كلام له عليه السلام

وقد أرعدوا وأبرقوا ومع هذين الأمرين الفشل ولهما نزد حتّى نوقع ولا نسب حتّى نمطر.

1.10 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام

ألا وإن الشيطان قد جمع حزبه وأستجلب خبله ورجله وإن بصيرتي لمعي؟ ما لبست على نفسي ولا لبس علي وأم الله لأفرطن هم حوضًا أنا ما ناخذه لا يصدرون عنه ولا يعودون إليه.”

accepted the truth to attack those who have turned away. I call on those who hear and obey to fight those doubters who have disobeyed. I shall continue to call on you until my appointed time arrives. By God! From the day God took his Messenger unto him until this day, I have been continually driven away from this thing that is mine by right and passed over for another.

1.7 From an oration by ʿAlī:¹
They made Satan master of their affairs and he made them his partners. He laid eggs in their breasts and hatched chicks. He frolicked in their laps and romped. He watched with their eyes and spoke with their tongues. He incited them to error and lured them to treachery. Their actions are the actions of people whose rule Satan shares and on whose tongues he utters his falsehoods.

1.8 From an address ʿAlī delivered about Zubayr:²
He declares that he pledged allegiance with his hand but not his heart. So he admits his pledge, although he claims he withheld intent. Let him bring tangible proof of that, or else return to the pledge he has forsaken.

1.9 From an address ʿAlī delivered:³
They thundered and blazed but that is the way of cowards. My thunder always strikes, and my torrent is always propelled by rain.

1.10 From an oration by ʿAlī:⁴
Hark! Satan has mustered his host and armed his cavalry and infantry. But my conviction has not deserted me, I have never deceived nor been deceived. By God, I shall fill the waterhole for them as only I can—they shall not leave sated or return.⁵

---

¹ Presumably referring to ʿAlī’s challengers at the battles of the Camel, Șifin, or Nahrawān. The referents are described by Rāwandī as “the errant leaders” (aʾimmat al-ḍalāl), but neither he nor the other major commentators specify names. H 1:228; B 170–171; R 1151–1152.

² Responding just before the Battle of the Camel, in 36/656, to a speech by Zubayr’s son ʿAbdal-lāh, in which he stated his father’s claim. Mufīd, Jamal, 175, after Wāqidī.

³ Refers to ʿAlī’s challengers at the Battle of the Camel in 36/656 (R 1154, B 173). The lines are from an oration ʿAlī delivered in response to a speech by Ṭalḥah, just before battle commenced. Mufīd, Jamal, 177, after Wāqidī.

⁴ Delivered at Dhū Qār, thus in 36/656, en route to Basra (B 172), referring to ʿAlī’s challengers at the Battle of the Camel. Alternatively, delivered at an unspecified time, and referring to Muʿāwiyah (H 1:240; R 1355). See similar lines in § 1.22 and § 1.135.

⁵ The “waterhole” here refers to battle, and by saying he will fill it as only he can, ʿAlī refers to his prowess in combat. H 1:240; R 155.
1.11 ومن كان عليه السلام لابن محمد بن الحنفية لما أعطاه الراية يوم الجمل، تزول الجبال ولا تزل عصى على ناجذك أعز الله جمجمتك تدع في الأرض قدمك أرم بصرك أقصى القوم وغض بصرك وأعلام أن النصر من عند الله سبحانه.

1.12 ومن كان عليه السلام لابن محمد قال أصحاب الجمل وقد قال له بعض أصحابه ودعت أن أحي، كان شاهداً ليرى من نصر الله به على أعدائه فقال أحو اخبي معنا فقال قال فقد شهدنا ولقد شهدنا في عسكرنا هذا قوم في أصلاب الرجال وارهام النساء سيرفع بهم الزمان وينقى بهم الإيمان.

1.13 ومن كان عليه السلام في ذمّ البصرة وأهلها كنتم جند المرأة وأتباع البهيمة رعا فأجتيم وعقر فهرتم أخلاكم دقاق وعهدكم شقاق وديكم نفاق وماكم زعاق المقيم بين أظهركم مرتين بذنبه والشاختين عنكم متدارك برحمه من ربّ، كأني بمسجديك جمّ سفينة قد بعث الله عليها العذاب من فوقها ومن تحتها وغرق من في ضنها.

وفي رواية أخرى: والله لئغلق ببلدكم حتّى كأني أنظر إلى مسجدها جمّ سفينة أو نعامة جامعة.

وبروى: جمّ سفينة طيّر في جلّة بحر.

اش: كذا ي، ه: أضيفت (فلا الناس).
1.11 From an address ʿAlī delivered to his son Muḥammad ibn al-Ḥanafiyyah, while entrusting him with the banner at the Battle of the Camel. Mountains may move, but you should not. Clench your teeth. Lend God your skull. Dig your feet into the earth. Keep an eye on your farthest foes but focus on those who are close. Above all, know this: Victory comes from Almighty God.

1.12 From an address by ʿAlī, after his victory at the Battle of the Camel. One of his supporters said to him, “I wish my brother were present to witness the victory God has granted you over your enemies.” ʿAlī asked, “Does your brother’s loyalty lie with us?” The man replied, “Yes,” and ʿAlī declared:

Then he has witnessed us. Indeed, our fight has been witnessed by a mighty host in the loins of men and the wombs of women. Time will bring them forth and faith will gain strength.

1.13 An address ʿAlī delivered criticizing Basra and rebuking its people:

You fought for the woman and followed the camel—when it bellowed, you answered, when it was killed, you fled. Your character is base, your custom is dissent, your faith is hypocrisy, and your water is bitter. Whoever resides with you is ensnared in sin, whoever leaves you is saved by God’s mercy. I can see your mosque now, the prow of a ship enveloped by God’s punishment from above and below. All on board will drown.

A variant narrative:
I swear by God, your city will drown! I see your mosque like a ship’s prow, or a squatting ostrich.

It is also narrated as:
Like a bird’s breast rising above the swells of the sea.

---

1 Basra, 36/656.
2 The commentators decode the metaphor as putting one’s life on the line to defend God’s religion; they also say the word “lend” (aʿir), (rather than “give”), denotes a promise that Ibn al-Ḥanafiyyah would not be killed in this battle. R 158–159, B 173, Ḥ 1:242.
3 According to Baḥrānī (B 174), this and the next texts (presumably § 1.13–1.14) are from a single oration ʿAlī delivered in Basra three days after the Battle of the Camel in Basra, in 36/656. He had criers call out for the people to gather, and when they had assembled, he stepped into the mosque, prayed the morning prayer, stood on the right side of the prayer niche with his back against the wall, and gave this speech. The lines are also placed at Nahrawān, following the battle there in 38/658. Barqī, Māḥāsin, 1:262.
4 See note to § 1.12. The reference in the first line is to ʿĀʾishah and the camel she rode onto the battlefield at the Battle of the Camel. B 175; Ḥ 1:252.
1.14 ومن كلام له في مثل ذلك أرضكم قريبة من الماء بعيدة من السماء. خفّت عقولكم وسنهت حاكمكم فأنتم غورض لنابل وأكله لا كل وفريضة لصائل.

1.15 ومن كلام له عليه السلام فيما ردّه على المسلمين من قطائع عثمان والله لو وجدته قد تزوج به النساء وملك به الإمام لردّته فإن في العدل سعة ومن ضاق عليه العدل فاجبر عليه أضيق.

1.16 من كلام له عليه السلام لما بعى بالمدينة ذمّته بما أقول رهينة وأنا به زعيم إن من صرحت له العجزا بين يديه من المثلات حجزه التقوى عن تقحم الشهابات ألا وإن بليئة قد عادت كهيئة يوم بعث الله نبيه والذي بعثه بالحق لتبليل بلبلة ولغرض بل غريبة ولتساطن سوط القدر حتى يعود أسلفكم أعلامكم وأعلامك أسلفكم وليسبن ساقون كانوا قد قصرتم وليقضن ساقون كانوا سبقوا. والله ما كنت وشمة ولا كنت كذبة ولقد نبشت بهذا المقام وهذا اليوم. ألا وإن الخطابا خيل خمس حمل عليها أهلها وخلعت جملها ففتحتمهم في النار ألا وإن التقوى مطأيا ذلل حمل عليها أهلها وأعطاوا أزمتها فأوردهم الجنة. حق وباطل ولكل أهل فئين أمر الباطل لنكم ففعل ولن قال الحق لربنا وعلل ولقم لأدبر شيء فأقبل. شغل من الجنة والنار أمامها. ساء سريع نجا وطالب بطيء رجا ومقصر في النار العين والشمال مضلّة.

اش، ي: كذا. ه: «لقائد».
1.14 From a similar address delivered by 'Ali:\(^1\)
Your land is close to the sea and far from the sky. Your wits are feeble and your minds are weak. You are targets for the archer, morsels for the greedy, and easy prey for all who would attack.

1.15 'Ali's address defending his restoration of 'Uthmān's land grants to the public treasury:\(^2\)
By God, even if the money had been spent to wed women or buy slave-girls, I would still have required its return. Justice has a wide scope— whoever finds it narrow should know that oppression is even more limiting.

1.16 From an address 'Ali delivered when the pledge of allegiance was sworn to him in Medina:\(^3\)
I guarantee the truth of what I say and stand as surety for my pledge. To be cautioned by history's lessons is to be protected by piety from galloping headlong into the abyss of doubt. Hark my words! You are being tested today, just as you were on the day God sent his Prophet. I swear by the one who sent him with the truth that you will be tossed hither and thither, sifted as in a sieve, and mixed and mingled as if in a boiling cauldron. Lowly folk will rise, and others in high positions will fall. Stragglers will race to the front, and others who are ahead will fall behind. By God, I have never held back a true word or spoken a single lie, and I was told of the arrival of this place and day. Hark my words! Sins are recalcitrant steeds, charging unreined with their riders into the Fire. Hear me! Piety is a docile mount that carries its riders, reins firm in their hands, steadily to paradise. There is truth and there is falsehood, and each has its people— what is new if falsehood prevails? Truth has few followers, and those who turn away rarely return. Those who see paradise or hellfire ahead have enough to occupy them. The swift runner is saved, the man who is tardy has hope, but the delinquent will end in the Fire. The right and the left lead to error, the middle

---

\(^1\) See note to § 1.12. Wāqidī, cited in Mufīd, Jamal, 218, also places this oration on the battlefield immediately after the Battle of the Camel.

\(^2\) Lit. “to the Muslims.” ‘Ali delivered this oration in Medina in 35/656, soon after allegiance was pledged to him as caliph (B 178; Nuʿmān, Daʿūīm, 1:396). The second sentence also forms part of ‘Ali’s address to Marwān et al. when they refused to pledge him allegiance (Yaʿqūbī, Tārīkh, 2:179).

\(^3\) First oration after assuming the caliphate in Medina in 35/656, delivered on the pulpit in the mosque; one of ‘Ali’s most widely narrated orations (Jāḥiẓ, Bayān, 3:53–52, who adds a section on the excellence of the Prophet’s family, narrated by Jaʿfar al-Ṣādiq). Yaʿqūbī (Tārīkh, 2:211) states that the oration was prompted by a man who criticized ‘Ali’s judgment in a case he had brought before him.
والطريق الوسطي هي الجادة عليها باقي الكتاب وآثار النبوة ومنها منفذ السنة وإليها مصير العاقبة. هلك من آدم يوم نَخَّاب مَن أَفْتَرَى من أبدى صححته للحق هلك عند جهلة الناس. وكفى بالمرء جهلًا ألا يعرف قدره. لا يحمل على التقوى سنغ أصل ولا يظما عليه زرع قوم. فاستروا بيومكم وأصلحوا ذات بينكم والتوبة من ورائكم. ولا يحمد جواد
إلا ربه ولا يلم لائمه إلا نفسه.
وأقول إن في هذا الكلام من مواقع الإحسان ما لا تبلغه مواقع الاستحسان وإن حظ العجب منه أكثر من حظ العجب به وفيه مع الحال التي وصفنا زواته من الفصاححة لا يقوم بها لسان ولا يطلع جلها إنسان ولا يعرف ما أقوله إلا من ضرب في هذه الصناعة بحَق وجري فيها على عرق وما يعقلها إلا العالمون.

1.17. ومن كلام لله عليه السلام في صفة من يتصدى لكلم بين الآمة وليس لذلك بأهل إنا أبغض الخلاص إلى الله رجلان. رجل وَلَكَ الَّهُ إِلَيْهِ نَفْسِهِ فَهُوَ جَارِي عَن قِصْدِ السَّبِيل مشغوف بكلام بذعة ودعاء ضلالة فهو فتنة لمن أفتن به ضال عن هدى من كان قبله مضلٌّ لمن أفتدى به في حيائه وبعد وفاته حَرَّال خطايا غيره رهن بختيئته. ورجل قَشَّ جهالا موضع في جهال الآمة غار في أبخاش الفتنة عم بما في عقد الهدينة قد سماه أفشاه الناس عالماً وليس به بكَفْ أَفَسَكَرَ من جمع ما قال منه خير ما كثير حتى إذا أتروى من آخ نأوح وأكثر من غير طائل جلس بين الناس قضيًا ضامنًا لتخليص ما أنتبس على غيره فإن نزلت به إحدى المهمات هِيَ هُوَ حَشْوًا رتَّاً من رأيه ثم قطع به. فهو من ليس الشهات في مثل نسج العنكبوت لايدري أصاب أم أخطأ في أصاب خاف أن يكون

al-Sharīf al-Raḍī - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
way is the straight road, upon it you will find the remnants of scripture and the traces of prophecy, from it emerged the Sunnah, to it the people shall return. False claimants will perish and «those who lie will fail.»¹ Those who side with the truth will suffer at the hands of the ignorant. It is manifest ignorance for a man not to know his own worth! But fields sown by the pious will not wither. Roots planted by them will not shrivel. People, maintain the privacy of your homes and resolve your differences, and you will be forgiven. Praise only your Lord and blame only yourselves.

Raḍī: No admiration can encompass the beauty in these words; the awe they inspire exceeds any expression of appreciation. They have so much linguistic brilliance that no tongue can do them justice and no human can plumb their deep ravine. Only expert knowledge of this craft and an innate disposition for it can comprehend what I allude to. Only the learned can grasp the full meaning of this oration.

1.17 From an address ʿAlī delivered describing men who set themselves up as judges for the community when they are far from qualified:² The most hateful creatures in God’s eyes are of two kinds: The first is a man whom God has given up on and left to his own devices. Straying from the straight path, enamored of heretical innovation and errant agitation, he ensnares many. Having lost his predecessors’ path of right guidance, he leads people astray in his lifetime and continues his misguidance after his death. Surely, he will bear the burden of their sins, while remaining hostage to his own. The second collects scraps of ignorance and engages with the community’s dolts. Heedless of the black beasts of mutiny, he is blind to the benefits of peace. His comrades call him a scholar, but he is not. He is hasty to amass things of which less is better than more. When he has drunk his fill of stagnant water and increased his store without profit, he sits down to dispense judgment, to elucidate what has perplexed others. When faced with an impenetrable case, he stitches together a jumble of rags concocted from his own capricious opinions, then passes judgment. Yet, he remains entangled in a web of doubt,³ not

¹ Qurʾan, Ṭāhā 20:61.
² Māmaṭīrī (Nuzhah, 317–319), Abū Ṭālib al-Makkī (Qūt al-qulūb, 1:246), and Hārūnī (Taysīr, 259) connect this oration to the previous one, viz., ʿAlī’s accession speech, § 1.16. Yaʿqūbī (Tārīkh, 2:211) also connects it, but he places the oration in a different context; see note at § 1.16.
³ Echoes Qurʾan, ʿAnkabūt 29:41.
قد أخطأ وإن أخطأ رجا أن يكون قد أصاب. جاهل خباط جهالات عاش ركاب عشوات لم يضع على العلم بضرس قاطع يذري الروايات إذرا الريح الهشيم لا مليء والله بإصدار ما ورد عليه لا يحسب العلم في شيء مما أذكره ولا يرى أن من وراء ما بلغ منه مذهبًا لغيره وإن أظلم عليه أمر أكتنمه به لما يعلم من جهل نفسه. تصرخ من جور قضاياه الدنمارك وطبع منه الموروث إلى الله أشكو من معشر يعيشون جهالًا ويمتون ضلالة ليس فيما سلعة أبوزمن الكبار إذا تأتي حق تالوته ولا سلعة أفنق بيعًا ولا أغلة مثناً من الكتاب إذا حرف عن مواضعه ولا عندهم أنكر من المعروف ولا أعرف من المنكر.

1.18 ومن كلام الله عليه السلام في ذم اختلاف العلماء في الفتيا ترد على أحدهم القضيّة في حكم من الأحكام فيحكم فيها برأيه ثم ترد تلك القضيّة بعينها على غيره فيحكم فيها بخلاف قوله ثم تجتمع القضاة بذلك عند إمامهم الذي أستقداهم فيصور آرائهم جميعًا. وإلههم واحد وكتابهم واحد ونبيهم واحد. أفأمرهم الله تعالى بالاختلاف فأطاعوه أم نههم عنه فعصوه أم أرزع الله دينًا نافضًا قاستعان بهم على إتمامهم أو كانوا شركاء له فلهم أن يقولوا عليه أن يرضي أم أرزل الله سبحانه دينًا تأمًا فقصر الرسول صلى الله عليه وسلم عن تبليغه وأدائه والله سبحانه يقول {ما فرطنا في الكتاب من شيء} وفيه يبين كل شيء. وذكر أن الكتاب يصدق بعضه بعضًا وأنه لا اختلاف فيه فقال سبحانه {ولو كان من عند غير الله لوجدوا فيه اختلافا كثيرًا} وإن القرآن ظاهره أنيق وباطنه عميق لا تفتيに行به ولا تهضي غيره ولا تكشف الظواهر إلا به.
knowing whether he has judged correctly or erred. When correct, he is afraid he may have erred. When errant, he hopes he judged correctly. A total ignoramus, he stumbles about in his ignorance like the night-blind riding the steeds of darkness. Never biting into knowledge with strong teeth, he flings around hadith reports as the wind scatters dry leaves. By God, he is not qualified to judge the cases that come to his waterhole. He dismisses whatever is beyond his understanding, not realizing that others have found a path. When a case is too obscure for him to grasp, he hides the fact, for he knows he lacks knowledge. The blood of the executed screams from his oppression, and inheritances cry out from his injustice. God, I complain to you of men who live in ignorance and die in error! No commodity is less profitable to them than the Qurʾan when explained correctly, no commodity more profitable or more valuable than that same Qurʾan with its meanings corrupted. Nothing for them is worse than good, nothing better than evil.

1.18 From an address ʿAlī delivered censuring disagreement among jurists:2
When a case comes to one of them, he passes judgment based on his capricious opinion. Then the same case is brought before someone else, who gives a different judgment. Then all the judges congregate before the leader who appointed them, and he confirms all their judgments. This, when their God is one, their Book is one, and their Prophet is one! Did God command them to disagree such that they are simply obeying him? Rather, did he not forbid it and they disobeyed? Did God send down an imperfect religion and seek their help to complete it? Or did he make them his partners such that he must accept their whims? Or, yet again, did he actually send a perfect religion, and it was the Messenger who fell short in conveying and delivering it? God says, «We have omitted nothing from the Book.»3 It contains clarification of all things. He declares that one part of the Book supports the other without contradiction, saying, «If it had come from someone other than God, they would have found it to have many inconsistencies.»4 The Qurʾan's form is elegant, and its content is deep. Its marvels never fade, and its wonders never run out. Only through the Qurʾan can darkness be dispelled.

---

1 Modified quote from Qurʾan, Kahf 18:45.
2 Ibn Talḥah (Maṭālib, 118) presents this oration as a continuation of the previous one §1.17.
3 Qurʾan, Anʿām 6:38.
4 Qurʾan, Nisāʾ 4:82.
1.19 ومن كلامه على السلام قابل للأشعث بن قيس وهو على متر الكوفة يخفف فضى
في بعض كلامه شيء أعرضا الأشعث فقال يا أمير المؤمنين هذه عليكم لا لك. تخفف عليه
السلام إليه بصرف ثم قال وما يدرك ما علي ما في عليك لعنة الله ولعنة اللاعنين حائثك ابن حائث منافق أبن
كافر والله لقد أدرك الكثير مرة الإسلام أخرى فاذاذا من واحدة منها مالك ولا
حسبك وإن أمرأ دل على قومه السيف وساق إليهم الخفف حری أن يمقته الأقرب
ولا يأتمنه الأبعد.

يريد أنه أسر في الكفر مرة وفي الإسلام مرة. وأمام قوله (دل على قومه السيف) فأراد به حديثًا
كان للأشعث مع خالد بن الوليد بالجامعة غز فيه قومه ومرك بهم حتى أوقع خالد بهم وكان قومه
بعد ذلك يسرمونه عرف النار وهو اسم للغادر عنهم.

1.20 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام
فأنتم لو عاينتم ما قد عاين من مات منكم أحبعت ووهبتم وسمعتم وأعطتم ولكن محجب
عنكم ما عاينوا وقرب ما يطرح الحجاب ولقد بصرتم إن أبصروتم أوسعتم وهم يهديم
إن أهديتم بحق أقول لكم لقد جاهرتم العبر وزجرتم بما فيه مزدجر وما يبلغ عن الله
بعد رسول السماء إلا البشر.

1.21 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام
فإن الغالية أوماكم وإن وراء لكم الساعه تعودكم تخففوا تلحقوا فإما ينتظر بأولكم آخركم.
1.19 From words ʿAlī spoke to al-Ashʿath ibn Qays while orating on the pulpit of Kufa. Ashʿath objected to something in ʿAlī’s speech, interjecting, ‘Commander of the Faithful, this point goes against you, it doesn’t count in your favor,’ and ʿAlī looked at him and exclaimed:¹

What do you know about what goes against me or counts in my favor? God’s curse upon you—weaver, son of a weaver,² hypocrite, son of an infidel—and the curse of all who curse! By God, unbelief captured you once, and Islam another time, and on neither occasion did your wealth or ancestry serve as ransom! If a man lifts the sword against his own tribe and brings death to them, he deserves to be hated by kin and feared by strangers.

Raḍī: ʿAlī means that Ashʿath was taken captive once as an unbeliever and once as a Muslim. Regarding his words, ‘lifts the sword against his own tribe,’ he is alluding to a conversation between Ashʿath and Khālid ibn al-Walīd in Yamāmah, in which Ashʿath deceived his tribe and plotted against them, leading to Khālid’s attack and defeat of them. After this incident, Ashʿath’s kinsfolk named him “Cockscomb-of-the-Fire,” a name they used for traitors.

1.20 From an oration by ʿAlī:
If you saw what the dead see, you would be stricken with grief and fear, and would listen and obey. What they see is veiled from you, but soon the veil will be cast aside. The fact is, you have been given the capacity to see if you would but look, to hear if you would but listen, to be guided if you would but follow! I say this to you in truth: the world’s deathly lessons have called out to you and given you harsh warning. After God’s messengers who descend from the sky, who else but humans convey his message?

1.21 From an oration by ʿAlī:³
The end is before you and the dreaded hour drives your caravan to the water-hole. Lighten your burden and catch up, for those who have gone ahead await those who remain behind.

¹ After the Battle of Nahrawān in 38/658; ʿAlī spoke of the arbitration, and Ashʿath sided with the Kharājite position. Ḥ 1:296.
² This is a generic insult about weaving as a lowly trade, and not a remark about Ashʿath’s or his father’s actual trade. The commentators explain that ʿAlī is (1) using Ashʿath’s own worldly criteria to denigrate him (Ḥ 1:296–297; R 184–185), or (2) alluding to the assumption that weavers are not astute about affairs of war and government (B 193).
³ Excerpt from § 1.165, from the early part of ʿAlī’s caliphate in Medina in 35/656, perhaps his first oration (Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 4:436). “Your burden” is explained as sin.
ولا أقول إن هذا الكلام لم يروز بعد كلام الله سبحانه وكلام رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم بكامل كلام محال به راجح ويرز عليه سابقًا. فأما قوله عليه السلام (تخففوا تلَّحقو) فما سمع كلام أقل منه مسموعًا ولا أكثر محصولًا وما أبعد غيرها من كلمة وأنفع نطفتها من حكمة. وقد نبنا في كتاب الخصائص على عظم قدرها وشرف جوهرها.

1.22 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام

ألا وإن الشيطان قد دمر حزب وأستجلب جلبه ليعود الجور إلى أوطانه ويرفع الباطل إلى نصابه. والله ما أنكروا علي منكراً ولا جعلوا بيني وبينهم نصفًا وإنّما يطلبون حقًا تركوه وماؤهم سفكونه. فإن كنت شريكهم فيه فإن لهم لنصيبهم منه ولئن كانوا ولوه دوني فما التبعة إلا عندهم وإن أعظم حجمه لهم أنفسهم. يرضعون أهو قد فطم ويجسرون بدعه قد أميتنا يا خيبة الداعي من دعا وإلى ما أجيب وإنّه لراض يحجج الله عليهم وعلمه فيهم فإن أبوا أعطيهم حد السيف وكنيه به شابيًا من الباطل وناصرًا للحق. ومن العجب بعثتهم إلى أن أبرز للطعان وأن أصير للجلاد هبلتهم الهبول فقد كنت وما أهده بالحرب ولا أرهب بالضرب وإنّي لعلي يقين من روبي وغير شبيبة من ديني.

1.23 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام

اش، م، ه، ونسخة في ي: كذا أصل ي، ونسخة في ه: (أمري).
Raḍī: If these words were weighed against any other, barring the words of God and the words of his Messenger, they would outweigh and outstrip them all. Regarding 'Alī's statement, “Lighten your burden and catch up,” no pithier or weightier words have ever been heard. How deep the meaning of this maxim, how pure its font of wisdom! I have further discussed its tremendous value and noble essence in The Book of Special Attributes (Kitāb al-Khaṣāʾiṣ).¹

1.22 From an oration by ‘Alī:²

Hear me! Satan has roared to his followers and herded his camels in order to return oppression to its homeland and restore evil to its roost. By God, they have no cause to fault me or seek redress. Rather, they demand from me a right they abandoned and vengeance for blood they spilt. If I had been their partner in this affair, they would still have their share of culpability. But if they have undertaken it on their own—which they have, without me—then they keep all the blame and their main allegation rebounds to them. In truth, they suckle at the breast of a woman who has weaned her young,³ and resurrect a heresy that has been put to death. Losers, every one of them, the issuers of this call! Who is it, pray, who calls, and to what purpose do they expect me to answer? I am satisfied with God's proof against them and his knowledge of their deeds! If they persist, I will consign them to my blade—that will cure wrong and instate right! Is it not strange that they challenge me to face their spears and threaten me with sharpened swords? May their mothers mourn! I have never been intimidated by threats of battle or panicked by an impending attack. I have ever trusted my Lord and never doubted my faith.

1.23 From an oration by ‘Alī:⁴

¹ Raḍī, Khaṣāʾiṣ, 112.
² In the lead-up to the Battle of the Camel in Basra in 36/656: After ‘Alī’s emissaries returned from speaking with Ṭalḥah, Zubayr, and ‘Āʾishah and informed him that they were adamant about confronting him on the battlefield (R 1:188; B 198; Ḥ 305–306). According to a minority opinion, the text refers to Muʿāwiyah (R 1:188–189). See similar lines in § 1.10 and § 1.135. The penultimate line of this oration is similar to the first line of § 1.172.
³ I.e., they suckle a woman who has no more milk, a metaphor for the emptiness of their claim.
⁴ Various contexts are given for this oration: (1) Māmaṭīrī (Nuzhah, 228–229) transcribes the first paragraph as ‘Alī’s answer in an oration in the Basra mosque a few days after the Battle of the Camel in 36/656; part of the same oration and answers are (in this order in ibid., 221–233): § 1.103.1, § 1.154.2, § 3.26, § 3.342, § 1.170.4, § 1.23, § 1.208, § 1.154.4. (2) Yaʿqūbī (Tārīkh, 2:207) transcribes it as part of an oration in which ‘Alī preceded these lines by reciting the Qur’anic verse, «Indeed, it is I who brings the dead to life. I write down all that they have brought forth and note all their deeds. All things I have encompassed in a clear Imam» (Qurʾan, Yāsīn 36:12). (3) Minqarī (Waqʿat Ṣiffīn, 10) transcribes the second paragraph, the line of prayer, as part of ‘Alī’s habitual Friday sermon in Kufa and Medina.
أما بعد. فإن الأمر ينزل من السماء إلى الأرض ك قطر المطر إلى كل نفس بما قسَّم لها من زيادة أو نقصان. فإذا رأى أحدكم لأخيه غفيرة في أهل أو مال أو نفس فلا تكون ل فتنة. فإن الماء المسلم ما لم يغش دنيا تظهر في خشوعه فإذا ذكرت وتغري بها لثام الناس كان كالفاعل الياسر الذي ينتظر أول فوزة من قداه توجب له المغنم ويرفع عنه بها المغرم. وكذلك المرء المسلم البديء من الخيانة ينتظر من الله إحدى الحسنات إما داعي الله كأنا عند الله خير له وأما رزق الله فإذا هو ذو أهل ومال ومعه دينه وحسبه.

إلا أن الناس حرب الدنيا والعمل الصالح حرب الآخرة وقد يجعلها الله لأقوام. فأخذوا من الله ما عذزهم من نفسه وآخضو خشية ليست بتقدير وآعمال في غير رباء ولا سمعة فإنه من يعمل لغير الله يكله الله إلى من عمل له. نسأل الله منازل الشهداء ومعايشة السعداء ومرافقة الأنبياء. أيها الناس إنه لا يستغني الرجل وإن كان ذا مال عن عشيرته ودفاعهم عنه بأيديهم وألسنتهم وهم أعظم الناس حقيقة من ورائه وألهم لشعته وأعطفهم عليه عند نازلة إذا نزلت به ولسان الصدق يجعله الله للمرء في الناس خير له من المال بورثه غيره.

منها ألا لا يعدن أحدكم عن القرابة يرى بها الخصاصة أن يسدها بالذي لا يزيده إن أمسكه ولا ينقصه وإن أهلكه. ومن يقبض يده عن عشيرته فإما تقبض منه عليه يد واحدة وتقبض منهم عليه أيدي كثيرة. ومن تلف حاشيته يستمد من قومه الموتى.
God’s command descends from the sky to the earth like raindrops, bringing to each soul what is decreed for it, be it plenty or dearth. Don’t be envious if you see your brother in possession of family, health, and wealth. As long as a Muslim does not commit an outrage that would shame him if disclosed and embolden the rabble, he is like the adventurer whose first drawn arrow wins him the prize and pays off his debts.1 Similarly, a Muslim who is innocent of treachery awaits one of two beautiful outcomes:2 either he will receive God’s call—and reward in God’s presence is the best blessing anyone can obtain—or God’s sustenance will come to him in this world, so he will have family and wealth, while also keeping his faith and character. Wealth and children are the harvest of this world, while good deeds are the harvest of the hereafter,3 and God may certainly bless a man with both. Beware the punishment that God has warned you of and do not fall short in fearing him. Perform deeds with sincerity, not to show off or gather praise, for whoever performs deeds for any reason other than to please God will be handed over to the person he performed them for. We beseech God to grant us the station of the martyrs, the companionship of the blissful, and the fellowship of the prophets. People! Even the wealthy man needs his kin, and he needs them to defend him with hand and tongue. Their backing is his best protection, and their support gives strength to his shaky affairs. When a calamity hits him, they show him the most compassion. A true tongue granted by God to a man among his people brings him more benefit than the wealth he leaves for another.4

From the same oration:
Harken to my words! Let none of you turn away from an impoverished relative. Your wealth will not increase if you withhold your largesse or decrease if you provide. The man who is close-fisted with kin will find that his closed fist will be countered with many closed fists. The man who possesses gentleness will keep his people’s affection.5

1 The metaphor is based on the pre-Islamic practice of drawing arrows (called maysır) to determine division of a slaughtered camel’s meat. The man who draws the tallest arrow wins the choicest part. B 203; R 1193–194.
2 Reference to Qur’an, Tawbah 9:52.
3 Reference to Qur’an, Shūrā 42:20.
4 Reference to Qur’an, Maryam 19:50, Shu’arā’ 26:84. “A true tongue” (lisān ṣidq) is the superior reputation he leaves behind, or the true teachings he imparts that continue to benefit after his death. B 205; R 1995; Asad, The Message of the Qur’an, commentary on Qur’an, Maryam 19:50.
5 “Who possesses gentleness”—lit. “whose intestines are soft.”
وأحسن المعنى الذي أراده عليه السلام بقوله: "ومن يقضي نداء عشيرته" إلى تمام الكلام فإن المفسّك خبره عن عشيرته إمّا يمسك نفع واحد إذا أحتاج إلى نصرتهم وأضطر إلى مراقبتهم قعدة عن نصره وتفاوضوا عن صوته فمنع ترافد الأيدي الكثيرة وتناهض الأقدام.

1.24. ومن خطبة له على السلام

ولعمري ما عليّ من قال من خالف الحقّ وخالف الغيّ من إدهان ولا إيهان. فأنتوا الله عباد الله وفرّوا إلى الله من الله وأمضوا في الذي نهجه لكم وقوموا بما عصبكم بما فعّلهم ضامن للفتح جناحًا وان لم تنحروا عاجلاً.

1.25. ومن خطبة له على السلام وقد توارت عليه الأخبار باستياء أصحاب معاوية على البلاد وقدم عليه عاملها على اليمن وما عبد الله بن العباس وسعيد بن ثوران ما أغلب عليه إسرار أبي أرطاقة فقام عليه السلام إلى المنبر ضحراً لباقل أصحابه عن الجهاد ومخالفتهم له في الرأي وقال عليه السلام ما هي إلا الكوفة أقبضها وأبسطها إن لم تكوني إلا أن تهب أعداؤك فقبلك الله.

وتمثل

لعمرو بن الخطير يا عمرو إني على وضيّ من ذا الإباء قليل

ثم قال عليه السلام أثبتت سراً قد أطلع اليمن فإني والله لأظن هؤلاء القوم سيّداون منكم بأجمعهم على باطلهم ونفرّكم عن حقّكم وبمعصيكم إمامكم في الحقّ وطاعتهم وإمامهم في الباطل وبأدائه الأمانة إلى صاحبهم وحياتهم وصلاتهم في بلادهم وإفسادهم فلو أثبتت أحدكم على قعب غنائم أن يذهب بعلاقته. اللهم إني قد ملتهم وملوني وسّمثهم

البحر: الطويل.
Raḍī: What a beautiful motif ʿAlī expounded when he said, “The man who is close-fisted with kin,” and so on, till the end of the piece. For the man who withholds generosity from kin withholds the benefit he can bestow with one hand, whereas when he needs their aid and craves their support, they will hesitate to help him and be slow to answer his call, denying him the support of many hands and a host of marching feet.

1.24 From an oration by ʿAlī:
By my life, no softness or weakness shall hold me back from fighting those who challenge the truth and follow the way of error. Servants of God, fear God, and flee to God’s reward from God’s wrath.¹ Walk the path that he paved for you, fulfill the duties to which he bound you, and ʿAlī guarantees your success in the hereafter, even if victory is not granted you in the here and now.

1.25 From an oration by ʿAlī. Widespread reports reached ʿAlī that Muʿāwiya’s commanders had occupied his territories. When Busr ibn Abī Arṭāt seized Yemen, ʿAlī’s governors, ʿUbaydallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās and Saʿīd ibn Nimrān, fled and returned to Kufa. Angered by his followers’ apathy in rising to fight and their opposition to his commands, ʿAlī ascended the pulpit and exclaimed:²
I have only you, Kufa, to hold or relinquish; only you, with your dry winds that raise pillars of dust! May God render you foul!

He then recited a testimonial verse:

By the life of your virtuous father, I swear:
My pot has nothing but smudges of fat.³

He continued:
I am informed that Busr has ascended the Yemeni highlands. By God, I fear this group will vanquish you, for they are united in their false claim, while you, despite your truth, are divided. You disobey your leader in his call to the truth, while they obey theirs in his call to falsehood. They are loyal to their master, while you are treacherous. Their lands adhere to a proper state of affairs, while you are corrupt and dishonest—if I entrusted one of you with a wooden cup, he would make off with its palm-fronded handle! God, I am tired of these

---

¹ Lit. “Flee to God from God.” I have added the words “reward” and “wrath” for clarity.
² One of ʿAlī’s final orations, delivered in Kufa in 40/660. Ḥ 1:348. See details of Busr’s attack in Ḥ 2:3–18; B 208.
³ The commenters explain the verse but do not identify the poet and I have not found an identification elsewhere. B 210; R 12:201.
وسموئي فأبدنني بهم خيراً منهم وأبدلهم بي شراً مِّني. اللهم مُثَ فقوهم كما يماث الملح في الماء. أما والله لوددت أنني لم يكون ألف فارس من بني فراس بن غنم. هناَّكَ لَدَعَوتُ أتآكَ مِنهم رُجَالٌ مِثل أَرْمِيَة أَحْمَيم.

ثمَّ نزل من المنبر عليه السلام.

قلت أنا وأَلَّا أَرْمِيَة جمع (رَمِي) وهو السحاب. وَأَلَّا أَحْمَيم في هذا الموضع وقت الصيف. وإنما خصَّ الشاعر سحاب الصيف بالذكر لأنه أشد جفوة وأسرع خفوفاً لأنه لا ماء فيه. وإنما يكون السحاب تقل السير لأمتلائه بالماء وذلك لا يكون في الأكثر إلا في أزمان الشتاء. وإنما أراد الشاعر وصفهم بالسرعة إذا دعوا والإغاثة إذا استغيثوا. والدليل على ذلك قوله (هناَّكَ لَدَعَوتُ أتآكَ مِنهم). 1.26

ومن خطبة له عليه السلام

1.26.1 إن الله بعث محمدًا صلى الله عليه وآله نذيرًا للعالمين وأمينًا على التنزيل وأنتم معشر العرب على شردين وفي شر دار مُنْيَح أُصْمَر خشت وحيات صم نشرتون الكرد وتأكلون الجشَّب وتستكونون دما كم وتقطعون أرحامكم الأصم كفيم منصوبة والأثام بكيم معصوبة.

1.26.2 منها فنظرت فإذا ليس لي معين إلا أهل بيتي فضنتهم عن الموت وأغضبت على القذى وشربت على الشجع وصبرت على أخذ الكفَّاز وعلى أمر من طعم العلَم.

البحر: السريع.
people, and they are tired of me. I am weary of them, and they are weary of me. So give me better and give them worse. Crush their hearts like salt dissolving in water. By God, would that I had a thousand tribesmen from Firās ibn Ghanam instead of the lot of you!

When you call out
Their men rush to you
Like the hot summer cloud.¹

Then he descended from the pulpit.

Raḍī: Armiyah, pl. ramī, is a cloud. Ḥamīm here means the heat of summer. The poet singles out summer clouds because they are blown along more swiftly and are light and fast moving. Clouds move heavily when they are full of water, and this is true mostly in winter. The poet wished to describe the warriors as swift to answer the call and as assisting as soon as they are asked. My interpretation is endorsed by his line, ⟨When you call out / Their men rush to you.⟩

1.26 From an oration by ʿAlī.²

1.26.1 God sent Muḥammad as a warner to all peoples and a trustee of his revelation at a time when you Arabs followed a foul religion and lived in a foul abode: You unloaded your camels between rough boulders and deadly adders, drank muddy water, ate coarse food, randomly spilt blood, and recklessly severed ties of kinship. Idols were ensconced in your lands, and sins were bound to your necks.

1.26.2 From the same oration:³

I looked around me, and when I saw that my family was my only support, I chose to save them from certain death. But I blinked down dust, choked when I drank, suffered harsh throttling, and endured a state more bitter than colocynth.

¹ The verse is by the pre-Islamic poet Abū Jundub al-Hudhalī al-Mashūm, and is cited in Sukkārī, Sharḥ Ashʿār al-Hudhaliyyīn, 363; Ibn Manẓūr, Līsān, s.v. “R-M-Y”; Azharī, Tahdhib, s.v. “R-M-Y.” H 1:348; R 1:203–204.
² ʿAlī delivered this oration in Kufa in 38/658 after ʿAmr ibn al-ʿĀṣ had conquered Egypt for Muʿāwiyah and killed ʿAlī’s ward and governor, Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr. Details in Ḥ 2:61–73.
³ This section refers to the pledge of allegiance to Abū Bakr after the Prophet’s death. Details in Ḥ 2:21–60. Similar lines in § 1.215.3.
بعرف حق شرط أن يوثبه على البيعة ثمّانًا فلا ظفرت يد المبايع وحزيت أمانة المبتعث،
تفذوا للحرب أهبتها وأعدوا لها عدّتها فقد شبّ لظاها وعال سناها.

1.26.3

وعن خطبة له عليه السلام

أما بعد. فإنّ الجهاد باب من أوراب الجنة فتحه الله خاصّة أوليائه وهو لباس التقوى ودرع الله الحصينة وجوّته الوثيقة فمن تركه ألسه الله ثوب الذلّ وشعله البلاء ودُعّ يبالصار والقسمة وضرب على قلبه بالإسهاب، ودليل الحقّ منه بتضييع الجهاد وثمنان الملك ومنع النصف. ألا وإنّي قد دعوتكم إلى حرب هؤلاء القوم ليلة ونهارًا وسراً وإعلانًا وقلت لكم أعزوهم قبل أن يعزوكم وقعت الله ما غزي قوم قط في عقر دارهم إلّا ذَلّوا فواكتم وتحاذموا حتى شتت علىكم الغارات ومكلكت عليكم الأوطان. هذا أخو غامد قد وردت خيله الأنباء وقد قتل حسّان بن حسّان البكري وأزال خيلكم عن مسالحه، وقلد بلغني أنّ الرجل منهم كان يدخل على المرأة المسلمة والأخرى المعاهده فينزع حجبها وقلبها وألقاها ورعانها ما تمتع منه إلّا بالاستراح وامتهانه، ثمّ انصرفوا وافرين ما نال رجلًا منهم كلّم ولا أربع لهم دم. فلو أنّ أراهم مسلماً مات من بعد هذا أسفًا ما كان به ملموًّا بل كان به عدني جديراً. فينجب الرّحبة والله يميت القلب، ويجلب الهمّ من أنيماته القوم على باطلهم ونفرّهم عن حقّهم فقيحًا لكم وترحاً حين قد صرتم غرضاً يفزى يغاز عليكم ولا تغيرون وتغزوون ولا تفزون ويبلغ الله

1م؛ بي: ك.د.ا.ش: (بالأسداد).
1.26.3 From the same oration:‘Amr pledged allegiance to Mu‘āwiyah only after he had stipulated a price—may the pledger’s hand stay empty, and the pledgee’s charge be betrayed! Men, prepare for battle and ready your weapons! The fires of war have been stoked and their blaze has flared high.

1.27 From an oration by ‘Alī:Jihad is a door to heaven that God has opened for his special devotees. It is piety’s robe, God’s own protective armor, and his trusty shield. Those who spurn it will be clothed in dishonor, engulfed by calamities, and whipped into compliance. Chaos will destroy their minds. If they forsake jihad, righteousness will cease, shame will consume, and justice will be denied. Listen to me! Day and night, in private and in public, I urged you to fight this group. I exhorted you to attack them before they attacked you, for, by God, a group attacked in its heartland is sure to be routed! But you looked at one another and abandoned your fellows until you were raided, time and again, and your homelands were overrun. So now the Ghāmidī man’s horses have raided Anbar. He has killed Ḥassān ibn Ḥassān al-Bakrī and driven your cavalry from their fortifications. I have heard that their men forced their way into homes and ripped anklets, bracelets, necklaces, and earrings from our women, Muslim and non-Muslim, who had no way to save themselves except to beg for mercy, and to cry out that all must return to God. The horsemen then left unscathed, not a single individual injured, not a drop of their blood spilt. Who would blame a Muslim if, after this, he were to die in shame? I would say that his death is fully justified! O how incomprehensible your behavior! I am baffled at how that group unites behind their false claim, while you squabble among yourselves and refuse to fight for your right. It stabs my heart and gives me deep anguish. May you feel squalor and grief! You sit as a target for enemy arrows, you are

---

1 I have replaced the pronouns in the section with names, taken from the commentaries, which also provide details of ‘Amr’s arrangement with Mu‘āwiyah. H 2:61–73; B 214; R 1:204–205.
3 Reference to Qur’an, Arāf 7:26.
4 Lit. mu‘ākhadah, “a woman protected by a covenant,” referring to Christians and Jews.
5 Reference to Qur’an, Baqarah 2:156: «We belong to God, and to him we return» a verse typically voiced in times of great distress.
وترضون. فإذا أمرتم بالسير إليهم في أيام الحر قلت هذه خمارة الفظ أمرننا يسبح عن الحر وإذا أمرتم بالسير إليهم في الشتاء قلت هذه صيارة الفظ أمرننا ينسى عن البرد كل هذا فراراً من الحر والقر إذا كنت من الحر والقر تفرون فأثنى الله من السيف. أفَّيراً أشياج الرجال ولا رجال حلوم الأطفال وعقول بات الخلق. لوددت أني لم أرمك ولم أعرفك معرفة والله جرت ندمًا وأعقبت ذنمًا. قلتكم اللهم لقد ملأتم قلبي قيحة ومنتقم صبري غيظاً وشغفوني في التهمام أفخاسًا وأفسدت علي رأي بالعصبان والخذلان حتى قالت قريش إن آن أبى طالب رجل شجاع ولكن لا علم لب الحرب أبوعهم وحل أحد منهم أشد لها مراسا وأقدم فيها مقامًا مثاني. لقد نهبت فيها وما بلغت العشرين وها أنا ذا قد ذرفت على السنين. ولكنه لا رأي متن لا يطاع.

28

ومن خطبة له عليه السلام

أما بعد. فإن الدين قد أدرك وآذنت وداع وإن الآخرة قد أقبلت وأشرفت بأطلال

ألا وإن اليوم المضمود بهدوء السباق والسباق الجلبة بالضة الجلبة والغابة النار. ألا تأتي من خطبته قبل منيته أن عامع لنفسه قبل يوم بسائه. ألا وإنك في أيام أملك من ورائه أهل فن عمل في أيام أملك قبل حضره أجله نفعه عمله ولم يضره أجله ومن قصر في أيام أملك قبل حضره أجله فقد خسر عمله وضرره أجله ألا فآمنا علماً في الرغبة كما عمروا في الرغبة ألا وإنك لم أرك بجانب نام طالبي ولا كالفت نام هاربى ألا وإن من لا يفعه الحق يضره الباطل ومن لا يستقم به الهدى يجر به الضلال إلى الربى ألا وإنك قد أمرتم بالطعن

ش، ي، م، ومصحتة في: ك، ك، أصل م: (يسخ). م، ي، ه: كذا، ش، ونسخة في: ه، سدنا.
raided but do not raid, you are attacked but do not attack, God is disobeyed and you are content. Earlier, when I commanded you to mobilize in the days of heat, you replied, “It is the swelter of midsummer—spare us until the heat lessens.” When I commanded you to mobilize in wintertime, you replied, “It is the freeze of midwinter—spare us until the cold departs.” All this, just to avoid heat and cold! By God, if you flee thus from heat and cold, you will flee in greater panic from the sword! Semblances of men, not men, with minds of children and wits of cloistered women! I wish I had never seen you! I wish I had never known you! By God, knowing you has brought me only regret, only defamation! May God attack you! You have filled my heart with pus and weighted my breast with ire. With every breath I take, you have poured me draughts of sorrow. You have ruined my strategy with your disobedience and opposition, such that the Quraysh tribesmen say, “Abū Ṭālib's son may be a brave man, but he has no knowledge of war.” Good God!! Is there anyone more familiar with its harshness, or who experienced it at a younger age? I knew war intimately before I turned twenty, and now I am past sixty! But there can be no strategy without obedience.

1.28 From an oration by ʿAlī.

The world has shown its back and proclaimed its farewell. The hereafter has approached and announced its arrival. Hark my words! Today is the day of training and tomorrow the race: its goal is paradise, or its end hellfire. Will you not repent of your sins before your death? Will you not perform deeds for your soul before your day of adversity? Hark my words! These are your days of hope and coming up right behind them is death. Those who perform deeds during their days of hope, before the arrival of death, will benefit from their days of hope, and death will cause no harm. Those who fall short in performing deeds during their days of hope, before the arrival of death, will have squandered their days of hope, and death will cause them harm. Hark my words! Perform deeds from hope, just as you perform them from fear. Hark my words! I have never seen any who seek paradise or flee hellfire in heedless slumber. Hark my words! Those not helped by right are harmed by wrong. Those not placed on the path

---

1 Lit. “To God, purely, is attributable (the excellence of) their father” (lillāhi abūhum). It is an expression of wonder, praise, or incredulity. Lane, *Lexicon*, s.v. “A-B-W.”

2 This is part of § 1.45, which begins “I praise God, never uncertain of his mercy.” B 221. § 1.28 is also cited in a slightly different recension as § 1.32. All these are parts of a sermon delivered on ʿĪd al-Fīṭr or ʿĪd al-Aḍḥā, presumably in Kufa during ʿAlī’s caliphate. Details in note at § 1.45. (Some lines are also similar in § 1.42). On this oration, see Qutbuddin, “A Sermon on Piety by Imam ʿAlī ibn Abī Ṭālib: How the Rhythm of the Classical Arabic Oration Tacitly Persuaded.”
وُلِّدَتْ عَلَى الْزَّادَ وَإِنَّ أَخْرُفْ مَا أَخْفِفْ عَلَيْكُمْ أَتَابَعُ الْهُوَى وَطُوُّلُ الْأَمْلِ تَزَوَّدُوا فِيهِ مِنَ الدُّنْيَا مَا نَحْوُونَ بِأَنْفُسِكُمْ غَدًا.
وَأَوْلَى إِنَّهُ لَكُلٌّ كَلَامٌ يَأْخُذُهُ بِالْأَعْنَاقِ إِلَى الْرُّهْبُ في الدُّنْيَا وَيُضَيْطِرُ إِلَى عَمَلِ الْآخِرَةِ كَلَّا هَذَا الكَلَامُ وَكَنَّى بِهِ قَاطِعَةً لِلْعَلَائِقِ الْآمَالِ وَقَدَّحَا زِنَادُ الْإِنْطَعَاطِ وَالْإِزْدَاجِ. وَمِنْ أَعْجَبِهِ قُوَّهُ عَلَى السَّلاَمِ (أَلَا إِنَّ المُضْمَارِ الْبِلَمَ وَغَدًا الْسَبَاقُ وَالسَّبِيقةُ الْجَنَّةُ وَالْغَلْبَةِ النَّارِ) فَإِنَّهُ مَعَ نَخَاةِ الْلِفْظِ وَأَعْمَلُ قِدْرَ الْمَعْنِي وَصَادِقُ تَمْشِيَ وَوَقَاعُ التُّشَبِّيَهِ سَرًّا نَحْيِيًا وَمَعِينٌ لَطِيفًا وَهُوَ قُوَّهُ عَلَى السَّلاَمِ (وَالسَّبِيقةُ الْجَنَّةُ وَالْغَلْبَةِ النَّارِ) خَالِفُ بِنَفْعِ اللُّغَةِ لِأَخْتِلافِ الْمَعْنِيَّ وَلَمْ يُقَلْ (وَالسَّبِيقةُ النَّارِ) كَالْقَالُ (وَالسَّبِيقةُ الْجَنَّةِ) لَاَنَّ الْابْتِبَايِ إِنَّما يَكُونُ إِلَى أَمْرِ مَحْبُوبٍ وَغَرْضٍ مَّطَلَوبٍ وَهَذِهِ صَفْةُ الْجَنَّةِ وَلِيَسْ نَزِيْحٌ مَعْرُوفٌ فِي الْنَّارِ نَزَعُ بَيْنَ الْبَلَدِ وَمَا فَيْتُ بِهِ فِي هَذِهِ الْمَوْضِعِ كَالمُصْرَّرِ وَالْمَالُ قَالَ اللَّهُ عَزَّ وَجَلَّ (فَقَلَ مَتَعَّا إِنَّ مَصْرَرَ مَعْنَى مَمْثَعُ) فَإِنَّ مَصْرَرَ مُعْمَنَى مَمْثَعُ وَلَا يَجْزَى فِي هَذِهِ الْمَوْضِعِ أَن يَقَالُ (إِنَّ سَبِيقَتَ مُؤْمِنٌ إِلَى النَّارِ) فَنَتَأْمِلُ ذَلِكَ فَبَاطِنُهُ مَجِيبٌ وَغَفُورٌ بَعِيدٌ وَكَذَلِكَ أَكْثَرُ كَلاَمِهِ عَلَى السَّلاَمِ.

١٩٨ وَمِنْ خَطَّةِ لِهِ عَلَى السَّلاَمِ أَيْنَّا الْمَلَامِيْسُ الْمَجْمُوعَةُ أَبْدَاهُمُ الْخَلْقَهُمُ كَلَّامُهُمُ الْصَّلاَبُ وَفَعَّلَهُمُ يُطْمِعُ فِي كَفَّاهُمْ الْأَعْدَاءُ تَقْلِيلَهُمْ فِي النَّادِرِ وَكَيْتُ فَإِذَا جِئَ الْمَكَّةَ قَلْتُمْ حَيِّيَّةٍ مَا عُرِفَتْ دُوْرَةُ مِنْ دِعَاءِ كَمَا أَسْتَرَاحَ قَلْبُ مِنْ قُاَسَاهُ مَعْلُوِيَّ بَعْضًا دِفَاعُ ذَهَلِهِ الْمُتَعَدِّ. لَا يُمْكِهِ لَهُ الْذِّمَّةُ حَلِّيَّ وَلَا يُرْكَزُ حَلِّيَّ إِلا بَعْدَ أَيْ دَارَ بَعْدَ دَارِ مَمْتَعَنُوْنَ مَعَ أَيْ إِمَامٍ بَعْدِي حَتَّى لَا يُقَاوِهِمُ الْمَغْرُورُ وَاللَّهُ مِنْ غَرَّنَتهِ وَمِنْ فَازِكَبُمُ فَازِي الْفَسُّ الْأَخْبَى وَمِنْ رَمَيْكَ بِكَمْ فَقَدْ رُمِي بِأَفْوَقِ نَاصِحُ أَصْحَبُ اللَّهِ لَا أَصْدِقُ قُولُكُمْ وَلَا
by guidance are dragged by error to perdition. Hark my words! You have been commanded to journey and directed to provision. What I fear most for you is the pursuit of desire and lengthy yearnings. Take provisions in this world, from this world, to nourish your souls tomorrow.

Raḍī: If ever words grabbed you by the neck and compelled you to renounce the world and perform deeds for the hereafter, it would be these words, which cut the cords of false hope and ignite the flint of counsel and warning. Among their most wondrous lines are, “Today is the day of training and tomorrow the race: its goal is paradise, or its end hellfire.” For in addition to majestic vocabulary, exalted themes, clear analogies, and effective metaphors, they enfold a wondrous secret and sublime significance in the line, “its goal (ṣubqah) is paradise, or its end (ghāyah) hellfire.” Here, ‘Alī differentiates between the two words because they have different significations. He does not say “its goal is hellfire” as he says “its goal is paradise” because one races towards something one wants, to a prize one hopes to win, and that is the description of paradise. But this significance does not apply to hellfire—may God protect us from it!—so it would be impermissible to say, “its goal is hellfire.” Rather, ‘Alī says, “its end is hellfire,” because an end is reached by those who are not pleased to reach it as well as by those who are pleased to reach it; it conveys both situations. In the context of this sermon, the word “end” indicates the last stop, the place of final return, as in God’s words, «Say: Take pleasure if you wish! Your last stop is hellfire.»1 It would be impermissible to say here, “your goal is hellfire.” Reflect on ‘Alī’s words, for the signification of this saying is wondrous, its well deep. And this is true for the entirety of ‘Alī’s speech.

1.29 From an oration by ‘Alī:2

People! You are together in body but divided in aspiration. Your words would shatter mighty rocks, but your actions embolden the enemy. In your gatherings you say this and that, but when battle approaches, you yell, “Be gone! Get away!” A mission that depends on you never succeeds. A heart that is subjected to you is never at ease. Excuses and falsehoods! You keep asking for a delay, like debtors who put off and refuse to pay! Men without honor cannot fight injustice. Rights cannot be won except through earnest effort. Tell me—which home will you defend when this one is taken? Under which leader will you fight when I am gone? By God, whoever believes in you is deluded! Whoever wins you as his share wins the losing arrow! Whoever has you in his bow shoots a broken-

---

1 Qur’an, Ibrāhīm 14:30.
أطعم في نصركم ولا أوعد العدوّ بكم ما بالكم ما دواوكم ما طبّكم القوم رجال أمثالكم
أقولُ باً بغير علم وغفلة من غير ورع وطمَّعاً في غير حقّ.

1.30 من كلام له عليه السلام في معتن من قبل علماء
لأمرت به للكت قالتاً أو نهيته عنه لكتت ناصرًا غير أن من نصره لا يستطيع أن يقول خذله من أنا خير منه ومن خذله لا يستطيع أن يقول نصره من هو خير مِنِّي. وأنا جامع لكم أمره آستأهل فأساء الأئرة وجزعم فأسائم الجزع والله حكم واقع في المستأثر والجازع.

1.31 ومن كلام له عليه السلام لـّما أنفذ عبد الله بن العبَّاس رحمه الله إلى الزبير قبل وقوع الحرب يوم الحمل يستفتيته إلى طاعته. قال له عليه السلام لا تلقين طلحة فإن كين تلته تجده كاثور عاقصًاقرنه يركب الصعب ويقول هو الدلول ولكن ألق الزبير فإنه ألين عريقة فقال له يقول لك أين خالك عرفتني بالحجاج وأنكرتي بالعراق فما عدا ممّا بدا.

وهو عليه السلام أول من سمعت منه هذه الكلمة أعني (فَما عدا ممّا بدا).
nocked arrow with a dull point! By God, I woke this morning not trusting anything you say, not expecting your support, not threatening the enemy with your strength. What is wrong with you? What is your cure? What is your remedy? They are but men like you! So much talk and no comprehension, so much rashness and no piety, so much greed for things that don't belong to you!

1.30 From words ʿAlī spoke about ʿUthmān's assassination:
If I had commanded it, I would be a killer. If I had forbidden it, I would be a supporter. In truth, the supporter cannot claim that he is more righteous than the detractor, while the detractor would not be correct in saying that the supporter is more righteous than he is. Let me summarize the situation for you: ʿUthmān misappropriated, and that was wrong. You responded with violence, and that was also wrong. Both the one who misappropriated and the one who responded with violence will face God’s judgment.

1.31 From words ʿAlī spoke just before the fighting began at the Battle of the Camel, when he sent ʿAbdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās to urge Zubayr to return to the fold of obedience. ʿAlī said:
Don’t speak with Ṭalḥah, for you will find him a bull with twisted horns, a man who rides a refractory beast and swears it is docile. Speak instead with Zubayr, whose hump is softer, and say to him: Your cousin ʿAlī says to you: You acknowledged me in Medina and rejected me in Iraq—what turned you from what you deemed good?

Raḍī: ʿAlī was the first to use the expression, “What turned you from what you deemed good?” (mā ʿadā mimmā badā).

---

1 “Broken-nocked,” (fūq, used here in the elative form, afwaq), is a notch at the end of an arrow into which the bowstring fits.
2 On the events leading up to ʿUthmān’s killing in Medina in 35/656, see H 1:129–161. Raḍī transcribes this text among ʿAlī’s orations, but Ibn Ṭāwūs (Kashf, 174, 180) cites it as part of a lengthy epistle ʿAlī wrote after Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr was killed in 38/658, which ʿAlī gave to al-ʿAshbāgh ibn Nubāṭah et al., instructing them to have Ibn Abī Rāfī` read it out every Friday in the Kufa mosque. The Sunni commentators are at pains to point out that although ʿAlī did not pick up a sword to defend ʿUthmān, he spoke out against his murder, even sending his sons Ḥasan and Ḥusayn to guard ʿUthmān’s door. H 2:126; ʿA 98 n. 1.
3 “The supporter” could be a reference to Marwān ibn al-Ḥakam, and “the detractor” to ʿAbdallāh ibn Masʿūd. R 1:224.
4 Basra, 36/656. On details of the conversation between ʿAbdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās and Zubayr, and related events at the Battle of the Camel, see H 2:166–170. Zubayr was the son of ʿAlī’s paternal aunt, Ṣafīyyah bint ʿAbd al-Muṭṭalib.
1.32

ومن خطبة له على السلام:

أَيَّهَا النَّاس إِنَّا قد أصَحْبَنا في دِهر عَرْضِي وَزَمـَن شـَدِيدٌ يُعَدِّ فيِهِ المَخْسَن مَسِيبًا وَيِزَاد الْأَلَّامِ فِي هَذَا عَنْوَةُ لا تَنْتَفِعُ بِهِ عَلَمًا وَلا نَسَى عَمَّا جَهَلَنا وَلَا تَخْفَفَ قَارِعةُ حَتَّى تَحْلَّ يَنَا

فَالنَّاس عَلَى أَرْبَعَة أَصِنَافٍ. مِنْهُمْ مِنْ لَيْسُهُمْ الفَسَادُ إِلَّا مَهَانَةُ نَفْسِهِ وَكِلَالَةُ حَكَّاهُ وَتَنْضِيْضُ وَفَرْهُ. وَمِنْهُمْ الْمَلَّسِ مِنْ سَيْفِهِ وَالْمَلَّسِ بِرَبِّهِ وَرَجَلِهِ قَدْ أَشْرَطَ نَفْسِهِ وَأَوْقَى دِينَهُ لَحَظَامٍ يَنْتَهِزهُ وَقِنْبُ يَقُودهُ وَمِنْهُ يُفْرَعُهُ. وَلِيْسَ المَتَجَّرُ أنْ تَرَى الدِّينَة نَفْسَك ثُمَّا وَمَثَّا لَكَ عَنْدَ اللَّهِ عَوْضاً. وَمِنْهُمْ مِنْ يُطَلِّب الدِّينَة بِعَمَل الْآخِرَة

وَلَا يُطَلِّب الْآخِرَة بِعَمَل الَّذِي قد طَمَنَهُ مِنْ شَخْصِه وَقَارِبٍ مِنْ خَطْوَةٍ وَشَمَرُ مِنْ ثُوُبِهِ وَزُخْرَفِ مِنْ نَفْسِهِ لأَمَانَةِ وَالْخَلْبُ سَرِّ اللَّهِ ذَرِيَّةً إِلَى الْمَعْصِيَّة. وَمِنْهُمْ مِنْيُفْقُهُ عَنْ طَلِبِ المَلِكِ صَوْلَتَةُ نَفْسِهِ وَأَنْقَطُاعُ سِبْبِهِ فَقْصِرْتُهُ الحَالٍ عَلَى حَالِهِ فَتَحْلَّ بِأَسْمَ الْقَنَاعَةِ وَتَزَينَ بِلَبَاسٍ أَهْلَ الْهَزَادَةِ وَلِبِسَ مِنْ ذلِكِ فِي مِرَاحٍ لَا وَمَغْدٍ. وَيَتْرِي رَجَالٌ غَلَضُ أَبْصَارِهِمْ ذَكَرُ مَرْجِعٍ وَأَرَاقُ دَمْوَعِهِمْ خُوْفَ المَخْسُور. فِيْهِمْ بَيْنَ شَرْيَةٍ نَادِ وَخَانِفٍ مَكْمَوْعٍ وَسَاَكْتُ مَكْمُوعٍ وَدَاعٍ مَخْلَصٍ وَفَلَكَانِ مَوْجُ قَدْ أَخْلَفُهُمْ المَرْكِبَةَ وَشَلَّمَهُمْ الْذِّلَّةَ فِيهِمْ فِيْ بِحَْأَجِ أَفْوَاهِهِمْ ضَاءَرَةٍ وَقَلْوِيهِمْ قَرْحَةً قَدْ وَعَظَّواْ حَتَّى مَلَّا وَقُهْرُواْ حَتَّى ذَلَّا وَقُنْتُواْ حَتَّى قَلْوُهُمْ فَلُتْنِي الدُّنا أَصَغْرَى فِي أَعْيُنِكُمْ مِنْ حَتَّى الْقَرْطُ وَقَرْضَةَ الْجَلْمَ أَتْعَظِّاْ مِنْ كَانَ قَبْلُكُمْ قَدْ أَنْ يِتَعْظَمَ بِكَمْ مِنْ بَعْدَمْ وَأَرْفَعُواْ ذَمِيمَةُ فَإِنَّهَا قَدْ رَفْضَتْ مِنْ كَانَ أَشْغَفَ بِهَا مَتَكْم.

وَهَذِهِ المَخْتَطَة رَبّما نَسْبًا مِنْ لَا عَلَمُ لَهُ إِلَى مَعَاوِيَةُ وَهْيَ مِنْ كَلَامٍ أَمْيَرِ المؤمِّنِينْ عَلَى السَّلَامُ الذُّي لَا شَكَّ فِيهِ وَأَيْنَ الْذَّهِبَ مِنْ الرَّغْمِ وَالْعَذْبِ مِنْ الأَجَاجِ وَقَدْ دَلَّ عَلَى ذَلِكَ الدِّلِيلُ

١٥٤

al-Sharīf al-Raḍī - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
1.32 From an oration by ʿAlī:¹

People! We live in a challenging age and a difficult time, when the good are deemed evil, and oppressors grow ever more brutal. We neither benefit from what we have learnt, nor ask about what we don't know—we ignore calamities until they set up camp in our homes. Men today fall into one of four categories: One is prevented from spreading corruption on earth by the weakness of his person, the dullness of his blade, and the sparseness of his wealth. Another unsheathes his sword, announces his intention, and assembles foot soldiers and cavalry, selling his soul and forfeiting his religion to amass baubles, lead an army, or ascend a pulpit—what a terrible transaction, when you deem the world an equitable price for your soul, a fair exchange for heavenly reward! A third seeks worldly gain by performing the deeds of the hereafter, rather than seeking the hereafter by performing good deeds in this world; he appears calm in his person, walks with slow steps, tucks up his garments, and presents himself as a trustworthy man, taking advantage of the concealment offered by God’s veil to sin. A fourth is only prevented from seeking power by his own servility and lack of support—these are what keeps him in his place. He wears the mark of contentment and dons the garment of renunciants, but neither his haunts in the daytime nor his retreats in the night are anything like theirs. Only a few men remain—their eyes are wet with remembrance of the return to God, and their tears flow from fear of the resurrection. One is a solitary fugitive, another is curbed by fear, a third is shushed and muzzled, a fourth, sincere, prays, and a fifth is bereaved and grieving. They are weakened by terror and humiliated on all sides; they drink from a bitter sea, tongues silenced, hearts wounded. They gave counsel until exhausted, now they are beaten down; almost all have been killed off, only a few remain. People, let this world be smaller in your eyes than fibers of a spiny acacia pod, or fluffs of wool floating off a pair of shears. Learn from the fate of those who came before, let not those who come later have occasion to learn from yours. Reject this world and censure her, for she has rejected many who were far more enamored of her than you.

Raḍī: Some individuals who lack any knowledge attribute this oration to Muʿāwiyah, when it is unquestionably the speech of the Commander of the Faithful. Can one compare dirt to gold, or the bitter to the sweet? Indeed, an experienced guide has shown

¹ ʿAlī delivered this oration in the Grand Mosque of Kufa, during his caliphate, 35–40/656–661, in the presence of the community’s leaders. Ibn Ṭalḥah, Maṭālib, 176.
الخرّيط وتقدّه الناقد البصري عمرو بن بحر الجاحظ فإنه ذكر هذه الخطبة في كتابه البيان والتبين، 

وذكر من نسبها إلى معاوية ثم تكلّم من بعدها بكلام في معناها جملته أنه قال وهذا الكلام بكلام

علي عليه السلام أشبه وبمذهبه في تصنيف الناس وفق الأخبار عمّاهم عليه من القهر والإدعال

ومن التقنيات والغلف ألبق. ومتى وجدنا معاوية في حال من الأحوال يسلك في كلامه مسلك

الزوّاد ومذارة العبد.

1.33

الله علىه السلام عند مسيره لقتال أهل البصرة. قال عبد الله بن العبّاس رضي

الله عنه دخلت على أمير المؤمنين صلوات الله عليه بذي قار وهو يخضف نعله فقال في ما قيمة

هذه النعل فقلت لا قيمة لها قال والله في جمعها حركة من إمركم إلا أن أقيم حقيقة أو أدفع باطلًا

ثم خرج عليه السلام فطل الناس فقال

إذ السباحة بعث محمّداٰ صلّى الله عليه وآله وسلم أحد من العرب يقرأ كتاباً ولا يدعي

نبوّة فسوق الناس حتى بواههم ملائكم وبلغهم منهجهم فاستقامت قناتهم وأطمنّت

صفاتهم. أما والله إن كنت لفي ساقها حتى تولّت تحاولها ما حجزت ولا جبت وإن

مسيري هذا مثلها فألتفت الناس حتى يخرج الحق من جنبه. مايّا للفريق والله لقد

قالتاه كأرين ولأقاتّله مفتونين وإنّماأ صحّهم بالأمس كما أنا صحّهم اليوم.

جميع المخطوطات الرئيسيّة: كذا. والأشهب: كتاب البيان والتبين.
us the way, a discerning assayer has scrutinized it and pronounced judgment: ʿAmr ibn Baḥr al-Jāḥiẓ, in his book, Eloquence and Exposition (*al-Bayān wa-l-tabyīn*), mentions that certain people attribute this oration to Muʿāwiyah, then he discusses the issue at some length. This is the gist of Jāḥiẓ’s comments: “These words resemble the words of ʿAli. They are closer to his style in categorizing people and providing information about their state, describing them as beaten, humiliated, fearful, and terrified. In contrast, when did we ever see Muʿāwiyah’s speech follow the path of the renunciants and the way of the worshippers!”

1.33 From an oration by ʿAli, when he marched on the people of Basra. ʿAbdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās narrated: I entered the Commander of the Faithful’s tent at Dhū Qār and found him mending his sandal. He asked me, “What’s the value of this sandal?” and, when I replied, “It’s worth nothing,” he responded, “By God, it’s worth more to me than command over you! That I undertake only to establish truth and fight falsehood!” Then he went out and addressed the people in the following oration:

God sent Muḥammad when no Arab read scripture or claimed prophecy. He shepherded them until he had brought them to a safe encampment, a place of refuge, where their lances were straightened and the ground under them made firm. By God, I always fought in the front, always battled until the enemy’s battalions were repulsed and defeated, never holding back from weakness or cowardice. This march is the same. I shall impale the demon of falsehood until truth breaks out from its side. Heavens, why do the Quraysh hate me so? By God, I fought them when they were unbelievers, and I shall fight them now in this revolt. I brought them to their knees then and shall do so again.

---


2 The march culminated in the Battle of the Camel near Basra in 36/656—between the Caliph ʿAli on one side, and the Prophet’s widow ʿĀʾishah, and the Prophet’s Companions Talhah and Zubayr on the other—in which ʿAli won a decisive victory. This oration is also narrated in a variant version, §1.101. Dhū Qār was a caravan stop east of Kufa, in the direction of Wāsiṭ, where ʿAli camped—on events there, see H 2:187–188—en route to the Battle of the Camel at Basra. Alternatively, Mufīd (*Irshād*, 247) places the oration at Rabadhah, where hajj pilgrims were also in the audience.
1.34 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام في استفتار الناس إلى الشام
أَفْ لَكَمْ قَدْ سَمِيْتُ عَتِبَكَمْ أَرْضِيَمْ بِالحَيَاةِ الدُّنْيَا مِنَ الْآخِرَةِ عِزْوَةً وَبَيَّنَّ الْعَرْزِ خَلْفُهَا
إِذَا دُعِيْتُمْ إِلَى جَهَادٍ عَدْوَٰكَمْ دَارَتُ عِينَكَمْ كَأَنَّكُمْ مِنَ الْمَوْتِ فِي غَمْرَةٍ وَمِنَ الْذَّهْوِ فِي
سَكْرَةٍ رَبِّيْتُ عَلَيْكَمْ حَوْارِي فَتَعْمَهُنَّ فَكَانَ قَلَوْبُكُمْ مَأْوِيَةٌ فَأَنْتُمْ لاَ تَعْقَلُونَ. مَا أَنْتُمْ بِبَقِيَةٍ
سَيْسِيسَ الْلَّيْلِي وَمَا أَنْتُمْ بِرَكَّةٍ يَمَالٍ بَكَّ وَلَا زَوَافِرٌ عَرْفٌ يَفْتَقْرُ إِلَيْكَ مَا أَنْتُمْ إِلَّا كَابِلٌ ضَلُّ
رَعَانَةٍ فَكَلَّا جَمَعْتُ مِنْ جَانِبِ أَنْتُمْ مِنْ أَخْرَجَتُ مِنْ أَخْرَجْتُ لِعُمْرِ اللَّهِ سُعُرُ نَارِ الحَربِ أَنْتُمْ
تُكَادُونَ وَلاَ تَكِيدُونَ وَتَنْقَصُ أَطْرَافُكُمْ فَلاَ مَتَتَعَضِّنَّ فَلاَ مَتَتَعَضِّنَّ لَا يَنْمَ عَنْكَمْ وَأَنْتُمْ فِي غَفْلَةٍ سَاهُون
غَلْبَ وَاللَّهِ المَتَخَاذَلَوْنَ وَايُّمَ اللَّهِ إِنَّكُمْ لَأَظْنُنَّ بَكَّ مَنْ لَوْ خَسْسَ الْوَغْيُ وَأَسْتَهَرَّ الْمَوْتُ قَدْ
آَتَفْجِرُتُ عَنْ أَنْبِيَةَ طَالِبٍ أَفْتَرَاجُ الرَّأْسِ عَنَّ الْبَدنِ. وَاللَّهُ إِنَّ آمِرَى يَمْكِنُ عَدْوَهُ مِنْ نَفْسِهِ
يَعْرَقُ خَيْمَهُ وَيَعْمَهُ عَظْمَهُ وَيَفْرِي جَلْدَهُ لِعَظْمِ نَجَزَهُ ضَعَيْفَ مَا ضَلَّتْ عَلَيْهِ جَوَاحٌ صَدِرُهُ
أَقُلَ فَكَنْ ذَلِكَ إِنْ شَتَّتَ فَأَمَّا أنَّ فَوْلَدَ اللَّهِ لَدَأَنَّ عَطْيَ ذَكَّدَ ضَرْبُ بِالمَشْرَفِيَّةِ تَطْبِرَ مَنْ
عِاصِلَ الْجَمَّاءِ وَتَطْبِيِّجَ السَّوَاعِدِ وَالْأَقْدَامِ وَيَفْعَلَ اللَّهُ بَعْدَ ذَكَّ لِمَا يَنْسَأُ أَيْنَ اللَّهُ الْعَادِ يَنْيَ
لِي عَلِيْكَمْ حَنْثَا وَلَكِمْ عَلَيْ حق. فَأَمَّا حَتْبُمُ عَلِيْ فَالْصِّيْحَةُ لَكَ وَتَوْفِيرُ فِيْتُمْ عَلِيْكَمْ وَتَعْلِيمْكَ
كِيَا تَهْجِلَا وَتَأْدُّي يَمْكُمْ تَعْلَاوُمًا. وَأَمَّا حَتْبُمُ عَلِيْكَمْ فَالْفَوْفَاءُ بِالبَيْعَةِ وَالْصِّيْحَةِ فِي المَشْهَدِ
وَالْمَغْيِبِ وَالْإِجْبَاَةِ حِينَ أَدْعَوْمـَ وَالطَّاعَةَ حِينَ أَرْمَكَمْ.

1.35 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام بعد التحكيم
1.34 From an oration by ‘Ali, as he mobilized his followers to fight the Syrians: 1

Shame! I am tired of rebuking you! Is it that you are satisfied with this world in exchange for the hereafter? Is it that you are happy with humiliation after having known strength and might? When I call you to fight your enemy, you roll your eyes as though in the throes of death, as if numb with strong drink. You struggle to find words and appear mystified by what I say, pretending that your minds are addled and that you grasped nothing. To the end of the long nights, never will you be supporters in whom I can trust, or a column on which I can lean, or allies on whom I can depend! You are like camels whose herder is at his wits end—each time he gathers them from one side, they scatter from another. God's life! What cowards you are when faced with the flames of war! Your enemies conspire but you do not respond, your boundaries contract but you feel no anger, your enemies never sleep but you remain merrily oblivious. By God, the slothful will be crushed! By God, I know that when battle blazes and death burns, you will split from Abū Ṭālib’s son as cleanly as a head sliced off a body. By God, how powerless the man who lets his enemy eat his flesh, pound his bones, and flay his skin! His ribs conceal a feeble heart! You be that person if you wish. I, by God, shall strike a blow with my Mashrafī sword that will crush skulls and sever limbs. Then God may do with me as he wills! People! You have rights over me, and I have rights over you. I owe you sincere counsel, generous stipends, teaching that dispels ignorance, and lessons that make you better. You owe me fulfilment of your pledge and sincere support in my presence and my absence. You must answer when I call and obey when I command.

1.35 From an oration by ‘Ali after the arbitration: 2

1 ‘Ali delivered this oration in Kufa, shortly after defeating the Kharijites at Nahrawān. Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 5:90–91. It is his fourth post-Nahrawān oration attempting to muster his followers against Mu‘āwiyyah—the first was at Nahrawān itself, the second at Nukhaylah, near Kufa, the third immediately after reaching Kufa, and this, the fourth, after a few days had passed in Kufa. Details of his followers’ responses at each of these events in B 239; Ḥ 2:193–197. ‘Abd al-Zahrāʾ (Maṣādir, 2:192) argues that this is part of the same oration as § 1.94 which ‘Ali delivered after Nahrawān, when the Kufans held back from marching on Mu‘āwiyyah.

2 Refers to the arbitration (taḥkīm) between ‘Ali and Mu‘āwiyyah, after the Battle of Ṣiffīn, at the hands of Abū Mūsā al-Ashʿarī and ‘Amr ibn al-‘Āṣ at Dūmat al-Jandal, in 37/658 (on the arbitration, see H 2:260–264). This oration by ‘Ali was delivered soon thereafter in Kufa, before the Battle of Nahrawān. Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 577; Ḥ 2:256; B 242–243 (includes an additional section).
الحمد لله وإن أتي الدهر بالخطب القادح والحدث الجليل وأشهد أن لا إله إلا الله ليس معه إلا عزه وجل. ولقد أعبدت الله على وصفه وروضه. أما بعد فإن لمعصية الناصح الشهيف العالم الجربب تورث الحسرة وتعقب النداء وقد كنت أمركم في هذه الحكومة أمري وختمتم لكم مخزون رأي (لو كان يطاع لمصير أمراً) فأتمتم على إباء الخالفين الجفاء وال מנابذين العصاة حتى أرتاب الناصح بنصحه وضن الزند بقدحه فكنت أنا وياكم قال أيها هوازن

أمرتم أمراً ينصرف اللوى فل เรา ثبتوا النصح إلا ضحى الغد.

ومن خطبة له عليه السلام في تخويف أهل النهردأ نذير لكم أن تصبحوا صرعي بأيام هذا النهر وأهضموه هذا الغائط على غير بيئة من ربكم ولا سلطان مبين معكم قد طوحت بمكم الدار وأحتبلكم المقدار وقد كنت نيتيكم عن هذه الحكومة فأتمتم علي إباء الخالفين الجفاء وال مانابذين العصاة حتى صرفت رأيي إلى هواكم وأتمت معاشر أخفاء الهم سفهاء الأحلام ولم آت ليا لكم جبرولا أردت لكم ضراً.

البحر: الطويل. ٣٠، ي: كذا. ش: ن، ه: (المخالفين المناضلين).
I praise God even though this age has brought a great calamity and dealt a mighty blow. I testify that there is no god but God—there is no god other than he. I testify that Muḥammad is his servant and messenger—may God bless him and his descendants. And now to the matter at hand.¹

Disobeying a kind, learned, and experienced counselor yields only regret and remorse. I gave you my considered opinion regarding this arbitration, ⟨O if only Qaṣīr's command had been obeyed!⟩² With rebellious defiance you rejected my warnings, enough to make a counsellor doubt his own counsel and a flint hold back its spark! In this, you and I may be likened to the Hawāzin poet’s lines:³

I gave you my considered opinion  
At the place of the winding sands  
But you heeded not my counsel  
Till forenoon the next day.

1.36 From an oration by ʿAlī warning the people of Nahrawān:⁴

I warn you! Take heed or you will soon be corpses strewn at the bend of this river in the hollows of this plain, holding no mandate from your Lord or proof of righteousness, cast out by your lands, and enmeshed in fate’s deadly snare. I forbade you from engaging in arbitration, but you challenged me with defiance and insolence until I gave in to your reckless dictates. Lightheaded fools, the lot of you! May you be deprived of fathers! I’m not the one who has brought calamity on you, nor have I ever intended you harm.

---

¹ “And now to the matter at hand” (lit. “As for what comes after,” ʾammā baʿdu), is a standard phrase in the early Arabic oration, inserted between the praise-and-benedictions formula and the body of the oration.

² Proverb referring to the treacherous death of the pre-Islamic Iraqi Azdī king Jadhīmah (“the leper”) ibn Mālik ibn Naṣr (fl. 3rd c. AD)—at the hands of the Queen of Palmyra, Zenobia, whose father he had killed and whom he had set out to wed—and the unheeded warnings of his wise counsellor Qaṣīr ibn Sa’d al-Lakhmī. For details of the incident, see Maydānī, Majmaʿ al-āmthāl, 1:570–575 (under “khaṭb yasīr fī khaṭb kabīr”); R 1:243; B 243–244; Kawar, “Djadhima al-Abras̲h̲ or al-Waḍḍāḥ,” E1²; and Shahid, “al-Zabbāʾ,” E1².

³ Often cited proverbially, the verse is by Durayd ibn al-Ṣimmah (Dowān, 61) of the Hawāzin tribe, a famous poet and warrior who lived mostly in the pre-Islamic period and is said to have been killed at the age of a hundred fighting against Muḥammad in the Battle of Ḥunayn in 8/630. The verse is from a poem lamenting Durayd’s deceased brother ʿAbdallāh, which begins: (أَرْثُ جَدِيدٌ الجَّلِيلِيْ مِنْ أُمِّ مَعْبَدٍ). R 1:243–244; B 244–245.

⁴ Nahrawān, east of the Tigris River in Iraq, is the location and name of a pitched battle between ʿAlī and the Kharijites, and this oration was delivered in 38/658 before the battle (Tabari, Tārīkh, 5:84, 91, includes full oration text). For details on the Kharijites and the Battle of Nahrawān, see B 245–246; Ḥ 2:265–283.
1.37 ومن كلام له عليه السلام يجري جري الخطة فقدمت بالأمر حين فشلوا وتطلعت حين تعتزوا ومضيت بنور الله حين وقفوا و كنت أخفضهم صوتًا وأعلاهم فطرفت بعثانها وآستبدلت برهانها كالجبل لا تحرك القواصف ولا تزيه العواصف لم يكن لأحد في مميز ولا لقاتل في مغمر الدليل عندي عزيز حتى آخذ الحق له والقوي عندي ضعيف حتى آخذ الحق منه رضينا عن الله قضاء وسلمنا الله أمره. أُتراني أكتب على رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله والله لأنا أول من صدّقه فلا أكون أول من كذب عليه فنفست في أمري فإذا طاعتي قد سبقت بيعتي وإذا الميثاق في عنقي لغيري.

1.38 ومن خطة له عليه السلام

1.38.1 وإنما سميت الشهبة شبهة لأنّها تشبه الحق.

1.38.2 فأمّا أولياء الله فضياؤهم فيها اليقين ودليلهم سمت المدى وأمّا أعداء الله فدعاؤهم الضلال ودليلهم العمى فباينين من الموت من خafe ولا يعطي البقاء من أحبه.
1.37 From an address by ‘Alī that resembles an oration:¹
I answered Muḥammad’s call when others held back, sped forward when others dragged their feet, and welcomed God’s light when others hesitated. The humblest in speech, I outpaced all in action. With the reins of religion firmly in my hands, I flew like the wind, staking everything I possessed, like a mountain that no gales could shake, no storms could budge. No one can find fault or speak ill of me in any of this. In my eyes, the weak were mighty as I strove to restore their rights, the mighty were weak as I wrested from them the rights of the weak. I accepted God’s decree and bowed to his command. Do you think I would lie regarding God’s Messenger when I was the first to support him? I shall not be the first to lie about him! But when I paused to reflect on my situation, I found that my obedience had preceded my oath of allegiance, and my pledge was a shackle around my neck.²

1.38 From an oration by ‘Alī:

1.38.1 Doubt is called doubt because it resembles truth.³

1.38.2 Certainty illumines the way for those who place their faith in God, and the path of right guidance carries them forward, while the call of God’s enemies is the embodiment of error, and their guide is blindness itself. You will not escape death just because you fear it. You will not remain in this world just because you want to.⁴

¹ The address was delivered following the Battle of Nahrawān against the Kharijites in Ṣafar 38/658. Ḥ 1:284. Kulaynī (Kāfī, 1:454–456) narrates the first paragraph as a posthumous address in the second grammatical person, by an anonymous speaker to ‘Ali, just after he died.
² Multiple pronouns make this an ambiguous statement. The majority interpretation is this: ‘Ali is saying that he was obliged to obey the wishes of the Messenger who had commanded him to refrain from raising his sword to seek his right. He was thus forced to give an oath of allegiance to the earlier caliphs, for his pledge to the Messenger was a shackle around his neck that stopped him from fighting for his right (Ḥ 2:296; B 249; Gh 1:242). A second interpretation is this: ‘Ali is saying that the people had been commanded to render him obedience, a mandate that preceded their actual oath of allegiance to him; their pledge to him was a shackle around his neck, and he could not refuse to lead them (B 249).
³ The line plays on the paronomasia (jinās) between “doubt” (shubhah), and “resemble” (tush-bhāḥ), both deriving from the root letters “Sh-B-H.”
⁴ Some sources attribute the last two lines to ‘Ali’s associate Mālik al-Ashtar in the lead-up to the Battle of Ṣiffīn, in a speech he gave following ‘Ali’s speech, calling on the people to march on Mu‘āwiyah. Minqārī, Waqʿat Ṣiffīn, 95; Iskāfī, Miʿyār, 126; Abū Ḥanīfah al-Dīnawarī, Akhbār, 164.
من خطبة له على السلام

مُنْتَيَتْ مِنْ لَا يُطِيعُ إِذَا أَمَرَتْ وَلَا يُجِيبُ إِذَا دَعَوْتُ لَا أَبَا لَكَمْ مَا تَنَظُّرُونَ بِنَصْرِكَمْ وَكَمْ
أَمَّا دِينَ لَجِيْعُكُمْ وَلَا حَمْيَةَ تَحَمِّشُكُمْ أَقْرُومْ فِيْمَكْ مُسْتَصْرُخًا وَأَنَا دِيْكَمْ مُتَغْرَؤُونَ فَلا تَسْمَعُونَ لِي
قُولًا وَلَا تَطْيِعُونَ لِي أَمَّا حَتَّى تَكَشَّفَ الأُمُورُ عَنِ عَوْاقِبِ الْمَسَاءِلِ فَأَدْرَكْ بِكَمْ تَأَر
ولا يَبِلَغُ بِكِمْ مَرَامٍ دَعُوَّتُكِ إِلَى نَصْرِ إِخْوَاتِكِ فِجِّرُجِرُتِ جَرْجِرُ جَرْجِرُ وَتَتَافَلْ تَتَافَلْ
النَّضْرُ الأَدْرُ ثُمَّ خَرَجَ إِلَى مَنْكَمْ جَنِّدُ مَنْ تَدْجَدْهُ ضَعِيفٍ كَأَنَّا يَسَافُونَ إِلَى الْمَوْتِ وَهُمْ
يَنْظُرُونَ.

قُولْ عَلَى الْسَّلَامِ (مَتَذَابِ) أَيْ مُضْطَرِّبٌ مِّنْ قُوَّتِهِمْ (تَذَا بِتّ الْرَّجْحُ) أَيْ أَضْطَرَبْ هُبُوبُهَا وَمِنْهَا
سَمِيَ الْذِّئْبُ لِّأَضْطَرَابِ مِشْيِهِ.

الْهَنِإْ أَلَّا أَخْلَقَ مَثْلَهُ أَلْلَهُ حَوَّلَ الْمَلَكَ عَلَى سَيْفِهِ (يَدْرِجُهُ عَلَى سَيْفِهِ)
كُلُّهُ ثَمَّ مَّرَّ بَاهَا بَالْطِّلْ. "نَعُمْ أَنَّهُ لَا حَكِيمُ إِلَّا لَهُ وَلَكِنَّ هَؤُلَاءِ يَقُولُونَ لَا إِمَّرَةً وَأَنَّهُ لَا
بَدِّلْ لِلْنَّاسِ مِنْ أَمِيرِ بَأْرُ أَوْ فَجِيرْ يَعْمَلُ فِي إِمَّرَتِهِ الْمُؤْمِنِ وَيُسْتَمِعُ فِيهَا الْكَافِرُ وَيَلْغَ الْلَّهُ فِي
الأَجْلِ وَيَجْعَلَهُ الْغَيْبَ وَيَقَاطِعُ النَّفْسَ وَيُؤْمِنُ بِهَا بِالسَّبِيلِ وَيُؤْخَذُهُ بِالضَّعِيفِ مِنَ الْقُوَّيِ
حتَّى يَسْتَرِيحُ بِهِ وَيَسْتَرِخُ مِنْ فَاجِرِهِ.
1.39 From an oration by ‘Alī:  
I am tested with followers who do not obey my command or answer my call. May you be deprived of fathers! What are you waiting for? Why do you not fight and serve your Lord? Does no religion unite you, no outraged honor goad you to action? I stand among you shouting till I’m hoarse, appealing to you for succor, but you hear not a word, not a single command. These events are the result of your despicable behavior. No requital can be sought with you at my side, no purpose achieved. When I summoned you to come to your brothers’ aid, you growled like a sullen camel with sores on its chest, you plodded like a scraggy beast with lesions on its rump. The few who came forward came limp and dithering, «as though driven to a death they could see in front of their eyes.»

Raḍī: By “dithering (mutadhāʾib),” ‘Alī means: “jerkily,” from the commonly used phrase, “the wind dithered (tadhāʾabat al-rīḥ),” meaning, “it blew jerkily.” It is from this meaning—the jerkiness of its walk—that the wolf (dhiʾb) is named.

1.40 From an address by ‘Alī when he heard the Kharijites shout, ⟨No rule save God’s!⟩:

The statement is true, but the intent is false. Yes, there is no authority save God’s, but these people are claiming that there should be no other ruler. In truth, the community must have a ruler, whether pious or wicked, under whose jurisdiction believers do good and disbelievers make merry, till God brings each period to its destined conclusion. Taxes need to be collected, enemies repudiated, highways protected, and rights wrested from the mighty for the weak—all this, until the pious ruler goes to his rest, or the wicked ruler’s death allows the community to rest.

---

1 ‘Alī delivered this address in Kufa following the raid by Muʿāwiya’s commander, Nuʿmān ibn Bashīr al-Anṣārī, on ‘Ayn al-Tamr, west of the Euphrates, on the frontier between Syria and Iraq, in 39/659 (Ḥ 1:303; B 250; see events of the raid in Ḥ 1:301–306; Zetterstéen, “al-Nuʿmān b. Bashīr,” ei2; see also § 1.66, delivered at the around the same time). Some lines are transcribed by Ṭabarī (Tārīkh, 5307) within an oration ‘Alī delivered chastising the Kufans for not responding to his call to mobilize in aid of Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr, who was killed by Amr ibn al-ʿĀṣ in Egypt in 38/658.

2 Qurʾan, Anfāl 8:6.

3 Ar. Lā ḥukma illā li-llāh. ‘Alī was preaching in the mosque in Kufa, in 37/657, soon after the Battle of Ṣiffīn, when he was interrupted by a group of Kharijites shouting this slogan, and he responded with the words at hand (Balādhuri, Ansāb, 2:424; Shāfiʿī, Umm, 4:229; Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 572–73; see the events surrounding the Kharijites’ use of this slogan, and ‘Alī’s attempts to conciliate them before the Battle of Nahrawān, in Ḥ 2:310–312). The first Kharijite to utter the slogan was Burak (or al-Ḥajjāj) ibn ‘Abdallāh al-Tamīmī, who later conspired with the Kharijites Ibn Muljam and ‘Amr ibn Bakr to assassinate ‘Alī, Muʿāwiya, and ‘Amr ibn al-ʿĀṣ; Ibn Muljam killed ‘Alī, but the other two attempts failed, and all three conspirators were immediately executed (R 1:252). See also § 1.182 and § 3.182.
وفي رواية أخرى أنّه عليه السلام لما سمع تحكيمهم قال:

حكم الله أن تعتمد فيكم.

وقال:

أما الأمر البارّة فيعمل فيها التقيّ وأمام الأمر الفاجرة فيتمتّع فيها الشقيّ إلى أن تنقطع مدّتي وتدرك مثلّتي.

1.41 ومن خطة له عليه السلام إنّ الوفاء توأم الصدق ولا أعلم جدًا أوقٍ منه وما يغدر من علم كيف المرجع ولقد أصبجنا في زمن قد ألّخ أكثر أهل الغدر كنيّة ونسبهم أهل الجهل فيه إلى حسن الحيلة. ما لهم قاتلهنّ الله قد يرّى الحول القلب وجه الحيلة ودونها منع من أمر الله ونهيه فيدعها رأي عين بعد القدرة عليها وينتهر فرضها من لا حريّة له في الدين.

1.42 ومن خطة له عليه السلام أنّها الناس إنّ أخوف ما أخاف عليه أنتان آتباً الحوى وطول الأمل فأما آتباً الحوى فيصدّ عن الحقّ وأما طول الأمل فينسي الآخرة ألا وإن الدين قد ولّت حذاء فلم يبق منها إلاّ صيّابة كصيّابة الإناء أصطبّا صبّا ألا وإن الآخرة قد أقبلت وكلّ منهما بنون فكونوا من أبناء الآخرة ولا تكونوا من أبناء الدنيا فإنّ كلّ ولد سيلحق بأمّه يوم القيامة وإنّ اليوم عمل ولا حساب وغمّا حساب ولا عمل.

al-Sharīf al-Raḍī - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
In another version of the report, ʿAlī said the following when he heard their declaration about authority:
It’s the manifestation of God’s authority in you that I’m waiting for!

In a third version, he said:
Under the rule of the pious, the virtuous perform good deeds. Under the rule of the wicked, the wretched make merry till their time runs out and death overtakes them.

\[1.41\] From an oration by ʿAlī:\[1\]
Loyalty is honesty’s twin. I know of no better shield from hellfire, and those who believe they will return to God never betray. We have entered an age when the public equates betrayal with intelligence and the ignorant view duplicitous liars as clever strategists. What is wrong with them? May God punish them! The man of discernment also knows how to practice cunning, but he is checked by God’s commands and prohibitions. Although he sees the option and has the capability, he chooses to refrain. It is the man who has no religion or scruple who exploits the opportunity to deceive.

\[1.42\] From an oration by ʿAlī:\[2\]
People! I fear most for you two things: pursuit of desire and lengthy yearnings. Pursuit of desire stops you from seeing the truth, while lengthy yearnings make you forget the hereafter. Take heed! The world is retreating in haste! Only a small residue remains, like dregs in an emptied vessel. Take heed! The hereafter is at hand! And each of the two has children. Be children of the hereafter, be not children of the world, for children will be returned to their mothers on the day of resurrection. Today is the day for deeds, not reckoning. Tomorrow is the day of reckoning, not deeds.

---

1 The commentators do not provide context, but Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd narrates examples of ʿAlī’s honorable actions in war, including his allowing Muʿāwiyah’s army to access the river, even after they had earlier denied it to him. Ḥ 2:313–314. The “man of discernment” is ʿAlī himself.

2 ʿAlī delivered this oration in the Grand Mosque in Kufa immediately following his arrival after the Battle of the Camel in Rajab 36/656. Minqārī, *Waqʿat Sīffīn*, 3–4 (with this text, and further sections of the oration containing political themes). Some lines are similar in §1.28 and §1.45. Kulaynī (Kāfī, 8:58) transcribes it as the earlier part of §1.50, which is placed by Yaʿqūbī (Tārīkh, 2:191) after the arbitration in 37/658. Māmaṭīrī (*Nuzhah*, 211) attributes the oration to the Prophet, via ʿAlī.
1.43 ومن كلام له عليه السلام وقد أشار عليه أصحابه بالاستعداد للحرب بعد إرساله جريحين

عبد الله إلى معاوية

إذا استعدادي للحرب أهل الشام وجريج عندهم إغلاق للشام وصرف لأهله عن خير

إن أرادوا ولكن قد وقت جريح وقت لا يقيم بعده إلا خذدوًا أو عاصيًا والرأي مع

الأئمة فأرودوه ولا أكره لكم الإعداد. ولقد ضربت أنف هذا الأمر وعينه وقيلت ظهره

وبطنه فلم أر لي إلا القتال أو الجفر إنه قد كان على الأمة والأ حداث وأحدث أحداثاً وأوجد

الناس مقالاً قالوا ثم نقصوا فغيروا.

1.44 ومن كلام له عليه السلام لما هرب مصقلة بن هبيرة الشيباني إلى معاوية وكان قد أتاع

سببي ناجية من عامل أمير المؤمنين عليه السلام واعتقهم فلم طالبه بالمال خاسه به وهرب

إلى الشام فقال

قَبَحُ اللهُ مصقلة فَعَلَ فَعَّل السادة وفَرَّ فَارَ العبيد فَأَنْطَقَ مَادِحه حَتَّى أَسَكَّه وَلا صَدِّق

واصفه حثى بكته ولو أقام لأخذنا ميسوره وأنتظرنا بماله وفوريه.
1.43 From ‘Ali’s reply to his associates who, soon after he had sent Jarīr ibn ʿAbdallāh as envoy to Muʿāwiyah, were urging him to make preparations for battle:¹

If I prepared to battle the Syrians while Jarīr is still with them, I would close the door to reconciliation and eliminate the chance, were they to wish it, of a peaceful outcome. I have given Jarīr a limit for his return, which he should adhere to unless he is deceived or disobedient. I think we must wait, so go slowly, although I too am not against preparing. I’ve examined the eyes and nose of this affair, and flipped it over, back to belly, and the only alternative I see to fighting is to forsake Islam. Our community had a leader who instituted unwarranted practices, and he gave people the opportunity to rebuke him.² They rebuked him, then turned hostile, and took it upon themselves to effect change.

1.44 From an address by ‘Ali after Maṣqalah ibn Hubayrah al-Shaybānī defected to Muʿāwiyah. Maṣqalah had purchased captive slaves of the Banū Nājiyah from ‘Ali’s commander in order to free them. When the commander asked for payment, he reneged and fled to Syria.³

May God strike Maṣqalah with shame! He behaved like a chieftain then fled like a slave! No sooner had he prompted his admirers to utter his praises before he shut their mouths, no sooner had he confirmed his extollers’ commendations before he turned round and rebuked them. Had he remained in Iraq, I would have shown leniency and allowed him to postpone payment until his fortunes improved.

---


2 Refers to the third caliph, ‘Uthmān (d. 35/656), who was killed in Medina by a group of Muslims from Kufa and Egypt decrying his nepotism and other shortcomings. Ḥ 2:323–333, 33–69 (with details of these events and the people’s grievances); B 257–258.

3 This event took place after the arbitration, in the early months of 38/658, and ‘Ali’s oration was delivered in Kufa. Maṣqalah was then ‘Ali’s governor in Ardashīr. The commander from whom he had purchased the freedom of the Banū Nājiyah captives was Maʾqil ibn Qays al-Riyābī. When Maṣqalah fled to Syria, Muʿāwiyah appointed him to several important posts. Details of these events and people in Ḥ 3:120–151; R 1:258–261; B 258; Balādhurī, Ansāb, 2:417–418; Tabarī, Tārīkh, 5:131–132 (“The Banū Nājiyah Episode”), 5:128–131; Pellat, “al-K̲h̲irrīt,” EI². See also ‘Ali’s earlier epistles to Maṣqalah chastising him for misappropriating treasury funds, § 2.39 and § 2.44.
1.45 ومن خطبة له على السلام
الحمد لله غير مقطوع من رحمته ولا تخوّل من نعمته ولا لأبوس من مغفرته ولا مستنكف
عن عبادته الذي لا تبرع منه رحمة ولا تفقد له نعمة.
والدينيا دار من ها الفناء وأهلها منها القلء وهي حلوة خضرة قد جعلت للطالب
وقبل الناظر فأرحالوا منها بأحسن ما بحضركم من الزاد ولا تساءلوا فيها فوق
لكناف ولا تطلوا منها أكثر من البلاغ.

1.46 ومن كلام له عليه السلام عند عزمه على المسير إلى الشام
للهِمّ إنّي أعوذ بك من وثناء السفر وكبّابة المنقلب وسوء المنظر في الأهل والماليو
والولدة، لهِمّم أنت الصاحب في السفر وإن والدة في الأهل ولا يجمعهما غيرك لأنّ
المستخلف لا يكون مستصحبًا والمستصحاب لا يكون مستلجلًا.
وأتبادًا هذا الكلام مرويًّا عن رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله، وقد تفقه عليه السلام بأبلغ كلام
وتمّه بأحسن تمام من قوله: (ولأ يجمعهما غيرك) إلى آخر الفصل.

1.47 ومن كلام له عليه السلام في ذكر الكوفة
كأنّ برك خواصه مُنذّرًا مدّ الأذيم العكاظيّ ومعركتين بالنزاع والزرابين بالنزاع والشيء
لا أعلم أنّه ما أراد بك جبار سوءًا إلا أبلاه الله بشاغل ورماه بقاتل.

و: كذا: م: في الأهل والمال، ن، ش: في النفس والأهل والمال والولد، وأضافت في هامش م: (والولد).
1.45 From an oration by ʿAlī:

I praise God, never uncertain of his mercy, never empty of his favors, never doubtul of his forgiveness, never grudging in his worship. His mercy never ends, his favors never cease.

The world is an abode whose edifice awaits destruction and whose people await eviction. Sweet and green, she appears to the seeker as a gift and ensnares the viewer’s heart. People! Leave her with the best provisions you can find. In life, do not ask of her more than you need, or seek from her more than you require.

1.46 From ʿAlī’s supplication when he began the march to Syria:

God, protect me from the hardships of travel, a sorrowful end, and the grief of seeing my family, children, and property in ruin. God, you are my companion in this journey and the guardian I leave behind with my family. Only you can do both, for a man who is left behind cannot travel as a companion, and a man who travels as a companion cannot be left behind.

Raḍī: The opening lines of this supplication have also been narrated from God’s Messenger. Beautifully completing the Prophet’s, ʿAlī added his own eloquent lines: “Only you can do both,” to the end of the piece.

1.47 From an address by ʿAlī about Kufa:

I see you, Kufa, stretched like raw leather on display at the Market of ʿUkāz, beset by calamities and plagued with tremors. But I also know that should a tyrant intend you harm, God will engulf him in misfortune, then send a man to kill him.

---

1 Two unconnected excerpts from ʿAlī’s sermon on ʿĪd al-Fiṭr or ʿĪd al-Aḍḥā, presumably delivered in Kufa in one of the four years of his caliphate between 36/656 and 40/661. Also part of this sermon is § 1.28 (and its variant recension, § 1.52). B 221, 259. Bahrânî (B 259) says it is an ʿĪd al-Fiṭr sermon, but, if it is part of § 1.52, and since § 1.52.3 mentions the sacrificial animal, it was more likely delivered on ʿĪd al-Aḍḥā.

2 ʿAlī intoned this prayer “when he placed his foot in the stirrup,” as he was leaving from his home in Kufa to fight Muʿāwiyah in Syria. Before praying it, he intoned the name of God and the Qur’anic verse, «Glorious is the one who subjugated this (mount) to our use, otherwise we would not have been capable» (Qur’an, Zukhruf 43:13: 

3 See, e.g., Muslim, Ṣaḥīḥ, 2:979 (§ 1343).

4 For examples of “tyrants” killed in Kufa in the early Umayyad period, see B 262. On sayings of the Prophet’s family regarding “virtues of Kufa,” see Ḥ 3:198–199.
1.48 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام عند المسير إلى الشام
الحمد لله كلما وقبل وغصق والحمد لله كلما لاح نجم وخفق والحمد لله غير مفقود
الإوفام ولا مكافأً الإفضل. أما بعد.
فقد بعثت مقدمتي وأمرتهم بلزوم هذا المطلب حتى يأتيني أمري وقد رأيت أن
أقطع هذه النطفة إلى شرذمة منكم ميونًين أكاثم دولة فأهضهم معكم إلى عدوكم
وأجعلهم من أمماد القوة لكم.

يعني عليه السلام بذا المطلب” ها هنا السمت الذي أمرهم بلزومه وهو شاطئ الفرات ويقال
ذل ذلك أيضاً لشاطئ البحر وأصله ما أستوى من الأرض. وينبغي به النطفة” ماء الفرات وهو
من غزيب العبارات وطبيها.

1.49 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام
الحمد لله الذي بطن خفيات الأمور ودلت عليه أعلام الظهور وأمتنع على عين البصر
فلا عنين م نيره تتركه ولا قلب من أثاثه بيصره. سبق في العقول فلا شيء على منه
وقرب في الدنون فلا شيء أقرب منه فلا استعلاوه باعده عن شيء من خلقته ولا قربه
سواهم في المكان به. لا يطلع العقول على تحديد صفته ولم يحبجو عن واجب معرفته
فهو الذي تشهد له أعلام الوجود على إقرار لقب ذي محمد تعالى لله عمّا يقول المشهرون
به والجاهدون له عقولاً كبيرة.

1.50 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام
إذما بدء وقوع الفتنت أهواء تتبغ وأحكام تبتدع يختلف فيها كتاب الله ويتولى عليها رجال
رجالاً على غير دين الله فلو أن الباطل خلق من مزاج الحق لم يخفي على المرتدين ولو
أن الحق خلق من ليس الباطل أنقطع عنه أحسن المعاندين ولكن يؤخذ من هذا
ضف غمض ومن هذا مضغ فيمزجان فهالك يستطيع الشيطان على أولئيه وينجو الله
سبقت له من الله لحستي".
1.48 From an oration by ʿAlī when he marched on Syria:\(^1\)

I praise God whenever night spreads and darkens. I praise God whenever stars rise and set. I praise God whose favors are never deficient and whose gifts can never be repaid. And now to the matter at hand:

I have dispatched my vanguard and commanded them to stay close to the high bank until I send further orders. I intend to cross this clear water and make contact with the tribesmen who live in the lee of the Tigris. I will recruit them to fight your enemy and increase your strength and numbers.

Raḍī: By “high bank (milṭāṭ),” ʿAlī means the path he has commanded them to follow along the banks of the Euphrates. The word is also used for the seashore, and its original meaning is level ground. By “clear water (nuṭfah)” he means the water of the Euphrates, and it is a strange and marvelous expression.

1.49 From an oration by ʿAlī:

Praise God, who is concealed in unseen mysteries but confirmed by clear signs. He is hidden from the keenest observer, yet the eye that does not see him cannot deny his existence, while the heart that acknowledges him cannot comprehend him. He is lofty and nothing is loftier than he, he is near and nothing is nearer than he, yet his loftiness does not distance him from his creatures, while his nearness does not place him with them. He has not revealed to intellects his true description, but neither has he veiled them from recognizing him, which they must do. Creation bears witness to the creator and compels the denier to acknowledge him in his heart, but his reality is exalted above whatever is said about him by those who liken him to his creation, or those who deny his existence.

1.50 From an oration by ʿAlī:\(^2\)

Revolt begins with the indulgence of whims and the prescription of heresies, whereby God’s Book is disobeyed, and men follow men in defiance of God’s religion. If falsehood had no trace of truth, its evil would not be concealed from observers, and if truth had no shadow of falsehood, its enemies’ tongues would be silenced. But a bit is taken from here, a bit is taken from there, they are mixed together, and lo and behold, Satan gains mastery over his followers! Only «those for whom» God’s «blessings have been decreed» are saved.\(^3\)

---

\(^1\) ‘Alī delivered this oration on 5 Shawwāl 37 AH (Wednesday, March 17, 658 AD) at Nukhaylah, just outside Kufa, en route to Ṣiffīn. Minqārī, Waqʿat Ṣiffīn, 131–132; B 263 (includes a summary of the vanguard’s commanders and numbers, and of ensuing events); Ḥ 3:201 (further lines from the oration), Ḥ 3:202–215 (details of the events).

\(^2\) ‘Alī delivered this oration in Kufa after the arbitration in 37/658. Yaʿqūbī, Tārīkh, 2:191.

\(^3\) Qur’an, Anbiyāʾ 21:101.
1.51 ومن كلامه عليه السلام لما غلب أصحاب معاوية أصحابه على شريعة الفرات بصقين
ومعوهم من الماء.
قد أستعملتم كتال فقاووا على مذلة وتاريخ محلة أرووا اليسفوف من الدماء ترووا
من الماء فالموت في حياتكم مقهورين والحياة في موتكم فاهرين ألا وإن معاوية قاد ملة
من الغواوة وضعس عليهم الخيل حتى جعلوا نحورهم أغراس المنية.

1.52 ومن خطة له عليه السلام. قد تقدم مختارها برواية وذكرها ههنا برواية أخرى لتغاي
الروايتين.

1.52.1 إلا وإن الدنيا قد تصرمت وأذنت بائفضاء وتبكر معروفها وأدرت حدّاء فهي
تحز بالفناء سكانها وتخدع بالموت جيرانها وائنا أمر فإن فيها ما كان حاويا وكدر منها ما كان
صفوا فلم يبق منها إلا سمة كماللا الإداوة أو جرعة كبرى العقلية لتمزجها الصديان لم
ينتق.

1.52.2 فأرمعوا عباد الله الرحيل عن هذه الدار المقدور على أهلها الزوال ولا يغلبكم
فيها الأمل ولا يطول علىكم الأمر فوالله لحنتم حنين الوه العجال ودعوتم بهديل
الحمم وجوارتم جوار مبتئل الرهبان وخرجتم إلى الله من الأموال والولدات أثاث الفرقة
إليه في رتفاع درجة عدنه أو غفران سيئة أحتسبها كتبه وحفظه رسله لكان قليلا فيما
1.51 From ‘Alī’s address when Muʿāwiyah’s army prevailed over his by the Euphrates, and blocked their access to water:¹
By this act, they beg to be fed the victuals of war. You can either accept defeat and retreat, or quench your swords’ thirst for blood and your thirst for water. Death to a life that accepts defeat! Life, in reality, is in a fighter’s death! Hark my words! Muʿāwiyah leads a band of fools and imbeciles. By muddying reports of what happened,² he has deceived them into exposing their throats to fate’s arrows.

1.52 From an oration by ‘Alī, parts of which were cited earlier in a different transmission. We record it again in this transmission because of the variance between the two:³

1.52.1 Harken! The world has severed its rope and announced its end, its favors have become strangers and it turns away in speed, it spurs its residents to annihilation and drives its neighbors toward death, its sweetness has turned bitter and its clarity has become turbid, all that remains of it is the last few drops in the jug, the last mouthfuls apportioned with a pebble.⁴ The thirsty man sucks on it in desperation, but it does not even wet his throat.

1.52.2 Servants of God, make ready to quit this abode, for its residents are fated to die. Let not hopes of its permanence take hold, nor suppose your time in it to be long. By God, if you were to moan like bereaved camel mares, supplicate like cooing doves, and intone like praying hermits, or if you forsook property and children to attain nearness to God, to achieve a high station near him, or forgiveness for the sins that are recorded in his accounts and noted by his

---

¹ When the two armies arrived at Ṣiffīn in Dhū al-Ḥijjah 36/ June 657, Muʿāwiyah’s troops took control of the riverbank and blocked ‘Alī’s troops from the water. ‘Alī fought and prevailed. Against the urgings of his supporters to requite like for like, ‘Alī allowed Muʿāwiyah’s troops unfettered access to drink. Minqārī, *Wa[q]at Ṣiffīn*, 156–162; Ḥ 3:312–331; Gh 1:287.
² I.e., by falsely accusing ‘Alī of ‘Uthmān’s murder.
³ ‘Īd al-Adhā sermon, as evidenced by its reference to the sacrificial animal (§ 1.52.3). See also the opening lines of this sermon—in Ṣadūq, *Man lā yaḥḍuruhu*, 1:518; Ṭūsī, *Miṣbāḥ*, 663—which includes the “God is great” peroration typical of an Eid sermon. The “earlier citation” was §1.28 (which is also said to be part of §1.45: B 221, 259); the opening lines of §1.28 and §1.52.1 are similar.
⁴ The reference is to a pebble (*maqlah*) placed in a vessel to ration water among a group of travelers; for each person, water was dripped until it covered the pebble, then he sucked those drops from the pebble. Ḥ 3:333; R 1:273; Gh 1:289.
أرجو لكم من ثوابه وأخف عليكم من عقابه. وتلائمت قلوبكم آمياتاً وسالت عيونكم من رغبة إلإيه ورهبة منه دمآً ثم عممت في الدنيا ما الدنيا باقية ما جزت أعمالكم ولو لم تبقوا شيئاً من جهدكم أنعمه عليكم العظام وهداه إياكم للإيمان.

1.52.3 ومنها في ذكر يوم القيامة وصفة الأخضى ومن تمام الأضياف استشراف أذنها وسلامة عينها فإذا سلمت الأذن والعين سلمت الأخضىاً وتممت ولو كانت عصابة القرن تجرر رجلها إلى المنسك.

1.53 ومن كلام له عليه السلام فتدأوا علية تداك إلا البديل يوم ورودها قد أرسلها راعيها وخلعت مثانيها حتى ظننا أنهم قاتلي أو بعضهم قاتل بعض لدي. وقد قلب هذا الأمر بطنه وظهره حتى منعني التوم فما وجدتني يسعي إلا قتالهم أو المحدود بما جاء به محمد صلى الله عليه وآله. فكانت معالجة القتال أهون علي من معالجة العقاب وموتات الدنيا أهون علي من موتات الآخرة.

1.54 ومن كلام له عليه السلام وقد أستبطأ أصحابه إذن لهم في القتال بصقين.
angels—all this would be little compared with the reward I hope for you and the punishment I fear. By God, if your hearts were to dissolve like salt, if your eyes shed blood in fear and hope, and if you were permitted to live in this world for as long as it continues to exist, your deeds—even with supreme toil and labor—would not repay God's immense favors, or his guidance of you to faith.

1.52.3 From the same oration, referring to the Eid of Sacrifice, and describing the requirements of a sacrificial animal:
The sacrificial animal is considered intact if its ears are whole and its eyes are sound.¹ If the ears and eyes are sound, then the sacrificial animal is considered sound and intact. This is true even if a horn is broken and the animal drags its foot to the slaughterhouse.

1.53 From an address by ʿAlī:²
They crowded me like parched camels jostling at the waterhole when the herder unfastens their hobbling ropes and sets them loose. I feared they would crush me or each other to death.³

I have turned over this matter in my mind through many sleepless nights and concluded that I can either fight the rebels or repudiate Muḥammad's religion, and braving war with men sits lighter on me than braving God's punishment, facing death in this world sits lighter on me than facing death in eternity.

1.54 From ʿAlī’s address to his troops at Ṣiffīn when they expressed impatience at his reluctance to commence battle:⁴

---

¹ Lit. “if its ears stand up” (istishrāf udhunihā), denoting an animal whose ears are neither slit nor defective. B 271.
² Referring to the Medinans’ pledge of allegiance to ʿAlī as caliph, after ʿUthmān’s death, and to the breaking of that pledge, either by Ṭalḥah and Zubayr (H 4:6–11), or by Muʿāwiyah and the Syrians (R 1:275; B 272–273), or by both groups (Gh 1:297–298). Rāwandī and Baḥrānī add that ʿAlī refers here also to his initial delay in granting his army permission to fight the Syrians, explicitly mentioned next in § 1.54. Ibn Qutaybah (Imāmah, 1174) and Ibn Ṭāwūs (Kashf, 174, 180) cite it as part of a lengthy epistle ʿAlī wrote after Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr’s killing in 38/658. They include § 1.30 in this epistle; see more details in note there.
³ Similar lines in § 1.3.4, § 1.135.2, § 1.226.
⁴ 37/657. Details of ʿAlī’s efforts at reconciliation in Ḥ 4:13–32. Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih (ʿIqd, 135) and Māmaṭīrī (Nuzhah, 376) narrate the line (By God, I care not ... confront me!) as a response to associates who warned him, saying, “Do you fight the Syrians in the morning, then come out in the evening wearing only a waist-cloth and cloak?”
أَمَا قَوْلُكَمَا كُلُّ ذَلِكَ كِرَاحِيَةَ الْمَوْتِ فَوَلَّهُ بِمَا أَبْلَأَيْتُهُ دَخَلَتُ إِلَى الْمَوْتِ أَوْ خَرَجَ الْمَوْتُ إِلَىَّ
وَأَمَا قَوْلُكَمَا شُكْنَا فِي أَهْلِ الشَّامِ فَوَلَّهُ مَا دَفْعَتُ الْحَرَبُ يوْمَا إِلَّا وَأَنَا أُطِعُ أَنْ تَلْحَقَ بِي
طَائِفَةٍ قَبِيْنَيْ بِي وَتَضَرَّعُ إِلَى ضَوْيِ أَحْبَبِي إِلَيْخِ مِنْ أَنْ أَقَلُّهَا عَلَى ضَلَافُهَا إِنْ كَانَتْ تَنُوُّء
بَآئِهَا.

1.55
وَمِن كَلَامِ لَهُ عَلِيِّهِ السَّلَامُ
وَلَقَدْ كَاتَبَ مَعَ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَآيَاتُهُمَا نَقْتُلُ آبَآئَنَا وَآبَآئَنَا وَأَبْنَائِنَا وَأَخوَانَا وَأَعْمَامُنَا يَا يَزِينَنَا
ذَلِكَ إِلَّا إِيمَانًا وَتَسْلِيمًا وَمَضْهُ أَلِيَ الْقُرْآنَ وَصَبِرُ أَلِيَ مَضْطَرَّةَ الْأَلْمَ وَجَدَا أَلِيَ جَهَادَ الْعَدَوٰ
وَلَقَدْ كَانَ الْرَجُلُ مِنْهَا وَالآخِرَ مِنْ عَدُوَّنَا يَتَصَاوَرُانَ تَصَاوُرُ الْفَحْلِ يَتَخَالَسُانَ أَنفسَهُمَا
ْيَا يَا وَمَيْسِيِّ صَاحِبِهِ كَأَسْمَمُنَا قَرْبَةَ لَنَا مِنْ عَدُوَّنَا وَمَرْزَةَ لَعَدُوَّنَا مِنْهَا قَلْبَ اللَّهِ رَأِيَ اللَّهَ ِبَدْنَا
أَنْزَلَ عَدُوَنَا الْكِتَابَ وَأَنْزَلَ عَلَيْنَا النُّصْرَ حَتَّى أَسْتَقْرَرَ الْإِسْلَامُ مَلِكَيْنَ جَانَا وَمِلَّتَيْنَ أَوْطَنَهَا
وَلِعَمْرِي لَوْ كَتَبَنَا نَا تِنَى مَا أَتَيْتُ مَا قَامَ لِلدِّينِ عَمِودٍ وَلَا أَخْضَرَ لِلِإِمَانِ عَمِودٍ وَأَيِّمَ اللَّهِ لَتَحْتَلَّبُهَا
دَمَا وَلَتَبَعْنَهَا نَدَمَا.

1.56
وَمِن كَلَامِ لَهُ عَلِيِّهِ السَّلَامُ لَأَصْحَابِهِ
You taunt, “All these excuses to avoid death!” By God, I care not whether I confront death or death confronts me! You mock, “Or perhaps you hesitate to fight the Syrians?” By God, I would not delay battle even by a day, were it not for the hope that a few may yet return, to be guided by me, and—although their sight is weak!—to discern my light. This would please me more than killing them for their errant ways, notwithstanding they would die yoked to their sins.

1.55 From an address by ‘Alī.1

We fought in support of God’s Messenger and killed our fathers, our sons, our brothers, and our uncles,2 all the while increasing in faith and acceptance, commitment to the true path, endurance in the face of stinging pain, and intensity in fighting the enemy. A warrior from our side and another from the enemy would clash like two stallions to the death, each attempting to steal the other’s life, each offering the other fate’s cup.3 Ours would win in one combat, theirs would prevail in another. When God saw our true courage, he crushed our enemy in defeat and sent us triumphant victory. So was Islam founded. Thus did it rest its withers and settle into its stall. I swear on my life! If we had behaved like you, religion would never have been established, belief would never have blossomed. I swear God’s oath! You shall squeeze calamity’s udders and find blood in your pail.4 You shall be dogged forever by regret.

1.56 From ‘Alī’s address to his followers:5

---

1 ‘Alī gave this address to his followers, either at Ṣiffīn in 37/657, when many of his troops, despite being close to winning, pressed him to accept Muʿāwiyah’s truce (B 273), or a year later in Kufa, when Muʿāwiyah’s commander ‘Abdallāh ibn al-Ḥadrāmī attacked neighboring Basra (Ḥ 4:34–53). It is also possible that he spoke similar lines on more than one occasion.

2 In the Battle of Badr, for example, Ḥamzah ibn ‘Abd al-Muṭṭalib fought and killed Muʿāwiyah’s paternal cousin, who was also from Ḥamzah’s tribe, Shaybah ibn Rabīʿah, and ʿUmar ibn al-Khaṭṭāb fought and killed his own maternal uncle Hishām ibn al-Mughirah. Ḥ 4:34.

3 In various early battles, for example, ‘Alī singlehandedly fought and killed the known warriors Walīd ibn ‘Utbah, Ṭalḥah ibn Abī Ṭalḥah, and ‘Amr ibn ‘Abd Wadd. Ḥ 4:34.

4 “Milking blood” is a metaphor for the painful results of the failure of ‘Alī’s supporters to answer his call. B 274; Gh 1:305.

5 “The man with a large maw” is probably Muʿāwiyah, who was a glutton, or, less likely, Ziyād ibn Abīhi, Ḥajjāj ibn Yūsuf, or al-Mughirah ibn Shu’bāh (R 1:276–277; B 275; H 4:54). The full text is narrated by Nuʿaym (Fītan, 1:64) from the Prophet via ‘Alī, and it names the man as Muʿāwiyah. The second half is placed by Kulaynī (Kāfī, 2:219) on the pulpit of the Kufa mosque, while it is transcribed by Kūfī (Manāqib, 2:64) as a tag to a response to a merchant from whom ‘Alī had purchased a shirt.
أما إنه سيظهر عليكم بعدي رجل رحب البُلُوم مندَح البطنِ، أي كل ما يجد ويطلب ما لا يجد فأقتله ولن تقتله ألا وإنّه سيأكل لكم بسيّ وبراءة مكتوماً، فأما السبب فسبّوني فإنه لي ركأة وركبة نجاة وأمًا البراءة فلا تبتُراها، فإني فاني وجلبت على القطرة وسبقت إلى الإيمان والهجرة.

ومن كلامه عليه السلام كلامه به الحوار.

أصابك حاصب ولا بقي منكم أبد أبعد إيماني بالله وجهاداً مع رسول الله يشهد على نفسي بالكفر لقد صلّت إذا وما أنا من المهتدين فأويا شرّ مانب وأرتجوا على أثر الأعجاب أما إنّم ستلقون بعدي ذلاً شاملاً وسفعًا قاطعاً وأثرة يتخذها الطالمون فيكم سنّة.

قوله (وَلاَ بَقِيَ مِنَّكُمْ أَبَنُو بَلْدَةً مِنْ قُوَّلِهِمْ أَبَنُو) للذي يأبى النخل أي يصلحه. ويروي (أَبَنُو) وهو الذي يؤثر الحديث أي يحكيه ويرويه وهو آصح الوجوه عندي قال إنه قال (وَلاَ بَقِيَ مِنَّكُمْ مَهْلِكُ).

ويروي (أَبَنُو) بالزئي معجمة وهو الواب والهالك أيضاً يقال له آب.
After me, you will be ruled by a man with a large maw and a massive belly who swallows all that is in front of him and demands everything else besides. Kill him! But no, you won’t. Listen to me! He will command you to curse me with vile names and disassociate from me. Call me names if you must—it will be a purge for me and save your life. But never disassociate from me, for I was born in a pure state of nature, and was the first to believe and migrate.

1.57 From ‘Alī’s address to the Kharijites:
May you be wiped out by sandstorms! May your date palms wither untended!
Are you saying I should testify against myself and confess unbelief? This, after believing in God and fighting alongside his messenger! «I should stray from the path if so, no longer among the guided.»
Return to the hole that you came from! Turn on your heels and retreat! After me, you face complete humiliation and a cutting sword. Indeed, despots will make it their custom to attack you and plunder.

Raḍī: In his line, “May your date palms wither untended (wa-lā baqiya minkum ābir),” the word ābir, when transmitted with an R, refers to a person who tends (yaʾburu) date palms, i.e., cultivates them. Another transmission is “one who narrates a tale (āthir),” i.e., recounts and transmits it. The latter, in my opinion, is the most viable option. Accordingly, ‘Alī is saying, “May not one of you remain to carry forward your report.” Yet another transmission is “one who jumps (ābiz)” with a Z, meaning someone who leaps. A dying man is also called ābiz.

---

1 Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd discusses the Umayyads’ commanding people to curse ‘Alī, often on penalty of death, in three full chapters. H 4:56–114; see also B 275–276. For additional reports and references, see Qutbuddin, Arabic Oration, 85–86.
2 Ar. ‘alā l-fīṭrah, meaning he was born Muslim. The usage derives from the Prophetic hadith, “Every child is born in the natural form—it is his parents who raise him Christian or Jewish.” ‘Alī was “raised by the Prophet in the light of Islam.” H 4:114–116; R 1:277–278; B 275–276.
3 Muslims consider early conversion and migration a source of honor, indicating dedication to the Prophet, and participation in setting up the nascent religion. On ‘Alī being the first male to accept Islam and to migrate with the Prophet from Mecca to Medina, see H 4:116–128.
4 In Nahrawān, 38/658 (Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 5:84). Yaʿqūbī (Tārīkh, 2:2393) places these lines in an oration ‘Alī delivered immediately upon his return to Kufa after Nahrawān, addressing his supporters.
5 Qurʾan, Anʿām 6:56.
7 Both Z and R have the same shape in Arabic orthography, but Z (ز) has a dot on top, and R (ر) is undotted.
1.58.1 وقال عليه السلام لما عزم على حرب الخوارج وقيل له إن القوم قد عبروا جسر النهر من مصاعبهم دون النطفة والله لا يقلت منهم عشرة ولا يهلك منهم عشرة.

يُعْنِي بالنطفة ماء النهر وهي أفصيح كاتبة عن الماء وإن كان كثيرو من جمة.

1.58.2 وقال لما قتلاهم فقيل هلل القوم بأجمعهم كله وله إنهم نطف في أصابات الرجال وقررات النساء كلما نجم منهم قرن قطع حتّى يكون آخرهم لصدصا سلابين.

1.58.3 وقال عليه السلام فيهم لا تقتلون الخوارج بعد فليس من طلب الحق فأخطأه كين طلب الباطل فأدركه.

يُعْنِي معاوية وأصحابه.

1.59 ومن كلام له عليه السلام لما خُوَف من الغيلة وإن علي من الله جنت فحصينة فإذا جاء يوم أنفجعت عني وأسلمتني فأتت لا يطيش السم كهل.

al-Sharīf al-Raḍī - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
1.58

1.58.1 When ʿAlī expressed his resolve to fight the Kharijites, he was told, “They have already crossed the river at Jisr al-Nahrawān,” and he declared:¹

Their deaths are written on this side of the clear water. By God, not ten of them will survive, and not ten of you will be killed.

Raḍī: By “clear water (nutfah),” he means the water of the river, an eloquent metaphor for water, even in large quantities.

1.58.2 Following the battle with the Kharijites, ʿAlī was told, “Every man among them has been killed,” and he declared:

No, by God! They hide in the loins of men and the wombs of women. But whenever a horn protrudes from their head, it will be cut off,² and the last of them will be thieves and brigands.

1.58.3 ʿAlī also said about them:³

Do not fight the Kharijites after me, for those who seek right but miss it are not like those who seek wrong and find it.

Raḍī: He means Muʿāwiyah and his associates.

1.59 From ʿAlī’s address, when warned of assassination:⁴

I am protected by God’s shield. When my day comes, it will leave and hand me over. Then, the arrow will not miss, and the wound will not heal.

---

¹ *Jisr al-Nahrawān* (The Bridge of Nahrawān) is the same as Nahrawān (present-day Sifwah), a town east of the Tigris River in Iraq, the location of the Battle of Nahrawān between ʿAlī and the Kharijites in 38/658. For details of the place and the battle, see Morony, “al-Nahrawān,” *EI*².

² “Horn” (*qarn*) is interpreted as leader, and a horn protruding is a metaphor for the emergence of a leader. B 277; R 1:283; H 573.

³ ʿAlī spoke these words after the Battle of Nahrawān in 38/658. Ṣadūq, *ʿIlal*, 218.

⁴ It is narrated that Ibn Muljam, the Kharijite who would shortly assassinate ʿAlī, had revealed his intention in Kufa. When people urged ʿAlī to act, he refused, saying that Ibn Muljam had not yet perpetrated the crime; then he spoke the words in the text at hand, thus, in Kufa, in 40/661. B 278–279.
1.60 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام
عند ذوي العقول كفني ظلَّ بينا تراه سابقًا حتَّى قلص وزائدًا حتَّى نقص.

1.61 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام
1.61.1 وآثرت الله عباد الله وبادروا آجالكم بأعمالكم وأبتعوا ما يتبقي لكم بما يرزون عنكم وترحلوا فقد جدَّ بكم وأستعدّوا للموت فقد أظلُّكم وكونوا قومًا صبح بكم فأتبهروا وعلموا أنّ الدنيا ليست لهم بدار فاستبدروا فإن الله لم يخليكم عبّنا ولم يترككم سدى. وما بين أحمدك وبين الجنة أو النار إلا الموت أن ينزل به وإن غاية تنقصها النظرة وتهددها الساعة لجدير ببقر المدة وإن غائبة يحده الجددان الليل والنهار لحري بسرعة الأوبة وإن قادما يقدم بالنفوس أو الشقور لمستحِق بأفضل الهدى.

1.61.2 فتردووا في الدنيا من الدنيا ما تحرزون به نفوسكم غدًا! فاتبقى أحمد ربه نصف نسيه قدّم توبته غلب شهوته فإن أجله مستور عنه وأمله خادع له والشيطن موكّل به يزين له المصيبة ليركبا وينمئي النوبة ليسوّفها حتٍّى تنهج مينبته عليه أغلق ما يكون عنها. فيا لها حسرة على كل ذي غفلة أن يكون عمره عليه حجة وأن تؤديه أياما إلى الشقور.

1.61.3 نسأل الله سبحانه أن يجعلنا وإياكم ممن لا تبطر نعمة ولا تقصر به عن طاعة ربه غاية ولا تحل به بعد الموت ندامة ولا كابئة.

هم، وطُافت في ش: ي: كدان، وأصل ش: ي: سقطت (فتردووا... غداً).
1.60 From an oration by ‘Ali:
Hear me! The world is an abode from which you cannot be saved except within it, yet no tribute you offer it will grant you passage beyond its rim. The world tests people with gifts: Whatever they take from it for worldly benefit they must leave behind and account for. Whatever they take from it for the next abode will stay with them forever. To the intelligent, the world is a shifting shadow—one moment you see it spreading and the next it has narrowed to a shard, one moment you see it growing and the next it has disappeared.

1.61 From an oration by ‘Ali:¹

1.61.1 Be conscious of God, O servants of God, and outrace your imminent end with good deeds. Trade transient benefits for everlasting gain, prepare to depart, for the call has been given, and brace for death, for it hovers overhead. Be those who wake when shaken, who, knowing that the world is not their home, seek a better abode. God has not created you in vain, nor left you without direction.² Nothing stands between you and paradise or hellfire but the arrival of death. Diminished by each passing moment, demolished by each pressing hour, your time to the goalpost is short. That traveler, death, whose camels are steered by Night after Day and by Day after Night will soon be here. Prepare well for this visitor who will bring you immortal triumph or unending misery.

1.61.2 Gather provisions in this world from this world to sustain your souls tomorrow. A servant should fear his Master and be true to his soul, he should hasten to repent and conquer his passions, for his lifespan is veiled from him, his long hopes are false, and he is turned over to Satan, who adorns and encourages him to ride the steed of sin, while coaxing him to delay repentance. When he least expects it, fate will attack. O what agony for the heedless man! His life will testify against him, and his days will hand him over to unending misery.

1.61.3 We beseech Almighty God to include us among those who are not made insolent by his bounty, fall short in his obedience, or are seized in death by grief and regret.

¹ Additional parts recorded in Sibt, Tadhkirah, 145. Some lines are similar in § 1.202; see note on context there.
² Modified quotes from Qur’an, Mu’mínūn 23:115, Qiyāmah 75:36.
1.62.1 من خطبة له عليه السلام

الذي لم يسبق له حالًا وليكون أولاً قبل أن يكون آخرًا وليكون ظاهراً قبل أن يكون بائعاً. كل مسمى بالوحدة غيره قليل وكل عزيز غيره ذي ليل وكل قوي غيره ضعيف وكل مالك غيره مالك وكل عالم غيره معلم وكل قادر غيره يقدر ويعجز وكل سمع غيره يصم عن لطيف الأصوات ويصمت كبيرها ويذهب عنه ما بذله منها وكل بصير غيره يعمى عن خفيف الألوان وطيف الأجسام وكل ظاهر غيره غير بائعاً وكل باطن غيره غير ظاهر.

1.62.2 لم يحلق ما خلقه لتشديد سلطان ولا تخوف من عواقب زمان ولا استعانة على ند مناور ولا شريك مكاثر ولا ضد منافر ولكن خلاص مربوون وعباد داخرون لم يحل في الأشياء فيقال هو فيها كائن ولم يقل عنها فيقال هو عنها بائن لم يئده خلق ما أبدأ ولا تدبير ما ذرأ ولا وقف به جوع عم خلق ولا وجدت عليه شبهه فيما قضى وقدر بل قضاء متقن وعلم محكم وأمر مبرم الأمول بالقيم المرهوب مع النعم.

1.63 ومن كلام له عليه السلام يقوله لأصحابه في بعض أيام صمَّم معاشر المسلمين أستスーパー الشخشي وتجربوا السكينة وعضوا على الواجه فإنه أنت للسيف عن الهايم وأكلوا اللامعة وقللوا السيف في أعمقها قبل سلبها واحتضوا الخزر وأطعنا النشر وناحقو بالظبي وصلوا السيف بالخطى. وأعلموا أنكم بعين الله ومع أبن عمّ
1.62 From an oration by ‘Ali:¹

1.62.1 No state for God precedes another state: he is neither first before he is last nor visible before he is hidden. Other than him, nothing can be described as one.² Other than him, the mighty are humble, the strong are weak, masters are slaves, the learned are students, and the powerful can fail. Other than him, all observers are blind to subtle colors and ethereal bodies, and all listeners strain to hear faint sounds, are deafened by loud noises, and miss distant echoes. Other than him, nothing that is visible is hidden, and nothing that is hidden is visible.

1.62.2 God did not create us to strengthen his authority or prevent time’s blows, nor for help against an equal’s attack, a partner’s multitudes, or a malicious adversary. Far from it! We are but subservient mortals and humble servants. He does not enter into things, so we cannot say that he exists therein, nor is he distant from them, so we cannot say that he lives apart. Creating did not tire him, nor directing the universe. Weakness did not delay his design, nor doubt enter into his decree. His judgment is perfect, his knowledge exact, his command irrevocable. He is entreated in times of distress and venerated in times of bounty.

1.63 From ‘Ali’s address to his followers on one of the battle days of Ṣiffīn:³

Muslims! Sheathe yourselves in God’s awe and envelop your bodies with calm. Bite down hard on your back teeth, for that will deflect the blades that strike at your heads. Wear full armor and rattle your swords inside their sheaths before you draw them out. Stare down the enemy and launch your spears from the right and the left. Fight with your swords and leap into the thrust so that they

¹ Ibn ‘Abd Rabbih (‘Iqd, 4:163–164) narrates lines from § 1.62.2 as part of ‘Ali’s Radiant Oration (Gharrāʾ), § 1.80. Ṣadiq (Ṭawhīd, 41, 43) places it in Kufa, after the arbitration in 37/658, as the praise opening for an oration urging supporters to rally against Mu‘āwiya.

² Ar. qalīl, translation after R 1:290, Ḥ 5:155. Alternatively explained as anything understandable in terms of number, unlike God from whom any attribution is to be removed (B 285); or weak (M 1:330).

³ Narrated by ‘Abdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās, who said, “I saw ‘Ali on the battle day of Ṣiffīn, a white turban on his head, his eyes like two glowing lamps, urging his followers to fight.” (Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 416). Either on the day of the first skirmish in Ṣiffīn, or, more likely, on the penultimate battle-day that preceded the final Night of Clamor (laylat al-harīr), Thursday-Friday 7–8 Ṣafar 37/27–28 July 657. B 289. Further orations in Ṣiffīn by ‘Ali and others, and poems and events, are recorded in Ḥ 5:175–258.
رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم وآله وسلم، واستحبوا من الفرّ فإنه عار في الأعقاب وثار يوم الحساب. وطيبوا عند أنفسكم نسما وأمنوشوا إلى الموت مشياً ضحاياً. وعليكم بهذا السواد الأعظم والرواق المطرب فأضرموا نعمة فإن الشيطان كان في كسره قد قادم للوثبة يُداً وأخر للنكوس رجلاً. فصمداً صمداً حتى ينجم ليكم عمود الحقّ وانت الأعوان والله معكر ولن يتركك أعمالك.

164. ومن كلام له عليه السلام في معنى الأنصار قالوا لما أنتهت إلى أمير المؤمنين عليه السلام أشهر السبيقة بعد وفاة رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم، قال عليه السلام ما قالت الأنصار؟ قالوا.

قالت منّا أمير ومنكم أمير.

قال عليه السلام فهل أختصحكم عليهم بأن رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم، وأن يحسن إلى محسنهم.

قالوا.

وما في هذا من الخُجّة عليهم؟

قال عليه السلام لو كانت الإمارة فيهم لم تكن الوصية عليهم.

ثم قال: فماذا قالت قريش؟
Chapter 1: Orations

pierce your foe. Know this: you fight under God's watch, and alongside his Messenger's cousin. Charge forward in attack. Do not flee the battlefield, for that would dishonor your line for generations and repay you with hellfire on judgment day. Be generous with your lives and approach death with gentle courage. Aim for the black mass and the pitched tent. Cut down its center pole, for Satan is hiding in its flap. He has one hand in front, ready to attack, and one foot at the back, ready to flee. Charge! Charge! Fight till the pillar of truth shines bright. «You shall overcome. God is with you, and he will not let your deeds go to waste.»

1.64 From observations by ʿAlī regarding the Allies. After the death of God's Messenger, when reports of the Assembly at the Banū Sāʿidah Portico reached the Commander of the Faithful, he asked:

What did the Allies say?

Those who had brought the report replied:
The Allies proposed: A commander from our side and another from yours.

ʿAlī responded:
Did you not remind them of the Messenger's directive to recompense those who do good among them and pardon those who transgress?

Those reporting asked:
How is that evidence against their claim?

ʿAlī replied:
The instruction would not be about them if they had the right to command.

Then he asked:
How did the Quraysh respond?

1 Qurʾan,Muḥammad 47:35.
2 ʿAlī spoke these lines in Medina, following the death of the Prophet in 11/632, as mentioned in Raḍī’s comments. At this Assembly, immediately after the Prophet Muḥammad’s death, some of his Companions gathered at the Portico (Saqqāḥah) of the Banū Sāʿidah and pledged allegiance to Abū Bakr as his successor. Neither ʿAlī nor anyone else from the Prophet’s family was present; they were preparing for the Prophet’s burial. See a summary of these events in B 292–293; Lecomte, “al-Saḳīfa,” EI3; a more detailed version in Ḥ 1:21–61, 6:5–17, and events immediately following in Ḥ 5:17–52. See also ʿAlī’s rebuke to Muʿāwiyah regarding this event in Nahj al-Balāghah, § 2.28.2.
قالوا:

آحتجّت بأَنّها شجرة الرسول صلى الله عليه وآله.

فقال علیه السلام:

آحتجّوا بالشجرة وأضيفوا الأثره.

165. ومن كلام له عليه السلام لما قُدِّد محَّد بن أبي بكر مصر فلماك عليه وقتل.

وقد أردت تولية مصر هاشم بن عتبة ولو أثبتت إياها لما خِلَ فهم العرصة ولا أنجزهم.

الفرصة بلا ذم محَّد فقد كان إلَّا حبيباً وكان بريباً.

166. ومن كلام له عليه السلام في ذم أصحابه:

كم أدرككم كما تداري البكاء العَبَدة والثياب المتداولة كم حيّصت من جانب تهتك من آخر أكلها أطلَّ علكم مسر من مناسر أهل الشام أغلق كل رجل منكم بابه وانجرت أنجح الصناديق في بحرها والطيع في وتجارها الذيل والله من نصرتموه ومن رمى لكم.

فقد رمى بأفق ناصِر وإنكما والله لكثير في الباحات قليل تحت الريابات واني لعالم بما يصلحك وينفي أودكم ولبناني والله لا أرى إصلاحكم بإفساد نفسي أضرع الله خدودكم وأتعس جدودكم لا تعرفون الحق كعرفتم الباطل ولا تبطلون الباطل كبطالكم الحق.

اش، ن، ي: كذا م، ه، ونسخة في ي: أظلّ.
The reporters answered:
They argued that they are the Messenger’s tree.

ʿAlī exclaimed:
They argue for the tree but forget about its fruit!

1.65 From an address by ‘Alī when his recently appointed governor, Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr, was killed, and Egypt was lost to the Umayyads:
My own choice for governor of Egypt was Hāshim ibn ʿUtbah. Hāshim would not have left a gap for them to enter or an opportunity to attack. I say this without criticizing Muḥammad, whom I loved and reared.

1.66 From an address by ‘Alī admonishing his supporters:
How long should I coax you and blandish you? How long must I handle you gingerly as a young camel whose hump a heavy load would crush, or as a worn garment, patched in one place, and falling apart in another? How is it that each man among you locks your door when a Syrian squadron approaches, and holes up in his home like a lizard in its burrow or a hyena in its den? By God, to gain you as supporters is to lose! To shoot with you in my longbow is to shoot an arrow with a broken nock and no arrowhead! By God, you throng the square, but only a few stand firm under war’s banners. I know well what would lick you into shape and straighten your crookedness—but, by God, I shall not do this at the cost of demeaning my soul. May God begrime your faces and destroy your fortunes! You embrace not truth but falsehood! You reject not falsehood but truth!

1 I have added the words, “to the Umayyads,” for clarity. Muhammad ibn Abī Bakr was killed in 38/658, after the arbitration, when ʿAmr ibn al-ʿĀṣ took over Egypt for Muʿāwiyyah. ʿAlī delivered this address in Kufa (Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 5:109–110). On the events mentioned in the address, see B 294 (summary); Ḥ 6:37–94 (details), Ḥ 6:94–100 (text of ‘Alī’s full oration following Muhammad ibn Abī Bakr’s death).

2 Muhammad was the son of Abū Bakr, the first Sunni caliph, and Asmāʾ bint ʿUmays. His father died when he was a child, and ‘Ali, who married Asmāʾ, raised him. R 1:294–295; Hawting, “Muḥammad b. Abī Bakr,” E12.

3 Among a number of orations (including § 1.39) that ʿAlī delivered in the wake of Nuʿmān ibn Bashīr’s raid on ʿAyn al-Tamr in 39/659 (Yaʿqūbī, Tārīkh, 2:195–196; Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 5:33–134). He admonishes them for their reluctance to muster to fight Muʿāwiyyah (B 295).
1.67 وقال عليه السلام في سحرة اليوم الذي ضرب فيهم:
ملكتنّي عييني وأنّا جالس فسأمحل في رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله وسلم فقلت يا رسول الله ماذا ليڭبت من أمتّك من الأود واللدد فقال أدع عليهم فقلت أبداني الله بهم خيراً لي ومنهم وأبدلهم بي شراً لكم مني.

يعني عليه السلام بدالأود) الاعوجاج (وبداللدد) الخصام وهذا من أفضح الكلام.

1.68 ومن كلام له عليه السلام في ذمّ أهل العراق:
أيما بعد، يا أهل العراق فاتمّ كاريات الحامل حملت فلما أتمّت أملشت ومات قيمها وطال تأبها وورثها أبعدها. أما والله ما أتبتكم اختياراً ولكني جئت إليكم سوقاً ولقد بلغني أنكم تقولون يكتب قاتلكم الله تعالى من أذكوب أظل على الله فأنا أول من أذن به أم على نبيه فانأ أول من صدّقه كلما والله ولكنها لهجة غيّبت عنها ولم تكونوا من أهلها وقيل:
أمّه كلاً يغبر مثمّن لو كان له وعاء (ولتتعلمن تبه بعد حين).

1.69 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام علم فيها الناس الصلاة على النبي صلى الله عليه وآله
1.67 ‘Ali spoke these words in the predawn hour of the day in which he was struck his deathblow:1
Sleep overtook me as I sat, and the Messenger appeared before my eyes. “Messenger of God,” I exclaimed, “what treachery I have encountered from your community, what hate!” He replied, “Invoke maledictions on them!” so I prayed, “God, give me better associates than they, and give them a worse leader than I!”

Raḍī: By “treachery (awad)” he means deceit and by “hate (ladas)" he means enmity. These are some of the most expressive words ever spoken.

1.68 From an address by ‘Ali censuring the Iraqis:2
Iraqis! You are like a pregnant woman who, at full term, delivers a stillborn child, then her husband dies, and she lives for a long time as a widow—she dies alone, with only distant relatives as her inheritors. By God, I did not choose to come to you! I was forced come to you! I am told that you mutter behind my back, “He lies!” May God fight you! Who do you accuse me of lying about? God? I was the first to believe in him! The Prophet? I was the first to accept his message! Never would I lie about them! But my words are beyond your comprehension, and you are not worthy to hear them.3 Woe to your mothers! I gave you a full measure, free of charge. If only there were vessels to hold it! «You shall surely learn the truth of its report, but only after a while.»4

1.69 From an oration by ‘Ali in which he taught his companions how to invoke blessings on the Prophet:5

---

1 Kufa, 40/661. Nu‘mān (Sharḥ al-akhbār, 2:432) names the addressee as al-Ḥasan ibn ‘Ali, along with some unnamed associates. For details about ‘Ali’s assassination, see H 6:113–126.
2 Excerpt from an oration ‘Ali delivered after Šiffin in 37/657, presumably in Kufa, chastising his Iraqi fighters who had agreed to a truce, when, after a hard-fought battle, they were on the verge of victory. See detailed parsing of the oration’s ‘pregnant woman’ metaphor in light of these events in B 297; R 1:301; H 6:127–129.
3 According to the commentators, ‘Ali’s “manner of speaking that is beyond the addressees’ comprehension” refers to his prophecies about future events (B 297; H 6:128–134). It could also refer to his orations explicating the mysteries of theology and metaphysics.
4 Qur’an, Šād 38:88.
5 Ibn Abī Shaybah (Muṣannaf, 6:66) prefaces the prayer with the tag, “Ali used to recite this supplication,” meaning it was ‘Ali’s habitual prayer. Variant rendering in §1.103:3 (see details of context there; §1.103 is part of a larger oration that also includes §3.26, on the four pillars of belief, and §3.259).
اللهُمّ دِياً المَدْحَوَات وِدَاعِمَ المَسْمُوكات وَجَابِلَ القُلُوب عَلَى فَضْرِتَها شَقِّيَّة وَسَعِيَّها.

اِجْعَلِ شَرْفَ صِلَوَاتِك وَنَوَايَمِ يُرَكَّبَك عَلَى مُحَمَّدٍ يُبِيدُك وَرِسُولُك الْخَاتِمُ لِمَا سُبِّقَ وَفَاتَخَلِمَا آنَفَقَ وَالْمَلَعْنَ الحُقَّ بَالْحَقِّ وَالدَّافِعُ جِيَشَاتُ الْأَبَاطِيل وَالدَّاِمِقُ صُوَلَاتُ الْأَضْفَاب

كَأَمَّا حَمَّلْ فَأَضْطَعَ قَلَمًا بِأُمَّرْك مُسْتَفْرِأً فِي مَرَاضِيْنٍ غَيْرِ نَاكِلٍ عَن فُقُدٍ وَلَا وَاهٍ فِي عَزْمٍ وَايِّعَ لَوْحِيَ حَافِظًا فِي نَفَادٍ أُمِّرْك حَتِّى أُوْرُى قِبْسِ القَابِس

وُضُعَ الْأَحْكَام فِهِ يَآمَنَك الْأَمْوَن وَخَازَنَ عَلِمُك المَخْزُونَ وَشَهِيدُك يُوْمِ الْحُسْن وَيُعْبِدُك يُوْمُ الدِّينِ وَيُعْتَبِدُك بِالْحَقِّ وَرِسُولِك إِلَى الْخَلْقِ. الْلَهُمَّ أَفْسِحْ لِهِ مَفْسَحًا فِي ذَلِكِ وَآيَةَ مَضْعَافاتِ الْخَيرِ مِن فَضْلِكِ. الْلَهُمَّ أَعْلِ عَلَى بَنِاءِ الْبَاطِنِ بَنَاءً وَأَكْرِمْ لَدِيْكَ مَنْزِلَهَ وَأَتْمِ لِهِ نُورًا وَآيَةً مِن أَبْعَاثِكَ لِمَعْقِلِ الشِّهَادَةِ مَرْضَى المِقَالَةِ ذَا مَنْطَقٍ عَدْلٍ وَخَطْفَةَ فَصِّلِ الْلَهُمَّ أَجْمَعُ بَيْنَا وَيِنِهِ في بِرَدِ العَيْشِ وَقَرَارِ النَّعَمَةِ وَمَنْيَ النَّشَاهَةِ وَأَحَوْاءِ اللَّجْذَاتِ وَرَحَايَ الْدَّعَةِ وَمَنْتَهِي

الطَّمْأَتِيْنَةٌ وَتَحْفِيْنَ الْكَرَامَةِ.

1.70 وَمِنَ كَلَّامِ لِهِ يَهَوِي الْسَلَام لِمَرْوَانٍ بِنِّ الحَكَمِ بَالبِصَّرَةِ. قَالُوا أَخَذَ مَرْوَانَ بِنِّ الحَكَمَ أَسِيرًا يُومَ الْجَلِّ فَآَسِتَشْقَعُ الحَسَنَ وَالْحَسِينَ عَلَى الْبَلَادِ الْسَلَامِ إِلَى أَمْيَرِ الْمُؤْمِنِينِ عَلَى الْسَلَامَ فَكَبَّاهُ فِي نَفْقِ سَبِيلِهُ فَقَالَ لِهِ يَبِيَّعِكَ يَا أَمْيَرُ الْمُؤْمِنِينِ فَقَالَ عَلَى الْسَلَامَ

اش، ن، م، ك، د، ه، وهامش م: أضيفت (والإثم).
God, unfold of lands unfolded, creator of skies elevated, infuser of hearts with their dispositions, blissful or wretched—Shower your noblest blessings, your manifold graces, on Muḥammad, your servant and messenger, the seal on what had come before, opener of all things locked, announcer of the truth in truth, repeller of the forces of evil, and crusher of the onslaught of error, doing all this as he was charged to do. He undertook your command and rose to serve your pleasure, with unfettered boldness and unfaltering resolve. He comprehended your revelation, safeguarded your compact, and executed your command, until he had ignited the flame of truth for those who sought its fire, and illuminated the road for those who stumbled. Through Muḥammad, hearts were guided after having been enmeshed in mutiny. He erected clear waymarks and luminous rules. He is the trustee whom you entrusted with your message, the custodian of your treasure of knowledge, your witness on judgment day, your emissary dispatched with the truth, and your messenger to the world. God, grant him a spacious home in your shade and a good reward multiplied by your generosity. God, let his palace soar above all others, give honor to his station at your side, and perfect his light.1 Reward him for being an exemplary messenger, one whose testimonial was accepted and whose words convinced, who spoke justly and took decisive action. God, unite us with him in a peaceful afterlife in a blessed abode, every desire satisfied, every pleasure granted, in ease, gentleness, and serenity, welcomed with your gifts of honor.

1.70 From ʿAlī’s address to Marwān ibn al-Ḥakam in Basra. It is reported that when Marwān was taken prisoner at the Battle of the Camel, he begged Ḥasan and Ḥusayn to intercede for his release with the Commander of the Faithful. They spoke with their father, who answered that he could go free. They then added, “Commander of the Faithful, he wishes to pledge allegiance to you,” and he replied:

---
1 Modified quote from Qurʾan, Taḥrīm 66:8.
2 36/656. On Marwān and his dealings with ʿAlī, see Ḥ 6:148–165. See also § 3.141.
أظلم يايعني بعد قتل عثمان لا حاجة لي في بيعته إنّها كفّ يهوديّة لو بابعي بيده لقدر بسيّته أما إنّ له إمرة كفتحة الكلب أنتله وهو أبو الآكبَش الأربعة وستلبغي الأمة منه ومن ولده يومًا آخر.

1.71 ومن كلام له عليه السلام لما عزموا على بيعة عثمان لقد علّمت أني أحق الناس بها من غيري والله لأسلم ما سلمت أمور المسلمين ولم يكن فيها جور إلا علي خاصّة آتياسا لأجر ذلك وفضله وزهدًا فيما تنافستموه من زخرفه وزره.

1.72 ومن كلام له عليه السلام لما بلغه أتته بني أميّة له بالمشاركة في دم عثمان
Did he not pledge allegiance to me right after ʿUthmān was killed? I have no need of his pledge now. His is a Jewish hand! If he were to pledge allegiance to me with his hand, he would break it the next moment with wind from his arse. One day, he will rule, but his rule will only last for as long as it takes a dog to lick its snout. He will also father four rams. At his hand and theirs, Muslims will encounter bloody death!

1.71 From ‘Alī’s address to the Shūrā Council when they resolved to pledge allegiance to ʿUthmān as the next caliph:
You know full well that I have more right to the caliphate than anyone else. I will concede—but, by God, I will continue to do so only for as long as the concerns of the Muslims remain unharmed, as long as the injustice is directed solely at me. I do so in the hope of God’s reward and recompense and in distaste for the adornments and splendors for which you vie.

1.72 From ‘Alī’s address when he heard reports that the Umayyads were accusing him of complicity in ‘Uthmān’s killing:

---

1 The hand is singled out for mention because a handclasp in that society sealed one’s pledge of allegiance to a ruler. “A Jewish hand” presumably refers to the pledge given to the Prophet and then broken by the Medinan Jewish tribes. For a summary of Jews in the Qurʾan and early traditional Muslim historical works, see Stillman, “Yahūd,” E1.

2 Lit. “he would deceive with his arse” (la-ghadara bi-sabbatihi). The commentators generally read this phrase metaphorically to denote strong censure and derision, but some also read it literally: Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd says it was common practice among the Arabs for a man to break wind upon resolving to break a pledge (!), and Rāwandī notes that “to insult” (sabbahū) literally means to pierce in the buttocks with a spear. Ḥ 6:147; B 302; R 1:302.

3 Marwān (r. 64–65/684–685) became caliph after the last Sufyanid-Umayyad caliph, Muʿāwiyya, and his reign lasted between six and ten months. Cf. Bosworth, “Marwān ibn al-Ḥakam,” E1.

4 The “four rams” are said to be either (i) Marwān’s sons: ʿAbd al-Malik (caliph, r. 65–86/685–705), and ʿAbd al-ʿAzīz, Bishr, and Muḥammad, who ruled respectively as governors of Egypt, Iraq, and the Arabian Peninsula; or (2) Marwān’s grandsons through ʿAbd al-Malik, the only four brothers to rule as caliph: Walīd (r. 66–96/685–715), Sulaymān (r. 96–99/715–717), Yazīd (r. 101–105/720–724), and Hishām (r. 105–125/724–723). B 302; R 1:306–307; Ḥ 6:147–148.

5 ‘Alī delivered this address in Medina following ʿUmar’s death in 23/644; I have added the words “the Shūrā Council” for clarity. Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd also notes ‘Alī’s citation at this time of several well-known hadith, including, ⟨For whomsoever I am master, ‘Ali is his master⟩, ⟨You are to me as Aaron was to Moses⟩, ⟨You are my brother in this world and the next⟩—the Shi’a consider these hadith proof of the Prophet’s appointment of ‘Ali as his successor. Ḥ 61:67–168.
أولم يه بني أمية علمها بي عن قرْفٍ في أُمُومٍ وزَعِ الجَهَالَ سِابِقِي عن تَهْيِمِي وَما وَعَظِهِلِلّ

به أَمَلَ من لساني أُنا جَهَيج المارقين وَخَصِيم المرتباين. عِلَّ كِتب اللَّه تُرْضَ الأمثال وَبما

في الصدور تجاري العباي.

1.73 ومن خطابة لى عليه السلام

رحّم الله عَبْدًا مِّعَ حِكَّا مُعَ وَدْعَى وَدُعِي إِلَى رِشَاد فَدْنَا أَخَذ بحَجْزَة هَاد فِنْجَا راَقِبُ رِبْ

وَخَاف ذُنٌبُهُ قدِّم خالِصًا وَعَمَّ صَالِحًا أَكْتَسِب مذَهْوِرًا وَأَجْتَنِب مِّذْهْوِرًا رَمَي غَرَضًا وَأَحْزَر عْوَسًا كَأْبَةٌ هَوَاءٌ وَكَذَّب مَنَاه جَعَل الصَّبِر مَطَيْبَةّ نَجَاهِهِ وَالْتَّقُوَّى عَدَةً وَفِتْهَ رَكِبُ

الطريقة الغرّاء وَلَزَمِ المحجَّة البيضاء أَغْنَم المِهْل وَبَادِر الْأَجِل وَتَزْوُر تَمْوَع من العمل.

1.74 ومن كلام لى عليه السلام

إِن بَنِي أمَيَّة لِيغْفَوْتِي تَرَث مُحَمَّد تُفْقِيقًا وَلَلّه أَنْ بُقِيت لَهَم لَانْفْضَتْهُم نَفْض اللَّم

الوَذَام الْتَّرِيَّة.

وَيرْوَى «التراب الْوَذَّام» وْهُوَ عَلَى الْقَلْب. قَوْلُه عَلَى الْسَّلَام (ليغْفَوْتِي) أَيْ يَعْطُونِي مِن الْمَال قَلِيلًا قَلِيلًا كَنْفَاق النَّاقَة وَهَوَّةَ الْحَلِيَّة الْوَاحِدَة مِن لَهَبَّة وَ(الوَذَام) جَعَل وْذَامًا وَهُيَّ الْحَزَّة مِن

الْكِرْش أو الكبد تقع في التراب فتفنض.
Is the Umayyads’ own knowledge of my character not enough to stop them from injuring me? Is my precedence in Islam not enough to curb those imbeciles from accusing me? In truth, God's admonitions are more stirring that any my tongue can produce! I shall confront those who desert the faith and challenge those who doubt. The Book of God resolves disputes, and the contents of hearts determine recompense.

1.73 From an oration by ‘Ali:
May God have mercy on the man who listens to wisdom and retains, who is called to guidance and follows, who clutches the hem of a guide and is saved, who is mindful of his Lord and fears sin, who carries out acts of purity and performs good, who earns something to put by and avoids hazardous terrain, who aims at a target and guards his treasure, who overcomes his passions and gives the lie to his desires, who makes forbearance the steed of his salvation and piety the provision for his passing, who rides on the illuminated path and keeps to the brightened road, who takes advantage of the respite and hastens to assemble provisions of good deeds before his life ends.

1.74 From an address by ‘Ali:²
The Umayyads stingily throw at me my share of Muḥammad's inheritance, piece by piece, like those who allow a camel calf to suckle its mother only lightly, at intervals. By God, if I live to show them, I will shake them up like a butcher shaking dirt off an animal's innards.

Raḍī: The phrase (al-widhām al-taribah), lit. “dirt-coated innards” is also narrated—in an instance of grammatical inversion—as “innards-coated dirt (al-turāb al-wadhamah).” By saying, “they treat me in the manner of a camel calf allowed to suckle its mother only lightly at intervals (la-yufawwiqūnanī)” ‘Ali means: “they give me the money bit by bit like the fuwāq of a she-camel, which is the quantity from a single milking.” “Widhām (innards),” the plural of wadhamah, is a piece of the ruminant’s stomach or liver; if it falls in the dirt, it must be shaken clean.

---

1 I.e., the Qur’an’s warnings against false accusations (Qur’an, Aḥzāb 33:58), and its comparison of backbiting to «eating the flesh of one’s dead brother» (Qur’an, Ḥujurāt 49:12). B 303–304; Ḥ 6:172.
2 ‘Ali spoke these terse lines in Medina in response to a gift sent to him by Sa‘īd ibn al-ʿĀṣ, who was governor of Kufa in the latter part of ’Uthmān’s reign from 29–34/649–655. This is because Sa‘īd, in an accompanying letter, had written to ‘Ali that he had not sent so much to any other except the caliph himself. B 306; Ḥ 6:174.
1.75. ومن كلمات كان عليه السلام يدعو بها:
اللهم إني آمانيك، إن عهدتي فيك، اللهم آمانيك، إن عهدتي فيك.

أول كلمات تلك التي tùyن عليها هو أنك تهدي إلى الساعة التي من سار فيها صرف عنه السوء وتحول الساعة التي من سار فيها حاكم به الضر من صدكك. إذا فقد كذب القرآن وأستغفروه من الاستعانة بالله في سبيل الخيبه ودفع السوء وينبغي في قولك للعامل بأمرك أن يوليكم الحمد دون ربية لأنك بعملك أنت هديه إلى الساعة التي نال فيها النفع وأمن الضرار.

ثم أقبل عليه السلام على الناس فقال:
 أيها الناس إياكم وتعليم النجوم إلا ما ينتمي به في برأ وأبحر فإنها تدعوا إلى الكهنة. المتنجsupports of the kahns and the sorcerers and the jinn and the kafirs in the night. They were known as the names of God. al-Sharif al-Radi - 978-90-04-68260-3 Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM via Open Access. https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
1.75 An excerpt from lines ʿAlī used to intone in supplication:

God, forgive my sins—you know more about them than I do—and if I turn back to them, turn to me with forgiveness. God, forgive the promises I made to myself that you know I have broken. God, forgive the deeds by which I sought closeness to you that my passions then stopped me from doing. God, forgive the lapses of my eyes, the blunders in my words, the errors of my heart, and the slips of my tongue.

1.76 An address by ʿAlī in response to one of his associates who, when ʿAlī had resolved to march on the Kharijites, said to him: Commander of the Faithful, I fear you will not realize your goal if you march at this time—I know this through my knowledge of the stars.

Do you presume to guide me to the hour in which those who advance are shielded from injury? Do you presume to warn me of the hour in which those who advance are attacked by harm? He who believes you challenges the Qurʾan, he relies on your help to achieve his wishes and repel his fears, instead of God’s. You may as well instruct him to glorify you and not his Lord, for in your belief, you are the one who guides him to the hour in which he will gain benefit and avert harm.

ʿAlī then turned to the people and spoke:

People! Beware of studying the stars except to navigate on land and sea, for it leads to soothsaying. An astrologer is like a soothsayer, a soothsayer is like a magician, a magician is like an unbeliever, and an unbeliever will be cast into the Fire. March forward in God’s name!

---

1 Kulaynī (Kāfī, 4:432–433) writes that this was ʿAlī’s frequent supplication at the Ka’bah, perhaps during the hajj pilgrimage, when pilgrims would perform the rite of walking between Ṣafā and Marwah: “Whenever the Commander of the Faithful climbed atop (the hill of) Ṣafā, he would face the Ka’bah, lift up his hands, and intone (the supplication text).” For further prayers attributed to ʿAlī, see H 6178–196 (also includes prayers by Muḥammad and Jesus). ʿAlī, “Prayers and Supplications,” in Quḍāʿī, Dūṣṭūr, 176–197; ʿAlī, al-Ṣāḥīfah al-ʿAlawiyyah, pas-sim.

2 ʿAlī spoke these words in Kufa, just before the Battle of Nahrawān in 38/658 (Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 437–438; R 1315, B 308). According to the commentators, the “associate” is ʿAfīf ibn Qays, brother of the infamous al-Ashʿath ibn Qays (R 1315, B 308). On theological and legal aspects of the moratorium on astrology, see H 6:200–213; B 308–312. Ibn Ṭawūs (Faraj 1:58) says the speaker was not ʿAfīf, but an unnamed landowner from Mada’in.
1.77 ومن كلام له عليه السلام بعد فراغه من حرب الجمل في ذم النساء
معاشر الناس إن النساء نواقص الإمام نواقص الحلفوظ نواقص العقول فأما نقصان
إيامهن فقوموحن عن الصلاة والصيام في أيام حيضهن وأما نقصان عقولهن فشاعة
أمرأتين بنين كشهداء الرجل الواحد وأما نقصان حظوظهن فقوميحن على الأنصاف
من موازيات الرجال فأطلقوا شرار النساء وكونوا من خيارهن على حذر ولا تطيعهن
في المعروف حتى لا يطعن في التمبرير.

1.78 ومن كلام له عليه السلام
أبطها النساء الزهدة قصر الأمل والشكر عند النعم والورع عن الخضر فإن عزب ذلك
عليكم فلا يغلب الحرام صبركم ولا ننسوا عند النعم شكركم فقد أطر الله إيكم بحجج
مسيرة ظاهرة وكتب بارزة العذر واضحة.

1.79 ومن كلام له عليه السلام في صفة الدنيا
ما أصف من دار أولاً عناء وأخرى فناء في حالها حساب وفي حرامها عقاب من
أستغني فيها فتن ومن أفطر فيها حزن ومن ساعها فتكه ومن قعد عنها وأنت له ومن أبصر
بها بصراً ومن أبصر إليها أعماة.

وم، ي، ه، ومسححة في ش: كذا ن، وأصل ش، ونسخة في ه: (حالها حساب وحرمها
عاقب). 20، ي، ن: كذا م، ونسخة في ه: (آتته).
1.77 From an address by ʿAlī following the Battle of the Camel, in censure of women:¹

People! Women are deficient in faith, deficient in fortune, and deficient in mind. Their faith is deficient because they must abstain during menstruation from the rites of prayer and fasting. Their mind is deficient because the testimony of two women counts as the testimony of one man. Their fortune is deficient because their inheritance is half that of men. Beware of evil women and be cautious when dealing with those who are good. Don’t obey them even when they propose a righteous action, so that they don’t presume to influence you to do wrong.

1.78 From an address by ʿAlī:

People! To reject worldliness is to desire little, render thanks for favors, and restrain oneself from what is forbidden. If that is too much for you, then at least make sure that illicit temptations do not overwhelm your resistance or forget to render thanks when you receive favors. God has given you reason enough to obey him, with bright and clear proofs, and books with plainly defined arguments.

1.79 From an address by ʿAlī describing the world:²

How do I describe a world that begins in weariness and ends in death, where you are held accountable for approaching what is lawful and punished for consuming what is unlawful, where the wealthy are seduced and the poor grieve? The world eludes those who try to catch her while she comes willingly to those who pay her no heed. She instructs those who view her with discernment and blinds those who look at her with longing.

---

¹ Excerpt from an oration ʿAlī delivered in Basra immediately after the Battle of the Camel in 36/656 (Sīb, Ṭadhkirah, 85). Though denigrating women in general terms, it refers particularly to ʿĀʾishah, who had the central role in raising opposition against ʿAlī, then led an army against him at this battle. Baḥrānī, while emphasizing the ʿĀʾishah-Camel connection, also deems this statement to apply to women generally. Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd adds that the Muʿtazilites believe ʿĀʾishah repented and therefore earned a place in paradise (B 312; R 1:316–317; H 6/214–221, 224–229, includes the events relating to ʿĀʾishah and the Battle of the Camel, and her oration). The rulings regarding women mentioned in the text have their basis in the Qurʾān (Baqarah 2:282, Nisāʾ 4:11) and Sunnah. Amina Inloes, “Was Imam ʿAli a Misogynist? The Portrayal of Women in Nahj al-Balaghah and Kitab Sulaym ibn Qays,” argues that this and similar words attributed to ʿAlī denigrating women are later insertions.

² Response to a man who asked ʿAlī, while he was orating, to describe the world. Ibn ʿAbd Rabbiḥ, Ṭqdl, 3219; Karājīki, Kanz, 163.
وإذا تأمل المتاهل قوله عليه السلام (من أبصر بها بصرته) وجد تحته من المعنى العجيب والغرض البعيد ما لا يُبتغى غايتاه ولا يدرك غوره ولا سيما إذا قرأ إليه قوله (ومن أبصر إليها أعمتاه) فإنه يجد الفرق بين (أبصر بها) و(أبصر إليها) واضحة نورًا وعيوبًا بارها.

1.80 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام وهو من الخطاب العجيبية تستاق الغراب

1.80.1 الحمد لله الذي علا بحوله و الدنيا بطوله مانع كل غنما وفضل وكافش كل عظيمة وأزل أحمده على عواطف كرمه وسواع نعمه وأومن به أولاً باديًا وأستهدى قريباً هادياً وأستعينه قاهرًا قادرًا وأتوكل عليه كافرًا ناصرًا. وأشهد أن محمدًا صلى الله عليه وآله وعهد ورسله لإعفاؤ أمره وإنهاء عوشة وتقديم نذره.

1.80.2 أوصيكم عباد الله بتقوى الله الذي ضرب لكم الأمثال ووقت لكم الآجال وألبسكم الرياش وأرفع لكم المعاش وأحاط بكما الإحساء وأضرد لكم الجزل وأرشكم بالنعيم السواع والرقد الرواف وأتذكم بالحجيج البوغال فأحسواكم عدما ووظف لكم مددًا في قرار خبرة ودار عيرة أتم متخرون فيها ومحاسبون عليها.

1.80.3 فإن الدنيا رقق مشربةء ردد مشرعبها يوتق منظرها ويوبق مخبرها غور حائل وضوء أفلا وظل زائل وستاد مائل حتى إذا أنس نافروها وأطمأن نا كرها قصت بأجلها وقصت بأحلابها وأقصدت بأسهمها وأعلقت المره أوهام المئية قائدة له إلى ضنك المضعوض ووحشة المرجع ومعاينة المجل وثواب العمل وكذلك الخلف بعشق السلس لا

م، ي، ه، وأضيفت في ش: كذا ن، وأصل ش: سقطت (وتقدمت نذره أوصيكم عباد الله بتقوى الله الذي).
Raḍī: If a person were to ponder ʿAlī’s words, “She instructs those who view her with discernment (man abṣara bihā baṣṣarathu),” he would find therein a wondrous meaning and a far-reaching aim whose end he can never attain and whose depths he can never plumb, especially if he reads them alongside ʿAlī’s next words, “She blinds those who look at her with longing (abṣara ilayhā aʿmathu).” He will find the difference between “view her with discernment” and “look at her with longing” (with the same verb, abṣara, but a different prepositional phrase in each, bihā vs ilayhā) splendid and luminous, wondrous and dazzling.

1.80 From an oration by ʿAlī that is among his most marvelous, known as Gharrāʾ—“The Radiant Oration”:¹

1.80.1 Praise God, exalted in his might and near through his grace, bestower of gifts and favors and dispeller of calamities and hardships. I praise him for his compassionate bounty and perfect blessings. I believe in him—he is the first and the manifest. I seek his guidance—he is close to me, and he is my guide. I ask him for aid—he is the vanquisher, the all-powerful lord. I place my trust in him—he suffices and sustains. I bear witness that Muḥammad is his servant and messenger, whom he sent to execute his command, vindicate his claim, and deliver his warning.

1.80.2 Servants of God, I counsel you to be conscious of God, who has taught you parables and decreed your lifespans, clothed you in finery and given you a good life, encompassed you in his reckoning and ordained recompense for your deeds, graced you with perfect favors and marvelous gifts, and warned you with convincing arguments. He has reckoned your numbers and appointed your time in this house of trial and abode of instruction—here you are tested and held accountable for what you do.

1.80.3 The world’s water is murky and the path to her waterhole thick with mud. Her beauty dazzles but her reality kills. She is a fleeting deception, a fading light, an ephemeral shadow, and an unsteady support. When the man who shies away from her becomes familiar, when he who is wary relaxes, she gallops away at full stretch, traps him in her snares, targets him with her arrows, and entangles him in the noose of death. She leads him to a narrow bed and a place filled with terror, to live in his new home and be paid back for his deeds. In this

¹ Abū Nuʿaym (Ḥilyat, 177–79) records §1.80.2, 6, 7, 9 and §1.82.2 as part of an oration ʿAlī declaimed after accompanying a funeral bier.
تقلع المنية اكتراها ولا يرعوي الاقوام اجتازا يختدون مثارا ويمضون أرسلانا إلى غاية
الانتهاء وصيّور الفناء.

1.80.4 حتى إذا تصرمت الأمور وتضقت الدهور وأزف النشور أخرجهم من ضراح القبور وأوكار الطوبر وأوجر السباح ومطارح الممالك سرا إلى أمر مطيعين إلى معاد رعيلا صميا قياما صفويا ينذهم البصر ويسمعم الداعي عليهم لبس الاستكانة وضعور الاستسلام والذله قد ضللت الجليل وآنقطع الأمل وهو الأفتدة كازمة وخشت الأصوات مهينة وألم عرق وعظم الشفك وأرعدت الأسامع لقرئة الداعي إلى فحل الخطاب ومقايدة الجزاء ونكال العقاب ونواب الثواب.

1.80.5 عباد مهلووقون أقدارا ومربون أقيسنا ومقيضون احترارا ومضمنون أجدادا وكانونون رفيا ومعبوثون أفرادا ومدينون جزاء ومميزون حسابا قد أمموا في طلب المخرج وهوا سبيل المنج وعمموا مثل المستعبت وكسعت عنهم سدع الريب وخلوا لمضمائر الجيد وروية الارتباط وأناة المقتبس المرداد في مدّة الأجل ومضطرب المهبل.

1.80.6 فيلالهم أمثالا صائبة ومواعظ شافية لوصادف قلبًا زاكية وأسماها واعية وآراء عازمة وألبابا حازمة. فافتنوا الله تعالى من سمع نفخهم وأقشأ فاعترف ووجل فعمل وحذر فداروا وأينقت فحسن ودور فاعتر وحيدر فازدر وأجاب أسفار وراجع فتكر وأقثد فاعدة وأزف رفآى فأسرع طالب ونجا هارب فأفاد ذكره وأطلب سرية وعمر معادا واستظهر زادا يوم رحلته وجهه سبيله وحال حائطه وموطن فاقته ووقّم أمامه لدار مقامه. فافتنوا الله عباد الله جهه ما خلقكم له وأخذوا منه كنه ما حذّركم من نفسه واستحقاقا منه ما أعد لكم بالتنج لصدق ميعاده والحذر من هول معايد.
way, sons follow fathers. Death keeps cutting off lives, and people keep sinning. They follow the example of those who went before and advance, one herd after another, to the final end—the threshold of annihilation.

1.80.4 Then, when affairs conclude, eons run their course, and the resurrection draws near, God plucks people from the recesses of graves, from the nests of birds and the dens of beasts, and from every pit death has cast them into, and they hasten to answer his command. They rush to him in silent troops, standing upright in straight rows, the eye pierces them and the caller forces them to heed his call, clad in garments of submission, suckling the unholy milk of humiliation and shame. Ruses have vanished, hope is lost, hearts are gripped by terror, voices are hushed and mute, throats choke on sweat like a camel chokes on its bridle-straits, dread pervades, and ears are deafened by the thunderous call to judgment, to the payment for past deeds, be it punishment or reward.

1.80.5 All are God’s servants, created by his power and ruled by his might. They will be seized by death, thrown into graves, transformed into dry bones, and resurrected alone, they will be held accountable for their deeds and singled out for the reckoning. They were given time to seek a way out and were guided to the beaten path, they had a lifetime to take warning and were led out from the shadows of doubt, they were left free to train for the race and contemplate their purpose, to seek a lighted torch and the promised goal. All this they could have done in their allotted time, in the respite granted for action.

1.80.6 What striking parables, what healing counsels! If only they fell on attentive ears, pure hearts, resolute minds, and mature intellects! People, be conscious of God in the manner of one who, when he hears the call, prostrates; if he sins, he confesses; because he fears, he does good; because he dreads, he hastens; attaining certainty, he is virtuous; given lessons, he takes heed; when warned, he recoils; in answering, he returns; if he regresses, he repents; when he emulates, he perseveres; and when shown the way, he perceives. In doing so, he races when he seeks and is saved when he flees. Thus, he amasses a treasure, purifies his heart, prepares for the return, and gathers provisions for his day of departure, his time on the road, his moment of need, and his state of want. He readies stocks for his final abode. Servants of God! Be conscious of him and attend to the purpose he created you for. Be afraid of him with regard to the thing he warned you to fear him for. Deserve the fulfilment of his promise. Beware the terror of the return.
جعل لكم أسماءً تعي ما عندها وأصبارًا تتجول عن عشاقها وأشلاء جامعة لأعضائها ملازمة لأحترامها في تركيب صورها ومُدمجُ عُمرها بالأبدان قائمة بأرفاقها وقلوب رائدة لأراقها في مجالات نعمة ووجوهات منته وحوارها خاليفه وقادر لكم أسرارًا سترها عنكم وخلف لكم عُبرًا من آثار الماضي قبلكم من مستمع خلاقهم ومستفسح خناقيهم أرهقهم الدنيا دون الآمال ونشدهم عنها خبر الآجال لم يمسوا في سلامه الأبدان ولم يعتبروا في أنف الأوان. فهل ينظر أهل باضاعة الشباب إلا حوالي الهم وأهل غضارة الصحبة إلا نوازل السقدم وأهل مدة البقاء إلا آونة الفناء مع قرب الزمان وأزوف الانتقال وطاع الفقى وأمل المضض وغمص الجرث وتلتقت الاستغاثة بنصرة الحفيدة والأقرباء والأعزاء والقرناء.

1.80.7 فهل دفعت الأقارب أو نفت النواحب وقد غود في ملاحة الأموات رهينًا وفي ضيق المضجع وحيدًا قد هتك الهوامّ جلدته وألبنت النواهك بناته وعفت العواصف آثاره وصحة الحدان معاليه وصارت الأجساد شبحية بعد بضمنها والعالم نخرة بعد قوتهما والأرواح مرتبطة بقليل أعبدها موغبة أنابتها لا تستزداد من صالح عملها ولا تستعتب من سيء زلتها. أولى من أبناء القوم والآباء وإخوانهم والأقرباء تحتذون أمتهم وتركبون قدّدكم وتظرون جادّكم إنقلوب قاسية عن حظاه لا يظاهر بالدوالي والقرناء في غير مضمارها كأنّ المعني سواها وكنّ الرشد في حراز دنابه.

1.80.8 وأعلم أنّ مجاريم على الصرائ ومزائل دحكه وأهاويل ذلله وتاريات أهوائه فاتقى الله تنقيه ذي لب شغل التفكّر قلبه وأنصب الخوف بدنه وأسهب التهيج غرار نومه وأظلم الرجاء هواج يومه وظلف الهد شهوته وأوجف الذكر بلسانه وقدم الخوف

1.80.9 إنّ، ونسخة في ش: كذا. نسخة في م: (لبّته). أصل ش: (وجواز غافته)، وفي الحمام مع علامه التصحيح (وجواز لبّته). ي: (وجواز لبّته وجوائز غافته). ه: (وجواز غافته وجوائز لبّته).
1.80.7 From the same oration:
God has given you ears to hear what they should, eyes to dispel blindness, and a
torso that encloses organs and is molded onto ribs; he has divided your forms—
for use through a long life—into bodies that can attend to their needs, and
hearts that can seek out their sustenance; he has given you these and many
more splendid blessings, binding favors, and shelters of health and well-being;
he has fixed your lifespans and concealed their duration. All the while, he has
presented you with lessons in the tales of the people who went before you,
who enjoyed good fortune and roamed with loosened halters, until fate over-
took them and cut off their false hopes, and the termination of their lifespan
drove them from their desires, who neglected to provide for themselves when
their bodies were sound, nor heed life's lessons while there was time to choose.
Think: Can the youth with rosy skin expect anything but the bowed back of old
age? The man of fresh health anything but the hard blows of sickness? The liv-
ing anything but the moment of perdition, the imminence of separation, the
approach of dislocation, the insomnia of anxiety, the pain of burning grief, the
throttle of the death rattle, and the futile appeal for help to grandchildren and
relatives, friends and colleagues?

1.80.8 Can relatives ward off the ordeal, or wailing women avail, when the
deceased are pledged to the dead man's quarter, when they lie alone in the
grave? Maggots tear into their skin and the elements corrode their freshness.
Storms erase their traces and routines obliterate their signs. Bodies once rosy
of skin decay, and bones once strong desiccate. Souls, mortgaged to their bur-
dens, now see the reality of the unseen. But the time to stock deeds is past, or
to atone for transgressions. Are you not the children of the dead, their fathers,
their brothers, their relatives? Do you not follow in their footsteps? Do you not
walk their road and tread their path? But your hardened hearts cannot absorb
a share of belief. You run in the wrong race, too preoccupied to discern. You
behave as though someone else is the next target, as though wisdom lies in
amassing wealth.

1.80.9 But know this: You too must cross the bridge of death, with its slippery
surface, horrifying stumbles, and repeated terrors. So be conscious of God in
the manner of a sage whose heart is deep in thought and whose body is ema-
ciated by fear; whose snatches of sleep in the watches of night are interrupted
by prayer, and whose hope for reward makes him choose thirst in the scorching
hours of the day; whose passions renunciation dampens, whose tongue remem-
brance spurs on, and who fears God as he should, in order to obtain God's
shelter; who shuns deviation from the straight path, and traverses the middle
لأماته وتنكب الخلاج عن وضح النسيل وسلوك أقصى المسالك إلى النهج المطلوب ولم تتفائل فاتلائل الغرو ولتم اثارة مشتقات الأسرة وفظى بشرى وراحة النعم في أنب تذه وآمن يومه قد عبر مكن الجاصة. حمداً وقين زاد الأجلة سعيداً وبادر من وجل وأكش في نهل ورغب في طلب وذهب عن هرب ورافق في يومه غده ونظر قدم واجهه. فكين بالجنة ثواباً ووالاً وكين بالدار عقباً ووالاً وكين بالله منتقماً ونصيراً
وكين بالكتاب حجيجة وخصوصاً.

أوصيكم بتقوى الله الذي أعرف بما أنذر وأحتج مما نهاج وحذّركم عدوًا نفذ في الصدور خفيفًا ونفث في الأذان جليًا. فأصل وأورد ووعد في زين سيئات الجرائم وهوى موقيات العظام حتى إذا أسدرق قريته وآستغلق رهيته أدرك ما زين وأستعمل ما هو وحذّر ما آمن.

النها في صفة خلق الإنسان
أم هذا الذي أنشأ في ظلوات الأرحاش وشفف الأستار نطفة دهقاً وعلقة معاقة وجنينًا وراضعًا ووليدًا ويافعاً ثم منجمه قلبًا حافظًا ونسانًا لافظًا ويسرًا لا حظًا ليفهم معتبرًا ويوقد مزرجاً حتى إذا قام أعيدله وآستوي مثله نفر مستكبرًا وখبيت صادراً مانحاً في غرب هواء كادًا سعيًا لدينه في لدات طبره وبدوات أره لا يحتسب رذية ولا يخشى تقياً.

فمات في فتنته غريزة وعاش في هفته يسيرًا لم يقد عوضًا ولم يقض مفترضاً دهمه جفعتات المنية في غبر جامحة وسند مراحه فظل سادراً وبات ساهراً في غرامات الأحلم وطوارق الأوجاع والأستقام بين أخ شقيق ووالد شقيق وداعية بالويل جزعاً ولازمة للصدر قلقًا والمرء في سكرة مليئة وعمرة كارهة وآلة موجعة وذجة مكررة وسوقه

إلا، يه، وأصل ش: كدا، ومصححة في ش، ونسخ في ه: {دفاؤاً}. al-Sharif al-Radi - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM via Open Access. https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
road to reach his goal; whom delusion’s snares do not entangle and dubious affairs do not blind. Such a man wins promised delights and blessed repose, a tranquil sleep, and a day of safety. He has crossed the bridge exemplarily, and arriving at the provisions he had sent on, he exults. Because he feared, he hastened; when given a chance, he labored; seeking, he hoped; fleeing, he dodged; in his present, he was mindful of the morrow; with courage, he looked ahead. O people, take heed: paradise suffices as reward and recompense, hellfire as punishment and penalty. God suffices as avenger and bestower of victory, his Book as interlocutor and adversary.

1.80.10 I counsel you to be conscious of God, who alerted when he cautioned, and justified his claim when he showed you the way. He warned you against the enemy who steals into breasts with stealth, and whispers into ears in secret; who misguides and leads into hell, and promises with vows that are false; who makes the evilest of crimes look attractive, and trivializes terrible sins—then, when he has deceived your soul and secured your collateral, he pronounces repulsive what he had bedecked and grave what he had dismissed, and he threatens you with the very things from which he had promised safety.

1.80.11 From the same oration, describing the creation of humans:
Look at this human, whom God created in the darkness of the womb, in layers of coverings, whom he transformed from a drop of gushing semen to a formless blood-clot, then to a fetus, a suckling babe, a child, and a youth. God bestowed on the human a heart that can remember, a tongue that can speak, and eyes that can see, so that he may learn when taught and refrain when admonished. But then, when he attained a balanced figure and his body stood up straight, he turned away in arrogance and bucked like a sun-struck camel, toiling only for worldly gain, and drawing up huge buckets from the deep wells of his passions. Seeking only ecstatic pleasures and wishful fancies, he neither heeded the approaching menace nor humbled himself before God.

1.80.12 And so he died pursuing pleasure, having lived for a moment, jolly in his sins, then leaving without fulfilling obligations or earning reward. Sudden fate attacked him as he galloped headstrong in his merry path. That day, he collapsed like a sun-struck camel, that night, he lay tortured by agonies of pain and convulsions of illness. Onlookers—a blood brother, a doting father, one woman crying woe, another beating her chest—stood by. Then he was seized by consuming paroxysms, intense distress, and painful groans, in an excruciating extraction and a most severe end. Then he was wrapped in the cloths of a shroud and moved hither and thither, passive at all times and submissive. Then
معيبة ثم أدرج في أكفاره مبلسا وجذب منتقدا سلسلة ثم ألقى على الأعوان رجع وصَب ونضف سقط تحمله حفادة البلدان وحشدة الأخوان إلى دار غربته ومنقطع زورته حتى إذا أنصف المشيوع ورجع المتفجع أقعد في حفرته نجى لمبة السؤال وعترة الامتحان.

وأعظم ما هنالك بليلة نزل الحلم وتصيلة الخيم وفروات السعير لا فترة مرتبة ولا دعة مزينة ولا قوة حاجزة ولا موته ناجزة ولا سنة مسلية بين أطوار الموتات وعذاب

الساعات "إِنَّا لِلّهٍ وَإِنَّا إِلَيْهِ رَاجِعُونَ" إِنَّا بِاللّهِ عَانِدُون.

1.80.13 عباد الله الذين عُرَو فنعبوا وعُلُموا ففهموا وأنظروا فلهوا وسلموا فنسوا أَهْلَا طويلا ومنحوا جميلا وحدروا أباها ووعدوا جسيما. احذروا الذنوب المورطة والعيوب المسخطة أحل الأصبار والأسماء والعافية والمعادج هل من مناص أو خلاص أو معاذ أو ملود أو فرار أو مَحَارَ أَمْ. "فأَتِّهَُّكَ وَقَدْ كَأَنْ تَفْكَرْنَ إِنَّ أَنتَ تَفْكَرُونَ إِنِّي حَظُّ أحدكم من الأرض ذات الطول والعروض قيد قدِّته منعفا على خده. الآن عباد

الله وخلقنا مهمل وروح مرسل في فِيِّنَة الإرشاد وراحة الأجداد ومل البيقيَّة وَنُف الف المشيَّة إنكار التوبة وانفصال الحوية قبل الضنك والمضيق والروع والزهوه وقبل قدو م الغائب المنتظر وأخذة العزيز المقتدر.

1.80.14 وفي الخبر أنه عليه السلام لما خطب بهذه الخطبة أقَسَّرَت لها الجلود وبكت العيون

ورجفت الفلوب. ومن الناس من يسمى هذه الخطبة الغرِّاء.

his body, emaciated by disease and destroyed by illness, was tossed on a plank, and carried by his sons’ children and his brothers’ attendants to the house of exile and the state of separation. Finally, when those who had come to bury him had turned back and the grieving mourners had gone away, he was made to sit up alone in his tomb to face a frightening interrogation and a terrible ordeal. People, know that the afterworld’s greatest torment is the Pit-of-Boiling-Liquid, the Blaze-of-Hellfire, the Conflagration-of-the Inferno.¹ It allows no period of rest, no alleviating respite, no shielding force, no soothing sleep, and no relief in a final death. This is all there is: death after death and hour after hour of torture. «Indeed, we belong to God, and to him we shall return.»² Truly, in God we seek refuge.

1.80.13  Servants of God! You were given long lives that you enjoyed, knowledge that helped you understand, respite that you squandered in play, and security that made you careless. You were given a long reprieve and beautiful gifts, warned of punishments, and promised rewards. Bearers of eyes and ears, health and wealth, beware of sins that hurl into the abyss, and transgressions that incur God’s wrath! Do you see escape, deliverance, refuge, shelter, retreat, or return? No? Well, then, «how are you deluded,»³ where are you directed, and what is deceiving you? Your share of the world, in all its length and breadth, is but the measure of your body as it lies with cheek in the dust! Servants of God! Take heed now, this very moment, while halters remain loosened and spirits untethered, while you have time to seek guidance and a body that is sound, with a remainder in your respite, the freedom to choose, a chance to repent, and room to move. Take heed before the calamity descends and straits narrow, before fear prevails and destruction sets in, before the arrival of that visitor who will surely arrive, and before you are seized by the Powerful, Almighty Lord.

1.80.14  Raḍī: The report goes on to state that when ʿAlī delivered this oration, bodies shuddered, eyes wept, and hearts trembled. Some people name this Gharrā’, “The Radiant Oration.”

¹  Modified quote from Qurʾan, Wāqiʿah 56:93–94.
²  Qurʾan, Baqarah 2:156.
³  Qurʾan, Anʿām 6:95, Yūnus 10:34, Fāṭir 35:3, Ghāfir 40:62.
١.٨١ ومن كلام له عليه السلام في ذكر عمرو بن العاص
عجبًا لأنّ النابة يرغم لأهل الشام أنّ في دعابة وبأني أمرٍ تلعبة أعافس وأمّارس لقد قال باطلًا ونطق آنماً أما وشرّ القول الكذب إنه ليقول فيه كما خالف وبيتاه فيلحف ويسأل فيخلع ويسأل فيبغال ويظلع العهد ويقطع الذب إذا كان عند الحرب فأي زاجر وآمر هو ما لم يأخذ السيف ما آخذها فإذا كان ذلك كان أكبرًا مكيدة أنه يمنح القوم سبًّته. أما والله إنه يشوعي من اللعب ذكر الموت وإنّه يمنعه من قول الحق نسيان الآخرة إنّه لم يبايع معاوية حتى شرط له أن يؤتاه أنيه ويرفض له على ترك الدين رضيحة.

١.٨٢ ومن خطبة له عليه السلام
١.٨٢.١ وأشهد أن لا إله إلا الله وحده لا شريك له الأوّل لا شيء قبله والآخر لا غاية له لا تقع الأوهام له على صفة ولا تعقد القلوب منه على كيفية ولا تلد النجزة والتبعيض ولا تحيط به الأبصار والقلوب.

١.٨٢.٢ منها فاتّعظوا عباد الله بالعبر النافع واعتبروا بالآي السواطع وأزدنجوا بالنذر البوالغ وأنتفعوا بالذكر والمواعظ فكان قد علّقتم مخلاب المنيّة وانقطعت منكم علاقات الأمينة

١٠٠ مي: كذا، ن، ش، ه: (أكثر)
1.81 From 'Ali’s address about 'Amr ibn al-‘Āṣ:\footnote{Thaqafi (Ghārūt, 2:513) states that this oration was delivered on the pulpit. Nu’mān (Manāqib, 273) places the text in Iraq. ‘Amr’s mother was infamous in the pre-Islamic period as “The Harlot” (nābighah, lit. “the woman who shows herself,” B 335; Gh 1:415). During the month in which she conceived ‘Amr, it is reported that she had lain with five men—Abū Lahab ibn ‘Abd al-Muṭṭalib, Umayyah ibn Khalaf al-Jumaḥī, Hishām ibn al-Mughīrah al-Makhzūmī, Abū Sufyān ibn Ḥarb, and al-‘Āṣ ibn Wā’il al-Sahmī—and each of them claimed him as his son. She chose ‘Āṣ as the father because he supported her financially, although ‘Amr resembled Abū Sufyān more (Ḥ 6:283; Gh 1:415). ‘Amr’s words about ‘Ali having “a streak of foolishness” (duʿābah) echoed a criticism earlier voiced by ‘Umar (Ḥ 6:326–330).}
How strange! The Harlot’s son tells the Syrians that I have a streak of foolishness, that I am a joker interested only in frolics and flirtation! He speaks untruth and gives voice to sin, for lies are the evilest of words. When he speaks, he lies, when he promises, he breaks his promise, when he solicits, he badgers—but when he himself is solicited, he is stingy, he betrays his pledge and disowns his kin. When battle approaches, how boldly he chides and commands!—but only before swords reap their harvest, then, his best strategy is to show people his arse!\footnote{In one of the battle days of Ṣiffīn, ‘Amr came face to face with ‘Ali, and when ‘Ali was about to strike him, he exposed his private parts, and ‘Ali turned away. Idrīs, ʿUyūn, 3:244–246.} By God, the thought of death stops me from indulging in frivolities, while disregard for the hereafter stops him from speaking the truth. In fact, he pledged allegiance to Muʿāwiyah only after he had elicited from him a promise of payment—a paltry bribe of baubles in exchange for abandoning the faith.

1.82 From an oration by ‘Ali:\footnote{§ 1.82.2 (also § 1.80.2, 6, 7, 9) are recorded by Abū Nuʿaym (Ḥilyat 1:77–79) as part of an oration ‘Ali declaimed after accompanying a funeral bier.}

1.82.1 I bear witness that there is no god but God, who has no partner. He is the first, for there was nothing before him, and the last, for he has no end. Minds cannot find a way to describe him, hearts cannot comprehend his nature, dissecting or deconstructing cannot grasp him, and eyes and hearts cannot take him in.

1.82.2 From the same oration:
Servants of God! Take counsel from valuable lessons, warning from blazing signs, caution from powerful warnings, and benefit from reminders and counsels! Imagine that death’s talons have pierced you and hope’s threads are severed, that calamitous events have crushed you, and fate has driven you to the waterhole that is common to all. «Each soul is accompanied by its driver and
ودعتكم مقاطعات الأمور والسياحة إلى الورد المرود، و«كل نفس معها ساقي
وشبهه» سائّن يسوقها إلى محرّها وشاهد يشهد عليها بعملها.

1.82.3
منها في صفة الجنة

درجات منفاضات ومنازل متفاوتات لا ينقطع نعيمها ولا يقطع مقيمها ولا يحرم
خالدها ولا يبّاس ساعتها.

1.83
ومن خطبة له عليه السلام

1.83.1
قد علم السرائر وخبر الضمائر له الاستحاطة بكل شيء واللغة لكل شيء والقوة
على كل شيء.

1.83.2
فليعمل العامل منكم في أيام مله قبل إرهاق أجله وفي طرده قبل أوان شغله وفي
متنفسّه قبل أن يأخذ بكفته وليّبه لنفسيه وقده وليزوّد من دار طمعه لدار إقامته.

1.83.3
فأينة الله علّها الناس فيما أستخفظكم من كتابه وأستودعكم من حقوقي فإنّ الله
سجحّته لم يخلقكم عّبا ولم يترككم سدى ولم يدعكم في جهالة ولا غوى قد سمي آثاركم وعلم
أعمالكم وكتب آجالكم وأنزل عليكم الكتاب تبانياً ومعرّ فهم نبيّة أزماناً حتى أكل له
ولكم فيما أنزل من كتابه الذي رضى لنفسيه وأنهى إيلّكم على لسانه مجابّه من الأعمال
ومكارةه ونواهه وأوامره فألقى إيلّكم المعذرة وأتخذ عليكم الجنة وقدّم إيلّكم بالرعيده
وأنذركم بين يدي عذاب شديد فأساروا بقيّة آيامكم وأصابوا لها أنفسكم فإنّها قليل
في كثير الأألام التي تكون منكم فيها الغفلة والتناغل عن المعونة ولا تختصروا لأنفسكم
فذهب بكم الرخّص مذاهب الطلبة ولا تداهوا فيهجم بكما الإهدان على المعصية.
its witness—an (orator) who steers it to the place of accounting, and a witness who testifies to its deeds.

1.82.3 From the same oration describing paradise:
It has distinct ranks and diverse stations. Its blessings never end, its residents never leave, its occupants never age, and its inhabitants never want.

1.83 From an oration by ʿAlī:

1.83.1 God knows your thoughts and discerns your feelings, he encompasses all things, subjugates all things, and controls all things.

1.83.2 Do good in your time of respite before the end of your lifespan, in your time of leisure before other things preoccupy you, in the time you draw breath before your throat chokes. Provide for your soul and secure it a high rank. Take provisions from the home you will leave for the home you will reside in forever.

1.83.3 People! Fear God in this: guard his Book, which he has asked you to preserve, and uphold his rights, which he has asked you to hold in trust. He has not created you in vain, nor left you without direction, nor ignorant and blind. He records your acts and knows what you do, and he has decreed what your lifespan will be. Sending you the Book with its clear exposition, God let his Prophet live among you through numerous seasons, until, by what he revealed in his Book, he perfected for him and for you the faith he was pleased to call his own. Expressing approvals and disapprovals on his Prophet’s tongue, as well as prohibitions and commands, God justified his claim to you, placed his proof before you, advanced his warning to you, and cautioned you of imminent and harsh chastisement. People, use your remaining days to rectify your wrongs and devote yourselves to that task, for your remaining days are few compared to the many you have squandered carelessly and in total neglect of admonition. Don’t give yourselves undue license for that will lead you down the path of tyrants, don’t be duplicitous for that will steer you into sin.

1 Qurʾan, Qāf 50:21.
2 § 1.83.3 (and § 1.171.2) are recorded by Mīnqārī (Waqʿat Ṣiffīn, 11) and Abū Ḥanīfah al-Dīnawarī (Akhbār, 152–153) as part of ‘Alī’s first Friday sermon in Kufa (36/656). § 1.83.4 is recorded by Ḥarrānī (Tuḥaf, 150) as part of “The Brocade (Dībāj) Oration,” also recorded in § 1.107; Mufīd (Amālī, 206) prefaced this section with “‘Alī used to say.”
3 Modified quotes from Qurʾan, Muʾminūn 23:115, Qiyāmah 75:36.
4 Modified quote from Qurʾan, Nahj 16:89.
5 Modified quote from Qurʾan, Māʾidah 5:3. I have added the word “faith” (Ar. dīn) from the Qurʾanic verse to clarify the reference and meaning.
1.83.4 عباد الله إن أنصح الناس لنفسه أطوعهم لربه وإن أعشفهم لنفسه أعصاهم لربه، والمغبون من غير نفسه والمغبوط من سلم له دينه والسعيد من وعظ بغيره والشقي من أخدع لهوا وغروه. واعملوا أن تسير الرياء شرك ومجالسة أهل الهوى منساة للإيمان، ومحضرة للشيطان. جانبو الكذب فإنه مجاب للإيمان الصادق على شفا منجاة وكرامة، والكاذب على شرف مهواه وميانته لا تحاسموا فإن الحسد يأكل الإيمان كما تأكل النار الحطب ولا تباغضوا فإنها الحالة. واعملوا أن الأميل يسبع العقل وينسي الذكر فأذنوا الأمل فإنه غرو وصاحبه مغرور.

1.84 ومن خطة له عليه السلام

1.84.1 عباد الله إن من أحب عباد الله إليه عبد أعلتهه الله على نفسه فأستشعر الحزن، وجلب الخوف فزهر مصباح الهدى في قلبه وأعد القرى ليومه النازل به فقرّب على نفسه البعيد وهوّن الشديد نظر أبصر وذكر فأستككر وأرتوى من ذهب فرات سهلت له موارده فشرب نهالًا، وسلك سبيلًا جدًا قد خلع سرابيل الشهوات وخصب من الهوم إلا، همًا واحدًا أنفرد به نخرج من صفة العمي ومشاركة أهل الهوى وصار من مفاتيح أبواب الهدى ومغاليق أبواب الري. قد أبصر طريقه وسلك سبيله وعرف منارة وقطع غماره وأستمسك من الغريب بأوثقها ومن الحبال بأمتها فهو من اليقين على مثل ضوء
1.83.4 Servants of God! He who counsels himself best, best obeys his Lord, while he who deceives himself most, most disobeys his Lord. He who cheats himself is truly cheated, he whose faith is safe is truly joyful, he who learns from the example of others is truly fortunate, and he who is misled by desire and conceit is truly wretched. Know this: If you do good to show off even a little, you assign partners to God, and when you keep company with the dissolute, you forget your faith and summon Satan. Stay away from lies for they weaken faith. The truthful stand on the threshold of salvation and honor, while liars stand at the rim of the abyss and the edge of abasement. Don’t envy one another, for envy consumes faith just as fire consumes kindling. Don’t hate one another, for hate destroys. Know this: false hope diverts the mind and causes you to forget God. Don’t place your faith in it for it is nothing but deception and its friend is wholly deceived.

1.84 From an oration by ʿAlī:

1.84.1 Servants of God! The most beloved of his servants in God’s eyes is the man who, with his help, keeps his passions under control. By wearing the shirt of grief and donning the robe of fear, this man illumines his heart with the lamp of guidance. Putting by stores for the day that will come, for that guest who will soon be here, he brings the future close and dismisses the present’s tribulations. He looks and discerns, he learns and gains, and he slakes his thirst with sweet water. His track to the waterhole has become smooth, so he walks its beaten path and drinks his fill. Discarding desire’s mantle and divesting from all aspirations, he holds on to just one. He escapes in this way from blindness and from the passion-driven rabble, and becomes a key to the door of guidance, a lock on the door of perdition. He sees his way, walks his path, recognizes his beacon, and crosses the deep seas. He grasps the firmest handle and the strongest rope, and so attains the certainty of one who sees the light of the

---

1 Lit. “[Hate] is the Shaver (innahā al-hāliqah),” an opaque metaphor interpreted variously to mean that hate (1) erases all good and blessings (ʿA 595); (2) cuts people off from one another (B 344); (3) harms faith (M 1:428); and (4) destroys society (R 1:359; Ḥ 6:357).

2 The usual rendering of amal (translated here as “false hope”) is simply “hope.” In the Arabic oratorical tradition, though, particularly in ‘Alī’s sermons, the word invariably refers to the false hope that you will live forever, while it is the word rajā‘ that usually denotes positive hope. The phrase translated as “causes you to forget God” (yunsī al-dhikr) literally means, “makes you forget the remembrance,” here, of God (B 344), and the hereafter.

3 Ḥ 6:382–383 records two additional passages from this oration.

4 The word translated as “passions” is nafs (lit. “soul,” or “self”), in the Qur’anic sense of «the [base faculty of the] soul that incites [its owner] to do evil» Qur’an, Yūsuf 12:53.
الشمس قد نصب نفسه لله سبحانه في أرفع الأمور من إصدار كل وارد عليه وتصير كل فرع إلى أصله مصالحطلبات كسائر غشوات مفتوحة مهملة دقائق معضلات دليل فوات يقول ففيهم ويسكت فيسلم قد أخلص لله فأستخلصه فهو من معايدن دينه وأوتاد أرضه قد ألزمه نفسه العدل فكان أول عدل نفي الهوى عن نفسه. يصف الحق ويعمل به لا يدع للخير غاية إلا أثنا ولا مظنة إلا قصدها قد أمكن الكتاب من زمانه فهو قائد وإمامه يحل حيث حل تث بت وينزل حيث كان منزله.

1.84.2 وأخر قد تسمى عالما وليس به فاقتبس جهاث من جهاث وأضابيل من ضلال ونصب للناس أشرا كا من جبال غرور وقول زور قد حمل الكتاب على آرائه وعطف الحق على أهوائه يؤمن من العظائم ويروى كبير الجرائم يقول أخف عند الشهبات وفيا وقع ويقول أعزل البعد وينتهي أضطضع فالصرورة صورة إنسان والقلب قلب حيوان لا يعرف باب الهدى فيتبعه ولا باب العمى فيصد عن فذلك ميت الأحياء.

فأين تذهبون وآين تؤفكون والأعلام قائمة والآيات واضحة والمنائر منصوبة فأين ينهك بل كيف تعمرون وبكمت عتيرة نيبكم وهم أزمرة الحق وأسنة الصدق فأنزلوها بأحسن منازل القرآن وردوه ورود الهيم العطاش. أيها الناس خذوها عن خاتم النبي صلى الله عليه وسلم إنه بموت من مات منا وليس بيتم ويل من بلي مت ولا بس بال. فلا تقولوا بما لا تعرفون فإن أكثر الحق فيما تتكرون وأذروا من لا حجة لكم عليه وأنه هو ألم عمل فيكم بالثقل الأكبر وأدرك فيكم الثقل الأصغر
sun. He deputes for God in the loftiest matters, providing all comers with water, tracing each branch to its root. He is a lamp in the darkness, a dispeller of obscurities, a key to elucidation, a defender against calamities, and a guide in the wilderness. When he speaks, people can understand, and when silent, he protects himself from erring. He is sincere in his devotion to God, so God singles him out for himself. He is thus a repository of God’s faith, a mountain that pegs God’s earth. He enjoins his soul to justice, and his first act of justice is to banish all passions from his soul. He preaches the truth and practices it. He strives continually for good, with no avenue unexplored, no location untracked. He entrusts his reins to God’s Book, which becomes his driver and leader. He settles where it unloads its wares and encamps where it sets up camp.

1.84.2 Then there is another kind: this man calls himself learned when he is not. He collects scraps of ignorance from the ignorant and bits of error from the errant, and traps people with deceptive snares and false reports. He interprets the Book to his fancies and bends the truth to his passions, he promises protection from punishment and trivializes major sins. He crows, “I pause if I have doubt,” when he has fallen into its pit. He boasts, “I stay away from heresy,” when he has made it his bedfellow. His form is human, but his heart is the heart of a beast. He does not recognize let alone follow guidance, he cannot identify let alone repel blindness. He is the living dead.

«So where do you go,»¹ «and how are you deluded,»² when banners are raised, waymarks are clear, and beacons are lit? Indeed, whereto do you stray, and how is it you are lost, when you have among you the Prophet’s descendants, who are guide ropes of right and tongues of truth? Accord them the high regard you accord the Qurʾan,³ and race like parched camels to drink at their water-hole. People! Take this from the Seal of the Prophets, who said, ⟨When one of us dies, he is not dead. When his body disintegrates in the ground, it has not disintegrated.⟩⁴ Don’t speak of what you don’t know, for what you deny is the truth. Absolve the man against whom you have no claim, and that is I! Have I not led you in accordance with the Greater Treasure and given you the Smaller

---

¹ Qurʾan, Takwīr 81:26.
² Qurʾan, Anʾām 6:95, Yūnus 10:34, Fāṭir 35:3, Ghāfir 40:62.
³ I.e., revere them and obey their commands, as you revere and obey the Qurʾan. B 351; H 6:376; R 1:364.
⁴ Refers to the Qurʾanic verse, «Do not think that those who die striving in the path of God are dead: They are alive, sustained by the side of their Lord.» Qurʾan, Āl ʿImrān 3:169; B 351. The “Seal of the Prophets” is Muḥammad.
وذكرت فيكم راية الإيمان ووقتكم على حدود الخلاف والحرام وأنتمكم العافية من عدلي وفرشتكم المعروف من قولي وفعلي وأريتكم كرائم الأخلاق من نفسي فلا تستخدموا الرأي فيما لا يدرك قعره البصر ولا يتغلغل إليه الفكر.

1.84.3 منها

حتى يظل الظان أن الدنيا معقولة على بني أمية تمنحهم درّها وتورددهم صفوها ولا يرفع عن هذه الأمة سوتها ولا سيّتها وكذب الظان لذلك بل هي نّجة من لذيذ العيش يتطعمونها برخاة ثم يطفوونها جملة.

1.85 ومن خطبة له على السلام

أما بعد. فإن الله لم يقضم جبارة دهر فقط إلا بعد تمهيل ورخاء ولم يعبر عظم أحد من الأمين إلا بعد أزول ويلاء وفي دون ما استقبلت من خطب وأستديرت من خطب معتبر وما كل ذي قلب بلبيب ولا كل ذي سمع بسمع ولا كل ذي ناظر بصير فيا جبّا ومالكي لا أатегب من خطا هذة الفرق على اختلاف حجها في دينها لا يقتضى أثر نبي ولا يقدّمون بعمل وصي ولا يؤمنون بشيء ولا يثرون عن عيب يعملون في الشبات ويسبرون في الشهوات المعروف فيهم ما عرفوا والمنكر عندهم ما أتراك مقزّهم في المعضلات إلى أنفسهم وتعويلهم في المعجبات على آراءهم كأن كل أمرئ منهم إمام نفسه قد أخذ منها فيما يرى برعى ثقات وأسباب حكماً.

1.86 ومن خطبة له على السلام
One? Have I not raised for you the banner of faith, shown you the boundaries between licit and illicit, clothed you through my justice in the garment of security, unfurled for you with my words and deeds the carpet of good, and exemplified for you with my behavior a virtuous character? So do not exercise your fancy in areas whose depths your eyes cannot plumb, or your minds penetrate!

1.84.3 From the same oration:
A man may well believe that the world is a camel tied up in the Umayyads’ pen, giving them sweet milk and leading them to pure water, and that their whip and sword will never be lifted from the community’s neck—but he would be wrong. This is but a delicious drink they will sip for a short while and then spit out all at once.

1.85 From an oration by ʿAlī:
God has not crushed tyrants of any era except after a long respite and an abundant share of fortune, nor has he mended the bones of any community except after a period of anguish and trial. Lessons can be gleaned from lesser things than the calamities you have experienced, yet not every heart discerns, not every ear listens, and not every eye perceives. I am amazed—and how could I not be!—at the errors committed by these groups who produce such dissenting claims in faith. They neither follow the footsteps of a prophet nor emulate the actions of a legatee, they do not believe in the mystery or refrain from debauchery, rather, they base their actions on doubts and tread the path of passions. Good to them is what they find pleasing, and evil is what they find foul. When faced with obscurities, they rely on their own judgment, and when faced with ambiguities, they rely on their own caprice. Each of them is his own leader who—misguidedly, in his own view—has a firm grip on sturdy handles and strong ropes.

1.86 From an oration by ʿAlī:

---

1 The reference is to the Prophet’s hadith: ⟨I leave among you two weighty, or precious, things (thaqalayn—translated here as the Greater Treasure and the Smaller One), God’s Book and my descendants, my family. They will never be separated and will come to me together at the pools of paradise.⟩ B 352; R 1:364; Ḥ 6:380.
2 Kulaynī (Kāfī, 8:64) and Mufīd (Irshād, 1:291) say ʿAlī delivered this oration in Medina, presumably at the beginning of his caliphate in 35/656. Baḥrānī (B 353) says the “tyrant” (jabbār) in the oration refers to Muʿāwiyah, but if the oration is early in ʿAlī’s caliphate as Kulaynī states (Kāfī, 8:64), it would refer more generally to Muʿāwiyah’s Umayyad clan.
3 The first three lines are the same in § 1.156.1.
أرسله على حين فترة من الرسل وطول مجيزة من الأمّة وأعتزام من الفتى وانتشار من الأمّور وتلقيّم من الحروب والدنيّة كاسفة النور ظاهرة الغرور على حين أصفر من ورقها وإياب من ثمارها وأغوارها من ماهي قد درست أعلام الهدى وظهرت أعلام الردى فهي متجمّهة لأمّها عابسة في وجه طالما نثرها الفتنة وطعامها الجبهة وشعارها الخوف ودثارها السيف. فأعتبروا عباد الله وأذكروا تيكّ التي آباؤكم وإخوانكم بها مرتين وعليها محاسبون وعمري ما تقدمت بكما لا يهم العهد ولا خلت فيما بينكم وبين الأحباب والقرون؟ وما أمّت اليوم من يوم كنتم في أصلا بهم بعيد. والله ما أسمعهم الرسول شيخًا إلا وها أنا ذا اليوم مسموعوني وما أسمعهم اليوم بدون أسماعهم بالأمس ولا شئت للهم الأبصار وجعلت لهم الأئدة في ذلك الأوان إلا وقد أعطيت مثلها في هذا الزمان ووالله ما باصرتم بعدهم شيخًا جهلوه ولا أصيفته به وحوروه ولقد نزلت بكم البيلة جائلا خطها رخوا بطنها فلا يغريق ما أصبح فيه أهل الغرور إلّما هو ظل ممدوح إلى أجل معدود.

1.87 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام المعروف من غير روية الخالق من غير روية الذي لم يزل قائمًا دائمًا إذ لا سماه ذات أراج ولا حج ذات أرجا ولا إل لداب ولا سحر ولا جبل ذو فجاج ولا يجذ ذو اوجاج ولا أرض ذات مياه ولا خلق ذو أطراد ذلك مبتعد الخلق ووارثه واله الخلق ورازقه والشمس والقمر دابة في مرضاته يليلان كل جديد ويرببان كل بعيد. قسم آزاقهم وأحصى آثارهم وأعمالهم وعدّ أفعالهم وحائته أعينهم وما تخطى صدورهم من الضرير ومستقرهم ومستودعهم من الأرحام والظهر إلى أن تناهي بهم الغيابات. هو الذي أشدّت نقمته على أعدائه في سعة رحتمه وأنتست رحمته لأوليائه في شدة نقمته قاهر من عازر وممدّر من شاقة ومذل من ناواه وغالب من عاداه من توكل عليه كفاه ومن

God sent Muḥammad when an age had gone by without prophets, when people had long been in slumber, when steeds of revolt were bucking, affairs were in disarray, and battles were aflame. The world was devoid of light, her deceit was shining bright, her leaves had yellowed and browned, her fruits could not be found, and her water had sunk underground. The waymarks of guidance had crumbled, the waymarks of hell were erected. The world glared at her tenants and scowled in the face of her seekers. Mutiny was her harvest, cadavers her preferred food, fear was her garment, and the sword her daily robe. Servants of God, take heed! Remember the deeds to which your fathers and brothers remain pledged, and for which they must account. I swear on my life and say this: No great time has passed between their years and yours, no eons separate their seasons and yours, you are not so far today from the day you were in their loins. By God! Everything God’s Messenger told them, I reiterate to you today, for your hearing is no less keen today than theirs was yesterday. Just as they were given eyes to see, just as they were given hearts to comprehend, so too have you, in your generation, been given. And neither, by God, are you shown something they were ignorant of, or privileged with knowledge they were not. The calamity that has attacked you has a slackened nose-rein and a loosened belly-strap, so do not be deceived by the ascendance of these men of deceit. Their spreading shade is fleeting.

1.87 From an oration by ‘Alī:

God is recognized without being seen, a creator who did not need to deliberate. He was existent and present from eternity, when there were no mansion-filled skies, no inaccessible veils, no dark nights, no tranquil seas, no craggy gorges, no twisting ravines, no outspread earth, and no legged creatures. God is the originator of all creation and its inheritor, the maker of all creation and its sustainer. The sun and the moon strive for his pleasure as they wear out the old and bring near the far. He apportions our sustenance and reckons our traces and deeds. He enumerates our breaths and our glances, the secrets our bosoms hide, and our places of rest and passage in wombs and loins until our final end. His punishment crushes his enemies, despite the vastness of his mercy, while his mercy enfolds his devotees, despite the harshness of his punishment. He subjugates his challengers, destroys those who defy him, humbles his opponents, and overthrows his foes. He suffices those who trust him, he gives to those who beseech him, he repays with favors those who extend him a loan of

---

1 I.e., its rider could fall off at any moment. Ḥ 6:390; B 357; R 1:372.
2 Reference to the signs of the zodiac, Qurʾan, Burūj 85:1.
سأله أعطاه ومن أقرضه قضاه ومن شكره جزاه. عباد الله زِنْوَأ أفسكمن قبل أن تزودوا وحاسِبوها من قبل أن تحاسيوا وتنفسوا قبل ضيق الخناق وآتِقوا قبل عنف السياق وأعلموا أنه من لم يعنى على نفسه حتى يكون له منها واعظ وراجل لم يكن له من غيرها زاجروفلاً واعظ.

1.88 ومن خاطبة له عليه السلام تعرف بتخطية الأشباح وهي من جليل الخطب. روى مسعدة بن صدقة عن الصادق جعفر بن محمد عليه السلام أن قال خطب أمير المؤمنين عليه السلام والصلاة بهذه الخطبة على منبر الكوفة وذلك أن رجلاً أتاه فقال له يا أمير المؤمنين صف لنا زمنًا لتزداد له حباً وبه معرفة فغضب عليه السلام ونادى (الصلاة جامعه) فأجتمع الناس حتى غضب المسجد بأهله فصعد المنبر وهو مغضب متغير اللون. فحمد الله سبحانه وصلى على النبي صلى الله عليه وآله ثم قال:

1.88.1 الحمد لله الذي لا يقره المنع ولا يكليه الإعطاء والجود إذ كلّ مغط منتقص سواء وكلّ مائع مدموم ما خلاؤ وهو المنان بقوائد النعم وعوائد المزيد والقِسّم. عياله الخيلات في أركازه وقدّر أقوامه ونجم سبيل الراغبين إليه والطالبين ما لديه وليس بما سائر بأجدود منه لما ليسه الأول الذي لم يكن له قبل يفكون شيء قبله والآخر الذي ليس له بعد يفكون شيء بعده والرادع أعانه الأبدار عن أن تتأله أو تدرك ما أختلف عليه ده فتختلف منه الحال ولا كان في مكان فيجوز عليه الانتقال. ولو ابنما تنقّست عنه معادن الجبال وضحت عنه أصداف البحر من فِلَّر المجهين والعقيان

التحرر، ي، د: كـذا، ن، ش: وكن سائل سائل أن يصف الله له حتى كأنه يراه عياناً فغضب لذلك. 20، ن، ش، ي، د مع علامات الصحّة: كـذا، م: فائق.
their deeds, and rewards those who thank him. Servants of God! Weigh yourselves before you are weighed, judge yourselves before you are judged, breathe before your throats constrict, go meekly before you are shoved. Finally, know this: if a man is not guided to combat his own passions, if he cannot counsel and admonish himself, no other counselor, no other admonisher, will avail.

1.88 From an oration by ‘Alī known as *Ashbāḥ*, “Ethereal Forms,” one of the most marvelous of orations. Mas‘adah ibn Ṣadaqah narrated the following from Ja‘far ibn Muḥammad al-Ṣādiq, who said: The Commander of the Faithful delivered this oration on the pulpit of Kufa, when a man approached him and asked, Commander of the Faithful, describe for us what our Lord looks like exactly so that our love and knowledge may increase. ‘Alī, outraged at the blasphemy, called loudly, ⟨Gather for the ritual prayer!⟩ and when the people crammed into the mosque, ‘Alī ascended the pulpit, pale with anger. He praised God, pronounced benedictions on the Prophet, then said:¹

1.88.1 Praise God, whom withholding does not make richer nor munificence and generosity impoverish, for giving depletes every giver’s store except God’s, and every withholder is blameworthy except him. He is the Munificent Giver who bestows increasing favors and manifold gifts, and all creatures are his children—he guarantees the sustenance they receive, ordains the food they eat, and paves the way for people to petition him and seek his bounty. In fact, he is as generous in granting what they do not ask for as he is in granting what they do. He is the first, with no before, so nothing could exist before him, he is the last, with no after, so nothing will exist after him. He prevents the pupils of our eyes from capturing or grasping his image. Time never changes for him, so his condition will never change, nor is he in a place, so his location will never change. If he distributed all that mountain depths yield and smiling seashells emit, from nuggets of silver and native gold to forests of coral and fistfuls of

¹ This introduction is from manuscripts M and Y, and is also found in Ṣadūq, *Tawḥīd*, 48. Manuscript N and Rāwandī’s commentary (R 1:374) have the following version: “The oration was delivered in response to a man who asked ‘Alī to describe God for him in a way such that he could almost see him with his eyes. Angered, ‘Alī said [the text of the oration].” The commentaries of Bahrānī (B 361) and Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd (H 6:398) amalgamate both versions. I have added the words “at the blasphemy” for clarity; ‘Alī’s anger, as it becomes clear from this alternative preface and from the oration text, is at the anthropomorphic views implicit in the man’s question. ⟨Gather for the ritual prayer!⟩ is a dictum pronounced in early Islam to gather people for a momentous announcement. On its origin and early usage, see Qutbuddin, *Arabic Oration*, 202.
ونُقارِة الْدِر وَحُصِيدُ المَرَجْان مَا أُرَّث ذَلِك فِي جَوْه وَلَا أُنْفِق سَعْة مَا عَنْدِه وَلِكَانَ عَنْدَهِ
مِن ذِخَّارِ اَلْإِنْعَام مَا لَا تَنفَّد مَتَّالِ الأُنَام لِأَنَّهُ الجَوْرُ الَّذِي لَا يُغْيِضُهُ سَؤَالَ السَّائِلِينَ
وَلَا يِحِجَّهُ إِلَى الْحَلَّاحِ المَلِكِينَ.

1.88.2 فَأَفْتَنُوهُ بِالْقُرْآن عَلَى صِفْتِهِ فَأَتَمَّ بِهِ وَأَوْسَطَتْ بِهِ وَهُدَايَتَهُ
وَمَا كَلَّفَهُ الشَيْطَان عَلَى مَا لَا يَسِّلُ فِي الْكِتَاب عَلَى فِرْضِهِ وَلَا فِي سَنَةَ النَّبِي صَلَى اللَّه عَلَيْهِ
وَآللَّه وَأَحْمَدَ الْهَدَى أَنَّهُ فَكَّرَ عَلَى إِلَيْهِ السَّيِحَانُ فَإِذْ ذَكَرَ مَنْتُؤٍّ حَقَّ اللَّه عَلَيْهِ. وَأَلْلَهُ
أَنَّ الْرَّاهِقِينَ فِي الْحُجَرَ مَنْ أَنْفُجَ أَنْفُجُهُمْ عَنْ أَقْتَامَ السَّدْدِ المَضَرُوبَةَ مِنَ الْغَيْبِ الإِقْلَام
بِجَمِيلِهَا مَا جَهَلَوْا تَفَسِيرِهِ مِنَ الْغَيْبِ المُحْجُوبِ. فَفَدَحَ اللَّهُ اَلْعَارِفِ بِالْعِجْزَ عَنْ تُنَاٰل مَا لَمْ
يَحْيَطْ عِلْمًا وَسَمَّى تَرْكُمُهَا التَّمِمَّ فِي مَا لَمْ يَكْلِفُهُمْ الْبَحْثَ عَنْ كَنْبِهِ رُسُوْخًا. فَأَقْتَصَرَ
عَلَى ذَلِكَ وَلَا تَقْدِرُ عَزْمَةَ اللَّهِ السَّيِحَانُ عَلَى قَدْرٍ عَقْلِهَا فَتَكَونَ مِنَ الْهَالِكِينَ. هَوَ الْقَادِرِ
ذِي إِذَا أَرَمَتَ الْوَهَامَ لِتَدِرُ الْمَنْطَقَ قُدْرِهِ وَحَاَلَ الفَتْرَةِ الْمُبْرَأَ مِنْ خَطْرِ الوَسَاوِس
أَنْ يَقْعُ عَلَى فِي عَمَيٕا عُيُوبِ ملْكُوْتِهَا وَتَوْلَّتِ الْقُلُوبِ إِلَيْهِ لَجَرْيِ فِي كِيفِيَّةِ صَفَاتِهَا.
وَغَمَضَتْ مَدَافِعُ الْعَقْلَ الْمُؤَاخِدَ عُوْلَ فِي حَيْثَا لَا بَلَغَهَا الْصِفَاتُ لِتَتَنَّ عُلْيَ الْأَحْيَى رَدْعَهَا وَهِيَ تَجِبُ
مَهَاوِيَ سَدَّ الْعِيُوبِ مَتَّلَقِيَّةً إِلَى السَّيِحَانُ فَرَجِعَتْ إِذْ جُبِّهَتْ مَعْرَفَةً بِأَنَّهُ لَيْنَ يَبْلُغُ جُوْرُ
الْعَارِفِ كَنَّهُ مَعْرِفُهُ وَلَا تَخْتِرُ بِبَالٍ أَوْلِي الْرُوَّاطِ خَاذِرَةً مِنْ تَقْدِيرِ جَلَّ الْعَرَّةِ.
الذِي أَتَبْعَدَ الْخَلَقَ عَلَى غَيْرِ مِثْلٍ أَمْثِلَةٍ وَلَا مَقْدَارٍ أَحْتَدٍّ عَلَيْهِ مِنْ خَالِقٍ مَعْبُودٍ كَانَ
قِبْلَهُ. وَأَرَايَهَا مِنْ ملْكُوْتِ قُدْرِهِ وَجَبْعَبَ مَا نَلْقَةَ بِهِ آثَارِ حَكْمِهَا وَأَعْتَرَافِ الْحَاجَةُ مِن
الخَلَقِ إِلَى أَنْ يَقْبِلَهَا مِسَاسًا قَوْتَهَا مَا دَلَّ أَبَأْضَطَارَ قِيْامِ الْحَجِّهِ لَهُ عَلَى مَعْرَفَهَهَا وَأَظْهَرَتْ فِي
البَدْعِ الَّذِي أَحْدَثْهَا آثَارُ صَنْعَهُ وَأَعْلَمَ حَكْمَهُهَا فُصَّلْ مَا خَلَقْ حَجِّهِ لَهُ وَدِيَالَا عَلَيْهِ
وَإِنْ كَانَ خَلَقًا صَامِتًا لَجَبِّهِ بِالْتَدِيِّرِ نَاطِقًا وَدَلاَّلَهُ عَلَى الْمِبْدَعِ قَاتِمٍ.

١٠٠، ش، بِسْتِ، دَ، وَنُسْخَةٌ مِنْ مِثْلَٰك، دَ، وَنُسْخَةٌ أَخَرُ فِي
ش، دَ، بِمَسْكٍ.
pearl, this would not affect his generosity or deplete his vast possessions. The appeals of all the people in the world do not exhaust his treasure. He is the Generous Giver. Supplications do not empty his wellsprings and persistence does not make him withhold.

1.88.2 See it this way, O seeker: Accept what the Qur’an tells you about God and seek light from its radiant guidance. As for the questions that Satan burdens you with, questions not mandated for you by the Book or reported in the Prophet’s Sunnah and the Imams’ guidance, consign their knowledge to God. That is God’s ultimate right over you. Know this: Men rooted in knowledge do not attempt to force themselves through fortified barricades but accept the veiled mysteries whose details they lack as they are presented to them. They admit their inability to grasp things beyond their compass, which God praises them for, and he calls their abstention—the abstention from delving into things whose essence he has not burdened them with investigating—deep knowledge.¹ You, too, limit yourself to this boundary, and do not measure God’s greatness by the measure of your intellect—if you venture there, you will perish. He is the All-Powerful Being. If the imagination sends scouts to survey the extent of his power, if minds free of Satan’s whisperings attempt to penetrate the deep mysteries of his kingdom, if bewildered, yearning hearts walk in the way of his attributes, and if sharp intellects whose descriptions fail to capture him attempt to open the door to his essence, he repels them, one and all. They wander the deep and dark ravines of his mysteries to find a way to him, but, knocked hard on their foreheads, they are made to turn back, admitting that no aggression will plumb his core,² and no reflection will glimpse the magnitude of his might. He created the world with no model, no plan measured by a creator worshipped prior to him. He showed us his powerful kingdom, the wonders articulated in the traces of his wisdom, and the world’s frank admission that it needs his strong grip to remain standing—thereby he provided the proof that compels us to acknowledge him. Traces of his artisanship and signs of his wisdom can be seen in the marvels he made. Everything he created offers proof of his existence and guides us to him, even silent objects, for their design speaks of that proof, and it guides us toward their creator.

¹ Ar. rusūkh, echoes Qur’an, Āl ‘Imrān 3:7, «Men rooted in knowledge» (al-rāsikhūna fī al-‘ilm).
² “Aggression” (jawr al-‘itīsāf), is also interpreted as “turning away from the main road” (H 6:409; R 1:383), or “extreme wanderings in those stations” (B 369).
1.88.3 فأشهد أن من شبيرك بتبين أعضاء حلقة وتكاحل حقائق مفاصلهم المتخصصة لتدبير حكمتك لم يعقد غير ضميره على معرفتك ولم يباشر قلبه النقي بأنه لا نذ لك فكانه لم يسمع بوريتابه من المتتبعين إذ يقولون {نُحَلَّة إِنَّ كَيْيَنَوْ تَفَضَّلُ مَيْنَإ} إذذ نسيوكرب {يَبِرُّ الْعَالَمِينَ}. كذب العادلون بك إذ شهوك بأصحابك و الخلاك حلية المخلوقين وأهؤهم ووجبوك تجزئة المجسمات بخواطرهم وقد روك على الحلقة المختلفة النوى بقرآن عنها. فأشهد أن من ساواك بيض من حلقة قدر عدل بك والعادل كافر بما تنزلت به محكات آبائك ونطقته عنه شاهد جمع بيناتك فإنك أنت الله الذي لم تتنا في العقول فتكون في محب فكروا مكيفا ولا في رويات خواطرها فتكون محدودا
مصراً.

1.88.4 منها قدّر ما حلق فأحكم تقديره وذرّه فألفف تدبيره ووجهه لوجهه لم يعهد حدود منزلته ولم يقصر دون الانتهاء إلى غاية ولم يستصعب إذ أمر بالمضي على إرادته وكيف وإنما صدرت الأمور عن مشتهته. المشهى أصناف الأشياء بلا روية فكر آخر إنها ولا قريحة غريبة أخمر عليها ولا تجربة أفادها من حوادث الدهور ولا شريك أعاده على أبداع عجاب الأمور فتم حلقه وأذعن لطاعته وأجاب إلى دعوته لم يعترض دونه يث ريث المبطأ ولا أتاة المتلكت فاقام من الأشياء أوها ونهج حدودها ولا تمد دوره بين متضادها ووصل أسباب قراطتها وفرقها أجناسا مختلفة في الحدود والأقدار والغرائز والهميات.
بداية حلقات أحكم صنعها وفطرها على ما أراد وأبدعها.

1.88.5 ومنها في صفة السماء ونظم بلا تعليل رهوات فرقها ولا حسر صدوع أنفراحها ووجيه بينها وبين أزواجاها وذّل للهلكين بأمره والصابعين بأعمال خلقه جزونة مغزية وناداه بعد إذ هي دخان
أن، ش، م، ه: كد.ا.ي، ونسخة في ش: {والأقطار}. ۲ن، ش، ي، ه: كد.ا.م: أضيفت {مبين}.
1.88.3 I bear witness that anyone who likens you to the disparate limbs of your creatures, or to their bonded joints that your clever design has concealed, has erred. His inner self has not recognized you, and his heart is not certain that you have no peer. He does not appear to have heard of followers disowning those they followed, saying, «By God, we were clearly misguided when we equated you with the Lord of the worlds!»¹ They lie who compare you! They lie when they liken you to their idols, when their imagination adorns you with the ornaments of your creatures, their notions divide you into physical parts, and their intellects measure you against the multiplicity of your creatures' faculties. I bear witness that to equate you with any of your creatures is to compare you, and to compare you is to profess unbelief in the clear verses you have revealed, in the witness provided by your eloquent signs. For you are God. Intellects with their penetrating thoughts cannot analyze your totality, nor hearts with their reflections limit or position you.

1.88.4 From this oration:
He planned the things he created with precision, arranged them with elegance, and led them in a certain direction, where they do not transgress the limits of their station, fall short of their goal, or pull back when commanded to proceed. How could they, pray, when all affairs transpire according to his will? He generated categories of things without relying on cogitation, engaging an inner disposition, drawing on experience obtained from the rise and fall of eons, or using a partner's help to originate his wondrous affairs. His creation was thus completed, and it bowed to him in obedience, and answered his call, unhindered by sluggish delay or laggardly indolence. He straightened out what was crooked, laid out its boundaries, harmonized its contrasting parts, bound the cords of linked entities, and distributed all into various species with distinct parameters, values, dispositions, and forms. Such was the beginning of God's creatures, each crafted with exquisite precision, produced and originated by his will.

1.88.5 From the same oration, describing the sky:
When God created the sky, he hung its spaces together without ropes, soldered the gaps in its parts, and connected them closely, each with the other.² He smoothed its knobby ladder for beings who descend with his command, and ascend with his creatures' deeds.³ He called out to it while it was entirely

¹ Qurʾan, Shuʿarāʾ 26:97–98.
² Ar. azwāj, interpreted as its "analogās" (R 1:377; Ḥ 1:419), "other celestial objects" (ʿA 600), or "the angels" (B 373).
³ Those who descend and ascend are the angels. B 373–374; R 1:388.
فَأَلْتَحَمْتُ عُرَى أَشْرَاجِهَا وَفَقَطُ بَعْدَ الْارْتِنَاقِ صَوَامُتُ أَبَابِهَا وَأَقَامَ رَسُدًا مِّنِ الشِّهَبِ
التَّوَاقِبِ عَلَى نَقَابِهَا وَأَمْسَكَهَا مِنْ أَنْ يَمُرَّ فِي خَرْقِ الْحُوِوْرِ بَأَيْدِيٍّ وَأَمْرَاهَا أَنْ تَقَفُّ مَسْتَلِمَةً
لَآمِرِهِ وَجَعَلْ شَهْسَبَهَا آيَةً مَّبْصِرَةً لِّنَبَارِهَا وَقَرْرَا آيَةً مَّمَحُوًا مَّنْ لِيّلِهَا وَأَجْرَاهَا فِي مَنَاقِلٍ
جرَاهَا وَقَدْ مُسَمَّرَهَا فِي مَدَارِجٍ دِرْجُهَا لَيْزِيَاءُ الْلِّيْلِ وَالنَّهَارِ بِهِمْ وَلِيَعْلَمُ ۛعَدَّةَ السَّنِينَ
وَالْحِسَابَۚۛ بِمَقَادِيرِهَا ثُمّ عَلَقَ فِي جَوُّهَا فَلِكَهَا وَنَاطَ بِهَا زِيَّتَهَا مِنْ خَفْيَاتٍ دِراَبِّهَا
وَمَصَابِيحُ كِوَابِكَهَا وَرُحْمٍ مِّسْتَقِيقٍ السُّمَّعُ بَتوَاقِبِ شِيْبُهَا وَأَجْرَاهَا عَلَى أَذَالِ تَسْخِيرَهَا
مِنُ ثَابِتَةِ وَمَسْرِ سَأْرَهَا وَهَوْبُهَا وَصَعْوُدُهَا وَنَحْوُهَا وَسَعْوُهَا.

1.88.6
وَمِنكَ فِي صَفَةِ المَلَايِكَةِ
ثُمَّ خَلَقَ سَبِيحَهُ لِإِسْكَانِ سَماوَاتِهِ وَعَمَّارَةُ الصَّفِيحَ الْأَعْلَى مِنْ مَلْكُوتهُ خَلْقًا بَدِيعًا مِّن
مَلَائِكَتِهِ مَلَأَ بِهِمْ فَرُوجُ جَمِيعُهَا وَحَسَّا بِهِمْ فَتْوَاقِي أَجْرَوُهَا. وَبِيْنَ حَجُوْمِ تَكَلُّفَ مِنْ كَفُوَّرَةِ
زَجْلِ المَسِيحِينَ مِنْهُمْ فِي حَظَايْرِ الْقَدْسِ وَسَرَائِفِ النَّجِبَ وَسَرَائِفِ المَجَدِ وَوَرَاءِ ذَلِكَ
الرَّجُحَ الَّذِي تَسْتَلِكُّ تَمْهِدُهُ النِّسَمَاتُ نُورًا تَرْتِعُ الْأَبْصَارَ عَنْ بَلْوَغِهَا فَتَقَفُّ
خَاسِئًا عَلَى حُدُودِهَا. أَنْشَأَهُمْ عَلَى صُورٍ مُّخَلَّفَةٍ وَأَقَادِرٍ مَّتَافَوَاتٍ {أُوْلِيَ أَجْحَهَاۚ}
تَسْيِبُ جَلَالَ عَرْبِهَا لَا يَتَحَلَّلُونَ مَا ظَهَرَ فِي الْخَلْقِ مِنْ صَنَعِهِ وَلَا يَطْلَعُونَ أَنْهُمْ يَخْلُقُونَ
شَيْئًا مِّنْهُ مَا أَنْفُرَ بِهِ {ۚۛبَيْلِ عِيْانِ مُّكْرَمُونَ لَا يَسْقِيقُونَ عَلَيْهِمْ وَهُمْ يَأْمُرُوهُ يَعْمَالُونَ}.
جَعَلُهُمْ فِي هَذَا هُنَاكَ أَهْلَ الأَمَانَةِ عَلَى وُجُوُهِ وَحَمْلُهُمْ إِلَى الرَّسُلِ وَدَائِعُ أَمَرُهُ وَنِيَهُ
وَعَصِمُهُمْ مِّنْ نِـبِيِّاتِهِمْ فَمَا مِنْهُمْ زَائِفُ عَلَى سَبِيلِ مَرَضَاتِهِمْ وَأَمْدَحُهُمُ بَفَوَآدٍ مَّعَوُنَةٍ
وَأَشْعَرُ قَوْلاً لَّهُمْ تَوَاضَعُ إِخْبَاتِ السَّكِّيْنَةِ وَفَتَحَ لِهِمْ أُبُوَابَهَا ذَالِكَ إِلَى تَماَجِيدهِ وَنَصْبُ لِهِمْ
مَنَاوَا وَضَخَّامًا عَلَى أَعَلَامٍ تَوَحِيدِهِ لمْ تُقَلُّهُمْ مَوْصَاتِ الْأَقْفَامِ وَلَمْ يَتَخَلَّلُوْهُ عَقِبَ الْلِّيْلِي
وَالْأَيَّامِ وَلَمْ تَرْمَ الشَّكْوَكَ بِنَوَازِعَهَا عَزْيَةٌ إِيَّاهُمْ وَلَمْ تَعْتَرَكْ الْظَّنْوُنُ عَلَى مَعَاكِدٍ يَقِينُهُمْ

۱۱۰۰، ش۶، ي۶، ه۶: كَذا م: أَضْيَفَتْۛ مَّنْتَغِي وَثُلَاثَۚ}.

al-Sharif al-Radi - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
smoke, and its crevices became sealed. He cracked its locked doors open and set blazing sentinels in the gaps, restraining them with his own hands from falling through breaks in the firmament and commanding them to remain where they were. He made the sun a sign that brightens the day and the moon a sign that wanes through the nights. He set the two in motion within their orbits and ordained their passage within their tracks. By their movements, he distinguished night from day, and by their measure, he showed the «reckoning and calculation of years.» Then he suspended the sky’s sphere in the ether, hung ornaments of starry clusters and bright lamps, used blazing meteors to strike down spying demons, and launched the stars according to their stations: fixed versus moving, falling versus rising, and ominous versus lucky.

1.88.6 From the same oration, describing the angels:
Then God created wondrous angels to populate his skies and inhabit his kingdom’s highest planes. With them he filled the gaps in its rifts and the fissures in its ether, and in those gaps, in that sacred enclosure, in veils of concealment and canopies of glory, their thunderous chanting of his praise rings out. Behind the roar that deafens the ear shines the majesty of light that dazzles the eye, and the eye is driven back at this boundary. He fashioned them in different forms, in diverse ranks, each «with sets of wings». They chant litanies of praise for his glorious power, never claiming that they helped shape his creatures, nor professing to have created, alongside him, a single, solitary thing. In this, he has no peer. «Rather, they are his honored servants, they speak when he has spoken, and act on his command.» He entrusts them with his revelation and sends them to his messengers bearing his commands and prohibitions. He shields them from doubt and uncertainty, so not one strays from the path of his pleasure. He equips them with aid and assistance, and infuses their hearts with deference, with humility, peace, and calm. He eases their path to glorifying him and erects beacons to illumine for them the signs of his unity. They are never weighed down by sins, or loaded, like camels, by the calamities brought by nights and days. Suspicion’s arrows don’t penetrate the robust frame of their belief, presumptions’ rasps don’t fray the strong cords of their convictions, the

1 Reference to Qur’an, Dukhān 44:10.
2 Reference to Qur’an, Isrā’ 17:12.
3 Qur’an, Yūnus 10:5.
4 Reference to Qur’an, Ṣāffāt 37:6.
5 Reference to Qur’an, Ḥijr 15:17: «We protected it from every cursed demon.»
6 Qur’an, Fāṭir 35:1.
7 Qur’an, Anbiyā’ 21:26–27.
ولا قد حلت فادحة الإنحن فيما بينهم ولا سلبتهم الحيرة ما لا ق من معرفته بضاماتهم وسكن من عظمته وهبحة جلاله في أنحاء صدورهم ولم تطفع فيهم الوساوس فقترت فينها على فكره.

7.88.7 منهم من هو في خلق العالم الدلّح وفي عظم الجبال الشمّخ وفي فترة الظلام الأبيّم ومنهم من خرجت أقدامهم تُقوم الأرض السفلى في كوايات بعض قد نذفت في مدارق الموت وتحتها ريح هُفّاقة تخبسنا على حيث أنتمت من الحدود المتناهية. قد استقرّ غنم أسحاغ عبادته ووسّلت حقائق الإيمان بينهم وبين معرفته وقطعهم الإيكان به إلى الوله إليه ولم تعزّز رغباتهم ما عندته إلى ما عند غيره. قد ذاقوا حلاوة معرفته وشربوا بالكأس الروية من محبّته وتمكّن من سويدة قلوبهم وشيطنة خفيفه حقّوا بطول الطاعة أعطاد ظهورهم ولم يخدّط طول الرغبة إليه ماّدة تضرعهم ولا أطلق عنهم عظيم الزلفة ربق خشوعهم ولم يتوّلّم الإعجاب فيستكثروا ما سلف منهم ولا تركت لهم أستکانة الإجلال نصياً في تعميق حسناتهم ولم تجرّ الفترات فيهم على طول دؤوبهم ولم يغلف ظهورهم في الفراقهم على رجاء ربه وللمجي لطول المناجا أساتذتهم ولا ملكهم الأشغال فتقطع بمس الخير إليه أصواتهم ولم يختلف في مقاوم الطاعة مناكهم ولم ينوه إلى راحة التقصير في أمره رقاقهم ولا تعدّ على عزيمة جدّهم بلادة الفسقان ولا تتمض في همهم خدان رؤس الأنفس. قد اعترأخوا ذا العرش ذخرية يوم فاقته ويومنمو عند أقطاع الافق إلى المخالفين برغمهم لا يقطعون أمدًا غيابة عبادته ولا يرجع به الاستِهر بلزوم طاعته إلا إلى مواد من قلوبهم غير منقطعة من رجائه وخططه لم تنقطع أسباب الشفقة منهم فئيا في جدّهم ولم تأسرهم الأطماع فيؤثرون وشيك السعي على أجنادهم ولم يستعموا ما مضى من أعمالهم ولا أستعظاموا

١، م، ش، ه: كذا ي، ونسخة في م، ومصّحته في ش: «فقتّرِعَ». ٢، ن، ش، ه: كذا ي: «تعصَ»، ويدوأن التنقيط سقط من الحرفين الآخرين. نسختان في م: «تنقص» و«تنفّض».

٢٠، ش، ي، ه، ونسخة في م: كذا أصل م: «بائَع». 
fever of malice doesn’t burn their bonds, perplexity doesn’t pillage recognition of God from their hearts or plunder veneration of God and awe for his grandeur from their breasts, and the devils with their whisperings don’t dare to sow doubts or cast lots for controlling their thoughts.

1.88.7 Among them are angels created as heavy clouds, or with the massive dimensions of lofty mountains, or as dark as the starless night, angels whose feet pierce the nethermost regions of the earth and look like white banners protruding in the air. A gentle breeze below confines them inside the farthest limits they can reach. God’s worship is their sole occupation, faith’s realities provide them with the means to recognize him, and certainly in his existence severs them from all else save yearning for him. Their desires seek what he bestows, never crossing to seek another’s favors. They taste the sweetness of his recognition and drink from the full cup of his love. His fear is rooted deep in their hearts, so they bend their backs in protracted worship. Lengthy petitions do not exhaust the store of their entreaties, and closeness to him does not loosen the cord of their submissiveness. No vanity aggrandizes for them their prior acts, while the humility generated in them by glorifying God leaves them no room to glorify their own deeds. No intervals of languor interrupt their protracted efforts, and no diminishing expectations make them question the hopes they have placed in their Lord. Long prayers do not parch their tongues, nor preoccupations weaken their raised voices. Their shoulders do not sag as they worship, standing in ranks, nor do they relax their necks and so fall short in carrying out his command. No dullness or disregard vanquishes their resolve, no deceiving passions vie to shoot down their high aspirations. They choose the Lord of the Throne to be the treasure they put by for their day of need, and they go to him with petitions when others go to his creatures. Their journey to perfect his worship never ends, and their passion for embracing his obedience stems from their hearts’ inner substance, which is ever infused by hope in him and fear. No severance of the cord of dread makes them lessen their labors, no ensnaring greed makes them favor flighty acts over serious effort. They do not aggrandize their past deeds, else complacent hope would have expelled their palpitating trepidations. No Satanic dominion puts them at variance among themselves concerning their Lord: no evil sundering of ties divides them, no rancor caused by mutual envy takes hold, no calamitous doubts separate them, and no contrary aspirations—like a horse with one blue eye and one
ذلك لنسخ الرجاء منهم شفقات وجلهم ولم يختلفوا في رؤيتهم بمستقبل الشيطان عليهم.

ولم يفترقبهم سوء التفاوت ولا تولاهم على التشادس ولا تشببهم مصاريف الربب ولا

اقتسمت أشياءهم فيهم أسراء إيمان لم يقطعهم من رقبيه زغ ولا عدول ولا وني

ولا فتوب وليس في أطباق السماوات موضع إهاب إلا وعليه ملك ساجد أو ساجد حافد

يزدادون على طول الطاعة يرهم علبًا وترداد عرفة يرهم في قلوبهم عظمًا.

1.88.8

وبنها في صفة الأرض ودرواها على الماء

كتب الأرض على مور أمواج مستفضلة وليف جبار خارة تلتزم أوادي أمواجها وتصطف بمقتافات أجنبها وترعى زبد كالهول عند هياجهما. فخضع جمال الماء المتلألئ لثقل جملها وسكن هيج آرمانه إذا وطنى بهجلاها وذلم مستشفياً إذ تمكنت عليه بكوهلاها. فأصبح بعد أصخاب أمواجه ساحيًا مفهورًا في حكمة الذل متقدًا أسرًا وسكنت الأرض مدحوا في لجة تيتره وردت من ثجها بآهه وسعته وشجعه أنفس وسمو غلوهات وكمته على كثافة جريه فهم بعد نزوحه وبعد زينان وثباته. فلما

سكن هيج الماء من تحت أكفاها وحمل شواهي الجبال البذخ على أكفاها شفر يتابع العيون من عرائن أنوفها وفرضها في سُهوب بيدها وأحاديها وعدل حركتها بالراسيات من جلتهها وذوات الشناخين الهمر من صابيهها فسكنت من الميدان برسب الجبال في قطع أدبيها وتلغبها مشرفة في جُوابات خاشمها وروت أشارها النصر سهل الأرواح وجريتهم وفسيح بين الجو وبيتها وأعد الهواء متسممًا لسناها وأخرج إليها أهلها على تمام مراقبتها. فلم يدع جرّ الأرض التي تقص مياء العيون عن روابيها ولا تجد

جداول الأنهار ذرعته إلى بلوغها حتى أنشأ لها ناشئة نحاب تحيي مواتها وتستخرج نباتها ألطف غمامها بعد أفتراق لها وربان كرهه حتى إذا ختحت لجة المزمن فيها وانقع برقه في كفّه ولم يلم وميضه في كنهر ربابه ومترآ آه سخاه أرسله صحا متداركاً قد أسّس هيدله

1

2

al-Sharīf al-Raḍī - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
black—fragment them. Captives of faith, no deviation, deflection, exhaustion, or lassitude frees them from its lasso. In all the skies’ layers, there exists no place, not even the width of a strip of rawhide, that does not contain a prostrating angel or a swift messenger. Their long worship continually increases their knowledge of their Lord, and the grandeur of their Lord’s might ever increases in their hearts.

1.88.8 From the same oration, describing the earth and how he laid it out over water: God poured earth into the mighty, heaving waves and the deep, swollen seas, where waves towered and clashed, and waters raced and crashed, as they grunted and frothed like a camel stallion in arousal. Weighed down by the earth’s mass their recalcitrant gallop became tractable, crushed by the earth’s torso their tumultuous tossing subsided, and dragged along by the earth’s withers they submitted with docility. After their earlier clamor, the waves grew still and were conquered. Tamed with the curb of servility, they were herded in defeat and captivity. The earth ensconced itself then, spreading in the depths of the flowing current, repelling its pride, haughtiness, disdain, and excess of energy, and muzzling its overabundant flow. After much vaulting and supercilious assault, the waters abated. When the water’s tumult had grown still under the earth’s wings, under the weight of the soaring, lofty mountains placed on its shoulders, God made springs of pure water gush from the towering massifs and channeled them into outstretched wastelands and undulating furrows. He anchored the earth’s movements with massive rocks and high-topped, stony crags. Sunk deep beneath its surface, rupturing the smooth hollows of its crust, and straddling the backs of its plains and compacted soils, the mountains caused the earth’s heaving to still. He opened wide the space between the earth and the ether, and made the air fit for the earth’s residents to breathe. Then, with all preparations complete, he extracted from it and introduced to it its living inhabitants. In all of this, he did not neglect those barren tracts too high for springs and beyond the reach of rivers. He created swollen clouds to bring life to those bare stretches and coax out their vegetation. Piecing together wispy swirls and scattered puffs, he shaped a thick, enveloping cloud. Then—when its deep waters roiled, when lightning flickered from its hands, when flashes in the massed white-and-black cloudbanks and the heaped rainclouds awoke from their slumber—he let it loose in one continuous downpour. The cloud

1 Ar. akhyāf, said of people who are “different, one from another, in their states or conditions, or in their forms, shapes or semblances;” from khayafa, which means, “having one of the eyes blue, the other black; said of a horse, or any animal.” Brothers who are akhyāf are “sons of one mother but different fathers.” Lane, Lexicon, s.v. “Kh-Y-F.”
تمّ فيه الجنوب طرح أهاليه ودُفع شَكِّيبيه. فَلما ألقى السحاب برَكَّ بَوانيها وأعع ما استقلّت به من الغبّاء المحمول عليها أخرج به من هواض الأرض النبات ومن زَرْع الجبال الأعشاب فهي تزيبة رياضها وتزدهى بما ألبسته من رِيْط أزهراها وحلية ما سُقّطت به من ناضر أنوارها وجعل ذلك بلاغاً للأنام ورقًا للأنعام ونورًا للنجام في آفاقها وأقام المنارة للسالكين على جوالَّة طرقيها.

1.88.9 فَلما مّدّ أرضه وأندف أمره أختار أدم عليه السلام خُرْبة من خلقه وجعله أُول جبله وأسكته جّتته وأرغم فيها كله وأوعز إليه فيما نهائه عنه وأعلم أنه في الإقدام عليه التعرّض لمضيئته والخاطرة بمزانته فأقاد على ما نهاء عنه مقاومة لسابق عليه فهبطه بعد التوبة ليِعمر أرضه وبنسله وليقم الحبة عليه عبادة. وليخلو بعد أن قيدهه ما يوقد عليه جهّة روضيته و يصل بينهم ويبن مライフه بل تعااهدهم بالجح على ألسن الخيرَة من أبنائه ومتحمّلي ودائع رسالته قرنًا فقرونًا حتى تتمّت بنيّنا مصلى الله عليه وآله جَحُوه وبلغ المقطع عذرًا ونذرًا. وقدّر الأرزاق فكثّرها وقلّبها وقسمها على الضيق والسعة فعدل فيها ليبني من أراد ميسورها ومعسورها وليستي بالذكر والصرى من غنيها وفقيرة ثمّ قرن بسّعتها عبقيّ فاقتها وسلامتها طوارق أث فانها ونِفر أفراحها غَصَص أراها وخلق الآجال فأتلها وقصّها وأخّرها وأخّرها ووصل بالموت أسبابها وجعله خالِجاً لأشنائها وقاطعًا لمراّث أفرانها.

1.88.10 عالم السّر من ضَرائِ المضمرين ونجرى المتخافين وخطائر رجُم الظلمون وعَقد عزيمات اليقين ومسارق إيمان الجنون وما ختمته أثاث القلوب وغيابات

hung low and hugged the earth, and the South Wind milked its teats to yield torrents and spills. When the cloud had settled its limbs on the ground, when it had dropped all the water it had drawn and carried, he brought forth plants from the barren ground and herbage from the bare mountains. The earth now rejoiced in the beauty of its meadows, it flaunted its garments of delicate blossoms and its necklaces of fresh flowers. All this he created to sustain humans and nourish cattle. He then hewed passes in remote regions and erected beacons for those who would walk the open roads.

1.88.9 When God had primed the earth and executed his will, he singled out Adam from among his creatures and made him the first human.\(^1\) He lodged him in paradise and offered him all manner of delectable foods but warned him to keep away from the forbidden tree.\(^2\) He cautioned him that if he came near it, he would be committing a sin and jeopardizing his rank. Adam—as God had known he would—approached the tree God had forbidden to him. After he repented, however, God sent him down to populate the earth with his descendants and serve as God’s proof for his servants. Then, when God took him back, he did not void them of the clear proof of his majesty or the means to his recognition. He sent them his proof on the tongues of his chosen prophets, who carried his entrusted messages to them, generation after generation, until he completed his message to his creatures through our own Prophet Muḥammad, and his advocacy and warnings reached their climax. God decreed sustenance, giving some people much and others little, distributing constricted shares to some and ample ones to others. In all this, he was just. He tested those he wished with prosperity and those he wished with poverty to assess the gratitude of the rich and the patience of the poor. He also paired abundance with sores of destitution, wellbeing with calamities that creep up in the night, and joys that gladden with sorrows that choke. He ordained lifespans to be long or short, swift or tardy, and he handed their reins to death. Death pulls in their long ropes and cuts through the tight plait of their fastenings.

1.88.10 God knows all secrets. He knows the thoughts of those who conceal what they are thinking, the clandestine conversations of those who whisper, stray notions generated by wild conjectures, secured resolutions arising from certainty, stolen glances flashed by drooping eyelids, veiled matters of the

---

1. Lit. “natural disposition” (Ar. jibillah). B 390 explains it as “human.”
2. Lit. “that which God had forbidden to him.” I have replaced the phrase, here and in the next line, with the word “tree,” echoing the Qur’an, Baqarah 2:35: «God said to Adam ... do not approach this tree.»
الغيوب وما أصغت لاستراحه مصائح الأسماع ومصائد الذر ومشاتي الهواه ورجع الحنين من المولفات وحمس الأقدام ومنفسم الثمرة من ولاني غلف الأكهام وتمقمع الوحوش من غيران الجبال وأوديتها ونحتبا البوبق بين سوق الأشجار وألختها ومغزر الأوراق من الأفنان وحظ الأمشاج من مسارب الأصاب وناشاء الغيوم ومثلامها ودروور قطر السحاب في مترأكها وما تستفي الأعاصير بذيلاوها وتعنمو الأمطار بسبيها وعوم! نبات؟ الأرض في كتبان الريمو ومستقر ذوات الأجنحة مدرّ شناحب الجبال ودغَره ذات المنطق في دياجبر الأورا كوما أوهت؟ الأصادف وحضنت عليه أمواج البحر وما غشيته سدقة ليل أو درّ عليه شاروق بحار وما اعتبعت عليه أطباق الدياججبوة بسحابات النور وأثر كل خطوة وحس كل حركة ورجع كل كلمة وتحريك كل شفة ومستقر كل نسمة ومثقال كل ذرة وحماهم كل نفس هامه وما عليه من ثمر ثمرة أو ساقية ورقة أو قواية ناقة أو ناقة دم ومضغة أو ناشئة خلق وسلاة. لم تلحظه في ذلك كلهما ولا أعترضته في حفظ ما أبتدع من خلقه عارضة ولا أعتبرته في تنفيذ الأمور ودعاهم المخلوقين ملالة ولا مرة بل نفذوه علمه وأحساهم عدده ووسعهم عدهما وعمرهم فضله مع تقصيرهم عن كنه ما هو أهلهم.

اللهم أنت أهل الوصف الجميل والتعداد الكثير إن تؤمل خفائر ما أمل وإن ترج مَرْجُو اللهم وقد سبطت لي فيما لا أمدح به غيرك ولا أأتيه على أحد سواك ولا توتجه إلى معاند الخبيه ومواقف الرب وعزلت بلسانا عن مداخن الأدميين والثناء على المرحوبين المخلوقين. اللهم لكل متي من أنى عليه مثوية من جزاء أو عارفة من عطاء وقد رجوت ذُبيلاً على ذخائر الرحمه وكنز المغفرة. اللهم وهذا مقام من أفراد ك.188.11

________

heart, deep-welled mysteries, the sounds to which ears stealthily hearken, the
summer nests of tiny ants, the winter habitats of mites, the repeated wails of
mourning women, the sound of faint footsteps, the place hidden within the
innermost sepal where fruit begins to grow, the concealed spaces in moun-
tain hollows and riverbeds where wild beasts hole up, the cracks between the
boles and bark of trees in which gnats hide away, the node on a branch from
which a leaf sprouts, the basin where semen is deposited after flowing through
the waterways of men’s loins, the forming of the new clouds and their thick
amassing, the abundant flow of raindrops from towering cloudbanks, what the
whirlwinds stir up with their kicking gusts, what the rains erase with their flood
water, how tumbleweeds are swept by the wind over dunes of sand, the resting
places of birds atop the high mountain peaks, the warbling of birds in the dim-
ness of their nests, what seashells store and waves on the deep water envelop,
what a black night conceals and bright daybreak reveals, what is prevailed on in
alternation by layers of darkness and splendors of radiance, the trace of every
footstep, the sensation of every movement, the echo of every word, the motion
of every lip, the resting place of every creature that breathes, the weight of every
tiny particle, the sobbing of every grieving heart, and whatever is on the earth,¹
including the fruit growing on a tree, a falling leaf, the resting place of a drop of
semen, the place where blood gathers in pools and where an embryonic clump
of flesh congeals, and the emergence of creatures and offspring. In all this, God
suffers no toil, no obstacle obstructs him from guarding his creation, and no
stupor or apathy impedes him from executing his affairs or governing his crea-
tures. Far from it! His knowledge penetrates them, his reckoning comprehends,
his justice encompasses, and his favors engulf. All this, despite how short they
fall in offering his due.

1.88.11 God, to you belong the loveliest epithets and the largest armies. When
solicited, you are the best repository of hope, and when petitioned, you are the
best receptacle of trust. God, you stretch out your hand to me with such favors
that I can praise none but you, extol none but you, I do not direct my praise
toward those who are fountains of disappointment or sites of suspicion, for you
have diverted my tongue from praising the children of Adam, from extolling
your creatures and subjects. God, every extoller deserves a reward that com-
penstates, a gift freely bestowed by the one he extolls: I beseech you to guide
me to the treasures of your mercy and the riches of your forgiveness. God, here
I stand before you. I have singled you out with the proclamation of unity that

¹ Lit. "on it," explained in the commentaries as "on earth." Ḥ 7:30; B 392; R 1:418.
التوحيد الذي هو، وهلم تمسح له هذه الحماد والمقدم غيرك ويبقى فُقاة إليك لا يجد مسكنتها إلا فضلك ولا يشع من خلفها إلا منك ووجدك فهبك لنا في هذا المقام

رضاك وأغناها عن مدّ الأيدي إلى من سواك إنّك على ما تشاء قادر.

1.89 ومن كلام له عليه السلام لما أراد الناس عليه البيعة بعد قتل عثمان

دعوني وأتسموا غيري فإنّا مستقبلون أمرنا له وجه وأولان لا تقوم له القلب ولا تثبت عليه العقول وإن الآفاق قد أغامت وانشرح قد تنكرت. وآلموا أي إن أجبتم ركبت

بكما أعلم ولم نص في قول القائل وعنت الصائب وإن تركتموني فأنا أحكم وعليّ

اسيحكم وأطوعكم مل وليتهمه أمركم وأنا لكم وزيرا خير لكم ملّ أميرًا.

1.90 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام

1.90.1 آمّا بعد. أيّها الناس فأنا فقأت عين الفتنة ولم يكن ليجرئ عليها أحد غيري بعد

أن ماج غريبها واجستّ كثيها.

1.90.2 فسألوني قبل أن تفقدوني، فوالذي نفسي بيده لا تسألوني عن شيء فيما بينكم

وبين الساعة ولا عن فئة تهدية مائة وتضل مائة إلا ألبكم بنابعها وقائدها وسائرها

ومناخ ركابه ومحط رحالها ومن يقتل من أهلها فتلا ومن يموت منهم موتًا.

100. ي: كذا ش، ن: (إنّك على كلّ شيء قادر). ه: (إنّك على ما تشاء وكلّ شيء قادر).
is your due, and I see no one worthy of these tributes and praises but you. My need of you is urgent. Nothing but your kindness can heal my destitution's broken bones, nothing but your beneficence and generosity can raise me from my lowly state of privation. So grant us your acceptance now as we stand before you, and free us from spreading our hands before any but you. You are powerful over all that you will.\footnote{Reference to Qurʾan, Āl ʿImrān 3:26, Taḥrīm 66:8.}

\textbf{1.89} From an address by ʿAlī, when, after ʿUthmān's killing, the people rushed to him to pledge allegiance:\footnote{In Medina, 35/656. Taḥrīm, \textit{Tārīkh}, 4:434.}

Leave me and seek another! We are looking at a thing with many faces and shades, in which hearts will not remain steady or minds stable, for the skies are overcast and the road is obscure. Know this: If I accept your pledge, I shall drive you on the path I know to be right, without caring about your chiding or rebuke. If you leave me be, however, I will be as one of you—in fact, I will be the most attentive and obedient among you toward the man you entrust with your rule. You will find me a better counselor than commander.

\textbf{1.90} From an oration by ʿAlī:\footnote{The commentators agree that § 1.90.1 refers to ʿAlī's battles, but they differ on which ones: (1) H 7:57–58 (citing early, unnamed historical sources, and transcribing further sections of the oration) says the oration was delivered soon after Nahrawān, i.e., either in Nahrawān or Kufa in 38/658, presumably meaning it refers to this battle; Yaʿqūbī (\textit{Tārīkh}, 2:393) places it in Kufa, just after Nahrawān. (2) R 1:424–425 says it refers to the Battle of the Camel and the Battle of Ṣiffīn. (3) B 395 says it refers to the Camel, Ṣiffīn, and Nahrawān.}

\textbf{1.90.1} People! I have gouged out the eyes of revolt. None other would have dared to challenge it when its darkness had spread so far, when its madness had become so rabid.

\textbf{1.90.2} Ask me before I am lost to you! By the one who holds my life in his hand, I swear this: If you ask me about what will happen between now and the last hour, about any group who will guide a hundred aright or lead a hundred astray, I shall inform you of who will call out and direct that herd, who will lead in the front and who will drive from the rear, where their camels will kneel and where they will set down their gear, who will be killed in battle and who will die a natural death.
190.3. ولقد فقدتموني ونزلت كرائه الأمور وحواض الخلوت لأطرق كثير من السالين وفشل كثير من المسؤولين وذلك إذا قلَّقت حريمة وشركت عن ساق وضاقت الدنيا عليك ضيقًا تستطيلان أيام البلاء عليك حيث يفتح الله لبقيّة الأبار منكم وإن الفتى إذا أقبلت شهبت وإذا أدبرت بيهت يتكرر مقبلات ويبقرون مدارات يجمن حَوْم الرياح يصب بيداً ويخطئ بيداً.

190.4. ألا إن أخوف الفتى عندي عليك فتنة بني أمية فإنها فتنة عمياء مظلمة عمّت خطتها وخصّست بليتها وأصاب البلاء من أبصر فيها وأخطأ البلاء من عمي عنها وأيم الله لتجدن بني أمية لكم أرباب سوء بعدي كالناب الضروس تعدم بفيسه وتخطط بدها وّترين برجها وتمنع دُرها لا يزالون بكم حقّ لا يتركوا مكان فناّه لهم أو غير ضئير ولا يزال بلاوكوحتي لا يكون أنتصار أحدهم منهم إلا مثل أنصار العبد من ربة والصاحب من مستصحبه ترد عليك فتنتهم شوهاء خفخيّة وقاطعاً جاهلية ليس فيها منار هدى ولا علم يرى نحو أهل البيت منها بنجاة ولست فيها بدعة.

190.5. ثم بفرّها لله عزّ وجل كفاير الأديم بين يسومهم خسفًا ويسوقهم عنفًا ويستمهم بكأس مصبرة لا يعظيم إلا السيف ولا يسلهم إلا الخروف فعند ذلك ترد قريش بالدينه وما فيها ليوتوني مقاماً واحدًا ولو قدَر جزّر لأقبل منهم ما أطلب اليوم بعضه فلا يعطونه.
1.90.3 After you lose me, when calamities strike you and devastation decimates, many who want to ask will cast down their eyes and many who are asked will fail to answer. When war tucks up its garments and girds its loincloth, when the world presses down on you and you have nowhere to turn, you will find the days of trial long, until, at last, God grants victory to the heirs of the righteous. When mutinies advance, they confuse, and as they turn away, they warn. Unrecognized in approach, they are identified only when they leave. They twist and turn like gusts of wind, striking one town and passing by another.

1.90.4 Hark! Of all seditions, the one I fear most for you is the Umayyads’. A blind and dark insurrection, its tyranny will range wide, yet its blows will target individuals, striking those who know it for what it is, but passing over those who choose to be blind. God’s oath! You will find the Umayyads harsh overlords after I am gone, like a timeworn, quick-to-bite camel cow, that, jaws snapping, forelegs stamping, and hind feet kicking, refuses to be milked. They will oppress you all, until only those who bring them benefit remain standing, or those don’t do them harm. Their tyranny will be so fierce that if you dare to seek retribution, you will be as ineffective as a slave seeking retribution against his master, or a minion against his ruler.¹ Ugly, frightening, a battalion from the Age of Ignorance,² their insurrection will leave you with no beacon that guides, no signpost to follow. In all this, we, the people of the Prophet’s house, will remain quietly on the side. We will never take part in their mission.

1.90.5 Then God will strip their tyranny from you, as a hide is stripped from a carcass, at the hands of a man who will inflict them with humiliation, drive them with brute force, pour them bitter aloes, strike them with the sword, and shroud them in fear.³ When that happens, the Quraysh will ache to see me—they would trade the world and all that it contains to have me beside them for one last stand, even if only for the swift instant it takes to butcher a camel, to accept from them in full what I ask for a scrap of today, and which they refuse to give.

¹ I have added the word “ineffective” after Ḥ 7:55; B 397.
² Ar. jāhiliyyah, referring to the pre-Islamic period and its pagan people’s “ignorance” of the one God. The term jahl—from which the term jāhiliyyah derives—also means “foolish judgment.” Lane, Lexicon, s.v. “J-H-L.”
³ The commentators’ interpretation that this is a prediction about the end of the Umayyad regime at the hands of the rising Abbasid power (Ḥ 7:57–60; B 397) seems unlikely, because the Abbasids, like the Umayyads, were also from the Quraysh tribe.
1.91 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام

فبارك الله الذي لا يبلغه بعد الحمم ولا يناله حدس; القطن الأول الذي لا غاية

له فينتهي ولا آخر له فينقضي.

1.91.1 منها

فأستودعهم في أفضل مستودع وأقرّهم في خير مستقرّ تأثّتهم: كرائم الأصلاب إلى
مطهرات الأرحام كلما مضى سلفهم منهم بين الله خلاف حتى أفضت كرامة الله
سجاتى إلى محمد صلى الله عليه وآله فأخرج منه أفضل المعادن مثّنًا وأعتبر الأرومات
مغفرًا من الشجرة التي صدع منها أنيابه وأنتج منها أنباءه عثرت على العتر وأسرته خير
الأسر وشجرته خير الشجر تبتت في حرم وسققت في كرم لها فروع طوال وثير لا ينال
فهو إمام من أسقى وبصرة من أهتّى سراج مع ضوءه وشهاب سطع نوره ورائد برق
لمعه سبيرة القصد وسنته الرشد وكلمه الفصل وحكمه العدل أرسله على حين فترة من
الرسل وهفوة عن العمل وغباوة من الأمم.

1.91.3 عملوا رحمكم الله على أعلام بنّت فالطريق نهج يدعو إلى دار السلام وأنت في
دار مستحب على مبل وفوق والصحف منشورة والأعلام جارية والأبلا دين صحيحة
والآئلس مطولة والتوبة مسموحة والأعمال مقبولة.

1.92 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام

بعثة الناس ضلال في حيرة وحابطون؛ في فترة قد أستوتهم الأهواء وأستزرّتهم
الكبراء وأستخفّهم الجاهلية الجهلاء حيارة في زلزال من الأمر وبلاء من الجهل.
فقال صلى الله عليه وآله في النصيحة ومضى على الطريق ودعا إلى "الحكمة والموعظة".

م، ي، ه، ونسخة في ش، ن: كذا. أصل ش، ن: "حسن": 2، ن، ه، ونسخة في م: كذا.
أصل م: "منصبا": 3، ش، ن، وصحبة في ه: كذا، ي، وأصل ه: "حابطون".
Chapter 1: Orations

1.91 From an oration by ‘Ali:¹

1.91.1 Blessed is God! Vaunting aspirations cannot attain him, swift intellects cannot find him, he has no limit and will not expire, he has no boundary and will not cease to be.

1.91.2 From the same oration:
God placed them in the finest depository and the choicest repository. Patriarch loins conveyed them to chaste wombs. Each time a forebear passed, his successor stood up to establish God’s religion, until this divine honor came to Muhammad. God extracted him from the most precious of mines to be quarried, the most venerated of roots from which to grow, from the very same tree from which God brought forth his prophets and chose his trustees. Muḥammad’s line is the best line, his family is the best family, his tree is the best tree. Rooted in the sacred enclave, it rises high in its fertile soil, with tall branches and matchless fruits. Muḥammad is the leader of the pious and a source of sight for those who follow the path, a shining lamp, a blazing star, and a sparkling flint. His way is the middle way, his practice gives direction, his words are final, and his judgment is the embodiment of justice. God sent Muḥammad after a period had passed without prophets, when people had stopped doing good, and nations’ minds had dulled.

1.91.3 Do good—May God have mercy on you!—and follow its clear waymarks, for its road is wide and leads to the Abode of Safety. Beware, for you live in the abode of those who have been warned, where you have been given a brief respite and a little time. Registers are still open, pens still run with ink, bodies are still healthy, tongues are still unfettered, repentance is still received, and deeds are still accepted.

1.92 From an oration by ‘Ali:
At the time when God sent Muḥammad as a prophet, people wandered in confusion and attempted to gather their firewood in the darkness of sedition. Passions had seduced them, arrogance had caused them to slip, gross ignorance had rendered them witless, and they stood confounded in the face of tumultuous affairs and painful folly. Muḥammad did his utmost to offer them sincere advice. He trod the true path and called to «wisdom and counsel.»²

¹ Excerpt from a famous long oration that ‘Ali delivered in Kufa after the arbitration in 37/658, urging his followers to regroup and fight Mu‘āwiyah (Ṣadūq, Tawḥīd, 41, 72). Iskāfī (Miʿyār, 255) says it is part of the Luminous Oration (Zahrāʾ), which also includes § 1.106 and § 1.158.
² Qur’an, Naḥl 16:125.
1.93. ومن خطبة له عليه السلام

الحمد لله الأول فلا شيء قبله والآخر فلا شيء بعده والظاهر فلا شيء فوقه والباطن فلا شيء دونه.

منها في دكَّرسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله

مستقرٌ خير مستقرٌ ومنتهى أشرف منتبٌ في معادن الكرامة ومُماهد السلماء قد

صرفت نحوه أفطدة الأيار وثبَتت إليه أزمّة الأيار. دُفِنَ به الضغائن وأطفأً به النواير

الَّف به إخوانًا وفرق به أقرانًا أعزه لدها وأذكِّه به العزة كلامه بيان وصحته لسانٌ.

1.94. ومن كلام له عليه السلام

1.94.1. وانّ أهل الله الظلم فلن يتفوّت أخذه وهو له بالمرصاد على مجاز طريقة وبوضع

الشجاء من مساغ ريقه. أما والذي نسيّ بيده لبظه هؤلاء القوم علّكم ليس لأنّهم

أولى بالحقّ منكم ولكن لإسراهم إلى بابل صاحبهم» وإبطاقم عن حقي. ولقد

أصبحت الأمم تخاف ظلم رعاتها وأصبحت أهاج ظلم رعّي استفّرنتهم الجهاد فلم

تنفروا وأسمعكم فلم تسمعوا ودعوكم سراً وجرأهُ فلم تستجيروا ونصحت لكم فلم تقبلوا.

شهود كَفِّيَّ وعبيد كأرباب أتلو عليكم الحكم فتنفرون منها وأعظمكم بالموظفة البالغة

فتنفرقون عنها وأحكم على جهاد أهل البغي فاًأتي على آخر قولٗ حتى أراكم مَفترقين

اش، ن، ي، ه، بعكسه في م: قدّا، أصل م: وstonصب ... منصب). ٣٠، ن، م: قدّا، ي: الباطل، ٣٠، ي، ه، بعكسه في ش: كَّدّا، ن، وأصل ش: (لا إسراهم إلى بطلهم).
1.93 From an oration by 'Ali:

Praise God! He is the first—there was nothing before him. He is the last—there is nothing after him. He is the manifest—there is nothing above him. He is the hidden—there is nothing below him.

From the same oration describing God’s Messenger:

Muḥammad came from the worthiest repository and the noblest roots, from the mine of honor and the cradle of soundness. Virtuous hearts inclined to him, and discerning eyes were drawn. Rancorous intentions were buried because of him, and burning flames were doused. Brothers were reconciled and peers were separated, servility was converted to might and might was rendered servile. His words were the epitome of elucidation, his very silence was eloquent.

1.94 From an address by 'Ali:^1

1.94.1 God may have granted the tyrant a reprieve, but he will surely apprehend him. He lies in wait on the road along which the tyrant must pass, in the place where his saliva, dripping into his throat, will choke him. By the one who holds my life in his hand, I swear that this faction will overpower you—not because they have a greater right, but because they hasten to support their leader’s unrighteous claim,^2 while you hold back from supporting my right! Other communities fear tyranny from their rulers, while I have come to fear tyranny from my subjects! I urge you to fight, but you don’t respond, I speak to you, but you don’t listen, I call on you in private and in public, but you don’t answer, I counsel you, but you don’t accept my counsel. Those present among you are like those absent, and servants behave like masters. I recite litanies of wisdom to you but you bolt from them, I counsel you with profound advice but you scatter in its wake, I urge you to fight these treacherous people, but before I reach the end of my speech you ⟨disperse like the hands of Sabā⟩^3—you

---

^1 In Nukhaylah, just outside Kufa, after the arbitration in 37/658. A few lines are repeated in §3.254, that specifies the location. Mufid (Irshād, 277) cites it as part of an oration which begins “O people of Kufa, start preparations for fighting your enemy Mu‘āwiyah and his supporters.” ‘Abd al-Zahrāʾ (Maṣādir, 2:192) argues that this text is part of §1.34, delivered after Nahrawān when the Kufans held back from marching on Mu‘āwiyah.

^2 The reference is to the Syrians, the Umayyads, and Mu‘āwiyah. H 772; B 403; R 1:431.

^3 The reference is to the proverb, ⟨They dispersed like the hands of Sabā (Sheba)⟩ (turfarraqū ayydiya Sabā), i.e., they dispersed never to be reunited again. Sabā was a pre-Islamic man from Yemen. His hands are a metaphor for his sons who, warned by a sybil of the Ma‘rib dam’s imminent rupture and flooding, dispersed widely across the Arabian Peninsula. Maydānī, Majma‘ al-anthāl, 2:6–8; H 774–75; B 403; R 1:432.
أيادي سيا ترجعون إلى مجالسكم وتتفادعون عن مواعظكم أقومكم غدوة وترجعون إليّ عشبة كظهر الحنابة في زجز المقام وأعضه المقيم.

1.94.2 آيت الشاهدة أبنائهن العائدة عنهم عقولهم المختلفة أحوالهم المبرّي بهم أمراؤهم صاحبكم يطبع الله وأتعم تعصونه وصاحب أهل الشام يعطي الله وهم يطبعونه لوددت والله أن تعواوينة صارفتك بكم صرف الدينار بالدرهم فأخمر ميّة عشرة منكم وأعطاني رجلا منهم.

1.94.3 يا أهل الكوفة مّنيت منكم بثلاث وثمانين صمّ ذو اسماء وكم ذو كلام وعمي ذو أبصار لا أحرار صدق عند اللقاء ولا إخوان ثقة عند البلاء ترّبت أيديكم. با أشباه الإبل غاب عنها رغبتها كمّا جمعت من جانب تفرّقت من آخراً والله لكأنّي بكم فيما إخال لحسن الوغى وحي الضراب قد انتفرجتم عن أبن أبي طالب أنفراج المرأة عن قبلها إني لعلى بيئة من ربي ومنهج من بني إني على الطريق الواضح القطرة لقاطاً انظروا أهل بيت نبيكم فألووني سنتهم وأنتوا أثرهم فلن يخرجكم من هدى ولن بعيدوك في ردى فإنَّبنا فألبدوا وإن نهضوا فأنتهما ولا تسبقوهم فتفضلوا ولا تتأخروا عنهم فتقبلوا.

1.94.4 لقد رأيت أصحاب محّد قلبي الله عليه والآله فأرّى أحداً منكم شببهم لقد كانوا يصبحون شعباً غيراً قد باتوا خطاءً وقيماً يراوحون بين جماههم وحدودهم ويفانون علي مثل المجر من ذكر معاهدهم كان بين أعينهم ركب المعزى من طول سجودهم إذا ذكر الله حلّت أعينهم حتّى نبأ جيوبهم ومادوا كما يميد الشجر يوم الريح العاصف خوفاً من العقاب ورجاء للثواب.

م، ي، وصححة في ش، ه: كذا، ن، وأصل ش، ه: (جانب).
return to your assemblies and incite one another not to heed the counsel you have heard. I straighten you out in the morning, but you come to me in the evening, crooked as a bow. The one who would straighten has given up, for the one who needs straightening cannot be cured!

1.94.2 You people! Your bodies are present, but your minds are gone, your ambitions are divided so your commanders suffer, your ruler obeys God, yet you disobey him, and the Syrians’ ruler disobeys God, yet they obey him. By God, how I wish Muʿāwiyah would trade me dirham for dinar, taking ten of you and giving me one of them!

1.94.3 Kufans! I have been tested by three things in you, and two more: you have ears but are deaf, you have speech but are dumb, you have eyes but are blind, you are not courageous in battle as free men ought to be, nor trustworthy brothers in times of trial. May your hands be filled with dirt! You people, you resemble camels whose herdsmen have disappeared—gathered together on one side, you scatter from the other. I see you, by God, when war clamors and fighting heats up, running away from Abū Ṭalib’s son and leaving the way to him open like a woman with her legs spread wide, her front part exposed. I stake my claim on a clear proof from my Lord, and follow a path laid out by my Prophet. I walk with purpose on the clear road. Look to your Prophet’s family, stay on their course, and follow their trace, for they will never steer you from the path of guidance or return you to the path of destruction. Sit if they sit and stand if they stand, don’t get ahead of them or you will stray, don’t hold back from them or you will perish.

1.94.4 I have seen Muḥammad’s Companions and none of you resembles them! The morning would find them disheveled and covered in dust, having spent the night in prostration and prayer, pressing foreheads and cheeks to the ground, yearning for the return as though walking on live coals, the skin of their brows gnarly from long prostrations like the knees of a goat. Their eyes would stream at the mention of God’s name until their bosoms were soaked. They would shudder from fear of punishment and hope of reward like trees in a gale.

---

1 These first lines echo the opening lines of §1.29.
2 “Abū Ṭalib’s son” is ‘Alī. “A woman with her legs spread wide, her front part exposed” (infirāj al-marʾati ‘an qubuliḥā) is an idiom that refers to a woman giving birth. Ḥ 7:76; B 404.
3 Reference to Qur’an, Anʿām 6:57.
4 Ar. alqṣṭuḥu laqṭan, explained as I have translated it by Rāwandī and Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd (R 1:432. Ḥ 7:76). Bahrānī (B 404) says it means “I pick my way through it,” adding that it means “I pick out right from wrong." Lane (Lexicon, s.v. “L-Q-T”) supports both meanings.
ومن كلام له عليه السلام

والله لا يزالون حتى لا يدعوا لله محرماً إلا أستحللوه ولا عقداً إلا حاووه وحتى لا يبقى

بيت مدر ولا ورث إلا دخله ظلهم ونبا به سوى رعيهم ولكن يقوم الباكان يبكي باك

بكي لدينه وباك يبكي لدينه حتى تكون نصرة أحدكم من أهذم كنصرف العبد من

سيده إذا شهد أطعه وإذا غاب أتغابه وحتى يكون أعظمكم فيها غناه أحسنكم بالله ظناً

فإن أتكم الله بعفاف فاقبوا وإن أتبليم فأصبروا فد إنين العفافه المتقين

95. ومن خطبة له عليه السلام

تحده على ما كان ونستعينه من أمرنا على ما يكون ونسأله المعافاة في الأديان كما نسأله
 المعافاة في الأبدان. أوصيكم بالرخص لهذه الدنيا التارة لكم وإن لم تحبوا تركها والمملية
 لأجسادكم وإن كنت تحبون تجردها. فإنما مثلكم ومثلها كتب سلكوا سبيلًا فكأنهم
 قد قطعوه وأقروا علماً فكانوا قد بلغوه وكمس النجاح إلى الغاية أن يجري إليها حتى
 يبلغها وما عسى أن يكون بقاء من له يوم لا يعوده وطالم حيث يجدوه في الدنيا
 حتى يفرقه. فلا تنافسوا في عر الدنيا ونفروا ولا تعجبوا بزيتها ونعمتها ولا تجزؤوا
 من ضرائها ويدعوها فإن عرها ونفروا إلى أنقطاع وزيتها ونعمتها إلى زوال وضراءها
 ونبسها إلى نفاد وكل مدة فيها إلى أنتهاء وكل حي فيها إلى فتنتها. أوليس لكم في أثار
 الأولين وفي آياتكم الماضين تبصرة ومعتنب إن كنت تعقولون. أعلم تروا إلى الماضين منكم لا
1.95 From an address by ‘Alī:¹
By God, they will continue thus until they commit every forbidden act and untie every knot, until not one brick house and not one goat-hair tent remains unpenetrated by their tyranny or uprooted by their corrupt herding, until two weepers stand up to weep, one weeping over his religion, another weeping over his possessions, and until, if one of you seeks vengeance on one of them, he will be a slave seeking vengeance upon his master,² obeying if present and slandering if absent. The richest of you will be the person who places his trust entirely in God. Remember this: If God grants you his protection accept it, and if he tests you be patient, for «the best outcome is reserved for the pious.»³

1.96 From an oration by ‘Alī:⁴
We praise him for favors past and seek his help for what is to come. We ask him to grant us vigor in our faith, just as we ask him to grant us vigor in our bodies. I counsel you to reject the world, for she will reject you despite your dislike of leaving her and cause your bodies to decay despite your wish for renewal. You and she are like a band of travelers who seem already to have crossed the path they traverse, who seem already to have reached the mountain they are headed for. How likely it is that if you race your steed toward a goal, you will soon attain it! How likely it is that your life today will not continue into tomorrow! For you are driven on by a pursuer who will not relent until he makes you leave the world. Don’t compete for the world’s might and glories, don’t be captivated by her beauty and delights or shaken by her injuries and sorrows, for her might and glories will be cut off, her beauty and delights will cease, and her injuries and sorrows will end. Each period of her time will end, and every being living in her will perish. Doesn’t the evidence of earlier peoples and the example of your own ancestors alarm and enlighten you? If you would only reflect!

---
¹ Excerpt from an oration—preceded, according to Ibn Qutaybah (Imāmah, 1:174), by § 1.124, and including § 1.140—delivered at Ṣiffīn (in 37/657), when some of ‘Alī’s associates told him about how Muʿāwiyah lavishly rewarded his supporters and urged him to do the same (Ḥārānī, Tuḥaf, 185). This section concerns the Umayyads’ tyranny and corruption (B 405; H 7:78–79).

² Similar language in § 1.90.4, also about the Umayyads, interpreted as ineffectiveness against them. H 7:55; B 397.

³ Qurʾan, Hūd 11:49.

⁴ Friday sermon delivered early in ‘Alī’s caliphate, presumably in Medina in 35/656. R 1:438. Iskāfī (Miʿyār, 271) cites some lines in a passage that he says “‘Alī used to call out every night in a raised voice.” The last paragraph is also cited as part of an oration (of which § 1.202 is another part) in the mosque in Basra, a few days after the Battle of the Camel in 36/656 (Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 235).
يرجعون إلى الخلف الباقي لا يقولون أوَّلِمَا ترون أهل الدنيا يمسون ويصبحون على أحوال شقي فثبت يُؤكِّي وآخر يعزُّ ويصريح مبتل، وأنه يعود وآخر نفسه يؤدى وطالب للدنيا والموت يطلب وفاغس ليس بعقول عنه وعلى أثر الماضي ما يمضي الباقي. ألا فآذروا هادم اللذات ومنغص الشهدات وقطع الأمنيات عند المساوية للأعمال القبيحة وأستعينوا الله على أداء واجب حقه وما لا يخص من أعداد نعمه وإحسانه.

1.97 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام
الحمد لله الناشر في الخلق فضلهم الباسط فيهم بالجود يده. تحمده في جميع أمره ونستعينه على رعاية حقوقه. ونشيد أن لا إله غيره وآن محمّدًا عبده ورسوله أمره صادعاً وبذره ناطقةً فادأ أميناً ومضى شيداً وخلف فينا راية الحق من تقدّها مرّة ومن تخلف عنها زتقا ومن لها حقّ دليلها مكث الكلام بطيء القيام سريع إذا قام إذا أنتَ أنتُ له رادٌّم وأشرب تأهيٌ بصابعكم جاهز ألكلام فدهم به فلبنتم بعده ما شاء الله حتى يطلع الله لكم من يجمعكم ويبذئكم. فلا تعلموا في غير مقبل ولا تياوَسوا من مدين فإنّ المدير عين أن طال إحدى قومهئك وتبت الأخرى فترجاعا حتى تثبت جمعاً. ألا إنّ مثل آل محمّد صلى الله عليه وسلم كنبل نجوم السماء إذا خَوَّى نجم طلع آخر. فكان لكم قد تكاملت من الله فيكم الصنائع وآركم ما كنت تأملون

1.98 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام وهو من خطبه التي تشمل على ذكر الملاحم

اش، ن، يِ، هِ، يِ، ونسخة في م كذا، وأصل م: (غير الله).
Haven't you seen that those who pass away don't return, and that you, their heirs, will not remain forever? Don't you see the people of this world, at dusk and at dawn, in disparate states? One dead and lamented, another bereaved, one struck and afflicted, another giving up the ghost, one who seeks this world when death seeks him, another heedless who goes not unheeded? In truth, those who remain walk in the traces of those who have passed. Hark! Before you rush to do evil, remember the destroyer of pleasures, the slasher of passions, and the slayer of hopes. Seek God's help in offering him what you owe for his incalculable blessings and abundant favors.

1.97 From an oration by ‘Ali:¹
Praise God who extended his grace to all creatures and stretched out his hand to them with generous gifts. We praise him in all his affairs and seek his help in guarding his rights. We bear witness that there is no god other than he, and that Muḥammad is his servant and messenger, whom he sent to transmit his command and express his remembrance. He discharged the trust with honor, and died having guided us, having bequeathed to us the banner of truth; whoever gets ahead of it strays, whoever holds back from it perishes, and whoever remains beneath it catches up with those who have gone ahead. The guide who carries it is deliberate when speaking, measured when rising, and swift once risen,² but when you have bent your necks to him fully and pointed toward him with your fingers,³ death will come to him, and he will be taken away. You will remain after him in this manner for as long as God wills, until he brings to you one who will unite you again and gather your scattered fragments. So do not keep hoping for a man to step up who is not going to, but do not despair of one who has turned away. Though he may have turned away because one foot slipped, the other could be stable, and both feet could once again stand firm. Hark! Muḥammad's descendants are like stars in the firmament: if one sets, another rises. The time is near and has almost arrived—the time when God's blessings will reach perfection, and when he will show you what you hope to see.

1.98 From one of ‘Ali’s orations containing narratives of epic fighting:⁴

1 ʿAli’s third Friday sermon delivered after becoming caliph, presumably in Medina, 35/656. Ḥ 7:93.
2 Referring to himself. Ḥ 7:85; B 408.
3 The commentaries state that “pointing with fingers” means that “people recognized ‘Ali as ruler” Ḥ 7:94; B 408.
1.98.1 الأول قبل كل أول والآخر بعد كل آخر بأوليته وجب أن لا أول له وبآخريته وجب أن لا آخر له وأشهد أن لا إله إلا الله شهادة يوافق فيها السر الإعلان والقلب اللسان.

1.98.2 أي الناس إلا يجري منه شقاق فلا يستهينونه عصبياني ولا تتراموا بالأبيار. عندما تسمعونه مني فوالذي فائق الحبة ورأى النسمة إن الذي أنتمكم به عن النبي صلى الله عليه وسلم لما كذب المبلغ ولا جهل السامع.

1.98.3 لكأني أنظر إلى ضليل قد نعَق بالشام وفحص براءته في ضواحي كوفان فإذا فغرت فاغرت وأشدت شكيمته وثلقت في الأرض وطأته عصا الصمتين أباهها بأنابيها وماجت الحرب بأمواجها وبدا من الأيام ك لوحيها ومن الليالي كدوحها فإذا ينزع زرعه وقائم على ينبع وهدرت شقاشه وبرقت بوارقه عقدت رايات الفتنة المضيلة وأقبل كل ليل المظلم والبحر المظلم. هذا ويكخر الكوفة من فاضف وبير عليها من عاصف وعن قليل تنطف القرون ويخص الصائم ويحظى المحصود.

1.99 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام تجري هذا المجرى.

1.99.1 وذلك يوم يجمع الله فيه الأولين والآخرين لنقاش الحساب وجزاء الأعمال خضوعاً فيما قد أجلهم عرق ورجفت بهم الأرض فحسنهم حالاً من وجد لقديمه موضعاً ولنفسه متشعاً.
1.98.1 He is the first before every first and the last after every last, his firstness dictates that he has no beginning, and his lastness dictates that he has no end. I bear witness that there is no god but God; my thoughts match my declaration, my heart matches my tongue.

1.98.2 People! «Let not your enmity of me drive you to accuse me of lies»¹ or seduce you into disobeying me—and do not look at one another so when you hear me speak these words! I swear by him who split open the seed and created the living being that what I say to you comes from the Prophet—that speaker did not lie, and this listener did not forget.

1.98.3 A wicked man will call out to his flock in Syria and scrapes the ground for his banners to roost in the hinterlands of Kufa—I can almost see him!² When his maw has opened wide, his defiance has become strong, and he stamps his feet with violence, sedition will sink its fangs into the city’s children, waves of war will swell, the days will scowl, and the nights will maim. Then, with seditition’s fruit fully ripened, its thunderclaps booming and its lightning flashing, its obdurate banners will become ranged in tight ranks and march like the dark night, like the surging sea. All this will happen. How many winds will sweep into Kufa! How many storms will lash into her! Soon, very soon, horn will lock with horn. All who stand will be harvested, and all that is harvested will be crushed.

1.99 From an oration by ‘Alī with similar content:³

1.99.1 On that day, God will assemble all who went before and all who came after, standing, necks bowed, to be interrogated for the judgment and receive payback for their deeds. Sweat will streak their cheeks like straps of a bridle, and the ground beneath them will tremble. The best any man can hope for is space for his feet and room for his frame.⁴

---

¹ Qurʾan, Hūd 11:89.
² The commentators state that this prophecy refers most likely to the fifth Umayyad caliph ‘Abd al-Malik ibn Marwān (r. 65–86/685–705), or perhaps to Muʿāwiyyah, or the Antichrist. B 401, H 7:99–100. The first few lines are similar to §1.136.3.
³ Part of an oration—that includes §1.98 and §1.126—which ‘Alī delivered in Basra immediately after the Battle of the Camel in 36/656. B 480; ‘Abd al-Zahrāʾ, Maṣādir, 2:202, 203, 288.
⁴ Ar. nafs, translated here as “frame,” also means “life,” “person,” and “soul.” Differently vocalized as nafas, it can also mean “breath” (Ibn Manẓūr, Lisān, s.v. “N-F-S”). My translation is based on H 7:102; B 411.
فَقُن كِتْبَ اللَّهِ المَلْكَ مَلْكِ الْجَهَّالَةِ وَعَمِّرَهَا وَعَفِتْهَا راَمَرُهَا راَمَرُهَا وَهِيْنَلَا قَمْ غَيْرُ الْعَذَابِ الْأَمْرٍ وَلَمْ يَقُولُوا لَكَنَّكَ فِي النَّارِ وَلَمْ يَقُولُوا لَكَنَّكَ فِي النَّارِ وَلَمْ يَقُولُوا لَكَنَّكَ فِي النَّارِ وَلَمْ يَقُولُوا لَكَنَّكَ فِي النَّارِ وَلَمْ يَقُولُوا لَكَنَّكَ فِي النَّارِ وَلَمْ يَقُولُوا لَكَنَّكَ فِي النَّارِ وَلَمْ يَقُولُوا لَكَنَّكَ فِي النَّارِ وَلَمْ يَقُولُوا لَكَنَّكَ فِي النَّارِ وَلَمْ يَقُولُوا لَكَنَّكَ فِي النَّارِ وَلَمْ يَقُولُوا لَكَنَّكَ فِي النَّارِ وَلَمْ يَقُولُوا لَكَنَّكَ فِي النَّارِ وَلَمْ يَقُولُوا لَكَنَّكَ فِي النَّارِ وَلَمْ يَقُولُوا لَكَنَّكَ فِي النَّارِ وَلَمْ يَقُولُوا لَكَنَّكَ فِي النَّارِ وَلَمْ يَقُولُوا لَكَنَّكَ فِي النَّارِ وَلَمْ يَقُولُوا لَكَنَّكَ فِي النَّارِ وَلَمْ يَقُولُوا لَكَنَّكَ فِي النَّارِ وَلَمْ يَقُولُوا لَكَنَّكَ فِي النَّارِ وَلَمْ يَقُولُوا لَكَنَّكَ فِي النَّارِ وَلَمْ يَقُولُوا لَكَنَّكَ فِي النَّارِ وَلَمْ يَقُولُوا لَكَنَّكَ فِي النَّارِ وَلَمْ يَقُولُوا لَكَنَّكَ فِي النَّارِ وَلَمْ يَقُولُوا لَكَنَّكَ فِي النَّارِ وَلَمْ يَقُولُوا Lلا شَرِّифُ الْرَّدِّي - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0

1.99.2 From the same oration:¹
Seditions will approach like hosts of darkness—no horse will be able to withstand them, and no banner of theirs will be repelled. Advancing like bridled and saddled warhorses, they will be urged on by their drivers, and pushed hard by their riders, a rabid group with little appetite for stopping at plunder. Those who fight them for God will be a force deemed lowly by the arrogant, unrecognized on earth but eminent in the hereafter. Basra, you will be afflicted at that time with an army that brings God's chastisement, an army that neither raises dust nor makes any sound. Your inhabitants will be stricken with red death and black hunger.

1.100 From an oration by ‘Alī:²

1.100.1 Look at the world with the eyes of those who have little interest in her and who turn away from her. By God, she will soon evict her tenants and afflict the complacent and secure. That part which turns away and leaves never returns, while that part which you think is approaching is not guaranteed to arrive. Her happiness is blemished with grief, and men's strength, as they continue to live in her bosom, deteriorates into weakness and incapacity. Do not be beguiled by her many beauties, for her companionship is short-lived. May God have mercy on the man who reflects and takes heed, and who, taking heed, discerns! In a short while, it will be as though this world never was, as if the hereafter has already come. All that is tallied will run out, all that is expected will be, and all that will be is at hand.

1.100.2 From the same oration:
The learned man knows his worth—suffice it as a mark of ignorance when a man does not know his worth. Among the most hateful of men in God's eyes is a person whom God has given up on, a person he has left to his own devices, who strays from the straight path, and wanders without a guide. If called on to cultivate the fields of this world, he works hard, but if called on to cultivate the fields of the hereafter, he is lazy. He behaves as though the things he works for are mandatory, but the things in which he is remiss are an unpleasant burden that he is not required to carry.

¹ The commentators state that this section prophesies either (1) end-of-time apocalyptic events (H 7:104), or (2) the Zanj Rebellion (B 411–412). Led by the “Chief of the Zanj,” ‘Alī b. Muḥammad, this 15-year rebellion in southern Iraq (255–270/869–883) caused “innumerable material losses and tens of thousands of lives.” Popovic, “al-Zandij: (ii) The Zandij revolts in ‘Irāq,” 817.

² Kulaynī (Kāfī, 817) cites §1.100.1 in a set of lines with which “the Commander of the Faithful used to counsel his supporters.”
وذلك زمان لا يتجوز فيه إلا كل مؤمن نومة فإن شهد لم يُعرف وإن غاب لم يُنتقد أولئك مصاعب الهدى وأعلام السرٍّ ليسوا بالمُساجح ولا المعاني البذر أولئك يفتح لهم أبواب رحمته ويكشف عنهم ضرائب نقمته. آياتي الناس سبأني عليكم زمان يكفًا فيه الإسلام كما يكفًا الأناش بما فيه. آياتي الناس إن الله قد أعادكم من أن يبور عليكم ولم يستمدهم من أن يبتليكم وقد قال جل من قائل إن في ذلك آيات وإن كفا لمتليين.

وأما قوله عليه السلام (كل مؤمن نومه) فإنما أراد به الحامل الذكر القليل الشر. و(المُسَأجح) جمع مسياح وهو الذي يسبح بين الناس بالفساد والخَلْاف. و(المعاني) جمع ميِيثاع وهو الذي إذا سمعه يفرح بفاحشة آذاعها وتهوه بها. و(البَذر) جمع بذور وهو الذي يكثر سفهه، ولعل منطقه.

ومن خطبة له عليه السلام وقد تقدّم مختاراً يُخلاف هذا الرواية أئما بعد وإن الله سبحانه بعث محمدًا صلى الله عليه وآله وسلم أحد من العرب يقرأ كتابًا ولا يدعي نبوة ولا وحى فقاتل بمن أطاعه من عصاة يسوقهم إلى منجاتهم يبادر بهم الساعة أن تنزل بهم يحضره الحسير ويقف الكسير فيقم عليه حتى يلحقه غايته إلاً هالكًا لا خير فيه حتى أراهم منجاتهم وبوّاههم محلاتهم فاستدارت راحته واستلمت قناتهم. وأيام الله لقد كنت من ساقتها حتى تولت بجاذبيها واستستقامت في قيادتها ما ضعفت ولا جبت ولا خيت ولا وحنت. وأيام الله لا بقترن الباطل حتى أخرج الحق من خاصته.
1.100.3 From the same oration:
A time will come when only humble believers are safe, not recognized if present and not missed when absent. They are lamps of guidance and waymarks for travelers, never gossipmongers or blabbering slanderers. God will open the gates of his mercy for them and offer protection from the blows of his punishment. People! A time will come upon you when Islam is overturned, just as a vessel is overturned, with its water poured away. People! God has promised to protect you against his injustice, but he has not promised to protect you against his trials. He, the most glorious of speakers, has said: «Truly there are signs in that, truly we shall put you to the test.»

1.100.4 Raḍī: By the words, “every humble believer (kullu muʾminin nūmah),” ʿAlī meant a person whom no one mentions and who does no one harm. “Masāyīḥ (gossipmongers)” is the plural of misyāḥ, one who goes around spreading discord and defamation. “Madhāyīʿ (slanderers)” is the plural of midḥyāʿ, one who, whenever he hears of a person having committed an immoral act, circulates and disseminates it. “Budhur (blabberers)” is the plural of badhūr, one whose levity is excessive and whose speech is nonsensical.

1.101 From an oration by ʿAlī of which some parts have previously been cited in a variant form:
God sent Muḥammad as a prophet when no Arab read scripture or claimed revelation and prophecy. Mustering those who obeyed him, he fought those who disobeyed, herding all to their place of refuge and hastening to set them on the right path before the final hour arrived. He raised the weary and nurtured the broken, until, except for those bereft of any good who perished, he had guided them all to their goal, shown them their refuge, and brought them into a safe enclosure, where their handmills spun and their lances straightened. By God, I was one of those who fought the Age of Ignorance until its battalions fled and Islam’s forces were corralled, never holding back out of weakness, cowardice, disloyalty, or impotence. By God, I shall impale falsehood’s torso until truth emerges from its flank.

1 Ar. nūmah, translated here as “humble,” is alternatively vocalized as nuwamah, “those who sleep a lot.” B 414.
2 Qurʾan, Muʾminūn 23:30.
3 This oration is a variant of § 1.33, specified there as delivered “when ʿAlī marched on the people of Basra.” See also Mufid, Irshād, 247.
4 This line contains only pronouns, which I have replaced based on the commentaries: “Age of Ignorance” for “the earlier age,” and “Islam’s forces” for “our forces.” H 7:116; B 415; R 339; Gh 2108.
1.102.1

الدّنيا في لّدّنها ولا يّمكّنمن رّضاع أّخلافها إلاّ إنّهُ بعّداهُ صادقّة جائلا خطاها قلّا وضيئها قد صار حراما عند أّقوام بمنزلة السّدر الخضّود وحّالها بعّدا غير موجود وصادقّة وحّالها الله ظلّا ممّدودًا إلى أجل معدود فالّأّرض لّكم شاغرة وأّيديكم فيها مبسّطة وأّيدي القادة عنكم مكفوّفة وسّوكم عليهم مسلّطة وسّوكم عنكم مقبّضة Alo إلّا إنّ لكلّ دّم ثائرًا وكلّ حقّ طابًا وإنّ النّائر في دمآتئا كَالْحَاج كِم خُطّ نفسه وهو الله الذي لا يعجزه من طلب ولا يفوته من هرّب. فأقسم بالّه يا بني أميّة عما قليل لّتعرفّا في أّيدي غّيركم وفي دار عدوّ كَم إلّا وإنّ أبّصر الأّصار ما نفّد في الخير طرفه إلّا إنّ أسمع الأّسّام ما وّعى التذكير وقِبلَهَ

1.102.2

عين قد رُوّفت من الكّدر عباد الله لا تَركنوا إلى جهالتك ولم تتفاقدوا لأّهوائكم فإنّ النانز بهذا المنزل نانز بشفّا جرّف هار» ينقل الرّدّ على ظهوره من موضع إلى موضع لرأي يحدثه بعد رأي يريد أن يلتصق ما لا يلتصق ويقرب ما لا ينقرب. فائلاً الله أن تتشكوا إلى مّن لا يبتكي alg-irjm ويقّع برأيه ما قد أدرّب لكم إنه ليس على الإمام إلّا ما حمل من أمر رّه الإبلاغ في الموضعة والاجتهاد في النصيه والإحياء

م، ش، ن، ي، ه، مّع علامّة الصحّة: كّدا مصحّحة في ش، م: (بعد ما). 20 م، ي، ه، نسخة

في ش: كّدا ن، وأصل ش، ونسخة في م، ه: يّاشكيّ
1.102  From an oration by ‘Ali:\footnote{\textsuperscript{1}}

1.102.1 God sent Muhammad as a witness, a herald, and a warner.\footnote{\textsuperscript{2}} As a child, he was the best of the entire world, as a man, the most noble, purest of the pure in character, the most generous of all rainclouds. Until he came,\footnote{\textsuperscript{3}} you had neither tasted the world’s sweetness nor succeeded in milking its teats. But afterward, when its halter was loose and its girth slack,\footnote{\textsuperscript{4}} some of you turned what he had forbidden into a «laden lote tree»,\footnote{\textsuperscript{5}} and what he had made lawful into a distant fancy. You found the world to be a cool, spreading shade: the earth defenseless before your aggression, your hands reaching out to grab it and the hands of just leaders restrained, your swords on their necks, their swords forcibly sheathed. Be warned! For every life taken vengeance will be sought, for every right abused redress will be pursued. Our avenger is none other than God, who will be both petitioner and judge. No one he seeks eludes him, no one who flees escapes. By God, Umayyads! Soon you will see rule in the hands of another, in the house of your enemy. Listen now! For the keenest eye kens good and the sharpest ear heeds counsel.

1.102.2 People! Light your lamp from the flame of one who gives counsel and heeds it, draw your water from a spring that is unmuddied and pure.\footnote{\textsuperscript{6}} Servants of God! Do not rest on your ignorance or follow your caprice for that camper encamps at «the lip of a crumbling cliff».\footnote{\textsuperscript{7}} As he moves from place to place, as he innovates one heresy then another, as he tries to glue two things that cannot bond, as he works to join two things that are far apart, he carries his doom on his back. Fear God, and do not take your complaints to one who does not feel your pain, who cannot undo with his makeshift ruling a mandated rule. A leader’s duties are those with which God has charged him: he must counsel the people

\footnotetext{1}{ʿAlī delivered this oration in Medina in 35/656, five days after allegiance was pledged to him as caliph. ʿAlī ibn Ibrāhīm al-Qummī, \textit{Tafsīr}, 1:384.}
\footnotetext{2}{Modified quote from Qurʾan, Āḥzāb 33:45. The Arabic begins with \textit{ḥattā} (“until”), presumably connecting from an earlier section on the condition of people just before the coming of Islam.}
\footnotetext{3}{Ar. \textit{min baʿdī}: “until he came,” addressing the early Muslims (Ḥ 7:119); or: “until he had gone,” addressing the Umayyads (B 1:95). Or, if reading the text as \textit{min baʿdi mā}, as in some manuscripts, the sentence would connect to the next word and read as “You did not taste ... until after you had earlier found the world to have a loose halter.”}
\footnotetext{4}{I.e., difficult to ride, referring to the upheavals in the leadership of the Muslim empire after Muhammad. Ḥ 7:119.}
\footnotetext{5}{Ar. \textit{sidr makhḍūd}. Qurʾan, Wāqiʿah 56:28; Ḥ 7:119; R 1:449; B 417.}
\footnotetext{6}{Referring to himself. Ḥ 7:168; B 418.}
\footnotetext{7}{Qurʾan, Tawbah 9:109.}
للستنة وإقامة الحدود على مستحقاتها وإصدار السهم على أهلها. فبادروا العلم من قبل
تصحيح نبتة ومن قبل أن تشغلا بأنفسكم عن مستثار العلم من عند أهلها وأنها عن المنكر
وتناوا عليه فإمّا أمرتم بالنبي بعد التناهي.

ومن خطبة له على السلام

ا. 1103.1
الحمد لله الذي شرع الإسلام فسِّل شرائه لمن ورده وأعر أركائه على من غالب
جَعَلَه أمنًا لمن علَقَّه وسِلَّما لمن دخله وبرحتانًا لمن تكَّلم به وشاهدتًا لمن
استضاء به وفهمًا لمن عقل وبلدًا لمن تدير وآية لمن تَوَسُّر وتَبَصَّر لمن عزم وعبرة لمن
أَتَّبَع
وجَعَلَه مِن صدِّيق وثقة لمن توكل وراحة لمن فرض وجنَّة لمن صبر فهو أبلج المناهج واصح
الواج مشرف المنار مشرق الجواد مضيء المصابيح كريم المضمار رفيق الغاية جامع
الحِلبَة متنافس السبقة شريف الفرسان. التصديق مناهج والصالحات مناره والمدو
غايثه والدنيا مضماره والقيامة حلبته والجنة سبقته.

منها في ذكر النبي صلى الله عليه وآله

الSharīf al-Raḍī - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
to good purpose, exert effort in giving advice, keep alive the Sunnah, punish those who commit crimes, and distribute treasury stipends fairly. People, hasten to pluck knowledge before its plant withers, seek to acquire knowledge from its keepers before preoccupations distract, forbid evil and desist from it, for you have been commanded to desist before forbidding others.

1.103 From an oration by ‘Ali:¹

1.103.1 Praise God who paved the path of Islam, made it smooth for those who come to its waterholes, and protected its ramparts from attackers. He made it a source of security for those who cling to it, a place of safety for those who enter it, a proof for those who argue by it, a witness for those who litigate with it, a light for those who seek illumination by it, comprehension for those who understand, reason for those who ponder, a sign for those who search for pasture,² perception for those who resolve to advance, a lesson for those who take heed, salvation for those who believe, support for those who trust, comfort for those who submit, and a shield for those who endure. Islam’s paths are lit, its trails marked,³ its beacons high, its highway bright, its lamps aglow, its arena honorable, its goal elevated, its racehorses numerous, its prize sought, and its champions noble. Its path is faith, its road good deeds, its end death, its racecourse the world, its track the day of resurrection, and its prize paradise.

1.103.2 From the same oration in praise of the Prophet:⁴

---

1 Excerpt from an oration that ‘Ali delivered in his home, either in Medina or Kufa, additional parts of which are recorded as §1.69, and sayings §3.26 (about the four pillars of belief) and §3.259 (‘Abd al-Zahrāʾ, Maṣādir, 4:214–216). It is related that ‘Ali was asked by an associate to describe belief (īmān), and ‘Ali instructed him to come back the next day, so that others could hear it too. He did return, presumably with others. ‘Ali then delivered this oration and instructed that it be written down and read out to the public (Kulaynī, Kāfī, 2:49). Kulaynī (ibid.) names the associate as Abdallāh ibn al-Kawwāʾ, while Ghazālī (Iḥyāʾ, 4:60) names him as ‘Ammār ibn Yāsir (if so, the oration would have been delivered before Šīfīn, in 37/657, when ‘Ammār was killed). Alternatively, §1.103.1 is also cited as an answer given during an oration in the mosque in Basra, a few days after the Battle of the Camel in 36/656 (Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 224–225). Other parts of the same oration in ibid., 221–233 are listed in note to §1.23. §1.103.1 is similar to §1.154.2.

2 Or, for those who perceive hidden things (tafarrasa). B 420; R 1:455; H 7:222.

3 Or, its inner workings are clear. B 420.

4 Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd (Ḥ 7:174–175) remarks that none of the Prophet’s Companions praised the Prophet and prayed for him after his death as passionately as ‘Ali did, just as no one aided and served the Prophet during his lifetime as sincerely as ‘Ali and his family did.
حتى أُخرى قبضًا لقباس وأثار علماً فباس فهو أمينك المأمون وشهدك يوم الدين
وبعثك نعمة ورسولك بالحقّ رحمة الله أقسم له مقتسمًا من عدلك وأجزه مSTITUTEات
الأخير من فضلكم. اللهم أعلى على بنا الباطين بناء وأكرم ليك نزله وشرف عندك
منزله وأته الوسيلة وأعطه السينة والفضيلة وأحشرنا في زمرته غير خزابا ولا نادمين ولا
ناكبين ولا ناكثرين ولا ضالين ولا مفتنين.

وقد مضى هذا الكلام فيما تقدَّم إلا أننا كرَّناه هنا لما في الروايتين من الاختلاف.

3.110: منها في خطاب أصحابه

وقد بلغتم من كرامة الله لكم منزلة تكرم بها إماواكم وتوصل بها جيرانكم ويعظمكم من
فضل لكم عليه ولا يد لكم عنده ويهاكم من لا يخف لله سطوة ولا لكم عليه إمرة.
وقد ترون عهود الله منقوشة فلا تغضون وأنت لنقش ذم آبانكم تأتفون. وكانت أمور
الله عليك ترد وعنبكم تصدر وإلاكم ترجع فكمنت النفلة من منزلتم وأتَّقين إلهكم
وأسمل الله في أيديهم يعملون بالشبات ويسرون، في الشهوات. وآمس الله لو فرَّقكم
تحت كل كوكب بجمعكم للشيريكم لهم.

3.111: ومن خطبة له عليه السلام في بعض أيام صفين

وقد رأيت جوتكم وأنيتككم عن صفوكم تحوركم الجفاة الطعام وأعراب أهل الشام
وأتت حاميم العرب ويافيح الشرف والأنف المقدّم والنسائم الأعظم. ولقد شفى

ش، ن، ي، ه: كذا م: (تعملون... تسيرون).
He ignited the flame of truth for any who sought a burning brand and lit torches on the road to paradise for those who had tied up their camels not knowing where to go. He is the trustee whom you, God, entrusted with your message, your witness on judgment day, your emissary sent as a blessing, and your messenger dispatched with the truth as the embodiment of mercy. God, bestow on him a bounteous share of your justice, and reward him with a munificent recompense, multiplied manifold by your generosity. God, let his palace tower high above all others, provide him a noble place near you, honor his station at your side, bestow him the right of intercession, grant him radiance and excellence, and resurrect us in his company—let us not be people of dishonor, remorse, deviation, violation, or error, or those who succumb to sedition.

Raḍī: This passage was narrated earlier.¹ I have repeated it here because the two reports vary in some of their language.

1.103.3 From the same oration addressing his associates:
It is through God's bounty that you have attained this high standing, in which your slave girls are honored, and your neighbors receive gifts, where you are revered by people to whom you have given no special favors or grants, while others stand in your awe who have no reason to fear your attack and over whom you have no command. Yet here you see God's compacts broken and are not roused to anger, while when your ancestors' traditions are rent, you profess outrage. God's affairs used to frequent your waterhole, but you have relinquished your station to tyrants, and entrusted your guide ropes to them. You have surrendered God's affairs into their hands, as they implement their dubious actions and walk in the path of their passions. But, by God, even if they strew you beneath every distant star, God will reunite you, on an evil day for them.

1.104 From an oration ‘Ali delivered during one of the battle-days of Ṣiffin:²
I saw you turn away from your battle lines and fall back, pushed away by the rough rabble and common Bedouins of Syria, you, the aristocracy of the Arabs, the summit of nobility, the bridge of its nose, and its lofty hump! But my racing heart was calmed when later I saw you push them back as they had pushed

¹ § 1.69.
² Ṣiffin, 37/657. At one point during the battle, ‘Ali’s right wing fell back. Ashtar, prompted by ‘Ali, addressed them with a rousing oration, and they returned to fight and routed the Syrians. ‘Ali then addressed them with the oration at hand. Ţabari, Tārīkh, 519–25; Iskāfī, Miʿyar, 149.
وَحاوِّلَ صَدْرِي أَن رَأَيْتُم بِأَنْحَرًا تَحْوِيْزُونَهُمْ كَمَا حازِمُ وَتَزْوَيْنَهُمْ عَن مَوَاقِفٍ كَمَا أَزْوَاءُ الْمُكَّامُنَّ بِالْتَّنَاسِل وَفَجَا بَلْ رَمَاحٌ تَرْكُبُ أُوْلَاهُ أَخَاهُمْ كَالْإِلِهِ المَطْرُوْدُ تَرِى
 عن حَيَايْهَا وَتَزَايَدَ عَن مَوَارِدُهَا.

1.105 ومن خطبة له على السلام وهي من خطب الملاحم

الحمد لله المتجلّي خلقه بالخلق والظاهر لقلمهم. يعجبه خلقه خلق من غير رويّة
إذ كانت الروايات لا تلبق إلا بذوي الضمياء وليس بدي ضمير في نفسه خرق عليه
بأطن غيب السترات وأحاط بغضوض عقائد السيرات.

1.105.1 منها في ذكر النبي صلى الله عليه وآله
اختاره من شجرة الأنبياء ومنشقة الضياء وذوّابة العلياء وسُرّة البطحاء ومصابح الظلمة
وينابيع الحكمة.

منها

طيب دوَّار بطلّ قَد أَحْكَم مراهم وأتى مواسمه بِيْك حَيْث الحَاجة إليه. من
قلوب عمري وأذان صم وأليست بِكَّ مَتِينٌ بَيْدَوَاتِ مواسِعِ الغَفْلَة ومواسِنَ الحِيْراً
يُضْيِثُونَ بِاَّضْوَاءِ الحَكَّامِ وَلَمْ يُقَدِّحُوا بِزِنادِ العِلْمِ النِّافِقِ فِي ذلِكَ كَالْأَنْعَامِ السَّئِمَةُ
والصخور القاسية قد أُنكِتْ السِّرْأَر لأَهلِ البصائر ووضعت محجّة الحَقّ خَطِيبَهَا.
وأَسْفِرَ السَّاعَة عَن وَجْهِهَا وظِهَرتَ العَلَامة لِمَتَوَسَّهَا. ماَلِي أَرَى كِمْ أَشِبَّاً بَل أَرواح
وأَرَأُوا بَلا أَشِبَّاً ونَسَأَا بَلا صَلاح وْتَجِّارَا بَلا أَرْباح وْيِقَاطُانَا نَوْمَا وَشَهْدَا غِيَابًا
وَفَتَوَرَّتْ بِشَعْبِهِ.

اش، ن، ي، ه، ومصحتة في م: كَانَ أَصِلَ مُ: (وَأَمِضْيَيْ). ٢٠٧، ن، ي، ه، ونسخة في م:
كَانَ أَصِلَ مُ: (لَا أَهْلِهَا).
you earlier, forcing them from their positions as they had forced you earlier, striking them with arrows and thrusting at them with spears, shoving the men in their front rows bodily onto the heads and chests of the men in the rows behind them, like parched camels driven from the waterhole and pushed away from drink.

1.105 From an oration by ʿAlī with prophecies of future calamities:

1.105.1 Praise God, who appears to his creation through his creation and manifests himself to their hearts through his proof. He created without cogitation or thought, for cogitation and thought only come from those who have an inner disposition—and God does not possess an inner disposition in his self. His knowledge rends the hidden veils of mystery and encompasses beliefs stored in the innermost recesses of peoples’ hearts.

1.105.2 From the same oration in praise of the Prophet:
God selected him from the tree of prophets, the lamp-niche of illumination, the forelock of majesty, and the navel of Baḥṭāʾ, from the lamps in the darkness, and the wellsprings of wisdom.

From the same oration:
He was a physician who carried his medicine from place to place. He had prepared ointments and heated his cauteries, and he used them to heal the hearts of the blind, the ears of the deaf, and the tongues of the dumb, as called for by their needs. He sought out for his medicine places of heedlessness and locales of perplexity never illumined by the light of wisdom or sparked by the flints of glinting erudition. They had been like untended cattle and hard rocks, but then secret purposes became plain for the perceptive, the road of truth became clear for those who had been stumbling in the dark, the imminent hour unveiled its face, and fluttering banners came into sight for those looking for signs. Why is it that I see you as bodies without souls and souls without bodies, ascetics without piety and merchants without profit, awake yet asleep and present yet absent, seeing yet blind, hearing yet deaf, and speaking yet dumb? There will rise a banner of error, entrenched in its socket, spreading its streamers, measuring you with its yardstick, and striking you with outstretched hand, and its leader will be a man who has forsaken the faith to establish his errant claim.

---

1 Baḥṭāʾ—lit. “the flatland”—is another name for Mecca.
2 Or, “I am a physician ...” B 425. The pronoun is implied, not explicit, and the physician could be a reference to the Prophet or to ʿAlī himself.
تُكَلِّمُ بِصَعَاحَتِكَ وَتَتَخَطَّبُ مَعَكَ بِبَعْعَاهَا. قَانِدَهَا خَارِجَ مِنّهَا، فَلا يَقِىٰ يُومَذَ
مِنْكُمْ إِلَّا ثَقَالَّةً كَثِمَالَّةً الْقَدْرِ. أُفُقَةً كَنَفْسَةَ الْقَتَّالَةِ. تَعْرُكُ عَزَزُ الأَدِينَ وَتَدُوسَمُ ذَوْسُ
الْحَصِيدَ وَتَتَخَمَّصُ الصَّدَقَةَ مِنْ يِنْتَكَمُ أَسْتِخْلاَصَ الْطِيْرَةِ. الْبَطْنِيَةَ مِنْ بَيْنِ هَزْبِ
الْبَيْدَ. أَنْ تَذْهَبَ بِمُكَذَّبٍ مَّكَذَّبٍ وَيُبَلِّي بِكَ الْفَحْشَاءِ وَيُتَخَدِّعُ الْكَوْمِ. وَمِنْ أَنْ تَؤْتِينَ
وَفِّي عَيْنِكَ أَجْلَّ كَبُّ، وَفِي عَيْنِكَ غَيْبَةِ يَابَ.
On that day, those of you who remain standing will be as sediments in a cooking pot, or fluffs of wool after bales are packed. The sedition will scrape you like tanned leather, stamp you like harvested grain, picking out the believers among you as a bird picks out plump kernels from a dried-up heap of grain. So tell me, where are these paths taking you, these shadows leading you, these lies tempting you? How is it you have been deceived, «how is it you have been duped?»\(^1\) But «each term is written»\(^2\) and every absence is followed by a return.

1.105.3 Listen to your godly leader, listen to him with your hearts, and pay attention when he speaks! A scout must tell his people the truth, gather them together, and remain alert.\(^3\) But this one has indeed exposed the affair for you and split it open like a cowrie shell,\(^4\) he has peeled it clear like gum from tree bark. The time will come when evil ensconces itself in its cradle, ignorance mounts its steeds, tyranny grows strong, callers to truth dwindle, time attacks like a rapacious carnivore, and evil's camel stallion, gagged for a time, roars. People will become brothers in debauchery, deserters from religion, best friends in their mutual lying, and fierce enemies in the face of truth. When this happens, the son will bring his parents utter despair, the rain will bring scorching heat, the wicked will brim like a flood, and the noble will be depleted like an exhausted wellspring. The people of that time will be wolves, its rulers will be predators, its commoners will be gluttons, and its poor will be dead. Truth will collapse and falsehood spread, tongues will profess affection while hearts will conceal malice, adultery will be the source of kinship while chastity will be a thing of wonder, and Islam will be worn as a fur turned inside out.

1.106 From an oration by ʿAlī:\(^5\)

1.106.1 Everything bows to him, and everything exists through him. He is the wealth of the poor, the might of the humble, the strength of the weak, and the refuge of the desperate. If someone speaks, he hears, if someone stays silent, he knows their secret, while someone lives, he provides them sustenance, and when someone dies, it is to him they return. God, eyes cannot see you, so they

---

1 Qurʾan, Ghāfir 40:62.
2 Qurʾan, Raʿd 13:38.
3 The “scout” refers to ʿAlī himself.
4 Or, a glass bead.
5 Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih (ʿIqd, 4:166–169) says this is ʿAlī’s “Luminous Oration” (Zahrāʾ), which also includes §1.91 and §1.158.
TEXT AND TRANSLATION

خلقك لم تخلق الخلق لوحشة ولا استعمالهم لنفعه ولا يسبقك من طلب ولا يلبثك من أخذت ولا ينقص سلطانك من عصاك ولا يزيد في ملكك من أطاعك ولا يرد أمرك من سخط قضاءك ولا يستغني عنك من توالي عن أمرك كل سر عندك علانية وكل غيب عندك شهادة أي الأبدا لا أمد لك وأنت المنتوى لا محيص عنك وأنت الموعد لا منجا منك بيدك ناصية كل دابة وإليك مصر كل اسم. سبحانك ما أعظم ما نرى من خلقك وما أصغر عظيمه في جنب قدرتاك وما أهول ما نرى من ملكوتاك وما أحقر ذلك فيما غاب عننا من سلطانك وما أسبغ نعك في الدنيا وما أصغرها في نعم الآخرة.

ملاءكة أحكمتكم سماواتك ورفعتهم عن أرضك هم أعلم خلقك بك وأخوفهم لك وأقربهم منك لم يسكنوا الأصلاب ولم يضمنوا الأرحام ولم يخرجوا من ماء مهين ولم يشعوه ريب المنون وإنهم على مكانهم منك ونزلتهم عندك وأستجمع أنفسهم فيه وكثرة طاعتهم لك وقلة عرقلتهم عن أمرك لو عانوا كنه ما خف في عليهم منك لحقوا أعمالهم ولزموا على أنفسهم وعرفوا أنهم لم يعبدون حق عبادتك ولطوفوك حق طاعتك.

سبحانك خالقًا وعبيدًا يحسن بلاك عند خلقك خلفت دارًا وجعلت فيها مأدية مشربًا ومطعمًا وأزواجه وخدامًا وقصورًا وأنهارًا وزروعًا وثمارًا. ثم أرسلت داعيًا يدعو إليها فلا الداعي أجابوا ولا فيما رغبت فيه رغبوا ولا إلى ما شوقت إليه أشتكوا أقبلوا على جيفة قد أفتضحوا بأكلها وأصطلحوا على حبها. ومن عش شتين أعيش بسره وأمر ضلله فهو ينظر بين غير صحبة ويسمع بأذن غير سمعة قد خرقت الشهات عقله وأمازت الدنيا ضلبه وولت عليها نفسه فهو عبد لها ولمن

ش، ن، ي، ه: كذا، م: (الأمدة). ٢٠، ه، م، ش: كذا، ي، مصحح في م، ش: أضيفت

رالآ إليك.

al-Sharīf al-Raḍī - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
cannot inform about you. Indeed, you existed before any of your creatures who could describe you. You did not create them because you felt lonely or because they would bring you benefit. Those you pursue cannot outrun you, those you seize cannot escape. Those who disobey you do not lessen your authority, those who obey you do not bolster your kingdom, those who are unhappy with your decree cannot deflect your command, and those who turn away from your command still need you. For you, all secrets are open, all mysteries evident. You are eternal without end, the terminus from where there is nowhere to flee. Yours is the promised meeting from which there is no escape, your hand holds the forelock of every four-footed beast, to you returns every living being. Glory to you! How wondrous the marvels we see of your creation, yet how small its greatness alongside your power! How grand what we see of your kingdom, yet how humble in comparison with what is hidden from us of your might! How perfect your blessings for us in this world, yet how small against the blessings of the hereafter!

1.106.2 From the same oration:
You created angels, whom you lodged in your skies and raised above your earth. Of all your creatures, they know you best, fear you most, and are closest to you. They were never housed inside loins, enveloped in wombs, created from a lowly drop of sperm, or dispersed by fate’s calamity. But despite their station near you and their position by your side, despite the absorption of their desires in you, the scale of their obedience for you, and their absence of inattention to your command—if they were to plumb your hidden depths, they would deem their deeds trivial and reprimand themselves. They would know that they have not worshipped you as they ought or obeyed you as you deserve.

1.106.3 Glory to you, revered creator whom we worship! Bestowing a great favor on your creatures, you created a dwelling and placed therein a banquet of food and drink, spouses, servants, palaces, streams, grain, and fruit. Then you sent someone to invite people in—but they did not answer the call, show interest in what you encouraged them to do, or evince passion for what you enthused about. Instead, they fell upon a rotten carcass, and, to their deepest shame, they devoured it and fell in love with it. Love blinds the eye and makes the heart ill—the lover sees with blurry eyes and listens with deaf ears, passions ravage his mind, and the world, his beloved, kills his heart and con-

1 The house is paradise (see descriptions of paradise in the Qur’an, e.g., Baqarah 2:25, Āl ʿImrān 3:15, Furqān 25:10), the caller is Muhammad, and more generally, each prophet, and the carcass is this world (B 434; H 7:206–207).
في يده شيء منها حيثما زالت زال إليها وحيثما أقبل عليها لا ينجر من الله بزادر ولا يتعظ منه باوعظ وهوبرى الأخذين على الغرّة حيث لا إقائة ولا رجعة كيف نزل بهم ما كانوا يجهلون واجههم من فراق الدنيا ما كانوا ينمون وقدموا من الآخرة على ما كانوا يوعدون.

فغير موصوف ما نزل بهم أجمعت عليهم سكرة الموت وحسرة الفوت ففترة لها أطرفهم وتعتبرت لها ألوانهم. ثم آزادت الموت فيهم ووجاءت قبل ابن أحدهم وبن منطقة فاتنة بين أهله ينظر بصره ويسمع بذئه على صحة من عقله وبقاء من له ينكر فقير عربه وفُق أذهب دهره ويتذكر أموالا جمعها أحسر في مطالبه وأخذها من مصراحلاتها ومشتقاتها قد لزمت تبعات جمعها وأشرف على فراقها تبقى لم وراءه ينعمون فيها ويتمنون بها فيكون تحناً لغيره والعبء على ظهوره. والمراء قد غلقت رهونه بها فهو بغض يد ندامة على ما أخصره عند الموت من أمره ويزده فيما كان يرغب فيه أيام عمره ويتمنى أن الذي كان يغطبه بها ويهيم عليها قد حازه دونه.

فلم يزل الموت يبالغ في جسدته حتى خالط سمعه فصار بين أهلها لا ينطق بلسانه ولا يسمع بسمعه يردّ طرفه بالنظر في وجههم يرى حركات ألسنتهم ولا يسمع رجع كلامهم. ثم آزادت الموت أثباتًا به فقبض بصره كما قضى تسمعه وخرجت الروح من جسدته فصار جيفة بين أهله قد أوحشوا من جانبه وتباعدوا من قربه لا يسعد بايكه ولا يجيب داعيًا. ثم حملوه إلى مخّط في الأرض فأسلموه فيه إلى عمله وانقطعوا عن زورته.

4.106.4 حتى إذا بلغ الكتاب أجله والأمر مقاديره وألحق آخر الخلق بأوله واجه من أمر الله ما يريده من تجديد خلقه أمام السماء وفطرها وأرج الأرض وأرجفها وقطع جبالها ونسفنا ودك ببعضها بعضًا من هيئة جلالتها ومغوف سلطته وأخرج من فيها لجذّدهم بعد إخلاصهم وجمعهم بعد تفريقهم ثم ميزهم لما يريد من مساقاتهم عن الأعمال

أش، ن، ي، م، ومصححة في م: كذا. أصل م، ونسخة في ش: «يسطيع».
sumes his soul. He thus becomes a slave to the world and to all who possess anything of her, wherever she goes he follows, and wherever she turns he turns. He pays no heed to God's warning and takes no counsel from God's lessons. All the while, he sees the heedless abruptly taken from her to a place from which there is no return, and he sees the terror they had denied descend upon them. He sees them leave the world in which they had taken comfort, and move to the afterlife as they had been warned.

The horror that descends upon the dying person is beyond words. As the anguished convulsions of death and the remorseful pangs of loss together bear down upon him, his extremities begin to lose feeling, and his color changes. Then, death penetrates further and prevents him from speech. He lies among his family, seeing them with his eyes, hearing them with his ears, still able to discern, still able to understand. He can think only about his wasted life and squandered time. He remembers the wealth he has amassed, both licit and illicit, from honest and dubious sources. The sins he has gathered now weigh him down, now, when he is about to leave everything behind. The people who survive him will enjoy his wealth. Its gratification will belong to another, while the burden will weigh down his back. His debt has come due for payment. He bites on his knuckles, regretting the misdeeds that are now clear to him, caring little for the things he craved all the days of his life. He wishes that the person who envied him his wealth and coveted his property had taken it all! Meanwhile, death continues to penetrate his body and it pierces his hearing. Now he lies among his family, his tongue unable to speak, his ears unable to hear. His eyes go from face to face, he sees their tongues moving but cannot hear their words. Then death tightens its grip. His sight is taken away, just as his hearing had been earlier, and his soul leaves his body. He becomes a corpse lying amid his family, and they recoil from him in fear and back away—he cannot console those who weep or answer those who call out. Then they carry him to a grave marked with lines in the earth. They give him over to his deeds and cease to visit.

1.106.4 Until destiny reaches its term and the affair approaches its ordained hour, when the last of creation has caught up with the first and God's command arrives to renew his creation, he shakes the sky and splits it, convulses the earth and agitates it, plucks out each mountain and uproots it, and, terrified by his majesty and cowed by his power, each crushes the other. He extracts all who are on earth, renewing them after their decay, gathering them after their separation. Then he stands them, each in his place, to be interrogated about deeds and secret acts. He divides them into two groups, blessing the one and punishing the other. He rewards the obedient with nearness to his divine self and with
وحيا الأفعال وجعلهم فريقين أنعم على هؤلاء وأنتقم من أولاء فأما أهل الطاعة فأتهم بهجواره وخلدتهم في داره حيث لا يظلمن النزل ولا يغيرون الحال ولا تمويه الأفراغ ولا نالهم الأسباق ولا تعرض لهم الأخطار ولا تشخصهم الأسفار وأما أهل المصيبة فأزدهم شر دار وغل الأيدي إلى الأعناق وفرن النواصي بالأقدام وألبهم سرايل القفالان ومقطعات النيران في عذاب قد أشدت حر وباب قد أطبق على أهلها في نارها كلب وسبب ساطع وقصيف هائل لا يظلمن مقيمها ولا يفادي أسيها ولا تقسم كبداها لمنة للدار ففنى ولا أجل للقوم فيقضى.

5.1106. من في ذكر النبي صلى الله عليه وسلم قد حشر الدنيا وسجعها وأهون بها وهونها وعلم أن الله زواها عنه اختباراً وسطها لغيره احتقاراً فأعرض عن الدنيا بقلبها وأمات ذكرها من نفسه وأحب أن غيب زيته عن عينه كي لا يدع منها رياض أو يرجع فيها مقامًا. بلغ عن ربه معدراً ونصح لأمته منذرًا. ودعى إلى الجنة مبشرًا. نحن شجرة النبوة ومخط النسلة ومختلف الملائكة ومعادن العلم ونابيع الحكم. ناصرنا ونحن ينتظر الرحمة وعذتنا ومغضنا ينتظر السلوط.

5.1107. ومن خطبة له على السلام إن أفضل ما توصل به الموسمون إلى الله سيحنائه الإيمان به وبرسوله والجهاد في سبيله فإن ذروة الإسلام وكلمة الإخلاص فإنها الفطرة وإقام الصلاة فإنها الملاء وإيابة الزكاة فإنها فيضحة واجبة وصوم شهر رمضان فإنها جنة من العقاب وحج البيت واعماره.
eternal life in his abode, which its inhabitants never leave, where their condition never changes, misfortunes never befall, illness never takes hold, dangers never approach, and journeys never displace. He locks up the disobedient in the abode of horrors. He shackles their hands to their necks, binds their forelocks to their feet, clothes them in garments of pitch, and dresses them in robes of fire. He throws them into the chamber of torture, whose heat endlessly sears, whose door remains bolted, and whose blaze rages with rabid hunger, clamorous tumult, sheets of flame, and terrifying thunder. Its resident never leaves, its captive is never ransomed, its shackles are never broken. This abode has no limit, so it never ceases to be. Its people have no lifespan, so the terror never ends.

1.106.5 From the same oration in praise of the Prophet:
He viewed the world with contempt, demeaned it, disparaged it, and deemed it lowly. He recognized that God had deliberately turned the world away from him while allowing it ungrudgingly to many, so he turned his heart away from it and drove all thoughts of it from his mind. He preferred that its ornaments be absent from his eyes, so he would not be tempted to don its splendid garments or long for it to be his permanent residence. He conveyed his Lord’s message and proved his claim, instructed his community and gave them warning, and called them to paradise with glad tidings of its bliss.

We are the tree of prophecy, the station of God’s message, and the place where angels alight. We are mines of knowledge and springs of wisdom. Whoever supports and loves us should expect God’s mercy. Whoever bears us enmity or malice should expect God’s assault.

1.107 From an oration by ‘Alī:
The deeds that bring you closest to God are the following: belief in him and his messenger; jihad in his path, for it is Islam’s summit; the testament of sincerity—⟨There is no god but God⟩—for it is the natural state; performing the ritual prayer, for it is the way of truth; offering the alms levy, for it is a man-

1 Excerpt from one of ‘Alī’s famous sermons, named in several sources as “The Brocade (Dībāj) Oration” that begins with the line, “Praise to God, creator of the world” (الحمد لله فاطر الخلق), of which another part is §1.83.4 (Harrānī, Tuḥaf, 149–150). The first paragraph is attributed to the Prophet Muhammad in Ya‘qūbī, Tārīkh, 2:96–97. “The testament of sincerity” (kalimat al-ikhlāṣ) is ⟨There is no god but God⟩ (Lā ilāha illā Allāh), the central creed of Islam, which I have added in the translation for clarity. The “natural state” (fitrah) is to believe in God, according to the prophetic hadith stating that each human child at the time of birth is Muslim.
فإنّها ينفيان الفقر ويرحّبان الذنب وصلة الرحم فإنّها مُترأة في المال ومنسأة في الأجل وصدقاء السّرّ فإنّها تكسّر الخطبيئة وصدقة العلانية فإنّها تدفع ميّة السوء وصنائع المعروف فإنّها تقي مصارع الهموان.

أفيضوا في ذكر الله فإنّه أحسن الذكر وآرغوا فيما وعد المتّقين فإنّه وعد أصدق الوعد وألقياه بديهي نبّم فإنّه أفضل الهدي وآستّوا بستّته فإنّه أهدى السّن وتعلّموا القرآن فإنّه ربيع القلوب وآستّروا بسورة فإنّه شفاء الصدور وأحسنها تلاوته فإنّه أفعّ القمص. وإنّ العالم العامل يفبر عليه كلامه الحائر الذي لا يستفْق من جهله بل الخجّة عليه أعظم والحسرة له ألم وهو عند الله عزّ وجل.

108. ومن خطبة له عليه السلام: 108.1 أمّا بعد فإنّي أحدثكم الدنيا فإنّها حُلفة خضرة حُلت بالشهوات وتحبيت بالعاجلة وراقّت بالقليل وتجلّت بالآمال وترزّبت بالغِرور لَن تدوم حَرتهم ولا تؤمن بعِطّها غرارا ضرارة حائلة زائلة نافدة باذة أكالّة غوالة لا تدعو إذا تأعت إلى أمنيّة أهل الرغبة فيها والرضى بها أن تكون كما قال الله سبحانه: "كَأِيَّ الْأَزْنَانِ مِنِ السّمَاءِ فَأُخْتَلِفَ بِنَبِاتٍ أَرْضٍ" فاصبحهُ شِيْدًا نَظُرُوهُ الرّياح وَكَانَ اللّهُ عَلَى كُلِّ شَيْءٍ مُّقَبِّدًا. لَمْ يَكُن أَرْمَؤُ مِنْهَا فِي حَيْبَةٍ إلَّا أَعْقِبَتْهُ بعدها عُرْبة ولم يَلَقَّ مِن سَرَائِهِ بَطَنًا إلَّا منحته من ضرأها ظهرا ولم تُطلَّ فيه ديمة رخاء إلا هتنت عليه مزنة بلاء وحري إذا أصبحت له منتصرة أن تنسي له متَّكّرة وإن جانبه منها أعزوذب وأحلولى أمرّ منها جانبه فأوجب لا ينال أمرّ من غضارتها رغبا إلا أرهّقه من نواياه تعبا ولا يميز منها في جناح أمن إنّا أصبح على قدام خوف. غرارا غرار ما فيها فإنّها فان من عليها لا خير في شيء من أزوادها إلا النقر من أفلّ منها استكرّما يؤمنه ومن استكرّ منها استكرّ بما يوقيه وزال عمّا قليل عنه كم من واقي به ففجعته وذي طماًةنها إلى
dated obligation; fasting in the month of Ramadan, for it is a shield from God’s punishment; performing the hajj and the ‘umrah pilgrimage to Mecca, for they dispel poverty and wash away sins; fostering close ties with kin, for it increases wealth and prolongs life; giving alms in secret, for it expiates transgressions; disbursing alms in public, for it wards off horrible forms of death; and acts of charity, for they protect you from dishonor and shame.

Fill yourself with God’s remembrance for it is the best remembrance. Wish for everything he promised the pious, for his promise is the truest of promises. Follow the guidance of your Prophet, for it is the best guidance. Follow his Sunnah, for it is the most righteous of practices. Learn the Qur’an, for it is the heart’s springtime. Heal yourselves by its light, for it is a cure for souls. And recite it beautifully, for it is the most beneficial exhortation. A learned man who acts contrary to his learning is as bad as the ignorant and perplexed man who never wakes from his stupor. In fact, the case against him is stronger, his anguish more binding, and his culpability greater before God.

1.108 From an oration by ʿAlī:

1.108.1 I warn you against this world, for it is sweet and lush and surrounded by temptations. It breeds love for the here and now and excites wonder with its trifles, it is adorned with false hopes and embellished with deceptions, its joy does not last and its trauma is relentless. A ghoulish devourer, it deceives, harms, changes, ceases, wanes, perishes, and consumes. At the very moment that it fulfills your dearest hopes, it becomes—as God Most High has said—«like water that we sent down from the sky: the earth’s vegetation drew from it, then became dry straw, and was scattered by the winds. God has power over all things.» The world never gives a man joy without following it with tears, it never bestows happiness without following it with harm, it never sprinkles soft ease without following it with a cloudburst of calamity. If it braces him in the morning it rejects him in the evening, if one of its aspects is sweet and sugary the other is bitter and pestilential, if it bestows fresh bounties it oppresses later with oppressive misfortunes; a man does not pass the night sheltered under its wing without waking up under its pinion of fear. The world deceives and all in it is deception. The world will perish and all upon it will perish. There is no good in any of its provisions save piety. Those who take little from the world gather stores of protection, while those who amass its wares hoard that which will destroy, whose benefit will soon cease.

1 On the pulpit in Basra, immediately after the Battle of the Camel in 36/356. Kulaynī, Kāfī, 8:256.

2 Qurʾan, Kahf 18:45.
قد صرعته وذي أبيه قد جعلته حقيرةً وذي خُنُوة قدر ردها ذيلًا سلطانها دُوَّل وعينها رِقًّيّة وعذبها أجاج وحلوها صير وغذاؤها سِراب وأسبابها رماد حبي بعرس موت وصحبها بعرض سقيف ملكها مسلوب وعُزيزها مغلوب وموفورها منكوب وجارها محروب.

أسلمت في مساكن من كان قبلكم أطول أعمارًا وأبقى أثوارًا وأبعد آمالًا وأعدت عديدًا وأكشف جنودًا تعبدوا للدنيا أو يعبدهم وأثروا أو أي إيتار ثم ظعُنوا عنها بغير زاد مبلغ وَلا ظهر قاطع. فهل بلغكم أن الدنيا سحت لهم نفساً بذلداً أو أعانتهم بموعده أو أحسنت لهم صحبة بل أرهتهم بالقوادح وأوحتهم بالقوارع وضعضعتهم بالنواب خُرَّتهم للمناخ ووظفتم بالمناسك وأعانتم عليهم ريب الملون. فقد رأيتون تكرّها لمن دان لها وأثرها وأخذتهم حتى ظعبوا عنها لفراق الأبد هل زودتهم إلا السُعْب أو أحلىهم إلا الضنك أو نورت لهم إلا الظلمة أو أعقبتهم إلا الندامة أفهذ تؤثرون أم إليها تطمئنون أم عليها تحرصون فنست الدار المن لم يَبَعها ولم يكن فيها على وجل منها.

فأعلمو وإنتم تعلمون بأنكم تاركوها وظاعون عنها وانتظروا فيها بالذين «قالو من أشد من قوة» حملوا إلى قبورهم فلا يدعون ركابًا وأنزلوا فلا يدعون ضيفانًا وجعل لهم من الصفح أجنان ومن التراب أفكان ومن الرفات جيران فهم جيرة لا يجرون داعياً ولا يبكون ضُرٌماً ولا يبالون مُنتَبة إن جيدوا لم يفرحوا وإن فتحوا لم يقطعوا جميعهم وإحدم وحيدة وهم أبعد متدالون لا يزاورون وقربون لا يتقربون حماة قد ذهب تأضغانهم وجعلوا قد مات أُحياتهم لا يخشى جعفهم ولا يرجى دفعهم
The world strikes those who trust it and fells those who place in it their faith. How many grandees has it humbled! How many arrogant men has it debased! Its power goes around in turns, its life is turbid, its water is brackish, its sweets are filled with bitter juice, its nourishment is poison, its ropes are decayed, its living are targets for death, its healthy are targets for illness, its kingdom will be pillaged, its mighty will be vanquished, its wealthy will be afflicted, and its neighbors will be plundered.

1.108.2 Do you not dwell in the abodes of those who came before you and enjoyed longer lives, who left behind more lasting monuments, had lengthier aspirations, were more profuse in number, and led vaster armies? They worshipped the world abjectly, they gave it preference, fully and truly, but they left it without sufficient provisions for the journey, or even a mount to carry them on its back. Have you ever heard that the world in its generosity let a single soul escape in lieu of ransom, or that it gave them any form of help, or offered to accompany them? No. It crushed them with catastrophes, weakened them with calamities, shook them with misfortunes, ground their noses in the dust, trampled them under its hooves, and equipped fate to bring them down. You have seen how it rejected those who bowed before it, gave it preference, and offered it loyalty. Their departure is an eternal separation. Did the world supply them with anything other than thirst, house them in anything other than narrow graves, give them anything other than dark gloom, or requite them with anything other than regret? Is this the same world that you too favor above all else, put your faith in, covet? What a wretched abode for those who do not view it with suspicion, who are not on their guard!

1.108.3 Know this—and you do—that you too will leave the world, you too will depart. Take lessons from the fate of those who «said: is anyone mightier than we are?» They have been carried to their graves but cannot be called wayfarers, they have been laid there to rest but cannot be called guests, they have been covered in dirt and shrouded by earth. Decaying bones are their neighbors—neighbors who cannot answer those who call out to them, offer protection from attackers, or care about their mourners’ wails. If they get rain they do not rejoice, if they encounter drought they do not despair. They are together yet each is alone, neighbors yet so far distant from one another, so close yet they do not visit, so near yet they cannot meet, senior commanders whose hostilities are a thing of the past, rash youths whose hate and rancor

---

1 Qur’an, Fuṣṣilat 41:15.
استبدلوا بظهير الأرض بطناً وبالسعة ضيقًا وألأت هنور ظلماً سفاهها كما فارقوها حفاة عراة قد طعنوا عليها بأعمالهم إلى الحياة الدائمة والدار البارقة كما قال سبحانه

١٠٩٠٠٠. ومن خطة له عليه السلام ذكر فيها ملك الموت وتوقيه النفس هل يحسّ به إذا دخل منزلًا أم هل تراه إذا توقّق أحدًا بل كيف يتوقّق الجنين في خَبوتهُ، أمه أبلغ عليه من بعض جوارحها أم الروح أجابته بإذن ربيّها أم هو ساكن معه في أحشاءها، كيف يصف إله من يعجز عن صفة مخلوق مثله.

١٠٩٠٠٠. ومن خطة له عليه السلام وأحدّركم الدنيا فإنها منزل قلعة وليست بدار مغرة قد زينت بغروبها وغرّت زينتها دار هانت على ربيّها نخل فلها بها وخرجها بذرها وحياتها بموتها وحولها بمرّها لم يصفها الله لأوليائه ولم يضن بها على أعدائها خيرها زهيد وشرها عثيد وجمعها ينفد وملكها يسلب وعمرها يخرب مما خيردار تنقض نفس البناء وعمري فناء الزاد ومقدّمة تنقطع أنقاص منبر يأجلا وفقه ما أفرض الله علّيكم من طلبكم وسألوه من أداء حقّه ما سألكم وأجعوس دعوة الموت آذانكم قبل أن يدعى بكم إن الزاهدين في الدنيا ينكب قلوبهم وإن ضحكوا ويسبحّ حزينهم وإن فرحوا وlickr مقتهم أنفسهم وإن أغتبطوا بما رؤسا قد غاب عن قلوبكم ذكر الآجال وحذرتكم كواحد الآمال فصارت الدنيا أمك بكم من الآخرة والاعجلة أذهب لكم من الأجلة، وإنما أنتم إخوان على دين الله ما فرّق
have been swept away, their blows no longer feared, their protection no longer sought. They surrendered the back of the earth for its belly, a vast space for narrow straits, family for exile, and light for darkness. They left the world as they had come, barefoot and naked, departing with their deeds to eternal life and the everlasting abode. For, as God says, «as I brought the first creation into being, so I shall bring it forth anew—this is my pledge, and I shall bring it to pass.»

1.109 From an oration by ‘Alī in which he spoke of the Angel of Death and the manner in which he takes souls:

Do you sense his presence when he enters a home, or see him when he takes someone away? In fact, do you know how he takes the life of a fetus from inside its mother’s womb? Does he enter through one of her limbs, or does its spirit answer the angel with God’s permission, or is he residing with it already inside the mother? How can we who are incapable of describing a creature like us aspire to describe our creator?

1.110 From an oration by ‘Alī:

I warn you of this world: it is a home from which you will be uprooted, not an abode where you own the right to pasture, a dwelling adorned in deception, deceiving with its adornments. It is worth nothing in the eyes of its Lord, which is why he has intertwined the lawful in it with the unlawful, the good with the bad, life with death, and sweet with bitter. God has not made the world pure for his friends to enjoy, nor begrudged it to his enemies, for its good is meager, its evil ever present, its goods are temporary, its realm awaits pillage, and its habitations anticipate ruin. What good is a house that will crumble as a timeworn edifice, a life that will be exhausted like provisions, and a timespan that will be completed like a journey? When you supplicate God, include a prayer for his help in undertaking his mandates and ask him to aid you in giving him his due. Bend your ears to death’s summons before your name is called. True renunciants live thus: their hearts weep even when they laugh, their grief is intense even when they are joyful, and their self-condemnation is great even though they are delighted with what they have been given. But your hearts have lost awareness of your imminent end and are filled with false hopes; the world controls you to the detriment of the hereafter; the here-and-now has distanced you from the afterlife. You are brethren in God’s religion, but foul intentions and evil

---

1 Qur’ān, Anbiyā’ 21:104.
2 Excerpt from a long oration on God’s unity (tawḥīd). B 448.
بينكم إلا خبث السراي وسوء الضمائر فلا توازون ولا تنصحون ولا تبادلون ولا توادون ما لكم تحرون في السير من الدنيا تدركونه ولا يغزكم الكثير من الآخرة تجر مونه ويتقل لكم السير من الدنيا يفوتم حتّى يتبين ذلك في وجوهكم وقيلة صبركم عمّا زور بها عنكم كما كأنها دار مقامكم وكم منثىً تعليكم وكم يمنع أحدكم أن يستقبل أخاه بما يخفف من عيبه إلا معرفة أن يستقبل بجعله قد تكافح عليه رفض الآجل وحب العاجل وصار دين أحدكم لعقة على لسانه صنيع من قد فرغ من عمله وأحزوزه سيده.

ومن خطبة له عليه السلام

١.١١١

ابن منعم أحمد بن النعم والنعم بالشمر. نحمده على رحمة ما نحمده على بلائه.

وتنعيه على هذه النفوس التي عما أمرت به السراي إلى ما نهبت عنه. ونتفقره ماماً يحاط به عليه وأحساه كتابه علم غير قاصر وتكتاب غير مغامر. وتنوعه به إيمان من عين الغيوب ووقف في الموعد إيمانً فنفي إخلاصه الشرك وقيدته الشك. وشهد أن لا إله إلا الله وحده لا شريك له وأن محمداً عبده ورسوله شهادتين تصدعان القول وترفعان

العمل لا يخف ميزان توضبان فيه ولا يلتح ميزان ترفعان عنه.

١.١١١.٢

وصيبكم عباد الله بتوقي الله التي هي الزاد وبها المعاد زاد مبلغ ومعاد منحج دعا إليها أسعد داع ووعاه خير واع فأسمع داعيها وفاز واعيًا، عباد الله إن تقوى الله جمع أولاء الله محارمه وألزمت قلوبهم مخافة حتى أسبرت لياليهم وأظلمتهم هوا جبرهم.
purposes have divided you—you have stopped supporting one another, counseling one another, giving to one another, or bearing one another affection. Why are you so overjoyed when you win the world’s baubles, yet not grieved when deprived of the hereafter’s bounty? How are you so exasperated by the loss of these trifles that your anger, your frustration, is plain on your face? You act as though you will always live here, as though this wealth will always remain yours! The only thing that stops you from confronting your brother or disclosing his failings is your fear that he will do the same. You have both rejected the afterlife and devoted yourselves to the present. Religion to you has become a dollop for your tongue to lick up, as though you had already completed your work and satisfied your master.

1.111 From an oration by ʿAlī:¹

1.111.1 Praise God who has linked praise with favors and favors with thanks. We praise him for his blessings, as we praise him for his trials. We ask him to rally our hearts, which are slow to undertake his command and quick to rush into what he has forbidden. We ask his forgiveness for everything we have done that his knowledge encompasses and his inventory includes—that knowledge never falls short, and that inventory never omits. We believe in him, as though we have already seen the deep mysteries and attained the promised reward—our sincerity refuses to assign partners to him, and our certainty rejects all doubt. We bear witness that there is no god but God, he has no partner, and Muhammad is his servant and messenger, a testimony that assures our prayers’ and our deeds’ ascent to God—no scale on which it is placed is light, no scale from which it is absent has weight.

1.111.2 Servants of God, I counsel you to be conscious of him, to be pious. Piety is the best provision for the journey and the best means of return, for it is the provision that will get you to your destination and the return it promises is assured. A perfect caller has called toward it and a perfect listener has taken it to heart—that caller was effective, and that listener will win entry to paradise. Servants of God, his consciousness has protected his chosen ones from trans-

¹ Tūsī (Amālī, 443) prefaces §1.111.2 by saying, “The Commander of the Faithful would say,” indicating that the theme and words were frequent in ʿAlī’s oration; Naḥḥās (ʿUmdah, 1:353) cites it in an oration attributed to Zayd ibn ʿAlī.
فأخذوا الراحة بالنصب والري بالظلمة وأستقرروا الأجل فبادروا العمل وكذبوا الأمل فلا حظوا الأجل. ثم إن الدنيا دار فناء وعند وغيّر وعبر فن الفناء أن النهر موتر قوته لا تخطئ سهامه ولا تتوس عرجة حرد الحبي بالموت والصحيح بالسقم والناجي بالعطبل آكل لا يشبع وشرب لا ينقي ومن العنان أن المرء يجمع ما لا يأكل ويبني ما لا يسكن ثم يخرج إلى الله لا مالاً عمل ولا بناء نقل ومن غيرها أن ترك مرحوم مغبوط والمبوت مرحوماً ليس ذلك إلا نعيمًا زل وبرساة زيل ومن عربها أن المرء يشرف على أمله فيقطعه حضور أجره فلا مال يدرك ولا مؤمل يترك. فسبحان الله ما أغر سرورها وأظمأ ريها وأضحي فيها لا جاء يرد ولا ماض يرتد. فسبحان الله ما أقرب الحي من الميت للحاقه به وأبعد الميت من الحي لأنقطعه عنه.

1.11.3 إنه ليس شيء بشر من الشر إلا عاقبه وليس شيء خير من الخير إلا ثوابه. وكل شيء من الدنيا سعيه أعظم من عينه وكل شيء من الآخرة عينه أعظم من سعيه فليكتم من العيان السماع ومن الغيب الخير وأعلموا أن ما نقص من الدنيا وزاد في الآخرة خير مما نقص من الآخرة وزاد في الدنيا فكم من منقوص راحب ومزيد خاسر إن الذي أردتم به أوسع من الذي نهبتم عنه وما أحرك لكم أكثر مما حرمت عليهم فأذروا ما قل لما أكثر وما ضاق لما أصلع. قد تكبت لكم بالرızق وأمرتم بالعمل فلا يكون المضمون لكم طلبوا أولى بم من المفروض عليك عمله مع أنك والله لقد أعرضت الشاك ودخل البقين حتى كأن الذي ضمن لكم قد فرض عليك وكان الذي فرض عليك قد وضع عنكم. فبادروا العمل وِخافوا بغثة الأجل فإنه لا يرجى من رجعة العمر ما يرجى من
gressing, and infused their hearts with fear, it has made their nights wakeful and filled their days with thirst, so that they find comfort in toil and satiety in thirst. Aware of approaching death, they hasten to do good. Denying false hopes, they keep death in front of their eyes. Next, know that the world is a place of perishing, weariness, vicissitudes, and instruction. Perishing is this: fate stands stretching his bow, his arrows do not miss, their wounds do not heal; he strikes the living with death, the healthy with illness, and the one who flees with destruction; an eater whose appetite is never satiated, a drinker whose thirst is never quenched. Weariness is this: a man gathers food he will not eat and builds edifices he will not inhabit; he leaves the world and returns to God with no property to carry, no edifice to transport. Vicissitudes are these: you see the pitied become the object of envy, and the envied become the object of pity, simply because of a blessing that has disappeared or a misfortune that has arrived. Lessons are these: a man is about to see his aspirations fulfilled when they are severed by the ending of his life; no aspiration is attained, no aspirer is left alive. Praise God! How deceptive are the world’s pleasures! How parching its drink! How scorching its shade! No one who arrives is turned back, while no one who leaves can return. Praise God! How close are the living to the dead, for they will soon be with them, but how far the dead from the living, for they have been cut off from them forever!

1.11.3 There is nothing worse than evil except its punishment, and nothing better than good except its reward. Everything in the world that you hear about is greater than what you see, while everything in the hereafter that you will see is greater than what you hear. Hearing should suffice you, there is no need to see. Reports should suffice you, even without direct witness. Know that a thing that decreases your share of the world but increases your share of the hereafter is better than a thing that decreases your share of the hereafter while increasing your share of the world. Many a person with a decreased share of the world earns good profit, while many a person with an increased share of the world loses everything. What you are commanded to do is more capacious than what you are prohibited from, and the things that are lawful for you are more numerous than the things that are unlawful, so abandon the little for the large, the narrow for the wide. God has guaranteed your sustenance and commanded you to do good, so let not the thing that is guaranteed deserve more effort from you than what is mandated upon you. But, by God, doubt has appeared in your midst, your conviction has become tainted; you act as though seeking the sustenance guaranteed for you is a mandatory act of worship, while the worship that is actually mandated is no longer required! Hasten to do good and fear the sudden arrival of death. There is no hope for return of life, while there is always
رَجُعَةَ الرَّزَقِ ما فَاتَ الْيَوْمِ مِنَ الرَّزَقِ رَجُي غَدًا زِيَادَتِهِ وَمَا فَاتَ أَمَسَ مِنَ الْعُمَرِ لَمْ يُرِجَّ الْيَوْمَ رَجُعَتِهِ الرَّجَاءَ مَعَ الجَانِيِّ وَالْيَأْسِ مَعَ الْمَاتِ فَأَقَمَ اللَّهُ حَقَّ تَقَاعُدِهِ وَلَا تَمَوتُ إِلَّا وَأَنْتُ مُسْلِمُونّ.

وَمِنْ خَطِيطِهِ عِلْيَهِ الْسَلَامِ فِي الْاِسْتِسْقاَةِ

اللَّهُمَّ قد أَنْصَحَّا جَبَالِنا وَأَغْرَّرَتْ أَرْضَنا وَهَمَّتْ دِوَابَّنا وَقَلِبَّتْ فِي مُرَافِإِهَا وَجَعَّتْ جَيْحَ الْكَثَّالَى عَلَى أَوْلَادَهَا وَمَلَّتْ التَرْدَدُّ فِي مَرَافِإِهَا وَالْحَنْيِنَّ إِلَى مَوَارِدَهَا. اللَّهُمَّ فَأَرْحَمَ حَيَّرَتَهَا فِي مَذَاها وَأَنْبِنَى وَهَلاَكُهَا. اللَّهُمَّ خَرَجْنَ اِلَيْكُ خَيْرَتُكْ وَقَدْ أَتَكْرِكَ عَلَى نَحْرِ أَقْدَمِ أَبْنِيَاتِهِ الْأَنفُسِ وَأَخْلَفَتْهَا مَخَالِفَ الْجَوَّ فَكَنِّتْ الرَّجَاءَ لِلْمُبَّنَىِّ وَالْبَلَاغِ لِلْبَلَىَّمَسَّتْ. نَدْعُوُكَ وَإِلَيْكَ كَانَ فِي الْأَرْضِ تَضْفَنُ اللهِ بِمَعْنَىٰ عَمَّا وَمَعَهُ الْأَمْرِ وَنَفْعَ الْأَلْفِ وَلَا تُذْكَرُ عَلَى أَنْفُسِهِ الْأَمْرِ وَلَا تُذْكَرُ عَلَى أَنْفُسِهِ الْأَمْرِ. إِنَّهُ ذُو حَقٍّ وَكَانَ ذُو حَقٍّ وَكَانَ ذُو حَقٍّ وَكَانَ ذُو حَقٍّ وَكَانَ ذُو حَقٍّ وَكَانَ ذُو حَق١.

1.112

ءاقَستُسِّيَّ مَا لَى وَمَا لَى مَنْ لَيْلَةَ الْإِسْلاَمِ مِنْ نَيْمٍ مَّثْلَهُ لِيُذْكَرَ عَلَى نَيْمِهَا وَلَا تُذْكَرَ عَلَى نَيْمِهَا وَلَا تُذْكَرَ عَلَى نَيْمِهَا وَلَا تُذْكَرَ عَلَى نَيْمِهَا وَلَا تُذْكَرَ عَلَى نَيْمِهَا وَلَا تُذْكَرَ عَلَى نَيْمِهَا وَلَا تُذْكَرَ عَلَى نَيْمِهَا وَلَا تُذْكَرَ عَلَى نَيْمِهَا وَلَا تُذْكَرَ عَلَى نَيْمِهَا وَلَا تُذْكَرَ عَلَى نَيْمِهَا وَلَا تُذْكَرَ عَلَى نَيْمِهَا وَلَا تُذْكَرَ عَلَى نَيْمِهَا وَلَا تُذْكَرَ عَلَى نَيْمِهَا وَلَا تُذْكَرَ عَلَى نَيْمِهَا وَلَا تُذْكَرَ عَلَى نَيْمِهَا وَلَا تُذْكَرَ عَلَى نَيْمِهَا وَلَا تُذْكَرَ عَلَى نَيْمِهَا وَلَا تُذْكَرَ عَلَى نَيْمِهَا وَلَا تُذْكَرَ عَلَى نَيْمِهَا وَلَا تُذْكَرَ عَلَى نَيْمِهَا وَلَا تُذْكَرَ عَلَى نَيْمِهَا وَلَا تُذْكَرَ عَلَى نَيْمِهَا وَلَا تُذْكَرَ عَلَى نَيْمِهَا وَلَا تُذْكَرَ عَلَى نَيْمِهَا وَلَا تُذْكَرَ عَلَى نَيْمِهَا وَلَا تُذْكَرَ عَلَى نَيْمِهَا وَلَا تَمَوتُ إِلَّا وَأَنْتُ مُسْلِمُونّ.
hope for return of sustenance; what is lost today of your sustenance may come back increased tomorrow, but what was lost yesterday of your time will never, ever return. Hope lies in the future, despair inhabits the past, so «be conscious of God as you should, and make sure you die submitting to him.»

1.112 From an oration by ʿAlī beseeching God for rain:
God, our mountains are parched, and our plains have filled with dust. Our sheep have gone mad with thirst and stand dazed in their pens. They moan like bereaved mothers, too exhausted to look for pasture or search out waterholes. God, have mercy on their panic when they head out, and their sad cries when they return! God, we have come to you in this open space because lean years of drought, like emaciated camels, have hemmed us in, and clouds that promised rain approached but turned away. You alone are the sufferer’s hope and the petitioner’s provider. We call out to you in this time when people have lost heart, when rainclouds have withheld their bounty, and grazing animals have perished. Do not hold us hostage to our deeds or punish us for our sins. Unfold your mercy for us with torrential clouds, abundant herbage, and wondrous vegetation. Send us rain in a heavy downpour that revives what had died and restores what was lost. God, we beseech you for water that is reviving, quenching, perfect, universal, fragrant, blessed, wholesome, and fertile. Let it bring forth plants that flourish, trees full of fruit, and leaves fresh and green. Let it revive your weak servants and renew your barren lands. God, we beseech you for water that makes our highlands verdant, our lowlands lush, our countryside fertile, our fruits grow, and our sheep thrive. Let it irrigate our farthest lands and soak our nearby areas. Shower your vast grace and rich blessings on us, your destitute human creatures, and your forsaken beasts. Send us a soaking, gushing, drenching sky in which one deluge drives away another and raindrops jostle for space—a sky whose lightning does not deceive, whose clouds do not disappoint, whose puffs do not dissipate, and whose drizzle does not usher in cold, barren winds. Let its fertility irrigate the lands struck by famine, let its felicity revive the people hit by drought. You are the one who sends rain after all hope is gone, you are the one who pours down your mercy, you are the protector, the one worthy of all praise!

1 Qurʾan, Āl ʿImrān 3:102.
2 Ar. dawābbunā, lit. livestock, or pack animals. The use of the term marābiḍ, which are pens for sheep, rather than mawāṭin, which are pens for camels (Ḥ 7:264), appears to specify sheep.
3 The last two lines are modified from Qurʾan, Shūrā 42:28.
تفسير ما في هذه الخطبة من الغريب قوله عليه السلام "أنصحت جبالي" أي تشفقت من الحول. يقال "أنصح الثوب" إذا أنشق ويقال أيضاً "أنصح النبت" وصاح وسأح إذا جف ويس. وقوله "همام دواببا" أي عطست والهَيام العطش. وقوله "حدابر السنين" جمع حِدَابَر.

وهي الناقة التي أنشد فيها السير فلما، في السنة التي فضا فيها الحدب. قال ذو الرمة:

"حدابرُ ما تَفْسَكُ إلا مَناخَةٌ على الخسف أو نرمي بها، بذلًا قُفْراً"

وقوله "ولا قزع ربابها" القزع القطع الصغار المتفرقة من السحاب. وقوله "ولا شفان ذهبها" فإن تقديره "ولا ذات شفان ذهبها". والشفان الرج الباردة والذهب الأمطار اللينة حذف ذات لعلم السامع به.

1.113.1 ومن خطابة له عليه السلام

أرسله داعياً إلى الحق وشاهدًا على الخلق فبلغ رسالات ربه غير وان ولا مقصر وجاءه في الله أعداءه غير وان ولا معذر إمام من أثناي وبصر من أهتدي.

1.113.2 ولو تعلمون ما أعلم ما تُوْي عنكم غيبة إذا أخرجتم إلى الصُدادات تبكون على أعمالكم وتتلدمون على أنفسكم ولترككم أموالكم لا حارس لها ولا خالف عليها وهبتم كل أمر منكم نفسه لا يلتفت إلى غيرها ولكنكم نسبتم ما ذُكِّرتم وأمنت ما حذرتكم فتأبه عنكم رأيك وشنت عليكم أمركم لوددت أن الله فرق بيني وبينكم وألحقي بمم هو أحقُّ بي منكم قوم الله ميامين الرآي مراجيح الحلم متقاويل بالحق مُتارِيك اللذين مضا قُدماً على الطريقة وأوجفوا على المحجّة فظفروا بالعقب الدائمة والكرامة.

البحر: الطويل
Raḍī: An explanation of the rare words in the oration: ‘Alī’s saying “our mountain meadows are parched (inṣāḥat)” means they have cracked from the effects of the drought; the Arabs use the same verb for a garment if it is torn, and a plant if it dries up and withers. ‘Alī’s saying “our sheep have gone mad with thirst (hāmat)” means they are thirsty; huyām means thirst. ‘Alī’s saying “emaciated camels of drought (ḥadābīr)” uses the plural of ḥidbār, a female camel made gaunt by hard travel, to which he compared a drought-stricken year. Dhū al-Rummah said:

Emaciated camels (ḥadābīr)
fodderless in the night when they kneel down to rest, or ridden hard into the desert wastes.

In the phrase “whose puffs (qaza’)) do not dissipate,” qaza’ are small and scattered wisps of cloud. The phrase “whose drizzle does not usher in barren, cold winds (shaffānin dhihābūhā)” actually means “whose drizzle is not a bearer of cold, barren winds”; shaffān is a cold, barren wind, and dhihāb are light showers of rain; the word “bearer (dhāt)” is elided because the hearer would know it is implied.

1.113 From an oration by ‘Alī:

1.113.1 God sent Muḥammad to call toward truth and bear witness to people. He conveyed his Lord’s messages, untiring and unstinting. He battled God’s enemies, unflagging and unfaaltering. He is the leader of the pious and the eyes of the righteous.

1.113.2 If you knew what I know of the mysteries hidden from you, you would run out into the wilderness, weeping over your deeds, and striking your breasts, leaving your property without guard or protector. Every man would be absorbed in his own apprehensions and not spare a single thought for anyone else. But no! You have forgotten what you were told and become complacent about what you were warned. You have gone astray and fallen into total chaos. O, how I wish that God would deliver me from you and unite me with those who deserve my companionship! They, by God, were people of felicitous vision, grave maturity, and truthful speech, people who shunned treachery, advanced on the path, and raced on the road, who won everlasting life and gracious bounty. By God,

---

1 Excerpt from a Kufa oration in which ‘Alī attempted to muster his supporters against the Syrians (B 456). Azhari (Tahdhīb, s.v. “Kh-D-R”) says it was delivered during ‘Alī’s final days, thus in 40/661. Ṭūsī (Miṣbāḥ, 380–381) describes it as a Friday sermon.
الباردة. أما والله ليسلمكم غلام تقيف الديال الياك يأكل خضركم وذيب
نحتمكم إيا أبا وذحة.

والوذحة الخنفساء. وهذا القول يوئه إلى الحجج وله مع الوذحة حديث ليس هذا موضع
ذكره.

ومن كلام له عليه السلام
فلما أموال بذاتها للذي رزقتها ولا أنفس خاطرتم بها للذي خلقها تكرمون بسم الله على
عباده ولا تكرمون الله في عباده فاعتبروا بنزولكم منزل من كان قبلكم وانقطاعكم عن
أصل إخواكم.

ومن كلام له عليه السلام
أمتن الأنصار على الحق والإخوان في الدين والجنين يوم الماض والبطانة دون الناس بكم
أضرب المدير وأرجو طاعة المقبل فأعينوني بمناصحة جليلة من الغي سليمة من الريب
فوالله إني لأولي الناس بالناس.

1.114
1.115

الشريف الرضي - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
a swaggering, despotic youth from Thaqīf will take control over you. He will devour your green grass and melt down your fat-tail. Come on, then, you piece of dung on a sheep’s butt!\(^1\)

Raḍī: The phrase “you piece of dung on a sheep’s butt” refers to the black beetle, and by this Ḥajjāj means Ḥajjāj: there is a long story about him and a beetle, but; this is not the place to tell it.\(^2\)

1.114 From an address by Ṭaḥṣīb:
You don’t spend your wealth for the one who has provided it or risk your lives as you should for the one who has created you. You claim honor in God’s name from his servants, yet you don’t honor God in your treatment of his servants. Be warned! You reside in the homes of those who went before you. Your rope is severed from them, the source that connected you with your brethren.

1.115 From an address by Ṭaḥṣīb:
You are my supporters in the cause of truth and my brothers in faith, my shields on the day of combat and my closest associates. Through you, I strike those who turn away, and hope for the obedience of those who come forward. Give me sincere counsel, then, which is pure of deceit, and free of doubt, for, by God, I am the worthiest of the people to lead them.

---

\(^1\) Or: “... you beetle-man!” (abā wadḥaḥah), lit. “O father of—(meaning one who has some close association with)—a wadḥaḥah.” The dictionary meaning of wadḥaḥah is “a piece of dry dung and urine sticking to the wool of a sheep’s butt” (Ibn Manẓūr, Lisān al-ʿArab, s.v. “W-Dh-H”). Raḍī says wadḥaḥah denotes khunfusāʾ (black- or dung-beetle), a denotation, as Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd mentions, not found in the lexicons. Baḥrānī says the term “piece of dung” here indicates the “dung beetle,” due to their similarity in shape and size. These two commentators and Rāwandī agree that the prophecy is about the Umayyad governor of Iraq, Ḥajjāj ibn Yūsuf al-Thaqafi (d. 95/714), explaining the characterization through Ḥajjāj’s phobia of black beetles, or, apparently, his use of those insects to scratch his butt (!) (Ḥ 7:279–281; R 2:22; B 457–458). Mughniyyah (Gh 2:203) says the attribution is due to Ḥajjāj’s swarthy coloring, and his small physical and moral stature.

\(^2\) For the story, see the previous note.

\(^3\) Excerpt from an address by Ṭaḥṣīb to supporters immediately after the Battle of the Camel, presumably in Basra or Kufa, in 36/656 (Ḥ 7:284, after Madāʾinī and Wāqidī). Ṭabarī (Tārīkh, 5:79) places the oration in 37/658 after the arbitration, with Ṭaḥṣīb urging his followers to regroup to fight Muʿawiyah, but the relatively hopeful tone fits better with Ṭaḥṣīb’s other orations in the former context.
1.116 ومن كلام له عليه السلام وقد جمع الناس وحضّهم على الجهاد فسكتوا ملياً فقال ما
بالكم أُخرِسُون أنتم فقال قوم منهم ما أمر المؤمنين إن سرت سرا معاك فقال عليه السلام
ما لكم لا سُدِّدتم لرشد ولا هديتم لقصد أي مثل هذا ينبغي لي أن أخرج إبّما يخرج في
مثل هذا رجل ممن أرضاه من شجاعتكم وذوي بأسكم ولا ينبغي لي أن أدع الجند والمصر
ويت المال وجباية الأرض والقضاء بين المسلمين والنظر في حقوق المطالبين ثم أخرج
في كتبة أتيت أتقلقل تقلقل القدح في الجفير الفارغ وإنما أنا قطب الرحي تدور
عليّ وأنا بمكان فإذا فارقت أستحار مدارها وأضطرب ثفاها. هذا لعمر الله الرأي السوء.
والله لولا رجائي الشهادة عند لقاء العدوّ لو قد حمّ لي لقاؤه لقربت ركابي ثم شخصت
عنكم فلا أطلبكم ما خلت جنوب وشمالي.

1.117 ومن كلام له عليه السلام
تالله لقد علّمت تبليغ الرسالات وإتمام العادات وإتمام الكمات وعندنا أهل البيت أباب
الحكم وضياء الأمل ألا وإن شرائع الدين واحدة وسهلا قاصة من أخذ بها حقي وعمٍّ
ومن وقف عنها صل وندم. اعملوا ليوم تذخر له الذخائر وتبي في السرايبر ومن لا يفعه
1.116 From an address by ‘Alī. ‘Alī instructed the people to assemble and urged them to fight, and they all fell silent. “What is wrong with you? Have you been struck dumb?” he exclaimed angrily. Some people answered, “Commander of the Faithful, if you march, we will march with you,” whereupon ‘Alī thundered:¹

What is wrong with you? What you propose is not the right course or the proper way! Is it fitting in this situation for me to take to the field? The one who should set out is a warrior I choose from your bravest and strongest. I should not abandon the main army, the capital city, the public treasury, collection of revenues, dispensation of justice, or oversight of petitioners’ rights! I should not ride in one battalion to chase another, shaken about like an arrow shaft in an empty quiver! I am the pivot in the grinding stone. It rotates around me while I remain in my place. If I were to abandon it, it would spin out of control and its base would shudder and break. God’s life! This is a terrible proposition! By God, again! Were it not for my hope of earning a martyr’s death when I encounter the enemy—an encounter that is preordained!—I would fetch my camel and ride away. I would not seek you out then for as long as the north and the south winds blow.

1.117 From an address by ‘Alī:

By God! I have been taught the transmission of God’s messages, the fulfillment of his pledges, and the full meaning of his words.² We—the people of his Prophet’s house—possess the keys to wisdom and the light of command. Hark! All trodden paths of religion are as one, its roads lead to the same destination. Whoever traverses them catches up with those who went before and wins God’s favors, and whoever stays back strays from the path and earns regret. Set aside deeds for the day for which all provisions are hoarded, in which all hearts will be tested. If your intelligence does not benefit you now, that which is farther from you is even more out of your reach, and that which is absent is even less accessible.³ Protect yourself from a fire whose heat is intense, whose pit is deep, and

---

¹ Excerpt from an address by ‘Ali in Kufa to supporters, castigating their apathy, in the wake of a Syrian raid on an Iraqi town after the Battle of Nahrawān in 38/658. Ḥ 7:287.

² The first part of the sentence may also be read as “I know about ...” (‘alimtu, vs. ‘ullimtu). The sentence’s referents are as follows: “messages” refers to the Shari‘ah; “pledges” refers to either God’s pledges to his prophets and humankind, or Muḥammad’s pledges that ‘Alī fulfilled on his behalf; and “full meanings of his words” refers to the Qur’an’s inner meaning (ta’wil). Ḥ 7:288–289; R 2:225; B 458–459.

³ Two interpretations: (1) Whoever is not benefitted by his own rationality that is present in him is incapable of being helped by the wits of another who is separate from him and unable to benefit from the mind of a person who is absent from him (Ḥ 7:289–290). (2) One who does not benefit now from the presence of his intelligence, will not benefit from it when it leaves him when death arrives, or afterward, when he faces the conditions of the hereafter (B 459).
حاضرِ أَهْبَّ فُعَازِبَهُ عَنْ أَذَّرْوَغَاهُهُ أَعُوْزَ وَأُنْقَتْوَا نَأْراً حَرَّها شَدِيدٌ وَقَعْرُها بَعْدَ وِلَيْتِهَا حَدِيدٌ
أَلَّا إِنَّ الْلَّسَانَ الصَّالِحَ يَجْعَلُ اللَّهُ لِلَّبَرِّ فِي الْيَوْمِ خِيَرَهُ مِنَ الْمَالِ يُوْرِهُهُ مِنَ لاْيُحْمِدَهُ

1.118 وَمِن كَلمَّةِ لِهَوَهِ الْسَلَامِ وَقَدْ قَامَ رَجُلٌ مِنْ أَصْحَابِهِ فَقَالَ: نَهْتُ نَا عِنْ السَّلَامُ ثُمَّ أَمَرَتْهُ

بَيْنَا فَنَدِرُ أَيْ أَلْيَنَّ أَمْرَ أَرْشَدُ فَصَفَقَ عَلَى السَّلَامِ إِلَى يَدِهِ عَلَى الأَخْرَى ثُمَّ قَاذَلَ حَذَا الْعَقْدَةِ أَمَّا وَلَهُ لُوْلَى أَيْنَ أَمْرَكَ بَا مَتَّي تَمَكَّمَ عَلَى الْمَكَوْرِ الَّذِي يَجْعَلُ اللَّهُ فِيهِ خَيْرًا إِنَّ أَسْتَقْتَمْ مَدَدَيْنَمَمْ وَإِنْ أَعْوَجَيْتِمْ قَوْمَتَكُمْ وَإِنْ أَتِمْ تَنْدَارِكَتْكِمْ

لَكَانَ الْوَتْقَيْنَ لَكُمْ وَلَكَنْ يَمْثِلُ وَإِلَى مَنْ أَرْبَعَ أَنَّ أَدَوَيْ بِكِمْ أَوْتَمْ دَائِيْ كَذَا نَاقِشَ الشَّوَكَةِ بِالشَّوَكَةِ وَهُوَ يَعْلَمُ أَنَّ ضَلَّعُهَا مَعَهُ. أَلْلَهُ قَدْ مُلَّهَ أَطْبَاءُ هذَا الدَّاْيِ الدُّوِّيِّ وَكَلَّتْ النَّزْعَةَ بِأَشْتَانُ الرَّكِّيْ. أَنَّ القُوْمَ الَّذِينَ دُعِوا إِلَى الْإِسْلَامِ فَقَبَلَهُ وَقَرَأَوا الْقُرَأَنَّ فَأَحْكَمُوْهُ

وَهَيُّجَوُّا إِلَى الْجَهَّادِ فُوَّلُوا الْلِّقَاحَ أُولَآْدَهَا وَسلَبَ السَّيْفَ أَفْغَمَاهَا وَأَخْذَوْهَا بِأَثَافٍ الأَرْضِ زِحْنًا زِحْنًا وَصَفَّاْصَفَّاْ. لِبَعْضِ هَلْكِ وَقَرْبَةُ نِحَّةٌ لَا يِبْرُوُّن بِالْأَحْيَاءِ وَلَا يَعَزُّونْ عَنِ الْقَتْلِ مَزْرُ العَيْنِ مِنْ الْبَكَاءِ خَصْصَ الْبَطْنِ مِنْ الصَّيْامِ ذِيْلَ الْشَّفَاءِ مِنْ الْدَعَاءِ صَفْرُ الأَلْوَانِ مِنِ السَّهْرِ وَجَوْهُمْ غَرْبَةُ الْخَامِشِينِ أَوْلُكْ إِخْوَانِ الْذَّاهِيِنْ

فَقِهَّلَنَا أَن نَظَنَّمُ هُمْ وَنَعْشَ الْأَيْدِيَ عَلَى فَرَقِهِمْ إِنَّ الْشَّيْطَانَ يَشَّيْدُ لَكُمْ طَرَقَهُ وَيرِيدُ أَن يَبْلُ بِكُمْ عَقْدَةً عَقْدَةٌ وَيَعْطِيَكُمْ بِالجَمِيعَةِ الْقَرْبَةٍ فَأَصْدَفُوهُ عَنَّ تَزَاغَهْ وَنْفُسِهِ وَأَقْبَلُوا

الْمَصِيَّحَةُ مِنْ أَهْدَاهَا إِلَيْكُمْ وَأُعْقَلُوهَا عَلَى أَنْفُسِكُمْ.

مَٰمِيٍ، مَوَسَّعَةُ فِي شَ، هـ: كَذَا، وَأَصَلُّ شَ، هـ: «الْمَوْتِي»، ٢٩، نُ، م، وَمُوسَّعَةُ فِي
هـ: كَذَا، وَأَصَلُّ هـ، وَهَامُشَ مُ، أَضْفِئَتْ («بِالْقُرْءَةِ الْقُرْنِيَّةِ»)
whose ornaments are chains of iron. Listen to me! A pious reputation, one that God sustains through people’s tongues, is better for a person than any wealth he may leave behind for his ungrateful heirs.

1.118 From an address by ʿAlī, when one of his associates stood up and confronted him, saying, “You forbade us to enter into arbitration then commanded us to enter it, and we don’t really know which of the two was the more reasonable course.” ʿAlī clapped one hand over the other in frustration and anger, then spoke:¹

This is how one who relinquishes a sound position is rewarded! By God! Had I forced you—when I commanded you what I did—to follow the hard course in which God has ordained good, that sound position would have been established. Then, if you had stayed resolute, I would have guided you, if you had deviated, I would have straightened you, and if you had balked, I would have set you right. But with whom, and through whom! I apply you as the cure when you are my disease, like ⟨a person who extracts a thorn with a thorn, knowing that the one inclines toward the other!⟩² O God! How weary the physician treating this vicious disease! How tired the water-drawer hauling up these well ropes! O where are the people who were called to Islam and accepted it, who recited the Qurʾan and acted on it, who were urged to fight and raced to it? They tore camels from nurslings, snatched swords from their sheaths, and set out to the far regions of the earth, marching steadily, row by row. Some perished, and some survived, neither gladdened by their living nor saddened by their dead, their eyes raw from weeping, their stomachs lean from fasting, their lips withered from praying, their color pale from wakeful nights, and their faces dusty from long prostration. Those were my departed brothers! It is only right that I should thirst for them, that I should wring my hands at their separation! Satan has smoothed his paths for you. He wants to undo your religion, knot by knot, and replace your unity with dissent. Reject his incitements and whisperings! Accept your benefactor’s counsel and guard it with care!

¹ I have added the words “in frustration and anger” for clarity. The confronter is a member of the newly emerging Kharijite group in Kufa, following the Battle of Ṣiffīn in 37/657, challenging ʿAli for his acceptance of the arbitration. Details in H 7:294, R 2:30, B 460. Iskāfī (Miʿyār, 241) places the latter lines of the second paragraph as an answer to a group who claimed to be his followers, while ʿAlī denied that they were, for they did not possess the pious qualities outlined here.

² Proverb denoting a person who seeks aid against his enemy from his enemy’s kin. H 7:292–294; R 2:30; B 460; ‘A 620.
1.119 ومن كلام له عليه السلام قاله للمرافق وقال: إن الرمثاء وهم من كلامهم. ومهم منهم هم الذين على إكبار
الحكومة فقال عليه السلام أكلمهم شدد معنا صفين فقالوا ومنا من شديد وثنا من لم شهد قال: فآمناً وافقين في صين صنف فرحة فمن لم يشهدها فرحة حتى أكلم كلاً بكلامه. ونادى الناس فقال أمسكا عن الكلام وأنصتوا لقوله وأقبلوا بأتمتهم إلى فن نشدها شهادة فليقل بعله فيها ثم كتب له عليه السلام بكلام طويل من جملته أن قال: ألم تكونوا عند رفعهم المصالح حيلة وغيلة ونكرأ وخديمة إخواننا وأهل دعوتنا أستقالون وأستراحوا إلى كتاب الله سببته فاللأي القبول منهم والتفتيش عنهم فقلت لكم هذا أمر ظاهر إيمان وباطنة عدون وابن ورفح رحلة وأحده نداء فأهتموا على شأكم وألزموا طرقكم ودعاكم على الجهاد بنا واجدكم ولا تألفوا إلى باع تعين أن أجيب أصل وإن ترك ذل. فلقد كام مع رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله ونا القتل ليدور بين الآبة والأبناء والإخوان والقرى فما زداد على كل مصيدة وشدية إيماننا ومضية على الحق وتسمي للأمر وصبرًا على مرض الجراح. ولكي إذا أصبحنا نقاتل إخواننا في الإسلام على ما دخل فيه من الزين والاعوجاج والشبيبة والتأويل فإذا طمعنا في خصلة يلر الله بها شعتنا ونتداني بها إلى القيمة فيما بيننا رغبة فيها وأمسكا عما سواها.

1.120 ومن كلام له عليه السلام قاله لأصحابه في وقت الحرب وقال: وأي آخرن الذين الكقل من نفسه رباطة جأش عند اللقاء ورأى من أحد من إخوانه فقاً لله يذيب عن أخيه بفضل نجدته التي فضيلة في كان يذيب عن نفسه فلو شاء الله لجعله مثله إن الموت طالب حديث لا يفوتوه المقيم ولا يعجزه الهارب إن أكرم الموت القتل والذي نفس أبن أبي طالب يهد له لألَف ضرية بالسيف أهون من ميتة

على الفراش.
1.119 This is from ‘Ālī’s address to the Kharijites—who condemned his acceptance of the arbitration—after he had marched to their encampment. 1 He first asked, “Were all of you present with me at Ṣiffīn?” “Some among us were, and others were not,” they replied. He then instructed, “Separate into two groups, those present at Ṣiffīn and those not, so I can address each group according to their position.” He then called out in a raised voice, “Stop your talk, listen to my words, and attend with your hearts, and if I ask a person to testify about a point, let him say what he knows about it.” After this, he spoke with them at length, and this is some of what he said:

When the Syrians raised leaves from the Qurʾan on spears—using trickery, deception, cunning, and lies—wasn’t it you who said, “These are our brothers and people of our faith who beg us to cease fighting and take refuge in the Book of God—we should accept what they offer and deliver them from calamity”? I said to you then, “This is an affair whose facade is faith but whose reality is pure malice, its beginning is mercy, but its end is regret. So keep to your positions and stay steady on your path, bite down with your back teeth and fight, and do not heed this errant bleater. If you accept his call, he will lead you astray, if you don’t, we will defeat him.” When we were with God’s Messenger, we stood by him when fighting raged between fathers, sons, brothers, and kin. Calamities and hardships only increased our faith, our steadfastness in truth, our acceptance of God’s command, and our fortitude in the face of painful wounds. But here, today, we have had to fight our brothers in Islam over their deviations, deviances, doubts, and false interpretations. When I thought there could be a way in which God may yet bring order to our scattered nation, and by which we may yet draw closer and conciliate, I was hopeful, and so I desisted from the other course.

1.120 From an address by ‘Ālī to his supporters before the start of a battle: 2

If any of you finds composure in his heart when meeting the enemy, and if he senses fear in one of his brothers, he should use his courage to defend him just as he defends himself. Had God wished it, he would have created them both the same. Death is an assiduous seeker. No one who stays home escapes it, and no one who flees battle eludes it. The most honorable death is on the battlefield. By the one who holds the soul of Abū Ṭālib’s son in his hand, a thousand sword strikes are easier to bear than dying on your bed!

---

1 Presumably, leading up to or just before the Battle of Nahrawān, in Kufa or Nahrawān, in 37/657 or 38/658. I have added the words “his acceptance of” for clarity.

2 The second paragraph is placed by Yaʿqūbī (Tārīkh, 2:239) at the Battle of the Camel in 36/656. However, according to ms N, the next two texts—§ 1.121 and § 1.122—are part of the same oration, and §1.122, according to H 83, is from the Battle of Ṣiffīn in 37/657. It is possible that ‘Ālī may have given similar counsel before both battles.
1.121
وكان أنظر إليكم تكوثكم كشيش الضباب لا تأخذون حقًا ولا تمنعون شيء قد خُلِّيَت
والطريق فالتجاة للمقتحم والملكه للملئهم.

1.122
ومن كلام له عليه السلام في حض أصحابه على القتال

1.122.1
فقدّموا الدارع وأحرروا الحاسروعضوا على الأضراس فإنه أنّى للسيوف عن
الهام والتوّوا في أطراف النور فإنه أشر للأساس ومعّوا الأبعاد فإنه أُربِّط للباش
وأسكن للقلوب وأميتوا الأصوات فإنه أطرد للفضّ. ورايكم فلا تملووا ولا تتخّلوا
ولا تجعلوها إلا بأيدي شجاعكم والممانعين الدمار منكم فإن الصابرين على نزول الحقائق
هم الذين يخون برايهم ويكشفونها حقيقة ووراءها وأمامها لا يخفرون عنها فيسملوها
ولا يقدّمون عليها وفّردهوا. أجرًا أّمرُ قُرْنَه وآسي أخاه بنفسه ولم يكلّ قرنه إلى أخيه
فتجتمع عليه قرنه وقرن أخاه.

1.122.2
وأيّب الله لّم فارقتم من سيف العاجلة لا تسوا من سيف الآخرة. وأنت هؤلاء
العرب والسنام الأعظم إن في القرار موجدة الله والذين اللازم والعار الباقيء إن الفار
غير مزيد في عمره ولا محجوز بينه وبين يومه من راحٍ إلى الله كاظمًا يرد الماء الجنية
تحت أطراف العوالي اليوم تعلى الأخبار. اللهم فإن رذوا الحق فأقضوا جماعتهم
وشنت كلمتهم وسُلِّمهم بخطبهم إنهم لن يزولا عن واقعهم دون طعن دراك
يخرجوه النسب وضرب يفاق الهم ويبيح النظام ويصر السواعد والأقدام وحتى

١، ي، ش، ه، ك. م، ومصصحة في ش: شجاعكم. ٢، م، ن، ش: كذا ي، ه، ونسخة
في ش مع علامة مع: الأخبار. وأضيفت في ي، وفي هامش ه: والله لأن أشوق إلى لقائهم
منهم إلى ديارهم.
1.121 From an address by ʿAlī:\(^1\)

I see you now, scuttling away like a group of thorn-tailed lizards, neither demanding your rights, nor defending against attackers. But you are free to choose your path! Those who brave danger will be saved, those who hold back will perish.

1.122 From an address by ʿAlī urging his followers to fight:\(^2\)

1.122.1 Place the armor-clad in front and the unprotected behind. Bite down on your back teeth, for that will blunt the blades that strike at your heads. Twist when facing lances, for that will make spearheads glance off your body. Focus your eyes low, for that will calm your hearts. Kill idle talk, for that will boost your courage. Don’t let your banner list, or leave it unprotected, or give it to any but your bravest warriors who are staunch in defending honor. Indeed, those who are valiant in the face of death will guard it and surround it from both sides and front and back, neither falling back and surrendering it, nor rushing ahead and leaving it unguarded. Each man should tackle his own opponent and also come to his brother’s aid. He should never leave his own opponent for his brother to face, such that both his and his brother’s opponents join forces against his brother.

1.122.2 By God, if you are successful in fleeing the sword of this world you will still not be safe from the sword of the hereafter. This, when you are chieftains of the Arabs and the lofty crest of the camel’s hump! Fleeing from the battlefield earns God’s wrath, eternal dishonor, and lasting shame, and anyway, the absconder cannot increase his lifespan—nothing will protect him when his day arrives. Who among you will return to God in the evening like a thirsty man coming to a waterhole? Paradise lies beneath the points of tall spears! This is the day when resolutions will be tested—O God, scatter the enemy if they challenge the truth, divide their views, and destroy them for their sins! They will be dislodged from their positions only when sharp spears leave gaping wounds on their torsos, and cutting swords split skulls, slice bones, and sever arms and legs,

---

1 Presumably also delivered at the Battle of Ṣiffīn in 37/657. As mentioned, according to ms N, this text and the one after it—§ 1.121 and 1.122—are a continuation of § 1.120.

2 Delivered just before the Battle of Ṣiffīn in 37/657 (Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 516–17; H 8:9). As mentioned, according to ms N, this text and the one before it—§ 1.121 and 1.122—are a continuation of § 1.120.
يرماوا بالمنام تبعيها المنام ويرموا بالكتاب تلقوا الحبل؛ حتى يجر بالله
الخميس يتلوه الفجر وحتى تدق الحبل في ظاهر أرضهم وأعانهم مسارهم ومسارهم.

الدق الذي أي تدق الحبل بجوامع أرضهم. (نواحي أرضهم) متقابلة. يقال (منزل
بيني فلان تنزاح) أي تقبل.

ومن كلام له عليه السلام في معاش الخوارج ما أثرووا تحكم الرجال ويبدو فيه أصحابه
على السلام
إذا لم نحكم الرجال وإما حكمنا القرآن وهذا القرآن إما هو خط مسطور بين الدفتيين
ينطق بحسن ولا بد له من حكمة وإنما ينطق عنه الرجال. ولما دعا القوم إلى أن نحكم
بيننا القرآن لم نكن الأفريقي المتولى عن كتاب الله وقال الله سبحانه فكان ناراً عند
شيء فردوه إلى الله ورسله فردده إلى الله أن نحكم بهما وردده إلى الرسول أن نأخذ
بستبه فإذا حكم بالصدق في كتاب الله فنحن أحق الناس به وإن حكم برسالة رسول الله
فنحن أولاهم. وآم فلذكر لم جملت بنك وبينهم أجاً في الحكمة فإما فعّلت ذلك
ليتمنى الصلح وينةت الله أن يصلح في هذه الدنيا أمر هذه الأمة ولا يؤخذ
بأكثرا فتعجّل عن تبين الحق وتفقد لأول العين إن أفلح الناس عند الله من كان
العمل بالحق أحب إلي وإن نقضه وكره من الباطل وإن جر إليه فائدة وزاده فأين ينتم
يكم ومن أين أنت؟ استعدوا بالمسير إلى قوم حبص عن الحق لا يضرونه وموزعين بالجور
لا يعدلون به جهالة عن الكتب نكتب عن الطريق ما أنت بوثيقة يعاق بها ولا زوارف
يعتصم إليها لبس حماش نار الحرب أتتم أف لكم لقد لقيت منكم بحراً يوماً أنادتكم
ويوماً أتاجكن فلا أحزان عند النداء ولا إخوان ثقة عند الجماه.

1. ش، ي، ه: كذا م: (الحلبال). 2. ن، ي، ه: كذا ش: (مشاريهم).
when they are attacked by column after column and battered by battalions and cavalry, when their lands are attacked by army upon army, when the interlocking arteries of their terrain and the open vistas of their trails and pastures are trampled by squadrons of cavalry.

Raḍī: “Trample (daʿq)” means pounding, i.e., squadrons of cavalry pounding the terrain with their horses’ hooves. “Interlocked arteries of their terrain (nawāḥir arḍihim)” are separate sections that face one another. It is said “the campsites of such-and-such tribe are as interlocked necks (manāzīlū bānī fulānin tatanāḥaru),” meaning they face one another.

1.123 From ‘Alī’s address censuring the Kharijites when they condemned his appointment of men to arbitrate:¹

I did not appoint men to arbitrate—I sought arbitration from the Qurʾan. But yes, this Qurʾan is a set of written lines enclosed by two covers; it does not speak with a tongue and thus has need of an interpreter, and those who speak on its behalf are men. When the Syrians proposed to have the Qurʾan arbitrate between us, I did not turn away from God’s Book, for he has said «If you disagree about something, refer it to God and his Messenger.»² To refer it to God is to rule by his Book, and to refer it to the Messenger is to follow the Messenger’s Sunnah. Had the arbitration been executed by the Book of God, I would have been found to be the person most worthy of the caliphate. If it had been executed according to the Sunnah of God’s Messenger, I would have been established as the most deserving. You object, “Why did you allow them an interval to decide the arbitration?” I did so in order that the ignorant might see the light and the informed might gain strength. I hoped that in the interim of truce God would stabilize the community, so it would not be grabbed by the throat and rushed back into error before the truth was became clear. The best man in God’s eyes holds right dearer than wrong, no matter how hard or painful it is to act on, and no matter how much gain or benefit it brings. Pray, then, whereto do you stray, what corrupted you? Prepare to march against that confounded group of men who cannot see the truth! Seduced by tyranny, they cling to it; uneasy with the Book, they stray from its path. But you are also not a sturdy rope to cling to, or mighty lions who defend! What courage have the likes of you to ignite the blaze of combat? Shame! All you give me is pain! One day I rally you in public, the next I urge you in private, but your response to a call to muster is not that of the free and brave, or, when approached in confidence, of brothers I can trust.

¹ Delivered at the Kharijites’ camp outside Kufa after the arbitration in 37/658. B 465; Ṭabarī, Ṭārīkh, 5:66.
² Qurʾan, Nisāʾ 4:59.
1.124 ومن كلام له عليه السلام لما عوّب على تصبيرة الناس أسوة في العطاء من غير تفضيل

أولى السياقات والشرّق قال
أتآمروني أن أطلب النصر بالجوار فيمن ولّيت عليه والله ما أطور به ما سُمِّر وما أُمّ نجم في السماء نجمًا لو كان المال لي لسوّيت بينهم فكيف وآمًا المال لهم!

ثمّ قال عليه السلام
ألَّا وإنّ إعطاء المال في غير حنينه تنذر وإسراف وهو يرفع صاحبه في الدنيا ويضعه في الآخِرة ويكرمه في الناس ويبيته عند الله ولم يضع آخر ماله في غير حقه وعند غير أهله
إلا حرم الله شكرهم وكان غنيه ودّهم فإنّ زالت به التعلُّم يومًا فاحتاج إلى معونته
فشر خدين وألم خليل.

1.125 ومن كلام له عليه السلام للتوازي أيضًا
فإن أتبيهم إلا أن تزعموا أن أخطأت وضللتهم فلم تحصنوا عامة أمة محمد صلى الله عليه
والله بضلال وتأخذونهم ببطأ وإكلرونهم بذنوبهم. سيوفكم على عواطفكم تضعونها
مواضع البراءة والسق وتحكمون من أذنب بما لم يذنب، وقد علمت أن رسول الله صلى الله عليه وألم رجح الزاني ثمّ صلّ عليه ثمّ ورث أهله وألفت القائل وتوقَّف مثيراته
أخذه رسول الله بذنوبهم وأقامت حق الله فيهم ولم يمنعهم سهمهم من الإسلام
فأخذه اسماءهم من بين أهله ثمّ نتم شرار الناس ومن رمي به الشيطان مرامية
وضرب به ثنيه، وسيءفت في صنف مال مفرط يذهب به الحب إلى غير الحق ومبغض

١١٠، ن، ش، ي، ه: كذا مصححة في ن، ش، ه: [إِمَّا المال مال الله]
1.124 From an address by ‘Ali responding to the outpouring of complaints when he standardized treasury stipends with no privilege for precedence or nobility.¹
Do you urge me to seek victory by oppressing the people I rule? By God, no, I will never do so, not as long as the night-watch is kept or while one star follows another in the heavens! If the funds had been mine, I would still have distributed them equally. How, then, when they belong to the people?

Then he said:
Listen to me! Awarding funds from the treasury to those who have no right to them counts as waste and squandering. It elevates the provider on earth but lowers his worth in the hereafter, it ennobles him among people but belittles him in the eyes of God. When a man gives money for unrighteous ends to undeserving recipients, God deprives him of their gratitude and veers their loyalty toward another. Then, if one day his foot slips and he needs their help, his previous act will reveal itself to be his worst bedfellow and most sordid friend.

1.125 From another address by ‘Ali to the Kharijites:²
Even if you insist—and you do so wrongly—on believing that I have sinned and erred, then why do you hold the whole of Muḥammad’s community errant because of my supposed error?³ Why do you hold them responsible for my sin and label them unbelievers because of my transgression? You strap swords to your shoulders and use them equally against the sound and the sick, placing the sinner with those who have not sinned. You know that the Messenger stoned the fornicator then prayed over him and allowed his family to inherit. He executed the murderer then distributed his property to his family. He cut the hand of the thief and flogged the unmarried fornicator yet continued to give them a share of the war booty and allowed them to marry Muslim women. The Messenger punished these sinners for their sins and carried out God’s mandated penalties, yet he did not deprive them of their share of Islam’s benefits, nor did he remove their names from the roster of Muslims. But you! You are the worst of people! In you, Satan has struck his target. Through you, he has accomplished his mission of obfuscation.

---

¹ Excerpt from an oration—followed, according to Ibn Qutaybah (Imāmah, 1:174), by § 1.95, and also including § 1.140—delivered at Siffin (37/657), when some of ‘Ali’s associates told him about Mu‘āwiyah’s lavish rewarding of his supporters and urged him to do the same (Ḥarrānī, Tuḥaf, 185; similar context in § 1.203). For a brief discussion of this issue, and further primary source references, see Qutbuddin, “ʿAlī’s Contemplations on this World and the Hereafter in the Context of His Life and Times,” 339–340.

² In Nahrawān, just before the battle, 38/658. Tabari, Tārīkh, 5:85.

³ The Kharijites claimed that ‘Ali and his followers had left Islam because they had agreed to human arbitration, and thus they held their blood licit. On the Kharijite doctrine declaring those who commit a ‘major sin’ to have apostatized, see H 8:113–118.
مفرط يذهب به البعض إلى غير الحق وخير الناس في حال النظم الأوسع فألزموه، وآلموا السواك الأعظم فإن يد الله على الجماعة وإياكم والفرقة فإن الشاذ من الناس للشيطان كما أن الشاذة من الغنم للذئب إلا أن دعاء هذا الشعار فاقتلاعه ولو كان تحت عامتى هذه فإما حكم الحكاك لحيما ما أحيا القرآن ويبت ما مات القرآن وإحياءه الاجتماع على إمتهانه الاقتراق عنه فإن جري القرآن إليهم أتتبعهم وإن جرهم إليها اتبعونا. فلم آت لا آتا لكم مجرنا ولا خلتكم عن أمركم ولا ليست عليكم إما اجتماع رأيت ملتبس على اختيار رجلين أخذنا عليهما أن لا يتبعنا القرآن فتانا عنه وتركا الحق وهم ينصره وكان الجور هواه فضيا عليه وقد سبق استئتنا عليهما في الحكومة بالعدل والصمد للمحق سواء أرثهما وجور حكمهما.

1.126 ومن الكلام له عليه السلام فيما يخبربه عن الملاحم بالبصرة يا أحنف كأني به وقى سار بالجيش الذي لا يكون له غبار ولا جب ولا قعقعة جم.
ولا حمالة خيل يثيرون الأرض بأقدامهم كأنها أقدام النعام.
يومه بذلك إلى صاحب الزئب ثم قال عليه السلام ويل لكحكم العاملة ودوركم المزخرفة التي لها أجنحة كأجنحة النسور وخراطم كروايم القيلة من أولئك الذين لا يندب قتيلهم ولا يفقد غائهما. أنا كأس الدنيا لوجهها وقاردها بذرة وناشرها بعينها.
tion. Two types of people— with regard to their relationship with me— will perish: one who loves to excess, whose love crosses the boundary of right, and one who hates, whose hate crosses the boundary of right.\(^1\) The best of people— with regard to their relationship with me—are the ones who keep to the middle road,\(^2\) so keep to it! Keep to the assembled group, for God’s hand guides the congregation. Beware of division, for the isolated individual is hunted by Satan, just as the lone sheep is hunted by the wolf. Kill any person who calls to that evil banner, even if that man were me, the man wearing this turban! The arbitrators’ charge was to revive what revives the Qur’an and to kill what kills the Qur’an. To revive the Qur’an is to unite around it, and to kill it is to splinter from it. The mandate was that if the Qur’an drew us to them, we would follow them, and if it drew them to us, they would follow us. I have committed no wrong— may you have no fathers! I did not deceive you or muddy your affair. It was you, the majority of you, who chose these two men. I made them pledge that they would not transgress the Qur’an, but they strayed from it and abandoned the truth, while seeing it all the while in front of them. Their intent was to oppress, and they did. I had made their arbitration contingent upon justice and truth— by their corrupt judgment and unjust ruling they have invalidated it.

1.126 From an address by ‘Ali foretelling epic fighting in Basra:\(^3\)
Listen, Aḥnaf! I see him marching with troops that raise no dust, that make no sound, with no clanking of irons or neighing of horses, their feet silently pounding the earth like swift ostriches.

Raḍī: In these lines, ‘Ali predicted the uprising of the Chief of the Zanj.\(^4\) Then he said: Grief to your flourishing quarters and beautiful homes, with their eagle wings and elephant trunks,\(^5\) from an army whose dead will go unmourned and whose missing will go unnoticed! As for me, I hurl the world on its face, I measure it for what it is worth, I view it with its own eyes!

---

\(^1\) On the so-called Exaggerators (ghulāt), who attributed divinity to ‘Ali, see H 8:119–122; Asatryan, *Controversies in Formative Shi’i Islam*; Halm, *Die islamische Gnosis*; Halm, “Golāt,” *EIr*. On the ‘haters,’ usually taken to mean the Umayyads and the Ḥanafīs, see Husayn, *Opposing the Imam: The Legacy of the Nawāṣib in Islamic Literature*.

\(^2\) Reference to Qur’an, Baqarah 2:143.


\(^4\) The Chief of the Zanj was ‘Ali ibn Muḥammad al-Zanjī (d. 270/883), who led the 15-year rebellion that ravaged southern Iraq from 255/869 to 270/883. For details, see H 8:216–214 (includes excerpts from Ṭabarī, Masʿūdī, and other early historical sources); Ṭabarī, *History*, vol. 17: *The Revolt of the Zanj*; Popovic, “al-Zand̲j̲, 2. The Zand̲j̲ revolts in ʿIrāḳ,” *EI* 2.

\(^5\) “Eagle wings (ajniḥah) of houses refer to overhanging wooden dormers, and “elephant trunks (kharāṭīm)" refer to waterspouts snaking down from the roof (H 8:212; B 480; ‘A 623). Or, to the houses’ detailed decorations, and their height (R 2:44).
ومنه ويوهبه إلى وصف الأترك
كأنى أراه قومًا كان وجوههم الجبان المطرقة يلبسون السرَق والدياب ويعتبون
الخيل العناة ويكون هناك استقرار قتل حتى يمشي المجرود على المقتول ويكون
المفتل أقل من الأسور.

فقال له بعض أصحابه لقد أعطيت يا أمير المؤمنين علم الغيب ففضحك عليه السلام وقال الرجل
وكان كليًا
يا أخا كلك ليس هو بعلم غيب وإمامًا هو تعلم من ذي علم وما علم الغيب علم الساعة
وما عدده الله بقوله: "إن الله عنده على الساعة ويزيل الغيب ويعمل ما في الأرمان وما
تدرى نفس ماذَا تكسب غذا وما تدري نفس بأَيِّ أَرْض ممّوَت إن الله علم خبير
فعلم سباقنا ما في الأرمان من ذكر أو أنثى وقيش أو جميل وسحق أو بخيل وشقي أو
سعيد ومن يكون في النار حطبًا أو في الجهنم للنابين مراقبًا. هذا علم الغيب الذي لا
يعلمه أحد إلا الله وما سوى ذلك فعل علم الله بيبي صلى الله عليه وآله وسلم عليه
بأن يعي صدري وتضضم عليه جوانحي.

1.127
ومن خطبة له عليه السلام في ذكر المكاييل والوازيين
عباد الله إنكما وما تأملون من هذه الدنيا أثواب مؤجَّلون ومدينون مقتضون. أجل
منقوص وعمل محفوظ فرب دائب مضيوع ورب كاده خاسر. قد أصبحت في زمن لا
يرضاد الخبر فيه إلا إبصارا والشرأ لا إقبالا والشيطان في هلاك الناس إلا طمعا فهذا أوان
قويته عدت وعمت مكدته وأمكنت فريسته. اضطر بطرفك حيث شتى من الناس
فهل تبتكر؟ إلَّا فقير أو مبكي اقتربة أو غني بدل نعمه الله كفرًا أو يخيفَ أَتْخُذ البخيل يحقي الله
وفرًا أو متمردًا كان بأذنه عن سمع المواضع وقراً. إن خياركم وصلحاكم وأين أحراركم
وسيحالفكم وأين المتورعون في مكاسبهم وابتذلون في مذاهبهم أليس قد ظنوا جميعًا عن
1، ن، ش، ي، م، ومصححة في م: كذا. أصل م: «أنظر إليهم». 2، ن، ش، ي، ه: كذا. م: (تنتظر).
From the same address, foretelling the coming of the Turks:¹
I see them before me now, their craggy faces latticed shields, their robes silk and brocade, their mounts purebred steeds. I see violent fighting, the wounded trampling the slain, hardly any escaping and a host being captured.

At that, one of ‘Alī’s associates exclaimed, “You have knowledge of the mysteries, Commander of the Faithful!” ‘Alī laughed and said to the man, who was from the tribe of Kalb:
This is not knowledge of the mysteries, O Kalbite, but what I have learned from one who had true knowledge.² Knowledge of the mysteries constitutes knowing the coming hour and the things God has enumerated in his words, «God has knowledge of the coming hour, he sends down rain, and knows what is in wombs. No man knows what he will earn tomorrow, and no man knows the land in which he will die, but God is all-knowing, all-aware.»³ God knows what is in wombs, male or female, ugly or beautiful, generous or stingy, wretched or blissful. He knows who will go to hell and who will enjoy the company of the prophets in paradise. This is the knowledge of mysteries that God alone possesses. All else is knowledge that God taught to his Prophet, who taught it to me, and he prayed for my heart to preserve it and my breast to keep it safe.

1.127 From an oration by ‘Alī about measures and weights:⁴
Servants of God! You, with all that you desire of this world, are lodgers with fixed timespans and debtors whose reckoning is coming due. The term approaches and deeds are preserved. Some who strive still squander and some who work still lose. You live in an era when good retreats, evil advances, and Satan is greedy for people he can throw into hell. This is that time: his army is strong, his plots commonplace, and his victims easy prey. Look at the people, look where you like! All you will see is paupers who suffer, rich men who repay God’s blessings with ingratitude, misers who withhold God’s due, and rebels whose ears are deaf to counsel. Where are the virtuous and the pious, where are the free and the generous, where are the honest earners and the people of scrup-

¹ The commentators explain this prophecy as foretelling the Mongol attack on the Muslim heartlands in the 7th/13th century initially under Chingiz Khan and culminating in the sack of Baghdad under Chingiz’s grandson Hülegü in 656/1258. For details, see Ḥ 8:218–243; Jackson, “Hülegü b. Toluy b. Chinggis Khān,” EI²; Biran, “Chinggis Khān,” EI²; Morgan, “Mongols,” EI².
² The reference is to the Prophet Muḥammad.
³ Qur’an, Luqman 31:34.
⁴ Although this text does not mention measures or weights, presumably ‘Alī is condemning his addressees for marketplace cheating.
هذه الدنيا الدنيا العاجلة المتعفة وهل خففت في حِثَالِة لا تلتقي بدمم الشفتان
استعيانًا لقدهم وذهابًا عن ذكرهم فَإِنَّا لِلَّهِ وَإِنَّا إِلَيْهِ رَاجِعُونَ ظهر الفساد فلا
معنى مفتي ولا زعتر مزدجرأ في هذا تردد أن تجاوروا الله في دار قدسه وكونوا أعرا
أولياته علئه هيهات لا يَدْخِعُ الله عن جنته ولا تناز مرضاها إلا بطاعته. لعن الله
الأئمين بالمعروف التاركين له والنائين عن المنكر العاملين به.

١٢٨ وَمِنْ كَلَامِهِ لَيْلَةَ السَّلَامَ لَوْ بَذِرَ رَحْمَةَ اللَّهِ مَا أَخْرَجَ إِلَى الْرَّبِّ
يا أبا ذِرًّا إنك غضبت الله فأرج من غضبت له إن القوم خافوك على دنياهم وخفتمهم
على دينك فأترك في أيديهم ما خافوك عليه وأهرب منهم بما خفتمهم عليه فما أجرهم
إلى ما معتمهم وأغناكم عمّا منعوك وسطعم من الرجاء غدا والأكثر حسدًا. ولو أن السماوات والأرض كانا على عبد رَتْقًا ثم أنفق الله لجعل الله له منهما مخرجًا ولا
يؤمنسك إلا الخلق ولا يوحشئك إلا الباطل فلو قبلت دنياهم لأحبوك ولو قرست منها
لآمنوك.

١٢٩ وَمِنْ كَلَامِهِ لَيْلَةَ السَّلَامَ
أتينها النفس المختلفة والقلوب المشتتة الشاهدة أبدانهم والغائية عنهم عقولهم أُظْفَرُ ك
على الحق وأتمني نفرون عنه نفور المُعَزِّ من وَعْوَةَ الأَسْدَ. هَيْبَات أن أُطلق بكم سراد

١، ش، م، ه، ونسخة في ي: كذا. أصل ي، ونسخة في م، ش: (خُسْرًا). ٢٠، ش، ي، ه: كذا. م، ومصححة في ه: (الأرضين).
people? They have departed this vicious, murky world, leaving you insignificant scum, you, whose very censure lips disdain to utter, whose slightest mention they spurn! «Truly, to God we belong, and to him we return!»¹ Corruption is everywhere, but no one condemns or changes it, no one censures or disapproves. Is this how you earn lodging in God’s sacred abode and seek to become his dearest friends? Perish the thought! God cannot be tricked into giving you paradise, his pleasure is earned only by obedience. God’s curse on those who command good yet don’t perform, who forbid evil yet don’t renounce!

1.128 From an address by ‘Alī to Abū Dharr when he was exiled to Rabadhah:² Abū Dharr, you were roused to anger in God’s cause, so place your trust in the one in whose cause you were roused to anger. Your adversaries fear you with regard to their worldly gain, while you fear them because of your pious beliefs. Leave in their hands the thing they fear you will seize, and flee from them, taking with you the thing you fear they will take. How desperately they need the thing you forbid them, and how little you need the thing they forbid you! They will learn on the morrow who has the most profit, who is the most envied. Even if skies and earth close in on a true servant of God, God will show him a way to escape, if he remains conscious of him. Let truth be your comfort, and don’t be afraid of anything except keeping company with falsehood. If you had accepted their proposals for worldly gain, they would have been on your side. If you had partaken of their offers, they would have offered you full protection.

1.129 From an address by ‘Alī:³ You divided souls and fragmented hearts, present in body but absent in mind! I urge you toward truth, but you bolt from it like goats from a lion’s snarl! How impossible a task to brighten through your help this night of obscured justice,⁴

¹ Qurʾan, Baqarah 2:156.
² ‘Alī delivered this address to Abū Dharr al-Ghifārī on the outskirts of Medina; it was reportedly committed to memory by Dhakwān, freedman of ‘Alī’s sister Umm Hānī, who was present. I have not located the date in the sources, but it is presumably shortly before 32/652, which is when Abū Dharr died. Abū Dharr was one of Muḥammad’s prominent and pious companions and an early convert to Islam. ’Uthmān exiled him to Rabadhah, two hundred kilometers northeast of Medina, because he was an outspoken supporter of ‘Alī and openly condemned the Umayyads, and he died there. For details, see H 8:252–262; B 473–474; Afsaruddin, “Abū Dharr al-Ghifārī,” E1³.
³ Part of an oration ‘Alī delivered during his caliphate on the pulpit of Kufa (Ṣibṭ, Ṣadḥkitrah, 120), presumably, based on the opening line, after the arbitration in 37/658, when he was urging his supporters to regroup to fight Muʿāwiyyah.
⁴ Ar. sīrār al-ʿadl; the commentators give different explanations for sīrār: (1) the last (moonless) night of the month (R 2:53; H 8:264); (2) a concealed thing (B 475); (3) shining lines on someone’s forehead (H 8:264). They agree on the general meaning of the phrase that contains the word.
العدل أو أقيم أعوجاج الحق. اللهم إنك تعلم أنه لم يكن الذي كان منا منافسة في سلطان ولا ألقاس شيء من فضول الحُطام ولكن لنرد المعالم من دينك وتنظيم الإصلاح في بلادك فيأمن المظلومون من عبادك وتقتام المعطلة من حدودك. اللهم إنني أول من أتوب وسع واجبات لم يسبقني إلا رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم بالصلاة. وقد علمت أنه لا ينبغي أن يكون على الفروع والدماء والمغامات والأحكام وإمامة المسلمين البخيل فتكون في أمورهم تهمنه ولا الجاهل فضلهم بجهله ولا الجاني فقطعهم بقائه ولا الجاني لدولي يختوم قومه دون قوم ولا المرثي في الحكم فيذهب بالحقوق ويقف بها دون المقاطع ولا المعطل للسما فيهل الآمة.

ومن خطبة له عليه السلام

1.130

صمد على ما أخذ وأعطى وعلى ما أبلى وأقي البابن لكل خفيفة الحاضر لكل سريرة العالم بما تكن الصدور وما تكون العيون ونشده أن لا إله غيره وأن محمد نجيه وعيته شهادة يوافق فيها السرا الإعلان والقلب اللسان.

1.130.1

منها فإنه والله الجلد لا اللعب والحق لا الكذب وما هو إلا الموت أسم داعيه وأجل حاديه فلا يغفر سواه الناس من نفسه فقد رأيت من كان قبله من جمع المال وحذر الأقلاع وأمن العواقب طول أمل واستعداد أهل كيف نزل به الموت أزعمه عن وطنه وأخذه من مأمنه محتلا على أعواد المنايب يعاطى به الرجال الرجال حماة على المناكب وإمساكا بالأنامل. أما رأيت الذين أمالون بعيدًا ويبتمن مشيدًا ويجمعن كثيرا أصبحت بيوتهم قبرًا وما جمعوا بورًا وصارت أمواتهم إلى أورئين وأرواحهم لقوم آخرين لا في حسنة يذهبون ولا من سيئة يستعبتون. وفأشر التقوى قلب برز ملته وفاز عمله

11، ش، هـ، ك، م، م، ونسخة في ه: (الخليف). شرح ابن أبي الحديد والراوندي والبحراني، وأضيف في ه مع لفظة معا: (الخليف).
or to straighten out the distorted truth! God! You know my intent was not to vie for power or seek this world’s fleeting possessions. I did what I did in order to restore the waymarks of your religion and reform your lands, so your oppressed servants would find security and your forsaken mandates be once more upheld. God! I am the first who turned to you, who heard and answered your call. No one except your Messenger preceded me in the prayer of Islam. O people, you know that one who is in charge of marriage contracts, penalties for murder, distribution of war gains, legal rulings, and leadership of the Muslims should not be a miser or his greed would target their property, he should not be ignorant or he would lead them astray, he should not be harsh or he would alienate them, he should not be a tyrant or he would favor one group over another, he should not be corrupt or he would squander rights and be unjust in the distribution of stipends, and he should not be a person who obstructs the Sunnah or the community would perish.

1.130 From an oration by ʿAlī:

1.130.1 I give praise to God for what he has taken away and what he has granted, for what he has gifted to us and what he has tested us with. He is aware of all that is hidden and present with all that is concealed, he knows all that hearts cover and all that eyes disclose. Thus, with my thoughts the same as my declaration, and my heart in accord with my tongue, I testify that there is no god other than he, and that Muḥammad is his chosen messenger.

1.130.2 From this same oration:

By God, it is seriousness, no jest, all truth, no lies—there is nothing before you but death. Its caller has made its voice heard, and its driver has quickened the caravan, so don’t let the recklessness of the masses distract you from your soul. You have seen the people who went before who amassed wealth and dreaded destitution, who were complacent about retribution because they cherished long hopes and ignored their shrinking lifespans. You saw death alight at each one’s door, shove him out of his homeland, and seize him from his place of safety. He was carried out on fate’s wooden planks, one group of men handing him on to another, transporting him on their shoulders and gripping him by their fingers. Have you not seen those who cherished long hopes, raised edifices with strong mortar, and amassed abundant wealth? Their houses have become graves, what they gathered is in ruin, their property has gone to their heirs, their wives to other men. They are no longer asked to do good or to repent of earlier sins. It is those who robe their hearts in piety, who outrace their peers, whose deeds win the day. Work hard for this. Perform the deeds required to win par-
فأهتَّمَلوا هَبْبَالها وأُعَمَلوا لِلَجْنَةِ عَمَلًا فَإِنَّ الدِّنيَا لم تَتْخَاذَ لِكَم دَارٌ مَقَامٌ بِلَ خَلْقٍ لِكَم مِجَازًا لِتَزِوَّدُوا مِنْهَا الْأَعْمَال إِلَى دَارِ الْقَرَارِ فَكُونُوا مِنْهَا عَلَى أَوْفَازٍ وَقَرْبَى الْظَهْوُرِ لِلْزَيْلَ.

وَمِنْ خِطْباً لِهِ لِلْسَلَامِ

1.131

وَأَقَادَتْ لِهِ الدَّيْنِ وَالآخِرَةَ بِأَزْمَتِهَا وَقَذِفتْ إِلَى الْسَماوَاتِ وَالأَرْضٍ مَقَالِيدهَا وَجَدَتْ لِهِ بِالْعَدْوِ وَالآخَلِ السَّحْرِ النَّافِرَةَ وَقَدَحَتْ لِهِ مِنْ قَضِيَّاهَا النِّيرَانِ المَضْيِئَةَ وَآتَى أَكْلُهَا بِكَلِمَتِهِ اِلْثَمَارِ الْبَانِعَةَ.

1.131.2

وَكَتَابَ الَّذِي بَينَ أَظُهْرِهِمْ نَاطِقًا لَا يُسْأَلُ لَسَانَهُ وَبِيْتٌ لَا تَتَهَدَى أَرْكَانُهُ وَعِزُّ لَا تَنْزِمُ أَعْوَاهُ.

1.131.3

أَرْسَلَهُ عَلَى حَيْنَ فَقْرَةً مِنَ الرَّسْلِ وَتَنَازَعَ مِنَ الأَلْسَنِ فَقْقَى بِهِ الرَّسُولَ وَخَتَمَهُ الْوَحِيُّ.

فَجَاهَدَ فِي اللَّهِ الْمَدْرِيْنَ عَنْهُ وَالَّذِينَ عَامَلُونَ بِهِ.

1.131.4

وَإِنَّمَا الدِّنيَا مِنْتَدِيُّ بِصِرِّ الأَعْمَى لَا يَبِسِرُ مَعَ وَرَاءَهُ شَيْئًا وَبَصِيرُ يَنْفُذُهَا بَصْرُهُ وَيَعْلَمُ أَنَّ الدَّارَ وَرَاءَهَا فَالْبِصِيرُ مِنْهَا شَاهِقُ وَالأَعْمَى إِلَى شَاهِقِهِ شَاهِقُ وَالْبِصِيرُ مِنْهَا مَتْرِوْحٌ وَالأَعْمَى.

لَهَا مَتْرِوْحٌ.

1.131.5

وَأَعْلَمُوا أَنَّهُ لِيَسِيْ من شَيْءٍ إِلَّا وَيَكَدُ صَاحِبُهُ يُشْبِعْ مِنْهُ وَيُمِلُّهُ إِلَّا الْحَيَةُ فَإِنَّهُ لَا يَجِدُ لِهِ فِي الْمَوْتِ رَاحَةً وَإِنَّمَا ذَلِكَ بِمِنْطُولةِ الْحَكْمَةِ الَّتِي هِيَ حَيَاةُ الْقَلِبِ الْمِيْتِ وَبِصِيرٍ لِلْعَينِ الْعُمْيَاءِ وَجَمعٌ لِلْأَذْنِ الصَّمَائِمِ وَرَيْبِ الْلَّطِيْمَانِ وَفِي غَفْنِهِ كَلِهِ وَالسَّلَامَةُ.

١٣٠٠ مَيَّزَ، وَمَصْحَبَةٌ فِي شَكَّ كَانَ، وَأَصِلَّ شَقَطَتْ أَكْلُهَا.
adise. This world has not been created for you as a home, it has been created for you as a passage on which to gather provisions for the final residence. Make haste to leave it. Make ready the backs of your camels for the journey.

1.131  From an oration by ʿAlī:

1.131.1  This world and the hereafter have submitted their reins to God, the skies and the earth have handed him their keys, and the blossoming trees prostrate to him at dawn and at dusk. From their branches, his luminous flames are kindled, and in response to his words, they bring forth their harvest of fruit.¹

1.131.2  From the same oration:
The Book of God is in front of you. It is a speaker whose tongue does not stutter, a house whose pillars do not collapse, and a force whose supporters are never crushed.

1.131.3  From the same oration:
God sent Muḥammad—when prophecy had lagged, and tongues fiercely quarreled—to follow his messengers and seal his revelation. Muḥammad fought in God’s path against those who had turned away from him or who assigned him peers.

1.131.4  From the same oration:
The blind see only this world. They cannot see past it, whereas the sighted penetrate it to see what is beyond, and they know their home is yonder. The sighted are waiting to leave it, whereas the blind are moving toward it. The sighted gather provisions from it, whereas the blind gather provisions for it.

1.131.5  From the same oration:²
Know this: there is almost nothing its possessor doesn’t weary of except life—no one ever takes comfort in death. This knowledge is the wisdom that brings life to the dead heart, sight to the blind eye, sound to the deaf ear, and water to the parched throat.³ It gives you all the counsel you need, and total safety.

¹ References in this section are to Qur’ān, Ḥajj 22:18, Yāsīn 36:80, Baqarah 2:265.
² The next three paragraphs are thematically unconnected excerpts from different orations (Ḥ 8:288).
³ This “wisdom” refers to (1) the Qur’ān (R 2:54); (2) the Prophet’s words (Ḥ 8:293); and (3) knowledge of the hereafter (B 480).
كان الله ت سبحانه وتعالى يتبره ويتباهه ويبلغه وهم تابعون له، ويبلغه بعض ويستغفر بعض ويستغفر بعض
على بعض لا يختلف في الله ولا يختلف بصاحبه عن الله.
قد أصلحتهم عليه الغلّ فيما بينكم وبين المرجع على دينكم وتصافحتم على حب الآمال وتعبدتم في كسب الأموال لقد أستهلك لكم الخير وتأهّب لكم الفَرْوِرَ وَالله المستعان على نفسي وأنفسكم.

1.132 ومن كلام له عليه السلام وقد شاره عمر في الخروج إلى الروم وقد تولّى الله لأهل هذا الدين بإعزاز الحوزة وسر عنترة الذي نصرهم وهم قليل لا ينترصرون ومنعناهم وهم قليل لا يمتنعون حتى لا يموت. إنّ كمات سرّ إلى هذا العدو بنفسك فتانّهم فتنّك لا تكن لمسلمين كائنة دون أقصى بلاهم ليس بابك من جمع يرجعون إليه فأبعث إليهم رجلاً يرعاهم واحفظ معه أهل البلاء والنصحية فإن أظهر الله فذاك ما تحب فإن تكون الأخرى كنت ردّة للناس ووثابة للمسلمين.

1.133 ومن كلام له عليه السلام وقد وقعت مشاجرة بينه وبين عثمان. فقال المغيرة بن الأخنس لعثمان أنا أنبيك فقال أمير المؤمنين صلوات الله عليه للمغيرة يا أبا الفَلَقَينَ الأَبْنِيَّةَ والشجرة التي لا أصل لها ولا فرع أن كنت تكفيني، فقال الله ما أعرّ الله من أنت ناصره ولا قام من أنت منبهه اخرج عني أبعد الله نوَّاك ثمّ أبلغ جدحك فلا أبقي الله عليك إن أبقيت.

م، ي، وصة في ش، كذا ن، ه، وأصل ش، "ب ع دٌك مرجع"، ٣٠ م، ي، ه، وسخة في ن، ش، كذا أصل ن، ش، سقطت "أنت تكفيني".

al-Sharif al-Radi - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
By God’s Book you see and perceive, through it you speak with reason, and from it you hear the truth. One part of the Qur’an supports the other—it contains no contradictions about God, and never leads its reader away from him.

Although you hate one another, you band together to cultivate the refuse dump of malice, clasp[ing] hands for worldly gain, while fighting one another in the pursuit of wealth. Surely, the evil one has caught you in his spell and arrogance has led you astray! I seek God’s help to fight my passions and yours.

1.132 From an address by ʿAlī responding to ʿUmar’s request for advice on whether he should lead the expedition against the Byzantines:

God has guaranteed to followers of this faith that he will protect their land and guard their honor. He was the one who gave victory to their small band when they struggled to gain the upper hand, and he protected them when they could not protect themselves. He is the everliving who never dies. When you lead the expedition against the enemy, if you engage them and are pushed back, our fighters will have no stronghold to give them refuge and will flee to distant lands. If you are gone, they will have no community to which to return. Instead, dispatch a seasoned fighter accompanied by an experienced and intelligent group of warriors. If God grants them victory, then you have achieved your goal. If the outcome is otherwise, then you will still be here to harbor our people and provide a haven to which our warriors can return.

1.133 From an address by ʿAlī. ʿAlī and ʿUthmān exchanged words, whereupon al-Mughirah ibn al-Akhnas said to ʿUthmān, “I will take care of him for you.” ʿAlī thundered at Mughirah:

You son of a barren, cursed father, of a tree without root or branch, you will see to me? By God, no man you support will ever obtain God’s aid, no man you prop up will remain standing! Be gone, may God starve you of rain, and do your worst! And if you do, may God see to you!

---

1 In Medina, in 15/636, just before ʿUmar, the second Sunni caliph, participated in the march to Palestine. For details of this episode and the conquest of Syro-Palestine see H 8:298–300; B 481; ʿTabari, Tārīkh, 3:698. Similar context and language in §1.144, re ʿUmar’s march against the Persians.

2 The incident took place in Medina soon after Abū Dharr’s death in exile in Rabadhah in 32/652, when ʿUthmān resolved to also send ʿAmmār into exile. ʿAlī objected, and Mughirah—a close associate of ʿUthmān’s who would be killed alongside him—came, along with Zayd ibn Thābit, as ʿUthmān’s emissary, to remonstrate with and threaten ʿAlī (Ibn Aṯam, Futūḥ, 238o). Al-Mughirah ibn al-Akhnas—whose brother, Abū al-Hakam, ʿAlī had killed at the Battle of Uḥud (details in H 8:301–303)—was ʿAlī’s keen enemy. On disagreements between ʿAlī and ʿUthmān during the latter’s caliphate, see H 9:23–30.
ومن كلام له عليه السلام

لم تكن بيتككم إيّاً فلتة وليس أمري وأمركم واحدًا إيّاً أريدكم الله وأتتم ترديوني لأنفسكم. ألني الناس أعنيوني على أنفسكم وأيّم الله لأنصفن المظلوم ولاقودن الظلم بحزمته حتى أورده منهل الحق وإن كان كارهاً.

ومن كلام له عليه السلام في معنى طلحة والزبير

وأيّم الله ما أنكروا منكروا ولا جعلوا بيني وبينهم نصفا وإنهم ليطلبون حقا تركوه ودموا هم سفكوه فإن كنت شريكهم فيه فإنّ لهم نصيبهم منه وإن كانوا وله دوني فما الطلبة إلا قبلهم وإن أول عدلهم للحكم على أنفسهم وإن معي لبصيري ما لبست ولا لبّس علي وإنها للثقة الباغية فيها الجهل والخاطية والشيكة المغيدة وإن الأمر واضح ود زاه البطل عن نصابه وأنقطع لسانه عن شغبه وأيّم الله لأفرطن لهم حوضًا أنا ماتته لا يصدرون عنه بري ولا يعبون بعده في حسي.
Chapter 1: Orations

1.134  From an address by ‘Ali:
Your oath of allegiance to me was not sworn on an impulse, and, furthermore, our intentions are not the same: I pursue you for the sake of God, while you pursue me for your own ends. People, help me to make you better! By God, I shall bring justice to the oppressed! I shall drag the oppressor by his nose-ring until I bring him kicking and screaming to the waterhole of truth!

1.135  From an address by ‘Ali regarding Ṭalḥah and Zubayr:

1.135.1  By God, they have no cause to fault me, nor is the dispute they raise a fair one. They demand from me a right they abandoned and vengeance for blood they spilt. If I had been their partner in this affair, they would still have their share of culpability. But if they have undertaken it on their own—which they have—then they should be the target of vengeance, and the first justice they mete out should be against themselves. But my conviction has not deserted me, and I have never deceived nor been deceived! They are the treacherous faction! Their insides are filled with dark slime, scorpion venom, and black suspicions. But the truth has become clear. Falsehood’s grinding mill has been pushed out of its pivot, and its tongue has been curbed from inciting evil. By God, I shall fill the waterhole for them as only I can—they shall neither leave it sated nor ever drink again from a smooth-bottomed pond!

1.135.2  From the same address:

1  From ‘Ali’s oration in Medina, soon after his accession to the caliphate in 35/656, referring to ‘Abdallāh ibn ‘Umar ibn al-Khaṭṭāb, Sa’d ibn Abī Waqqāṣ, Muḥammad ibn Maslamah, Ḥassān ibn Thābit, and Usāmah ibn Zayd, who refused to pledge allegiance to him and decided to sit out the ongoing conflict. Mufīd, Irshād, 1:243, which also includes earlier lines from this oration.
2  Refers to ‘Umar’s statement, “The oath of allegiance to Abū Bakr was driven by an impulse (faltah), but God protected the community from its evil. Whoever repeats such an action must be killed” (Ḥ 9:31; B 482), narrated widely in both Shi‘i and Sunni sources.
3  From ‘Ali’s oration in Dhū Qār just before he left for Basra to fight his challengers at the Battle of the Camel, in 36/656 (Mufīd, Irshād, 1:251). See similar lines in § 1.10 and § 1.22.
4  The commentators state that the definite article “al-” in al-fiʾah al-bāghiyah (the treacherous faction) indicates ‘Ali’s prior knowledge of this group based on a portent from the Prophet. B 483; Ḥ 9:37.
5  “Dark slime” (ḥama’) is a metaphor for deceit and corruption (B 483); some say it refers to the Qur’anic verse in Ḥijr 15:26, which says humans were made from ḥama’ (Ḥ 9:34). The variant reading “relative” (ḥamā) is a reference to Zubayr, who was the son of Muḥammad’s, and ‘Ali’s, paternal aunt (ibid.).
6  Refers to the Muslims in Medina—including Ṭalḥah and Zubayr—who rushed to ‘Ali after ‘Uthmān’s death, insisting that he accept their oath of allegiance (bayʿah). First lines are similar to § 1.3.4 (Shiqšiqīyyah), § 1.53, § 1.226.
فأقبلهم إليّ إقبال العُوذ المِطاقيل على أولادها تقولون البيعة البيعة قبضت كتبي
فبسطتوما ونازعتكم يدي فرّاحتوما. اللهم إنها قطعاني وظلماني وتكب يعتني وألّبا
الناس على فاحشة ما عقدا ولا تحكم لهما ما أبرما وأرّهما المساءة فيما أمّلا وعملًا. ولقد
استتبثهما قبل القتال وأستنفت بهما أمام الوقاع فعلمًا النعمة ورداً العافية.

1.136 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام في ذكر الملاححم

1.136.1 يعطّف الحوى على الهدى إذا عطفوا الهدى على الهوى ويعطف الرأي على
القرآن إذا عطفوا القرآن على الرأي.

منها

1.136.2 حتى تقوم الحرب بكم على ساق باديًا نواجهها مموهة أخلاقها حيًا رضاعها علقمًا
عاقبتها ألا وفي غد وسيأتي غد بما لا تعرفون يأخذ الوالي من غيرها عملها على مساوي
أعمالها وتخرج له الأرض أفعالك كبدها وتلقي إليه سلمًا مقاليدها فيريكم كيف؛ عدل
السيرة ويخلي مبّت الكتب والسنة.

منها

1.136.3 ان شاء الله: كذا ي، وصححه في ش: أصبحت (يكون).
Shouting “the oath! the oath!” you crowded around me like camel mares snuggling their newborn calves. I closed my palm shut, but you forced it open. I snatched my hand away, but you pulled it toward you. I beseech you, O God: Ṭalḥah and Zubayr have severed my ties of kinship, they have wronged me, they have broken their pledge of allegiance, and incited people to march against me. Undo the knots they have tied, unravel the ropes they have twisted, and show them the opposite of what they wish and strive for! Before beginning the fight, I asked them to return to their pledge; before commencing battle, I gave them a second chance; but they have scorned my kindness and rejected my offer of safety.

1.136 From an oration by ‘Alī containing narratives of epic battles:¹

1.136.1 He will bend passion to conform to guidance, where others have bent guidance to conform to passion. He will bend caprice to conform to the Qur‘an, where others have bent the Qur‘an to conform to caprice.

1.136.2 From the same oration:
War will stand fierce among you, baring its teeth, with full udders that are sweet to suckle but leave a bitter aftertaste of gourd.² Be wary of the morrow which will bring you the unknown. A new sovereign will arrive who will punish governors for their injustice. The earth will reveal to him her inner treasures,³ and offer him submissively the keys to her fortress. He will make you walk the path of justice and resurrect what you have killed of the Book and the Sunnah.

1.136.3 From the same oration, about an unjust ruler:⁴

---

¹ Part of ʿAlī’s oration in Basra a few days after the Battle of the Camel in 36/656 (Ṭabrisī, Iḥti-jāj, 1:289–290). The commentators state that the reference in § 1.136.1 and § 1.136.2 is to the Messiah, who will come at the end of time. H 9:40; B 484, R 2:62.
² The Arabic sentence begins with ḥattā (“until”), connecting to the previous part of the text which is not transcribed.
³ Lit. “The earth will reveal the pieces of its liver (afālidh kabidihā).” Translation after Ḥ 9:46; B 485; R 2:62.
⁴ The commentators state that this prophecy refers to the Umayyad caliph ʿAbd al-Malik (r. 65–86/685–705) (H 9:47; B 486), or—unlikely, I think, because of the more immediate context of the lines following—to “a rebel toward the end of time like Sufyānī” (R 2:63), and also because the first few lines are similar to §1.98.3, which also, according to them, refers to ʿAbd al-Malik. Based on the context, I have added the phrase, “about an unjust ruler,” to differentiate the paragraph from the one before.
كأنّي به قد نعّي بالشام وفحص برائها في ضواحي كوفان فعّطفك عليها عطف الضّروس وفرّب الأرض بالرؤوس قد فعّتّ فاغهه وتعلت في الأرض وطأته بعِيد الجولة عظيم الصولة والله ليَشدرَّكِ في أطراف الأرض حتى لا يبقى منك إلا قليل كالكحل في العين فلتألون كذلك حتى تؤوب إلى العرب عوازب أحلامها فألزموا السن القائمة والآثار البيّنة والمعتقد القريب الذي عليه باقي البيّنة وأعلمو أنّ الشيطان إذا يسنّي لكم طرقي لتبتغوا عقبه.

1.137 ومن كلام له عليه السلام في وقت الشورى: لن يسرع أحد قبلي إلى دعوة حقّ وصلة رحم وعائدة كم فأسمعوا قولون وعوا منطقى عسى أن تروا هذا الأمر من بعد هذا اليوم تنتفض فيه السيوح وتُحَمٌّ في ال изделиدحت حتى يكون بعضكم أّمّة لأهل الضلالّة وشيعة لأهل الجهالة.

1.138 ومن كلام له عليه السلام في النبي عن عيب الناس فإِمَّا ينبغي لأهل العصمة والمصنوع إليهم في السلامة أن يرحموا أهل الذنوب والمعصية ويكون الشكر هو الغالب عليهم والجاجز لهم عنهم. فكيف بآثاب الياب أن غاوه وعيبه بلعوا أَمّا ذكر موضوع سأّر الله عليه من ذنوه ما هو أعظم من الذنّب الذي عاه به وكيف بذنه ذنب قد ركب مثله فإن لم يكن ركب ذلك الذنّب بينه فقد عصى الله فيما سواء مّا هو أعظم منه وأمّا الله لّن يل من عصاه في الكبير وعاصه في الصغير لجِرأت على عيب الناس أكبر يا عبد الله لا تعجل في عيب عبد بذنه فلعله مغفر له ولا تأمن على نفسك صغير معصية فلعلك معذّب عليه فلكفف من علم منكم عيب غيره لما يعلم من عيب نفسه. ولكن الشكر شاعلاً له على معافاته ما أَبِيّ بيّ عه.
I can almost see him now as he calls to his flock in Syria and scrapes the ground for his banners to roost in the hinterlands of Kufa. Like an ill-tempered camel mare, he snaps and nips at your townspeople. He carpets its earth with decapitated heads. His jaws wide open, he stamps violently, he ranges far, and his onslaughts are brutal. By God, he will scatter you to the ends of the earth until few remain, as specks of kohl in the eye. You will continue thus until the Arabs’ long-departed reason returns home. During that difficult time, hold fast to established practices and clear traces. Look to your recent era that was stamped by the Prophet’s mark. Know that Satan smooths his pathways to lure you into treading in his steps.

1.137 From an address by ‘Ali during the Shūrā Council:
No one will outpace me in calling to the truth, fostering kinship, or acting with kindness, so listen to my words and pay attention to what I say. You will see swords drawn over this matter after today, and pledges broken; some of you will become leaders of the errant, others, followers of reckless fools.

1.138 From an address by ‘Ali in which he forbade his followers from exposing people’s sins:
It befits those who are protected by good character and blessed with sound judgment to show compassion to sinners and transgressors. Gratitude should be their dominant trait, and it should stop them from pointing fingers. Doesn’t the faultfinder who censures his brother and shames him for his trials remember the times when God concealed his own sins, sins that were far graver than the ones he censures his brother for? How can he condemn his brother for a sin he himself has also committed? Even if he has not committed the exact same crime, he has still disobeyed God in other things, some of which were perhaps more severe. By God, even if he has committed no mortal sin, even if has transgressed only in minor ways, his insolence in shaming others is worse than anything else. O servant of God, don’t rush to expose your fellow man’s offence, perchance God may have forgiven it! Don’t think your small transgression trivial, perchance God may punish you for it! Any man who recognizes that he too has committed shameful acts should refrain from shaming another. Thanksgiving for being spared the other man’s trials should give him occupation enough.

---

2 In Medina, 23/644. Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 4:236; Ḥ 9:49–58; details of Shūrā Council that appointed ʿUthmān in both.
ففسّر عليه السلام عن معنى قوله هذا جميع أصابعه ووضعها بين أذنه وعينه ثم قال الباطل أن تقول سممت وحقّ أن تقول وقيت.

ومن كلام له عليه السلام

وليس لواضع المعروف في غير حقّة وعدن غير أهله من الحكّة فيما أتى إِلّا متحدة اللثام وثمة الأشرار ومقالة الشجّال ما دام منعمًا عليهم ما أجدود بده وهو عن ذات الله ينخف فن أتاه الله مالًا فليصل به القرابه وليحسن منه الضيافة وليفك به الأسير والعاني وليعط منه الفقير والغارم وليصير نفسه على الحقوق والنوائب أبتعث الثواب فإنّ غزوًا بهذه الخصائص شرف مكارم الدنيا ودرك فضائل الآخرة؟

ومن خطبة له عليه السلام في الاستسقاء

ألا وإن الأرض التي تحكمها السماء التي تظلمّك مطيعتان لربكم وما أصبحت تجدون لكم بركتبنا توجّعًا لكم ولا زلفة إليكم ولا نخير ترجوانه منكم ولكن أتمتت بمناعكم فأطاعتنا وأقيمتنا على حدود مصالحكم قامتنا إِن الله يبتي عباده عند الأعمال

م، ي، مصحّحة في ش، ه: كذا، ن، وأصل ش، ه: الناس، 20 م، ن، ي، م، ومسحّحة

في ش: كذا. أصل ش، وزيادة في م: أضيفت "إن شاء الله".

al-Sharīf al-Raḍī - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
1.139 From an address by ‘Alī: ¹
People! Whoever knows his brother to have strong faith and good ways should not give ear to the rumors men spread about him. An archer may shoot, and his arrows may stray, but words always wound, and unjust words bring perdition, for God is listening and witnessing. The span of four fingers separates truth from falsehood.

‘Alī was asked about the meaning of this statement, upon which he lined up his fingers and placed them between his ear and his eye, then said:
“‘I heard,” is false. “‘I saw,” is true.

1.140 From an address by ‘Alī: ²
A person who distributes gifts in unsuitable quarters and makes presents to undeserving people earns only the praise of the immoral, the tribute of the wicked, and the commendation of the ignorant. As long as he continues to show favor, these churls exclaim, “What a generous hand he possesses!” Yet, when called to spend in God’s name, he is tightfisted. If God has granted a person wealth, he should use it to help kin, feed the guest, free the captive and the hostage, ³ and give to the mendicant and the debtor. Even when difficult, he should pay his dues and endure adversities to earn God’s reward. These virtues, if won, bring honor in this world and merit in the next.

1.141 From an oration by ‘Alī in which he supplicated God for rain:

1.141.1 Hark! The earth that carries you and the sky that shades you obey their Lord. They favor you with their generous blessings not because they pity you, or seek to endear themselves to you, or hope for your reward, rather, they have been commanded to provide you with benefit and they obey, they have been appointed to ensure your welfare and they comply. Hear me! When God’s servants do evil things, he tests them by reducing fruits, curtailing blessings,

---

¹ The “span of four fingers” line is included in the following report by al-‘Aṣbagh ibn Nubātah: The Byzantine Emperor wrote ten questions to Mu‘āwiya, who could not answer, and sent a rider to ‘Alī with the questions. Among the questions was this one, “What is the distance between truth and falsehood?” (Thaqāfi, Ghārāt, 11:187–188). Presumably in Kufa, toward the end of ‘Alī’s life in 40/661.

² Excerpt from an oration—including § 1.95 and § 1.124—delivered at Ṣiffīn (37/657), when ‘Alī’s associates informed him of Mu‘āwiya’s lavish rewards and urged him to do the same. Ḥarrānī, Tuḥaf, 185; Minqarī, Waqʿaṭ Ṣiffīn, 235.

³ Ar. ‘ānī, lit. “the exhausted,” is translated here as “the hostage,” based on the interpretation of the word as synonymous to “the captive” (asīr). H 974; B 490; R 263.
السياحة بنقص الأثريات وحبس اليرقات وإغلاق حيائل الخريات ليتوزب ويتغلب
مقلع ويتكرر متكرر ويزود يزود وقد جعل الله سبحة الاستغفار سبباً لدُور
الرزق ومحدة للواقفة فقال: "استغفرنا ربك إنه كان غفاراً يرسل السماء على
ويمدُّ كرَّاً بأموال وبيين". فرحمة الله آمروه استقبل توبته وأستقال خطبته ووادر
منته.
and locking away treasures, so that any who are stirred to repent, to stop sinning, to listen to reminders, and to heed reproach, may do so. God has made a man's quest for forgiveness the cord that releases sustenance, and his mercy for the world, and he instructs, «Ask your Lord for forgiveness, for he is ever forgiving—he will make the sky pour rain and provide you with wealth and children.»

May God show mercy to the person who hastens to repent, renounces sin, and races against death!

1.141.2 God, we have ventured out to you from under shades and shelters, prompted by the heartrending groans of our cattle and our children. We seek your compassion, implore your abundant blessings, and fear your punishment and retribution. God, give us water to drink, send us rain! Do not place us among the disheartened, do not destroy us with years of drought,² do not take us to task for what the foolish among us have done,³ O most compassionate one! God, we have ventured out under the sky to complain of things that are not hidden from you: rough constrictions have made us desperate, ruinous droughts have caused us anguish, extreme indigence has made us weak, and severe trials have banded against us. God, we beseech you, do not turn us away with empty hands! Do not send us back battered by grief! Do not chastise us for our sins! Do not measure us by our deeds! God, spread over us your rainclouds, your grace, your sustenance, and your compassion. Give us water, beneficial, quenching, and refreshing. Let it cause to grow what has withered and revive what has died. Give us drenching rain that yields abundant, ripe fruit. Let it quench plains, make pools overflow, urge trees to leaf and food prices to come down. Doubtless, you are powerful over all that you will.

1.142 From an oration by ʿAlī:

1.142.1 God singled out messengers and sent them bearing his revelation, making them his proof against the people and giving them no cause to say he had stopped providing them with signs—thus, he continually called them to the path of right with the tongue of truth. Hark! God surveils all people, not because he is ignorant of the guarded secrets and the innermost thoughts they conceal,

---

1 Qurʾan, Nūḥ 71:10–12.
2 Lit. “Do not destroy us with those years.” Reference to Qurʾan, Aʿrāf 7:130, where Pharaoh's people are seized with years of drought.
3 Reference to Qurʾan, Aʿrāf 7:155, where Moses's people beg forgiveness for having worshipped the Golden Calf.
الخلق كشفاه لا أنه جنُل ما أخفوه من مَّسْوَن أسرارهم ومكتون ضمائرهم ولكن
ليرواهم "إِبِيْه أَحْسَن عَمَلًا" فتكون الثواب جزاء والعاقب بَوَاء
أَيْنَ الَّذين زعموا أنَّهم "الرَّأْسُوَنَ في الْعَلَمِ" دونا كذَبًا وبغية علينا أن رفعنا الله
ووضعهم وأطعانا وحرهم وأدخلنا وأخرجهم. نأ يستمعي الهمد ويستجلع العمي إن
الأمة من قريش غُرَسوا في هذا البطن من هاشم لا تصلح على سواء ولا تصلح الولاة
من غيرهم.

منها
آَرَوا عاجلًا وأُرَوا آجَلًا وتركوا صافحًا وشردوا آجَلًا. كأَيْ أنظر إلى فاستعمهم وقد
صحب المنكر فأَلفِنَّه وبِيئته ووافقه حتَّى شاَت عليه مفارقه واصغت به خلائقه ثمّ أقبل
مَّرَبُدًا كأَنتَار لا يبلِي ما غَرَق أو كيوق النار في الهشيم لا يحفل ما حَرَق. أَيْنَ العقول
المستصباحة بمصايب الهمد والأبصار اللاحقة إلى منار النقوى أَيْن القلب التي وُهبت
لله ووعوقدت على طاعة الله. أَزدَحوا على الحطام وشاحوا على الحرام ورفع لهم علم الجنة
والنار فصاروا عن الجنة وجهوهما وأقبلوا إلى النار بأعمالهم دعاهم ربيهم فنَفروا وولوا
ودعاهمة الشيطان فأَستجابوا وأقبلوا.

ومن خطبة له على السلام
1.143.1 آَثِب النَّاس إِنَّما أنتِم في هذه الدنيا غَرَض تنتضل فيه المنايا مع كل جُرَعة شَرَقٍ
وفي كلّ كَلِيَة غُصَص لا تتألُّون منها نعمة إلا بفراق أخرى ولا يعمر معمر متك白马 من
but because he wishes to test them, to see «who among them performs the best deeds.»¹ His reward is just recompense, and his punishment is equitable retaliation.

Where are the people who claim that they, not we, are the ones «firmly rooted in knowledge»?² Their claim is false and treacherous, for God has raised us and lowered them, favored us and deprived them, admitted us and excluded them. It is from us that guidance is to be sought and blindness cured. The Imams of Quraysh sprout from the seedbed of Hāshim. No others are fit for the Imamate. No others are fit to rule.³

1.142.2 From the same oration:
They prioritized the present and put off the hereafter, rejected what is pure and drank what is foul. I can almost see their libertines as they go about befriending sin, growing familiar and intimate with it, and staying with it till their hair turns grey, till its dye stains their character; then they step forward, like a foaming torrent that cares not whom it drowns, or like sparks of fire falling on straw that care not what they burn. Where are the minds illumined by lamps of guidance, the eyes that looked to piety’s beacon? Where are the hearts that gave themselves to God and bound themselves to his obedience? These people here crowded around worldly baubles and quarreled over forbidden things. Banners for both paradise and hellfire were raised before them, but they averted their faces from paradise and set out to earn hellfire. When their Lord called to them, they turned and bolted. When Satan called to them, they answered him and rushed forward.

1.143 From an oration by ‘Ali:⁴

1.143.1 People! You are targets in this world at which the fates shoot their arrows. With every sip you choke, with every bite you gag. You obtain no blessing without giving up another. No one lives for a day without erasing a day from his allotted time, he consumes nothing without depleting his apportioned sus-

---

¹ Qur’an, Kahf 18:7.
² Qur’an, Āl ʿImrān 3:7.
³ ‘The Imamate is vested in Quraysh’ (al-imāmatu fī l-Quraysh) is a hadith attributed to the Prophet Muhammad. The Shi’i commentator takes ‘Ali’s lines about it being confined to the clan of Hāshim, as confirmation that the Imamate is vested solely in the Prophet’s family (B 494). The Sunni commentator—who acknowledges that if ‘Ali said this then it must be true—takes it as an optimal, but not required, state of affairs (H 9:88).
⁴ In Ḥarrānī, Ṭubaf, 98, § 1.143.1 is an excerpt from a longer, aphoristic oration titled The Intercessor (Wasīlah). Other excerpts are § 3.29, § 3.99, § 3.103, § 3.175, and § 3.195.
عمره إلاّ بهدم آخر من أجله ولا تجدّد له زيادة في أخمه إلاّ ينفاد ما قبلها من رزقه ولا يحيا له أثر إلاّ مات له أثر ولا يجدّد له جديد إلاّ بعد أن يخلق له جديّد ولا تقوم له نابتة إلاّ وتسقط منه محصوله! وقد مضت أصول نحن فروعها فما بقاء فرع بعد ذهاب أصله.

1.143.2 منها

واما تحدثت بدعه إلاّ تلك بها سنة فأثقو البدع واللزموا المهمين إن عوازم الأمور أفضلها وإن حديثتها شرارة.

1.144 ومن كلام له عليه السلام وقد أستشاره عمر بن الخطاب في الشخص لقتال الفرس بنفسه

إن هذا الأمر لم يكن نصره ولا خذلته بكثرة ولا بقيلة وهو خدي الحال الذي أظهره وجنده الذي أعده وأعداه حتى بلغ ما بلغ وطلف حيث طلف ونحن على موعود من الله واله منجز ووعد وناصر جنده. ومكان القيّم بالأمر مكان الالتزام من الخير يجمعه ويضمه فإن آنقطع النظام تفرق وذهب ثمّ لم يمتّ بحذافيره أبدًا. والعرب اليوم وإن كانوا قليلاً فهم كثيرون بالإسلام عزيزون بالاجتماع فكن قطبًا وأستدِّر الرحا بالعرب وأصولهم دونك نار الحرب فإنك إن شخت من هذه الأرض اثبتت عليك العرب من أطرافها وأقطارها حتى يكون ماتدع وراءه من العورات أهمّ إلك ما بين بديك. إن الأعاجم إن ينظروا إليك غداً يقولوا هذا أصل العرب فإذا أقتطعتمو أسترحم فيكون ذلك أشدّ لكمهم عليك وطمعهم فيك فأما ما ذكرت من مسير القوم إلى قتال المسلمين فإن الله سمحه أن أكره لمسيريهم منها وهو أقدر على تغيير ما يكره وأما ما ذكرت من عددهم فإنّما لم تكن نقاتل فيما مضى بالكثرة وإنّما كننا نقاتل بالنصر والمعونة.

الم، ش، ي، ه: كـد.أ، ومصّحّحة في ش: (مخضود).
tenance, no sign of him is revitalized without another dying out, no new clothes are given to him except after the earlier ones have worn out, and no new shoots grow except after the dead wood is cut down. The roots have gone, and we are their branches—how long can a branch survive after its root has died?

1.143.2 From the same oration:
No heresy is innovated without an accepted practice being abandoned, so fear innovations and keep to the highway. The ancient ways are best, the newfangled ones are evil.

1.144 From an address by ʿAlī to ʿUmar ibn al-Khaṭṭāb responding to his request for advice on whether he should lead the expedition to fight the Persians:¹
In this matter, victory or defeat will not hinge on how large the number of troops is or how small. This is God’s faith that he has made victorious, and his army that he has prepared and equipped, until it reached what it has, and spread where it has. We await the fulfilment of God’s pledge—God will fulfil his pledge and grant his victory to his army.² The custodian of the caliphate is like a string to beads, it gathers them and holds them together. If the string breaks, they scatter and disperse and are never whole again. The Arabs, though few today, are many by virtue of Islam, and mighty because they are united. You should be the pivot that spins them like grain in your mill. Have them brave the fires of war instead of you. If you leave the region, the Bedouins will swoop in from all sides and from the peripheries until the unguarded areas you leave behind will give you far more cause for concern than the ones that lie before you. If the Persians see you tomorrow, they will say, “Here is the Arab’s tree trunk, cut him down, and you can sit back!” Their rage against you will become rabid, and their hunger to get you intensify. Yes, as you say, they march to fight the Muslims. But God detests their expedition more than you do, and he has more power to change what he detests. As for what you say about their numbers, we didn’t fight in the past on the strength of superior numbers. We fought on the strength of God’s support and aid.

¹ Madāʾīnī (Futūḥ, lost, cited by Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd) places this address before the Battle of Qādisiyyah in ca. 16/637, and Ṭabarī (Tārīkh, 4:124) before the Battle of Nahāwand in 21/642, both against the Persians—details from both works are transcribed in H 9:96–102; B 497. Similar context and language in § 1.132 re ʿUmar’s march against the Byzantines.

² Reference to Prophet Muḥammad’s hadith (الحمد لله الذي أنجز وعده ونصر عبده وهزهم الأحزاب), narrated in, e.g., Ibn Ḥanbal, Musnad, § 4907.
ومن خطبة له عليه السلام

1.145.1

فبعث محمداً بالحق ليخرج عباده من عبادة الأوثان إلى عبادته ومن طاعة

الشيطان إلى طاعة قبران قد بَيّنَه وأحكمه لِيَعلم العباد رَبِّهم إذ جحاوه وُقِّروا به بعد

إذ بَغدو وليبينته بعد إذ أنكره فتجلي سباقته لهم في كتابه من غير أن يكونوا رأو بما

أراهم من قدرته وخوفهم من سطوته وكيف محق من محق بالمثلات وأحتحض من

أحتحض بالتمامات.

1.145.2

والله سبحانه وتعالى عليه سبحانه وتعالى من بعد زمان ليس فيه شيء أخفى من الحق ولا أظهر من

الباطل ولا أكثر من الكذب على الله ورسوله وليس عبد أهل ذلك الزمان سلعة أبَو

من الكتاب إذ أتَّلَ حق تلاؤته ولا أتقت منه إذا حرف عن مواضعه ولا في البلاد شيء

أنكر من المعروف ولا أعرف من المنكر. فقد نبى الكتاب حملته وتناساه حفظته الكتاب

يؤمن وأهله منفِّيُون طريقان وصاحبان مصطفبان في طريق واحد لا يؤهلهما مؤَو

فالكتب وأهله في ذلك الزمان في الناس وليسا فيهم ومعهم ليس معهم لأن الضالة

لا توافق الحدي وإن آتَجتمعا واجتمع القوم على الفرقة وأقترقا عن الجماعة كأنهم أتَّم

الكتب وليس الكتاب إمامهم فلم يبق على عدته منهم إلا أنفسه ولا يعرفون إلا حذره وزيarah.

ومن قبل ما مثِّلوا بالصالحين كل مَثْلٍ وسُمِّوا صدَقَه ث على الله فَرِيقة وجعلوا في الحسنة

العروبة السِّمَّية. وإنما هلك من كان يلقب بطل آمهم وتغييب أباهم حتى نزل بهم

الموعد الذي ترد عنه المعدرة وترفع عنه التوبة وتحل معه القارة والنَّقمة.

1.145.3

آية الناس إنه من استنصبح الله وفَق ومن أخذ قوله دليلًا أليِّه ياً أقوم فإن جار الله آمن وعدوه خائف فإنَّه لا ينبغي ليَم عرف عظمة الله أن يتعمَّم

م، ي، وصحبة في ه: كذا. ن، ش، وأصل ه، ونسخة في ه: بدون ال"عقوبة".  

al-Sharif al-Radi - 978-90-04-68260-3  
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM  
via Open Access.  
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
1.145 From an oration by ‘Ali:¹

1.145.1 God sent Muhammad to turn his servants from worship of idols to his worship, from obeying Satan to his obedience. He sent him with the truth, with a clear and comprehensive Qurʾan, so his servants may know how to recognize their Lord after their earlier ignorance of him, that they may acknowledge him after prior repudiation, and accept him after previous denial. He, the Most Luminous, unveiled to them in his Book without their ever seeing him, by showing them his power, warning them of his rule, and reminding them that he had destroyed nations with his strong reckoning and reaped lives in harsh punishment.

1.145.2 After I am gone, you will see a time when there will be nothing more suppressed than right, nothing more dominant than wrong, and nothing more prevalent than false attributions to God and his Messenger. No commodity will be worth less than the Book’s proper recitation or valued more than its blatant corruption. Nothing anywhere will be less familiar than good or more prominent than evil. Those who had upheld the Book will have cast it away, and those who had memorized it will pretend they remember nothing. On that day, the Book and its Companions will be banished into exile, two friends walking together whom no one is willing to shelter. In that age, the Book and its Companions will be among the people yet not among them, they will be with the people yet not with them, for error is not compatible with righteousness, even if they come together in one place. People will unite in their dissension, they will splinter from the congregation, they will think themselves to be imams who rule the Book rather than realizing that the Book is the Imam who rules them. Nothing of the Book will remain with them except its name, they will know nothing of it but its script and scrolls. In all this time, they will continue to inflict torture on the pious, mislabel their truths as lies against God, and requite their good with evil. You should know that those who lived before you perished because they harbored long hopes and neglected their diminishing lifespans. The end befell them as promised—a time when all excuses are rejected, all opportunity to repent removed, and calamity and punishment come home to roost.

1.145.3 People! Those who seek God’s counsel receive direction, those who take his word as guide are led to «the path that is straightest»,² and those whom

¹ From ‘Ali’s oration at Dhū Qār, just before the Battle of the Camel at Basra in 36/656. Kulaynī, Kāfī, 8:386–391.
² Qurʾan, Isrāʾ 17:9.
في إن رفعة الذين يعلمون ما عظمته أن يتواضعوا له وسلامة الذين يعلمون ما قدرته أن يستسلموا له فلا تنيروا من الحق نفار الصحيح من الأجرب والبارء من ذي السقم وأعلموا أنكم لن تعرفوا الرشد حتى تعرفوا الذي تركه ولن تأخذوا بميثاق الكتاب حتى تعرفوا الذي قضه ولن تمسكوا به حتى تعرفوا الذي نبذه فآتمنوا ذلك من عند أهله فإنهم عيش العلم وموت الجهل هم الذين يخربكم حكمهم عن علمهم وصحتهم عن منطقهم وظاهرهم عن ناطبهم لا يتألفون الذين ولا يتألفون فيهم فهو بينهم شاهد صادق وصامت ناطق.

1.146 ومن خطية له عليه السلام في ذكر أهل البصرة كل أحد منهما يرجع الأمر له ويعطبه عليه دون صاحبه لا يمتنأ إلى الله بخيل ولا يمدأ إليه بسبب كل أحد منهما حامل ضب لصاحبه ومن قال يكشف قناعه به والله أتى أصابوا الذي يريدون لينزعج هذا نفس هذا ولأتيين هذا على هذا قد قامت الفئة الباغية فإن المنتمبون قد سنن لهم السن وقدم لهم الخير لكل ضلبة علة وكل ناكث شبهة والله لا أكون كمستمع اللدمع يسمع الناعي ويخضر البكي ثم لا يعتبر؟

م، ي، د، ونسخة في ش: كدان، وأصل ش: (حليمهم)، 2، ش: كدام، ي، ه: سقطت (ثم لا يعتبر).
God protects are safe, while those who challenge him are fearful. All who recognize God’s greatness should avoid self-glorification, for real exaltation comes from humility before God, just as the security of those who know God’s power comes from their submission to him. So shy not away from the truth, like the healthy from the mangy, or the sound from the sick. Know this: you will not recognize guidance until you know who has abandoned it, you will not abide by your pledge to the Book until you know who has broken it, you will not hold fast to it until you know who has cast it aside. Seek the truth from the people of truth. They are the life of knowledge and the death of ignorance. Their judgments reveal to you their knowledge, their silence tells you of their reason, and their outward aspect shows you their inner being. They never violate religion or diverge from its laws—it is always among them as a truthful witness and a silent speaker.

1.146 From an oration by ʿAlī about the people of Basra:¹

Each of the two wants the caliphate, he maneuvers it toward himself and away from the other, with no rope in this affair connecting them to God, no cord attaching them to him. Each of the two harbors the malice of a treacherous, spiny-tailed lizard against his companion,² and before long, he will remove his mask. By God, if they got what they wanted, each would assault the other, each would threaten the other’s life. Behold! The treacherous faction has risen! Are there any among you who would seek God’s reward? Clear paths have been laid out for you and you have warnings from the past. Every error has a trigger, and every breach is prompted by doubt. By God, I shall not be like the hyena listening meekly to the sound of pebbles being thrown,³ nor yet like the person who hears a death proclaimed and sees the mourners but pays no heed.⁴

---

1 The “people of Basra” refers to those who fought ʿAlī in the Battle of the Camel, outside Basra in 36/656; the oration is from the lead-up to the battle, and “the two” refers to two of his three chief adversaries in the battle, Ṭalḥah and Zubayr (the third was ʿĀʾishah, who is not mentioned), (Ḥ 9:109; B 502; R 2:75). Details of the battle in Ḥ 9:111–115.

2 Lit. ⟨he carries a spiny-tailed lizard⟩ (ḥāmil ḍabb), a proverb that signifies betrayal; the spiny-tailed lizard is said to devour its young. B 502.

3 Lit. “the one who listens to the sound of pebbles hitting the ground” (ka-mustamiʿ al-ladm). My translation, with the insertion of the word “hyena,” is based on Ḥ 9:109–113; R 2:75–76. The same simile, with an explicit mention of the word hyena, is used in §1.6; see note there for details. Other commentators explain the phrase non-zoologically, connecting it with events alluded to in the next two phrases, as “the sound of hitting and weeping as a sign of danger,” B 502, and, in a similar vein, “slapping on the face and chest as an act of mourning,” A 627.

4 Refers to Ṭalḥah and his companions’ killing of Ḥakīm ibn Jabalah and his followers in Basra before the Battle of the Camel, 36/656. Ḥ 9:110.
1.147 ومن كلام له عليه السلام قبل موتته

أمها الناس كلاً أميرًا لا يرقّ منه في فارائه والأجل مسايق النفس والهرب

منه موافاته كم أطيرت الأماكن أثبته عن مكنون هذا الأمر فأبى الله إخفاء هبّات

علم مخزون. أما وصيّ الله فكان لا تشركون به شيئًا وحَمَّد فلا تضيعوا سنّته. أقيموا هذين

العمودين وأوقدو هذين المصباحين وخلاكم لَّو ما لم تشردوا. حمل كلاً أميرًا مجهوده

وجنين من الجهلة. رب رحيم ودين قويه و임ام علم. أتين بالآمس صاحبكم وأنا اليوم

عَبرة لِكِم وعَدًا مفارقكم غفر الله لي ولكم إن تثبت الوطأة في هذه المنزلة فذاك وإن

تدحّض القدمين فإنا كنا في أفِئاء أغصان ومناب رياح وحنّت طل غيام في الحَلّ متخلفة وعَفا في الأرض مخَطّونًا. وإنَّما كانت جارًا جاوركم بدني آيامًا وستعقبون

مني جَهْة خلاء ساكنة بعد حراس وصامتة بعد نُطريق ليعظمهم هدوي و štoخو Abilities

وسكون أطرافي فإنا أوعظ المعتربين من المنطق البليغ والقول المسموع. وداعم وداع

أمراء مُرَصد للتناقلي غداً ترون آيامك ويكشف لكم عن سرئي وتعزوفني بعد خلو

مكناني وقيام غيري مقامي.

1.148 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام في الملاحح

1.148.1 وأخذوا يمتنًا وشملًا ظعًا في مسألة الغي وتركًا لمذاهب الرشد فلا

تستعجلوا ما هو كائن مُرصَد ولا تستبطلو ما يجيء به الغد فكم من مستعمل بما إن أدرك

ود أن لم يدرك وما أقرب اليوم من تبشير غدا. يوم هذا إبان ورود كل مستوع ودون

من طلعة ما لا تعرفون ألا وإن من أدركها من يسري فيها سراج منير ويخذو فيها على

١:٤ نـ، ش، وِيِدُ وَهـِي، وَنـُسْخَةُ فِيهِ كَدَاـمَ، وَأَوْصُـهُ: طَعَأً.
1.147 From an address by ‘Ali just before his death:\(^1\)

People! Each person shall meet what he flees as he flees,\(^2\) for death is the place toward which the soul is driven and running away only brings it closer. How many days I wasted searching for the answer to this mystery, but God would not allow it to be revealed! Far from it! A guarded piece of knowledge! My testament is this: Hold fast to God and do not assign him partners. Hold fast to Muhammad and do not squander his Sunnah. Erect these two pillars, kindle these two lamps, and, as long as you do not bolt from their stable, no blame will attach to you. Each person is made to carry his own burden, although the ignorant masses are given a lighter load. Your Lord is compassionate, your religion is strong, and your Imam is endowed with knowledge. Yesterday I was your companion, today I am a lesson for you to heed, and tomorrow I shall leave you. May God pardon both you and me. If my foot regains its balance on this slippery ground, then that was meant to be. But if it slips, then know that the shade of the tree of life is intermittent, winds come and go, clouds that cast shadows are soon dispersed, and signs are quick to vanish. For a while I was your companion, my body your neighbor. Soon you will see my empty corpse, motionless after having movement, silent after possessing speech. Let the quiet of my pose, the closing of my eyes, the stillness of my limbs, teach you a lesson, a lesson more effective than eloquent speech and loud words. I bid you farewell, eager for my meeting with God! Tomorrow, when you will look back on my life, my worth will be revealed to you. You will know me then, when my seat is empty, and someone else has taken my place.

1.148 From an oration by ‘Ali containing accounts of epic events:

1.148.1 Those others went right and left, travelling the paths of error and forsaking the roads of guidance. People, don’t be impatient for the arrival of an anticipated event or deem slow tomorrow’s child! Many’s the person impatient for a thing that, were he to attain it, would wish he never had. How close is today to the glimmer of tomorrow! This is the moment when all that is promised begins. The dawn of a time you will not recognize is come. Hark! A man from our family will witness this time, and he will traverse the night with a bright lamp.\(^3\) He will follow the example of the pious, loosen that which is bound,

---

1 Part of a testament—that includes § 2.23—delivered in his home in Kufa in 40/661, where he was carried after the deathblow. Kulaynî, Kāfī, 1:299.
2 Reference to Qur’an, Jumʿah 62:8.
3 Interpreted as referring to the “Rightly Guided” Messiah from the family of the Prophet, “Mahdi,” who will come at the end of time (H 9:128–129; B 5:63; R 2:82). I have added the word “family” for clarity; the Arabic is more cryptic, “a man from among us.”
مثال النبلاء الذين يجل فيهما ربة ويعتق رفقة ويصعد شعبًا ويشعب صدَفًا في سترة عن الناس لا يبصر القائم أثره ونواب نظره ثم ليشهدن فيها قوم مُتَحَد التَّمَين النصلى يجلي بالتنزيل أبصارهم ويمر بالتفسير في مساعيهم ويقبلون كأس الحكمة بعد الصبح.

1.148.2

وصن الأنداد منهم ليستكبلوا الخزي ويستوجبوا الغير حتى إذا أخلوَّل الأجل وأستراح قوم إلى الفتن وأشتدوا عن لقاح حرهم لم يَتُنا على الله بالصرى ولم يستعظموا بذل أنفسهم في الحق حتى إذا فاق وارد القضاء أنقطع مدة البلاء حملوا بصائرهم على أسيافهم ودنا لهم بعثهم بأمر واعظمهم.

1.148.3

حتى إذا قبض الله رسوله صلى الله عليه وآله رفع قوم على الأعقاب وغالتهم السيل واتكلوا على الولائم ووصوا غير الرحم وهموا السبب الذي أمروا بمدته ونُقِلَوا البناء عن رأس أسسه فنبو في غير وضعه عفاد كل خطبة وأبواب كل ضارب في غمرة قد ماروا في الخبرة وذَلُوا في السكرة على سنة من آل فرعون من منقطع إلى الدنيا راكن أو مفارق للدين مبكر.
free those who are in bondage, sunder those who share a bond, and unite those who are dispersed. In all this, he will remain concealed from the people; no tracker will uncover his traces no matter how keenly he scans the ground. Then, a group will rise with resolve sharpened like a whetted sword.¹ Their eyes will be opened by the Revealed Book, their ears will be filled with its interpretation, and they will be served the cup of wisdom morning and night.

1.148.2 From the same oration:
Their term was prolonged so they could finish their shameful deeds and deserve to be struck with cataclysms.² Then, when that era’s fabric frayed,³ while one group became comfortable with sedition and refused to impregnate war’s camel, another group endured without thinking that in laying down their lives for truth, they were doing God a favor, or anything more that they should. Finally, when the period of tribulation ended as ordained, they unsheathed their swords to spread their beliefs and drew close to their Lord at their guide’s command.

1.148.3 Then, when God took back his Messenger, one group turned on their heels, and followed roads that tempted them into the waterless waste.⁴ They relied on treachery,⁵ cultivated other people but not the Prophet’s family,⁶ and abandoned his kin, whom they had been commanded to love.⁷ Uprooting the edifice from its fortified foundation, they erected it in the wrong location. These people are mother lodes of every sin and entry ways for those who set out on dangerous waters. In the manner of Pharaoh’s family, they drifted without comprehension, intoxicated and confounded. Some devoted themselves to the world and inclined toward it, others deserted and discarded the faith.

---

¹ Lit. “a group will rise sharpened like a whetted sword.” I have added “with resolve” based on Ḥ 9:328; alternatively, “with minds” (B 506).
² Interpreted as referring to an errant faction who usurped rule (Ḥ 9:330; B 507); enemies of the family of the Prophet (R 2:82).
³ Ar. ikhlawanqa, translation based on R 2:82; B 507. Or, “became ready to rain down,” said of a cloud, or “were razed to the ground,” said of a house. Ḥ 9:330.
⁴ This segment may follow from the previous one (R 2:85), or it is a new segment (B 507). Ṭabarī-Āmulī (Mustarshid, 401) prefaces §1.48.3 by saying that a group of people had harbored malice against ʿAlī since the time of the Prophet, and after his death, their enmity came into the open. He cites the full address.
⁵ Ar. walāyi, translated as “treachery” after R 2:85; or “partisans,” B 508.
⁶ Lit. “not the family”; translation based on Ḥ 9:332; B 508.
1.149 ومن خطة له عليه السلام

1.149.1 وأستعينه على مدار الحشطن ومراجرى الاعتصام من حبائه ومحاته. وأشهد أن محمدًا عبده ورسوله ونجيبه وصموته لا يوارى فضله ولا يجبر قفده أضواءه بِهِمَّ البلاد. بعد الصلابة المظلمة والجهالة الغالبة والجفوة الجافة والناس يستخلون الحريم ويسدلون الحكم يحيون على فترة ويذرون على كَفَرِ. ثمّ إنّكم من عشر العرب أغرض بلايا قد أتربت فاتَّقا سكرات النعمة وأخذوا بِيرواق الناقة وتثريعوا في قَتَام العشوة وأعوجاج الفتنة عند طلوع جذبها وظهور كَئِبه وآَنْتِصَاب قطبه ومدار رّحاها. تبدأ في مدرجات خفيفة وتتولى إلى قَطْاعة جليلة. شابها كشجاع الكلام وآثارها كأنار السَلَام تتورثها الظلمة بالعهد أوّلهم قائد لآخرين وأخرى مقننة بأولهم يتنافسان في دنيا دنيّة ويتقاتلون على جيفة مريحة وعن قليل يتبرأ التتابع من المتبوع والقائد من المقدم فيّرّابون بالبغضاء ويتذرون عند اللقاء.

1.149.2 ثمّ يأتي بعد ذلك طالع الفتنة الرَجَف والقاعدة الزِحَف وتُرِغِ قلوب بعد استقامة وتضلّ رجال بعد سلامه وتختلف الأهواء عند هيجهما وتتنبأ الآراء عند نجومها من أشرف لها قصته ومن سن فيها حطمه التيّكادون فيها تكادوا الحرم في العائلة قد أضطرّب معقود الحبل ووافق وجه الأمر تغيّض فيها الحكمة وتتنطّق فيها الظلمة.
1.149 From an oration by ʿAlī:

1.149.1 I ask him for aid against Satan's expulsions and evictions. I seek his protection against Satan's snares and ambushes. I bear witness that Muḥammad is his servant and messenger, his chosen one and his elect. His virtues cannot be matched, and the heartbreak caused by his loss cannot be mended. The land became illuminated with Muḥammad's light after a time of black error, intense ignorance and uncouth ways, a time when people had made the unlawful legal and demeaned the wise, when they were living in a state of stupor, and dying as unbelievers.

1.149.2 You, Arabs, are targets for approaching calamities, so be fearful lest your blessings intoxicate you and beware the blows of God's punishment. Remain firm when dust storms darken, when sedition begins to twist and turn, when its fetus is born, and its secret made manifest, when its pivot becomes entrenched, and its mill begins to turn. Sedition begins on hidden paths and soon reaches the status of clear atrocity. It dances around like a young boy, but its footprints are like wounds made by stoning. Tyrants inherit it, one from the other, through mutual agreement, the first among them impelling the last, and the last among them emulating the first. They compete fiercely for this vile world and fight like dogs over its stinking carcass. Soon the follower will dissociate from the one he followed, and the driver from those he steered. They will disown one another in enmity when they meet face to face, each will curse the other.

1.149.3 After the first, a second seismic sedition, a crushing, relentless sedition, will march. Hearts once steadfast will falter, men once righteous will stray, tempestuous passions will bolt in every direction, and capricious opinions will appear in every quarter and lead to total confusion; this sedition will crush all who rise to face it and shatter all who attempt to withstand; people will nip and bite at one another like a herd of wild asses; knots will be undone and direction will be obscured; wisdom will recede and tyrants will speak out; sedition's iron

1 The line could also be translated as, “I ask God for aid in expelling Satan and driving him out” (R 2:85), where the subject of the expulsion is the speaker and the object is Satan, rather than the other way around. In either case, the speaker is asking God for aid in withstanding Satan. Some commentaries offer both readings (B 509; Ḥ 9238).

2 Lit. “cannot be splinted (yujbaru),” referring to the joining of broken bones, a metaphor for coming to terms with a death or other painful event.

3 Ar. fatrah. Or, “living during the interval between prophets.” Ḥ 9339; B 510; R 2:85; ‘A 628, citing Qur’ān, Māʾidah 5:19.
وتدق أهل البدو بمحسبها وترذهم بكلكها يضيع في غبارها الوحدان ويلك في طريقها الركاب رد مبر المقاومة وتحل عبض الدماء وتمام منار الدين ويقف عقد القيق ترب من الأضحاء وتدرب الأرجاس مرفق بغراق كاشفة عن ساق تقطع فيها الأحجام ويفارق عليها الإسلام بريقته ستم وظاعها مقيم.

1.149.4
منها بين قليل مطال وخلاف مستجبر يختالون بعقد الأيمان، وبغور الإيمان فلا تكونوا أنصاب الفتن وأعلام البدع وألزموا ما عقد عليه حبل الجماعة وبنى عليه أركان الطاعة وأقاموا على الله مضلومين، ولا تقدموا عليه ظالمين، وأتقوا مدارج الشيطان ومباحث العدوان ولا تدخلوا بطولكم لغ فحرام فإكم بعين من حرم عليكم المعصية وسُبيل لكم سبيل الطاعة.

1.150 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام

1.150.1
الحمد لله الدال على وجوده بخلقه وجميع خلقه على أزليته وبأشرتكم على أن لا شبه له إلا تسلمه المشاعر ولا تحجب السوائر لافتراق الصانع والمصور والحاد والمحدود والرب والمرور والأد لا يتأويل عدد وخلال فقد نصب والسعي لا أبدا والبصيرة لا تفرق آلة والشاهد لا بمساء وال>|<|لهم ولا يظهر لا برفقة من الأشياء بالفقره لها والقدرة عليها وبائت الأشياء منه بالخلوعل له والرجوع إليه من وصفه فقد حدده ومن حده فقد عده ومن عده فقد أبطل أزليه ومن قال كيف فقد استوصفه ومن قال أجل فقد حيزه. عالم إذ لا معلوم ورب إذ لا مبوب وقادر إذ لا مقدور.

١١:٤٧٣، م، ووصحة في ش، وأضيفت في هامش ه مع علامة الصحّة: كذا ن، وأصل ش، ه: سقطت (وسيل لكم سبيل الطاعة).
bridle will bruise the Bedouins and its looming torso will crush them; individuals will be lost in its dust and riders will perish in its path; it will come bearing bitter fate, and when milked, it will yield fresh blood; it will extinguish the beacon of faith, and undo the bonds of certainty; the intelligent will flee, while the degenerate will be mesmerized; it will hurl bolts of thunder and lightning and bare its shanks; kinship ties will be cut, and Islam will be forsaken; the unscathed will be afflicted, and the shirker will not escape.

1.149.4 From the same oration:
Some will be killed, their blood unavenged, others, desperately afraid, will seek asylum, and people everywhere will be taken in by false oaths and the pretense of faith. Be watchful, all of you, that you don’t turn into temples of sedition or waymarks of heresy. Stay with the true belief to which the community’s rope is bound, and on which the pillars of obedience are raised. Go forward to God as victims of oppression, not inflictors. Beware the ways of Satan, beware the abyss of rancor. Don’t fill your stomachs with unlawful morsels. Remember! You are watched by the one who has forbidden sin and smoothed the path of obedience.

1.150 From an oration by ‘Alī:

1.150.1 Praise God, who demonstrated his existence through his creatures, his eternity through their temporality, and his singularity through their resemblance to one another. But although veils cannot conceal him, neither can senses grasp him, for the craftsman and the handicraft, the delimiter and the delimited, the master and the servant, are mutually distinct. He is one but not in the sense of numbers, the creator but not through movement and effort, the hearer but not with an appendage, the seer but not through an organ, the witness but not by being present, the separate but not through distance, the manifest but not through vision, and the hidden but not because he is transparent. He is separate from all things, for he subjugates and wields power over them, and all things are separate from him, for they bow and return to him. To describe him is to circumscribe him, to circumscribe him is to quantify him, and to quantify him is to deny his eternity. To ask “How?” is to seek a description of him, to ask “Where?” is to confine him. He was knowledgeable when there was nothing to be known, Lord when there was no one to be Lord over, and powerful when there was nothing over which to wield power.

---

1. Ar. kāshifatum ‘an sāq, echoes Qurʾan, Qalam 68:42; it connotes severe hardship (Ḥ 9:145), or girding for an attack (B 511).
2. From the beginning of ‘Alī’s caliphate in Medina, in 35/656. Ḥ 9:153; R 2:91; B 515.
منها

قد طلع طالع ومع لاعم ولاح لائح واعتذل ماهل وآستبدل الله بقوم قوما وبيوم يوما
وانتظروا الغير انتظار المجبد المطر وإمام الأئمة قوم الله على خلقه وعرفاؤه على عباده
لا يدخل الجنينة إلا من عرفهم وعرفوه ولا يدخل النار إلا من أنكرهم وأنكروه. إن الله
خصم بالإسلام واستخصصلك له وذلك لأنه اسم سلامة وجماع كرامة أصطفى الله
 تعالى منهجه وبن هجته من ظاهر علم وباطن حكم لا تفتي غرابيه ولا تنقض غايته
فيه مرابع النعم ومصالح الظلم لا تفتح الخياير إلا بفتحه ولا تكشف الظلمات إلا
بصاحب قد أحصى حمده وأرعى رعاه فيه شفاء المشتفي وكفية المكنتفي.

ومن خطبة له عليه السلام

وهو في ميلة من الله يهوي مع العافلين ويغدو مع المذنبين بلا سبيل قاصد ولا

إمام قائد

منها

حتى إذا كشف لهم عن جراء معصيتهم وأستخرجهم من جلايب غفلتهم استقبلوا
مديرا وأستدروا مقبلا فلم يفتناعوا بما أدركوا من طلبيتهم ولا بما قضوا من وترهم. فإني
أحذركم وإنفسي هذه المنزلة فليتنفع أمركم لنفسكم فإنيما البصير من سمع فتفكر ونظر فأبص
واتنفع بالعبر ثم سلك جددا واضحا تجنب فيه الصروحة في معاوي والضلال في النغوي
ولا يعين على نفسه الغواة بتعسف في حق أو تحريف في نطق أو تخويف من صدق

١

الش: كذا ي، ومصححة في ه: (حلم).
1.150.2 From the same oration:

What was going to rise has risen, what was going to shine forth has shone, what was going to emerge has emerged, and what had listed to one side has straightened. God has replaced one group with another, one day with another, a change we awaited as the drought-stricken wait for rain. Hear me! The Imam is God’s caretaker over his creatures and the leader he has appointed over his servants: no one will enter paradise except those he recognizes and who recognize him, no one will enter hellfire except those he denies and who deny him.¹ God has privileged and blessed you with Islam: its name denotes safety and it is the aggregate of honor; its way is chosen by God, and its proofs are explained by him, both its manifest knowledge and its concealed wisdom;² its wonders never cease, its marvels never end; it boasts verdant blessings and lamps that dispel darkness; its keys open goodness, its lamps dispel the dark; God has strengthened its fortifications and permitted grazing in its pastures; it heals those who seek healing and suffices those who seek sufficiency.

1.151 From an oration by ‘Ali:³

1.151.1 Such men, during the respite granted them by God, fall into error with the heedless, and set out every morning with sinners, with no path to follow, no Imam to guide them.

1.151.2 From the same oration:

Then, when God reveals the payback for their disobedience and tears off their garments of negligence, they must face what they ignored and leave what they loved, benefitting not at all from desires they slaked or passions they gratified. I warn you—and myself—don’t reach this station! Let each man save himself! The discerning listens and contemplates, he sees and understands, he learns from exemplary lessons, follows the clear road, and avoids twisting ravines and perilous canyons, he does not give ammunition to his deceivers by dismiss-

¹ Reference to Qur’an, Aʿrāf 7:46–49. The word ʿurafāʾ (leaders) is explained through the root meaning of ʿarafa (to recognize); the name of the Surah—Aʿrāf—is also derived from the same root, “ʿ-R-F.”

² “Manifest knowledge and concealed wisdom” refer to the Qurʾan. Ḥ 9:156; R 2:91; B 517.

³ Delivered en route from Medina to Basra in 36/656, before the Battle of the Camel (Ḥ 9:162; B 521). § 1.151.1 refers to individuals who refused to support ‘Ali and sat out the Battle of the Camel (R 2:92), or to all errant humans (Ḥ 9:157; B 518). § 1.151.3 refers to the leaders in the Battle of the Camel, ‘Āʾishah, Ṭalḥah, and Zubayr (Ḥ 9:161–162; B 521).
فَأَقْفِ أَيْبَا السَّابِعِ مِن سَكَرَتَكَ وَأَشْتَقِقِ مِن غَفْلَتَكَ وَأَخْتِرِ مِن خَلْفَكَ وَأَنْتِ الْفَكْرُ فِي هَُّمَّ أَمْ تَلْغَعُأَوْ نَمْ لَفِلاَخُ وَهَّنَعُ مَهْلَأَهُ مَمَّا لَا بِدْ مَنْهُ ولا مَحِيضَ عَنْهُ وَخَالِفُ مَنْ خَالْفَ ذَلِكَ إِلَى غَيْرِ وُدُّعَهُ وَما رَضِي لَنْ سَهْ وَضَعُّ فَخْوَكَ وَأَحْتُضِنَّ كُبْرَكَ وَأَذْكِرْ قَبْرَكَ فَإِنَّهُ يَمْرُكَ وَكَأَنَّ تَدْنَوُما تُزْرَعُ تَحَسُّدَ وَمَا قَدْ مَتَّ الْيَوْمُ تَقَدِّمَ عَلَيْهِ غَدًا فَأَمَّهُ لَقِدْمَكَ وَقَدْمَ لَيْمُوْكَ فَالْحَذَرُ أَيْبَا الْمَسْتَمِعِ وَالْحَدَّ الْجَدِّ أَيْبَا الْعَافِلُ..."}

إن من عزائم الله في الذكر الحكيم التي عليها يشيب ويعاقب ولما يرضى ويسخط أنه لا يفع عبادًا وإن أجهد نفسه وأخلص فعله أن يخرج من الدنيا لاحقًا وله خصلة من هذه الخصال لم يلب منها أن يشرك بِاللهُ فيما أفترض عليه من عبادته أو يشكيّ غيظه بلإلاك نفس. أو يقت بأمر فعله غيره أو يستنجح حاجة إلى الناس بإظهار بدعته في دينه أو يلقي الناس بوجهين أو يمشي فيهم بناسين. اعقل ذلك فإن المثل دليل على شيء إن الباهم همها بطونها وإن السباع همها العدان على غيرها وإن النساء همهم زينة الحياة الدنيا والقباس فيها إن المؤمنين مستكرون إن المؤمنين مشفكون إن المؤمنين خائفون.

شَرِّفْ، م، ي، ووصحة في م: كذا. وأصل م، ونسخة في ش: كرائم. ش، ن، ه: كذا.
ing truth, distorting speech, or dodging battle.¹ Emerge, O listener, from your intoxication, awake from your slumber, and temper your haste for worldly gain! Ponder the warning that has come to you on the Meccan Prophet’s tongue about the inexorable, inescapable end.² Resist anyone who resists this view, reject him and his errant ways. Discard your pride, abandon your arrogance, and remember the grave, for your path leads straight to it. As you treat others, so shall you be treated, as you sow, so shall you reap, the deeds you perform today shall you come to in the morrow—prepare for your arrival and provide for that day. Beware, O listener, beware! Heed, reckless one, heed! Indeed, «no one informs you as well as one who is fully aware.»³

1.151.3 One of the resolutions that God has transcribed in the Wise Remembrance⁴—and these are the resolutions on whose basis he rewards or punishes, accepts or rebukes—is that he will not show favor to the man who leaves the world to meet him, even one who has expended effort and performed sincere acts, if he comes unrepentant with the following sins: having assigned partners to God in worship, slaked his rage with murder, accused someone of a crime another has committed, sought gain by innovating a heresy, or displayed two faces and spoken with two tongues. Understand this, for one example sheds light on all similar cases. Cattle care only about their stomachs, predators care only about attacking, and women care only about worldly adornments and sowing discord.⁵ Believers are humble, believers are compassionate, believers fear God!

1.152 From an oration by ʿAlī:

---

¹ Ar. aw takhawwufin min šidq: šidq—translated here as “battle”—means “truth” in common parlance, but in the context of battle, it denotes “courage in fighting for the truth.” Discussion and examples in Qutbuddin, Arabic Oration, 318–320.

² The word ummī in the Qur’an’s designation of Muḥammad as “the ummī Prophet” (al-nabī al-ummī, Qur’an, Aʿrāf 7:157) has differing interpretations. One is “the Meccan Prophet,” as I have translated here (following R 3:248, commentary on § 3.41), which signals Muḥammad’s birth affiliation to “the mother of all cities” (Umm al-qurā), Mecca. Other interpretations for ummī are “unlettered,” or “belonging to a community (ummah)” of earlier prophets.

³ Qur’an, Fāṭir 35:14.

⁴ The Wise Remembrance (al-Dhikr al-ḥakīm) is the Qur’an.

⁵ The reference about women is to ʿĀʾishah, who was at the head of the coalition challenging ʿAlī’s caliphate. See also text and note at § 1.154.1, § 2.1.
وَنَاطِرُ قَلْبِ اللَّبَيبِ بِهِ يَبْصِرَ أَمَدًا وَيَعْرُفُ غَوْرَهُ وَيُجُدُّهُ دَاعِ دَعَا وَرَاعِ رَعَا
فَأَسْتَجِبَوا لِلِدَادِـٔ وَأَتَبَعُوا الرَّأِعِيَ قَدْ خَضَضَوا بِحَارِ الفَتْحِ وَأَخَذُوا بِالبَدْعِ دُونَ السَّنِنَ وَأَرَزَّ
المَوْئِمَ وَنَطِقَ الْبَأْسَانَ المَكْتَبَـٔ.

١.١٥٢.٢
نَحْنُ السَّعْرُ وَالأَسْحَابُ وَالْخَزَنَةُ وَالأُبُوَّاَبَ لَا تُوْتِي الْبَيْوْتِ إِلَّا مِنْ أَبُوَّابِهِ فَنَّ أَتَاهَا مِنْ غِيْرِ أَبُوَّابِهِ سَمِيٍّ سَارِقًا.

فِيمْ كَرَامِ الإِلَٰهِ وَهُمْ كَنَّوزُ الرَّحْمَٰنِ إِنْ نَطَّقُوا صَدْقَؤُهُ إِنْ سَمِتَوا مَلُكًا. فَلِيَصْدِقُ رَأِئَ أَهْلُهُ وَلِيَضْرِعُ عَقِلُهُ وَلِيْكِنْ مِنْ أَبْنَاءِ الْآخِرَةِ فَإِنْ هُمْ قُدْمُ وِلَا يَنْقُلُ فَالْنَّاظِرُ بَالْقَلْبِ الْعَامِ بِالْبَصِيرَةِ يُمِتُّدُ أَحَدُهُ أَنْ يَعْلَمُ أَعْمَلَهُ عَلَىُّ أَمْ لِإِنْ كَانَ لَهُ مُضَيٌّ فِيْهِ إِنْ كَانَ عَلِيَّ وَقَفَ عَنْهُ إِنْ كَانَ الْعَامِ بِغَيْرِ عَلَمِ كَالْسَائِلِ عَلَى الْطَرِيقِ الْوَاطِئِ فَلِيَنْظُرُ بَالْقَلْبِ الْعَامِ بِالْبَصِيرَةِ كَالْسَائِلِ عَلَى الْطَرِيقِ الْوَاطِئِ فَلِيَنْظُرُ أَسْأَرَهُمْ رَاجِعُ وَأَعْلَمُ أَنْ لَأَلْقَ ظَاهِرًا بَاطِنًا عَلَى مِثَالِهِ فَأَطَابُ ظَاهِرُ طَابَ بَاطِنَهُ وَمَا خَبِيثُ ظَاهِرُ خَبِيثُ بَاطِنَهُ وَقَدْ قَالَ الرَّسُولُ الصَّادِقُ صِلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَآَلِهِ يَزَّ نَّبِيٌّ يَبَّ الْعَبِيدُ وَيَبْغِضُ عَمَلُهُ وَيَبْغِضُ الْعَمَلَ وَيَبْغِضُ بَدْنَهُ. وَأَعْلَمُ أَنْ كَلِّ عَمَلٍ نَبَاتٍ وَكَلِّ نِبَاتٍ لَا غَنِيَّ بِهِ عَنْ المَاءِ وَالْمِرَابِ مَخْلَصَةٌ فَأَطَابُ سَقِيَّ طَابَ غَرْسَهُ وَحَلَّتْ مَرْحَةُ وَمَا خَبِيثُ سَقِيَّ خَبِيثَ غَرْسَهُ وأَمْرَتْ مُرْحَةً.

١٠٠ مِّ، يُ، وَنَسْخَةُ فِي هِ، كَذَا شَ، نَ، وَأَصِلُ هِ، ئِلْقَرَّانُ. ١٠٣، يُ، كَذَا شَ، نَ، هِ، كَالْسَائِلِ. وَمُصَحَّحَةُ فِي هِ، هِ، كَالْسَائِلِ.

al-Sharīf al-Raḍī - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
1.152.1 An intelligent person possesses a keen heart with which he perceives his goal and distinguishes high ground from low. The caller has called, and the shepherd has gathered his herd, so answer the caller and follow the shepherd! Those people plunged into seas of revolt and followed heretical innovations instead of established practice. Believers cowered, while those who had strayed, who were calling the truth a lie, spoke loudly.

1.152.2 We are its vestments and companions, its vault-keepers and doors, and homes should be entered only through doors—whoever enters any other way will be called a thief!!

From the same oration:
We are religion's jewels, the Merciful Lord's treasure; when we speak, we speak the truth, when we stay silent, no one outpaces us. Let the scout be true to his people and stay alert! Let him be a child of the hereafter from where he has come and to where he will return! The person who perceives with his heart and would act with discernment should first determine, will his deed count for or against him? If it will count for him, he should proceed, if it will count against him, he should desist. A person who acts without knowledge is like someone who loses his way—the further he strays from the road, the further he strays from his goal; the person who acts with knowledge is like someone who travels on the clear road. Let each individual assess for himself, should he go forward, or should he turn back? Know that every outward aspect has a corresponding inner one—whatever is pure in its outward aspect is pure in its inner one, and whatever is foul in its outward aspect is foul in its inner one. The truthful messenger has said, ⟨God can love a servant and yet hate his deeds or love his deeds and yet hate his being⟩. Know further that every deed is a plant, every plant requires water, and all water is not the same. A plant watered with pure water yields pure shoots and sweet fruit. A plant watered with foul water yields foul shoots and bitter fruit.

---

1 “It” refers to the Imamate. “We” (here and in the next section) refers to the family of the Prophet. The simile of the “door” echoes the Prophet’s hadith, ⟨I am the city of knowledge and ‘Ali is its gateway⟩ and the Qur’an verse, «Enter homes through their doorways and fear God» (Qur’an, Baqarah 2:189). “Vestments” (shi‘ār), more specifically, “inner garments,” denotes closeness to the Prophet. Ḥ 9:165–166, 176; B 522–523; R 2:94. See twenty-four hadiths in praise of ‘Ali, and their references, in Ḥ 9:166–175.
2 “No one outpaces us (lam yusbaqū)” means that (1) our silence is not due to incapacity, we are still the incumbents of the Imamate; and/or (2) no one dares to speak until we do; they stay silent out of respect and awe. Ḥ 9:177.
3 Refers to the proverb, ⟨The scout does not lie to his people⟩ (الواحد لا يكذب أهله). Ḥ 9:77; B 523.
1.153.1

الحمد لله الذي أُنحِّس الأوصاف عن كنه معرفته وردعت عظيمه العقول فلم تجد مساغاً إلى بلوغ غاية ملكه هو الله الحق المبين أحيا وأمين ما ترى العيون لم تبلغه العقول تشدد فيكون مشهراً ولم تقع عليه الأوهام تدقير فيكون مثلاً خلق الحق على غير تمثيل ولا مشورة مشير ولا معينة معين فتم خلقه بأمره وأذن لطاعته فأجاب ولم يدافع وأنقاد ولم ينتزع.

1.153.2

ومن لطائف صنعته وجاب خلقته ما أرائنا من غواضب الحكمة في هذه الخلفانين التي يقبضها الضاهر الباسط لكل شيء ويسخّرها الظلام القابض لكل شيء وكيف عشيت أعينه عن أن تستمد من الشمس الضيحة نوراً تهدئ به في مذاها تُ chức بعلانية برهان الشمس إلى معرفها وردعها ببئسًى ضياءها عن المضيء في سبّحات إشراقها وأُكلتها في مكانها من الذهاب في بلج انتلاقها فهي مسيلة الجفون بالنها على حداقها وجاعة الليل سراجاً تستدل به في أتمّاس أزراقها فلا يردّ أياً بها إسداف ظلمته ولا لمتمن من المضيء فيه لسفق دجنته فإذا ألقى الشمس قناعها وبدت أوضاع نهارها ودخل من إشراق نورها على الضباب في وحارها أطلقت الأجنان على ما ظلماً وتبّلت بما أكتسبته من المعانش في ظلم ليلها فسحان من جعل الليل لها نهاراً ومعرضاً والنهار سكناً وقراراً وجعل لها أجنحة من نعمه تخرج بح عند الحاجة إلى الطيران كانها سطاباً الآذان غير ذوات ريش ولا قنب إلّا أنّه ترى مواضع العروق بينة أعلاهما جناحان لما يرقا فينشقا ولم يغلظا فيفقات. تطير وولدها لاصق بها لا حرج إليها يقع إذا وقعت ويرفع إذا أرتفعت لا يفاكها حتى ينتشى أركانه ويحمله للنبوض جناحه ويعرف مذاهب عيشه ومصالح نفسه. فسحان الباري لكل شيء على غير مثال خلا من غيره.
1.153 From an oration by ‘Alī in which he describes the wondrous creation of the bat:

1.153.1 Praise God! Descriptions are too feeble to plumb his core, for his majesty curbs intellects from reaching the limits of his kingdom. He is God, real and clear, too real, too clear, for eyes to see. Intellects cannot delineate his boundaries—he can never be likened to another. Imaginations cannot capture him—he can never be pictured as another. He created without paradigm, advice, or help. His command brought forth a perfect creation, which bowed to him in obedience, responded without defiance, and submitted without fighting.

1.153.2 Among the sublimities of his craftsmanship and the marvels of his creation are the profound mysteries he has shown us in these bats. They are constricted by light which causes other creatures to emerge, and drawn out by darkness, which causes other beings to seek shelter. See how he caused their eyes to be dazzled by the sun’s brilliance, instead of using the sun to guide their movements, or harnessing its light to visit their haunts. See how he curbed them with the sun’s very brilliance from flitting about in its majestic gleams, how he restrained them in their caverns from setting out in its intense glare. They let their eyelids droop during the day over their pupils and use the night as a lamp to guide them toward sustenance. The darkening gloom does not impede their sight, its black obscurity does not hinder their movement. But as the sun removes its veil and the morning glimmers, as its bright rays penetrate the lizard in its hole, the bats shut their eyelids and settle down with the food they were able to collect in the shadows of the night. Glory to him who made night for them as daylight hours, as the time to gather food, and daylight hours the time for rest and tranquility! Glory to him who created their wings from flesh! Wings they use to propel themselves in flight, that look like bow-shaped ears and have no feathers or quills, but in which you can see their clearly marked fingers;\(^1\) two wings, not so thin as to tear, but not so thick either that they would weigh down their bodies. When bats fly, their pups cling to them for shelter, swooping and rising with their mothers when their mothers swoop and rise. They do not fly off until their limbs are strong, and their wings can support them, until they can find their own way to food and safety. Glory to the creator of all things, who created without following another’s paradigm!

---

\(^1\) Ar. ‘urūq (sing. ‘irq), lit. “roots” or “veins,” translated as “fingers” based on modern zoology.
من كلام له عليه السلام خاطب به أهل البصرة على جهة أئتبار الصلاح الملاحم

1.154.1 فن استطاع عند ذلك أن يعتقل نفسه على الله فيفعل. وإن أطعمنو إلهي حاملكم إن شاء الله على سبيل الجنّة وإن كان ذا مشقة شديدة ومذاقة مريرة. وأما فلانة فأدركها رأي الناس وضَغْن غلا في صدرو كرجل القين ولو دعيت لتنال من غيري ما أنتي إلي لم تفعل وعلى بعد حصرتها الأولى والحساب على الله.

1.154.2 منه سبيل أجلد المنهج أنير السراج فبالإيمان يُستدّل على الصلاحيات وبالصالحيات يستدل على الإيمان وبالإيمان يعمر العلم وبالعلم يرغب العمل والموت تخرج الدنيا وبالدنيا تحرز الآخرة. وإن الحق لا مُقصَر لهم عن القيادة مَرْقِين في مضامارها إلى الغابة النصوص.

1.154.3 منه قد يُخْتَصا من مستقر الأجداد وصاروا إلى مصارع الغايات لكل دار أهلها لا يستبدين بها ولا يقلون عنها وإن الأمر بالمعروف والنهي عن المنكر للخانق من خلق الله سبحانه وتعالى لا يقلون من أجل ولا ينقص من رزق وعليكم بكتاب الله فإنه الجبل المتنين والغدر الإبداع والشقاء النافع والثواب الناقص والعصرة للمتمسكت النجاة والمعمورة لينخلع في عيني القدر وولو السمع من صالبه صدق وفعلاً به سبق.

1.154.4 وقام إليه رجل فقال يا أمير المؤمنين أخبرنا عن الفتنة وهل سألت عنها رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله فقال عليه السلام
1.154 From an address by ʿAlī to the people of Basra, foretelling calamities:¹

1.154.1 At that time, whoever is able to bind himself totally to God should do so. If you obey me, I shall, God willing, drive you on the path to the celestial garden, even when it brings severe hardships and bitter trials. As for that woman, the suppositions of women overtook her and malice simmered in her breast like a dyer’s boiling cauldron.² If she had been invited to malign anyone else with the aggression she used against me, she would not have done so. No matter. Let her retain her state of spousal sanctity.³ Her reckoning is in God’s hands.

1.154.2 From the same address:
It is a road whose track is clear and whose lamp is bright. Through faith you are guided to deeds, through deeds you are guided to faith. Through faith you enliven knowledge, through knowledge you fear death, through death your life in the world ends, and through life in the world you attain the hereafter. There is no place where you can hide from the resurrection. In its arena, all race to the final post.

1.154.3 Emerging from the repose of graves, they set off for their destined end;⁴ each abode receives its residents, and they are never removed from it, or given another, forever after. Commanding good and forbidding evil are traits of divinity, they will not hasten your death or decrease your sustenance. Hold fast to God’s Book: it is the strong rope, the clear light, the effectual cure, the quencher of thirst, the adherent’s protection, and the devotee’s salvation; it never becomes crooked and needs straightening, or deviates and needs to be forced back; it is not worn out by the tongue’s recitation or frayed by the ear’s audition—whichever affirms it speaks the truth, whoever acts upon it wins.

1.154.4 At that time, a man stood up and said, “Commander of the Faithful, tell us about this sedition—did you ask God’s Messenger about it?” and ʿAlī responded:

---

¹ In Basra, immediately after the Battle of the Camel in 36/656 (Ṭūsī, Talkhīṣ al-Shāfī, vol. 1 pt. 2, 274–275). § 1.154.2 and § 1.154.4 are cited as answers given during an oration in the mosque in Basra, a few days after the Battle of the Camel in 36/656 (Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 224–225, 230). Other parts of the same oration in ibid., 221–233, are listed in note to § 1.23. Also, § 1.154.2 is similar to § 1.103.1.

² Refers to ʿĀʾishah, who brought an army to fight ʿAlī in the Battle of the Camel outside Basra in 36/656. Details of her conflicts with ʿAlī and Fāṭimah in Ḥ 939–203; B 527. “Dyer’s boiling cauldron” after R 2:101; or, “a cauldron made by a blacksmith” (Ḥ 9389).

³ As the Prophet Muhammad’s wife. B 527; Ḥ 9399.

⁴ I.e., paradise or hellfire.
لما أزل الله سبحانه قوله «المأحب الناس أن يتركون أن يقولوا أمتي وهم لا يفتنون» علمت أن الفتنة لا تنزل إلا ورسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم وآله بين أظهرنا فقلت يا رسول الله ما هذه الفتنة التي أخبرك الله بها فقال «يا علي إن أمتي سفنتهم من بعدي» فقلت يا رسول الله وليس هذا من مواصل الشير ولكن من مواطن البشي والشكر وقال «يا علي إن القوم سفنتهم بأموالهم فينون بديهم على بكم ويسكنون رحمته ويأمنون سطوة ويحتلون حرامه بالشهبات الكاذبة والأهواء السائبة فيستحللون الخمر بالنبيذ والسحات بالهدية والربا بالبيع» فقلت يا رسول الله فبأي المنازل أنتم عن ذلك أمنزلة ردة أم بمئذنة فتنا فقال بمئذنة فتنا.

١١٥٥٥.١ ومن خطبة له عليه السلام

الحمد لله الذي جعل الحمد مفتاحًا للذكر وسببًا للمزيد من فضله ودليلًا على آلهة وعظمته. عباد الله إن الدهر يجري بالثواب كجري بالشراب لا يعود ما قد ولى منه ولا يبقى سرهم ما فيه. آخر فعاله كأوَّل متساءبة أورمه متهاورة أعلمه فكافأته بالساعة تجدكم خذل الزاجر بشوله. فمن شغل نفسه بغفر نفسه تخير في الظلمات وآرتبه في
When the Almighty revealed the verses, «Alif Lām Mīm. Do people think they can claim, “we believe,” without being tested?»! I knew that sedition would not befall us while the Messenger remained among us, so I asked, “Messenger of God, what is this sedition that God has informed you about and when will it come to pass?” He replied, ⟨ʿAlī, my community will be thrown into turmoil when I die.⟩ I probed, “Messenger of God, did you not say to me at the Battle of Uḥud—when some were martyred and I was sad that I was denied the honor—‘Be happy, for you shall win martyrdom too’?” He said, “Yes, that is correct. What will your acceptance look like then?” and I replied, “Messenger of God, it will not be an occasion for acceptance, but for immense joy and gratitude!” The Prophet also told me, ⟨ʿAlī, people will be tested with regard to wealth—thinking their support of Islam a favor to their Lord, they will feel entitled to his mercy and believe themselves secure against his punishment. By raising false suspicions and wayward passions, they will legalize the things he has forbidden—they will drink wine, calling it date juice, take bribes, calling it gift-giving, and practice usury, calling it trade.⟩ I asked him then, “Messenger of God, which category will they fall in at that time, apostasy or sedition?” and he answered, “Sedition.”

1.155 From an oration by ʿAlī:3

1.155.1 Praise God, who made praise the key to his remembrance, the means to increasing his bounty, and a sign of his blessings and glory. Servants of God! Time’s river flows on with those who are alive, just as it swept away those who are now gone. The part that has gone will never return, and the part that is present will not remain. The last of its actions are like the first, its affairs outtrace each other, its banners reinforce each other, and the final hour pushes you forward as a rough herdsman drives his thirsty camels to the waterhole. Whoever occupies himself with anything other than his soul stumbles in darkness and

---

1 Qur’an, ‘ Ankabūt 29:1–2. The first verse—«Alif Lām Mīm»—consists of three letters of the Arabic alphabet that many exegetes explain as an allusion to angels or prophets by whom God swears an oath, after which he makes the declaration that follows in the second verse.
2 Refers to Qur’an, Ḥujurāt 49:17.
3 Oration delivered in the mosque of Basra, a few days after the Battle of the Camel in 36/656 (Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 233–235).
4 “The Remembrance (Dhikr)” is also one of the names of the Qur’an, the first Surah of which begins, “Praise God, Lord of all the worlds,” Qur’an, Ḥamd/Fātiḥah 1:1. Ḥ 9:210; R 2:106–107.
5 The Arabic word for “praise,” ḥamd, also includes the meaning of “thanks,” and this is what is intended here, as a reference to the Qur’anic verse, “If you give thanks, we shall increase your blessings.” Qur’an, Ibrāhīm 14:7; B 531; Ḥ 9:211; R 2:107.
ال هلَكَاتَ ومَدَّتَ بِهِ شَيَاطِينَهُ فِي طُغْيَانِهِ وَزَيَّنَتْ لِهِ سَيِّئَ أَعْمَالِهِ فَالْجِنَّةُ غَيْاَ السَّابِقِينَ وَالنَّارُ غَيْاَ المُفَرْطِينَ أَعْلَمَ عَبَّادُ اللَّهِ أَنَّ التَّقْوَىٰ دَارٌ حَصِنٌ عَزِيزٌ وَالفِجْرُ دَارٌ حَصِنٌ ذَلِٰلٌ لَا يَمِنَ أَهْلُهُ وَلَا يَحْرُزُ مِنَ الْجَاَّ إِلَّا أَلَا وَتَتَقَاوُنَ تُقْطَعُ هُمَّةُ الخَطَايَا وَبَالِيْقِينَ تَدْرُكُ الْغَيْاَ الْقَصْوَى.

١٥٥.٢ عَبَّادُ اللَّهِ اللَّهُ اَلْعَلِيمُ وَكَرِيمُ حَقًّا وَأَنَّ قَلْبَهُ فَشْقُوْةٌ لَا زَمَةٌ أُوْ سَعَادَةٌ دَائِمَةٌ فِتْزَوُّدُوا فِي أَيَامِ الْفَنَا لَا يَمِنَ الْبَقَاء فَقُدْ دُلَّلُوا عَلَى الْزَّادِ وَأُرِمُتُم بِالْظَّعْفِ وَحَثْتُم عَلَى الْمُسْرِ فَإِنَّمَا أَتِمَ كَرْبُ وَقُوفٍ لَا تَدُونَ مِنْ تَوْمَرُونَ بِالْسِّيَّارِ أَلَا فَلَا يَقِنُ نَا بَلْ يَقِنُ بَلْ يَقِنُ هُمَّةُ عَبْدُ اللَّهِ إِنَّ مَا وَعَدَ اللَّهُ مِنِ الخَيْرِ مَتَرَكَ وَلَا فِي مَا نَهُى عَنْهُ مِنْ الشَّرّ مَرْتَبَ عَبْدُ اللَّهِ أَذْهَرُوا يُزَوْجُوْنَ فَيَتَحَلَّلُوْنَ فِي الأَرْمَالِ وَيَكُوْنُ فِي الْزَّلْزَالِ وَيَشْبَهُ فِي النَّفْسِ. أَعْلَمَ عَبَّادُ اللَّهِ أَنَّ عَلِيمَ رَصَدًا مِنْ أَنْفَسِكَ وَعَيْبًا مِنْ جَوَّارِ حُكْمِكَ وَحَفَاظَ صَدْقٍ يَخَفُّظُونَ أَعْمَالَكَ وَعَدُّ أَنْفَاسِكَ لَا تَتَرَكُوهُمُ نَظَّمًا لِّلِّدَاءِ وَلَا يُكْنُكُمْ مِنْهُمْ بَابَ ذُورَتِكَ وَإِنْ غَدًا مِنْ الْيَوْمِ قَرِيبُ يَذِبُّ الْيَوْمُ بَيْنَهُمْ وَيَحْيَيْهَا الْغَدُّ لَا لَقَاحًا لَّهُمْ فَكَأَنَّ كَلَّ أَمْرٍ مَّنْكَمُ قَدْ بُلْغَ مِنْ الأَرْضِ مِنْ زَمِّهِ وَحَدِنتُهُ وَخَفَّفَتُهُ فِي بَيْتٍ وَحَدَّةٍ وَحَدَّةٌ وَحَتُّهُ وَقُرْدَ غَرَبَةٍ وَكَانَ الصَّيْحَةُ قَدْ أَنْفَكَ وَالسَّاَبِقَةُ قَدْ غَشِيَتُكُمْ وَبِمْتُمْ لَفَيْلَ الْقَضَاءِ قَدْ زَاحَتُ عَنْكُمُ النَّبِيُّ وَأَضْحَكَتْ عَنْكُمُ الْعِلْمُ وَأَسْتَقْلَتْ بِكَمْ الْحَقَائِقُ وَصِدَّرتُ بَكَمِ الأَمْوَارِ مُصَادِرَهَا فَاُتِظَوْا بِالْعَرْبِ وَاعْتَبَرُوا بِالْيَبِّرِ وَاتَّنْفَعُوا بِالْنَّدَرَّ.}

١٥٦ وَمَنْ خَطِبَةُ لَهُ عَلِيّ السَّلَامَ
is ensnared in catastrophe, he is incited by his devils to persist in depravity and to pile on the evil deeds they adorn in his eyes. Paradise is the destination of those who are quick to believe, hellfire the destination of malefactors. Servants of God! Know that piety’s fortress is mighty, while immorality’s citadel is easily breached—it neither protects its people nor shields those who seek its refuge. Listen to me! Piety heals the scorpion-sting of sin. Certainty carries you to the ultimate goal.

1.155.2 Servants of God! Fear God and look to the direction of your own soul, the one most precious to you and beloved, for God has shown you the path of truth and illumined its course: the end is either unshakable wretchedness, or eternal bliss. Stock up in the days that will expire for the days that will endure, for you have been shown where to find provisions, commanded to load up, and encouraged to set out. Yours is a halted caravan unsure of when it will be instructed to resume. Harken and listen! What does someone created for the hereafter want with this world? What does someone whose possessions will soon be plundered—indeed, while its burden and reckoning will remain—want with gold and livestock?! Servants of God! There is no reason you should refrain from the good for which God has promised reward or seek the evils he has forbidden! Servants of God! Fear the day when deeds will be examined, earthquakes will intensify, and infants’ locks will turn white. Servants of God, know this: Your own self surveils you, your own limbs spy on you, and truthful chroniclers record your deeds and count your breaths. Dark nights cannot veil you from them, nor locked doors keep you concealed. Tomorrow is close to today. Today, with all that is in it, will soon pass, and tomorrow will follow. It is as though each one of you has already reached his place of solitude inside the earth, that pit marked with lines. What a lonely residence! What a menacing domicile! What a forlorn exile! Imagine that the thunderclap has already pealed, the last hour has already come, and that you have already emerged for the final judgment, falsehoods uncovered, excuses obliterated, truths come to the fore, and matters having taken their course. Learn from exemplary lessons, benefit from warnings, beware the conversion of blessings into punishment!

1.156 From an oration by ‘Alī:²

---

1 *Ar. māl*, which signifies movable wealth, including gold and silver, livestock, and grain.  
2 Opening lines same in §1.86.
1.156.1 أرسله على حين فترة من الرسل وطول شجاعة من الأمم وأيقتض من البرم جفاءهم بتصديق الذي بين يديه والنور المقتدى به. ذلك القرآن فاستنبطوه ولن ينطق ولكن أخبركم عنه ألا إن فيه علم ما يأتي والحديث عن الماضي ودواء داكن ونظم ما بينكم.

منها 1.156.2 فعند ذلك لا يبقى بيت مدر ولا وبر إلا وأدخله الظلمة راحة وأولجا فيه نقمة فيهم لا يبقى لهم في السما عادر ولا في الأرض ناصر. أصيفي بالأمر غير أهله وأوردتموه غير ورده وعينتم الله ممن ظلم ما كله بما كل ومشترى بمشتر من مطاع العلماء ومشرب الصبر والمقر والباس شعار الخوف وาะ السيف. وأما هم مطافا الخطيئات وزواحل الآثام فأقسم ثم أقسم لتحمшен أثية من بعدنا كما تلفظ النخامة ثم لا تذوقها ولا تتطلع بطمها أبدا ما كر الجديدان.

1.157 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام ولقد أحسن حواركم وأحتذى بهيدي من وراكم وأعطتكم من ربع الذال وحاق الضم شكراً مني للبر القليل وإطرافاً عمها أدركه البصر وشهده البدن من المنكر الكثير.

1.158 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام 1.158.1 أمره فضاء وحككة ورضاه أمان ورحمه يقضي بعلم ويعفوا بهم. اللهم لك الحمد على ما تأخذ وتعطي وعلى ما تعاني وتبثز قدما يكون أرضي الحمد لك وأحب الحمد إليك وأفضل الحمد عندك حمدًا يملا ما خلقته ويلغ ما أردت حمدًا لا
1.156.1 God sent Muḥammad after a period without prophets, when people had long been in slumber and bonds had frayed. Muḥammad brought them confirmation of earlier revelations and light for them to follow—the Qurʾan. Ask it to speak to you, then! It cannot, but I can tell you about it, so listen to me! The Qurʾan contains knowledge of the future and reports of the past. It is the cure for your illness and the benchmark for regulating your affairs.

1.156.2 From the same oration:
That day, when there remains no house of brick or goat-hair tent that the tyrants have not steeped in grief or invaded with cruelty, no one in the sky will grant the oppressors pardon and no one on earth will offer them shelter. You offered the caliphate to those who have no right to it, gave them access to a waterhole that is not theirs, but God will exact revenge from the despots, exchanging one food for another, one drink for another. Then they will swallow bitter morsels of colocynth and gulp acid drafts of aloes and vinegar, they will wear the garment of fear and their vestments will be the striking of swords. What are they but beasts carrying sin and camels laden with wickedness! I swear—and again I swear—that the Umayyads will spit out the caliphate after me like a man spits out phlegm and mucus! After that time, they will never get to savor it or enjoy its taste for as long as day follows night and night follows day.

1.157 From an oration by ʿAlī:
I protected you well and strove to keep you safe. I freed you from the tethers of degradation and the fetters of tyranny. All this in gratitude for small favors, while staying silent about the great wrongs my eyes had seen and my body had suffered!

1.158 From an oration by ʿAlī:

1.158.1 His command constitutes judgment and wisdom, his acceptance constitutes safety and mercy, he judges with knowledge and forgives with clemency.

God, we offer you praise for what you grant and what you take back, for what you heal and what you inflict. We offer the praise most acceptable to you, the praise most liked by you, the praise most excellent in your eyes. We offer you praise that fills the bounds of your creation and attains the limits that you will

1 Ar. *al-amr*, lit. “the matter,” translated here as “the caliphate”; “those who have no right to it” are the Umayyads. Ḥ 9:218–219.
2 Ḥ iskāfī (Miʿyār, 257) and Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih (ʿIqd, 4:167) state that § 1.158 is part of the Luminous Oration (Zahrāʾ), which also includes § 1.91 and § 1.106.
يحجب عنك ولا يقصر دونك حمدًا لا ينقطع عدده ولا يغني مَدْهه. فلستا نعلم كنْه
عظمته إلا أنا نعلم أنك حي قيّوم لا تأخذك سنة ولا يوم لم ينحَّط نظر ولم يدركك
بصر أدركنا الأضرار وأحصيت الأعماص وأخذت بالنواحي والأقدام وما الذي نرى
من خلقك وحجب له من قدرتك ونصفه من عظم سلطانك وما تغيب عنًا منه
وقصرت أبصارنا عنه وأتهت عقولنا دوهر وحالت سواتر الغيوب بيننا وبينه أعظم.
فين فرَّ قله وأحمر فكره لعلم كيف أقت عشك وكيف ذرت خلقك وكيف علقت في
الهواء سماواتك وكيف مددت على مور الغاء أرضك رجع طرفة حسيرًا وعقله مبهورًا
وسمعه وألما وفكره حائراً.

1.158.2

بَل يَدْعى يزعم أنه يبرج هو الله كذب والعظيم ما باليه لا يتبن رجاؤه في عمله وكل من رجا
عرف رجاؤه في عمله إلا رجاء الله فإنه مدخل وكل خوف محتف إلا خوف الله فإنه
معلوم يبرج هو في الكبير وبرج هو العباد في الصغير فيعطي العباد ما لا يعطي الرقب فما
بال الله جل مناؤه يقصر به عموم يصعع بعضه. أنفاف أن تكون في رجائه له كاذباً أو
تكون لا تراه للجاء موضع وهم كذلك إن هو خاف عباد من عبيده أعطاه من خوفه ما
لا يعطي ربه يجعل خوفه من العباد نقدًا وخوفهم من خلقهم ضمارًا ووعدًا وهم كذلك من
عظمته الدنيا في عينه وكثير موقعها من قبله آثرها على الله فأنقطع إليها وصار عبادًا لها

1.158.3

وقد كان في رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم كاف لفك في الأسوة ودليل للك
على ذم الدنيا وعيبها وكثير طغايها ومساواها إذ قبضت عى أطرافها ووطنت لغيره

it to attain. We offer you praise that is neither veiled from you nor falls short in reaching you. We offer you praise in sums that never end and gifts that never run out. We do not know the essence of your majesty. All we know is that you are alive, existent, neither slumber overtake you nor sleep,\(^1\) neither glances perceive you nor eyes. You see all eyes, you reckon all lifespans, you seize people by forelocks and feet.\(^2\) How little we understand of your creation, how inadequately we marvel at your strength, how feebly we describe your great power! That which is hidden from us, which our eyes fall short of, which our intellects fail to attain, which the veils of mystery prevent us from discerning—that is far greater. Anyone who clears his heart and applies his mind to comprehend how you established your throne, originated your creation, suspended the skies in the air, and spread the earth on heaving water will have his glances befuddled, his intellect bedazzled, his ears bewildered, and his reason bemused.

1.158.2 From the same oration:
You claim that you place your hopes in God. Great God, what lies! What is it with you! These hopes do not show in your actions! When you place your hopes in anyone, your hopes show in your actions, except for the hopes you say you place in God, which are insincere. Every fear you feel is real except your fear of God, which is a sham. You expect from God what is great, and from God's servants what is small, but you offer to God's servants what you don't offer to your Lord! How is it that your actions for God—may his praise be exalted!—fall short, when you do so much for God's servants? Are you afraid that you may be making a mistake in relying on God, are you worried he may not be the right place in which to lodge your hopes? Likewise, when you fear one of God's servants, you render to him the awe born of fear that you don't render to your Lord—you render your fear to God's servants in ready cash, while you make your fear for God a deferred promise. Indeed, those whose eyes find the world grand, whose hearts find it imposing, give it preference over God. When this happens, they become its devotees and servants.

1.158.3 The Messenger of God should suffice you as exemplar, as proof of the world's wickedness and its flaws, its many disgraces and evils. The world's hands refused the Messenger their largesse, even though its wings were lowered for others; he, in contrast, was weaned off its milk, and shoved away from its orna-

---

1 Modified quote from Qurʾan, Baqarah 2:255.
2 Modified quote from Qurʾan, Raḥmān 55:41.
أكفلها وفطمن من رضاعها وزوّي عن خارفها. وإن شئت مني بموسى كتاب الله صلى الله عليه وسلم إذ يقول هٰذِهِ Essay خطوة ٣٠٠٠ إِنَّمَا زُنِّتْ إِلَى مِنْ خِشْرَةِ فَقَيْرٍ} واللّه ما سأله إِلَّا خَبَرًا أَبَأَ كَّلَّا كان يَأْكُل بُكْلَة الأُرْض ولَمْ تَكُن خَضَرَةُ الْبُقَل تُرُى مِن شُفِيف صَفَا بَطْنِه هُزْرَاه وَشَكَّ لَحْمَه. وإن شئت ثلاث بداء عليه السلام صاحب المزراع وقَارِئ أَحْلَ الجَنَّة فَلَتْكَن يَعْمَل سَفَايَف الخَوْصَ بِيْه وَيَقُول لِجَلْسَتِه أَيْمَّ يَكْفِي يَبْعِيه وَيَأْكُل قَرْص الشَّهَٰر مِن ثُمَّه. وإن شئت قلته في عيسى بن مريم عليه السلام فَلَقَد كَان يَتوسَّد المُحِب وَى لِبُس القَلْب وَكَانَ إِدَامَه الجَوْع وسَّرَاحِه بِاللِّيْل القَمَر وَظلَّاه في الشَّتاء مَشَارِق الأَرْض وَمَغَارِبِه وَفَأَكَّهَه وُروَءَه مَا تَنبَت الأَرْض لِلِّيْه وَلمْ تَكِنُ له زُوجَة تَفْتَنَهُ ولا ولّد يَحْزِنَه ولا مَال يَلْفَتْه ولا طَعِم يَذْهُ دَادَه رَجَالٌ وَخَادِمٌ يَدَاه.

1.158.4 فَعَلَّفَ بِنَبِيّك الأَطْبِي الأَظَهِر صَلِّ الله عليه وَاللَّهُ ﻓِيهِ إِسْوَاء مِنْ تَأْسِي وَعِزَا لِمْن تَعَزِّي وَأَحْبَبَ الْعَباَعُ إِلَى اللَّهِ المَتَآسِي بِنَبِيّه وَالمَقْتَصِ لأَثْرِه قَفْطَنَ الدُّنْيَة قَضِيمًا وَلَمْ يُعْرِه طَرَفَ أَهْضَم أَحَدَ الدُّنْيَة كَجْحَا وَأَحْمَصِهِ مَنِ الدُّنْيَة بُطَنَا عَرَضْتَ عَلَى الدُّنْيَة فَأَبَيْ أَن يَقْبَلْهَا وَعَلَى اللَّهِ أَيْضَ شَيْتَانَ فَأَيْضَضَه وَحَتَّى شَيْتَانَ نَفْحُه وَصَغْرَ شَيْتَانُ فَصَغْرُه وَلَوْ لَمْ يَكِن فُتَنَا إِلَّا حَبَيْنَا ما أَيْضَ اللَّهِ وَتَعَظِّمُنَا مَا صَغْرُ اللَّهِ لَكُفَّرَهُ بِهِ شَفاَقَا اللَّه وَمُحَادِدَةً عَن أَمَرَ اللَّه. ولَقِد كَانَ صَلِّ اللَّه عليه يَأْكُل عَلَى الْأَرْض وَيُجْلِس جَلْسَةَ العَدَب وَيَخْفِص بِيْدَه نَعْلِه وَيَرْفَع بَيْدَه ثُوبَه وَيَكْبُر الحَمَار العَارِي وَيُرْفَع خَلْفه. وَيَكُون النَّسْرَ يَبْعِه بَيْنَه فَتِّكُون فِيهِ الْتَصَاوِيرَ يٰفْلَانِةً إِلَى أَزْوَاهُ غِيْبَى عِنْهٰ فَإِنَّهُ إِذَا نَظَرَت إِلَيْه ذُكِرَ الدُّنْيَة وَزِخْرَفُها. فأَعْرَض عَنِ الدُّنْيَة بَقُلَهَ وأَمَات ذُكِرَهَا مِن نَفْسِه وأَحْبَ أَن
ments. If you wish, I will give you a second example, that of Moses, he to whom God spoke. Moses beseeched, «My Lord, I am in dire need of whatever you may bestow!» By God, Moses asked God for nothing more than a piece of bread, for he had only wild plants to eat. He was so thin, his flesh so pared, that the green of the plants he had eaten shone through the translucent skin of his stomach. If you wish, I will give you a third example, that of David, he with the Psalms, reciter for the people of paradise. David would plait palm fronds with his own two hands and say to his associates, “Who will sell these for me?” then he would eat a coarse loaf of barley purchased with its sale. And if you wish, I will also tell you about Jesus, son of Mary. Jesus would use a rock for a pillow and wear rough garments. His food was hunger, his lamp at night the moon, his shelter in the winter the sun’s rays from East and West, his fruit and his fragrance the plants grown by the earth for the beasts. He had no wife to distract him, no son to grieve him, no wealth to occupy him, no greed to bring him low. His mount was his own two feet, his servant his own two hands.

1.158.4 People, follow the example of your own virtuous and pure Prophet. Any who look for an exemplar can find one in him. Any who look for consolation can find it in him. Of all his servants, God loves most the one who follows the example of his Prophet, who walks in his footsteps. The Prophet took the smallest morsel from the world, he never gave the world a full glance. His waist was the most emaciated, his stomach the emptiest of worldly things. The world was offered to him, but he refused. He knew that God hated it, so he hated it too. He knew that God considered it wretched, so he considered it wretched too. He knew that God considered it of little worth, so he considered it of little worth too. People, if our only faults are love for what God hates and exaltation of what he considers paltry, they would be sufficient to count as opposition to God and challenge to his command! The Prophet used to eat on the ground and sit like a servant. He used to mend his sandals with his own hands. He used to patch his garments with his own hands. He used to ride an unsaddled donkey, not even alone, but with someone often sitting behind him. A curtain with images was hung on the door of his home, and he said to one of his wives, ⟨Remove it from my sight—it reminds me of the world and its ornaments!⟩ He turned his heart away from the world, he suppressed its mention in his heart, he preferred that its adornments be removed from his eyes, so that he would not to be seduced by its soft luxuries or led to view it as a lasting home or permanent residence. He drove it from his spirit, banished it from his heart, and removed it

1 Qur’an, Qaṣaṣ 28:24.
تَعِيب زينتَها عن عينهِ لها يتَّخَذ منها رِياضًَا ولا يَغتَّددها قِرارًا ولا يَرجو فيها مَقَامًا
فَأخْرِجَهَا من النَّفْس وأخْضَعَهَا عَن القَلب وِضَيْفَهَا عَن البَصر وكَذَلِك من أَبْغَض شَيْئًا
أَبْغَض أن يَنظر إليه وأن يَذكِر عَنْهِ. وَلَقَد كَانَ في رَسَول اللَّه صَلَّى اللَّه عَلَيْه وَآله وَلَوْلَه
يُذَلِك على مَسَاوَى الدُّنْيَا وَعَيْبَهَا إذْ جَاعِفَهَا مَع خَاصَّهَا وَزُوْيَت عَنْهَا زَخَارَفَهَا مَع
عَظَم زَلْفَهَا. فَلَيْنَظِر نَاظِر بِعَلَة أَكْرَم اللَّه مَهَّدَّد بِذَلِك أَمَّهَا فإِن قَال أَهَانه فَقَدَ كَذَب
وَالعَظْمُ إِنْ قَال أَكَرْمَه فَلَيْنَظِر أَن اللَّه قد أَهَانّه وَحي بَسِط الدُّنْيَا لِحَوْرَاهَا عَن
أَقْرَبِ النَّاسِ مِنْهَا. فَتَأَسّى مَتَأَسٌ بَيْنَهَا وَآَقْتَصَ أَنْه وَوْجَل مَوْلُهَ وَإِلَٰهِ فَلَا تَأْمُنُ اللَّهُ
فَإِن اللَّه جَعَل مَهَّدًّا صَلِّ اللَّه عَلَيْه وَآله عَلَمًا لِلسَّاعَة وَمِبْشِرًا بَالجَنَّة وَمِنْذَرًا بَالعَقْوَة. خَرَج
مِن الدُّنْيَا خَيْصًا وَوُرَد الأَخْرَى سَلِيَمُّا لم يَبْحَطُ حَجَرًا عَلَى حَجَر حَتَّى مَضَى لَسْبِيله وأَجَاب
دَايِر رَبّه فَلَا أَعْمَض مِنْهَا اللَّه عَنْدَنا حِينْ أَنْعُم عَلَيْنَا بِسَلَفًا نَتِبَع وَقَائِدًا نَطاَعُ أَعْقِبَهَا.
وَلَقَد قَال لَيْ قَالِ أَلَا تَنْبِئُهَا فَقَلَتْ أَغْرِب عَنْي فِدَ عَنْدَ الصَّبِاح يَحْمِد القُوَّم السُّرِيٍّ.

وَمِن خَطْبَةِ لَه عَلِيِّ السَّلَام
ابْعِثَهُ بِالنُّور الْمُضِيِّ الْبَرَهَان الْجَلِّي الْمُنْهَج الْبَاَيِّ الْكِتَاب الْمَهْدِي أَسْرِهِ خَير أَسْرَة
وَجَرَّهُ خَير شَرْيَةٍ أَخْصَصَهَا مَعْتَدِلَةٌ وَمَمْارَهَا مُتَبَدِّلَة مُولَدَه بِمَكَّة وَجَرَّهُ بِطَيِّبَةٍ عَلَى بَضَا ذِكْرَه
وَأَمْتَدَّ مِنْهَا صوُتُهُ أَرْسَلُه بِحَجَّة كَافِيهَة وَمُوعِظَةٍ شَافِيهَة وَدِعَة مَتَافِيَة أَمْهُ بِالشَّرَع
المِجَهَّوَة وَقَعَ بِالبَدْع المِدْخَوَلة وَبِبَنِهِ الأَحْكَام الْمَفْضُوَلَة. فَمَن يَبْقَع غَيْرِ الْإِسْلَام

۱۵۹

۱۱۳۸م، وَأَضُيفَتْ فِي هَامِش يَهُ مَعَ عَلَامةِ الصَّحِيحَةِ كَذَا: ش. ن، وَأَصْلُهُ: سَقَطَتْ (لَسْبِيلهِ).
from his sight; for those who hate a thing hate to look at it, and they hate to have it mentioned. The Messenger’s story teaches you about the evils of the world and its flaws. He faced hunger and his loved ones did too. Its ornaments were kept from him despite his closeness to God. Let the discerning mind think: Did God honor Muḥammad by this or demean him? If he answers, “God demeaned him,” then, by God, he lies! If he answers, “God honored him,” then that person should know that God, in fact, demeaned others to whom he gave worldly chattels, while turning them away from the one closest to him. Any who seek an exemplar should follow God’s Prophet, walk in his footsteps, and enter through his door, else he will face perdition. God has made Muḥammad the banner for the coming hour, the herald of paradise, the warner ahead of the decisive punishment. Leaving the world empty-bellied, he entered the hereafter in sound health. Never once did he build a grand house, or place stone upon stone, until at last he answered his Lord’s call and went on to his final abode. What a great favor God has granted us, having blessed us with Muḥammad as an exemplar to follow, a commander in whose footsteps to walk.

By God, I too have patched my rough cloak so often that I am embarrassed to have it mended. Someone said to me, “Why don’t you throw it away?” and I replied, “Get away from me! 〈When morning comes, the night-traveler will be praised!〉”

1.159  From an oration by ʿAlī:

God sent Muḥammad with brilliant light, clear proof, a distinct path, and a book of guidance. His family is the best family, his tree is the best tree, its branches straight and tall, its fruits hanging low. His birth was in Mecca, his migration was to Ṭaybah, from there his fame rose high, and his voice spread far and wide. God sent Muḥammad with ample evidence, healing counsel, and an enlivening faith, through him, he revived abandoned laws, crushed newfangled heresies, and explained decreed rules. Indeed, «whoever seeks a religion other than Islam» will find his wretchedness real, his support bro-

---

1 A line of rajaz by the pre-Islamic poet Jumayḥ ibn al-Sharīd al-Ṭaghlībī, used proverbially to mean that fortitude begets a praiseworthy result. F 270; Abū Hilāl, Jamharah, 2:32, 2:42; Bakrī, Faṣl al-maqādīl, 254, 334; Maydānī, 2:3, § 2382; Jāḥiẓ, Hayawān, 6:538.

2 Earlier Yathrib, Ṭaybah—“The Pure (City)”—is the name given by Muḥammad to his new hometown. After Muḥammad’s migration, people began referring to it as “The City of the Prophet” (Madīnat al-nabī) in short, Medina, which is how it is best known.

3 Ar. daʿwah, lit. call.

4 Ar. sharāʾiʿ sing., sharīʿah, lit. paths, potentially referring to the laws of earlier prophets.

5 Qur’an, Āl ʿImrān 3:85. The verse may also be translated, «... other than commitment (islām) to God’s will». 

---
دِينَاءُ» تحقَّقَ شفَوته وتَنفَصَم عروته وتعظَّم كُبوته ويكن مآهَب إلى الحزن الطويل والعذاب الوبي. وَتَوَكَّل على الله تَوَكَّل الإِنْانِإِبِإِهِ وَأَسْتَرْدَوْهَا السِبْيل المؤدِية إلى جَنْنِه القاسِدة إلى مَحلِّ رَغبِه. أَوصِيِمَ عَبَد الله بِتَقْويَة الله وطاعته فإِنَّها النجاة غَدًا والمنجاة أُبَدًا. رَهَب فَأَبَغ وَرَغِب فَأَسِلَى وَوَقَفَ كُلُ الدِمَيْنِ وَأَنْقَطَعُها وَزُوَّرَهَا وَأَتْقَلَاها فَأُعْضَرَا عُمَّا يَعْجِبُمَا فِيَّ لَقِلّةً مَا يَصِحَّبُهَا مِنَا أَقْرَبَ دَا رِن مِن حَصْطِ الله وأَبْدَعَهَا مِن رَضْوَانِ اللَّهِ فَغُضِبَّهَا عِنْك عَبَد الله غَمَوْهَا وأَشْغَفَهَا مَا قد أَيْقَنَتْ بِهِ مِن فَرَاقَهَا وَتَصَرَّفَ حالَتَهَا فَأُحْذَرُوا حَذَر الشَفِيق النَأْصِحِ والمَجِّيد الكَادِحِ وَأَعْتَبَرْوا بِمَا قَد رَأِيَتْ مِن مِصَارعَ الْقُوْرِين قِبْلَكَ كَمْ كَرَلَّتْ أُوْصَاهُم وَزَالَتْ أَسْمَاعَهُم وأُبْصَارَهُم وَذَهَبَ شَرْفُهُم وَعْرَّهُم وَأَنْقِطَعْ سَرُورُهُم وَتَنْعُمُهُم. فِيَدَّلُّوا بِقَرَبِ الأَوْلَاد فَدَّعُهُم وَيَصْحِبُهَا الأَزْوَاجُ مِنْهَا لا يَتَفَخَّرُونَ وَلا يَتَنَاسَلُونَ وَلا يَتَزاوَرُونَ وَلا يَتَجاوَرونَ فَأُحْذَرُوا عَبَد الله حَذَرِ الْغَالِبِ لَنفَسِهِ المَلَعِ لِشَهِيْبِهِ النَّاظِرِ بِعَطْلِهِ إِنَّ الْأَمْرِ وَاحِشِ الْعَلَمُ قَائِمٌ وَالطَّرِيقُ جَدّدٌ وَالسِّبْيل قَصِدٌ

١٦٠٦. وَمِن كَلَامِهِ عَلَى السَلَام لِبَعْضِ أَصْحَابِهِ وَقَد سَأَلَهُ كَيْفَ دَفْعَكُم مِعَ هَذَا الْمَقَامِ وَأَقُلْتُ أَحْقَهُ بِهِ فَقَالَ يَا أَخَاهَ بِنِي أَسْدَ إِنَّ إِلَّهَكَ لَقَّلِقُ الْوُضَيْنِ تُرْسُلُ فِي غَيْرِ سَدَدَ وَلَك بِعَدْ ذِمَامَة الصَّبر وَحَقَّ الْمَسَألَةٍ وَقَدَ أَسْتَعْلِمْتُ فَآَعَلَمَ أَمَّا الْإِسْتَبْدَادُ عَلَيْهِ هَذَا الْمَقَامِ وَخَنْ الْأَعْلَوْنِ نَسِبًا وَالْأَشْدُونَ بِالرَّسُولِ نَوْعًا فَإِنَّهَا كَانَتْ أَثْرَةَ ثَقَتُهُ عَلَيْهِ نَفْوُهُ قَوْمٍ وَتَحَتَّهُ عَنْهَا نَفْوُهُ آخَرَيْنِ وَالحَكَّرُ
ken, and his tread unsteady. His final return will be to long-lasting grief and painful punishment. I place my trust in God and turn to him. I seek his guidance in finding the path that will lead to his Garden and direct me to his pleasure. Servants of God! I counsel you to be conscious of him and obey him, for that will bring you salvation on the morrow and eternal deliverance. He cautioned you to beware and gave full warning. He directed you to earn reward and gave complete measure. He described the world to you and told you of its severance, its transience, its departure. People, turn away from everything in it that excite your wonder, because it will not be with you for long. This world is the domicile that is closest to God’s anger and farthest from his pleasure. Servants of God, be certain of its separation and mutability, turn your eyes away from its griefs and occupations, be true to your soul and work hard for it, fear the world’s dealings, and learn from the generations before you that you have seen die. Their limbs fell asunder, their ears and eyes ceased to function, their grandeur and might were lost, their happiness and joys were severed. In place of proximity to their children they were given loss, in place of the companionship of spouses they were given isolation. They no longer boast, or procreate, or visit, or associate. Servants of God, beware! Control your passions, restrain your desires, and use your intellect! The matter is clear, the banner is erect, the road is compact, and the path is straightforward.

1.160 From an address by ‘Ali, to one of his associates who asked him, “How is it that your tribe has driven you away from this position when you are worthier?” ‘Ali answered: ¹

You man of Asad! Your girth is loose, and you fire without aim!² Still, you possess kinship through marriage, and have the right to ask.³ You want to know, so I will give you an answer: The injustice done to us concerning this position—when we are loftier in lineage and our kinship with the Messenger is closer—was an act of amoral appropriation. Some hearts coveted it, other

¹ Ṣadūq (Amālī, 716–717) places this address at Ṣiffīn in 37/657; the speaker is a man from the Dūdān clan of Asad. “This position” (ḥādhā l-maqām), refers to the caliphate; Sunni commentators (H 2:243; also mentioned in B 543) interpret the referent as the Shūrā Council who elected ʿUthmān, while Shiʿi commentators (B 543; R 2:125) interpret the referent as ʿUthmān in particular, but also Abū Bakr and ʿUmar.

² Refers to the man’s lack of discernment and his speaking out of turn. R 2:122; H 9:242; B 543; F 271.

³ ‘Ali’s kinship to the Asad tribe was through one of the following Asadī women: (1) ‘Ali’s wife Laylā bint Masʿūd ibn Khalīd (F 271–272); (2) an unnamed wife of ‘Ali (R 2:123); (3) the Prophet’s wife Zaynab bint Jaḥsh (H 9:242–243; Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd says ‘Ali himself never married into Asad).
الله والموعد إليه القيامة. ودع عنك نهات صبح في جحاثة، وهلر الخطب في ابن أبي سفيان فلقد أضحكتي الدهر بعد إياك ولا غزوة والإله فيله خطا يستفرغ العجب ويكثر الأود حاور المقام إطفاء نور الله من مصباحه وشد فواره من يتباعه وجدحوا بيني وبينهم شربا وبيتا. فإن ترتفع عننا وعنهم سحق البلوى أجملهم من الحق على محضه وإن تكن الأخرى فلا تذهب نفسك عليهم حسرات وإن الله عليما بما يصنعون.

ومن خطبة له عليه السلام

الحمد لله خالق العاد وساطع المهاد ومسائل الهداد وخصوص النجاد ليس لأولئيه أبداء ولا لأزليه أنقضاء هو الأول لم يزل والباقي ولا أجل خرت له الجاه ووحده الشفاه حذ الأشياء عند خلقه لها إبانة له من شبهها لا تقدره الأوهام بالحدود والتحركات ولا بالجوارج والأدوات لا يقال له متى ولا يضرب له أمد يحيي الظاهر لا يقال مهما والباطن لا يقال فيما لا شيح فيتفضى ولا محوج فيحوى لم يقرب من الأشياء بالتصاق ولم يبعد عنها بأقتراف لا يخفى عليه من عباده شحص لحظة

hearts relinquished it, and God is the judge, the resurrection the time of return. But forget about the looting that caused screams in the neighborhood and call out the crime of Abū Sufyān’s son! Time has made me weep and then laugh! No wonder, by God! What a calamity, what astonishment, what toil! These people seek to extinguish the light of God’s lamp and block the water that gushes from his wellspring. They pour pestilence into the water between them and us. If these calamitous trials are lifted, I shall drive them on the course of unadulterated truth. If the opposite, well, «do not grieve over their actions, for God knows all that they do!»

1.161 From an oration by ‘Alī:

1.161.1 Praise God, who created his servants, unfurled the earth, filled valleys with streams, and covered highlands with green. His primacy has no beginning, and his perpetuity never concludes, he is first without ceasing, and eternal without end, foreheads touch the ground before him, and lips declare his oneness. He demarcated all the entities he created to differentiate between their likeness and him. Imaginations cannot evaluate him with perimeters and movements, nor with limbs and instruments. It cannot be asked of him, “When?” nor can a limit be set for him by saying, “Until.” He is the manifest about whom no one can ask, “From what?” and the hidden, about whom no one can ask, “In what?” He is neither a form that can be destroyed, nor is he veiled and thus encompassed. He is neither near to things by adherence nor remote from them by separation. An unblinking gaze, an echoing word, an approach to a hilltop, a lengthening of step—one of his servants’ actions are hidden from
ولا كروت لفظة ولا أزدلاف روة ولا أنساط خلطة في ليل داج ولا غسق ساج
يتفيّا عليه القمر المنير وتعقبه الشمس ذات النور في الكور والأوفّ وتلقيب الآمنة
والدهور من إقبال ليل مقبل وإداره نهار مدير قبل كل غاية ومدّة وكل إحساء وعذة
تعالٌ عما يخلم المحدّدون من صفات الأقدار ونباتات الأقطار وتتألّل المساكن وتمكّن
الأماكن فمكّخلته مضروب وإلي غيره منسوب. لم يخلق الأشياء من أصول أزليّة
ولا من أوائل بدّية بل خلق ما خلق فأقام حده وصورّ ما صورّ فأحسن صورته ليس
لشيء منه عمتان ولا له بطاعة شيء متّفاعع عليه بالأموات الماضين كعلمه بالأحياء
الباقيين وعلمه بما في السماوات العلي كعلمه بما في الأرضين السفلي.

١.١٦١.٢
منها
أيّها الخلق القسري والمنشأ المرعي في ظلمات الأرحام ومضاعفات الأستر بديت
من ساللاتها من طين ووضعت في قرار ماكين إلى قادر معلوم وأج مقوم تمور
في بطن أمّك جنَّين لا تخفي دعاء ولا تسمع نداء ثمّ أخرجت من مقرّك إلى دار لتضدها
ولم تعرف سبل مناشفها في هذا لأجتاز الغداء من ثدي أمّك وعرفّك عند الحاجة
مواضع طلبك وإرادتك. هيئات إنّ من يعجز عن صفات ذي الهيئة والأدوات فهو
عن صفات خالقته أجز ومن تناوله بحدود الخلقين أبعد.

١.٦٢
ومن كلام له علية السلام لما جمع الناس إليه وشكوا ما تقومه على عثمان وسألوه
مختلبه عنهم وأستعتله لم فدخل على عثمان فقال:


al-Sharif al-Radi - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
him, even in the darkest night, even in motionless dusk. The moon shines above the darkness, and the blazing sun follows, rising and setting in the rotation of eras and eons, with nights advancing and days in retreat. He is before every end and term, every reckoning and calculation. He is exalted above every description ascribed to him: attributes of quantity, terminal points in space, location in dwellings, and fixedness in place. Limits are specified for his creation—they relate only to beings other than him. He did not create things from eternal fundamentals or timeless principles. Rather, he created what he created and established its limit, he shaped what he shaped and made it beautiful. No one can withstand his power, just as no one can seek to benefit him by obeying him. His knowledge of the dead equals his knowledge of the living, his knowledge of what is in the lofty skies equals his knowledge of what is in the nethermost regions of the earth.

1.161.2 From the same oration:
O you who have been created with harmonious proportions, carefully nurtured in the darkness of wombs and the multiplicity of veils. You began as «an extraction of clay»¹ and were placed in «a safe abode for a known term»² and an ordained duration. You quickened in your mother’s belly as a fetus, never answering a call or hearing a shout. Then you were brought out of your dwelling to an abode you had not witnessed, and whose benefits you did not know how to attain. Who guided you then to suckle from your mother’s breast? Who showed you in your time of need the place where you could obtain what you sought and wished for? One who is incapable of describing a being with form and appendages is even more incapable of describing the creator, far from it! He is even further from being able to grasp the creator through the definitions of created beings.

1.162 From an address by ‘Alī, when people gathered around him to complain of wrongs ‘Uthmān had committed and asked ‘Alī to remonstrate with him on their behalf and rebuke him. ‘Alī went to ‘Uthmān and said:³

---

1 Qur‘an, Mu’minūn 23:12.
2 Qur‘an, Mursalāt 77:21–22.
1.162.1 إن الناس ورايت وقَد أَسْتَفَرُونَ بِنَبِيِّك وِيْتِنِهم وَوَلَّاهُ ما أَدْرَى مَا أُقْلِدَ لَك مَا أَعْرَف شَيْئًا تَجِهِه وَلَا أَدْلَك عَلَى أَمْر لَا تَتَعَرَّفُه إِنَّك لَتَعْلَم مَا نَعْلُم مَا سَبِقَناك إِلَى شَيْء فَنُخْرِك عَنْه وَلَا خَلُو نَبِيَّ شَيْئَ فَبَلْ يُعَظَّلَهُ وَقَدْ رَأَيْت كَمْ رَايْنَا وَسَعْت كَمْ سَمِعْنا وَصِحِبَت رَسُول الله صَلِّي الله عَلَيْهِ وَرَحْمَتُهُ عَلَيْه وَلَهَا كَمْ حَصُنُنا وَمَا أَبَن أَبِي قَافِة وَلَا أَبِن الخَطَّاب بَوْلَي بعَم الحَقِّ مِنْك وَأَنْت أَقْرَب إِلَى رَسُول الله صَلِّي الله عَلَيْه وَرَحْمَتُهُ عَلَيْه وَشِيْعَة رَحْمٍ مِنْهُمْ وَقَد تُنفُّذ من صَبْرِه مَا لَم يَنْتَل. فَلَهَنَا إِنَّك وَلَا تُبِّسُ مِن عَيْنِ وَلَا تَعْلُم مِن جَهَّل وإن الْإِرْث لَوْضَحَة وَإِنْ أَعْلَامِ الدِين لَقَانِم.

1.162.2 فَأَعْلَم أَنْ أَفْضِل عَبَّاد الله عَنْد الله إِمَام عَادِل هُدِي وَهَذَى فَأْقَام سَنَة مَعْلُومَة وَأَمَات بُدْعَة مُجَهُوْلَة وَإِن السَّن نَّزِيْهْ لَا أَعْلَام وَإِنَّ الْبَدْع لَظَاهْرَة لَهَا أَعْلَام وَإِنْ شَرِّ النَّاس عَنْد الله إِمَام جَارِض ضَل وَضُبْبَه فَأَمَاتْ سَنَة مَأْخوْذَة وَأَحْيَا بُدْعَة مَتَرَوْكَة وَإِنْ سَمِعْت رَسُول الله صَلِّي الله عَلَيْه وَرَحْمَتُهُ عَلَيْه وَلَهَا يَقُول (يُؤِيْتِ يَوْم الْقِيَامَة بِالإِمَام الْجَارِي وَلِيْس مَعِهِ مُنْصِر وَلَا عَاذِرًا فَتُقِيُّ فِي جَهْرِهِ فِي دُوْرِهِ كَأَنَّهُ بُدُورُ الرَّحْيُ تُرْبَتْ فِي قَعْرَهَا) وَإِنْ أَنْشَدَ الله أَنْ تَكُون إِمَام هَذِهِ الأَمَامَة مُقْتُولٌ فَإِنَّك كَان يَقَال (يُقَتَّل فِي هَذِهِ الأَمَامَة إِمَام يَفْتِح عَلَى الْقُتْلِ وَالْقَتْل إِلَى يَوْم الْقِيَامَة) وَيَلَبِّس أَمَوْرَهَا عَلَيْهِ وَيَبْذَلُ الْفَتْن فِيهَا فَلا يَبْصَرُون الحَقَّ مِنَ الْبَاطِل يَمْجُون فِيهَا مُوجَّه وَيَمْرُون فِيهَا مَرْجَأ. فَلا تَكُون نَّمَرَوان سَنِيَّة بَسْوَقَ حَيْثْ شَاء عَدِل الْسِّن وَتَقْضِي العُمْر.

1.162.3 فقال له عثمان
كَلِمُ النَّاس فِي أَنْ يَؤْجَلِوْنِي حَتَّى أَخْرِجْ إِلَيْهِم مِن مَّظَامِنِهِم.

الإِمَامُ الْجَارِي وَلِيْس مَعِه عَاذِرًا.
1.162.1 People have gathered behind me, and they have sent me to negotiate. By God, I don't know what to say! There is nothing I know that you don’t, no path I can guide you to that you are not familiar with already. You know what we know, we have not preceded you to something that we can tell you about, nor privately learned something we can share. You have seen what we saw, you have associated with God’s Messenger as we did. In truth, Ibn Abī Quḥāfah and Ibn al-Khaṭṭāb were not worthier of doing what is right than you! You are closer to the Messenger in kinship, and you, not they, have the honor of being his son-in-law. Fear God for the sake of your soul! By God, you do not need to be given sight as though you were blind, or knowledge as though you were ignorant! The roads are clear, and faith's banners stand high.

1.162.2 Know that the best of his servants in God's eyes is a just leader who is rightly guided and guides aright, who establishes time-honored practices and puts to death unacceptable heresies. The paths of the Sunnah are brightly illuminated and have their banners. Innovations are also clearly visible, and they too have their banners. The worst of people in God’s eyes is an unjust leader who goes astray and leads people astray, who puts to death time-honored practices and revives abandoned heresies. I have heard the Messenger of God say, ⟨On the day of resurrection, the unjust leader will be brought for judgment, and he will not have a single person to help him or speak on his behalf. He will be thrown into the Pit of Gehenna and spin there like a millstone, then he will be tethered in its lowest point.⟩ I ask you in God’s name, do not be the slain leader of this community, for it has been said that “a leader will be slain in this community who will open unto it the door of killing and assault till the resurrection.” The community’s affairs will slide into chaos and seditions will become widespread, such that people will stop distinguishing right from wrong. They will heave in agitated waves, disordered and confused. At your advanced age, having neared the end of your life, don't become a camel driven by Marwān’s whim!

1.162.3 ʿUthmān responded to ʿAlī:
Talk to the people and ask them to give me time to address their grievances.

---

1 Marwān ibn al-Ḥakam, who had earlier been exiled along with his father from Medina by the Prophet, was a member of the Umayyad clan and one of ʿUthmān’s chief advisors during his caliphate. Later, he fought against ʿAlī at the Battle of the Camel but reluctantly pledged allegiance to him in defeat. After the death of Muʾāwiyah’s grandson Muʾāwiyah ii, Marwān became the first caliph of the Marwānid branch of the Umayyads.
قال عليه السلام
ما كان بالمدينة فلا أجل فيه وما غاب فأجله وصول أمرك إليه.

ومن خطبة له عليه السلام ذكر فيها خيبر خلقة الطاوس.

1.163.1 ابتدأهم خلقًا خبيّ من حيوانات وموروث وسائلك وذكري حلقات وأقام من
厩ها الزيادات على لطيف صنعته وعظم قدرته ما أنفاذته له العقول معترفة به ومسلبة
له ونعقت في آسماها دلائله على وحدانيته وما ذرأ من مختلف صور الأطيار التي أمكنها
أخاذ الأفعي وخروج بجاجها ورواسي أعلامها من ذات أجنة مختلفة وبيئات
متبجعة مصورة في زمان التسخير ومرفرفة بأجنحةها في حيال الجو المنساب والغضا
المنزور. كونها بعد إذ لم تكن في عاب صور ظاهرة وركبتها في حقاق مفاصل محتملة
ومنع بعضها بعلة خلقه أن يسمى في السماء خفوقًا وجعله ضيّ دقيقًا ونستها على
اختلافها في الأصباغ بلطف قدرته ودقيق صنعته فها مغموم في قابل لون لا يشوبه
غير لون ما نُمس فيه ومنها مغموم في لون صبغي قد طرَق بخلاف ما صبغ به.

1.163.2 ومن أتبجها خلاص الطاوس الذي أقامه في أحكم تعديل ونضاد ألقاها في أحذن
نينجة حنوب أسلوحة قصيرة وذوب أطلال مسحه إذا درج إلى الأثاث نشره من ثقي
وسما به متملا على رأسه كأنه قلّ عاري غبّه عن الهملاة يختفل بألوانه ويميض يزيّنها يفضي
كإضاءة البد 새كة ويردد بملائمة. أحياله من ذلك على معاينة لا كن يخشى على ضعيف
إسانه. ولو كان كروم من يعزم أنه يلتقى بدمعة تسحها؛ مدامعه فتقف ضيفتي

ش، ن، ي: ك.د.م، ونسخة في ي: الهواه، 23، ن، ه: ك.د.م، ي، ونسخة في ش،
ه: طوّق، 33، ن: ك.د.م، ي: ك.د.م، ونسخة في ش: (أشرة)؛ ش، ن، ي: ه: ك.د.م،
ونسخة في ن: ي، ه: تنشجها، ونسختان في ش: (تسبحة) وانكسها.
'Alî replied:
For grievances within Medina, there can be no reprieve. For those from other
places, you can have only as much time as it takes for your orders to get there.

1.163  From 'Alî’s oration in which he describes the wondrous creation of the peacock:

1.163.1  God created wondrous creatures, living beings, inanimate bodies, still
objects, and things that move, and he set up clear testimonies to his sublime
craftsmanship and great power, impelling intellects to recognize and submit to
him. Proofs of his oneness cry out to our ears, including the birds that he cre-
atated in a multitude of forms, that he lodged in the furrows of the earth and in
the crevices of its mountain passes and mighty crags. Possessing many kinds of
wings and different shapes, all are controlled by the rein of subjugation, yet soar
in spaces within the vastness of the ether and the wide-open skies. He brought
them from non-being into being in marvelous forms. He fitted joints to sockets
and covered them with flesh. He made some birds bulky, preventing them from
rising easily into the sky, and causing them to flutter and flap on the ground. He
fashioned them all differently, in diverse hues, with his sublime power and pre-
cise craftsmanship. Some he gave a single unadulterated color, others he dyed
with a color iridescent with the sheen of a second hue.

1.163.2  The most marvelous of birds in the manner of its creation is the pea-
cock, which is formed by the creator in the most congruent harmony, with
its colors arrayed in the best possible way, with wings of interlacing, golden
feather-shafts, and a tail with a lengthened train. When it approaches the hen,
the peacock spreads out the folds of its tail and lifts it high over its head, like a
Dârî sail hoisted by a boatman.° It struts haughtily in its many colors and swag-
gers dragging its train. It mates in the manner of the cockerel, leaping onto the
female and inseminating it. I relate this to you from observation, not as one
whose narrations are based on weak attribution.° Even if it were the case, as
some believe, that the peacock inseminates through a teardrop emitted by its
tear ducts and poised on the edge of its eyelids, and that the female imbibes it

---

1  Dârî is a relative adjective from Dârîn, the name of the main settlement on an island near
Qaṭîf, on the eastern coast of present-day Saudi Arabia. In pre-Islamic and early Islamic times,
Dârîn was the main port of Bahrain, through which musk was imported from India. Yâqût,
2  Although not native to the Arabian Peninsula, peacocks were common in the Persian empire,
and the commentators state that ‘Alî would have seen them in Kufa. H 9:270; Jâhîz, Hayawân
7:170, 186.
جفوني وَأَنَّ أَنْتَهَا تَطْمِعُ ذُلْكَ بِتَبِيضٍ لَّا مِنْ لِقَاحٍ فَلِسَوْى الدِّمَوعِ المِنِبَجِسُ لَمْ يَكُن
ذَلِكَ بِأَعْجَبٍ مِنْ مَطْعَامِ الْغَرَابِ.
تَعَالَ قََصْبُهُ مَدْارِي مِنْ فَصَّةٍ وَمَا أَنْتَ عَلَيْهَا مِنْ عَجِيبِ دِرَارِهِ وَشُوْمَهُ خَالِصٌ
الْعَقِيَّانِ وَفِلَدَ الْزَّرِيْجَ فَإِنْ شَهِيَتْ بِمَا أَنْتَ أَرْضُ قَلْتُ جَنَّيَ جَنْيِ مِنْ زَهْرَةٍ كِلّ
رَيْخِيَانِ وَإِنَّ ضَاهِيَتُهُ بِالْمَلَابِسِ فَهُوَ كُوُسْتِيّ الْحَلْلٍ أَوْ مُوْرِقٍ عَضْبٍ اِبْيَمَ وَإِنْ شَكَّلَهُ
بَلْهُيّ فِيْ فَنْصُوصِ ذَلِكَ أَلوَانَ قَدْ نُظَفَّتْ بِالْجُلْبِ المَكْلَلِ يَمِيِّثُ مِشْيِهِ المْرَحِ المَخْتَالِ
وِيَتْصَفَّحُ ذِنْهُ وَجِنَاحْهُ فَقَهْتَهُ ضَاحِكًا بَجَالِ سِرْبَالِهِ وَأَصَابِعٍ وِسَابِحَةٍ فَإِذَا رُمَيْ بِبَصْرِهِ
إِلَى قَوَأَيْهِ رُقَأ مُؤْوَلًا بِصَوْتٍ يُكَادُ بَيْنَ عَنْ أَسْتَغْتَائِهِ وَيِشْهَدُ بِصَادِقٍ تَوْجِعُهُ لَأَنَّ قَوَأَيْهِ
حُمْشُ كُقوَائِمِ الْدِّيَكِيَّةِ الخَلاَصِيَّةِ وَقَدْ نَجَّتُ مِنْ ظَنْبُوبٍ سَائِقَةِ صَيْصَيَّةَ خَفِيَّةٍ وَلِهُ فِي
مَوْضُعِ الْعُرْفِ قَنْزَعَةُ خَضْرَاءٍ مُوْشَأةٍ وْخَتَرْعُنِهُ كَالْإِرْبِيْقِ وَمَغْرِزَةُهُ إِلَى حِيْثَ بَطَّهُ
كِصْبُ الْوَسْحَةِ الْأَمِيْنَةِ أَوْ كُرَيْةٌ مُلْبِسَة مَرَأَةٌ ذَاتِ صَقْالٍ وَكَانَتْ مَلَعْتَ مَعْجَرُ تَحْكِمُ
إِلَّا أَنْ أَتْيَتْ لِكَثْرَةِ مَلَاهُ وَشَدَّةُ بَريِّهِ أَنَّ الخَضْرَةَ النَّاَضَرَةَ مَتَزَجَّيْهِ بَهُ. وَمَعْ فُقَطْ سَمَّيُهُ
حَلْطَ كَمْسَتْدَقُ الْقَلْمِ فِي لُوْنَ الْأَلوَانِ أَبْيضٌ يَفْقُهُ فِيهِ بَيْاضَهُ فِي سَوَادِ مَا هَنَّاكَ
يَأْتَيْقُ. وَقَلْ صَبْغُ إِذَا وَقَدْ أَخَذَ مِنْهُ بِقَسْطٍ وَعَلاَهُ بِكَثْرَةِ صَقَالٍ وَبَريِّهِ وَبِصَبْصَ
دِبِيَاهُ وَرُونُقُهُ فَهُوَ كَاْلْزَهْرِ الْبُثَّوَةُ لَمْ تَرََّبَا أَمْتَارُ رِيْبِ وَلَا شِمْوَسٌ فِيْقَطٍ. وَقَدْ يَخْسَرُ
مِنْ رِيْشَهُ وَيَعْرِيَ مِنْ لَبَاسِهِ فِيْقَطْ تَنَرُى وَبَيِّنَتْ تَبَأْعًا فِيْنِّحْتُ مِنْ قَضَبِهِ أَخْتَاتُ
أُوْرَاقِ الأَفْصَانِ ثُمَّ يَتَلَحَّقُ نَامَيًا حَتَّى يَعْدُ كَهْيِهِتُهُ قِبْلَ سَقْوَطِهِ لَا يَخْلِفُ سَائلٌ
أَلوَانَهُ وَلَا يَقْعُ لَوْنَ فِي غَيْرِ مَكَانِهِ إِذَا تَسْفَحُتْ شَعْرَةُ مِنْ شَعْرَاتِ قَصِبِهِ أَرْتَكَ حِمْرَةٌ
وَرِدِيَةٌ وَتَأْثِرَ خَضْرَةٌ زَرْجَدِيَّةٌ وَأَحْيَانًا صَفَرَةٌ عَسْجَدَيَّةٌ وَكَيفْ تُصِلُّ إِلَى صُفُهُ هَذَا
١م، يِ، وَنِسْخَةٌ فِي شَ: كَذَا شَ، نِ، هَدَةٌ: (مْقَتَّعُ). ٢ش، ن، يِ، هَدَةٌ: كَذَا مَ، وَنِسْخَةٌ فِي يِ: (سَالِفٌ).
al-Sharif al-Radī - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
then lays eggs,¹ rather than through insemination by a male with a fluid other than his teardrop, that would not be more marvelous than the mating of crows through mutual feeding.²

You would think the shafts of the peacock’s feathers silver combs and the astonishing halos and suns that sprout from them coins of pure gold and shards of green emerald! If you were to compare them to the earth’s produce, you would call it a bouquet of spring flowers. If you were to liken them to garments, you would say they are an embroidered robe, or a beautiful Yemeni turban. If you were to equate them with jewelry, they would be bezelled gemstones of different colors rimmed with studs of silver. The peacock struts, haughty and exultant, it fans its tail and wings and laughs out loud, relishing its beautiful dress and its many-hued scarf. But when it looks at its legs, it cries out in pain with a voice that reveals its need for help and testifies to its real suffering, for its legs are scrawny, like the legs of a drab cockerel, and a small spur juts out from its shinbone. In its crest, though, it has a beautiful crown of green feathers, while the curve of its neck is shaped like the mouth of a water-jug, and underneath, its belly is like the cobalt-blue dye of Yemen, or like silk cloth draped on a polished mirror. It appears wrapped in a veil of purest black, except that its luster is so intense and its sheen so bright that it is as if fresh green is mixed in with the black. At the slit of its earhole, there is a line like the fine edge of a reed-pen, snowy white in color like the chamomile flower, and its whiteness gleams against the blackness that prevails there. There is hardly a color it does not have a share of, and that has not been enhanced further by a unique polish, gleam, sheen, and radiance. It looks like scattered flowers untouched by spring showers or full summer suns. Sometimes, it sheds its feathers, as if stripping off its clothes; they fall off, one by one, then grow back altogether. They fall from their shaft-roots like leaves from a branch, then grow and connect, until they come back the way they were before; the new colors are no different, and not a single color appears in the wrong place. If you examine just one of the plumules growing from the shaft, it will display the red of a rose, the green of an emerald, and even at times the yellow of pure gold. Not even the deepest of minds and the most gifted of intellects can find a way to describe this creature, so how

¹ In Hindu mythology, peahens self-impregnate by drinking the tears of peacocks, which are celibate (brahmachārī), and to laud ascetics, Lord Krishna wears a peacock feather in his crown.

² In ancient Arab folklore, crows mate by exchanging inseminating fluid through their beaks, and their proverb says, ⟨more hidden than the mating of a crow⟩. Details and caveats in Ḥ 9:270; Jāḥiẓ, Ḥayawān, 3:177, 3:464, 7:244. I have added “mating” in the translation to clarify this context.
عمتى الفطن أو تبلغه قرآت العقول أو تستعمل وصفه أقوال الوافعين وأقلي أجزائه قد أجزاها وهم أن تدرك وأنسلج أن تصفه فسبيحان الذي برع العقول عن وصف خلقه جلاعباً للعوين فأدركته مكرونًا ومؤلفًا ملونًا وأجزا النسج عن تلخيص صفته وفؼد بها عن تأدية نعه، وسبيحان من أديغ قومه الذرة والمهمجة إلى ما فقدهم من خلق الحيتان والأفيلة ووأي على نفسه ألا يضطرب شبح ما أولج فيه الروح إلا وجعل الحمام موعده والفتنة غائبه.

1.63.3 منا في صفة الجنة فلو رميت ببص قلبك نحو ما يوصف لك منها لَعْرَفْت نفسك عن بدائع ما أخرج إلى الدنيا من شهوتاتها ولذاتها وزخارف مناظرها ولذهلت بالفكر في أصفاف أشعار غيبت عروفي في كتبان السِّك على سواحل أنهرها وفي تعليق كبايِن اللؤلؤ الرطب في عساليجها وأثابتها وطول تلك الثمار المختلفة في غُلف أمِّها تجىٌ من غير تكلف فتأتي على نُبَتة مجنتها ويطاف على تِراَها في أقدية فصوصها بالأعمال المصيِقَّة والمجريَة الروَّق قوم لم تزل الكرامة تنادي بهم حتى حلوا دار القرار وأمنوا نقلة الأسفار فارشغت قلبك أياً المستمع بالوصول إلى ما يهم عليك من تلك المناظر المونيقة لزهفت نفسك شوقًا إليها ولتحمَّلت من مجلسي هذا إلى مجاورة أهل القبور استعجالًا بها. جعلنا الله وانَّا كم من يسع بقيبه إلى منازل الأئرة برحمته.

1.63.4 تفسير بعض ما في هذه الخطبة من الغريب قوله عليه السلام (ويؤر بضفة) الأر كاتية عن النكتاح يقال (آرَّةً المرأة يؤرها) إذا نحهجها. وقوله (كأنَّه قلع داري عنجه نورِي.) القفل شراع السفينة وداري منصب إلى دارين وهي بلدة على البحر يُجبب منها الطيب وعنجه أي عطبه يقال (عَنْجَت الناقة أعَنِجها عنَجَتُ.) إذا عطتها والثوتنا الملاح. وقوله (ضَفَّيْنِي جفني.) أراد جاني جفنيه وضفتانه الجبانان. وقوله (وفرظ الزربدة) الفلد جمل فلدة وهي القطعة. وقوله (كبايز اللؤلؤ الرطيب) الكباجة العظيمة والعساليق الغصون واحدها عسويل. 

اش، ن، م، ه: كذا ي: (حقه).
can words be mustered to illustrate it? Even the smallest of its parts is so splendid that it exceeds the grasp of imagination and surpasses the descriptions of tongues. Glory to the one who has dazzled intellects, who has rendered them incapable of describing a creature that he placed in the open, where eyes could perceive its outline, shape, structure, and color! He made tongues incapable of describing it succinctly and rendered them too weak to give its depiction full due. Glory to the one who gave strong structures to all creatures, from ants and gnats to whales and elephants, and who pledged to himself that no form he has infused with spirit shall move, without death being its end, and destruction its goal!

1.163.3 From the same oration, describing the celestial garden:

If you gaze with your heart’s eye at the wonders described for you of paradise, your soul will loathe the marvels of this world, its sensualities, pleasures, and gilded landscapes. You will lose yourself in heaven’s rustling trees whose roots are buried in dunes of musk on the banks of its rivers, in the clusters of brilliant pearls that hang from their branches, in the fruits that burst from their sepals that can be gathered without effort and delight the gatherer. You will see the residents of heaven’s pavilions and arcades, who are served pure honey and rich wine; they lived in this world nobly until, at last, they settled in a permanent home, with no further need of travels and journeys. If you were to task your heart truly, O listener, with reaching these wondrous landscapes, your longing soul would leave your body right now, and you would hasten from this assembly here to the company of the people of the grave! May God, in his mercy, place us among those whose hearts strive to reach the abode of the pious!

1.163.4 Raḍī: Explanation of some of the rare words in this oration: As for ‘Alī’s words, “it leaps on the female and inseminates it (wa-yaʾurru bi-mulāqahah),” “leaping on” alludes to copulation; it is said, “he leaped on the woman, he leaps on her,” if he copulates with her. As for ‘Alī’s words, “as though it were a Dārī sail hoisted by a boatman (ka-annahū qalʿu Dāriyyin ʿanajahu nūṭiyuhu),” qalʿ is a ship’s canvas sheet, and Dārī is related to Dārīn, a sea town through which perfumes are imported; “hoisted (ʿanaja)” means he made it turn; it is said “I hoisted the female camel,” “I hoist it a hoisting,” if I make it turn; nūṭi is a seaman. As for ‘Alī’s words, “ḍaffah of its eyelids,” he meant the sides of its eyelids; ḍaffah means side. As for ‘Alī’s words, “bits (filadh) of green emerald,” filadh is the plural of fildhah, which means piece. As for ‘Alī’s words, “clusters of brilliant pearls (kabāʾis al-luʾluʾ al-raṭḥ),” kibāsah (clusters) means bunch, ‘asālıj (branches) are tree limbs; the singular is ‘uslıj.
1.164 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام لِمُتَّابِعَهُم كِبْرِيَّةٌ وَلِمَوْلَىَّ فِي كُبْرِيَّةٍ يُصِيرُ مِنَ الْجِهَادِ الجَاهِلِيَّةِ لَا يُفْقَهُهُم وَلَا عَلَى اللَّهِ تَعَالَى. كَفَيْضٌ بَيِّنٌ فِي أَدَاجِ يُكْونُ كَسَرُّهَا وَزَرُّهَا وَيُخْرِجُ حِجَاسَتَهَا شَراً.

1.164.1 افتتحوا بعد أَلْقَاهُم وَتَشَقَّوا عَن أَصْلَهُم فَنَمَّا أَخْذَ بَعْضَ أَنْفَا مَالَ مَعَهُ عَلَى أَنّ اللَّهَ سَيْجَمُّهُم لَّمْ نَرْفَعْهُم بِمِن كَعَمْرٍ أَمِيَّةٍ كَأَجْمَعُ مَرَّةَ فِي مَوْلَى التَّحَرِّيف يُؤْؤَلُ اللَّهُ بَيْنَهُم مَّثْلُ مَا يُجْعَلُهُ رَكَّامًا كَرَّ كَرَّ السَّحَابَ ثُمَّ يَفْتَحُ لَهُمُ الْأَبْوَابُ يُسِيلُونَ مِن مَّسْتَنَرَاهُم كَسْبَ الجَنَّيْنِ حَيْثُ لَمْ يَسْقَ عَلَى قَارِهِ مَثْلَ تَشَقَّى وَلَمْ يُرْدَ سَنَّةً رِضَى طَوْدَ وَلَا حَدَابُ أَرْضَ يُذْعَعُهُم اللَّهُ فِي بَطْنٍ أُوْدِيَّةٍ ثُمَّ يَسِيلُهُمْ بِتَابِعِ فِي الأَرْضِ ثُمَّ يَأْخُذُ بِهِم مِّن قُوَّمٍ حَقَّقٍ ثُمَّ يَقَامُ لَهُم في ذَيَّر قَوْمٍ وَأَيْمَ اللَّهُ لِذُووِّنَ مَا فِيهِ يُدِينُ مَا بَعْضُهُم مِّنْ عَلَوْلِ النَّمْكِ يَتَدْبِرُ الْأَلْيَا عَلَى النَّارِ.

1.164.2 أَيْمَ اللَّهُ لِذُووِّنَ مَا فِيهِ يُدِينُ مَا بَعْضُهُم مِّنْ عَلَوْلِ النَّمْكِ يَتَدْبِرُ الْأَلْيَا عَلَى النَّارِ.

1.164.3 أَيْمَ اللَّهُ لِذُووِّنَ مَا فِيهِ يُدِينُ مَا بَعْضُهُم مِّنْ عَلَوْلِ النَّمْكِ يَتَدْبِرُ الْأَلْيَا عَلَى النَّارِ.
1.164  From an oration by ‘Ali:\footnote{1}

1.164.1  Let your young emulate your elders, let your elders nurture your young. Don’t be like churls from the Age of Ignorance who have no understanding of religion and no comprehension of God’s commands. Dealing with you is like crushing a nest of eggs in the sand—breaking them is a sin but brooding them produces vipers!\footnote{2}

1.164.2  From the same oration:
They scattered after having come together and moved away from the tree trunk, but some will continue to hold fast to the main branch—wherever it bends, they will bend too.\footnote{3} Later, God will bring them together, mustering them like wisps of autumn clouds, on an evil day for the Umayyads. God will assemble them, then pile them up like winter cloudbanks, then open their doors, and they will gush out from their source like the flood of the Two Gardens,\footnote{4} no knoll will be safe, and no hillock withstand, neither strong cliff nor high rock will stem their current. God will send them into the bellies of the earth’s valleys, then make them «flow out in streams».\footnote{5} Through them, he will wrest from one group the rights they had usurped from another, he will settle one group in the abodes of another. By God, after their time of might and establishment, all that is in Umayyad hands will melt away as a fat-tail melts on the fire!

1.164.3  People! If you had not held back from supporting right, if you had not shown weakness in upending wrong,\footnote{6} these challengers who are not nearly your match would not have become emboldened against you, and those who overpowered you would have failed. But you strayed as the Israelites did. By my life, when I am gone, you will stray more and more. You turned away from what

\begin{itemize}
\item \footnote{1}{§ 1.164.2 is said to have been declaimed as part of an oration ‘Ali delivered in Medina, presumably in 35/656 at the beginning of his caliphate (Kulaynī, Kāfī, 8:63–65). § 1.164.3 is said to have been declaimed as part of an oration ‘Ali delivered in Kufa, presumably during his caliphate 35–40/656–661 (Mufīd, Irshād, 1:293).}
\item \footnote{2}{Lit. “brooding them produces evil.” I.e., if you crush them before they have done wrong, you incur sin; if you leave them be, they may hatch vipers. F 287; H 9:282; B 553; R 2:146–147.}
\item \footnote{3}{The trunk (lit. root, aṣl) refers to ‘Ali, the branch to his son and successor, Ḥasan. H 9:284; B 553.}
\item \footnote{4}{The flood of the Two Gardens is a Qur’anic reference to the devastating flood of the Ma’rib dam in Yemen that submerged the Gardens of Sheba. Qur’an, Saba’ 34:15–16; H 9:285; B 554; R 2:149–150.}
\item \footnote{5}{Qur’an, Zumar 39:21.}
\item \footnote{6}{Reference to Qur’an, Āl ‘Imrān 3:139.}
\end{itemize}
لكم الالته من بعدي أضعافاً خلفتم الحق ورأوا ظهوركم وقطعتم الأذني ووصلتم الأبعد وأعلموا أنكم إن أتبعتم الداعي لكم سلك بكم منهج الرسول وكفهتم مؤونة الاعتذاف ونفذتم النقل الفادح عن الأعناق.

ومن ختامة له عليه السلام في أول خلافته:

إن الله سبانيه أنزل كتاباً هادياً بين فيه الخير والشر، فخذوا نهج الخير تهتدوا وأصدروا عن سيّمت الشر تقصدوا. الفراتقض الفعان قداها إلى الله، تؤدّكم إلى الجنة إن الله حرم حراماً غير مجهول وفضل حرمة المسلمين على الحرم كلها وشدّ بالإخلاص والتوحيد حقوق المسلمين في معاقدها فدر المسلم من سائر المسلمين من لسانه ويهده، إلي بالحق ولا يحلّ أذى المسلم إلا بما يحب. بادروا أمر العامة وحصبة أحدكم وهو الموت فإن الناس أمامكم وإن الساءة تحكم من خلفكم تخففوا تلتحموا فإما ينتظر بأولكم آخركم أن تقوا الله في عباده وبلاده فإنكم مسؤولون حتى عن البيع والبائع أطيعوا الله ولا تعصوه وإذا رأيت الخير تفدوا به وإذا رأيت الشر فأعرضوا عنه.

ومن كلام له عليه السلام بعد ما بوعي بالخلافة وقد قال له قوم من الصحابة لعاقبت قوماً ممن أجلب على عثمان فقال يا إخوتاه إنني لست أجعل ما تعلمون ولكن كيف لي بقولة والقوم المجلون على حد شوكتهم يملكونا ولا تملكهم وهاهم هؤلاء قد ثارت معهم عبادتكم وأثنتت إليهم al-Sharīf al-Raḍī - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
was right, severed your bonds of kinship from the person who was close, and forged them with the person who was distant. Know this: If you follow him who calls you,\(^1\) he will lead you on the Messenger's path—you will be spared the weight of deviation and cast this crushing yoke from your necks.

1.165 From an oration by ʿAlī at the beginning of his caliphate:\(^2\)

God has revealed a book to guide you and explained in it the difference between good and evil. Follow the path of good and you shall be rightly guided. Shun the path of evil and you shall remain on the high road. The mandated rites must be performed; offer them to God, and they will take you to paradise. God has made certain things illicit, and these are known. He has placed the sanctity of Muslims above all sanctities; through their devotion and declaration of his oneness, he has bound them, and their rights, together. A Muslim is someone from whose tongue and hand all other Muslims are safe,\(^3\) except when it is lawfully required to punish; it is unlawful to injure a Muslim, except with just cause. People, hasten to accept death! Death is common to all, yet particular to each individual. Generations have preceded you, and the dreaded hour now drives you forward. Lighten your burden of sin, so that you may be quick to catch up—those who have gone ahead await the arrival of those who are yet to come. Fear God, and do not injure his servants or his lands. You are answerable for your actions, even those relating to the earth and to cattle. Obey God and do not sin. If you see an opportunity to do good, take it. If you see a chance to do evil, shun it.

1.166 From an address by ʿAlī following the people's pledge to him as caliph, responding to some of the Prophet's Companions who urged, "You should punish the people who conspired to kill ʿUthmān." ʿAlī answered:\(^4\)

Brothers, I am not unmindful of what you know, but how do I enforce retribution when the people who conspired to kill ʿUthmān are so powerful? They control us, we don't control them! Here they are now, your own slaves having risen up with them, as well as the Bedouins. They are mixed in among you and impose their will. Do you see a way to carry out any part of your plan?

---

\(^1\) Refers to ʿAlī himself. F 281.

\(^2\) 35/656, in Medina. Ṭabarī (Ṭārīkh, 4:436) says this was ʿAlī’s first oration as caliph.

\(^3\) Hadith attributed to the Prophet in Quḍāʿī, Shihāb, § 1.134.

\(^4\) Delivered in 35/656 in Medina (Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 4:437). It is reported that ʿAlī assembled the people and said, "Let ʿUthmān’s killers stand up," and most people stood up in solidarity with the assailters. (B 556). On ʿAlī’s initial dealings with ʿUthmān’s killers, see H 9:293–294.
أعرابكم؛ وهم خللالكم يسومونكم ما شاؤوا وهل ترون موضعاً لقدرة على شيء تريدونه.

إنه هذا الأمر أمر جاهلية وإن هؤلاء القوم مادة إن الناس من هذا الأمر إذا حرك على أمور فورة ترى ما ترون وفورة ترى ما لا ترون وفورة لا ترى هذا ولا هذا فأصابوا حتى بهذا الناس وطبع القلوب مواقعها وفبخذ الحقوق مساحة فأنهدا أعينه وأنظروا ماذا يأتيكم به أمري ولا تفعلوا عقلة تضعف قوّة ونسق منه وتثور وهنا وذلله وسأمسك الأمر ما أمسك وإنما أجد بدأ فآخر الداء الكبيرة.

1.167 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام عند مسير أصحاب الجمل إلى البصرة.

إنه الله بعث رسولًا هادئًا بكباب ناطق وأمر قائم لا يملك عنه إلا هاكم وإن المبتدعات المشبهات من المهلكات إلا ما حفظ الله منها وإن في سلطان الله عصمة لأكرم فاعطو طاعتمك غير مأومة ولا مستكورة بها والله تفعلن أو لينقل الله عنتم سلطان الإسلام ثم لا ينقله إليكم أبدًا حتى يأرز الأمر إلى غيركم إن هؤلاء قد ثامعوا على خطة إماراتي وسأصبر ما لا أخف على جماعتم فإنهم إنما ما على فيلة هذا الرأي أنقطع نظام المسلمين وإنما طبوا هذه الدنيا حسداً لمن أفاءها الله عليه فأرادوا رد الأمور على أديبها. وله علينا العمل بكباب الله وسيرة رسوله والقيم يحقه والتعشى لنسته.

1.168 ومن كلام له عليه السلام كلم به بعض العرب وقد أرسله قوم من أهل البصرة مما قريب عليه السلام منها يعلم لهم منه حقيقة حاله مع أصحاب الجمل لنزول الشهبة من نفوسهم. فين

م، ي، ونسخة في ش، ه: كذا. ش، ن: أغربكم. ش، ن، ي، ه: ونسخة في م: كذا.

أصل م: عصم. ش، ن، ي، ه: ونسخة في م: كذا. أصل م: لرقيم.
'Uthmān's killing is an act from the Age of Ignorance and its perpetrators have strong support. If an order were given now, you would see the people divide into three groups: one would agree with you, another would think the opposite, and a third would see neither the one nor the other. Be patient, let the people calm down and hearts settle, then justice can be exacted more easily. Step back and see what my rule brings—don't be impulsive in doing something that will wreck your power, ruin your force, and bequeath weakness and humiliation. I will hold things together as long as they will stay together. If I am left with no alternative, then, when afflicted by an incurable disease, (cauterizing is the last resort).\(^1\)

1.167 From an oration by 'Alī in the lead-up to the Battle of the Camel, when his opponents marched on Basra:\(^2\)

God sent a Messenger, a guide, with a book that speaks and an established religion.\(^3\) Whoever dies having strayed from them will perish, for dubious and heretical innovations bring perdition, except when God protects from their harm. Submitting to God's authority safeguards your religion. Render him obedience, then, without blame or force. By God, you must do this, else he will remove Islam's authority from your control and never give it back, and rule will pass to another group! These individuals have banded to condemn my command, and I will be patient for as long as I don't fear for your concord—if they continue to pursue this errant course, the Muslims' stability will crumble. They seek this world and envy those to whom God has awarded it, they wish to turn these affairs back on their heels. My promise to you is this: I shall act on the Book of God and the practice of his Messenger. I shall uphold his right and revive his Sunnah.

1.168 From 'Alī’s address to an Arab sent by a group of Basrans when he approached their city, in the lead-up to the Battle of the Camel, to find out the truth of 'Alī's dealings with his opponents, because they were unsure of who was in the right. When 'Alī explained what had transpired, the man accepted that he, 'Alī, was in the right. 'Alī

---

1 Ar. ākhir al-dāʿ al-kayy, proverb referring to battle as the final option; also rendered: ākhir al-dawāʿ al-kayy, (the final medicine is cauterization), or ākhir al-tībb al-kayy, (the final treatment is cauterization). Etiology in F 283–284; Ibn Manẓūr, Lisān, s.v. “K-W-Y.”

2 Delivered in Medina in 36/656, while preparing to march to Iraq, urging the Medinans to mobilize. Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 4:445–446.

3 Ar. amr, translated here as “religion,” lit. “affair,” used twice more in this passage, once in the plural umūr. In addition to the faith of Islam, the word also simultaneously denotes its political entity; I have used “caliphate” to translate the second instance, and “affairs” to bring together both meanings in the third instance.
له عليه السلام من أمره معهم ما علم به أنه على الحق ثم قال له يابع فقال إني رسول قومي ولا أحدث حدثا دونهم حتى أرجع إليهم فقال عليه السلام:
أرطِب لوان الذين وراءك بعثوك رائداً تنغطي لهم مسافات الغيث فرجع إليهم وأخبرتهم عن الكلا والماء تفاقوا إلى المعاوش والجواب ما كنت صانعاً.
قال كنت تاركهم ومخالفهم إلى الكلا والماء. فقال له عليه السلام فأمد إذا يدا. فقال الرجل.
فؤاده ما أستطعت أن أمنع عند قيام الحجية على فبيعته عليه السلام. والرجل يعرف بكليب الجرم.

1.169 ومن كلامه عليه السلام ما عزم على لقاء القوم بصفين
اللهم ربت السقف المرفع والجر ماكروف الذي جعلته مغيساً لليل والنّهار وجري
للمشمس والقمر مختلفاً للنجوم السيّارة وجعلت سكاكه سيطأ من ملاتكتك لا يسأ مون
من عدادتك ورب هذه الأرض التي جعلتها قراراً للأنام ومدرجاً للهراح والأنعام وما
لا يعصي ما تري وما لا يرى ورب الجبال الروماني التي جعلتها للأرض أوتاداً ولطاق
أعظاماً إذا أظهرتنا على عدونا جنيناً يبغي وسدننا لحق فإن أظهرتهم علينا فأرزقنا
الشهادة وأعصمنا من الفتن.
أبن المانع للذمار والغائر عند نزول الحقائق من أهل الحفاظ. العار وراءكم والجنة
أمامكم.

الله ربي، أصل ش: كذا ن، ي، ه، (ومن كلامه عليه السلام لّما قال لكيّب الجرم قبّ الجم. يابع: قال إنّي رسول قومي ولا أحدث حدثاً دونهم).
then said to him, “Pledge the oath of allegiance!” to which he replied, “I am my people’s emissary, and can do nothing on my own; I have to first return to them.” ʿAlī then said: If you are the representative of the people who派 you to scout for rain and, when you tell them where to find grass and water, they go against your recommendation and head to dry, drought-stricken places, what would you do then? The man replied, “I would leave them and proceed to where there was grass and water.” ʿAlī declared, “In that case, extend your hand!” The man said later, “By God, I was not able to refuse when the case was so clearly proven, and I pledged him allegiance.” The man’s name was Kulayb al-Jarmī.

1.169 From ʿAlī’s prayer when he had resolved to fight the enemy at Ṣiffīn:

God! O Lord of the lofty sky and layers of air, you made the sky and air the marshland into which night and day are absorbed, the course where the sun and moon orbit, and the space through which the moving planets sail. You populated it with tribes of your angels, who never tire of your worship. O Lord of this earth, you made the earth a home for humans, a place for insects to crawl and cattle to roam, and a habitat for countless other creatures, seen and unseen. O Lord of the mighty mountains, you made the mountains anchors for the earth and a refuge for your creatures. Hear our prayer: If you grant us victory over our enemy, then hold us back from treachery and direct us to follow the truth. If you grant them victory over us, then honor us with martyrdom and save us from sedition.

People, where are your doughty fighters who would defend honor and guard families with zeal when the blows of war descend? Behind you lies shame! Before you is paradise!

---

1 This event took place a little before the Battle of the Camel, after Ṭalḥah and Zubayr had entered Basra, and ʿAlī, on his way to confront them in Basra, was encamped nearby in Dhū Qār. Mufīd, Jamāl, 156, after Wāqidī; full account in Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 4:490–492.

الحمد لله الذي لا تواري عنه سماءً سماةً ولا أرضًا أرضًا.

منها
وقال لي قائل إنّك على هذا الأمر يا ابن أبي طالب لحريص فقلت بل أنتم والله أحرص وأبعد وأنا أخضع وأقرب وإمّا طلل حقًا لي وأنتم تقولون بدني وبيني وتضربون وجهي دونه. فلما قرَّعته بالجحّة في الملأ الحاضرين هَب لامرأ ما يجري بيه. الله ينّي أستعدّك على قريش ومن أهاليهم فإنّهم قطعوا رحمي وصغروا عظيم منزلتي وأجمعوا على منازعتي أمراً هو لي ثم قالوا ألا إن في الحق أن تأخذوه وفي الحق أن تترك.

منها في ذكر أصحاب الجمل
توجهوا إخرون حرمة رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم كما بعّر الأمة عند شرائها متوجّهين بما إلى البصة فنساء همًا في بوتهما وأبرازا حبيس رسول الله لهما ولغيرهما في جيش ما منهم رجل إذ لا وقد أعطاني الطاعة وسمح لي بالبيعه طاعة غير مكره. فقدموا على عاملًا بهما وخمّان بيت مال المسلمين وغيرهم من أهلها فقتلو طائفة صبرًا وطائفة غدرًا. فوالله لم

١٠٠٠، ي١٠٠، نسخة في ه١٠٠٠، ش١٠٠٠، وأصل ه١٠٠٠، ب١٠٠٠.
1.170 From an oration by ʿAlī:¹

1.170.1 Praise God, from whose vision one sky does not conceal another, one earth does not conceal another.

1.170.2 From the same oration:
Someone said to me, “How you covet the caliphate, son of Abū Ṭālib!” I retorted, “No, by God, you are more covetous and farther away from it, while I am closer and more worthy! What I seek is my right, and you are blocking me from it, you are hitting me in the face and pushing me away!” When I struck him with this clear argument in front of the whole group, he was dumbstruck and could find no answer.

1.170.3 God, I ask your help against Quraysh and their supporters. They have severed the bonds of my kinship, demeaned my lofty station, and banded together to wrest my right from me. Then they say, “A right may be taken, a right may also be abandoned.”²

1.170.4 From the same oration describing ʿAlī’s opponents at the Battle of the Camel:³ They marched toward Basra dragging the Messenger’s wife with them like a slave-girl dragged for sale, having veiled their own women to their homes, while exposing the Messenger’s wife to their eyes and the eyes of others in their army. There was not a single individual in that army, moreover, who had not sworn obedience to me, who had willingly, without coercion, pledged allegiance to me. They advanced against my governor in Basra, as well as the custodians of the public treasury and other townspeople, and they killed a number after capturing them, and several more whom they tricked with their treachery. By God, if they had purposefully killed even a single Muslim without a crime to justify

---

¹ In Basra, in 36/656, soon after the Battle of the Camel (reference to the battle in § 1.170.4). §1.170.4 is cited as an answer given during an oration in the mosque in Basra, a few days after the battle (Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 228); other parts of the oration as cited in ibid., 221–233, are listed in the note to §1.23. The reference in § 1.170.2–3 is to the Shūrā Council that elected ʿUthmān in 23/644, H 9:325.

² Similar lines in §1.215.1.

³ “They” are ʿAlī’s governor in Basra was ʿUthmān ibn Ḥunayf, a Companion of the Prophet. Similar lines in §1.215.2.
يصيبوا من المسلمين إلا رجالًا واحدًا معتمدين لقتله، بل جرحه لقلة قتله ذلك الجيش كله إذ حضره فلم ينكر ولم يدفع عنه بلسان ولا بد. دع ما أنهم قد قتلوا من المسلمين مثل العدة التي دخل بها عليهم.

ومن خطة له عليه السلام

1.171

أمين وحية وحاتم رسول ومنه رحمته وذر نقمته.

1.171.1

إِئِبَ النَّاسٍ إِنْ أَحْقَ النَّاسِ بِهِذهَا الأَمْرُ أَقْوَاهُ عَلَيْهِ وَأَعْلَمُهُمْ بِأَمْرِ اللَّهِ فَإِن

شُيِّبَ شَخْبَ أَسْتَنْتِبْهُ فَإِنَّ أَبِي قُوتَلَ. وَلَعْمِرُ بِنَّ النَّاسِ إِنْ اذَلَّتَهُمْ لَتَتَنَقَدِنَّ هَنكِئَلَ

يَخْرُضُهَا عَلَى النَّاسِ مَا إِلَى ذَلِكَ سَبَيلَ وَلَكِنْ أَهْلُهَا يَحُكُّونَ عَلَى مَا غَابَ عَنْهَا ثُمَّ لَيْسُ

لِلسَّمَتِهِنَّ أَنْ يُرَى وَلَا لِلْعَالَابِ أَنْ يُخْتَارُ أُلْيَاءَ أَقْتَالِ رَجُالًا رَجُلًا أَدْعَيْهَا مَا لِيْسُ لِهَا

وَأَخْرَجَ مِنْهُ إِذَا أَحْمَاهُ. أَوْصِيمَ بِنَتْقُؤَ اللَّهِ فَإِنْ أَنَّهَا خِيرُ مَا تَوَاضِعُ الْعَبْدُ وَخَيْرُ عَوْاقِب

الأَمْوِيَّةَ عَلَى اللَّهِ. وَقَدْ فَتَحَ بَابُ الْحَرَّبِ بَينِكَمْ وَبِبَنِي أَهَلِ الْقَبْلَةِ وَلَا يَخْلِدُ هَذَا الْعَلَمُ إِلَّا

أَهْلُ الْبَصْرَ وَالْصِّبْرَ وَالْعِلْمَ بِمَوْاضِعِ الْحَقِّ فَأَمْضَى مَا تَأْمَرُونَ بِهِ وَقَفُوا وَعَمَّنَ تَهْنُونَ عَنْهُ

وَلَا تَعْجَلُوا فِي أَمْرٍ حَتِّى تَتَبَيَّنَوا إِنْ لَنَا مَعْنِي كلَّ أَمْرٍ تَنْكُونُهُ غَيْرَأ.
his killing, it would be lawful for me to execute their whole army, for they all stood by without protest. They failed to defend any of the innocent victims with their hands or even with their tongues! But, in fact, they have not just killed one—they have killed a great many Muslims, as many as the numbers with which they themselves entered the city.

1.171 From an oration by ʿAlī.¹

1.171.1 Muḥammad was the trustee of God’s revelation, the seal of his prophets, the herald of his mercy, and the warner ahead of his punishment.

1.171.2 People! The individual most worthy to assume the mantle of leadership is the one who is most capable of carrying its trust, most knowledgeable about God’s command. After the pledge, if a rebel revolts, he is to be persuaded to return to the fold, and if he refuses, he is to be fought. By my life, if you are saying that the imamate can be pledged only with the whole populace in attendance, there is no way to do this! Instead, the leaders decide on behalf of the absent,² and afterward, those who were present have no right to rescind their pledge, while the absent have no right to choose another. Hark! I shall fight two kinds of men, the man who claims what does not belong to him, and another who refuses to render his due. I counsel you to be conscious of God—this is the best counsel his servants can give one another, and the way that obtains the best outcome before God. Hear me! War has commenced between you and people of the Qiblah,³ and our banner can be carried only by people of perception and fortitude, those who know where truth resides. Enact what you are commanded, then, and desist from what you are forbidden. Do not hasten to an action until you have clarity, for anything you discover to be wrong I will change.⁴

---

¹ Likely delivered just before or soon after the Battle of the Camel in 36/656: § 1.171.3 is included by Ḥarrānī (Ṭuḥaf, 183–184) in an oration that he says ʿAlī delivered “when some people expressed unhappiness at his levelling of stipends among the people,” which fits with what the sources say of Ṭalḥah’s and Zubayr’s source of dissatisfaction with ʿAlī’s rule. § 1.171.2 (and § 1.83.3) are recorded by Minqārī (Waqʿat Ṣiffīn, 10) and Abū Ḥanīfah al-Dīnawarī (Akhbār 152–153) as part of ʿAlī’s first Friday sermon in Kufa.

² Ar. ahlāhā, lit. “its people”; my translation, “their leaders,” is based on B 566; Ḥ 9:329, which interpret the phrase as “the people of loosening and binding” (ahl al-hall wa-l-ʿaqd) and “scholars” (ʿulamāʿ).

³ I.e., fellow Muslims. The Qiblah is the direction of the Kaʿbah in Mecca that all Muslims face in ritual prayer.

⁴ The context for this last statement is ʿUthmān’s unwillingness to make changes in his administration, even when its wrongs were brought to his notice. B 566.
ألا وإن هذه الدنيا التي أصبحتم تتموّنها وترغبون فيها وأصبحت تغضبكم وترضيكم ليست بداركم ولا منزلكم الذي خلقتم له ولا الذي دعوتم إليه ألا وإنّا ليست بباقيّة لكم ولا تبقى علىكم، وفي وإن غزّتم منها فقد حذرتمكم شرها فدعوا غروها لتحديد أطامها وسابقوا فيها إلى الدار التي دعوتم إليها وانصرفوا بقولكم عنها ولا يَّجْنَ أَحَدُ خِلْقِ الأُمَّةِ إِلَى ما زوّي عنه منها وأستمروا نعمة الله علىكم بالصبر على طاعة الله والمحافظة على ما أستحفظكم من كتابه. ألا وإنّا لا يَّضْرّ لكم تضييع شيء من دنياكم بعد حفظكم قَائِمَةً دينكم ألا وإنّا لا ينفعكم بعد تضييع دينكم شيء حافظتم عليه من أمر دنياكم أخذ الله بقولينا وقولكم إلى الحق وأهلمنا وإياكم الصبر.

ومن كلام الله عليه السلام في معنى طلحة بن عبيد الله قد كنت وما أُهِدَتُ بالحرب ولا أرهب بالضر، وأنا على ما وعدي ربي من النصر والله ما استعمل متجرداً للطلب بدم عثمان إلا خوّا من أن يطالب بدمه لأنه متجلّته ولم يكن في القوم أحرص عليه فأراد أن يغلب بما أجمل فيه ليبس الأمر ويقع الشك ووَالله ما صنع في أمر عثمان واحدة من ثلاث لين كان ابن عفان ظلمًا كما كان يُزعم لقد كان ينبغي له أن يُؤَرِّج قاتليه أو ينابذ ناصريه وَلِين كان مظلومًا لقد كان ينبغي له أن يكون من المتنبؤين عنه والمتعدين فيه وَلِين كان في شك من الخصليين لقد كان ينبغي له أن يعتزه ويركز جانباً ويدع الناس معه فا فعل واحدة من الثلاث وَجَاء بأمر لم يعرف بابه ولم تسلم معاذره.

اش، ن، ي، ه: كذا.م، ومصحّحة في ش: (وَأَنَّ).
1.171.3 Hark my words! This world that you covet and desire, that causes you anger and pleasure, is not your home, it is not the residence for which you have been created or to which you have been called. Listen to me! It will not remain for you, nor will you remain in it. While it tempts you with its allures, it also warns you of its evil, so heed its warnings and threats, and shun its temptations and enticements. Turn your heart away and race to the home to which you are called. Let no one among you snuffle like a young slave-girl over anything he has lost of this world! Instead, seek the completion of God’s blessings by being patient in the path of his obedience and holding fast to God’s Book. Hark and listen! Nothing you surrender of this world will harm you if you secure the principles of your faith! Hark again! Nothing you secure of your worldly affairs will benefit you if you surrender your faith! May God guide our hearts toward the truth. May he grant us patience in adversity.

1.172 From an address by ʿAlī about Ṭalḥah ibn ʿUbaydallāh:¹

I have never been one to be shaken by threats of battle or panicked by notices of attack. I await the victory my Lord has promised me. By God, Ṭalḥah only hastened to draw his sword and demand vengeance for ʿUthmān’s blood because he feared that the same call was going to be made against him! He is implicated in this matter, for none among the people was more avid for it than he—he wishes to create confusion and has raised a tumult about it only in order to muddy the issue and raise doubt. By God, he took none of the three proper courses in the crisis around ʿUthmān: If Ibn ʿAffān was an oppressor, as Ṭalḥah believed, he should have backed those who killed him or at least rebuffed his supporters. If ʿUthmān was a victim, Ṭalḥah should have been among those who defended him and pleaded his cause. And if he was in doubt about both choices, he should have dissociated from ʿUthmān and remained on the sidelines, leaving the people to do their will. But he did none of this—he followed a path whose entryway was unsanctioned and whose justifications were unsound.

¹ In Medina in 36/656, soon after ʿAlī’s accession to the caliphate, when news arrived that Ṭalḥah and Zubayr were on their way to Basra to recruit an army to fight him (B 567; on Ṭalḥah’s misconduct with ʿUthmān, see H 1035–9; B 568). Kulaynī (Kāfī, 553) quotes the first few lines in an oration at the Battle of the Camel outside Basra in 36/656. The first line is similar to the penultimate line of §1.22.
1.173. ومن خطبة له عليه السلام

أما الغافلون غير المغفول عنهم والتاركون والمأخوذ منهم ما لي أراك عن الله ذاهبين
وإلى غيره راغبين كأنتم تعمُّن أراح بها سائم إلى مرن ويُوي ومشرب دوي إذا هما في
كالمعورة للمدى لا تعبر ماذا يراد بها إذا أحسن إليها تحسب يومها دهرها وشَبَّها
أمرها. والله لو شئت أن أخبر كل رجل مننك بخواجه وموججه وجميع شأنه لفعلت ولكن
أخف أن تذكر في برسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله وآله فقضية إلى الخاصّة من
يومن ذلك منه وذبيحة بخلق واصطفائه على الخلق ما أطلق إلا صادقاً وقد عهد
إلى بذلك كله وهم يبكل من يبكل ومنجى من يبكل وما يباذن هذا الأمر وما أبقى شيئاً برع
على رأسي إلا أفرغه في أدنى وأفظع به إلى. أيها الناس إن إلى الله ما أحكم على طاعة إلا
وأسرمكم إليها ولا أنهاكم عن مقصية إلا وأنتهى قبلكم عنها.

1.174. ومن خطبة له عليه السلام

أتفوع ببيان الله وأتفعُّوا بمواعظ الله وأتفقوا على نصيحة الله فإن الله قد أعد إليكم
بالجلية وأتَّفِق عليكم الجهة وبيّن لكم ما يلبس من الأعمال ومكاره لتُبَقا هذه وتجنبوا هذه
فإن رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله والرسول يقول، إن الجهة حُجبت بالمكاره وإن النار حُفَت
بالشوهات. وأعلموا ما عن طاعة الله شيء إلا يأتي في كره وما من مقصية الله شيء
إلا يأتي في شهوة فرح الله رجلاً تزع عن شهوة وقع هو نفسه فإن هذه النفس أبعد
شيء من عنا وإنها لا تزال تتزع إلى مقصية في هو. وأعلموا عن عبد الله أن المؤمن لا يصبح
ولا يسيء إلا ونفسه ظانون عنه فلا يزال زارباً عليها ومستزيداً لها. فكونوا كالسابقين
قبلكم والماضين أمامكم قوضوا من الدنيا تقويض الراحل وطُوُوهَا طيّ المنازل.

اش، ن، ي، ه: كذا م: (..في شهوة فزع رجل).
1.173 From an oration by ‘Alī:
O heedless people who go not unheeded! Spurners of good who will soon be brought to account! How is it that I see you moving away from God and placing your hopes in another? As though you were a herd of sheep driven to a plague-ridden pasture and contaminated water! Or beasts fattened for the knife, who have no idea what lies in store for them, who, if treated well, think the remainder of their days to be as long as an age, and that all they must do is fill their bellies! By God, if I wished to inform each of you about his exit, his entry, and all that he will encounter, I would do so, but I fear that you will abandon God’s Messenger for me. Harken to me! I shall pass on its knowledge to individuals who are to be trusted in this regard. I swear by the one who sent Muḥammad with truth and placed him above all people, I never speak anything but the truth! Muḥammad bequeathed me this knowledge and told me about the perishing of all who will perish, the saving of all who will be saved, and the end result of this affair. He left no question that might occur to me without pouring its secrets into my ear and communicating to me its mysteries. People! By God, I do not urge you to an act of obedience without preceding you to it! I do not forbid you from an act of disobedience without preceding you to it! I do not forbid you from an act of disobedience without staying away from it myself!

1.174 From an oration by ‘Alī:¹

1.174.1 Profit from God’s revelation, heed God’s counsels, and accept God’s direction, for God has cautioned you with clear guidance and brought you convincing proofs. He has shown you what he likes and what he dislikes so that you may follow the former and shun the latter. His Messenger used to say, ⟨Paradise is veiled by torments, while the Fire is surrounded by delights.⟩² Know that every act of obedience to God is achieved with toil, while every act of disobedience to God comes in the guise of pleasure. May God have mercy on the man who roots out his desires and crushes the passions of his appetitive soul.³ This appetite ranges far, and, urged on by its desires, it never stops urging you to acts of disobedience. Servants of God! Know that a believer wakes up every morning and sleeps every night wary of his gluttonous soul, continually rebuking it and seeking to provision himself for the hereafter. Be like those who preceded you, who died before you. They pulled up their tent-pegs from this world as those striking camp and traversed through it as in the successive stages of a journey.

¹ One of ‘Alī’s first orations after becoming caliph, delivered in Medina in 35/656. B 573.
² Quḍāʿī, Shihāb, § 3.1.
³ Ar. nafs, lit. “soul” or “self,” translated here as “appetitive soul,” refers to the base, animal faculty of the human soul, «Indeed, the soul urges one to evil.» Qur’an, Yūsuf 12:53.
1.174.2 وَأَعْلَمُوا أَنَّ هَذَا الْقُرْآنَ الْمُفَاضِلُ الَّذِي لَا يُعْجَبُ الْهَادِيَ الَّذِي لَا يُضَلّ
وَالحَدِيثُ الَّذِي لَا يَكِن بَوْءٌ جَالِسٌ هَذَا الْقُرْآنَ أَحْدٌ إِلَّا قَامَ عَنْهُ بِزِيَادَةٍ أَوْ نَقْصَان
زِيَادَةٌ فِي هَذِهِ أَوْ نَقْصَانٍ مِنْ عَمَّى. وَأَعْلَمُوا أَنَّهُ لِيِسُ عَلَى أَحَدٍ بَعْدَ الْقُرْآنِ مِنْ فَاقْهٍ وَلَا
لَأَحْدَّ قَبْلُ الْقُرْآنِ مِنْ غَيْرِ فَأْسَطَفْهُ مِنْ أَدْوَاعِهِمْ وَأَعْتَصَمُوا بِهِ عَلَى لاَّ أَوْلَىْمَ كٍ لَّاَ فَيْهُ
شَفَاءٌ مِنْ أَكْبَرِ الدَّاءِ وَهُوَ الْكَفْرُ وَالْمَنْفَاقُ وَالْغَيْبُ وَالضَّلَالُ فَأَسَلُوا اللَّهَ بِهِ وَتَوَجَّهُوا إِلَيْهِ
بِجَبْهِ لَا تَسَلُّلُوا بِهِ خَلْقَهُ إِنَّهُ مَاتَوَجَّهَ الْعِبَادَ إِلَى اللَّهُ بِمِثْلِهِ وَأَعْلَمُوا أَنَّهُ شَفَعَ مُشْفَعٌ وَقَائِلِ
مُصْدِقٍ وَأَنَّهُ مِنْ شَفَعِ الْقُرْآنِ يُوْمُ الْقِيَامَةِ شُفَعَ فِيهِ وَمِنْ مَحَلِّهِ الْقُرْآنِ يُوْمُ الْقِيَامَةِ
صُدْقَ لَعْلَمِهِ إِنَّهُ يَنَادِيَ مَنْ يَنْتِجُ الْقِيَامَةَ أَلَا إِنَّ كُلَّ حَارِثٍ بِمِنْ قَبلِهِ وَعَادِلَةٍ عَمَّهُ
غَيْرُ حَرْثَةِ الْقُرْآنِ فَكَوْنُوا مِنْ حُفَّةِهِ وَأَتَبَعُوا وَأَسِطَلُوا عَلَى رَمَيْكَ وَأَسِطْلُوهُ عَلَى أَنْفُسِكُمْ
وَأَتَبَعُوا عَلَى أَرَاءٍ كَمْ وَأَسِطْلُوهُ فِيهِ أَهْوَاءٍ كَمْ

العملُ الْمَكَّيُّ ثُمَّ الْبَيْنَةُ النِّهَائِيَنَّ الْأَسْتِقَامَةُ الْمَكْرُ الصَّبِّرُ الْوَرَعُ
الورَعَ إِنَّ لَكَمْ نُهْيَةُ فَأَنْتُوهُ إِلَى نُهَادِكْمْ إِنَّ لَكَمْ عَلَّمَ فَأَهْتَدَوا بِعَلَّمِكْ إِنَّ لِلْإِسْلَامِ غَيْبَةٌ
فَأَنْتُوهُ إِلَى غَيْبَهِ وَأَخْرُجُوا إِلَى اللَّهِ مَا أَفْتَرَضَ عَلَيْكُمْ مِنْ حَقِّهِ وَبِبِينٍ لَكُمْ مِنْ وَظَاعِهِ. أَنَا
شَاهِدُ لَكُمْ وَجَمِيْعُ يُوْمُ الْقِيَامَةِ عَنْكَمْ

1.174.3 أَلَا وَإِنَّ الْقَدْرِ الْمَاضِي الَّذِي قَدْ وَقَعَ وَالْقَضَاءِ المَاضِي الَّذِي قَدْ تَوَرَّدَ وَإِنَّ مِتْكُونَ بَعْدَ اللَّهِ
وَجَتَهُ قَالَ اللَّهُ تَعَالَى أَيْنَ اللَّهُ قَالَ رَبِّنَا اللَّهُ الْمَكْرُ لَكُمْ أَسْتَقْمَ مُنْزِلْتُ عَلَيْكُمْ الْمَكْرُ لَكُمْ أَسْتَقْمَ
وَلَا حَزَبْتُ وَأَبْشَرْتُ بِالْجَحْدَةِ الَّذِي أُرِيَتُوهُ وَقَدْ قَلَّمَ أَبْنَيْنَايَنْمَيْنَوْنَ رَبِّنَا اللَّهُ أَفْسَقَمُوا عَلَى كُلِّهِ
وَعَلَى مَنْهَاجِ أَمْرِهِ وَعَلَى الْطَرِيقَةِ الصَّالِحَةِ مِنْ عَبَادَتِهِمْ. أَلَا تَمْرَعُوا مِنْهَا وَلَا تَبْتَدَعُوا فِيهَا وَلَا
تَخَالِفُوا أَنَّهُ فَإِنَّ أَهْلَ المَرْوَقِ مَنْقَطَعُ بِهِمْ عَنْ اللَّهِ يُوْمُ الْقِيَامَةِ.

شَهِ، مَيْهُ، وَنِسْخَةٌ فِي نَ كُدَانِ، وَنِسْخَةٌ فِي شَ: مَاحِلِ. 
1.174.2 Know also that the Qurʾan is a counselor that never deceives, a guide that never leads astray, and a speaker that never lies. Whoever sits down with this Qurʾan gets up with either an increase or a decrease: an increase of guidance or a decrease of blindness. Know, furthermore, that no person will remain poor after accepting the Qurʾan and that no person will be wealthy before accepting it. Seek its cure for your ailments and its support against your hardships, for it holds the cure for the greatest ailments of all—unbelief, hypocrisy, gross error, and miscreance. Beseech God through its sanctity and turn to him through your love for it. Do not misuse it to seek favors from God’s creatures. Nothing equals the Qurʾan in helping you to turn to God. Know, too, that the Qurʾan is an intercessor that is heeded and a speaker that is believed. Those for whom it intercedes on judgment day will have their plea accepted, while those it accuses on judgment day will have the claim against them upheld. Indeed, a crier will cry out on judgment day: “Hark! Every tiller’s crop and all the fruits of his labor have been destroyed, except that of the tillers of the Qurʾan!” Be, therefore, among the Qurʾan’s tillers and followers! Secure it as the guide to your Lord, accept it as a counselor who restrains your appetites, and distrust any of your opinions that contradict its teachings. Learn from the Qurʾan and know that your passions deceive.

1.174.3 Deeds, deeds! Goals, goals! Rectitude, rectitude! Endurance, endurance! Ethics, ethics! Truly, you have a goal, so proceed toward it! You have been given a signpost, so be guided by it! Islam has an objective, so race toward it! Stand before God having cleared the dues he has mandated, having performed the duties he has required. Do this, and I shall bear witness on your behalf and plead your cause on judgment day.

1.174.4 Hark! The preordained commandment has come to pass, and the predestined event has arrived at its waterhole. Let me tell you of God’s promise and his proof, for he has said, «as for those who proclaim that “Our Lord is God,” and then remain upright, angels come to them, saying, “do not fear and do not grieve, but rejoice, for paradise, as promised, is yours!”»¹ You have proclaimed, «Our Lord is God.» Now remain upright in the manner shown by his Book. Follow the straight path of his command and the pious road of his worship. Do not abandon the faith, do not introduce heresies, and do not transgress, for those who abandon the faith will be severed from God on judgment day.

¹ Qurʾan, Fuṣṣilat 41:30.
تمّ إياكم وتهزيزع الأخلاق وتصريفها وأجعلوا اللسان واحدًا وليختن إنسانه فإنّ هذا اللسان جحّب صاحبه والله ما أرى عبدًا يتقى تقوى تفعه حتى يختصّر لسانه فإنّ لسان المؤمن من وراء قلبه وإن قلب المنافق من وراء لسانه لأنّ المؤمن إذا أراد أن يتكلم بكلام تديره في نفسه فإنّ كان خيراً أبداً فإن كان شرًا واراه وإن المنافق يتكلم بما أتى على لسانه لا يدري ماذا له وماذا عليه. وقد قال رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم: "لا تستقيم إيمان عبد حتى يستقيم قلبه ولا تستقيم قلبه حتى يستقيم لسانه".

فإن استطاع منكم أن يلقى الله سبحانه وهو نقي الراحة من دماء المسلمين وأموله سلّم اللسان من أعراضهم فليفعل.

وأعلموا عباد الله أنّ المؤمن يستحلّ العام لما أستحلّ عاماً أولّ ويجرّ العام ما حرم عاماً أولّ وآن ما أحدث الناس لا يحلّ لكم شيئاً ما حرم عليه ولكنّ الحال ما أحلل الصاحب وما حرم الله. فقد جربتم الأمور وضعتتموها ووعظمتم بمن كان قبلكم وضربت الأمثال لكم ودعتم إلى الأمر الواضح فلا يصم عن ذلك إلا أصم ولا يعّم عن ذلك إلا أعّم ومن لم ينفعه الله بالبلاء والتجارب لم يتنفع بشيء من العظمة وأتاه التقصير من أمامه حتى يعرف ما أدرك وينكر ما عرف. وإنما الناس رجلان منبّط شرعة وتمتدّ بدعه ليس معه من الله سبحانه برهان سنة ولا ضياء حجة.

إنا لله سبحانه لم يعظ أحدًا بعمل هذا القرآن فإنّه حبل الله المتين وسبيله الأمين وفيه ربيع القلب ونبين العلم وما للقلب جلّه غيره مع أنّه قد ذهب المتذكرون ويبيق الناسون والمناسون. فإذا ذهب خيرًا فأعينوا عليه وإذا ذهب شرًا فأذهبا عنه فإنّ رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم كان يقول: "يا بن آدم أعمل الخير ودع الشرّ فإنا أنت جواد قاصد".

ش، ن، ي، ه، ونسخة في م: كذا. أصل م: [النقض]. ش، ن، ي، ه، ونسخة في م: كذا. أصل م: النص.
1.174.5 Beware of marring your morals and shifting your mores—speak with a single tongue. Let every man safeguard his tongue, for the tongue can bolt and carry off its master. By God, I see no godfearing person profiting from his piety until he safeguards his tongue. A believer’s tongue is found behind his heart and a hypocrite’s heart is found behind his tongue. When a believer intends to say something, he first mulls in his heart the words he will say. Then, if he finds them to be good, he voices them, and if he finds them to be wicked, he buries them. A hypocrite, on the other hand, says whatever comes to his tongue without knowing what is for and what against him. God’s Messenger has said, ⟨A person’s belief is right only when his heart is right, and his heart is right only when his tongue is righteous.⟩¹ Let those of you who can, meet the Almighty with hands unsullied by Muslim blood or property, and tongue unblemished by defiling their honor.

1.174.6 Servants of God! Know that a believer considers licit this year what he had considered licit the year before. He considers illicit this year what he had considered illicit the year before. The innovations of men do not make the illicit licit for you. What God has made licit is licit, and what God has made illicit is illicit. You have experienced many affairs and bitten down on them with strong teeth, you have been forewarned by the example of those who lived before you, parables have been drawn for you, and you have been called to the clear way. Only the truly deaf remain deaf to the call, only the truly blind remain blind. Those whom God does not benefit through their own trials and experiences will not benefit from homilies and counsel. It is when their own sins confront them that they will accept as good what they had thought to be bad, and as bad what they had thought to be good. People are of two kinds: one follows a clear path, while another introduces heresies with no proof of established practice nor gleam of evidence from God.

1.174.7 The Almighty’s best counsel is found in this Qur’an. It is God’s strong rope, it is his firm cord, it is the heart’s springtime, it is the wellspring of wisdom. Nothing burnishes the heart like the Qur’an. But all who were mindful have disappeared, only those who have forgotten it, or pretend to have forgotten, remain. People, when you know something to be good, lend it support. When you know something to be evil, distance yourself. The Messenger used to say, ⟨Son of Adam, do good and avoid evil, and you will race ahead like a thoroughbred!⟩

¹ Quḍāʾī, Shihāb, § 6.41.
لا يُغفر وظلم لا يترك وظلم مغفور لا يطلب فأما الظلم الذي لا يغفر فالشرك بالله قال الله سبحانه: "إِنَّ اللَّهَ لَا يُغْفِرُ أَن يَشْرَكَ بِهِ" وأَمَّ الظلم الذي يغفر فظلم العيد نفسه عند بعض الهنات وأَمَّا الظلم الذي لا يترك فظلم العباد بعضهم بعضًا. القصص هناك شديد ليس هو جرحًا بالمدى ولا ضربًا بالسياط ولكنه ما يُصَرَّفُ ذلك معه. فإِلَّا كَمْ وَأَتْلُوْنَ فِي دِينِ اللَّهِ فَإِنَّ جَمَاعَةً فِي مَا تَكْرُهُونَ مِن الْحَقِّ خِيرًا مَّن مَّعْضِيِّهِمْ مَّن بَقِيَ.

يا أيها الناس طويبي لم شغل عيبه عن عيووب الناس وطويبي لم لزم بيته وأكل قوته وآستغِل بطاعة ربه وَبِيْكُل أَخْطِبَتْهُ فَكَانَ مَن نَّفَسِهِ فِي شِغْلِ الْحَقِّ مَن ذَلِكَ الْإِنْفِضَانِ مِن رَّاحَةِ.

1.175

فأجمع رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم على أن أدْخِلَوا رجلاً فأخذنا عليه أن يَجْمَعَهَا عند القرآن ولا يجاوزوه وَيَكُونَ أَلْسِنَتُهُ مَعَهُ وَقَلْوُهُ فَمَا تحْطَّبَ فَثَانِيَهَا عَنْهُ وَتَرَكَ الْحَقَّ وَهَوَّنَهَا وَكَانَ الْحُجَّازِ وَالْعَوْجَاجِ دَأْبُهَا وَقَدْ سَبَقَ أَسْتَنْتَؤُونَ عَلَيْهِمَا في الحَكَّمِ بالعَدْلِ وَالْعَمَّلِ بِالْحَقِّ وَوَأَخَرُهُمَا وَجُوُّورُ حَكْمَهُمَا وَالْحَقَّةُ فِي أَيْدِينَ لَنَفْسِنَا حَيْنَ خَالِفًا سَبِيلَ الْحَقِّ وَأَنْتَ أَنَا

بما لا يُعْرِفُ من معكوَسِ الحَكَّمِ.
1.174.8 Harken to me! Wrongs are of three kinds: a wrong that will not be forgiven, one that will not be left unrequited, and a third that will be forgiven and not pursued. The wrong that will not be forgiven is assigning partners to God, for the Almighty has said, God does not forgive being assigned partners.¹ The wrong that will be forgiven is the wrong a person incurs against himself when committing small sins. The wrong that will not be left unrequited is the wrong people commit against one another, and retribution in this instance will be severe. It will not consist of being stabbed with a knife or struck with a whip, but these will seem slight in comparison. Beware of capricious change in God's religion. Uniting to face a challenge in the cause of right is far better than dividing the community to attain wrong. The Almighty has never granted anyone anything good through dissent, not among those who are gone, nor among those who remain.

1.174.9 People! Blessed are those whose faults distract them from the faults of others.² Blessed are those who remain in their homes, eat their food, occupy themselves with acts of obedience for their Lord, weep for their sins, and weary themselves by constant chiding, while never causing others unease.

1.175 From an address by ʿAlī regarding the arbitrators:³ Your majority opinion settled on choosing two arbitrators. I made them pledge that they would kneel before the Qurʾan and not transgress its command, that their tongues would speak according to its guidance and their hearts follow it. But they strayed from the Qurʾan and abandoned the truth, despite seeing it before their eyes—discrimination was their desire and crookedness their practice! I had declared at the outset that my acceptance of their ruling would be contingent on their implementing justice and truth, and that stipulation excluded any ruling at which they might arrive at through corrupt views or unjust dictates. Since they have strayed from the path of truth and produced a contrary ruling, authority remains in my hands.

¹ Qurʾan, Nisāʾ 4:48, 116.
² Attributed to the Prophet in Quḍāʿī, Shihāb, § 3:35.
³ ʿAlī addressed this oration to the Kharijites after news of the arbitrators' ruling—against him and in Muʿāwiyah's favor—arrived in Kufa in 37/658 (B 578; Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 5:85). The arbitrators were ʿAmr ibn al-ʿĀṣ on Muʿāwiyah's side, and Abū Mūsā al-Ashʿarī on ʿAlī's. ʿAlī signals here his own reservations about the choice of arbitrators, and the fact that it was the Kufan army that had forced his hand. On details of the arbitrators' injustice, see F 295. On verses attributed to ʿAmr, boasting of deceiving Abū Mūsā, see Ḥ 10:56–57.
1.176 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام

لا يُشْغَل شَان ولا يُغيِّر زَمَان ولا يَجْرُحه مكان ولا يصفه لِسان ولا يؤزِّب عنه عدد قطر الذُّرَّ في الليلة الظلماء يعلم مسايق الأوراق وحنفي طُرف الأحاديَّ. وأشهد أن لا إِله إلا الله وَلا مَشْكُوك فيه ولا مكَفُورُ دينه ولا مجَّحود تكوينه شهادة من صدقت نُبِي وصفت دَخَلْته وخلص يقينه وتفلت موازية. وأشهد أن محمَّد عَبَد ورسوله المجتهد من خلائقه والمُعَتَم لِشْر حَقائقه والمحتش بِعِتائِ كراماته والمصطفى لكِرَمَٰهِ رسالاته والموصى به أُشْرَاطُ الْهدى والمجْلُوب بِغُريب العَمِي.

1.176.2 أيَّها الناس إِنّ الدُّنْيَا تُعْرَ المؤُمِّل لها والخُفْي إليها ولا تنقَّس بِمْ نافَس فيها وتغلب من غَلْب عليها. وَلَيْبُنِي ابْنِ إِسْمَاعِيلspotlighted text is: ١١٧٥ـ، يَا، شَيْء خَيْرِه مَنْ نَظَّة يُمَسَّه تعالى يَلِّهِ يَا اِبْنِ إِسْمَاعِيل spotl...
1.176 From an oration by ‘Alī:¹

1.176.1 No matter can preoccupy him, no time can alter him, no place can encompass him, and no tongue can describe him. Nothing escapes his reach—not the droplets in water, nor the stars in the sky, not the dust-raising winds in the air, not the crawling of ants on rocks, not the sleeping of insects in the dark night. He knows the falling of leaves and the blinking of eyes. I bear witness that there is no god but God. I do not equate him with another, or doubt him, or reject his religion, or deny his creation. This testimony comes from one whose intention is true, whose motives are pure, whose certainty is limpid, and whose scales are heavy. I bear witness that Muḥammad is God’s servant and messenger, the one chosen from among all his creation, the one selected to explain his truths, the one singled out for his exquisite glories, the one designated to convey his precious message, the one who clarifies signs of guidance, the one through whom dark blindness is dispelled.

1.176.2 People! The world deceives those who desire her and incline toward her. Cherishing not those who compete for her, she conquers those who try to conquer her. By God, no group who are given life’s delightful bounties have them taken away except due to their sins, for «God is not unjust to his servants.»² When calamities swarm and bounties cease, if people turned to their Lord with sincere intent and heartfelt longing, he would recover their runaway camels and heal what was corrupted. I fear you are in a state of ignorance. Events happened in the past during which you deviated, and your behavior was less than admirable. If matters reverted to what they were before, you would attain happiness, and I can try to make that happen. If I so wished, I could also say: May God forgive the past.

1.177 From an address by ‘Alī when Dhiʿlib, the Yemenite, asked him, “Commander of the Faithful, have you seen your Lord?” ʿAlī replied, “Would I worship what I do not see?” Dhiʿlib asked, “How do you see him, then?” ʿAlī answered:³

¹ After ʿUthmān’s assassination, at the beginning of ʿAlī’s caliphate, in 35/656, in Medina. B 579; Ḥ 10:62; Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih, ʿIqd, 4157.
² Qur’an, Anfāl 8:51.
³ Early in ʿAlī’s caliphate in Medina, 36/656: ʿAlī ascended the pulpit of the Prophet’s mosque wearing the Prophet’s mantle and sword, and said to the people, “Ask me before you lose me” (§ 1.187). Dhiʿlib, a renowned and audacious orator, stepped forward with this question, hoping to dumbfound him. ʿAlī answered with these lines, and Dhiʿlib, repentant, fell in a swoon. Şadūq, Amālī, 423. § 55.
لا تدرك، العيون بمشاهدة العيان ولكن تدرك القلوب بحقائق الإيمان قريب من الأشياء غير الملبسة بعيد منها غير مبدين متكمل بل يروي عينه صانع لا محالة تطيف لا يوصف بالخفا كبير لا يوصف باللشا بصير لا يوصف بالخسا رهيم لا يوصف بالرقة تعنار ووجهه لعظمه وتوجي القلوب من مخافته.

1178، ومن كلام الله عليه السلام في ذم أصحبه أحمد الله عليه ما قصى من أمر وقّد من فعل وعلى أبطالك بكم أبيها الفرقة التي إذا أمرت لم تطع وإذا دعوت لم تجيب إن أهلمت خضت وإن حورتم خرم وإن أجلتم الناس على إمام طعون وإن أجابه إلى مشاشفة لكصمت لا أنا لغيركم ما تنتظرهم بصركم والجهاد على حقكم الموت أو الذل لكر فواش ين جاء يومي وليأتيين ليفرقت بيني وبينك وداستكم قال وكم غير كبير السم أن الدعاء وما دير كفاف وداستكم ولا نمحبة لنسحوك أوليس جيبي أن معاوية يدعو الجناة الطعن فيتبعونه على غير معونة ولا عطاء وأنا أدعوكم وأنتم تريكة الإسلام وبقية الناس إلى المعونة أو طائفة من العطاء فتفرقون عنني وختصمون علي. إنه لا يخرج إليكم من أمري صر فترضونه ولا سخط فتجتمعون عليه. وإن أحب ما أنا ليقلي الموت قد دارستكم الكتاب وفاختكم المجاه وورفتكم ما أدرك وسوغتم ما فيجتم لكان الأعمى يلحظ أو النائم يستيقظ. وأقرب بقوم من الجهال بالله قاندهم معاوية ومؤذهم أبناً النابغة.

١٢٢٧، وي مصححة في ش: كدا، ه، وأصل ش، ونسخة في ن، ي: لا تراه. ٢٠٠م، ي، ونسخة في ش: كدا، ش، ن، وأصل ه: (أملتم).
Eyes do not see him through physical observation, but hearts perceive him with true belief. He is near to all things without touching them, yet far from them without being apart. He speaks without the need to reflect, wills without the need to aspire, and crafts without the need for hands. He is sublime but cannot be described as concealed. He is mighty but cannot be described as harsh. He is all-seeing but cannot be described as having eyes. He is merciful but cannot be described as having compassion. All faces bow to his majesty. All hearts tremble in awe.

1.178 From an address by ‘Ali censuring his associates:

I offer praise to God for the affairs he has ordained and the events he has destined, and even for afflicting me with you, the faction who don’t obey when I command, or answer when I call! In times of peace, you speak boldly, but when attacked, you bleat like lambs. When people unite behind a leader, you challenge him, and if you answer a call to fight, you soon retreat. May you not be deprived of fathers! What are you waiting for? Why do you sit back, why do you not fight for your rights? This way, you will only find death or dishonor! By God, when my day comes—and it is coming—and when it takes me from you, I will leave you as one who detests your company, and who, when he has you on his side, has nothing. My God, what manner of men are you! Does no religion unite you, no zealous honor sharpen your resolve? Is it not astonishing that when Mu‘awiyyah calls to his uncouth riffraff they follow him, even without wages or stipend, and when I call out to you—you, who are the legacy of Islam and sons of the first Muslims, and even though I promise you wages and stipend—you dissent, you oppose my command! Everything I propose, you reject, and everything I reject, you band together to promote. O how I long to meet death! I instructed you in the Book and showed you its proofs, I dispelled your ignorance and taught you to swallow the dribble from your flaccid mouths—but the blind can’t see, and the sleeping don’t wake! O how close to unbelief is that faction whose caravan is led by Mu‘awiyyah, and whose instructor in morals is the Harlot’s son!

1 ‘Ali delivered this oration in Kufa in 38/658, urging his followers to march in support of Muhammad ibn Abī Bakr, his governor in Egypt, who had been besieged by Mu‘awiyyah’s commander ‘Amr ibn al-‘Āṣ. Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 5:107. Thaqafi, Ghārāt, 1:291.
2 Ar. khurtum. Or, “you show weakness.”
4 Referring to ‘Amr ibn al-‘Āṣ, whose mother was infamous in the pre-Islamic period as “The Harlot” (nābighah, lit. “the woman who shows herself”). Details in note at §1.81.
1.179 ومن كلام له عليه السلام وقد أرسل رجلاً من أصحابه يُعلم له علَمَ قوم من جند الكوفة همّوا بالاخلاق بالخوارج وكانوا على خوف منه عليه السلام فلمّا عاد إلى الرجل قال له أَلمَّوا فثقنا أو أَلمَّوا فظنعوا.

فقال الرجل بل ظننا يا أمير المؤمنين فقال على السلام بعداً لَـهُمْ "كَا يَعْقُبَ الْمُتَّقِينَ" أما لو أُشرعت الأسئلة إليهم وصبت السيرف على همّاتهم لقَدْ ندوءاً على ما كان منهم إن الشيطان اليوم قد أُستقلهم وهو غداً متبرئ منهم ونفخُ عنيهم. فهكأن بخورهم من المهدى وآركاسهم في الضلال والعصي وصدّهم عن الحقّ وجماعهم في النيه.

1.180 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام. روي عن تَوف البكاليّ قال خطبنا بهذه الخطبة أمير المؤمنين على عليه السلام بالكوفة وهو قائم على حجاجة نصبه لجَّدة بن هُبيرة الخزوميّ عليه مدرعة من صوف وحمائل سيفه ليف وفاتِ رجله نعلان من ليف وكَـأنَّ جبينه ثُينَةً بعير فقال

1.180.1 الجمِّد الذي إليه مصائر الخلق وعواقب الأمر محمِّد عليه عظيم إحسانه وثُير برهانه ونوامي فضلله وامتنانه حمدًا يكون نطقه قضاء ويشكره أداء وإلى توابه متَّربًا وحسن مزيده موجعًا. ونستعين به استعانة راج لفضله مؤمل لنفعه واقب بدفه مترف له بالطول مدِّعني له بالعمل والقول. ونؤمن به إيمان من رجاه مؤمنًا وأُناب إليه مؤمنًا وخيره له مذعنًا وأَخَلص له موحدًا وعظمه مجدًا ولاذ به راغبًا متجهًا.
1.179 From an address by 'Ali. 'Ali had sent one of his men to bring news of a group from his Kufan army who were tempted to join the Kharijites and were fearful of 'Ali's retribution. When the man came back, 'Ali asked him:

Did they feel secure enough to stay, or did they become cowards and run?

The man answered: They’re gone, Commander of the Faithful. 'Ali then said:¹ «Away with» them, «as the Thamūd were done away with!»² If spears had been hurled at them and swords had rained on their heads, they would have regretted what they have done! Satan has found them small pickings today, and tomorrow he will discard them and disown them completely. Enough that they have left the home of guidance and lapsed into error and blindness. Enough that they have challenged right and bolted into the waterless wastes.

1.180 From an oration by 'Ali. Nawf al-Bikālī reported: The Commander of the Faithful addressed us in Kufa, standing on a rock placed for him by Ja'dah ibn Hubayrah al-Makhzūmī. He was wearing a simple wool garment, his sword-belt was plaited from palm fronds, he wore palm-frond sandals on his feet, and his forehead looked like the calloused knee of a camel stallion. He orated:³

1.180.1 Praise God, to whom all creation arrives, and all affairs return! We praise him for his great blessings, his lucent proof, and his abundant favor and bounty. We praise him to repay his due, render him thanks, draw closer to his reward, and deserve more of his beautiful favors. We ask his aid, hoping for his favor, wishing for his profit, trusting in his protection, acknowledging his gift, and submitting to him with deed and word. We believe in him, placing our hopes in him with certainty, turning to him as believers, bowing to him in submission, proclaiming his unity with sincerity, glorifying his greatness, and seeking his protection through our hopes and efforts.

¹ The group 'Ali refers to in this text are the Banū Nājiyah, a Christian tribe, who, under their leader al-Khirrit ibn Rāshid al-Nājī, deserted from 'Ali's army after the arbitration, in the early months of 38/658. 'Ali sent his commander Maʿqil ibn Qays al-Riyāḥī with troops to fight them, and Khirrit and many of his warriors were killed in the ensuing battle. Details in H 3:120–151 (text at 130). The rest were made captive, and Maṣqalah ibn Hubayrah—'Ali's governor in Ardashīr—urchased them from Maʿqil and freed them. Maṣqalah, after paying only a fraction of the price, defected to Muʿāwiyah (see §1.44 and the accompanying note).

² Qurʾan, Hūd 11:95. Thamūd were the tribe who challenged the Arabian Prophet Ṣāliḥ and were destroyed.

³ Said to be the last oration that 'Ali delivered standing, before he was struck the death blow, in Kufa, in 40/661. H 13:312. Possibly a Friday sermon, based on Nawf's mention of "the next Friday" in §1.180.7. "His forehead looked like the calloused knee of a camel stallion" from long prostrations in prayer.
السياحة التي يكون في العز مشاركاً ولم يلي فيكون موروثًا هالكًا ولم يتقده
وقت ولا زمان ولم يُعاوّرَّهُ زيادة ولا انقضاء بل ظهر للعقل بما أرّاها من علامات
التدبير المتقن والقضاء المبرم. فمن شواهد خلقه خلق السماوات موطّنات بلاء عمد
قائمات بلاء سند دعاهم فأحين طائعات مذعنات غير مظاغات ولا مبئات ولا
إقرارن له بالروبيبة وإذاعاتهم بالطعوية ما جعلهّ موضعًا لعرشه ولا مسكًا للملائكته
ولا مصدقًا لكلّ الطيب والعمل الصالح من خلقه. جعل نحokia أعلامًا يسدلّ بها
الاحزاب في مختلف فجاح الأفطار لم يمنع ضوء نورها أدلةً مام جُرت الليل المظلم ولا
استطاعت جلايب سوداء الحنادس أن ترد ما شاع في السماوات من تلآثور النور.
فسبحان من لا يخفى عليه سواق غرق داج ولا ليل ساح في يقائع الأزروع المتطاوطات
ولا في يقائع السُّفّل المتجاورات وما يحتجّ به الرعد في أفق السماء وما تلاشت عنه
بروق الغمام وما تَسقَّط من ورقة تزيلها عن مستقته عواص الألوان وأنهمل السماء.
ويعلم مستقطر القطرة ومقرّها ومسبح الباردة وحرّها وما يكون البعوضة من قوتها وما
ةح monstrous في بطنها.

3
الحمد لله الكائن قبل أن يكون كرسي أو عرش أو سماء أو أرض أو جان أو إنس. لا يدرك بوعهم ولا يقدّر بهم ولا يشعّله سائل ولا ينقصه نائل ولا يصرّ بعين
ولا يغدّ بأين ولا يوصف بالأزواب ولا يغطّي يبّلجر ولا يدرك بالحواس ولا يقاس
بالناس. الذي كَلّ موسي تكليمًا وأراه من آياته عظيمًا بل جوابه ولا أدوات ولا نطق
ولا نوات بل إن كنت صادقًا أياً المتكيف لوصف ربك فصِّل جبريل أو ميكائيل
ووجد الملائكة المقربين في حُجَّات القدس مُرَمَحنين مثولًا عقولهم أن يحدوا أحسن
1.180.2 Never begotten, he has no partner in might, never begetting, he has no heir, for he will never die.¹ Time and age have not preceded him, increase and decrease have not affected him. Rather, he appeared before our intellects through the signs he showed us of his perfect planning and his irrevocable decree. Among the testaments of his creation is the creation of the skies, anchored without columns and standing without supports. He called out to them, and they answered, obedient and submissive, neither hesitant nor slow. If not for their acknowledgment of his sovereignty and their submission to him in obedience, he would not have made them the home for his throne, the habitation of his angels, or the place to which the pure word and the pious deed ascends from his creation.² He made its stars waymarks through which those lost in the myriad valleys of the earth’s provinces are guided. The darkening of the dusky night does not veil their glow, and the swathes of intense black do not block the gleam of the moon from spreading in the skies. Glory to the one from whom nothing is hidden! Not the blackness of spreading obscurity or tranquil night in the earth’s low regions and its rust-colored mountain ranges, not the crash of thunder in the sky’s far horizons and the momentary brilliance of lightning bolts in the clouds, not the falling of a leaf that is then blown away by stormy winds and pouring skies! He knows where each raindrop falls and pools, where each ant trails and drags its food, what foodstuffs suffice the gnat, and what every female carries in her belly.

1.180.3 Praise God, who existed before stool, or throne, or sky, or earth, or jinn, or human. He cannot be grasped by the imagination or measured by perception. No suppliant distracts him from responding, no gift diminishes his treasures. No eye can see him, no “where” can limit him, he cannot be described as being one of a pair, he need not toil to create, he cannot be grasped with the senses, he cannot be compared to people. He spoke to Moses and showed him his majestic signs without limbs, or implements, or speech, or mouth.³ If you are sincere—O you who take on the burden of describing your Lord!—then first describe the archangels Gabriel and Michael, or the legions of cherubim in the vaults of the holy heavens, who bend low in humility, whose intellects bewildernent hinders from constraining the best of creators! Only entities with forms and appendages, entities that run their course and perish when

---

¹ Reference to Qur’an, Ikhlāṣ 112:3.
² Modified quote of Qur’an, Fāṭir 35:10.
³ Ar. lahawāt, lit. “uvulas,” translated as “mouths.” God’s speaking to Moses is a modified quote from Qur’an, Nisā’ 4:164.
الخالقين وإذما يدرك بالصفات ذو الهيئة والأدوات ومن يقضي إذا بلغ أمَّم حَدّه بالفناء فلا إله إلا هو أضواء بنور كل ظلام وأظلم ظلهم كل نور.

1.180.4 أوصيتي عبد الله بن قوى الله الذي أبسمك الرياش وأسمع عليك المعاش. ولو أن أحداً يجد إلى البقاء سلماً أو لدفع الموت سبيلًا فكان ذلك سليمان بن داود عليه السلام الذي سُمح له ملك الجن والناس مع النبوة وعظم الزلفة فلما استوفى طعمته واستمك مدّته ردته قربى الفناء بنال الموت وأصبحت الدنيا منه خالية والمساكن معطلاً ورثى قوم آخرون وإن كم في القرن السالف عبارة. أين العمالقة وأبناء العمالقة أين الفراعنة وأبناء الفراعنة أين أصحاب مدان الرس الذين قْتَلوا النبيين وأطفأوا سن المرسلين وأبحوا سيرًا الجبارين وأين الذين ساروا بالحيوة وهزمو الألف وعسكروا العساكر ومادّنوا المدائين.

1.180.5 ومنها قد لبس للحكمة جُنُّتها وأخذها جميع أدبها من الأقبال عليها والمعرفة بها والتفرّغ لها فهي عند نفسه ضالته التي يطلبها وحاجته التي يسأل عنها فهو مغترب إذا اغترب الإسلام وضرب يَعْسِب ذَنْبَه وَالصَّفَرَ الأَرْضِ بِرَيْرَته بِقَيْبَةٍ مِن بقايا حَجْتَه خَليفةً من خُلَائِف أَبِيِّه.

1.180.6 ثم قال عليه السلام أيها الناس إنني قد بثت لكم المواضع التي وعظ بها الأحياء أمهم وأدّيت إليه ما أدّت الأوصياء إلى من بعدهم وأدّيتكم بسويه فلم تستقيموا وَحَدوتكم بالزواجر فلم تستوصوا لله أنتم تتوقعون إمامًا غريبي يَبتُعُ بِمُلَحِّ الطَّرِيق ويرشدكم السبيل. ألاٰ إنا قد أدرك من الدنيا ما كان مقبلًا وأقبل منها ما كان مدرى وأرقَّم الارتحال عباد الله الأخبار وبايعوا قليلاً من الدنيا لا يبقى بِكثير من الآخرة لا يبقى ما ضر أخوانا الذين سفك دماؤهم بصفّين.

اش: ن، ي: كذا م، ونسخة في ش: "سنن".

al-Sharif al-Radi - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
they have reached their limit, can be grasped through a description of their attributes. Understand that there is no God but he. Every darkness brightens with his light, every light darkens with his darkness.

1.180.4 Servants of God, I counsel you to be conscious of God, who clothed you in finery and gave you a life of plenty. If ever there was one who could have found a ladder to eternity or a path to repel death, it would have been Solomon, son of David, who was given dominion over the kingdom of jinn and humans, along with prophecy and intimacy with God. But when he had his received his fill of the world and completed his time, annihilation felled him with the arrow of death. Abodes became empty of him and habitations vacant. They were inherited by others. Truly, you have been given lessons in the passage of generations! Where are the Amalekites and the descendants of the Amalekites? Where are the Pharaohs and the descendants of the Pharaohs? Where are the people of the cities of Rass, who killed their prophets, extinguished the practice of God’s emissaries, and revived the ways of tyrants? Where are those who marched at the head of armies, defeating thousands, mobilizing troops, and building great cities?

1.180.5 From the same oration:

He will come bearing the shield of wisdom, having seized it with all its requirements—attention, recognition, and devotion. For him, wisdom is his own lost camel that he seeks, his own missing saddlebags about which he inquires. Whenever Islam is exiled, tail down like a camel and neck flat on the earth, he too hides in exile. He is God’s remaining proof, the successor of his prophets.

1.180.6 Then he said:

People! I have given you the counsel with which prophets guided their nations and conveyed to you what their legatees conveyed to the subsequent generation. I have disciplined you with my whip, but you have not stayed upright. I have steered you with admonitions, but your flock has not kept together. O God, what manner of men are you? Are you waiting for another leader to walk you on the path and guide you to the way? Listen to me! That portion of the world which had approached has turned back, and that which had turned back now approaches. God’s pious servants have resolved to depart on their journey. They have sold the paltry ephemera of the world for the permanent abundance of the hereafter. Our brothers whose blood was spilt in Ṣiffūn have lost noth-

---

1 The people of Rass are mentioned in Qur’an, Furqān 25:38, Qāf 50:12.
آلا يكونوا اليوم أحياء يُسيّعون العَصَص ويشرون الرتق قد ولة لقوا الله فوفاهم أجورهم وأحلهم دار الأمن بعد خوفهم. أبن إخواني الذين ركبوا الطريق ومضا على الحقّ أين عمّار وأين أبن الطبان وأين ذو الشهدتين وأين نظراهم من إخواني الذين تعاقدوا على المنية وأدرك بروؤهم إلى الفجر.

ثم ضرب على السلام بيده إلى حيته فأطال البقاء ثم قال أووه على إخواني الذين تلوا القرآن فأحكموا وتدربوا الفرض فأقاموا أحياء السنة وأمانتوا البذعة دعوا للجهاد فأجابوا ووثقا بالقائد فاتباعوا.

1.180.7
ثم نادي بأعلى صوته الجهاد الجهاد عباد الله. ألا وآتي معسكر في يومي هذا فن أراد الرواه إلى الله فليخرج.

قال نوف وعقد للحسين عليه السلام في عشرة آلاف ولقيس بن سعد في عشرة آلاف ولأبي أيوب الأنصاري في عشرة آلاف ولغيرهم على أعداد أخر وهو يريد الرجعة إلى صفين. فما دارت الجمعة حتى ضربه المبعون أبن ملجم لعنه الله قتراجعت العساكر فكتاك كالأغنم فقدت راعيحتها تختمها الذئاب من كل مكان.

1.181
ومن خطبة له عليه السلام

الحمد لله المعروف من غير رؤية والخلاق من غير منصبة خلق الخلاق بقدرته وأستعد الأرباب بعرضته وساد العظاماء بجوده. وهو الذي أساس الدنيا خلقه وبعث إلى الجن والإنس رسله ليكشفوا لهم عن غطاءه وليحذروهم من ضراؤهم وليضربوا لهم أمثالها وليصبِروهم عيبها وليحموا عليهم بمعتبر من تصرّف مصاححها وأسقائها وخلاها وحرامها وما أعد سبحانه للمطيعين منهم والعصاة من جنتة ونار وكرامة وهوان. أحمد إلى
ing by not being alive today. They no longer choke on morsels of food or drink muddy water. By God, they have returned to him, and he has given them their full reward, housing them in a place of safety after their earlier trepidations! O where are my brothers who rode on the high road and trod the track of right? Where is ‘Ammār, where is Ibn al-Tayyihān, where is Dhū al-Shahādatayn?1 Where are their peers, their brothers, who pledged to fight to the death, and whose decapitated heads the dispatch carried to the depraved?

Upon saying these words, ʿAlī placed his hand on his beard and wept long and hard, then he continued:
Alas for my brothers who recited the Qurʾan and recited it well, who reflected on their duty and undertook it! They revived the Sunnah and killed heresy, they were called to jihad and answered the call, they trusted in their commander and followed him.

Then ʿAlī called out in a raised voice:
Servants of God! Jihad, jihad! Harken to me! I will set up camp today! All who wish to return to God should muster!

Raḍī: Nawf said: In planning the return to Ṣiffīn, ʿAlī appointed Ḥusayn commander over ten thousand troops, Qays ibn Saʿd commander over ten thousand, Abū Ayyūb al-Anṣārī commander over ten thousand, and different commanders over varying numbers of troops. But no sooner had the next Friday come around than the cursed Ibn Muljam struck him his deathblow, and the troops pulled back. We were like sheep who had lost their shepherd, snatched by wolves from every side.

From an oration by ʿAlī:

1.180.7 Praise be to God, recognized without being seen, and creator without toil. He created all things with his power, subjugated kings with his might, and dominated grandees with his generosity. It was he who lodged his creatures in the world, and he sent messengers to jinn and humans to lift her veils, warn of her harm, explain her ciphers, and highlight her faults, to offer lessons in her cycles of illness and health and her bounds of licit and illicit, and to show them what God has prepared for those who obey or disobey—paradise versus hell-

1 The three are the Prophet’s venerable Companions, ʿAmmār ibn Yāsir, Ibn al-Tayyihān al-Anṣārī, and Khuzaymah ibn al-Thābit, Dhū al-Shahādatayn, “The-Twice-Martyred,” who were killed fighting for ʿAlī at the Battle of Ṣiffīn in 37/657.
نفسه كما استند إلى خلقه (جعل الله لكل شيء قدرًا) ولكل قدر أ حال وكره أ حال
كُبْرَى.

1181.2

فقال القرآن أمر زاجر وصامت ناطق مصاحبة الله على خلقه أخذ عليه ميثاقهم، وأثنت عليه
أنفسهم أمَّن نوره وأكرمه به دينه وقضى نبؤة صلى الله عليه وآله وقد فرغ إلى الحلق من
أحجام الهبدية. فظفَّموا عنه صحبتهما ما عظَّم من نفسه فإنه لم يُفَّع علمنهم شيئًا من دينه
و لم يترك شبيهًا رضيه أو كرهه إلا وجعل له علماً بديلاً وأيآت محكمة تزير عنه أو تدعو إليه
فرضا فيما بقي واحد وحَظْطه فيما بقي واحد. وأعلموا أنه لن يرضى عنكم شيء هُنِّئه
على من كان قبلكم ولكن يسخط عليكم بشيء رضيه ممن كان قبلكم وإنما تسيرون في أثر
بين وتكفلون يرجح قول قد قاله الرجال من قبلكم. قد كفناكم مؤونة دنياكم وحكم على
الشكور واقترض من أنسنتكم الذكر.

1181.3

أو واصفا بالقوى وجعلها منعتي رضاهم وحاجته من خلقه فأقثروا الله الذي
أتم بعثته ونواصكم بهديه وتقلبكم في قياسه إن أسرتم عليه وإن أعلمت كتبه قد وكَلَّ
بذلك حفظته كرامًا لا يستقرون حقا ولا يثبتون باطلًا وأعلموا أنه (من بنتي الله يجعل
له محترجا) من الفتى ونورًا من الظلم ونخلد فيه أشتته نفسه وينزله منزل الكرامة
عند في دار أصطنعها لنفسه ظلها عسره ونورها به جهته وزواها ملائكته ورفقاؤها
رسله. فبادروا المعاد وسبقوا الآجال فإن الناس يوشك أن يقطع بهم الأم ويرقههم
الأجل ويستد عنهم باب الثواب فقد أصبحتم في مثل ما سأل إليه الرجعة من كان قبلكم

١٠٠: هـ: كذا. ش. ن. ي: (عليهم ميثاق).
fire, honor versus shame. I offer him praise in the full measure he deserves from his creatures. «God has appointed for each thing a measure,» for each measure a timespan, and «for each timespan a prescribed end.»

1.181.2 From the same oration about the Qurʾan:
The Qurʾan commands and forbids, it is silent and yet it speaks, it is God’s proof against his creatures. He required them to offer the Qurʾan their oaths and pledge their souls. He perfected its light, honored his religion through it, and recalled his Prophet only after he had fully conveyed the guidance of its rulings. Glorify God, then, in all the glories that he has shown you, for he has not concealed from you any part of his religion. He has left nothing that he likes or dislikes without setting up a shining banner and a clear sign that either forbids a thing or calls toward it. His likes for future generations are the same, and his dislikes for them are also identical, so you should know that he will not be pleased with something you do that displeased him from the generations before you, while he will also not be displeased with you for doing something that pleased him from them. You follow clear footsteps, and your speech echoes the words of men who walked before. In all this, God has provided you with enough provisions for your life in this world—he has urged you to give thanks and claimed tribute from your tongues.

1.181.3 God has counseled you to piety and made it the ultimate way to earn his pleasure and fulfil what he requires of his creatures. Be conscious of God, then, for you are always before his eyes, your forelocks are in his hand, and your fortunes are in his grip. If you hide something, he knows it, and if you disclose something, he writes it down. He has appointed noble guardians over you who never miss something or transcribe something in error. Know that «God shows the God-conscious a way out» from seditions, and he grants them light after darkness and eternal life with everything their hearts desire. He houses the pious with honor near him, in the home he has prepared for himself which is shaded by his throne, whose light is from his splendor, whose visitors are his angels, and whose companions are his messengers. Hasten to return to God, and race against your lifespans! The time is near when your hopes will be cut off, death will overtake you, and the door of repentance will be shut in your face. This morning, you are still in the place to which your deceased ancestors

---

1 Qurʾan, Ṭalāq 65:3, Raʾd 13:38.
2 Reference to Qurʾan, Infiṭār 82:10–11.
3 Qurʾan, Ṭalāq 65:2.
4 Reference to Qurʾan, Anbiyāʾ 21:102.
والتأمل به سبيل على سفر من دار ليست بدار كم قد أوذتمن منها بالرحيل، وأمرتم فيها بالزاد. وأعلموا أن الله ليس هذا الجلد الرقيق صبر على النار فأحمرموه نفوسكم فإنكم قد جربتموها في مصائب الدنيا فأتيم جزع أحدكم من الشوكه تصيبه والعمرة تدِميه والرضا تحرقه فكيف إذا كان بين طائفتين من نار ضبيح حجر وقرين شيطان أعمالهم أن مالك إلا غضب على النار حطم بعضها بعضًا لغضبهم وإذا زوجها توفيّت بين أبواها جزاءً من زجرته.

أيها البين الكبير الذي قد لمزة الذي قيب كيف أن إذا احتمت أطراف النار بعضهم البعض ونشبت الجواقع حتى أكلت ألوس السواعد. فلله الله عشير العباد. وأرتم سالمون في الصفحة قبل السهم وفي النسخة قبل الضيق فآسوا في فكاك رقابكم من قبل أن تغلاق رهائنها أโทรศوا عيونكم وأخضروا بطولكم وأستعملوا أقدامكم وأفنقوا أموالكم وخذوا من أجهادكم تجردوا بها على أنفسكم ولا تبخلوا بها عنها. فقد قال الذي يفرض الله قرضا حسنا فيضًا عليه له ولله أجر كريم. فلما يستصركم من ذل ولم يستقرحكم من كل أستنكركم وله جنود السماوات والأرض ووهو العبقر الحكم وأتفرضكم وله حرائر السماوات والأرض ووهو الغني الجيد. وإنما أراد أن يبلو كي أدرك أحسن عملًا. فبادروا بأعمالكم تكونوا مع جيران الله في داره رافقهم رسوله وأزورهم ملاككم وأكرم أسماعهم أن تسمع حسبس ناراً وأعان أجهادهم أن تلقى لعوبة ونصبًا ذاك فضل الله يوشيه من إنشاءه والله ذو الفضل العظيم.
pleaded to be allowed to return.¹ You are travelers soon to leave this abode, which is not your home—you have heard the announcement to depart and the command to gather your provisions. Know that your delicate skin cannot bear the torture of the Fire and take pity on your souls, for you have seen how they crumbled when faced with the hurts of this world. You know how each of you dreads the prick of a thorn, a fall that draws blood, the heat of burning sands. How, then, will you endure being crushed between two sheets of fire with a stone for bedmate and a devil for companion?² Don’t you know that when the angel Mālik vents his anger upon the Fire, one part devours another in terror, and when he shouts at it, its flames shoot in panic from locked door to locked door?³

O decrepit, timeworn man whose hair is flecked with white! What will you do when shackles of fire choke you and fuse with the bones of your neck, when fetters eat into the flesh of your arms? O assembly of God’s servants, fear God, fear God, while you are still sound, while you have health before illness strikes, while you have room before your straits constrict! Strive to free your necks before their release from bondage is forfeit! Keep the night-vigil, starve your bellies, make use of your feet, spend your wealth, put your bodies to work, and exert them for the benefit of your souls. Do not be stingy in this, for God has promised, «If you help God, he will help you and give you a firm foothold.»⁴ God has also invited you, «Who will offer God a beautiful loan of deeds, that he may multiply it for him, and give him a generous recompense?»⁵ God does not ask you for help out of weakness, nor for a loan because he is poor. He asks you for help while possessing «the legions of the skies and the earth», «and he is mighty and wise».⁶ He asks you for a loan while possessing «the treasures of the skies and the earth», and «he is rich and praised».⁷ In truth, he wishes to «put you to the test, to see who among you performs the best of deeds».⁸ Hasten to perform good deeds, then, and you shall be among God’s neighbors in his abode, with his messengers for companions, his angels for visitors, your ears protected from the Fire’s frightening roar, and your bodies safe from fatigue or weakness.⁹ «That is God’s bounty, which he bestows on whom he wills—great is God’s bounty!»¹⁰

¹ Reference to Qurʾan, Muʾminūn 23:99–100.
² Reference to Qurʾan, Baqarah 2:24, Qāf 52:23.
³ Mālik is the angel in charge of hell.
⁴ Qurʾan, Muḥammad 47:7.
⁵ Qurʾan, Ḥadīd 57:11. I have added the words “of deeds” for clarity.
⁷ Qurʾan, Munāfiqūn 63:7, Ḥajj 22:64.
⁸ Qurʾan, Hūd 11:7.
⁹ Reference to Qurʾan, Nisāʾ 4:69, Fāṭir 35:35.
أقول ما تسمعون، والله المستعان على نفسي وأنفسكم وهو حسبنا ونعم الوكل.

1.182 ومن كلام له عليه السلام قاله للبرج بن مسرير الطائي، وقد قال بحيث يسمعه لا حكم إلا الله. وكان من الخوارج أسكّت في قلبه الله يا أثرُم فوالله لقد ظهر الحق فكانت فيه ضيائلاً شحصك خفياً صوتك، حتى إذا نصر الباطل تجت تجوم قرن الماعز.

1.183 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام:

الحمد لله الذي لا تدرك الشواهد ولا تجري المشاهد ولا تراه النواير ولا تحجبه السوايا الدال على قدّمه بحدود خلقه وحدود خلقه على وجوده، وبأشبههم على أن لا شبه له الذي صدق في ميعاده وأرتفع عن ظلم عباده، وأقام بالمفسط في خلقه وعدل عليهم في حكمه مستشهد بحدود الأشياء على أزليته، وما وسمنه به من العجز على قدرته وما أضطرها إليه من الفناء على دوامه، واحد لا بعد ودائم لا أمد وقائم لا بعد تتلاقاه الأذان لا مشاعرة ولتمدله المرائي لا محاضرة لمتحت به الأوهام بل تجلّى لها بها، وبدا آمنتها منها وليها حاكمها ليس بذي كبر أمتدت به النهايات فكبرته تجسيماً ولا بذي عظم تناهت به الغياض فطغتته تجسداً بل كبر شانها وعظم سلطانها.

وأشهد أن محمد عبده الصيفي وأمينه الرضي صل الله عليه وألله أرسله بوجوب الحج وظهور القُلُح وإيضاح المنجف فبلغ الرسالة صادعاً بها وحمل على الخجّة دالاً عليها وأقام أعلام الاهتداء ومنار الضياء وجعل أمر الإسلام متنيناً وعري الإيمان وثيقة.

الخاتمة

تتربية الخطبة: ش، م: كما أثبته في متن التحقيق. ن، ي، هو وشرح ابن أبي الحديد والبحرازي.
I say what you hear and ask God’s aid against my passions and yours. He suffices us and he is the best trustee.¹

1.182 From an address by ‘Alī to Burj ibn Mus’hir al-Ṭā‘ī, one of the Kharijites, when he called out in ‘Alī’s hearing, ‘<No rule save God’s!⟩;²
Silence! May God disfigure you, you toothless driveller! By God, when right showed itself, your arms offered feeble support and your voice could not be heard, but when wrong snorted, you emerged like the horns of a goat!

1.183 From an oration by ‘Alī:³

1.183.1 Praise God! Senses do not grasp him, places do not hold him, eyes do not see him, and veils do not hide him. He proves his antiquity by the newness of his creatures. By the newness of his creatures, he proves his existence, and by their similarities, he proves that he has no peer. He is true to his promise, rises above any wrong to his servants, upholds equity among his creatures, and is just when he commands. The newness of all things testifies to his eternity, the incapacity he has marked them with testifies to his power, and the annihilation he has subjugated them to testifies to his permanence. He is one without number, permanent without end, standing without need of support. The mind receives him without touching him, all that we see testifies to his existence without entering his presence. The imagination cannot encompass him: rather, he shows his light to it and in it, while he renders himself inaccessible to it and by it, and he also summons it for judgment to it. He possesses greatness, but not in the sense of flexible perimeters that make him massive in body. He possesses might, but not in the sense of expanding limits that make him grand in form. Rather, he is great in majesty and mighty in power.

I testify that Muḥammad is God’s chosen servant and his faithful trustee, whom he sent with compelling arguments, clear direction, and triumphant victory. He conveyed God’s message and announced it to all, showed people the straight road and led them to it, raised banners of guidance and beacons of light, fastened Islam’s ropes and strengthened faith’s bonds.

¹ Modified quote from Qur’an, Āl ʿImrān 3:173.
² Presumably in Kufa, after the arbitration in 37/658. See similar materials in § 1.140 and § 3.182.
³ Hārūnī (Taysūr, 273) places § 1.183.1 in Kufa, sometime during his caliphate 35–40/656–661, at the beginning of an oration he calls The Radiant Oration (Gharra‘; Raḍī calls § 1.80 in the present volume by that name).
منها في صفة عجيب خلق أصناف من الحيوان، وللوفرة في عظم القدرة وجمال النعمة لرجعوا إلى الطريق وخاروا عذاب الحريق، ولكن القلوب عليلة والأبصار مدخورة. ألا ينظرون إلى صغير ما خلق كيف أحكم خلقه وأتقن تركيبه وفاق له السمع والبصر وسوء له العظمة والبشر. انظروا إلى النملة في صغر جثتها ولطافتها هتئها لا تكاد تنازل بحلك النظر! لا يستدرك الفكر كيف دبّ على أرضها وصبت على رزقها تنقل الحبّة إلى حُرها وتعدّها في مستقرّها تجمع في حّها ليبردها وفي ورودها صدرّها مكنون برزقها مرزوبةً بوقته! لا يغفلها المانو ولا يحرمه الدّيّان ولو في الصفا الياس والخجر الجامس ولو فكرت في مجازي أكلها في علوها وسفلها وما في الفون من شراشف ينها وما في الرأس من عينها وأذنها لقيضت من خلقها يعبّر وليفت من وصفها تعباً فتعالي الذي أقامها على وقايتها وباها على دعائها لم يشركه في فطرتها فاطر ولم يهتدّ على خلقها قادر. ولو ضربت في مذهب فكرك لتبلغ غايتهما؛ ما ذلك الدلاله إلا أن فاطر النمل هو فاطر النحلة! لدقيق تفصيل كل شيء وغامض اختلاف كل حي وما الجليل والطيف والختيف والقويّ والضعيف في خلقه إلا سوء.

كذلك السماء والحواء والرياح والماء فأنظر إلى الشمس والقمر والنّبات والشجر والماء والجمر وأختلاف هذا الليل والنهار وتفرّق هذه البحار وكثرة هذه الجبال وطول هذه القلال وتفرّق هذه اللغات والألسن المختلفة. فالويل من بحر المقدر وأنكر المدّر زعم أنهم كالنبات ما لهم زارع ولا لاختلاف صورهم صانع ولم يلّجوا إلى حجة فيما أدعوا ولا تحقيق لما أوعوا وقد يكون بناء من غير بان أو جنّة من غير جان.

From the same oration, describing the wondrous creation of many species of animals:

Had they contemplated the greatness of his power and the vastness of his bounty, they would have returned to the Path, and feared the punishment of the Fire. But hearts are sickly and eyes diseased. Do they not observe the smallest of things he has created, how he has perfected its creation, refined its form, provided orifices for hearing and sight, and fashioned bones and skin? Observe the ant in its tiny frame and delicate shape! It can hardly be spotted by the eye or grasped by the mind, yet see how it crawls on the earth and guards its food, transporting a single seed to its nest and stashing it in its lair! It gathers in the hot season for the cold, in the time of abundance for the time of dearth, its sustenance is guaranteed, and its provisions are made to suit. The Great Benefactor does not ignore it and the Great Rewarder does not deprive it, even when it lives on dry rock and barren stone. And if you were to contemplate the tracts through which its food passes inside its parts, high and low, the membranes of its stomach within its abdomen, and all that its head contains, eyes, ears, and everything else, you would marvel at its creation and be hard pressed to describe it. Exalted be the one who righted it upon its legs and set it on its limbs! No partner assisted him to make it, no power helped him in its creation! And if you were to follow the path of your thought to its logical end, you would infer that the maker of the ant is also the maker of the honeybee. Every creature has subtle particulars, and every living being has imperceptible variances, but with regard to their being created, the large, the slight, the heavy, the light, the strong, the weak, all are the same—all are God’s creatures.

The case of sky, air, wind, and water is similar. Observe the sun, moon, plants, trees, water, and rocks. Observe the alternation of night and day, the roiling of the seas, the majesty of the mountains, the loftiness of the massifs, the diversity of languages, and the variety of tongues. Woe to those who deny the Great Ordainer, who reject the Great Planner! They claim they are like plants without a cultivator, that there is no artisan who crafted their different forms, but they have no proof for their claim and no justification for their belief. Can there ever be a building without a builder, an act without an actor?

---

1 Ar. nahlah; Or, per mss M “the date-palm (nakhlah).”
2 Lit. “Can there be a crime without a perpetrator?”; my translation is in the generic sense of action, following H 13:65.
1.183.4 وإن شئت قلت في الجرادة إذ خلقها عينين حمّراً وأسرع لها حدّقتين
قُرْأُونَ قُرْأً وجعلها السمع الخفيف وفتح لها الفم السوّي وجعلها الحس القوي ونابين
بما تقرض ومنظلين بهما تقبض رهبها الزّراع في زرعهم ولا يستطيعون ذبّها ولا أجلبوا
بجمعهم حتّى ترد الحرف في نزواتها وتقص مع شهواتها وخلقها كلّها لا يكون إصبعاً
مستدقة تبادر التي سجده لـ "مِن في السماوات والأرض طُوْعاً ورُحْساً" ويعقّ له
حداً ووجهًا ويلبقي بالطاعة إليه سماً وضعفًا ويعطي القيمة رهماً وخوفًا.
فالطير مسخرة لأمره أحصى عدد البيش منها والنفّس وأرسى قوّاتها على البدى
والبيس قدر أقواتها وأحصى أجناسها فهذا غراب وهذا عقاب وهذا حمام وهذا نعم.
دعا كل طائر بأسمه وكفل له برزقه وأشأ السحاب الثقل فأحل دمّها وعّد قسمها
فبل الأرض بعد جفوفها وأخرج بنها بعد جذوبها.

1.184 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام في التوحيد وجمع هذه الخطبة من أصول العلوم ما لا تجمعه

خطبة

1.184.1 ما وحّده من كُتَب لّه لا حقيقة أصاب من مَالها ولا إِيّاه عنى من شبه ولا
صحّته من أشار إليه وتوهّمه كل مَعروف نفسه مصنوع وكل قائم في سواه معلوم فاعل
لا باضطراب آلّا مقتدر لا يجوز فكرة غني لا بأسفادة لا تصحب الأوقات ولا ترفّده
الأدوات سبب الأوقات كونه والعدم وجوده والابتداء أزلا بتشييع المشاعر عرف
آلّا مشعر له وبمضادّته بين الأمور عرف آلّا ضدّ له ومباراته بين الأشياء عرف آلّا
قرىنه له ضاد الأنور بالظلمة والضوح بالحياء والعود بالبلبل والحروض بالصدر. مولّف بين
متعادياتها مقارن بين مبادئها مقرّب بين مبادئها مفرق بين مبادئها لا يشمل
1.183.4 If you wish, I can also speak of the locust. God gave it two red eyes and within them he suspended two pupils, two moon-like orbs. He fashioned for it minute ears and an opening for a mouth, gave it keen senses, two fang-like teeth with which to cut, and two scythe-like forelegs with which to grip. Farmers dread their ravages—even if they join forces, they can’t drive the locusts away until they’ve inflicted their violence on the crops and satisfied their hunger, yet all the while each one measures no more than a tiny finger! Blessed is he before whom «all who are in the skies and the earth, obedient or unwilling,»¹ fall prostrate! They press their cheeks and faces to the earth, throw down their weapons in a vulnerable plea for amnesty, and offer their reins to him in awe and fear!

The birds are also subject to his command. He reckons the number of their feathers and their breaths, keeps their feet firm on wet land and dry, ordains their food, and knows their innumerable species. This one is a crow, that an eagle, this one a pigeon, that an ostrich. He calls each bird by its name, and he guarantees its sustenance. Quickening heavy clouds,² drawing forth pouring rain, and enumerating appointed bounties, he drenches the land after it was parched and prompts it to germinate after it was barren.

1.184 From an oration by ‘Alī on God’s oneness that brings together principles of knowledge like no other:

1.184.1 Those who assign him a form have not acknowledged his oneness, those who liken him have not hit upon his reality, those who compare him have not denoted him, those who point to him or imagine him have not directed themselves to him. Each entity that is known in its essence is constructed, and each entity that stands with another’s support is a result. God acts without implements, he ordains without thought, he is wealthy without acquisition. Time does not accompany him, and appendages do not attend him. His being precedes time, his existence precedes non-existence, and his eternity precedes the beginning. By his forming of the senses, we know that he has no senses, by his creation of opposites, we know that he has no rival, by his design of similarities, we know that he has no peer. He made light the opposite of darkness, clarity the opposite of gloom, dry the opposite of wet, and heat the opposite of cold. He joined what was disparate, gathered what was distinct, brought close the things that were far, and separated those that were near. He cannot be confined

---

¹ Qur’ān, Ra’id 13:15.
² Modified quote from Qur’ān, Ra’id 13:12.
الموطن وحتماً قد الأخذة وجبته لولا التكلفة. بها تتجلى صانعها للعقول و بها أمتنع عن نظر الاعيون. لا يجري عليه السكون والحركة وكيف يجري عليه ما هو أجراء و يعود فيه ما هو أبداً و يحذث فيه ما هو أحدث إذا تتقاطع ذاته و تجرأ كنه ولا أمتنع من الأزل معناه و لكن له وقراً إذ وجد له أمم و أنتمس التقام إذا لزمه التقصان وإذا لاقامت آية المصنع فيه و تتحول دليلًا بعد أن كان مدلولاً عليه و خرج بسلطان الامتناع من أن يثور فيه ما يؤثر في غيره.

الذي لا يحول ولا يزول ولا يجوز عليه الأقول لم يلد فيكون مولودًا ولم يولد فيصير محذراً جلٌّ عن أتخاذ البشر في الملاحة النسية لا تقال إلا أهام فتقدره ولا تتوهمه الفطر فتصارع ولا تدرك الحواس فمنحة ولا تلمه الأيدي فتمسّ لا يقترب بحال ولا يبتذل في الأحوال ولا تلبسه الليالي والأيام ولا يغمره الضياء والظلم ولا يوصف بشيء من الأجزاء ولا بالجوارح والأعضاء ولا بعرض من الأعراض ولا بالغيرية والأعاص. ولا يقال له حد ولا نهاية ولا نقطاع ولا غاية ولا أن الأشياء تعوده فبلبه أو نهوه أو أن شئاً يحمله فيه الويه أو يعدله. ليس في الأشياء يوح و لا عنها يخرج يختبر لا بسان و طفرات و يسمع لا بخروج و لأدوات يقول ولا يلفظ و يحفظ ولا يختف بيريد ولا يضمر يحب و يمرض من غير رفق و يغض و يغضب من غير مشقة. يقول لما أراد كونه "كَنْ فَيْكْوَنَّ" لا بصوت يقرع ولا نداء يسمع وإنما كلامه سبحانه فعل

١٨٤.٢

في، ومصححة في ه، ونسخة في ش: كذا ن، وأصل ش: "فيكون".
by a limit or reckoned by counting, for instruments can only limit other instruments, and implements can only indicate similar things. “Since” prevents them from antiquity, “just” precludes them from eternity, and “if not for” drives them from perfection. Through these things, the artisan who crafted them displays his light to intellects, yet because of these things, it is impossible for eyes to see him. Stillness and motion do not apply to him. How can something he set forth apply to him? How can something he originated become part of him? How can something he made happen, happen to him? If that were the case, his being would have contrasting modes, his essence would be divided into parts, and it would be impossible for his reality to be eternal. If he had a front, he would also have a back, if he were incomplete, he would need completing, and if that were the case, the mark of craftsmanship would appear in him. He would become a sign instead of something to which all signs point. But—through the utter impossibility of that being the case—nothing that affects his creatures affects God.

1.84.2 He is the one who never changes, never ceases, never sets. He has not begotten, else he himself would be like one born, he was not begotten, else he would be constrained. His glory precludes begetting sons, his purity precludes intimacy with women. The imagination cannot attain or measure him, the intellect cannot imagine or picture him, our senses cannot grasp or sense him, our hands cannot touch or feel him. No situation causes him to change, no conditions cause him to alter. The passage of night and day do not cause him to decay, light and dark do not cause him to transform. He cannot be described as possessing parts, or limbs and organs, or segments, or accidental qualities that can change, or the trait of being other than something, or comprised of sections. It cannot be said of him that he has limit, end, termination, conclusion, or that things control him so as to raise or lower him, or that things carry him so as to balance him or cause him to incline. He neither enters into things nor exits them. He informs without tongue or mouth. He hears without ears or any other organ. He speaks without uttering, remembers without memorizing, and wills without pondering. He loves and is pleased without sentiment, he hates and is angry without toil. For anything whose being he wills, he says «“Be!”— and it is,» without emitting a sound that strikes the ear, or a call that can be

1 *Ar. mundhu, qad, and law-lā*. These words distinguish creatures from the creator, to whom none of these terms apply, for they imply coming into existence, being newly created, and imperfection.

2 Reference to Qurʾan, Ikhlāṣ 112:3.

3 Qurʾan, Baqarah 2:117.
منه أنشأته ومثله لم يكن من قبل ذلك كائنًا ولو كان قديمًا لكان إلهًا ثانوياً. لا يقال كان بعد أن لم يكن فتجري عليه الصفات يحدثان ولا يكون بينه وبنه فصلة ولا له عليها فضل فيسوتي الصائغ والمصنوع ويكافأ المبذع واليديع.

184.3 خلق الخلاق على غير مثال خلا من غيره ولم يستعن على خلقه بأحد من خلقه ونشأ الأرض فأمسكها من غير أشتغال وأرساها على غير قرار وأقامها بغير قواءٍ ورفعها بغير دعاء وحصّنها من الأود والاستراح ومنعها من التباخت والانفراج. أرسل أودادها وضرب أسدادها واستفاد عيونها وخذ أوديتيها فيثني ما بناها ولا ضعف ما قوّاه هو الظاهر عليها بسلطانها وعظمته و هو الباطن لها يبيعه ومعرفة العالى على كل شيء منها بلجلده وعرزته لا يعجزه شيء منها طله ولا يمنع عليه فيبلغه ولا يفوه السريع منها فبسبقه ولا يحتاج إلى ذي مال فبرقه. خضعت الأشياء له وذلك مست견ة لعظمته لا تستطيع الجسر من سلطانه إلى غيره فتتمتع من نفعه وضرره. ولا كنّو له فيكافيءه ولا نظير له فسياحه.

184.4 هو المتفنّي لها بعد وجودها حتى يصير موجودًا وليس فناء الدنيا بعد أبداعها بأعجب من إنشائها وأختراعها وكيف ولو أجمع جميع حيوانها من طيرها وبهائمها وما كان من مراحها وسماها وأصانف أنساخها وأجناسها ومتبلاذة أمها وأكابها على إحداث بوضعية ما قدرت على إحداثها ولا عرفت كيف سبيل إلى إيجادها وتحورعت عقولها في علم ذلك وتاهت وجنز قواها وتلاعبت ورجعة خاضعة حسيرة عارفة بأنها مفهومة مقرونة بالعجز عن إنشائها مدعنة بالضعف عن إفنائها وأنه يعود سباحة بعد فناء الدنيا وحده لا شيء معها كما كان قبل أبداعها كذلك يكون بعد فناها بئا وقت ولا مكان ولا حين ولا زمان عُدمت عند ذلك الآجال والأوقات
heard. Rather, his speaking of words is itself an act that he created and formed. His words did not exist before, for if they had been present from antiquity, they would have constituted a second god. It cannot be said of him that he came into being after non-existence, or else the attributes of newly created beings would apply to him, there would be no difference then between him and them, nor would he possess any distinction over them. The craftsman and his craft would become the same, the initiator and the initiated would become equal.

1.184.3 He created his creation without using an earlier model, without seeking help from any of his creatures. Forming the earth, he held it firm without labor, anchored it without a seabed, erected it without pillars, ensured it was safe from bending and buckling, and secured it from disintegration and rupture. He then set down its stakes, established its barriers, released its wellsprings, and furrowed its valleys. What he built never becomes unstable, what he strengthened never becomes weak. He is powerful over it through his authority and glory, he is concealed within it through his knowledge and recognition, he is lofty above all things through his magnificence and might. Nothing that he seeks eludes him, nothing can stand up against him or overpower him, no creature can outrun or outstrip him, he needs no wealthy benefactor to sustain him. All things bow to him and efface themselves before his majesty. No one can flee his power or be free of his benefit or harm. He has no equal to match him, no peer to rival him.

1.184.4 He will annihilate the world after its existence, until everything that existed in it will be lost. But the annihilation of the world after its creation is no more marvelous than its origination and formation. How could it not be so? For if all the world's living beings came together—its birds and its beasts, all its cattle in stables and pastures, all its many species in terms of their origins and types, the dullards among its nations and the clever—if they all came together to try to create a gnat, they could not, they would never find a way to bring it into existence. Their minds would be dazed by the attempt to know how, their faculties would be perplexed and incapacitated and would retreat, beaten and weary, recognizing defeat, conceding their incapacity to bring it into existence, and acknowledging that they are too weak even to cause its destruction. God will once again be alone after the annihilation of this world—nothing else will exist with him. As he was before its beginning, so will he be after its end, beyond season, place, moment, or time. Lifespans and seasons will become non-existent, years and hours will cease. Nothing will remain save the
وزالت السنون والساعات فلا شيء إلا الواحد القهار الذي إليه مصير جميع الأمور ولا
قدرة منها كان أبتداء خلقه وغيّر أمنتاع منها كان فائدة ولا وقّرت على الامتناع لدام
بقاها.

لم يملك ده صنع شيء منها إذ صنعه ولم يره منها خلق ما يراه وخلقه ولم يكون لها
لتشفيد سلطان ولا خوف من زوال ونقصان ولا لاستعانة بها على بد مكافئ ولا
للاحتراز بها من ضع مئار ولا للزيدة بها في ملك ولا لمكاثرة شريك في شرك ولا
لوحية كانت منه فرائد أن يستأمس إليها. ثم هو يفنيني بعد تكوينها لسألم دخل عليه
في تصريفها وتدبيرها ولا راحة وعصلة إليها ولا تقل شيء منها عليه لا يمل طول بقائها
فيعده إلى سرعة إفنائها لكن بسجنه ديرها بلطفه وأمسكها بأمره وأتقنها بقدرته ثم
يعيدها بعد الفناء من غير حاجة منه إليها ولا استعانة بشيء منها عليه ولا لأصناف من
حال وحشة إلى حال استئناس ولا من حال جهل وعي إلى علم وآثام ولا من فقر
وحاجة إلى غنى وكثرة ولا من ذل وضعة إلى عرش وقادة.

ومن خطبة له عليه السلام في الملاحم
ألآ بأبي وأميهم من عدّة أسماؤهم في السماء معروفة وفي الأرض مجهولة. ألا فوقعوا
ما يكون من إدبار أموركم وانقطاع وكسكم وأستعمال صغاركم ذاك حيث تكون ضربة
السيف على المؤمن أهون من الذرهم من حَلَه ذاك حيث يكون المعطي أعظم أجراً
من المعطي ذاك حيث تسكون من غير شراب بر من الثغة والنعم وتحفون من غير
اضطرار وتكدّبون من غير إراج ذاك إذا عضّكم البلاء كما يبعض الغيب غارب البحر
ما أطول هذا العنا وابع هذا الرجاء. أيها الناس ألقوا هذه الأزمة التي تحل ظهورها
الأثقال من أيديكم ولا تصدعوا على سلطانكم فتدموا غيب فعالكم ولا تفتتحما ما
one, the vanquisher, to whom all affairs return. The beginning of their creation took place without their volition, their annihilation too will come without them having the power to arrest its march. If they had been able to, they would have existed forever.

1.184-5 Crafting any part of what he crafted caused him no hardship. Creating what he created, what he formed, caused him no fatigue. He did not bring his creatures into being in order to consolidate his authority, or from fear of cessation or loss, or to bolster his worth against a wealthier peer, or to protect himself from an avenging enemy, or to expand his kingdom, or to boast of greater riches to a partner, or out of loneliness such that he wanted the comfort of their company. Now, after bringing the world into being, he will annihilate it, but not because he is wearied by planning and running it, or to seek rest, or because any of it weighs him down. Its long existence does not tire him and require him to annihilate it swiftly. He has planned it through his grace, upheld it with his command, and perfected it with his power. After annihilating it, he will bring it back again. This, too, without having a need for it, without seeking help from any creature to create it, or to emerge from a state of loneliness to a state of comfort, or from a state of ignorance and blindness to knowledge and attainment, or from poverty and destitution to wealth and abundance, or from shame and abjectness to might and power.

1.185 From an oration by ʿAlī prophesying a calamitous time:1

I would offer my father and mother as ransom for that host whose names are recognized in the heavens but remain unknown on earth. Hark, people, prepare for what is coming! Your affairs will soon turn topsy turvy, your ties will soon be severed. Only the rash among you will find employment. On that day, it will be easier for a believer to suffer the blow of a sword than to earn a single dirham through licit means. On that day, the receiver will be rewarded more than the giver.2 On that day, you will become intoxicated, not from drink, but with luxury and affluence, you will swear gratuitous oaths and lie without scruple. On that day, calamity will bite like a packsaddle biting into a camel's withers. O how lengthy the hardship, how distant the hope! People! Stop driving beasts you have loaded with sin! Stop challenging your authorities, or you will

---

1 Excerpt from an oration ʿAlī delivered in Kufa after the Battle of Nahrawān in 38/658. Ḥ 6:134–135, after Madāʾinī (the preceding lines are also recorded).
2 Because those who give at this time will do so from illicit earnings, while those who receive will do so legitimately. H 1396–97; B 712; F 352; R 2:440.
استقبلت من فور نار الفتنة وأميطوا عن سننها وخلوّوا قصد السبيل لها. فقد لعمر يهلك في لها المؤمن ويسلم فيها غير المسلم.

1.186 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام

وصيكم فيها الناس بنقية اللهو وكثرة جده على آلائه إليه إليكم ونعمائه عليكم وبلائه لديكم فكم خصصكم بعمة وتداركم برحمة أعورتم له فستركم وتعرضتم لأذى فأهلكم وأوصيكم بذكر الموت وإبلاغ الغفلة عنه وكيف غفلتكم عما ليس يغفلكم وطمعمكم فين ليس يهلكم فكيفي واعظًا بما عانتموه حملوا إلى قبورهم غير راكبين وأنزلوا فيها غير نازلين كانواهم لم يكونوا للدنيا ضغورًا ومان الآخرة لم تزل لهم دارًا أو حشو ما كانوا يوطنون وأوطنوا ما كانوا يوضحون وأشتوها بما فارقو وأضعاعوا ما إليها أنطلاقوا لا عن قبح يستطيعون اعتقالًا ولا في حسن يستطيعون أهدافًا أنسوا بالدنيا فغورهم ووثقوا بها فصرعتهم. فسبقوا رحمهم اللهو إلى منازلكم التي ألم تفرحها وترغب فيها ودعيتهم إليها وأستراهم نعم اللهو عليكم بالصبر على طاعته وسماحته لمصيتها فإن غدا من اليوم قريب ما أسعد الساعات في اليوم وأسرع الأيام في الشهر وأسرع الشهر في السنة وأسرع السنين في العمر.

1.187 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام
denounce the results of your action! Stop rushing into sedition's raging fire, stay away from its path, leave its road empty! By my life, I fear believers will perish in its flames, while non-Muslims will stay safe!

1.186 From an oration by ʿAlī:¹
People! I counsel you to be conscious of God and to give abundant thanks for his bounties to you, his blessings on you, and his favors for you. How often has he singled you out for a blessing and rescued you with an act of mercy! You revealed your shame, and he concealed it, you put yourself in the way of his punishment, and he granted you reprieve. I counsel you to remember death and lessen your neglect! How can you forget something which will not forget you? How can you place your hopes in something which will not grant you reprieve? The dead whom you have seen with your own eyes are sufficient counselors. They are carried to their graves, not riding there, then placed inside without choosing to dismount, as though they had never lived merrily in the world, as though the hereafter had always been their home. Now, they recoil from their earlier abode, they make their home in that place from which they had earlier recoiled. Long did they occupy themselves with concerns they now have to leave behind! Long did they ignore the cares to which they are now transported!² Now, they cannot run away from their vile deeds or increase their stock of good. They became familiar and comfortable with the world, and she deceived them. They trusted her, and she hurled them to the ground. People, race toward the home that you have been commanded to inhabit—may God have mercy on you!—the one to which you have been urged and invited. Seek the completion of God's blessings through obedience, do good and shun sin, for tomorrow is close to today. O how swift the passage of hours in a day! How swift the passage of days in a month! How swift the passage of months in a year! How swift the passage of years in a lifetime!

1.187 From an oration by ʿAlī:³

---
¹ Excerpt from ʿAlī’s oration soon after his accession to the caliphate in Medina, when he was informed that Ṭalḥah and Zubayr had rebelled. Iskāfī, Miʿyār, 109–111.
² Or, “They are occupied with paying for the things they have had to leave behind, having squandered the opportunity to prepare for that to which they are now transported.” H 13:100.
³ This could be an excerpt from an early oration in Medina in 35–36/658, since the penultimate line, “Ask me before you lose me,” is said to be the prompt for Dhiʿlib’s question about seeing God and ʿAlī’s answer in § 1.177 (Ṣadūq, Amālī, 423, Majlis no. 55; see note there), set in Medina. But, on the other hand, the line also occurs in § 90.2, from the late Kufa period, ca. 38/658, and in another oration in Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 145–147—the line appears to be a recurrent one in ʿAlī’s orations, from the beginning of his caliphate to the end.
فَنَّ النِّيَامَةِ ما يَكُونُ ثَابِتاً مِّستَرِقاً فِي الْقُلُوبِ وَمِنْهَا مَا يَكُونُ عَوْارِي بَينَ الْقُلُوبِ وَالسَّدُورِ إِلَى أِجْلٍ مَّعَمِولٍ. فَإِذَا كَانَ لَكُمْ بِرَاءَةٌ مِّنْ أَحَدٍ فَقَوْهُ حَتَّى يَحْضِرَهُ الْمَوْتُ فَعِنْدَ ذلِكْ يَقُولُ حَدِّ الْبِرَاءَةِ. وَالْمُهْرَجَةَ قَائِمَةٌ عِلَى حَدِّهَا الأُولُو مَا كَانَ للهِ تَعَالَى فِي أُهُلِ الْأَرْضِ حَاجَةً مِّنْ مَسْتَسْرَةِ الْأَمْثَالِ وَمَعْلُوْمَةِ، لَا يَقُولُ أَسْمَ الْمُهْرَجَةِ عَلَى أُحَدٍ إِلَّا بِمَعْرِفَةِ الحُجّةِ فِي الأَرْضِ فِنْ عِرْفَهَا وَأَقْرَبِها فَهُوَ مَهاجرٌ وَلَا يَقُولُ أَسْمَ الْاِسْتَضْعَافِ عَلَى مِنْ بَلْغَتِهِ الْحُجّةِ فَسَمُعتُهُ أَذْنَهُ وَوَعَاهُ قَلِبَهُ إِنَّ أَمْرَنا صَعِبٌ مَّسْتَصْعِبٌ لَا يَحْتَمِلُ إِلَّا عَبْدٌ أَمْتَحَنُّ اللهُ قَلِبَهُ لِلْإِيَمَانِ وَلا يَعِي هُدْيَتُهَا إِلَّا سَدُورُ أَمْيَةٍ وَأَحْلَامُ رَزْيَةٍ. أَيْبَّ الْنَّاسُ سَلَوْنِي قَبْلَ أَنْ تَقْفُدُونَ فَلَأَنَا بِالْسُّمَّاءِ أَعْلَمُ مِّنْ بَيْنِ بَيْنِ الأَرْضِ قَبْلَ أَنْ تَشْغَرْ مَرْجَهَا فَتَنَّ تِطْرَقَ فِي خُطَاةِنِها وَتَرْتِبَ بِأَحْلَامِ قَوْمِهَا.

وَمِنْ خَطْبَةِ لِهِ عَلِيَّ الْسَّلَامِ أُحْمِدَهُ شَكْرًا لِّإِنْعَامِهِ وَأَسْتَعِينَهُ عِلْلَةَ حَقَّهُ عِزْيَ الزَّوْجِ عَظِيمَ الجِنْدِ. أَوْلَيْ أَنْ يَقُولُ مَعْلُوْمٌ عَبْدُهُ وَرَسُولُ دَا إِلَى طَاعَتِهِ وَقَاهُ أَعْدَاءُ جَهَادًا عَن دِينِهِ لَا يَنْتَهِي عَن ذلِكَ أَجْمَعُ عَلَى تَكَذِيبِهِ وَأَنْتِمُ لِإِطْفَاءِ نُورِهِ.

۱.188

انْ، م، ش، ھ، ك، د ی: دَلَا تَحْمِلُ إِلَّا مَلِکٌ مُقْرِبٌ أَوْ نَبِيٌّ مَرْسَلٌ إِلَّا أَمْتَحَنُّ اللَّهُ إِلَّا عِبَّدَ. إِمْتَحَنَّ اللَّهُ قَلِبِهِ لِلْإِيَمَانِ. وَأَضْفِتْ فِي هَامِشِ شَ: مَلِکٌ مُقْرِبٌ أَوْ نَبِيٌّ مَرْسَلٌ إِلَّا مَوْمُمٌ.
Some people's hearts are firm and steadfast in belief, while for others belief is a temporary loan lodged between heart and breast. If you wish to dissociate from anyone, wait until death comes to him—that is the point at which dissociation becomes appropriate. Migration continues to be required as it was when first mandated, although God has no need of any of the earth's people, neither those who conceal their affiliation to this community, nor those who declare it publicly. Moreover, the honor of migration is not earned by a person unless he recognizes God's proof on earth. To recognize and acknowledge this proof is to be a true migrant. The phrase “too weak” does not apply to anyone whom God's proof reaches, that is, if his ears hear it and his heart preserves it. Our affair is hard and challenging, and only a person whose heart God has tested with belief can bear it patiently. Our words are preserved only by trusted hearts and mature minds. People! Ask me before you lose me, for I know more about the pathways of the heavens than I do about the pathways of the earth! Do this before sedition rushes to attack, raising its hind-foot, trampling on its nose-rein, and destroying people's minds.

1.188 From an oration by ʿAlī:

I offer praise to God in thanks for his blessings and ask his aid in upholding his rights. His army is mighty, and his nobility great. I bear testimony that Muḥammad is his servant and messenger, who called on people to obey God and vanquished his enemies, fighting tirelessly to defend his religion. They banded together to call him a liar and attempted to extinguish his light, but they could not turn him away from his purpose.

---

1. I.e., see whether the person dies a believer or an unbeliever before you cast him off.
2. *Ar. hijrah*. The first migration refers to the migration to Medina, the Prophet Muḥammad's city, following his own migration there from Mecca.
3. Translation based on reading *mā* as a negation and the two sentences as independent clauses, based on B 717; R 2:444–445. If we read *mā* to be the particle that means “as long as,” the two lines would be combined into one clause (cf. Ḥ 13:103), and would translate quite differently as: “Migration continues to be required as it was when first mandated, as long as God has need of any of the earth's people, those who conceal their affiliation to this community and those who declare it publicly.”
4. The Shiʿi commentators Bahrański (B 717–718) and Rāwandī (R 2:444–445) state that “God's proof” is the Imam. The Sunni Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd (Ḥ 13:103–104) says this passage is about the “secrets of legatee-ship,” and it refers to migration toward the Imam, ʿAlī himself. Both are effectively saying the same thing.
5. Reference to Qurʾan, Nisāʾ 4:97, which excuses people who are “too weak” from migrating to Medina.
6. Called one of ʿAlī's most eloquent orations, especially for the rhythmic orations and graphic description of hellfire; echoed later by Ibn Nubātah al-Khaṭīb (d. 374/985) (Ḥ 13:114; B 725). The last paragraph about standing fast is interpreted variously: ʿAlī is either (1) instructing his Kufan supporters not to be hasty in drawing swords against the Kharijites (Ḥ 13:113); or (2) directing his followers never to draw swords in the absence of the rightful Imam (B 725); possibly both.
فأعتصموا بثقوب الله فإن لها حيال وثقيعا عروتته ومعقلًا منعبا ذروته. وبدروا الموت وغمته وآمهدوا له قبل حلوله وأعدوا له قبل نزوله وإن الغابة القياسة وكفى بذلك واعظًا لمن عقل ومغمساً لمن جهل وقبل بلوغ القيامة ما تعلمون من ضيق الأرمان وشدة الإبلاء وهول المطائع وروعات الفزعو أختلف الأضلاع وأسبيكاً الأسماع وظلمة الخلد وخفية الوعد وغم الضرير وردم الصفيف. فله الله عباد الله فإن الدنيا ماضية بكم على سنين وأنت والساعة في قرن وكاتبة قد جاءت بأشرافها وأرخت بأشرافها ووقفت بكم على سرا طها وكأنهم قد أشرفوا بلزواها وأناخت بكلا لبنا ونصرتم الدنيا بأهلها وأخرجتم من حضنها فكانت كيوب مضى وشعير أقطع وصار جديدًا رئا وسمينا غثًا في موقف ضنك المقام وأمور مشتقة عظام ونار شديد كلباً عال جبها ساطع لها متغتط زفيرة متأجرة سمعها بعيد حمودها ذاك وقُردها مخوف وعديها عم قرارها مظلمة أقطارها حامية قدورها فظيعة أمورها. وسريع الذين أنعموا بفهم الجنة زمارًا قد أمن العذاب وانقطع العتائ ورجزوا عن النار وأطامناهم بهم الدار ورضوا المنى والقرر الذين كانت أعمالهم في الدنيا زاكية وأعيينهم باكية وكان ليلهم في ذباههم نهارًا تخفصًا واستغفارًا وكان نهارهم ليلاً توحشًا وانقطاعًا مئل الله هم الجنة ثوابًا (وكانوا أحق بها وأهلها) في ملك دائم ومعيم قائم فأعوا عباد الله ما يرفعه يفوز فتراكم و بإضافته يحسن مطلبكم وبدروا أجلكم بأعمالكم فإكم مرتهبون بما قدتمكم وكأن قد نزل لكم الخوف فلا رجعة تنالون ولا عرة تقالون. استعملنا الله وأياكم بطاعته وطاعة رسوله وعفا عننا وعنتكم بفضل رحمته.

۱۹۳۹، ن، ش: ك.دي.ي، ه: (صراعتها). ۱۹۳۹، ن، ش، ونسخة في ي: ك.د.ي، وأصل ي، ونسخة

في ش: (وأنصرفت)
Take refuge, people, in consciousness of God, for its rope has a strong grip, and its refuge is on an impregnable height. Hasten to prepare for the engulfing pangs of death, make ready before it arrives. Know that the resurrection is the final end—enough counsel for the perceptive, enough lesson for the ignorant! But even before you arrive at that terminus, you know well what you will encounter: the narrow confines of earth-filled graves, the sheer abyss of despair, the terror of the prospect, the disintegration of ribs, the blocking of ears, the darkness of the tomb, the fear of the portent, and the horror of that crypt sealed with slabs of stone! Fear him, servants of God, fear him! The world, as is her wont, is sweeping you along, your rope tethered to her last hour, whose heralds are here and whose dawn glimmers. The hour has already stood you in readiness to meet it on its concourse. It will arrive any moment now. Imagine that its earthquakes are already here, as though its brutish chest is already crushing out your breath, as though the world has already cut her ties with you, her children, and hurled you from her lap! Indeed, your world is like a day that has already passed, and a month that has already ended, the new in her has worn out, the healthy are wasted and thin. All in her proceed to an assembly that is tight and narrow, to matters that are grave and dark. Ahead lies a fire of rabid thirst, whose roar is deafening, whose flames rise high, whose crackle rages, whose conflagration is fierce and slow to extinguish, whose inferno blazes, whose threat is terrifying, whose pit is unfathomable, whose sides are dark, whose cauldrons are iron-hot, and everything about it is horrific. But «those who were conscious of their Lord will be led in groups into paradise», secure from punishment, safe from reprimand, snatched from the clutches of hellfire. Paradise will delight in their arrival, and they will rejoice in their new dwelling, their permanent home. These are people whose deeds in this world were righteous, whose eyes were full of tears, whose nights were spent as daylight hours in humble entreaty to God for forgiveness, whose days were spent as nighttime vigils in alienation and separation from the world. God rewarded them with paradise—«and they were worthy of it and deserving!»—with life in the eternal kingdom, in everlasting bliss. Servants of God, stay the course whose fulfilment will lead you to triumph, but whose squandering will hand you defeat. Outtrace your lifespans with good deeds, for you remain mortgaged to your past actions and will be rewarded for what you advance. The time that you dread is almost upon you, when no return to the world can be availed, no fall can be averted. May God help us to obey him and his Messenger! May he forgive us with his kind mercy!

1 Qurʾan, Zumar 39:73.
الزما الأرض وأصروا على البلاء ولا تحرزوا بأيديكم وسيوفكم هوى ألسنتكم ولا تستعجلوا بما لم يعجله الله لكم فإنه من مات منكم على فراشه وهو على معرفة حق ربه وحق رسله وأهل بيتته مات شهيدا ووقع أجره على الله واستوجب ثواب ما نوى من صالح عمله وقامت الدنيا مقام إصلاته بسبيله فإن لكل شيء مدة وأجلا

91.189

ومن خطبة له عليه السلام

الحمد لله الفاشي حمدٌ والغالب جنده والمتاعلي جده أحمد على نعمة الرُّؤُوم; وألله

الظام الذي عظم حله فغا وعدل في كل ما قضى وعلم ما يمضي وما مضى مبتدع الخلاصي بعلمه ومنشئهم يحكمه إلا أقداء ولا تعليم ولا أخذاء لثنا صانع حكم ولا إصابة خطأ ولا حضرة ملأ. وأشار أن محمدًا عبده ورسوله أتبعه والناس يضربون في غرة وموجودون في حيرة قد قادتهم أزمة الحين واستغلقت على أقدامهم أفقال الرين.

وصيمك عباد الله يبقوى الله فإنها حق الله علكم والموجبة على الله حفظكم وأن تستعينوا عليها بالله، وتستعينوا بها على الله. فإن النقوة في اليوم الحزز والجنة وفي غد الطريق إلى الجنة مسلكها واضح وسلكها رابع ومستودعها حافظ. لم تبرع عارضة نفسها على الأمم الماضين والفاينين لاجتهامه إليها غدا إذا أعاد الله ما أبدا وأخذ ما أعطى وسأل عمأ أسدى لما أفل من قبلها وحملها حق حملها أولئك الأقوياء عداً وهم أهل صفة الله سبحانه إذ يقول: {فَقَلِبُ مِنْ عِبَادِي} {الشَّكُورُ}. فأهتفوا بأسماعكم إليها وواكروا يبتدأكم عليها وأعتضوها من كل سلف خلافا ومن كل خلاف موثقة أوقفوا بها نومكم وأقتفوا بها يومكم وأشموها فلوقكم وأرحضا بها ذنوبكم وداووا بها الأسفاق وبادروا بها الجامع وأعتبروا بين أعضاها ولا يعتن بكم من أطاعها ألا وصولوها وتصونوها بها. وكئنوا عن الدنيا ترَاها وإلى الآخرة ولا تبضا من رفعه النقوى ولا ترجعوا من رفعه

م. ش، م. د: ك. د، ومسحة في م: {التوام}. 32، ي، ومسحة في ش: ك. د، ن. د، وأصل

ش: { أفْنَقْطَعَوا}.

al-Sharif al-Radi - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
People, stand fast in your land and be patient in the face of trial. Don’t follow your hot tongues with drawn swords, don’t rush into something that God has not urged you to. Know that if one of you dies in his bed, if he has recognized the right of his Lord, his Messenger, and the Messenger's family, he dies a martyr, and God guarantees his recompense. He has earned reward for his pious intention, and that intention is equal to him unsheathing his sword. Know that everything has a time and a term.

1.189 From an oration by ʿAlī:

Praise God, whose praise is pervasive, whose armies are victorious, whose greatness is exalted. I offer thanks for his multiplied blessings and immense favors: his clemency is vast, and he pardoned; he was just in all he ordained; he knows all that will happen and all that already has, he originated all creatures by his knowledge, he conceived them all through his wisdom—no imitation or instruction, no emulation of prior artisan, no mistake made, no advisors present. I bear witness that Muḥammad is his servant and messenger, dispatched when people were swamped in confusion, tossed on waves of deviation, led by reins of destruction, hearts clamped in padlocks of grime.

I counsel you to piety, to be conscious of God, O servants of God, for it is God’s right that you owe to him, and it will earn you rights from God. I counsel you to seek God’s help to become pious, and seek to become pious in order to please God. Piety is a refuge today and protection, and it is tomorrow’s path to the celestial garden. Piety’s way is clear, those who walk it profit, and he who guarantees your deposit of it is trustworthy. Piety presented itself to past nations and will do so to those that remain. They will have need of it tomorrow, when God recalls what he created, takes back what he gave, and asks for an account of his gifts. But how rare the people who were pious, how few who practiced it well! Those are the few in number, the people whom God has praised, when he said, «few among my servants are truly grateful.»¹ So dedicate your ears to piety’s call and apply your efforts to responding. Exchange your past wrongs for it, make it your ally against foes. Use it to wake you from your sleep, get through your days with its help. Infuse your hearts with it, scrub off your sins with it, heal your maladies with it, outpace your death with it. Be warned by those who squandered it, let others not take warning from your terrible end. Hark and listen! Preserve it carefully, people, and thereby preserve yourselves. Free yourself from this world and focus your longings on the next. Don’t scorn those elevated by piety, don’t elevate those elevated by the world. Don’t look

¹ Qur’ān, Sabaʾ 34:13.
الدنيا ولا تشيموا بارقها ولا تتسعوا ناطقها ولا تجيبوا ناعقها ولا تستضيئوا بإشراها ولا تفتينوا بأعلامها فإن برقها خالب ونطقها كاذب وأموالها محروبة وأعلامها مسلوبة ألا وهي المتخصصية العون والجاحة الحرون والائتذال الخؤون والمحود الكنود والعبد الصدوع والحيود اليوم حالها أنتقال، ووطأتها رززان وعرة ذل وجدها هزل وعُلُوها سُفِل دار حرب وسلب ونهب وعطب أهلها على ساق وسياق وقفا وفراق قد تُحِيرت مذاهبتها وأجزت مهمبها وخابت طالبها فأسلمت المعاق والظالم المنزل وأعمتهم المحاول فن تاج معوق وحِم مجزور وشلٍّ مذبوح ودم مستوح وعاض على يديه وصاقلكفيه ومرفق بخذيه وزار علي رآه ورافع عن عزمه وقد أدبرت الحيلة وأقبلت الغيلة ولات حين مناص. هما هيا قف ذات ما فات وذهب ما ذهب ومضت الدنيا لحالها بما بُكِّت عليهم السماء والأرض وما كانوا منظرين.

ومن خطبة له على السلام تسمى القاسعة وهي طويلة فيها ذمّ إبليس والصبوب: (ً) .

المجد الله الذي ليس العزّ والكبرياء وأختارهما لفسه دون خلقه وجعلهما حمّ وحرمًا على غيره وأصفاها لجلاله وجعل اللعنة على من نازعه فيها من عباده. ثمّ (٢).

١.١٩٠.١

من السما المصري ومصاحبته في ه: كذا ن، ش، وأصل ه: أفعال. ١.١٩٠.٢

اللَّهُمَّ تُحَلُّل، ش، ومن الناس من يسمى هذه الخطبة القاسعة وهي تنتمي ذمّ إبليس على استكباره وتركه السجود لأدّم عليه السلام وآله أوّل من أظهر العصبية وتبغ الحمية وتحذير الناس من سلوك طريقته.
for her rainclouds, don’t attend her speakers, don’t answer her callers, don’t seek her glitter, don’t fancy her jewels—for her flashes are empty, her speech is false, her wealth will be plundered, and her jewels will be looted. Hark! She is but a strumpet who will pull away, a bronco that will bolt, a liar who will betray, a churl who is ungrateful, a deviator who shuns, who strays. Her nature is to terminate, her step causes earthquakes, her might is equal to shame, her seriousness is equal to jest, and her elevation is equal to disgrace. She is an abode of plunder and pillage, of loot and ruin. Her people are in torment, in agony, they rush forward, they disperse, they are confused by her roads, enmeshed by her evils, frustrated by her tricks. Their fortresses do not protect them, their homes spit them out, and their ruses fail them. What are they but hamstrung fugitives, butchered meat, slaughtered limbs, and spilt blood! Some among them bite on their hands, strike with their palms, lean cheeks on elbows in regret. Others among them are beset by doubt and withdraw after resolve. But the time of scheming has passed, the hour of calamity has come, «and it is too late to escape.»¹ Far be it! Far be it! What is lost is lost, what has gone has gone, and the world has moved on with everything that it housed. «Then, neither the sky nor the earth weeps over them, and they are not granted a reprieve.»²

1.190 From an oration by ‘Alī known as Qāṣiʿah—“The Crusher.” It is a long oration, containing censure of Iblīs,³ and of arrogance and tribal factionalism.⁴

1.190.1 Praise God, who donned robes of might and pride, reserving them for himself and allowing them to no other, who made them a fortress and sanctuary that only he inhabits, selecting them for his own majesty and cursing all who attempt to challenge him for them. Then he tested his cherubim to see

---

¹ Qurʾan, Sād 38:3.
² Qurʾan, Dukhān 44:29.
³ Iblīs refers to Lucifer.
⁴ The oration was delivered in (a) Kufa in 38/658 during the episode with Muʿāwiyah’s envoy Ibn al-Ḥaḍramī in Basra (see note at § 2.29), with ‘Alī rebuking his followers, particularly certain individuals from the Tamīm and Azd tribes for bickering among themselves when they had a common enemy to fight (Thaqafī, Ghārāṭ, 2:394–396); or (b) sometime in the last few months of ‘Alī’s caliphate, after the Battle of Nahrawān when there was tribal strife in Kufa, condemned in the oration (B 736; H 13:167–168, 198). The context of internal quarreling among ‘Alī’s followers is a possible reason for the name assigned to the oration: Qāṣiʿah, “The Crusher,” from: (1) qaṣaʿa l-qamlah, “he crushed the louse,” i.e., the oration crushed Satan and his supporters; (2) qaṣaʿat al-nāqah, “the camel crushed its grain,” referring to a camel chewing cud, because ‘Alī rode out to the tribes and delivered this oration from the back of his camel; or (3) qaṣaʿa l-māʾu ʿaṭashahu, “the water slaked his thirst,” i.e., the oration breaks the false pride of those who heed its teachings (B 736; H 13:128; F 354).
أَحْتَيِرَ بِذَلِكَ مَلَائِكَتِهِ المُقْرِرَينَ لِيَمِيزَ الَّذِينَ مَطْرَعَونَ مِنْهُمْ مِنَ الْمُسْتَكِبِرِينَ فَقَالَ سَبِحَانَهُ وَهُوَ الْعَالَمُ مُضْمَرَّ الْقَلَوبِ وَمَهْيَبَاتِ الْغِيُوبِ إِنَّهُ خَالِقُ بَشَرٍ مِنْ طِينٍ فَذَا سُوُّهُ وَنُفَخَتْ فِيهِ مِنْ رُوحٍ فَفَقَعَ عَلَيْهِ سَجَانُ يُفْعَلُ فِي الْمَلَائِكَةِ كُلِّهِمْ أَجْمَعُونَ إِلَّا إِبْلِيسُ ﴿۵﴾

أَعْرَضَتْهُمْ الْحَيَاةُ فَأَفْتَخَرَ عَلَى آَدَمَ بَلَغَةَ وَتَعَلَّمَ عَلَيْهِ لَأَصِلَّ فَعَدَّ الْإِيَامَ الْمَتَعَسِّبَينَ وَسَلَفَ الْمُستَكِبِرِينَ الَّذِينَ وَضَعَ أَسَاسَ الْعَصِيَّةِ وَنَازَعَ اللَّهُ وَرَاءَ الجَبَرُ وَأَدْرَعَ لِبَاسَ الْتَعْرُزَ وَخَلَقَ قَبْعَةَ الْإِفْجَارِ أَلَا تُرُونَ كَيفِ صَغَّرَهُ بِنَكِيرِهِ وَوُضِعَ بِفَرْقَةٍ فَجَعَلَهُ فِي الْدُّنْيَا مَدْحُورًا وَأَعْدَهُ فِي الْآخِرَةِ سَعِيًّا. وَلَوْ أَرَادَ سَبِحَانَهُ أَنْ يُخْلِقَ آَدَمَ مِنْ نُورٍ تَفْتَرُضُهُ الْأَبْصَارِ ضَبَّاءٌ وَيْهِرُ المَعْقُولَ رَوَاهُ وَطَيِّبَ يَاخُذُ الْأَنفَاسِ عَرْفَهُ لَفَعِلَ وَلَوْ فَعَلَ لَظَلَّتْ لِهِ الْأَعْنَاقُ خَاَضِعَةً وَخَفَّتَ الْبَلْوَايْ فِي الْمَلَائِكَةِ وَلَكِنْ اللَّهُ سَبِحَانَهُ بِتَلْقِهِ بِعَدْلٍ مَا يَهْيَلُونَ أَصِلَّهُمْ تَمْيِيزًا بِالْعَخْتِ يَحْلُوْتُونَ لِلنَّاسِ لِلإِسْتِكْرَارِ عَنْهُمْ وَإِيَادًا لِلضَّلَالِّ مِنْهُمْ فَأُعْتِرَ وَمَا كَانَ مِنْ فَعْلِ اللَّهِ إِبْلِيسَ إِذَا أَحْبَطَ عَلَى الْطَّيْرَ وَجَهَدَهُ الْجَهَّدَ وَقَدْ كَانَ عَبْدُ اللَّهِ سَنَةَ الْآفَفَ سَنَةً لَا يَدْرِي أَنَّ سَنَةَ الْآفَفَ مَنْ سَنَةَ الْآخِرَةِ عَنْ كِبْرِ السَّاعَةِ وَاحِدَةٍ مَّنْ بَعْدَ إِبْلِيسَ يَسْلَمُ عَلَى نَفْسِهِ مَثْلًا مَّعِيسْتَهُ كَلَا مَا كَانَ اللَّهُ سَبِحَانَهُ لِيُدْخِلَ الْجَنَّةَ بِشَهِيْرٍ بَشَرًا بَأَمِّيْرٍ أَخْرِجَ بِهِ مِنْهَا مَلِكًا إِنِّهُ حَكِيمُ فِي أَهْلِ السَّمَاءِ وَأَهْلِ الأَرْضِ لَوْاحَدٌ وَمَا بَيْنَ اللَّهِ وَبَيْنَ أَحَدٍ مِنْ خَلْقِهَا هُوَادَةٌ فِي إِبَاحَةٍ حِيْيٍ حَرَّمَ اللَّهُ عَلَى الْعَالَمِ.

١٩٠.٢ فَأَحَدَّرُوْنَ عَدْوًا اللَّهِ أَنْ يُعْدِيكُمْ بِدَابَّةٍ وَأَنْ يُسْفَرَ مِنْ مَلِيَّةٍ وَرَجُلٍ فَعُمُرِي لَقَدْ فَوَقَّ لِكُمْ سَمِّي الْمُعْيَدَ وَأَفْرَقَ لِكُمْ بِالْزَّوَعِ الْمُشْدِيدِ وَوَرَكَّةَ مِنْ مَكَانِ بَرَّيْرٍ وَقَالَ رَبُّ مَا أُعْيَنِي لَأَرْضُنَّ لَهُمْ فِي الْأَرْضِ وَلَا غَوْيُهُمْ أَجْمَعُونَ قَدْ أَبْعَرَهُمْ مِنْهُمْ حَيَاةً وَأَغْرَقَهُمْ عَنْهُمْ غَيْرِ مُصِيبٍ صَدَقَهُ بِهِ أَبْنَاءِ الحَيَاةِ وَإِخوَانِ الْعَصِيَّةِ وَفَرَسَانِ الْكَبْرِ الْجَاهِلِيَّةِ حَتَّى إِذَا
who were humble and who arrogant. He said—while knowing all that was concealed in their hearts and their hidden secrets—«I shall create a human out of clay; when I have fashioned him in good proportion and breathed into him my spirit, bow before him in prostration. The angels prostrated, every one of them, except Iblīs»—his pride prevented him, and he claimed superiority over Adam, citing his loftier creation and higher origin. Iblīs—God’s enemy—is leader of the bigots and forebear of the arrogant, the one who laid the foundations of factionalism. He challenged God for his robe of haughtiness, donned garments of self-glorification and cast off the veil of humility. Do you not see how God diminished him because of his arrogance and debased him because of his pride? He banished him in this world and prepared for him a blazing fire in the hereafter! If the Almighty had wished to create Adam from light whose radiance dazzled the eye and whose brilliance stupefied the mind, and from fragrance whose perfume filled the senses, he would have done so; and had he done so, necks would have bowed to Adam in servility, and the trial of the angels would have had little weight. But God tests his creation through things whose reality they do not know, in order to differentiate them through their choices, dispel their arrogance, and repulse their vanity. Learn a lesson from God’s punishment of Iblīs, whose long-standing worship and painstaking efforts he obliterated for a single hour of pride! Iblīs had worshipped God for six thousand years, either by the reckoning of years in this world or by the unknown reckoning of the hereafter. Who, then, is safe from God’s retribution if he disobeys God as Iblīs did? No one! God will never allow a human to enter the celestial garden if he has committed a crime for which he evicted an angel. God’s judgment among the inhabitants of the heavens and the inhabitants of the earth is one and the same. He will show no leniency in allowing anyone to enter a fortress he has forbidden to all the worlds.

1.190.2 Beware lest Iblīs infect you with his disease or intimidate you with his cavalry and infantry. By my life, he has fitted the arrow of threat to his long-bow, pulled the bowstring, aimed, and shot at you from close by. «He said: My Lord, because you caused me to stray, I shall place temptations before them on earth and lead them all astray.» His was a farfetched idea and a wild supposition, but zealotry’s offspring, factionalism’s brothers, and men riding horses of pride and intolerance made his aspiration come true. Then the hidden secret turned into an open affair, when the recalcitrant among you became docile.

1 Qur’an, Ṣād 38:71–74.
2 Modified quote from Qur’an, Isrāʾ 17:64.
3 Qur’an, Ḥijr 15:39.
أُنْقَادِتْ لِلِّجَانِحَةِ مَنْ كَمْ وَأُسْتَحْكَمَتْ الْتَّطْمِعَةُ مِنْهَا فِيْمَ فَنُجِمَتْ الْحَالُ مِنْ السَّرِّ الحَقِّي إِلَى الْأَمَرِ الْجَلِّي أَسْتَفْحَلَ سَلَطَانَهُ عَلِيَّمَ وَذَلَّ بِبَجُونِهِ نَحْوُمَ فَأَقْلَمُوْمُ وَجَتَاهُ الْذَّلَّ وَأَحْلِكُمْ وُرَاطَاتُ الْقَتْلِ وَأَوَلْوُمُ كَمْ إِخْانُ الْجِرَاحَةَ طَعُنَاً إِفْ يُوُنُّمُ وَحِرَاً فِي حَلَوَقَمُ وَدَفَأَ لَمْ نَحْمِرْ وَقَدْدَاً الْمَقَلَّمُ وَسَوْقَاً مُّذْلِهِ الْقَهْرُ إِلَى النَّارِ الْمُقْتَدْرَةِ لَمْ كَأَصِبَ أَعْظَمِ فِي دُنْيَمِ جَرْحَاً وَأَوْرِيَ فِي دَنْيَا كَمْ قَدْحَاً مِنْهَا أَصِبْتُهُمْ مِنْهَا مَيَّتِهِمْ وَهُمْ مُثَلَّبُونَ فَأَجُرُّوا عَلَى هَذَهُ كَمْ وَلَهُ جَدُّ كَمْ فَلَعْمُرُ السَّمَّاءِ أَلَّمْ نُخُرِّعُ عَلَى أَصْلَمَمْ وَوُقُّعَ فِي حَسْبِهِ وَدُفِّعَ فِي نَسْبِهِ وَأَجْلَبَ بَلْغُهُ عَلِيَّمَ وَقَدْدَاً إِسْبِتَلَّمُ وَقَتَّلْهُ كَمْ بَلْغُهُ كَبْعِنْطِوْنُ كَبْكَ كَمْ كَبْ كَمْ مُتْنَا بِكَمْ نَعْتِمْ كَأَصِبْتُهُمْ وَنَعْمُ قُرْنُ بِكَمْ كَمْ كَبْ كَمْ مُتْنَا بِكَمْ نَعْتِمْ كَأَصِبْتُهُمْ وَنَعْمُ قُرْنُ بِكَمْ كَبْ كَمْ مُتْنَا بِكَمْ نَعْتِمْ كَأَصِبْتُهُمْ وَنَعْمُ قُرْنُ بِكَمْ كَبْ كَمْ مُتْنَا بِكَمْ نَعْتِمْ ّلَمْ نَكُنْ ما مَيْلَ فِي قَلْوِيْمُ مِنْ نَيْرِنِمِعَ الْعَبْسِيّةَ وَأَحْقَاقِ الْجَاهِلِيّةَ إِمَّا تَلَكَ الحَيْثِيّ تَكُونُ فِي الْمَسْلِمِ مِنْ خُطَاتِ الشِّيْطَانِ وَخَوَافِهِ وَزَمْتَهُ وَنَفْسَهُ وَأَعْمَدْتُمْ وَضعُ التَّذَّلَّلُ عَلَى رُؤْوُسِكَمْ وَإِلْمَأْلِيَةِ الْتَّعْزِزِ تَحتُ أَقْدَامِكَمْ وَخَلَعُ الْتَكْرِيّ مِنْ أَعْنَافِكَمْ وَأَخْذَكُمُ الْتَبَيْعُ مِسْلَحَةَ بَيْنَكُمْ وَبِنِينِ عَدْوَةُ كَمْ إِبْلِيْسِ وَجَنُوْدُهُ فَإِنْ لَهُ مِنْ كَلِّ أَمَّةٍ جَنُودُ أَوْ عَاَوَانُ وَرَجَالٌ وَفِرْسَاَنُ. وَلَوْ كَتَبْنَا كَالْمَتْكُبّرِ عَلَى أَبِنِ أُمَّهِ مِنْ غَيرِ مَا فَضْلُ جِعَالِهِ السَّمَّاءِ سُوِيْ مَا أَخْقَتُ الْعَظَمَةُ بِنَفْسِهَا عَنْدَاعِوْنِي الْحَسَدِ وَقُدِحَتَ الْحَيْثِيّ فِي قَلِبِهِ مِنْ نَارِ العَمْضِ وَنَفْخِ الْمَيْتِ فِي أَنْفِهِ مِنْ رَجْحِ الْكَبْرِ الْكَبْرِيّ أُعْقِبَ اللَّهُ بِهِ النَّدَاةَ وَأَزْمِهِ آتَاثُ الْقَالِيِّنِ إِلَى يَوْمِ الْقَيَامَةِ. أَلَّا وَقَدْ أَعَمَّنَتْ تِنْبِهِ فِي الْبِغيّ وَأَفْسَدُتْ فِي الْأَرْضِ مَصْرَحَةُ اللَّهِ بِالْمَانِثِيّةِ وَمِبَارَةُ الْمُؤْمِنِيّ بِالْمَهْيَاةِ فَالْلَّهُ ﷺ كَبِيرُ الْحَيْثِيّ وَنَفْخِ الْجَاهِلِيّ فَإِنَّهُ مَلَىّ اِلْشَّهَانِ وَمِنْهَا الشَّيْطَانِ 1190.3

النود: al-Sharif al-Radi - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
enough for him to lead, and his ambitions for you took firm hold. His power over you grew oppressive and he marched against you with his armies. They forced you into caverns of humiliation, hurled you into chasms of carnage, and trampled you causing terrible wounds, thrusting spears into your eyes, slashing your throats, smashing your noses, slashing your organs, and dragging you by the nose-rings of subjugation toward the Fire. Iblīs has maimed your religion and scorched your worldly affairs far more effectively than the people you took as adversaries and against whom you gathered your armies. Draw your swords against him and double your efforts in his face! By my life, he has boasted that his origin is better than yours, he has slandered your ancestors, and tarnished your lineage. He has attacked you with his cavalry and assaulted you with his infantry. They hunt you down wherever you hide and slice off each of your fingers, while you cannot defend yourself through any stratagem or push back with any act of resolve. You are caught in the abyss of degradation, the nose-ring of compulsion, the arena of death, and the circle of affliction. Extinguish the fires of factionalism that lie concealed in your hearts and the resentments that belong to the Age of Ignorance! Factionalist zeal in a Muslim comes from Satan’s incitements, from his goads, provocations, and splutterings. Resolve to adorn your head with modesty, trample self-glory beneath your feet, and cast the yoke of arrogance from your necks. Make humility the garrison that stands between you and your enemy, Iblīs, and his armies, for he has armies, infantry, cavalry, and spies in all nations. Don’t be like Cain, who thought himself better than his brother, with no superior God-given virtue except the glory he attributed to himself, generated by hate and envy, and the supercilious zeal of his heart, kindled by the fire of anger!

1.190.3 Hark! You have galloped on the course of treachery and caused mayhem on earth, openly challenging God and fighting his believers. Fear God, fear God! Stay away from the arrogant bigotry and boasting that characterized the Age of Ignorance! Those are rancor’s pregnant camels and Satan’s bellows! With them, he duped past nations and bygone generations, making them race

1 Modified quote from Qur’an, Anfāl 8:22.
2 Lit. “Don’t be like the one who ...” The reference is to Adam’s sons Cain (Ar. Qābīl) and Abel (Ar. Hābīl), to Cain’s killing of Abel at Iblīs’s suggestion, and later, when it was too late, feeling remorse. Qur’an, Māʾidah 5:27–31; H 13:45–146; B 747; F 358–359.
3 The nose symbolizes pride in Arab culture, in addition to being the organ of breathing.
اللاقي خذب بها الأمم الماضية والقرن الحالطة حتى أُعْتُقُوا في حنادِس جهانه وهاوي ضلاله ذلة عن سياقّه سُلْساً في قيادة أمر انتفايم القلوب فيه وتائبه القرون عليه وكبرًا تضايقات الصدوره. ألا ففالذر الحذر من طاعة ساداتكم وكيراتكم الذين تكيروا

عن حسبهم وترفقوا فوق نسبهم وألقو الهَجِينة على ربهم وحاجدوا الله ما صنع بهم مكابرة لقضيائتهم ومغالاة لألائه فإنهم قولوا آسر أيض العصبية ودعائم أركان الفتنة وسُبْنُف أعتزاء الجاهلية. فاتقوا الله ولا تكونوا نعمة عليكم أضدادًا ولا لفضله عندكم حسَداً ولا تطيعوا الأذعاء الذين شرطتم بصعوك كذرهم وخلطتم بصاحبكم مرضهم وأدخلتم في حقكم بطلهم وهم آسر الفسف واحل الخفقان الأنفسهم إبليس مطأيا ضلال وجندأ بهم يصل على الناس وترجها ينطنق على ألسنتهم أستراقا لعقولكم ودخولا في عيونكم ونفسا في أسماعكم جعلكم مزَّم بِلله وموطئ قدمه ومَّأْخَب يده.

١٩٠.٤ فأتعبوا بما أصاب الأمم المستكبرين من قبلكم من بأس الله وصواته ووقائعه وملائكه وأتوبوا مثابي خدودهم ومصارع جنوبهم وأستعذوا بالله من لوحآ الكبار كما تسيرعون من طوارق الماء. فلو رخش الله في الكبيرة لأحد من عباده لرص في خاصية أنبيائه وليكن سبحة كربِّهم ليطوفه التكبير ورضي لهم التواضع فأصققوا بالأرض خدودهم وعفرُوا في التراب ووجههم وخضروا أجنحتهم للمؤمنين وكانوا أحقاءٌ مستضعفين. وقد أخسّرتهم الله بالمَّحْمَصّة وأيابهم بالجَفَّة وأمتحنهم بالمجاوز وعدضينهم بالمارك فلا تعذبوا الرضا والسخط بالماء والولد جهلاً بمواقع الفتنة والإختبار في مواضع الغناء والإفتار. فقد قال سبحة: «أحبسون أثناه مندهم به من مَّال وبنين تسارعهم في الخُيرات بل لا يشعرون» فإن الله سبيحانه يعتذ عباده المستكبرين

١ م، ي، ونسخة في ش، ه: كذا ن، ش، ه، ونسخة في ي: يّ. ٢٠ ن، م، ي، ه، ومصحتة في ش: كذا ن، ش، ه، وأصل ه، ونسخة في م: «التفاوت».
into the dark night of his ignorance and the abyss of his error, docile under his direction and submissive under his reins. In Satan’s grip, hearts resembled one another as generation followed generation. Pride ruled as breasts became straitened by its grip. Hark and beware! Beware of obeying these chieftains and elders, who have magnified themselves above their stature and aggrandized themselves beyond their lineage, who have attributed vile deeds to their Lord and challenged his actions, scorning his decree and impugning his favors. They are pillars of factionalism, columns of sedition, and swords of ancestor boasts from the Age of Ignorance. Be conscious of God. Do not repulse his favors by acting in a contrary manner or repel his generosity by your envy. Don’t obey false claimants whose muddy slime you have drunk instead of your pure water, whose diseases have infected your sound health, and whose wrong you have mixed in with your right. They are the foundations of vice, the constant companions of rebellion. Iblīs owns them—steeds of error and an army with which he assaults people. He has appointed them his interpreters. Speaking with their tongues, he weakens your minds, lends you his eyes, and whispers in your ears. In this manner, he targets you with his arrows, tramples you under his foot, and crushes you in his closed fist.

1.190.4 Learn lessons from what arrogant nations before you faced: God’s crushing blows, his sudden attacks, his shocking onslaughts, and his exemplary punishments. Take counsel from knowing that their cheeks are now stuck inside the earth and their torsos are struck onto the ground. Seek refuge in God from the pregnant dangers of pride, just as you seek refuge in him from the battering calamities of the age. If God had permitted any of his servants pride, he would have permitted it to his select prophets, but he disliked them to be proud and preferred them to be humble. They placed their cheeks on the earth before him and pressed their faces to the dirt. They lowered their wings for believers and were a group that was widely scorned as weak. He tested them with hunger, afflicted them with weariness, tried them with dangers, and ground them down with adversities. People, do not weigh God’s pleasure and displeasure in terms of wealth and offspring, without knowing what tests and trials inhere in positions of wealth or poverty! God has said, «Do they think we supply them with wealth and sons in order to increase their comforts? No indeed, they have no idea!»

1 Reference to Qurʾan, Aḥzāb 33:67.
2 Reference to Qurʾan, Ḥijr 15:88, Qaṣāṣ 28:4.
3 Qurʾan, Muʿminūn 23:55–56.
في أنفسهم بأولئك المستضعفين في أعينهم. ولقد دخل موسى بن عمران ومعه أخوه هارون عليه السلام على فرعون وعليهما مدارج الصعود وأيدهما العلوي فشرط له إن أسلم بقاء ملكه ودوام عزيزه فقال ألا تعجبون من هذين يشترطان لي دوام العز وبقاء الملك وهما يرون من حال الفقر والذل فنَّال أتى عليها أساورة من ذهب إعظامًا للذهب وجمعه وأحتقارًا للصوف ولربه ولو أراد الله سبحانه وتعالى أن يفتح لهم كنز الدُّهُن والمعادن العقيبة وتغاضر الجنان وأن يحشر معهم طير السماء ووحيت الأرضين لفعل ولو فعل لسقط البلاء وبطل الجزاء وأضحى الأمن واما وجب للقابلين أجور المبتلين ولا استحقاق المؤمنون ثواب المحسنين ولا زممت الأسماء معانيها. ولكن الله سبحانه جعل رسله أولي قوّة في عزائهم وضعفته فيما ترى الأعين من حالاتهم مع قناعة تمت تأمل القلوب والعقول حتى وخصاصة تمت الألباب والأسماع أذى. ولو كانت الأنباء أهل قوّة لا ترّيا وعزة أن تُضام ومليك تدعت نحوه أمناق الرجال وتشدّد إليه عقد الرحال كان ذلك أهون على الخلق في الاعتبار وأبعد له من الاستجبار ولآمنوا عن رهبة قاهرة لهم أو رغبة مائلة بهم وكانت النية مشتركة والحسنات مقتهسة. ولكن الله سبحانه أراد أن يكون الابتاع لرسله والتصديق بكتبه والخشع لوجهه والاستكانة لأمره والاستسلام لطاعته أمورًا له خصاقة لا يشوبها من غيرها شائبة وكما كانت البلوى والاختبار أعظم كانت المثوبة والجزاء أجز.

1.190.5 ألا ترون أن الله سبحانه أختار الأولين مِن لذين أتى عليه إلى الآخرين من هذا العالم بأحجار لا تضرب ولا تكسر ولا تنصب ولا تسبح باللسان بين يدي الجراح الذي جعله للناس قيامة. ثم وضعه بأمر يقبر الأرض حرجة وأقرت نبات الدنيا مدرا وأضيق بطن الأودية قطرا بين جبال خشنة ورمال ديئة وعيون وسيلة وفري منقطعة
and with him his brother Aaron, were admitted to Pharaoh wearing shifts of coarse wool and holding wooden staffs, and they offered him a guarantee—if he committed to God's will, his kingdom would last forever, and his might would persist. Pharaoh exclaimed, "Do you not wonder at these two? They promise me the continuation of my might and the perpetuation of my kingdom when, as you see, they are utterly poor and totally contemptible! How is it they are not adorned with bracelets of gold?" Pharaoh prized gold and the hoarding of it and mocked coarse wool and the wearing of it. If God, when he sent his prophets, had wished to open for them treasuries of gold, stores of bullion, and the granaries of the celestial garden, if he had wished to assemble in their legions the birds of the air and the beasts of the earth, he would have done so. And had he done so, the trial would have been nullified, recompense would have become invalid, and true reports would have dwindled. Those who accepted the prophets' message would not have deserved the reward of those who had been tested, believers would not have merited the reward of good deeds, and words would not have retained their meanings. But God sent his messengers strong in resolution, weak in terms of what eyes perceived. Their contentment filled hearts and eyes with riches, while their destitution filled eyes and ears with pain. If these prophets had possessed strength that could not be challenged, might that could not be diminished, and kingship toward which men's necks craned and saddles were fastened, these conditions would have relieved the weight of reflection for the people and broken their arrogance. People would have become believers either out of subjugation to fear or the pull of desire. Intentions would have been split and benefits would accordingly have been divided. But God willed that all pious acts—devotion to his messengers, acceptance of the truth of his books, self-effacement for his sake, humility before his command, and submission to him and obedience—all these things should be pure and for himself alone, untainted by any drop of insincerity. The greater the test and trial, the grander the reward and recompense.

1.190.5 Do you not see? Starting with Adam, God tested all who came before, up to the very last people in this world, with stones that neither harm nor benefit nor see nor hear, shaping them into his sacred house and designating it a place of worship for all humans. He placed this House in the most rugged, most rocky region of the earth, in the most barren place in the world, in the narrowest, steepest cleft of a valley, between rough mountains, tracts of porous sand, springs with slow-trickling water, and scattered habitations, where no hoofed animals—neither camels, nor mules, nor sheep—could feed or thrive. Then he commanded Adam and his children to turn their bodies toward it, making it the place to which they should return time after time to seek their journeys' bene-
لا يزكِّي بها خَفْفَ وَلَا حَافِر وَلَا ظَلَف. فَمَّا أَمَرْ أَمَرَاءَه وَوَلَدَه أَنْ يَنْتَوَ أَعْطاؤُهُمْ نَحْوَهُ.

فَقْصَأْ مَثَابةً لِمُتْنَجَّ أُسْفارِه وَغَايَةً لِمَلْقَى رَحَامِهِ تُهْيَ إِلَى ثَمَّالَ الْأَفَطْدَةَ مِنْ مَفَاوِرْ قِفْصٍ سَحْيَةٍ وَمُبَاهِي ٍفَجَحَ عِمْكَةَ وَجَزَأْرُ بَخَارَ مَنْقَطْعَةَ حَتَّى يَهْزَوْ مَنَاكِبُهُ ذُلْلَا يَهْلُوُنَّ لِلْحَوَّةَ وَيَرِمُّونَ عَلَى أُقَادِمِهِمْ شِعْثاً غَبْرًا لَهُ قَدْ نَبِدَتْ السَرْابَيْب وَرَأَيْوُهُمْ وَشَوَهُوُا إِبِعَافَةَ الشَعُورِ مَخَاسَنَ خَلْقِهِمْ أَبْلَاءَ عَظِيمًا وَإِمْتِحَانًا شَدِيدًا وَأَخْتَابَارًا مِيِّنًا وَهُقَيْصًا بِلِيْعًا.

جَعِلَ اللَّهُ سِبْبًا لِرَحْمَتِهِ وَوُسِئِلَةً إِلَى جَنَّتِهِ. وَلَوْ أَرَادَ سَبِيَّانَ أَنْ يَقْبَعَ بِهِ كَرَامَ وَمَشَاعِرَهُ النُّظَارَم بِجِنَّتَيْ أَشَابَ وَأَشَافُ وَسَلَوْرُ جُمُّ الأَشْجَارِ دَانِ الأُثْنَأَيْ مُقَطَّفُ البَيْنَ مُصْلِّ الْقَرْيَ بِبَنَةَ سِمَرَةَ وَوَرْضَةَ خَضْرَاءَ وَأَرْيَافَ مُحْدَقَةَ مَجَالِدَ مَعْدَقَةَ وَزَرْعَ نَاعَرَةَ وَطُرَقَ عَامَّرَةَ لُكَانَ كَقَدْ صَفَرَ قَدْرَ الْجُرَاءَ عَلَى حَسَبِ ضَعْفِ الْبَلَاء. وَلَوَ كَانَ الْآسَاسُ المُحْمُولَ عَلَيْهِ وَالْأَشْجَارِ الْمَرْفَوعَ بِهَا بِبَنَةَ زُرَّةَةَ خَضْرَاءَ وَيَاقَوَةَ حُمْرَاءَ وَنُورَ وَضْيَاءَ تَلْفَفَ ذُلْلَا مُضَارِعَةَ الْشَّكَّ فِي الْصَدْرِ وَلَبْوُضُ مُجَاهِدَةَ إِبْلِيسِ عَنِ الْقَلَوبِ وَلَفْتُ مُعَلِّجَ الْرِّيْبَ مِنَ النَّاسِ وَلَكِنَّ اللَّهُ يَخْتَبِعُ عَبْدَهَا بِنَاتِعِ العَشَادَاءِ وَيَتْبَغُّونَ بَلَوْانَ الْمَجَالِدَ وَيَتْبَغُّونَ بِضْرَوِتِ الْمْكَارِ إِخْرَاجًا لِلْتَكْرِي مَنْ قَلْوُبِهَا وَإِسْكَانًا لِلْتَذَّالِ فِي نَفْوُهُمْ وَلِيَجْعَلَ ذُلْلَا أَبَاوَا فَتْحَا إِلَى فُضْلِهَا وَأُسْبَابَا ذُلْلَا لَعَفُوُهَا. فَلَلَّهُ أَهْلُ الْجَنَّةِ وَآبَوَا وَخَمَائِلُ الْظلمِ وَوَسُوءَ عَاقِبَةِ الْكِبْرِ إِنْ جَلَّتُ مُصْبَدَةً إِبْلِيسِ العَظِيمِ وَمَكَّدَتِهِ الْكِبْرَىَّ الَّتِيَ تُسْأَرُ قَلْوُبُ الَّذِينَ مَسَأَرَ مَسَأَرَ الْقَبْضَةَ فَمَا تَكُدَّيْ أَبَا وَلَا تَشَوِّي أَحَدًا لَا عَالِمًا لِلْعَلَمِ وَلَا مُقَلًا فِي طَمْرُهَا.

وَعَنْ ذَلِكَ مَا حَرَسَ اللَّهُ عَبَادُهُ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ بِالصَلَوَاتِ وَالْزَكَوَاتِ وَجَهَادِهِ الصَّيْامِ فِي الْأَيَامِ الْمُفْرِوضَةِ تَسْكُنُنَّ لَأَطْرَافِهِمْ وَتَخَشَّعُنَّ لَأَبْصَارِهِمْ وَتَذْلِيَنَّ لِنَفْسِهِمْ وَتَخْفَيَنَّ لَقَلْوُبِهِمْ وَإِذْهَابًا لِلْفَيْلَاءِ عَنْهُمْ مَا في ذُلْلَا مِنْ تَغْيِرِ عَيْنِيٍّ الْوجُوهَ بِالْتَرَابِ تَوْأَّمَعًا وَإِلْصَاقِ كَرَائمِ الجَوَارِحِ بِالأَرْضِ تَصَاغَرًا وَخَلْقِ البُطُونِ لِمَلَتُونَ مِنَ الصِّيَامِ.
fit, and the final station where they should cast down their saddles. Sincere hearts rush toward it, coming from remote, waterless deserts, deep, hidden ravines, and isolated islands in the sea. They come to it with their bodies shaking in awe, declaring God’s oneness as they circumambulate and quicken their feet, disheveled and covered in dust, having cast off stitched clothing and tarnished the comeliness of their form by foregoing shaving or cutting their hair. This is truly a great trial, a harsh ordeal, a clear test—refinement by fire. God has made it the means to obtain his mercy and the path to reach his celestial garden. If he had placed his sacred house and sites of ceremonial rites among gardens and rivers and valleys and plains thick with trees and low-hanging fruits, densely packed with habitats, flourishing with sun-ripened wheat and bright green flowerbeds, with expansive pastures and well-watered plains, with freshly sprouted grain and well-worn paths, all this would have decreased the value of the reward, in keeping with the ease of the trial. Indeed, if the pillars that support the sacred house and the slabs that raise it had been made from green emerald and red ruby, from light and incandescence, this would have hindered doubt from entering into breasts, prevented Satan’s attacks on hearts, and blocked uncertainty’s waves from crashing down on people. No, indeed! God tests his servants with many kinds of hardship, urges them to worship him through many types of privation, and afflicts them with many different sufferings, in order to remove pride from their hearts and instill humility in their souls. These trials act as doors that open wide toward his generosity, as docile mounts that carry their riders toward his forgiveness. Fear God, people, fear God, and beware the imminent penalties of treachery, the unwholesome end of oppression, and the terrible outcome of pride! Pride is Iblis’s greatest snare and his principal scheme. He infiltrates men’s hearts with its deadly poison. It is never ineffectual, and it misses no one—not the learned man with his knowledge, nor the beggar with his rags.

1.190.6 God has protected his believing servants from pride by prescribing the ritual prayer, the alms-levy, and the hardship of obligatory fasting on certain days, in order to quieten their limbs, lower their eyes, humble their souls, chasten their hearts, and repel their conceit. These actions prompt them to smear their precious faces with dust in self-effacement, prostrate their noble limbs upon the earth in humility, and join belly to back through fasting in

---

1 Reference to Qur’an, Baqarah 2:125.
تذللًا مع ما في الزكاة من صرف ثروات الأرض وغير ذلك إلى أهل المسكنة والفقر.

ианظرنا إلى ما في هذه الأفعال من قَمَعَ نوَاجم الفخر وقَدْ عَطِبَ التَّوَالع الكبير.

والد نظرت فما وجدت أحدًا من العالمين يتِلَقِّبُ لشيء من الأشياء إلا
عن عَلَّةّ تحتمل تَمْوَيه الجهلاء أو حِجَّةٌ تَلْطِب بعقول السفهاء غيرم فَإِنْ كُنَّ تَتعصّبون لأمر
لا يعرف له سبب ولا مَسَّ يد عَلَّةٌ: أما إِبْليس فَتعصّب على آدم لأصله وطعن
عليه في خلقته فقال أن تاري وأنت طيب وَأَمَا الْأَعْيَنِيَّةُ مَنْ تَرَفَّعَوا
لأتأت مواقع النعم فقالوا تَحْنُ أَكْثَرُ أَمْوَالًا وأُولَادًا وَما تَحْنُ مَعْذِبِيْنَ. فإن كان لا
يَدْ من العصبة فَليكن تعصّبكم لِمَكْرَمُ الأَخْلاص وَما مُحَمَّدُ الأَفَعاَل وَما هُمُ الأُمُور التي
تَفَاعَل فِي جَيْدٍ وَالجَيْدِ مِن بُيُوتِ العرب وَيَعِيَّساب القبائل بالأخلاص الرائحة
والآحل العظيمة والأخطار الجميلة والأثار المحمودة فتعصّبوا خِلالَ الحُدُم من الحفظ
للجوار والوفاء بالذَّيْمَام وِالطَّاعَة لِلِّبرِ وَالمعصية لِلْكَبْرَ وَالآخذ بالفَضْلَ وَالْكِفْفَ عَن الْبِغَي
والإِعْظَام لِتَقُلُّ وَالانصَاف لِلثَّقَالِ وَالكَظَّم لِلْفِيغْ وَأَجِنَابِ الفَنْسَادِ فِي الأُرْضِ.

وأَحَدَّوا ما نُزِلَ بالآمم قبلكم من المَثَالِ بسوء الأفعال وذميم الأعمال
فَتَذَكَّرُوا في الخير والشَّر أَحْوَالَهُم وأَحَدَّوا أن تَكُونُوا أمثالهم فإِذَا تَفَكَّرُتم في تفَّاوت
حَالِيَّهُم فَأَلْزَمُوا كلّ أَمْر لَوْمَت العَزّة بِهِ حَالَم وَزَاحَت الأُعْدَاء لَعَنِهِم وَمَدَّت العَافِية
فيهُم وَأَنْتَقَدت النَّعمَة لَم نَعْلَم لَوْ صُلِّب اَلْكَرَّة عليه حَيْبِهِم من الاِجْتِنَاب لِلفرقة
واللَّزوم لِلأُلِفَة وَالْتَحَاصَّي عَلَيْهِم وَالْتَوَاصِي بِهِ. وَأَجْتَنَبُوا كلّ أَمُر كَسَرٍ فِيْرُبْهُم وأُوْهَن
مُنْتَهِم من تضاَغَع القلوب وَتَشَامُح الأَصْدَور وَتَدْبُر النَّفْوس وَتَخاذَل الأُيُّدِ.

وَتَدَّيَّرُوا أَحْوَالِ المَاضِيْن مِن الْمُؤْمِنِين بَلْ كُلّم قَبْلُهُم كَيْفَ كَانُوا فِي حَالِ التَّحِيْص
والبَلَاءُ أَلَّم يَكُونُوا أَقْلَ الْخَلَائِق أَعْيَاً وَأَجَهِد الْعَبَاذ بَلَاء وأَضِيَّ أَهْلَ الْذِّنَيْن حَالًا

١١٩٠.٨ وأَحَدَّوا ما نُزِلَ بالآمم قبلكم من المُثَالِ بسوء الأفعال وذميم الأعمال
فَتَذَكَّرُوا في الخير والشَّر أَحْوَالَهُم وأَحَدَّوا أن تكونوا أمثالهم فإِذَا تَفَكَّرُتم في تفَّاوت
حَالِيَّهُم فَأَلْزَمُوا كلّ أَمْر لَوْمَت العَزّة بِهِ حَالَم وَزَاحَت الأُعْدَاء لَعَنِهِم وَمَدَّت العَافِية
فيهُم وَأَنْتَقَدت النَّعمَة لَم نَعْلَم لَوْ صُلِّب اَلْكَرَّة عليه حَيْبِهِم من الاِجْتِنَاب لِلفرقة
واللَّزوم لِلأُلِفَة وَالْتَحَاصَّي عَلَيْهِم وَالْتَوَاصِي بِهِ. وَأَجْتَنَبُوا كلّ أَمُر كَسَرٍ فِيْرُبْهُم وأُوْهَن
مُنْتَهِم من تضاَغَع القلوب وَتَشَامُح الأَصْدَور وَتَدْبُر النَّفْوس وَتَخاذَل الأُيُّدِ.

١١٩٠.٩ وَتَدَّيَّرُوا أَحْوَالِ المَاضِيْن مِن الْمُؤْمِنِين بَلْ كُلّم قَبْلُهُم كَيْفَ كَانُوا فِي حَالِ التَّحِيْص
والبَلَاءُ أَلَّم يَكُونُوا أَقْلَ الْخَلَائِق أَعْيَاً وَأَجَهِد الْعَبَاذ بَلَاء وأَضِيَّ أَهْلَ الْذِّنَيْن حَالًا
submission. In addition, the alms-levy procures the fruits of the earth and other commodities for the poor and destitute. See how these actions blast people’s nascent shoots of self-importance and wither their budding sprouts of pride!

1.190.7 I looked around and found no one anywhere—other than you—who displays zealotry without a reason, any reason, that could possibly prompt the ignorant to confusion, or an argument, any argument, that could potentially appeal to the minds of the foolish. You show prejudice toward a matter whose reason is unknown, that is untouched by any hand of purpose. Iblīs felt himself superior to Adam because of his origin, and he defamed Adam’s mode of creation when he said, “My origin is fire, while yours is clay.” Scions of wealthy nations who were given enormous riches felt themselves superior because they had become used to luxury, and they said, «We have more wealth and more children; we shall never have to endure suffering.»¹ If you must feel superior, then save your pride for the noble qualities, praiseworthy acts, and beautiful deeds that the honorable and courageous Arabian clans and tribal chieftains strived for through their cultivation of desirable traits, great minds, kingly thoughts, and praiseworthy deeds.² Their zeal was for traits that earn praise—protection of neighbors, fulfillment of pledges, obeying good, desisting from pride, embrace of virtue, refraining from treachery, deeming killing to be a grave affair, dispensing of justice to all, suppression of anger, and abstinence from wreaking havoc on earth.

1.190.8 Beware of exemplary punishments that befell earlier nations because of their evil acts and hateful deeds. Recall their conditions, the good and then the bad, and beware of becoming like them. Think about the change in their states. Hold fast to everything that gave them might, scattered their enemies, spread wellbeing among them, attracted beneficence to them, and bolstered the bonds of generosity—avoidance of division, holding fast to friendship, promoting harmony, and counselling one another to unite. Refrain from everything that broke their spine and weakened their strength—malice in the heart, rancor in the breast, turning one’s back, and withholding one’s hand.

1.190.9 Reflect on the condition of past believers. Think about how they lived through states of trial and testing. Were they not the most burdened of creatures, the most tested of God’s servants, the most straitened among the world’s

---

¹ Qurʾan, Sabaʾ 34:35.
أَتْخِذُوْنَهُمُ الرَّفْعَةَ عِبَادًا فَسَامَوْهُمُ سُوءٌ الْعَذَابِ وَجَرَّوْهُمْ جُرَّ العَذَابِ فَلَمْ تَبْرَحَ الحَالَّةُ مِنْهُمْ فِي ذَلِلِّ الْحَلَاكَةِ وَقَهَرَ الْغَلْبَةِ لَا يَجُودُ حِيْلَةٌ فِي أَمْتَنَّهُ وَلَا سَبِيلًا إِلَى دَفَاعٍ حَتَّى إِذَا رَأَى الَّذِي جَدِّ الصِّبَارِ مِنْهُمْ عَلَى الْأَذَى فِي مَهْبِتِهِ وَالْحَافِزَةِ مِنَ الْكِبْرَى فَجَعِلَ لَهُمْ مِنْ مَضْبَأِ البَلَاءِ فَرْجًا فَأَبْدَلَهُمُّ الْعَزِّ مَكَانَ الْذَّلِّ وَالأَمْنِ مَكَانَ الْخَفُوفِ فَصَارَوْا مَلُوكًا حَكَّامًا وَأَقْلَمَا عَالِمَا وَبَلَغَتْ الْكَرَامَةُ مِنْ اللَّهِ مَا لَمْ تَذَهِّبَ الْآمَلُ إِلَيْهِمْ فَأَفْتَنُوْنَاهُمْ كَيْفَ كَانُواْ حَيْثًَ كَانُواْ كَانَا حَيْثًَ كَانُواْ مَجْمَعَةً وَالْأَهْوَاءِ مُؤُتْلِفَةٌ وَالقَلْوُبُ مَعْتَدِلَةٌ وَالْأَيْدِيُّ مَتَرَدَّدَةٌ وَالسِّيَوَاتُ مَتَنَّاصِرَةٌ وَالبَصَائِرُ نَافِذَةٌ وَالعَزَّازِمُ وَاحِدَةٌ لَّمْ يَكُونَا أَرَبَّاهَا فِي أَقْطَارِ الأرْضِينَ وَمَلُوكًا عَلَى رِقَابِ الْعَالَمِينَ فَأَفْتَنُوْنَاهُمْ إِلَيْهِمْ فِي أَحَدٍ أَمْوَرِهِمْ حَينَ وَقَعَتْ الْفَرْقَةُ وَشَتَّتَتْ الأَلْفَةُ وَخَلَفَتْ الأَذِلَّةُ وَأَخَلَفَتْ الدِّيْنَةَ وَتَشَعَّبَ نَفْقَتَهَا وَتَفَرَّقَتْ مَتَحَارِبَيْنِ ؛ فَخَلَعَ اللَّهُ عَنْهُمْ لِبَاسَ كَرَامَتِهِ وَسَلَبَهُمْ غَضَارَةَ نَعْمَتِهِ وَبَقَىْ قَصَصُ أَخْبَارِهِمْ فِي مَعْرِيْبٍ مَعْتَغِبِينَ مَنْكَمُ.

190.10 فَأَعْتَبِرُوا بِخَالِدٍ وَلَدٍ إِسْمَاعِيْلٍ وَبِنِي إِسْرَائِيلٍ عَلِيْهِمْ الْسَلَامُ فَأَشْدَدُّ أَعْتَدَلَ الْأَحْوَالِ وَأَغْرَبَ أَشْبَاهُ الْأَمْثَالِ. تَأَمَّلُوا أَمْرَهُمْ فِي حَالِ تَشَتَّتِهِمْ وَتَفْرَقُهُمْ لِيُذْكِرُوا الْأَكْثَرَةَ وَالْقِبَارَةَ أَرَبَّاهَا لَهُمْ يَحْتَزَّوْنَهُمْ عَنْ رَّيْفِ الْأَقْفَاقِ وَيُجِرُّ الْعَرَاقِ وَخَضْرَةَ الْبَنِينَ إِلَى مَنَايِبِ الشَّيْخِ وَمَهْابِي الْرِّيْحِ وَنَبَدَ الْمَعَاشِ قَتَّرَوْهُمْ عَالَةً مَسَاكِنَ تَخْوَانُ دَبْرُ وَوَرَبَّ أَذْلَّ الْأَبْنَاءَ دَارًا وَأَجْعَلُهُمْ قَرَاءًا لَا يَأْوُونَ إِلَى جَنَاحِ دَوْعَةٍ يَعْتَصِمُونَ بِهَا وَلَا إِلَى ظُلُّ أَلْفَةٍ يَعْتَقِدُونَ عَلَى عَرْسِهَا. فَالْأَحْوَالِ مَضْطَرَّبَةٌ وَالأَيْدِيَ مُعْتِبَةٌ وَالْكَثْرَةُ مَتَفَرَّقَةٌ فِي بِلَاءٍ أَوْلُ وَأَطْبَاقٌ جَهَّلٌ مِنْ بَنَاتِ مَؤْوَدَةٍ وَأَصْنَامٍ مُعْبُودَةٍ وَأَرْحَامٍ مُقْطَعَةٌ وَغَارَاتِ مِسْنُونَةٍ. فَأَفْتَنُوْنَاهُمْ إِلَى مَوْقِعٍ نَعمَ اللَّهِ عَلَيْهِمْ حَينَ بَعُثَ إِلَيْهِمْ رَسُولًا فَعَفَّدَ نَفْتَهَ بِمَلَّمَةٍ تَطَسَّعَتِهِ وَجَعَلَ عَلَى دَعْوَاهُ أَلْفَتْهُمْ كَيْفَ نَشْتَرِ النَّعْمَةَ عَلَيْهِمْ جَنَاحَ كَرَامَتِهِ وَأَسْلَتَ لَهُمْ

م، وَمَصَّحَّحَةٌ فِي هَذَا: دَبْرُ وَاوِتْرِ. يَ: دَبْرُ وَاوِتْرِ.
people? Various pharaohs enslaved them, inflicted on them the vilest of tortures, and forced them to drink from the bitterest of cups. Their condition continued thus in servile desperation and forceful subjugation with no means to repel and no way to defend, until God, seeing them endure suffering, out of their love for him, seeing them accept hardship, out of their fear of him, showed them a way out of the narrow straits of trial, giving them might in exchange for humiliation, security instead of fear. They became kings who ruled and leaders with great fame. They received gifts from God beyond their furthest hopes. Think! What was their state when factions were united, desires were in concert, hearts were balanced, hands were used to help, swords were drawn in assistance, perceptions were acute, and resolutions were one? Did they not become lords of all the realms, kings ruling over the necks of all peoples of the world? Again, think! How did their state change near the end, when division befell them, friendships shattered, words and hearts moved apart, when they split into opposing factions and separated into warring groups? God stripped them of his enveloping generosity and plundered them of his fresh bounty. Yes, and he ensured that their tales stayed alive among you as a lesson for all who would heed.

1.190.10 Take a lesson from the condition of the sons of Ishmael, the children of Isaac, and the children of Israel. How strongly their states harmonize, how closely their examples match! Think of their state during their time of division and disunity. Those were the nights in which the kings of Persia and the emperors of Byzantium were their overlords. They drove them out of their pasture-lands from the river valleys of Iraq and the world’s abundance of green herbage into tracts where bitter wormwood grew, where hot winds blew, and life was harsh. They left them poor and abject, camel-herders tending to their beasts’ sores and harvesting their wool. They lived as the most wretched of nations, with the least fertile fields, with no mission under whose wing they could seek shelter, no column of unity on whose strength they could depend. Their situation was volatile, their hands discordant, their numbers scattered. They were trapped in a hard trial and crushed under rocks of ignorance: they buried baby girls alive,\(^1\) worshipped idols, cut ties of kinship, and raided one another. Observe the abundance of God’s blessings on them. He sent them a messenger, secured their obedience through his religion, and gathered their company within his mission. See how bounty spread the wings of her generosity over

---

\(^1\) Reference to Qur’an, Takwīr 81:8. On female infanticide in pre-Islamic Arabia, see H 13:174–177; F 362–364; B 766–768.
جداول تعبيها Challenge and Translation 978-0-04-68260-3

بنماً نبم كركء: كدباً، وأصل ش: (بسطله).
them and the wellsprings of her delights flowed. See how the new religion gathered
them within the gifts of its grace. They were immersed in its bounty, joyful
in the fresh greenness of its way of life. Their affairs reposed comfortably in
the shade of powerful authority, events brought them under the aegis of victor-
ious might, and affairs looked kindly upon them, as they lived in ease in
the protection of an established empire. They became rulers of the world and
kings over the far reaches of the earth, controlling the affairs of those who had
controlled theirs, and issuing commands to those who had commanded them.
〈Their spear became hard, their rock uncrushable.〉

1.190.11 Hark! Your hands have loosed the rope of allegiance and breached
God's fortress by indulging in judgments from the Age of Ignorance. This, when
God has blessed this congregation by binding them with bonds of affection, so
they can move in its shade and take refuge in its shelter! No one can fathom
the value of this favor; it exceeds any price and is grander than any eminence.
Know this: After your migration to Muḥammad's city, you have reverted to liv-
ing as rough Bedouins, after loyal unison, you have again split into factions.
You own nothing of Islam except its name, you recognize nothing of belief
except its ritual. You say, “Flames rather than shame!” as though you wished
to knock Islam over on its face, rending its holiness, and breaking the covenant
by which God gave you a sanctuary upon his earth and a source of safety among
the earth’s people. If you seek any other refuge, unbelievers will wage war
against you, and neither Gabriel nor Michael, neither Immigrants nor Allies,
will come to your aid. You will see only the clashing of swords until God rules
between you once and for all. You have witnessed examples of God's might, of
his blows, battle-days, and onslaughts. Do not ignore his chastisement, under-
estimate his assault, and undervalue his force, do not think his retribution will
be slow in coming! God damned the generation just before you because they
ceased to command good and forbid evil. He damned the immature because
they mounted the steeds of sin and the mature because they ceased to forbid.

---

1 Arabic idioms. Lit. 〈Their spear could never be squeezed (lā tughmaz), and their rock could
never be crushed (lā tuqraʿ)〉. For references in poetry re "squeezing" (ghamz) of a spear, see
Ibn Manẓūr, Lisān, s.v. "Gh-M-Z." 〈Their rock cannot be crushed〉 (lā tuqraʿu lahum ṣafāh) is
attributed to the Prophet in Nuwayrī, Nihāyah, s.v. "Ṣ-F-W."

2 Re the migration (hijrah), I have added the words “to Muḥammad's city” for clarity. Re
Bedouins (aʿrāb), the line signifies that “after having accepted the refinements of Islam, you
have reverted to the factional ways of pre-Islamic Arabians.” B 768; Ḥ 13:18. Bedouins are chast-
tised for hypocrisy in the Qur’an, Tawbah 9:97, 99.

3 Gabriel and Michael are two archangels. Immigrants (Muhājirūn) are those who migrated to
Muḥammad in Medina, and Allies (Anṣār) are the Medinans who supported him.
الإسلام وعوّالتم حدوده وأبدم أحكامه. ألا وقد أمرنٍ الله بقتال أهل البغي والنكت والفساد في الأرض فأما الناكثون فقد قاتلتهم وأما القاطعون فقد جاهمت وأما المارقة فقد دوّخت وأما شيطان الرّذئة فقد كتَّبتِه بسعة سمعتٍ لها وَجَهْة قلبه ورَجْهَ صدره وَبقيَ نقيبةً من أهل البغي وَأَنَّ أَذْن الله في الكَرَة عليهم لأَدِين مِنْهُمْ إِلاَّ مَا يَتُّشَّدَّرِ في أَطْراف الأرض تُشَّدَّرَا ١.٠٨٩١. ١.٥ أَنْ أَنَّا وَضَعْتُ بِكلِّ الْأَرْضِ الْعَرْبِ وَكَسَرْت نَواَجِم قَرْونٍ رَبِيعَةٍ وَمَضْرٍ وَقَدْ عَلِّمْتُ مَوْعِدٍ من رَسُولِ اللَّه صَلَّى اللَّه عَلَيْهِ وَآَلَهَة بِلِفَرَايَة الْقُرْبَى المَنْزِلَة الْخَصِيصَة. وَضَعْنِي فِي حَجْرَهْ وَأَنَا وَلَدٍ يَضْمَنِي إِلَى صِدْرِه وَيَكْنَفِي فِرَاشَه وَيَمْسَنِي جُسْدِه وَيُشَّمَّنِي عَرَفَهُ وَكَانِ يَضْمَنُ الْشَّيْءَ مِنْ لِبْقَمْنِهِ وَمَا وَجَدَ لِي كِتَابَةٌ فِي قُوَّل وَلَقَدْ قَرَنْتُ اللَّه بِصَلَّى اللَّه عَلَيْهِ وَآَلَهَة فِينَ لَدْنَ كَانَ فَظِيْمًا أَعْظَمُ مَلِكٍ مِنْ مِلَاكَتِهِ يَلْكِدُه بِطَرِيقِ المُكَرَّم وَمَهْسِنِ أَخْلاَقِ الْعَالَم لِيْه وَنَهْارَه وَلَقَدْ كَتَبَ أَتِبَاعُ الفَتِيل أَذْرَأٌ أَمَّهُ يَرْفَعُ لِي فِي كُلِّ يَوْمٍ عَلِمًا مِنْ أَخْلاَقِهِ وَيَأْمُرِي بِالْقَتْدِ بِهِ وَلَقَدْ كَانَ يَجَاوِرُهُ فِي كُلِّ سَنَةٍ يَجَوَّرُهُ
Hark! You have cut off Islam's restrictions, stripped off its constraints, and killed off its commands. Hark! God has commanded me to fight those who commit treachery, break their pledge, and cause mayhem on earth: I have fought those who broke their pledge, battled those who acted wrongfully, and subdued those who left the faith.\textsuperscript{1} The Satan of the Stony Hollow was taken out by a thunderbolt that made his heart scream and his breast quake.\textsuperscript{2} A small number of rebels remain: If God permits another attack, I shall most certainly prevail, except for the handful that escape, who will scatter to the corners of the realm.

\textit{1.190.12} It was I who felled the trunk of the Arabs and crushed the horns of Rabī‘ah and Muḍar.\textsuperscript{3} Besides, you all know my relationship with God's Messenger, our close kinship and special intimacy.\textsuperscript{4} He took me to his bosom as a newborn, clasping me to his breast and covering me with his bedspread, his body touching mine and I inhaling his fragrance; he would chew a piece of food to soften it then place it in my mouth. He never found falseness in my words or foulness in my actions. Ever since the Messenger's own infancy, God had placed his greatest angel to guide him day and night on the path of virtue and the most beautiful traits. I would follow him as a camel calf follows its mother, and each day he would raise in front of me a banner displaying his virtuous character and command me to emulate. Every year he would retreat to Mount Ḥirā‘ for prayer, where no one but I saw him. In those days, not one home housed any supporters

\begin{itemize}
\item The pledge-breakers (\textit{nākithūn}) are said to be ‘Alī's opponents at the Battle of the Camel, the wrongdoers (\textit{qāsiṭūn}) are Mu‘āwiyah and his Syrian supporters, and those who left the faith (\textit{māriqūn}) are the Kharijites, the three groups that ‘Alī fought in the Battles of the Camel, Ṣiffīn, and Nahrawān. Mūḥammad's hadith, whose terminology ‘Alī echoes in his oration, is reported as, ⟨You [O ‘Alī] will battle the pledge-breakers, the wrongdoers, and the faith-leavers after me⟩. H 13:83–84; B 771–772; F 364–365.
\item The Satan of the Stony Hollow (\textit{shayṭān al-rad'hah}) is a man known as Dhū al-Thudayyah, “The Man with the Breast,” called thus because of a mass of flesh on his shoulder, a Kharijite whose death at Nahrawān ‘Alī said the Prophet had told him would signal his own imminent martyrdom. ‘Alī personally sought out Dhū al-Thudayyah's corpse among the dead at Nahrawān, and when he saw it, he exclaimed, “God is great! I have never lied, nor has [the Prophet] lied to me.” H 13:83–84; B 771–772; F 364–365.
\item Refers to ‘Alī’s slaying of famous pre-Islamic Arabian warriors in single combat during the early Muslims' battles, when he was only around twenty years of age, thereby playing a major role in Islam's military and political ascendancy. Muḍar is the eponymous ancestor of the Prophet’s own tribe of Meccan Quraysh, who formed the largest bloc of his enemies, and ‘Alī slew several of their leaders in the Muslims’ early battles. The Rabī‘ah tribe was divided among ‘Alī and his opponents during the Battles of the Camel and Ṣiffīn, and ‘Alī slew several of their leaders who fought against him then. B 772; H 13:98.
\item Mūḥammad had taken the infant ‘Alī as his ward, and ‘Alī grew up in Mūḥammad's care. Details in H 13:98–212; B 772–776.
\end{itemize}
فأراه ولا يراه غيري ولم يجمع بيت واحد يؤمن في الإسلام غير رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم وحيدًا وخديجة وأناشيدهما أرى نور الوعي والرسالة وأشح ريح البيئة. ولقد سمعت رنة الشيطان حين نزل الوعي عليه صلى الله عليه وسلم فقلت يا رسول الله ما هذه الرنة فقال هذا الشيطان قد أبيث من عبادته إنك تسمع ما أسمع وترى ما أرى إلا إنك لست بنيّ وإنك لوزير ولا إله لعل خير.

ولقد كنت معي صلى الله عليه وسلم لما أناه المال من قريش فقالوا له يا محمد إنك قد أدعت عظيمًا لم يدعهم آباؤك ولا أحد من بنيك ونحن نسألك أمرًا إن أجبتنا إليه وأزيدهم علمنا أنك نبي ورسول وإن لم تفعل علمنا أنك ساحر كذا فقالنا صلّ الله عليه وما تسألون قالوا تدعو لنا هذه الشجرة حتى ينبطل بعروفها وتتفن بين يديك فقال صلى الله عليه وسلم إن الله تعالى كُل شیء قدری فإن فعل الله ذلك لكم أنتمون وتشهدون بالحق قالوا نعم قال فإنك سأريك ما تطلبتون وإن لا أعلم أنك لا تفيتون إلى خير وأن فيكم من يطَرُح في القلب ومن يحَزَب الأحزاب ثم قال يا أيتها الشجرة إن كنت تؤمنين بالله واليوم الآخر وتعلمن أنك رسول الله فأتقيعي بعروفك حتى تتفن بين يدّيّ بإذن الله فإن الذي بعثت بالحق لأنقلعت بعروفها وجاءت ولما دوي شديد ووصف كتصف أجنة الطير حتى وقفت بين يدي رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله ورسوله وقلت ببعضها الأعلى على رسول الله وبعض أغنيائها على منكب ويكن عن يمينه عليه السلام فلما نظر القوم إلى ذلك قالوا علواً وأستكبارًا فرها فليأتك نصفها
of Islam, it was just the Messenger and Khadijah, and I was the third. Throughout, I saw the light of revelation and messengerhood, and inhaled the fragrance of prophecy. I heard Satan’s cry when revelation descended on the Messenger, and when I asked, “What is this cry?” he answered me, ‘This is Satan, who now despairs of being worshipped. You see what I see and hear what I hear, ‘Ali, though you are not a prophet, but my vizier, and on the path of virtue.’

I was with the Messenger when a group of the Quraysh came to him and said, “Muḥammad, you have made a grand claim, one that none of your forebears or any of your house has ever made. We want to ask you to do something: If you are able to do it, if you are able to show it to us, we will be convinced that you are indeed a prophet and a messenger, but if you don’t, then we will know that you are a magician and a liar.” The Messenger responded, “What do you seek?” They answered, “Ask this tree to pull up its roots and come forward to stand before you.” The Messenger exclaimed, “‘Truly, God is powerful over all things.’” If God does this for you, will you believe and testify to the truth?” They replied with one voice, “Yes, we will.” The Messenger said to them, “All right, I will show you what you demand, although I know that you will not turn to virtue. I know that there are among you men who will be cast into the Well, and others who will convene the fated Confederacy.” Then he intoned, “O tree, if you believe in God and the last day, if you know that I am God’s messenger, then, with God’s permission, pull up your roots and come stand in front of me!” I swear by the one who sent Muḥammad with the truth that the tree pulled up its roots and came forward with a loud rumble and a fluttering like the fluttering of birds’ wings. Boughs rustling, it came to stand before the Messenger and let its highest branches fall over him. Some branches brushed my shoulders—I was standing to his right. When the men from Quraysh saw this, they demanded with pride and arrogance, “Now command half of it to come to you, while the other half stays in its place.” The Messenger commanded the tree to do this. Half of it came forward most wondrously and with an even louder...
ويبقى نصيها فأمرها بذلك فأقبل إليه نصيها كأجيب إقبال وأشدته دوياً فكادت تلتئم رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم فقلوا كفرًا وعُنوا، فر هذا النصف فليرجع إلى نصها كما كان فأمره عليه السلام فرجع فقالت أنا إذا الله يشاء، إذن كلما يكمن بك يا رسول الله، وأول من آمن بأن الشجرة فعلت ما فعلت بأمر الله تصديقًا لبوتك، وإجلاً لكلمتكم فقال القوم كلهم بل ساحر كذب السحرة خُفَيفًا فيه وهل يصدقونك في أمرك إلا مثل هذا يعنوناه. وإنني لم أقوم لا أخذهم في الله روحًا لأهم سيماهم سيما الصديقين، وكلاهم كلاهم الأُبرار عمّار الليل ومنير النهار متمسكون بجلب القرآن يحيون سنن الله وسنن رسوله لا يستكبرون ولا يغلون ولا يتفدون قلوبهم في الجلن، وأجسادهم في العمل.

ومن خطبه له عليه السلام. ورأى أن صاحبًا له يقال له همَّام كان رجلاً عابداً فقال له يا أمير المؤمنين صف في المتين كأني أنظر إليهم فتناقل عن جوابه ثم قال يا همَّام ألم أن نمضى الله وأحس فر إن الله مع الذين أنتموا والذين هم محسونون، فلم يقطع همَّام بذلك القول حتى عزم عليه قال إعف عنه وأتي عليه وصل على النبي صلى الله عليه وسلم يا ربي صلى الله عليه وألم ت قال أمًا بعد. فإن الله سباحته خلاق الخلق حين خلقهم غنيًا عن طاعتهن آمنًا بما تعبثوه لأنه لا تضره معصية من عصاه ولا تتفعه طاعة من أطاعته. فقسم بينه معايشهم ووضعهم من الدنيا مواضيعهم.

rumble, and it almost wrapped itself around the Messenger. The group then cried out in rejection and insolence, “Command this half to go back to its other half as it was.” The Messenger did so, and the tree went back. I spontaneously exclaimed, “⟨There is no god but God!⟩ I am the first to profess belief in you, O Messenger of God, the first to profess belief that the tree did what it did by God’s command to prove the truth of your prophethood, the first to offer obedi-
sance to your word!” That group, however, every one of them, sneered, “No, you are a magician and a liar! Your magic is quite something, and you are good at it. Only someone like this nobody—meaning me—would believe you to be a prophet.” People, I belong to a group who care not if they are criticized when their actions are for the sake of God! Our mark is the mark of those who uphold the truth of God’s word, our speech is the speech of the virtuous. We inhabit the night with prayer, we are beacons of light during the day. We hold fast to the Qur’ān, keeping alive God’s ways and the practices of his Messenger. We never behave with arrogance, never conduct ourselves with conceit, never cheat, are never corrupt. Our hearts are in paradise, while our bodies are occupied here with doing good.

1.191 From an oration by ‘Alī: It is reported that one of ‘Alī’s companions, a man named Hammām, who was devoted to worship, said to him, “Commander of the Faithful, describe to me the pious, such that I see them before my eyes!” ‘Alī hesitated, then answered, “Hammām, be pious and do good, for «God is with those who are pious and do good.»” Hammām was not satisfied with this brief answer and persisted. The narrator continues that ‘Alī then thanked God, praised him, invoked blessings on the Prophet, and delivered the following oration:

When God created people, he created them not needing their obedience, and untouched by their disobedience. The disobedience of those who disobey does not harm him, and the obedience of those who obey does not benefit him. He distributed sustenance among them and gave them various stations in this life.
فالابتعاد عنها هم أهل الفضائل منطقهم الصواب وملبسهم الاقتصاد ومشجٍهم
التواضع غصّنّ أوصِههم عمّا حرم الله عليهم ووقف أسماءهم على العلم النافع لهم، وزلت
أنفسهم منهم في البلاك كالذي نزلت في الرخاء لولا الأجل الذي كتب الله لهم لم
تستقر أرواحهم في أحسادهم طرفة عين شوقًا إلى الثواب وخوفًا من العقاب عظم
الحالف في أنفسهم فصغر ما دونه في أعينهم. فهم والجنة كُن قد رآها فهم فيها منعمون
وهم والنار كن قد رآها فهم فيها معدّون قلوبهم محزونة وشوارهم أمومة وأحسادهم
خفيفة وحاجتهم خفيفة وأنفسهم عفيفها صبروا أيامًا قصيرة أعقبتهم راحة طويلة تجارة
مربيئة يسرّهما لهم ربيع أرادتهم الدنيا ولم يريدوها وأسَّرتهم فغدا أنفسهم منها.
أما الليل فصاحب أقدامهم تالون لأجزاء القرآن ينقلوها ترتيبًا يحزنون به أنفسهم
ويستيرون به دواء دائم فإنّا مرّوا بآية فيها تشريع ركّنوا إليها طمعًا وتطلّعت نفوسهم
إليها شوقًا وظنوا أنها نصب أعيبهم وإذا مرّوا بآية فيها تخفيف أُصغوا إليها مسامع قلوبهم
وظنوا أن زفير جهنم وشئيغمها في أصول آدائمهم فهم حانون على أوساطهم مفترشون
لجباههم وأكفّهم وركبهم وأطراف أقدامهم يتطلون إلى الله في فكاك رقابهم. وأما النهار
فلبماء علماء أهالي أُتقن، قد ترّاهم الخوفي بري الديدان ينظر إلى الناظر فيحسهم مرضا
و وما بالقوم من مرض ويقول قد خوطبو ولقد خالطهم أمر عظيم لا يرضون من أعمالهم
التيقّيل ولا يستبكيون الكثير فيهم لأنفسهم متمسكون ومن أعمالهم مشققون إذا زكّي أحد
منهم خاف ما يقال له فيقول أنا أعلم بنفسي من غيري وربّي أعلم مني بنفسي اللهم لا
توقفني بما يقولون وأجعلني أفضل مما يظنون وأغفر لي ما لا أعلمون
فإن علاءمة أحدهم أنك ترى له قوة في دين وحزاً في لين وإيمانًا في بعين وحرًا في
علم وعلماً في حمل وقصادة في غني وخشوعًا في عبادة وجمالًا في فاقة وصبراً في شدّة وطلباً
The pious in this world are people of virtue. Their speech is rational, their garments simple, and their gait embodies humility. They lower their eyes, avoiding what God has forbidden them to see, and dedicate their ears to hearing words of wisdom that bring them benefit. Their hearts are at peace, both in times of tribulation, and in times of prosperity. If not for the lifespans decreed for them by God, their souls would not tarry in their bodies for the blink of an eye but, yearning for God's reward and fearing his punishment, they would instantly depart. The creator's majesty in their hearts makes all else paltry in their eyes. Paradise is before their eyes—they see it as clearly as though they were already enjoying its blessings. Hellfire too is before their eyes—they see it as clearly as though they were being tortured there. Their hearts are sorrowful, their malice never feared, their bodies emaciated, their needs few, and their persons chaste. They patiently endure their few days here in this world, awaiting the long comfort of the hereafter. Theirs is a profitable transaction bestowed in ease and security by their Lord. The world approached them, but they turned away. It shackled them, but they ransomed their souls and set themselves free.

In the night they stand in worship and recite sections of the Qur'an. They chant them in sweet melody, moving their own hearts to tears, and finding there the cure for their illness. If they come across a verse that rouses their yearning, they consume it hungrily, their hearts stretching out toward it in longing. They see its promised blessings before their eyes. If they come across a verse that stokes their fear, they incline their hearts toward its warning. The hiss and crackle of the inferno fills the innermost recesses of their ears. They bow their backs, laying their forehead, palms, knees, and toes on the ground, beseeching God to free their necks from the Fire. In the day, they are kind, wise, good, and pious. Fear has made them as thin as arrow shafts. The onlooker thinks them ailing, but they are not ill. He says, “They’re crazy!” but they are crazed only by something immensely grave.

They are not satisfied with a few deeds of goodness, nor do they consider their numerous endeavors too many. They constantly chide themselves and fear the consequence of their actions. If one of them is praised, he is apprehensive, and replies, “I know myself better than you know me, and my Lord knows me even better! Lord, do not hold me to what they say about me, but make me more virtuous than they think I am, and forgive those actions of which they do not know.”

Their hallmark is strength in faith, resolve with gentleness, belief with certainty, voracity for knowledge, knowledge with maturity, temperance in affluence, humility in worship, forbearance in indigence, patience in hardship, desire for the licit, enthusiasm in following guidance, and aversion to greed.

---

1 Final lines similar to § 3.90.
في خلال ونشاطًا في هدى وتحرّجًا عن طمع يعمل الأعمال الصالحة وهو على وجل
يسيّ وهمة الشكر ويلصق وهمّة الذكر بيت حذرًا ويلصق فرحاً حذرًا لما حذر من الغفلة
وفرحًا بما أصاب من الفضل والرحمة إن أستنعت على نفسه فيما تكرر له مبتعها سلوا
فما تحبّ قرّة عينه فيما لا يزال وزهادته فيما لا يبقى يمزج الحلم بالعلم والقول بالعمل.
تراه قريباً أمّا قليلاً زلّه خاشعاً قلبه قائمة نفسه ممزورًا أكله سهلاً أمرها حريزاً دينه
مبلّة شتهبه مك三级ًا غيفه الخير منه مأمول والشرّ منه مأمون إن كان في الغافلين كتب
في الداكر وإن كان في الداكر لم يكتب من الغافلين يعنف عمن ظلله ويعطي من
حرمه ويصل من قطعه بعيداً لشفه لينب قوله غاباً متكرر حاضراً مروحة مقبل خيره
مدبيراً شرّه في الزلازل وقور وفي المكاره صبر ونوفع شكر لا يخف على من
يغب ولا يأثم فيمن يحبّ يعترف بالحقّ قبل أن يشهد عليه لا يضيف ما استخفث ولا
يسمى ما ذكر ولا ينقب بالألباب ولا يضاير بالجار ولا يشتم بالمصائب ولا يدخل في
الباطل ولا يخرج من الحقّ. إن صمت لم يغمّه صمت وإن ضحك لم يعط صوته وإن بغي
عليه صبر حتى يكون الله هو الذي ينتقم له نفسه منه في عناة والناس منه في راحة
أتبع نفسه لآخريته وأراح الناس من نفسه بعده عمن تباعد عنه زهد وتزاعة ودنوّه ممن
دنا منه لين ورحة ليس تاباعه بكبر وعظمة ولا دنوّه يمر وخفية.
قال فضِّل قلبت همّاء صوقة كانت نسُه فيها فقال أمير المؤمنين عليه السلام أما والله لقد كنت
أخافها عليه ثمّ قال هكذا تصنع المواضع البالغة بثباتها. قال له قائل فما بالك أنت يا أمير المؤمنين
فقال ويدّعك إن كلّ أجل وقفاً لا يعود وسبباً لا يتجاوزه فلا لا تعد منهم فإنيما نفت الشيطان
على لسانك.
They do good while always being on guard. They spend the night thanking God and the morning praising him. They sleep vigilant and awake in joy, vigilant because they have been warned against neglect, and joyful because of the blessings and mercy they have gained. If their ego bucks against doing something it dislikes, they do not give it free rein to do what it desires. Their joy is centered on whatever brings lasting reward, while they care little for ephemeral baubles that will not remain. They combine maturity with learning and words with action.

You will see this—their needs are few, their slips are rare, their hearts are humble, their souls are content, their fare is meager, their manner is affable, their faith is secure, their appetite is dead, and their rage is held in check. Their goodness is always anticipated, their evil never feared. If they sit with the heedless, they are still numbered among the heedful, and if they sit with the heedful, they are not numbered among the heedless. They forgive those who oppress them, give to those who refuse them, and foster those who cut them off. Lewdness is far removed from their persons, gentleness imbues their words, and wrongdoing is absent from their actions. Their decency is ever present, their goodness always forthcoming, and their wickedness always distant. In calamities they remain dignified, in catastrophes they remain patient, in happy times they remain thankful. They never wrong an enemy or transgress to help loved ones. They acknowledge the dues they owe to others before testimony is given against them. They never squander what they have been given in trust, they never forget what they have been reminded of, they never call others vile names, they never harm a neighbor, they never gloat at another’s misfortune, they never enter into wrongdoing or abandon the truth. If they are silent, their silence is not burdensome. If they laugh, they are not raucous. If attacked treacherously, they are patient—God himself avenges them. They weary themselves by constant chiding, while never causing others unease. They push themselves to prepare for the hereafter and never cause others harm. Chaste and upright, they stay away from those who distance themselves. Kind and merciful, they draw near to those who seek to come close. Their detachment is not out of arrogance or grandiosity, and their accessibility is not out of cunning or trickery.

Raḍī: The narrator said: Hammām fell as though struck by a thunderbolt and died then and there. The Commander of the Faithful exclaimed, “By God, I feared this effect on him!” Then he continued, “This is what strong counsel does to people who listen!” A man challenged ‘Ālī, “Commander of the Faithful, how about you, then?” and ‘Ālī replied angrily, “Good grief! Each lifespan has an allotted time that it does not transgress and a cause that it does not overstep. Slow down! Don’t repeat this kind of talk again, for it was Satan who spoke with your tongue.”
ومن خطة له على السلام يصف فيها المناقشين

1.192

وحينما صنعت له من الطاعة وذاذ عنه من المعصية، ونسأله لمنه مما، وجعله أعصاماً.

وعند أن محمدًا عبده ورسوله خاض إلى رضوان الله كل غيره وتجرب فيه كل غيبة وقد تألوه له الأبدان وتلائب عليه الأقواس وخلعت إليه عرب أعتنت وضربت إلى مباريه.

بطون رواهها حتى أزالته بساحته عداوتها من أبعد الدار وأصبح المزار.

أوصيكم بعبد الله ي tônى الله وأحذركم أهل التفائق فإنهم الضالون المضللون والزلاون المزلفون يتفللون ألوانًا ويفتنون أقئاتًا ومودمنكم بكل عماد ويرصدونكم بكل مرصاد قلوهم دوياً وصفاحهم نقية يمشون الخفاء ويدون الضراء وصفهم دواء وقوهم شفاء وفعلهم الداء العباء حسنة الرخاء ومؤذروا البلاء ومفتعوا الرجاء لهم بكل طريق صريع وإلى كل قلب شفيع وكل شجء دموع يتفرصن الثنا ويتراقبون الجزاء إن سألوا أخفوا وإن عذربنا كشفوا وإن حكموا أسرفوا قد أعذروا لكلح باطلًا وكل قائم مثالًا وكل حي قاتلًا وكل باب مفتاحًا وكل ليل مصابحًا يتوصلون إلى الطعام باليا س ليحذروها أسوهم وينذروها بأعلهم يقولون فيتلمرون ویصفون فيموًون قد هبوا الطريق وأضلاعوا المضيق فهم لمة الشيطان وحمة النيران "أولئك حزب الشيطان أن إلى حزب الشيطان هم الخاسرون.

1.193

ومن خطة له على السلام

الحمد لله الذي أظهر من آثار سلطانه وجلال كبرياته ما حير مقل العقول من عجب قدرته وردع خطرات هما هم النفس عن عراف كان كٌّ صفة. وأنشذ أن لا إله إلا الله شهادة إيمان وإيقان وإخلاص وإذعان. وأنذذ أن محمدًا عبده ورسوله أرسله وأعلام الهدى دارسة ومناهج الذين طامسة فصدع بالحق ونصح للخلق وحدى إلى الرشد وأمر بالقصد صل الله عليه وآله.
1.192 From an oration by ʿAlī in which he describes the hypocrites who feign faith:
We praise God for having guided us toward obedience and guarded us from disobedience. We ask him to perfect his blessings and help us hold fast to his rope. We testify that Muḥammad is his servant and messenger, who plunged into every swelling wave, and swallowed every choking morsel, to earn his pleasure. Close relatives showed their true colors and turned away, while distant kin banded against him; loosening their horses’ reins and whipping the bellies of their camels, Arab tribesmen raced from the furthest, most distant abodes to fight him, until their rancor alighted in his courtyard.

Servants of God, I counsel you to remain conscious of him! I warn you against hypocrites, who, having strayed from the path, lead others astray, and having slipped, cause others to slip. Chameleon-like, they change color, change narratives; they aim at you from behind every pillar and lie in wait at every lookout. Their hearts are diseased while their faces look fresh, they walk with stealth and creep through the thicket, their words seem to heal but their actions bring chronic illness, they envy good fortune, magnify hardship, and destroy hope. In every path they leave a body felled, into every heart they find access, for every sad situation they produce false tears. They trade praises and expect material reward. When they solicit, they do not stop, when they turn away, they expose your shame, when they are given rule, they commit all kinds of excess. For every right, they have prepared an opposing wrong, for everything upright, something that will make it bend, for every living thing a killer, for every door a key, and for every night a lamp. They nourish their greed by creating desperation, in order to sustain their markets and sell their expensive wares; they speak to confuse and describe to delude; they frighten you from the path and create confusion in the narrow defile. They are Satan’s host and hellfire’s scorpion-sting. «These are Satan’s faction. Hark! Satan’s faction are losers.»

1.193 From an oration by ʿAlī:
Praise God! He has revealed traces of his authority and the magnificence of his majesty—their mighty wonders dazzle the intellect’s eyes and prevent the soul’s flashing thoughts from plumbing the depths of his attributes. I testify with belief, certainty, sincerity, and humility that there is no god but God. I testify that Muḥammad is his servant and messenger, whom he sent when guidance’s banners had frayed and religion’s pathways had eroded to declare the truth, counsel the world, guide toward virtue, and command temperance. May God bless him and his descendants.

---

1 Qurʾan, Mujādalah 58:19.
وأعلموا عباد الله أنَّهُ لم يخلفكم عتبًا ولم يرسلكم هملاً علم مبلغ نعمة عليكم وأحسى إحسانه إلىكم فأستتنحوه واستنجحوه وأطلبوه إليه وأستنجحوه فأقطعكم عنه جواب ولا أغلق عنكم دوين باب وإن كانت لبِّكَّ مكة في كلّ حين وأوان ومع كلّ إنس وجان لا يلبيه العطاء ولا ينقصه الجَبِياء ولا يستنفده سائل ولا يستقصيه نائل ولا يلوه شمس عن شمس ولا يلقيه صوت عن صوت ولا ينحرزه هبة عن سلبي ولا يشغله غضب عن رحمته ولا توليه رحمة عن عقابه ولا تجنه البطرون عن الظهره ولا تقطبعه الظهور عن البطرون قرب فتى وعال فدنا وظهر فيط وطفل فعلوم ودان ملند لم يدرا الخلق باحتبال ولا استعان بهم كلّلاء أوصيكم عباد الله بتوقي اللدى فإنَّهَا الزَّمَّام والقوام فتمسّكا بوثابتها وأعطموا بحقاقتها تؤبَّ بكم إلى أثكأن الدعة وأوطان السعة ومعاقل الحز وسائر العز في قَدَم تَشْخَصُ فيه الأَبْصَار وتُظَلم له الأقطار وتعطَّل فيه صور العش وينفع في الصور فترى كل مُحجة وتبَّ بكم كلُّ لجاة وتُدِّل الشن الشواي والصم الرواية فيصير صلدا سرايأ رفرق و معهدها قاتعاً سلماً فلا شفيع يشفع ولا حميد يدفع ولا معدرة تفع ومن خطة له على السلام بعثه حين لا علم قائم ولا منار ساطع ولا منهج واضح أوصيكم عباد الله بتوقي اللدى وأحذركم الدنيا فإنَّهَا دار شفوع ومَعَ جَمْهور ساكناً ظاع وقاطنة بان ظميم بأهلها ميدان السفينة تصفحها العاصفة في جَحَب البحر فنهم الفرق الوط وهمه الناجي على دوَّان الأموج يفيضه الريح بأذبها وتحمله على أهلها فما غرق منها فيّس بمصدريك وما تجا منها فإنَّهَا بابك عباد اللدى الآن فاعمالوا والأنس مطلقة والأبدان صحية والأعضا لدِّنَة والمتلَّل فسبيح والجال عريض قبل إرهاق الفوت وحلول الموت فخَّفِيقا علِّكم نزوله ولا تنتظرها قدوهم.
Servants of God! Know that God has not created you in jest, nor cut you loose without direction. He knows the extent of his blessings and keeps track of his bounties, so ask him to grant you victory and success, seek his favors and generosity. No veil separates you from his favors, nor is any door to him closed. He is present in every place, in each time and moment, with every human and jinn. Generosity does not deplete his possessions, charity does not decrease them, supplicants do not use them up, and gifts do not drain their depths. One person does not divert his attention from another, nor does one voice distract him from another. But giving also does not prevent him from taking away. Anger does not preoccupy him from mercy, nor does mercy confound him from punishing. The visible does not block him from the hidden, nor does the hidden separate him from the visible. He is close yet distant, transcendent yet near, manifest yet hidden, hidden yet open, and close yet utterly beyond reach. He did not create the world through artifice, nor did fatigue ever prompt him to solicit help.

Servants of God! I counsel you to be conscious of God! Piety is your harness and mainstay. Hold fast to its ropes and seek protection in its truths, for they will lead you to comfortable dwellings, expansive homelands, protective fortresses, and mighty abodes, on «the day when eyes stare fixedly in terror»,¹ the earth falls dark, camel mares in full term are abandoned, and the horn is blown.² At that time, spirits will perish, and tongues will be struck dumb. Lofty peaks and rugged rocks will crumble, their hardness will turn into a shifting mirage, their fastness will convert to bare, flat desert. In that moment, no intercessor will intercede, no kin will offer protection, no excuse will avail.

¹.194 From an oration by ʿAlī:
God sent Muḥammad when no waymark was raised, no beacon shone, and there was no clear road.

Servants of God! I counsel you to be conscious of God! I warn you of this world, a habitation you must vacate, a quarter plagued by suffering; its tenants must depart, and its occupants must leave. It heaves—with its people—like a ship tossed by stormy winds on the swells of the deep sea; some drown and perish, while others are saved on waves whose strong currents carry them away and dash them into further dangers; those who drown cannot be saved, while those who are saved will still die. Servants of God, take heed now! Act while tongues are free, bodies are sound, limbs are pliant, the course is free, and the track is open. Act before this chance is gone and death arrives. Know that it will come upon you—don’t delay until it is here.

¹ Qurʾan, Ibrāhīm 14:42.
² Reference to Qurʾan, Takwīr 81:4, Nabaʾ 78:18. Camel mares in full term would in normal times be the most carefully tended.
1.195 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام
ولقد علم المستحفظون من أصحاب محمد صلى الله عليه وآله أن لم أرد على الله ولا على رسوله ساعة قط ولهد واسمه بنفسي في المواطن التي تتكسر فيها الأبطال وتأخر فيها الأقدام بجانة أكرم الله به. ولقد قبض رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله وإن رأسه على صدره ولقد سالت نفسه في كثي فأمرتها على وجهي ولقد ولت غسله والملائكة أجرى فصحت الدار والأفنة ملايا يهبط ومالا يعرج وما فارقت سمعي هيئة منهم يصلون عليه حتى واريناه في ضريحه فن ذا أحق به مني حيا ومتنا فأنفذوا على بصاصكم ولتصدقّ نباتكم في جهاد عدوكم فوالله الذي لا إله إلا هو إلّى لعل جادّ الحق وإنهم على مزالة الباطل.
أقول ما تسمعون وأستغفر الله لي ولكم.

1.196 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام
1.196.1 يعلم تجيج الروح في الفوات ومعاصي العباد في الخلوات وأختلاف البنين في البحر البحار ومعاطم الماء بالرياح العاصفات. وأشهد أن محمد نجحب الله وسفيح وحية ورسول رحمته آملاً بعد).
فإنّي أوصيكم بقى الله الذي أبدأ خلقكم وإليه يكون معادكم وبه نجاح طهيركم وإليه منتسب رغبتكم ونحوه قصد سبيلكم وإليه مرامي مفعزكم فإنن تقوى الله دواء داء قلوبكم وفصر غي أقتلكم وشفاء مرض أجسادكم وصلح فسس صدوركم وظهر راينفسكم وجلاء عشا أسطاركم وأمن فزع جاشكم وهداء سواد ظللتكم فأجعلوا طاعة الله شعارًا دون دثاركم ودخيل دون شعاركم ولطفًا بين أضلاعكم وأميأ فوق أموركم ومنهلاً

هم، وي، ومصححة في ش، ونسخة في ه: كذا ن، وأصل ش، ه: (غشا).
1.195 From an oration by 'Ali:
Muḥammad's true companions know that never, not in a single instance, have I ever renounced God or his Messenger. I laid down my life to protect him during times so fraught that champions hesitated, and all feet floundered—my courage was a gift from God. Moreover, the Messenger died with his head on my chest, and his spirit flowed out over my palm, and I put my palm to my face directly. I undertook his final ablution with angels as my helpers—the house and courtyard rang out as one group descended and another ascended, each praying over him, my ears hearing every soft invocation, until we buried him in his grave. Who is closer to him, alive or dead, than I? Act with perception, people, and fight your enemy with true courage! I swear by the God save whom there is no god, that I walk the firm path of right, they flounder on the slippery slope of wrong.

I say what you hear, and seek God's forgiveness for me and for you.

1.196 From an oration by 'Ali:

1.196.1 He knows the bellowing of beasts in the forest, the sins his servants commit in private, the movements of fish in the deep oceans, and the crashing of waters tossed by stormy winds. I testify that Muḥammad is God's noble representative, the ambassador who conveyed his revelation, and the messenger who brought his mercy. And now to the matter at hand:

I counsel you to be conscious of God, who created you in the beginning, to whom you shall return. With him lies your petition's success, in him rests your hopes' realization. Your path leads to him, in him you will find protection. Consciousness of God is the remedy for your sick hearts, the bringer of sight to your blind spirits, the cure for your diseased bodies, the healing for your corrupt breasts, the purification of your begrimed souls, the luster for your impaired eyes, the safeguard for your fearful minds, and the light for your black darkness. Wear it as an undergarment, not just as an outer robe, wear it next to your skin, not simply as an undergarment. Make it the essence that

1 At Ṣiffīn in 37/657, in response to orations by Muʿāwiyyah and 'Amr ibn al-ʿĀṣ, in which they urged their Syrian army to fight 'Ali and accused him of breaking his oath of allegiance and spilling blood unjustly (Minqārī, Waqʿat Ṣiffīn, 223–224). “Muḥammad's true companions,” lit. “custodians (mustaḥfaẓūn) from among Muḥammad's Companions,” are explained by commentators as being (1) the first three historical caliphs, Abū Bakr, ʿUmar, and ʿUthmān, or (2) the learned. The statement about 'Ali's never having disobeyed the Prophet is an oblique criticism of ʿUmar's objections to Muḥammad's truce at Ḥudaybiyyah. Ḥ 10:179; R 2:292; B 612; details of Muḥammad's final moments and 'Ali's performance of his ablutions are recounted in Ḥ 10:183–187; B 612–613.
لحنين وردكم وشفيعًا لدرك طبلتمحمدنعام١٩٦٢ء١٨٦٢
وحشتم ونفسًا لربك مواطنكم فإن طاعة الله حزمن متائف مكتفية ومخاوف متوقعة وأوارمان مؤتزة. فأنز حذرت عزيز عنه الشدائد بعد دنوها وآوخلله لأمور بعد مراتها وأفجعت عنه الأموات بعد رواها وأرسلت له الصعاب بعد إنصبه وحطلت عليه الكرامة بعد أحقه وتحذرت عليه الرحمة بعد نفورها وتفجرت عليه النعم بعد نضوبها ووبالت عليه الشرك بعد إرذاؤها فاققوا الله الذي نفعكم بوعظته ووعظكم برسالته وأمنت عليكم بعمته فعندما أنفسكم لعاباده وأخرجوا إليه من حق طاعته.

1.196.2 ثم إن هذا الإسلام دين الله الذي أصطفاه لنفسه وأصطفاه عليه وأصطفاه عليه خيرًا خلقه وآقام دعائمه على محببته أذل الأديان بعزته ووضع المل برفعته وأهان أعداءه بكرته وخذل تجاجيه بيئه ومثل الأركان الضلالان بركنهو وسقي من عطشه من حباه وأثاق الحياض بيوتته ثم جعله لا أنفصمه لعورته ولا فَكَّ حلقته ولا أهدام لأسسه ولل زوال لدعائه ولا أنقلاع لشجرته ولا انقطع لمدته ولا عفاء لشرائه ولا حرًا لفروعه ولا ضنك لطرقه ولا وعوثة لسجولته ولا سواج لوضجه ولا جوع لانصبه ولا عص في عوده ولا وَعْه لملحه ولا أنطفاء لمصصبه ولا مرارة لخلاوة. فهو داعم أساخ في الحق أساحها وثبت لها أساسها وتبين عُزْرت عيونها ومصباح شمت نيرانها ومناد قاتدى بها ستارها وأعلام قدص بها لفاها ومناهل روحي بها ورَّادها. جعل الله فيه منتدى رضاه وذروة دعائه وسنان طاعته فهو عند الله وثيق الأركان رفع البيان منبر

penetrates your ribs, the commander who governs your affairs, the waterhole where you drink, the advocate for your petition, the shield that will protect you on the day of dread, the lamp in the hollow of your grave, the comforter during your long, lonely suffering, and the air that helps you breathe during the anguish of your battles. Obedience to God is an amulet that protects against encroaching dangers, looming perils, and blazing fires. Whoever is conscious of God finds troubles retreat after having approached, concerns sweeten after bitterness, waves recede after whipping up, hardships ease after exhaustion, generosity flow after drought, mercy come forward after having fled, favors gush out after draining away, and blessings pour down after scanty rain. Be conscious of God—he aided you with his guidance, counselled you with his message, and blessed you with his favors. Devote yourselves to his worship and discharge your duties of obedience to him.

1.196.2 Islam is God’s religion that he chose for himself and fashioned in front of his eyes.\(^1\) He bestowed it upon the best of his creation,\(^2\) and raised its pillars upon his love. He humbled all religions by honoring it, lowered all nations by elevating it, shamed all enemies by giving it renown, chastened all challengers by giving it victory, razed error’s columns by erecting its column, slaked the thirsty from its pools, and filled these pools through its watercarriers’ efforts. He has made it such that its handle will never break, its links will never separate, its foundations will never be destroyed, its pillars will never cease to stand, its tree will never be uprooted, its time will never end, its ways will never be effaced, its branches will never be chopped, its paths will never become narrow, its ease will never change to harshness, its dawn will never dim, its straightness will never twist, its shaft will never warp, its canyon will never become rutted, its lamps will never be extinguished, and its sweetness will never turn bitter. It is built with columns whose bases are embedded in truth and whose pediments are strong, it has wellsprings whose water gushes, lamps whose flames rise high, beacons by which travelers are guided, waymarks by which mountain passes are indicated, and watering places where thirst is slaked. God is pleased with his religion.\(^3\) He has made it the pinnacle of his pillars and the summit of obedience. It stands before God, column compact,

\(^1\) Reference to Qur’an, Ṭāhā 20:39.
\(^2\) The Shi‘i commentators interpret “the best of his creation” (khayratat/khiyaratat khalqih) as Muhammad and his descendants (B 617; R 2:301–302), the Sunni commentators as (2) all Muslims (Ḥ 10:192).
\(^3\) Reference to Qur’an, Mā’idah 53, Āl ‘Imrān 3:19.
البرهان مضيء الثيران عزيز السلطان مشرف المنار مُعزز المئار فشرَفُوه وآتِبُوه وآدَوا
إِلَيْه حَقَّه وَضَعَوه مَواضِعه.

۱۹۶.۳ ثم إنَّ الله سبحانه بعث محمدًا صلى الله عليه وآله بالحق حين دنا من الدنيا
الانقطاع وأقبل من الآخرة الاطلاع وألَّم بِهِ بِقَنْتَهُ بعد إشراق وقامت بأهلها على
ساق وخشين منها مهد وأَرَف منها قياد في أنقطاع من مدتَّها وأقتراب من أشرافها
وتصرّم من أهلها وتنصفيه من حلقتها وانتشار من سبها وعفّاء من أعلامها وتكشف
من عوراتها وقصّر من طولها. جعل الله سبحانه بلاغاً لرسالته وكَرَمَة لأمّته وريعًا لأهل
زمانه ورفعة لأعوانه وشرفةً لأنصاره.

۱۹۶.۴ ثم أنزل عليه الكتاب نورًا لا تطلفُ مصابيحه وسرجاناً لا يخدفُ تشديد
قُرُه ومنبجًا لا يفضل نهجه وشعاعًا لا يظلم ضوءه وفرجًا لا يخمد نهجه وبيانًا لا يهدِّم
أركانه وشفاء لا يتخشى أساقمه وعراء لا تُهَم أنصاره وحقًا لا تخفى أعقابه. فهو معден
الإيمان ودُحِبَّ حتى ينابع العلم ويحوره ورياض العدل وغُرَّانه وأثقافِ الإسلام وبيانه
وأودية الحقّ وعِيْطَانه وبرح لا ينزفه المستفزون وعيون لا يُضِبّها المآتون ومنتقل لا
يغيبه الواقدون ومنازل لا يضلّ يُهُجِّها المسافرون وأعلام لا يعيُّها السائرون
واكام لا يجوز عنها القاصدون. جعل الله سبحانه رياً لlösung العلماء ورِياً لِلْقُلُوب الفقهاء
وُحِيَ لِتَرْسِيقٍ الصلحاء ودِوَائِهِ لِيِسَ بَعْدُ دَاء ونُورًا لِيِسَ بَعْدُ ظلة وحَبْلاً وثِقَّاً عِرْوَتَه
ومعَقَّلاً ومِنْيِعًا ذروته ووعْرًا مِنْ تُولَأ وسِلَّمًا مِنْ دِخْلته وَهَدَى مِنْ أَنْتِمْ بِهِ وعَذَّرًا مِنْ أَنْتِحْه
ورِهْناً مِنْ تَكُمَّ بِهِ وشَاهِدًا مِنْ خَاصِمِهِ وفِلْجًا مِنْ حَاجِّ بِهِ وحَامِلًا مِنْ حَمْلِهِ ومُطْيِّه
مِنْ أَنْهَرِهِ وآيَةً مِنْ تَوَسِّم وَجْنَةً مِنْ أَستِلَام وعِلْيًا مِنْ عٍى وحَدِيّاً مِنْ رُوٍى وحُكَّمًا مِن
قُضَيّ.

۱، ش، ي، م، ونسخة في م: كذا. وأصل م: (نوره). ۲، ي، ونسخة في ه: كذا. ش، ن،
وأصل ه: (وإمام لا يجوز عنه).
edifice exalted, proof shining, fires burning, power mighty, and beacon raised, impossible to destroy.¹ So honor it, follow it, give it its due, and accord it the position it deserves.

1.196.3 God sent Muhammad with the truth when the end of the world had drawn near and the next life had approached, when her splendor had dulled after long brightness, her people confronted attack, her bed had turned rough, and her reins had become slack. This was a time when the world’s lifespan was drawing to a close, her signs were at hand, her people were mowed down, her ropes had frayed, her waymarks were effaced, her shame was manifest, and her long rope had been cut. God made Muhammad the bearer of his message, honor for his community, springtime for his people, exaltation for his helpers, and distinction for his allies.

1.196.4 God revealed to him the Book—a light whose flame cannot be extinguished, a lamp whose glow cannot be hidden, a sea whose depths cannot be plumbed, a road whose course does not mislead, a ray whose brightness never darkens, a dawn whose proof is never extinguished, an edifice whose columns cannot be razed, a cure after which no disease is feared, might whose supporters are never vanquished, and truth whose proponents are never bested. It forms the mine and home of belief, the founts and seas of wisdom, the meadows and pools of justice, the frame and edifice of Islam, and the valleys and orchards of truth. It holds a mighty river that water-seekers cannot exhaust, wellsprings that water-drawers cannot deplete, waterholes that drinkers cannot drain, waystations that travelers cannot miss, waymarks to which wayfarers cannot remain blind, and highlands that travelers cannot circumvent. God has made it water to quench the thirst of the learned, springtime for the hearts of the wise, the high road for the pious to walk, a healing after which there is no illness, a light alongside which there is no darkness, a handle whose grip is strong, and a fortress whose ramparts are never stormed. It gives might to those who are loyal, peace to those who enter, guidance to those who follow, defense for those who adhere, proof to those who articulate, witness to those who argue, victory to those who fight, support for those who carry, steeds for those who ride, signs for those who foretell, shields for those who seek armor, knowledge for those who heed, truth for those who narrate, and discernment for those who judge.

¹ Ar. muʾwiz al-mathār; translation based on H 10:193; R 2:303; or “difficult to excavate,” referring to the treasures of its wisdom, based on B 619.
197. ومن كلام له عليه السلام كان يوصي به أصحابه تعاونوا أمر الصلاة وحافظوا عليها وأستكثروا منها وتقربوا بها فإنها "كانَتْ علَى المومئين كَابَابًا مَوقَوتٍ" ألا تسمعون إلا جواب أهل النار حين سُئلوا "ما سلكْتْ في سَقْرَ قَالُوا لَنْ نَكِّلَ من المومئين" وإنها لتتحمل الذُّنوب حَتِّى الورق وتطلقة إطلاق الرِّيق وشبهها رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم تكون على باب الرجل فهو يغسل منها في اليوم والليلة خمس مرات فمثأر أن يبقى عليه من الدهر وقد عرف حقها من المؤمنين الذين لا يشعرون مرة تغمر ولا قَرُّعين من ولد ولا مال يقول الله سبحه: "رِجَالَا لَا تَلَهِبُمْ جَنَّةً لَا تَيْمَعُ عَن ذِكْرِ اللَّهِ وَإِقَامِ الصَّلاةَ وَإِيَادَ يِ الرَّكَاةِ" وكان رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم نصاً بالصلاة بعد التبشير له بالتجنة لقول الله سبحانه: "وَأَمْرُ أَهْلَكَ بالصلاة واصترع عليها" فكان يأمر بها أهل ويصبر عليها نفسه. ثم إن الزكاة جعلت مع الصلاة قراناً لأهل الإسلام فم أعطاها طيب النفس بها فإنها تجعل له كفارة ومن النار حجاماً ووفاية فلا يتبعها أحد نفسه ولا يكثرن عليها لله وإن من أعطاها غير طيب النفس بها يرجع بها ما هو أفضل منها فهو جاهل بالسماوات المبِّنى والأنفس المُحْوَّة والجبال ذات الطول المنصوبة فلا أطول ولا أعرض ولا أعظم منها ولا أمنع شيء بطول أو عرض أو قوة أو عجز لمَّا تمْ رهابه ولكن أشفقت من العقود وعقلن ما جهل من هو أضعف منهن وهو "الإنسان إنه كان ظَلمًا جهولا". إن الله سبحانه لا يخفى عليه ما العبد مفترفون في ليههم وتهرى لهم لطف به خيراً وأحاط به علمًا أعضاكم شهود ووجازحكم جنوده وضناكم عيونه وخلواتكم عيانه.
1.197 From an address by ʿAlī with which he would counsel his associates:¹
Be diligent in the matter of the ritual prayer—pray regularly and frequently, and seek to come closer to God through it, for it is «prescribed for believers at fixed times.»² Have you not heard the people of hell when they were asked, «"What led you into the Fire?” and they answered, “We were not among those who prayed”».³ Prayer makes sins fall from you like leaves and loosens their bonds from your necks. God’s Messenger compared it to a hot spring located at a man’s doorstep, one that he can bathe in five times in one day and night—tell me, what grime will remain on his body then? Prayer’s value is recognized by believers who are not diverted by gilded furniture or the gratifications of children and herds, believers God praises as «men whom neither trade nor commerce divert from remembering God, from performing the prayer, or submitting the alms-levy».⁴ Even after being pledged paradise, the Messenger exerted himself to the utmost in prayer, for God instructed him, «command your family to pray, and adhere to it yourself»⁵—he thus commanded his family to pray, and adhered to it himself. Second, be assiduous in offering the alms-levy, which, alongside the ritual prayer, is a means for the followers of Islam to obtain closeness to God. Whoever gives it freely and happily will find that it serves as expiation for his sins and a barrier and shield against hellfire. Let no one yearn for it after giving it or mourn its loss! For whoever gives it unwillingly, hoping only for material benefit, is ignorant of the Sunnah and will be cheated of its reward; his deed will be lost and his regret will persist. Third, be careful to uphold trust—whatever does so will not fail. Indeed, the trust was offered to the lofty skies, the outspread earth, and the towering, deep-rooted mountains—there is nothing taller, or broader, or higher, or greater than they, and if anything could have borne it because of height, or breadth, or strength, or might it would have been they. But they feared the punishment and understood what was not recognized by a weaker being, «the human, for he was a tyrant, an ignoramus.»⁶ The sins that God’s servants commit at night or by day are not concealed from him. His awareness of them is total, his knowledge encompasses them fully: your limbs are his witnesses,⁷ your bodies are his armies, your hearts are his spies, and your private conversations are open to him.

¹ Kulaynī’s report (Kāfī, 5:36) says ʿAlī would counsel his followers thus ahead of any battle—perhaps as a testament, in anticipation of his death.
² Qurʾan, Nisāʿ 4:103.
³ Qurʾan, Muddaththir 74:42–43.
⁴ Qurʾan, Nūr 24:37.
⁵ Qurʾan, Ṭāhā 20:132.
⁶ Qurʾan, Aḥzāb 33:72; the lines leading up to it are a modified quote from the earlier part of the same verse.
⁷ Reference to Qurʾan, Nūr 24:24.
1.198 ومن كلام له عليه السلام وَالله ما معاوَمَة مَـنِّي وَلَكِنْهُ يَغْدُر وَيَفِجَرَ وَلَوْلا كَرَاهِيَةَ الغَـدِر لَكَنَّت من أَدْهِي الناس وَلَكِنْ كَلِّ غَدِرَة جَعْلَة وَكَلِّ جَعْلَة كَفِّرَة وَكَلِّ غَدِرَ لَوَاء يُعْرِف به يوم القيامة وَالله مَا أَسْتَغْفِر بالنكيدة ولا أَسْتَغْفِر باِلشَّدَيْدَة.

1.199 ومن كلام له عليه السلام أَيَّها الناس لَاتَسْتَوْهَا نَى فِي طَرِيق الْمَدِى لَقِلْلَة أَهْلِهِ فَإِنَّ النَّاس قد أَجْتَمَعُوا عَلَى مَائِدَة شَبْعَة قَصِير وَجُوْعَهَا طَوْيل أَيَّها النَّاس إِنَّمَا يَجْعَل النَّاس الرَّضا وَالسَّلَح وَإِنَّمَا عَقْرُ نَافَة ثُمَّ مِرْدَة رِجْلٍ وَاحِدُ فَعِمْهُك اللَّه بِالعَذَاب لَمَّا عَمْهَ بِالرَّضَا فَقَالَ صِيَانَهُ فَعَقْرُوهَا فَأَصْبَحُوا نَادِمَيْن فَكَانَ إِلَّا أَنْ خَارَت أَرْضِهِم بِالخَسْفَةُ خُوَار السَّلاَفِ الْمَحْمَأَة فِي الأَرْض الْخَوْاَرَة أَيَّها النَّاس مِن سِلَك الْطَرِيق الْواَضِح وَرَدْ مَاء وَمِن خَالِف وَقِع فِي التَّيِه.

1.200 ومن كلام له عليه السلام روى عنه أنه قاله عند فِن سِبْدَة النَّسَاء فَاطِمَة عَلَيْهِ السَلام كَلَّمَاجِه بِهِ رسُول اللَّه صَلِّي اللَّه عَلَيْه وَآله وَسَلَّم عَلَيْه وَآله عند قِرْهُ السَلام عَلِيّ نَا رسُول اللَّه عَلَيْه وَآله وَسَلَّم عَلَيْه وَآله وَهُمَّة النَّازِلَة فِي جَوَارِكِ وَالسَّرِيَّة الْخَلُاق بِكَلِّٓا نَا رسُول اللَّه عَلَيْه وَآله وَسَلَّم عَلَيْه وَآله وَحَرَّمَهَا تَجْلُدُهَا إِلَّا أَنَّهَا لَيْنَ تَجْلُدُهَا بِعَظِيم فَرَقتَهُ وَفَادَحُ مَصِيبَتُك مَوْضُع تَعْزُّ فَلَقْد وَسَدَّتُك مِنْ مَوْضُع قَبْر كَفَرْتَ بِهِنَّ نَيْضَة وَصِدَّرَيْنَكُمْ مَـنْيَأَ إِلَّا أَيْنَ وَإِلَّا رَأَجَعُن فَلَقَدْ أَسْتَرْجِعَت الْوَدِيَّة وَأَهْذَبَ الْرَـهَيْنَة أَمَّا حُزِنِي فَسَرِمْد وَأَمَّا لِي لِي مَسْهَدٌ إِلَّا أَنْ يَخَتَّار اللَّه لِي دَارَكِ الَّيْلَ النَّاس مِقْمَيْن وَمَسْتَنَبِكِ الْمَـدِنِيُّ أَيْنَهَا السَّؤَال وَأَسْتَخْبِرُها الْخَالِ حَالٌ حَيَاة لَمْ يَتَّلَمْعَه وَلَمْ يَنْفَضْحُ مِنْكِ الذَّكَر.
1.198 From an address by ‘Alī:¹
By God, Muʿāwiyah is not more astute than I, but he deceives and lies. If I did not abhor deception, I would be the most cunning of people, but every act of deception is a lie, every lie is an act of unbelief, and every deceiver will be given a banner by which he shall be known on judgment day.² But, by God, I am not one to be taken unawares by a plot or found weak in the face of adversity!

1.199 From an address by ‘Alī:³
People! Do not be nervous about following the path of guidance because its followers are few. The public has gathered round a table where satiety is short, and hunger will be long. People! Approval and disapproval unite people. Only one man slaughtered Thamūd’s camel mare, but God included them all in his punishment because they united in approving his act. God said, «They slaughtered the mare, and in the morning, they had cause to regret.»⁴ For their land roared and was swallowed up with its inhabitants, like a fire-seared ploughshare hissing as it sinks into soft soil. People! Whoever follows the trodden path reaches water. Whoever strays dies in the scorching desert.

1.200 From words uttered by ‘Alī just after he had buried the queen of all women, Fāṭimah, at the graveside of God’s Messenger:⁵
Salutations to you, Messenger of God, from me and from your daughter who has come to stay with you. I have little strength to bear the loss of your cherished one, O Messenger of God! My endurance is broken! But I bore the anguish of your separation and the calamity of your passing and shall strive to endure this too. It was I who placed you in the hollow of your grave. You breathed your last with your head resting between my neck and chest. «Truly, to God we belong and to him we shall return!»⁶ The deposit has been reclaimed and the loan has been repossessed, but my grief will remain forever, my nights will be wakeful evermore, until the time when God transports me to the home where you now reside. Your daughter will inform you, so press her to answer, and find out from her what has happened to us—so soon, when your memory was still fresh among the people! Salutations to you both from one who bids you farewell, but not because of aversion or fatigue. When I take my leave, it is not because I

---

¹ Delivered in the Grand Mosque in Kufa, presumably after the arbitration in 37/658 (Kulaynī, Kāfī, 2:338). On Muʿāwiyah’s and ‘Alī’s strategies of governance and warfare, see H 10:212–260; B 626–627.
² Modified quote of the Prophet’s hadith, Quḍāʿī, Shihāb, §1.162.
⁴ Qurʾān, Shuʿarāʾ 26:157.
⁵ Delivered in Medina in 11/632.
⁶ Qurʾān, Baqarah 2:156.
والسلام عليكِ يا سلام مودّع لا قال ولا سَمَر فإن أنصرف فلا عن ملائمة وإن أَقّم فلا عن سوء ظنّ بما وعد الله الصابرين.

١.٢٠١ ومن كلام له عليه السلام

أَيّها الناس إنما الدنيا دار مجاز وآخرة دار قرار نفذوا من ممرّك لمفرّك ولا تتهروا أستاذاً عنده من يعلم أسراركم وأخرجوا من الدنيا قلوبكم من قبل أن تخرج منها أبذاكم ففُشعوا أخذتم وغيّروا خلقتم إن المرء إذا هلك قال الناس ما ترك وقائت الملكة ما قدّم. لله آباءكم فقدّموا بعضًا يكن لكم ولا تخلفو كُلًا فيكون عليكم.

١.٢٠٢ ومن كلام له عليه السلام كان كثيرًا ما ينادي به أصحابه

تغىروا رحمهم الله فقد نودي فيكم بالرحيل وأقلاوا العْرُج على الدنيا وانقتو في صالح ما بحضت من الزاد فإن أمالكم عقبة كُيودًا ومنازل تخوفة مَبَولة لا بد من الزود عليها والوقوف عنها وآلموا أن ملاحظ الملذة نحور دائمة وكأنكم بمغلبها وقد نشب فيكم وقد دمتكم فيها مفطعات الأمور ومصصعات المحدور فقَطْعوا علاقات الدنيا وأستظهروا بزاد التقوى.

وقد مضى شيء من هذا الكلام فيما تقدّم بخلاف هذه الرواية.

١.٢٠٣ ومن كلام له عليه السلام كُلّه به طلحة والزبير بعد بيعته بالخلافة وقد عتب على ترك مشاورتهما والاستعانة في الأمور بما

آن، ش، م، ه: كذا ي، وزيادين في هامش ش، م، ه: «فقدّموا بعضًا يكن لكم قرضا ولا تخلفو كُلًا فيكون عليكم كُلًا». أن، ه، ي، ش، ونسخة في م: كذا م، ونسخة في ش: ي، دانية.
wearied of grieving. When I stay, it is not from lack of faith in God’s promise to the patient.

1.201 From an address by ‘Alī:
People! The world is a passage and the hereafter your permanent home. Gather supplies from your abode of transience for your abode of residence. Do not rend your veils before one who knows all your secrets. Remove your hearts from the world before your bodies are removed from it. Here you are tested, but you are created for another home. When a man dies, people ask, “What did he leave behind?” while the angels inquire, “What has he sent on ahead?” May God reward your fathers! Send ahead a portion that will remain yours. Do not leave everything behind, for that will count against you.

1.202 From words ‘Alī often addressed in oration to his associates:1 Gather your supplies—May God have mercy on you!—for the call has come to depart. Lessen your inclination toward the world and see that you leave your present life with provisions. A tough ascent lies ahead with fearsome and strange waystations through which you must pass and at which you must alight. Know this: Death homes in on you. Imagine that you are already trying to ward off its claws, that its horrors and fearsome calamities are already upon you. Cut off all ties to this world and prepare provisions of piety.

Raḍī: Similar lines have been recorded earlier in a different version.2

1.203 From an address by ‘Alī to Ṭalḥah and Zubayr when—after pledges of allegiance to him as caliph—they reproached him for not consulting them or seeking their assistance in governing:3

1 Delivered regularly in the Grand Mosque in Kufa during ‘Alī’s caliphate, 35–40/656–661. Ṣadūq (Amālī, 402–403, Maļis 75), says: “The Commander of the Faithful would pray the ‘ishā’ night-prayer, then call out thrice, so all the people in the mosque would hear him: (the text).” Similar tag in Mufid, Irshād, 2:234. Māmaṭīrī (Nuzhah, 420), says: “The Commander of the Faithful would call out every night, in the face of the morning: (the text of the first half).” He cites the second half as part of an oration (of which §1.96 is another part) in the mosque in Basra, a few days after the Battle of the Camel in 36/656 (ibid., 236).

2 Possibly referring to §1.182.

3 Delivered in Medina in 35/656, soon after ‘Alī received the pledge. ‘Alī rescinded the earlier caliphs’ practice of graded stipends and gave everyone an equal share from the state treasury (similar context in §1.124). Ṭalḥah and Zubayr were unhappy with this new arrangement and complained. When ‘Alī replied as he did in this address, they sought leave to go to Mecca, and once there, planned with ‘Āʾishah a revolt against him, which resulted in the Battle of the Camel. On the events leading up to this address, and the address itself, see Iskāfī, Miʿyār, 112–114. On Ṭalḥah’s and Zubayr’s pledge to ‘Alī and their subsequent breaking of it, see Ḥ 11:10–20. See also § 3.186.
لقد نقمتما يسيرًا وأرجأتما كثيرًا ألا تخُبراني أي شيء لكا فيه حق دفعتك عنه أو أي قيم أستأثرت عليك وبا أم أي حَر رفعه إلَى أحد من المسلمين ضعفت عنه أم جهله أَم أخطأت بابه. والله ما كانت لي في الخلافة رغبة ولا في الولاية إرية ولكنكم دعوتوني إليها وحملتموني عليها فلبا أفضست إلَّى نظرت إلَى كتاب الله وما وضع لنا وأمرنا بالحكم به فأثبعته وما أستسن النبي صلى الله عليه وأله فاقتديته فلم أحتج في ذلك إلَّى ربيك ولا رأي غيرك ولا يمتع الحكم جهله فاستشيرك فأخونى من المسلمين ولو كان ذلك لم أرغب عنك ولا عن غيرك. وأما ما ذكرت من أم贮 الإسوة فإن ذلك أمر لم أحكم أنا فيه إلا الأشياء التي يدخرها وما اتته حسب ما جاء به رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله وقد فرغ منه فلم أحتج إليك فيما قد فرغ الله من قسمه وأمضى فيه حكمه فليس لنا والله علندي ولا لغيرك في هذا عتى. أخذ الله بقلوبكم وقولونا إلَى الحق وأهمنا إلَى الصبر.

ثم قال عليه السلام
رحب الله رجلا رأى حقًا فأعان عليه أرُأى جوًرًا فردَّه وكان عونًا بالحق على صاحبه.

ومن كلام له عليه السلام وقد سمع قومًا من أصحابه يسبّن أهل الشام أيام حربهم بصفين.

إِلَّي أكَّرَك لَم أن تكون سبَبين ولكنكم لو وصفتم أعمالهم وذكرتم حالفهم كان أصوب في القول وأبلغ في القدر وقامت مكان سبِك إِيّاهم اللهُ أَحَقَّن دماءهم ودماءهم وأصلح ذات بينا وبيتهم وأهدهم من ضلالتهم حَتَّى يعرف الحق من جهله ويرعوي عن الفي والعدوان من لَّج به.
You rebuke me for a small matter and you’re going to bring on much more besides. Tell me—which rights have I deprived you of, what share due to you have I withheld? Or which claim has been brought to me by any Muslim that I have been too weak to deal with, or proved to be ignorant about, or mistaken in handling? By God, I had no wish to assume the caliphate and no interest in ruling. It was you who urged me and pleaded with me to accept. And when the caliphate came to me, I looked to God’s Book for guidance, and to its ordinances and commandments for governance, and followed its path. I looked to the Prophet’s Sunnah and emulated his example. I had no need of your opinion or the opinion of any other, there was no ruling I was uncertain about such that I needed to consult you or any of my Muslim brethren. Had I needed advice, I would not have held back from you or anyone else. My equal distribution of treasury funds is a matter neither of personal decision nor whim, but I have found this—and you know it too—to be the ruling brought and decided by God’s Messenger. I did not need your help in deciding the manner of distribution that God had already set forth, that he already ruled on. By God, neither you nor anyone else has grounds to reproach me! May God guide your hearts and mine to right and move me and you to have patience in adversity.

Then ʿAlī said:
May God have mercy on the man who supports right when he sees it and repudiates wrong when he sees it, who courageously supports right against those who promote wrong.

1.204 From an address by ʿAlī when he heard some of his supporters cursing the Syrians during the conflict at Ṣiffīn:¹
I don’t like you to curse! Rather, describe their deeds and define their situation, that is a more judicious way of speaking and more convincing. Instead of cursing, it’s better for you to say this: “God, preserve our blood and theirs from being spilled, reconcile us, guide them out of their error until the ignorant recognize right and those enamored of deception and enmity retreat from their unrighteous ways.”

¹ In 37/657, in Kufa, just before ʿAlī set out to fight the Syrians. The supporters are Ḥujr ibn ʿAdī and ʿAmr ibn al-Ḥamiq al-Khuzāʿī. Minqārī, Waqʿat Ṣiffīn, 102–103. Note that this event took place before the Battle of Ṣiffīn, when ʿAlī was still hopeful of persuading the Syrians to pledge allegiance to him; moreover, he is forbidding his followers from cursing the Syrians generally. As for Muʿāwiyyah, ʿAmr ibn al-ʿĀṣ, and even his own disloyal arbiter, Abū Mūsā al-Ashʿarī, ʿAlī himself is later said to have regularly cursed them and four others of Muʿāwiyyah’s commanders after each prayer. Ibid., 552.
1.205 وقال عليه السلام في بعض آيَّات صفيّين وقد رأى الحسن عليه السلام يسراً إلى الحرب
إِمْلَكَوْا عَنْي هذا الغلام لا يهدى فإِنّي أَفْنَسْ بِهذين (يعني الحسن والحسين عليهما
السلام) على الموت لَلَا ينقطع بهما نسل رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله.

 قوله عليه السلام (إِمْلَكَوْا عَنْي هذا الغلام) من أعلى الكلام وأفضله.

1.206 ومن كلام له عليه السلام قال لما أضطر عبى أصحابه في أمر الحكومة
أَيْنَ يَنْاسِينَ إِنِّي لَمْ يُزِلَ أَمْرِي مَعْمَعٌ عَلَى مَا أَحْبَبْ حتَّى نَكْتَمَ الحَرب لَقَدْ وَلَدَ اللَّهُ أُخْذَت
مَكْمَ وَتَرَكَتْ وَهَيْ لَعَدُوْ وَمَا أَنْهَكَ. لَقَدْ كَتَبَ اللَّهُ أَمْسَ أمِيرًا فَأَصْبِحَتّ الْيَوْمُ مَأْمُورةً وَكَتَبَ
أَمْسٍ نَاهِيًا فَأَصْبِحَتّ الْيَوْمُ مِنْهَا وَقَدْ أَحْبَبَ الْبَقَاء وَلِيْ أَنْ أَكْلِمَ اللَّهُ عَلَى مَا تَكْرُهُون.

1.207 ومن كلام له عليه السلام بالبصرة وقد دخل على العلاء بن زياد الخارجي يعده وهو
من أصحابه فلَمْ رأى سعة داره قال

1.207.1 وَكَانَتْ تَصِنَّعُ بَسْبَعَةٌ هذِهِ الْمَدَارِ لِلنَّارِ مَا أَتَى إِلَيْهِ فِي الْآخِرَةِ كَانَ أَحْجَر
وَلِيْنَ إِنْ ضَلَّتْ بَلَغَتْ بِهَا الْآخِرَةُ فَتْقَرَى فِيَةُ الضَّيْفُ وَتَصِلُّ فِيَةُ الرَّحْمُ وَتَتْلُعُّ مِنْهَا الْحَقِيق
مِتاَلْعَهَا إِنَّا أَتَى قَدْ بَلَغَتْ بِهَا الْآخِرَة.
1.205 From an address by ʿAlī on one of the battle-days of Ṣiffīn, when he saw Ḥasan rushing into the fray:1
Help me! Restrain this lad! Don’t let him crush my hopes! I am determined to protect both (meaning Ḥasan and Ḥusayn) from death, so that the Messenger’s line doesn’t end here!

Raḍī: ʿAlī’s expression, “Help me! Restrain this lad! (imliḵū ‘annī hādhā l-ghulām)” is among the most sublime and eloquent of words.

1.206 From an address ʿAlī delivered when his supporters disagreed with him in the matter of the arbitration:2
People! You have followed my command as I have wished thus far, but now warfare has worn you out. By God, it has indeed taken some and left some, but it has depleted your enemy more than you! Yesterday I was your commander, and today you command me. Yesterday I was the one who forbade you, and today you forbid me. You want to live, and I have no way of convincing you to do what you are dead set against.

1.207 From an address by ʿAlī in Basra. ʿAlī went to visit ʿAlāʾ ibn Ziyād al-Ḥārithī, one of his supporters who was ill; when ʿAlī saw the size of the house, he said:3

1.207.1 What will you do with this large house here in this world? You will have more need of it in the hereafter! And yes, if you wish, you can take it with you. Offer hospitality in it to guests, use it to foster ties with kin, and pay your dues on it as they accrue. If you do all this, you will take it with you to the hereafter.

---

1 In 36–37/657. For events before and after, see Minqarī, Waqʿat Ṣiffīn, 529–530.
2 This was at Ṣiffīn in 37/657. The battle was going in ʿAlī’s favor when Muʿāwiyah—after earlier having rebuffed ʿAlī’s efforts at negotiation—held aloft Qurʾan leaves attached to spears and asked for arbitration. ‘Ali believed this to be a ruse and urged his supporters to continue fighting, but there were many who insisted he accept. Some details in H 11:29–31; text and further context in Minqarī, Waqʿat Ṣiffīn, 484.
3 In 36/656, following the Battle of the Camel (Iṣkāfī, Miʿyār, 243). Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd (H 11:37) says the man was named Rabīʿ ibn Ziyād al-Ḥārithī (cf. the same anecdote in Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 384, which also has Rabīʿ), and that the name ʿAlāʾ is an error. Rabīʿ was a Companion of the Prophet, who was a commander during the conquest of Khurasan and served as governor of Bahrain during ʿUmar’s caliphate. Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd says this anecdote about Rabīʿ and ‘Ali is well known, while ‘Alāʾ is not mentioned elsewhere in the sources.
1.207.2 فقال له العلاء يا أمير المؤمنين أشكو إليك أخي عاصم بن زياد قال وما له قال ليس العباء وتخلى من الدنيا قال عليّ به فلم جاء قال يا عديّ نفسه لقد استهان بك الخبيث أما رحبت أهلك وولدك أتى الله أهلّ لك الطيبات وُهِيْكَرُكَ أن أتَخَذْهَا أنتَ أهوُن على اللَّهِ من ذلك.

قال يا أمير المؤمنين هذا أنت في خشونة ملبسك وجوشويَّة ما كلاك قال وَيُحَّكُ إِلَيّ نِسْتُ كَأْتِنَّ اللَّهِ فِرْضٌ عَلَى أُمَّةِ الْحَقِّ أَن يَقْدُّدُوا أَنفُسَهُم بِضَعْفَةِ النَّاسِ كَي لا يَتَبَيْعُ بِأَلْفِيْرِ قَفْرِهِ.

1.208 ومن كلام له عليه السلام وقد سأله سائل عن أحاديث البداع وعُمّا في أيدي الناس من اختلاف الخير فقال إن في أيدي الناس حقًا وباطلًا وصدقًا وكدبًا ونافعًا ومنسوخًا وعامًا وخصوصًا ومحكمًا ومتشبهاً وحفظًا ووهبًا وقد كَذَّبَ على رسول اللَّه صَلَّى اللَّهِ عَلَيْهِ وَآلهَةِ عِلَيْهِ جَهَّةً وإِمَّا أَتَأَتَ بالحديث.«من كذب على متمعدًا فليتبُوا مقعده من النار» قام خطيباً فقال رجل منافق مُنْطَقٌ للإيمان متصور بالإسلام لا يتأمَّل ولا أربعة رجال ليس لهم خامس يُتَحَّرُج يُكَذِّب على رسول اللَّه صَلَّى اللَّهِ عَلَيْهِ وَآلهَةِ عِلَيْهِ متمعدًا فلم أعلم الناس آن منافق كاذب لم يقبلوا منه ولم يصدقوا قوله ولكنهم قالوا صاحب رسول اللَّه رَحْمَةُ رَأَاهُ وَصَمِّمْهُ وَقَفَّ عَنْهُ فياً حذوين بقوله وقد أخبرك الله عن المنافقين بما أخبرك ووصفهم بما وصفهم به كثٰم

الن، ش، ي، م، ونسخة في م: كذا. أصل م، ونسخة في ه: (العدل).
1.207.2 ‘Alāʾ then said to ‘Alī, “Commander of the Faithful, I have a complaint against my brother Āṣim ibn Ziyād.” ‘Alī asked, “What is your problem with him?” and ‘Alāʾ replied, “He has donned a striped cloak of haircloth and renounced the world.” ‘Alī instructed, “Bring him to me!” and when Āṣim was brought before him, ‘Alī berated him:

O self-hater, the evil one has befuddled you! Do you feel no compassion toward your wife and children? Do you think that God has made licit for you the good things of this world when he did not want you to partake of them? Are you so important to God that he should trouble with all that!

Raḍī: Āṣim replied, “But, Commander of the Faithful, here you stand with your rough clothing and coarse food!” and ‘Alī exclaimed:

Good grief! Our situations are not the same. God has mandated for true leaders that they should measure themselves against the needy so that the poor are not crushed by their penury.

1.208 From an address by ‘Alī responding to a man who asked him about invented hadith and contrary reports current among people. He said:

Reports current among people today include both the right and the wrong, the true and the false, the abrogating and the abrogated, the general and the specific, the clear and the ambiguous, and the accurate and the flawed. People attributed things falsely to the Messenger even when he was alive, until finally he stood up to orate and declared, ⟨Whoever deliberately misattributes something to me will take possession of a seat in hellfire⟩. There are four kinds of men who come to you with hadith, there is no fifth after them: The first is the hypocrite who makes a show of faith and pretends to be a Muslim. He neither fears sinning nor hesitates to commit an act of wickedness, and he deliberately misattributes words to God’s Messenger. If people knew that he is a lying hypocrite, they would not accept the report from him or believe his words, but instead they say, “This is the Messenger’s Companion, who saw him, heard from him, and took from him,” and so they accept his words. You know what God has

---

1 Presumably in Kufa, during the years of ‘Alī’s caliphate, 35–40/656–661. The man is said to be Sulaym ibn Qays, who prefaced his question to ‘Alī with the lines, “I have heard Salmān, Abū Dharr, and Miqḍād speak of certain things regarding exegesis of the Qur’an, and hadith and reports from God’s Messenger, and I have heard you endorse those. But there are many hadith and reports in people’s hands that contradict them ...” (text and context in Harrānī, Tubaf, 193–196). On Sulaym, see Muḥammad Bāqir Anṣārī, “Lamḥah ʿan ḥayāt Sulaym wa-tāʾrīkh kitābīhi,” in the introduction to his edition of Kitāb Sulaym, 1:41–84. Alternatively, the text is cited as an answer given during an oration in the mosque in Basra, a few days after the Battle of the Camel in 36/656 (Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 229). Other parts of the same oration, as cited in ibid., 221–233, are listed in the note to §1.23.
بَقَّوا بعده عليه السلام فتقربوا إلى أثمة الضلال والدعاء إلى النار بالزور والبهتان فوَّهُم الأعمال وجعلوه على رقاب الناس وأكلوا منهم الدنيا وآمَنًا الناس مع الملوك والدُنْيا إِلَّا من عصم الله فهذا أحد الأربعة. ورجل سمع من رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله وصحبه لم يخفظ على وجهه فوَّهُم فيه ولم يتعبد كَذَّباً فهو في يديه يرويه ويقول أنت سمعت من رسول الله فلو علم المسلمون أنه وَهْمُ فيه لم يقلوه منه ولو علم هو أنه كذلك لرفضه. ورجل ثالث سمع من رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله وصحبه يا مهني عنه وهو لا يعلم أن سمعه نبي عن شيء ثم أمر به وهو لا يعلم وحفظ النسخ ولم يصح عن النسخ فلو أعلم أنه مسخر لرفضه ولو علم المسلمون إذ سمعوه منه أنه مسخر لرفضه. وأخرب رابع لم يكتب على الله ولا على رسوله مبغض للمكتب خوفًا لله وتعظيمًا لرسول الله ولم يَمَّه بل حفظ ما سمع على وجهه جفاء عليه ما سمعه لم يزد فيه ولم ينقص منه وحفظ الناَخ فعمل به وحفظ النسخ جَنَّب عنه وعرف الخاص والعام فوضع كل شيء موضوعه وعرف المشابهة ومحكى. وقد كان يكون من رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله الكلام له وجهاً فكلام خاص وكلام عام فيسمعه من لا يعرف ما عني الله به ولا ما عني به رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله فيحمله الساعم ويوجه عليه غير معرفة بعيناه وما قدد به وما خرج من أجله. وليس كل أصحاب رسول الله كان يسأله ويستفه حتى إن كانوا ليحبون أن يجيء الأعراف أو الطائر فيسأله عليه السلام حتى يسمعوا. وكان لا يمزَّبِي من ذلك شيء إلا سألت عنه وحفظته. فهذه وجوه ما عليه الناس في أختلاَفهم وعلَّمهم في روایاتهم.

١٠٩٠ وَمَن خَطَّبَهُ له عليه السلام
وكان من أقتصار جبروه وبدع لطرف صعنه أن جعل من ماء اليمِّ الزاخر المتراكم المتقاسيّ يِنْسَأ جامدًا ثمّ فطر منه أطباخًا فتقتله سبع سماوات بعد أرتنائها فاستمستك

١٠٨٩ م، ي، ومصححة في ه: كذا، ش، ن، وأصل ه: «البحر».
said to you about hypocrites, you know how God has described them! After the
Messenger’s death they persisted, seeking closeness with lies and fabrications
to false leaders and hell’s advocates who made them governors and gave them
authority over people’s necks—leaders who, in turn, amassed wealth through
them. Except for those whom God protects, most people side with kings and
choose the path of worldly benefit. This is one of the four. The second is a man
who has heard something from the Messenger but has not retained it correctly,
hence he errs but does not deliberately lie. The report as he remembers it is in his
hands, and he narrates it and acts upon it, saying, “I heard this from God’s Mes-
senger.” The Muslims would not accept it from him if they knew that he errs;
his report would reject it if he knew. The third is a man who heard the Messenger
ordain something that he later forbade but does not know this, or he heard the
Messenger forbid something that he later ordained but does not know this, he
thus preserves the abrogated, but not the abrogating, ruling. He himself would
reject it if he knew it was abrogated; the Muslims would reject it too if they
knew it was abrogated. The fourth is a man who never attributes words falsely
to God or to his Messenger. He fears God and reveres God’s Messenger, and he
detests lies. He does not err and correctly preserves what he heard, relating the
report as he heard it without addition or omission. He knows the abrogating
ruling and acts upon it, and he knows the abrogated act and stays away from
it. He knows the specific and the general and places everything in its proper
place, he knows the ambiguous and the clear. Indeed, the words the Messenger
spoke were of two kinds, the specific and the general. Many who heard them
did not fully understand what God or his Messenger had meant. These people
narrated and interpreted them in a particular way without understanding
their real meaning, or what the Messenger had intended in uttering them, or
the context in which he had spoken them. Not all the Messenger’s Companions
questioned him and sought clarity, in fact, they used to hope that a Bedouin
or a stranger would turn up and inquire so that they could hear the explana-
tion. I, on the other hand, asked the Messenger about all his utterances and
remembered them correctly. These are the categories of disagreement among
the people, and the reasons for their varied narrations.

1.209 From an oration by ʿAlī:
Through his supreme power and sublime and wondrous craftsmanship, God
produced dry, solid earth from the raging, crashing, ocean masses.¹ He then
divided the firmament into layers and separated its mass into seven skies that
held together through his command and stood at the limit he had set. The skies

¹ I have inserted the word “earth,” following Ḥ 11:52; B 649; R 2:336–337.
بأمره وقامت على حدّه يحملها الأخضر المعنّجر والعمق المستغرق ذلّ لأمره وأذعنه لهيبته ووقف الجاري منه نخشيته وجبل جلالهدا ونوره مرتها وأطوادها فأرساه في مراسيبها وأزدهر قراراتها فضت رؤوسها في الهواء ورسبت أصولها في الماء فأنه بجحالي عن سيلها وأسال قواعدها في مون أقطارها ومواضع أنصافها فأشباق قلالها وأطل أنشازها وجعلها للأرض عمادًا وأوزًا فيها أؤتادًا فسكت على حركتها من أن تميد بأهلها أو تسخج جملها أو تزول عن موضعها. فسهج من أسماكها بعد موجان مياهها وأجدها بعد رطوبة أكاذبها فجعلها خلقله مهدًا وسطتها لهم فراشاً فوق بحر لجيٍّ راكد لا يجري وقائم لا يسري تتكّرّه الرياح العواصف وتمَّضيه العمائم الدوارف "إن في ذلك لعيدة من يخشى".

1.210 ومن خطة له عليه السلام اللهُ أَيْمَا عَنُبَت التّنَّ عَن مَقَالِيَّة النّاعدة غَيْر الجَرّاء والعصِّيَّة في الدين والدّنيا غير المفسدة فأبان بعد سمعه لها إلّا التّكرّسن عن نصرتك والإيباط عن إعراز دينك فإنّها نستشهد عليه يا أكّم الشاهدين شهادة ونستبد عليه جميع من أسّكته أرضك وسماواتك. ثمّ أنت بعد المعني عن نصره والإيهام له بذنه.

1.211 ومن خطة له عليه السلام الحمد لله العليّ عن شبه الخلقين الغالب لمقام الواصفين الظاهر بيجيده للناظرين الباطن بجال عزّته عن فكر المتوهّبين العلم بلا أكتساب ولا أزدياد ولا علم مستفاد المقدّر جمع الأمور بلا روية ولا ضياع الذي لا تغشاه الظلم ولا يستقيد بالأنوار ولا يرهقه ليل ولا يجري عليه نار ليس إدراكه بالبصرا ولا علمه بالأخبار؟ منها في ذكر النبي عليه السلام م، ي، ومصّحة في ش، ه: كا، ن، وأصل ش، ه: طسبُت. ۲، ش، ن، ي بفتح الهزة وكسّراً معاً في كلمتي (البصرا) و(الأخبار)، ه: (بالأخبار)، ونسخة (بالاختيار).
were borne by the aquamarine depths, and those vast seas that submitted to his command bowed in reverence and stilled their flow in awe. He formed the earth’s rocky crags and towering ridges and peaks, anchoring and embedding them in the seabed until their summits rose high in the firmament and their roots sank deep below the water’s surface. He elevated the mountains above its plains and sank its supports into the backs of its far-reaching regions and landmarks, summits lofty and pinnacles high, columns for the earth fixed inside it like pegs. The earth became still. It no longer heaved or tossed around its inhabitants, nor sank under their weight, nor shifted position. Glory to him who stopped its movement after its waters had surged in billows, who made it dry and solid after its regions had been covered in water! He made it a cradle for his creatures and unfurled it like a carpet. He settled it on still ocean depths that do not surge, a quiet sea that does not flow, though it is whipped by blustery winds, and churned by tempestuous clouds. «There is a lesson here for all who venerate God.»

1.210 From an oration by ʿAlī: God! I ask you, O greatest witness, to bear witness over any of your servants who hear my words—words that are always just, never tyrannical, always righteous, never corrupt—and, after hearing them, refuses to support you and holds back from fighting for your religion. I ask all whom you have housed upon your earth and in your skies to bear witness over him. And God, I know that you will suffice me without his support and hold him accountable for his sin.

1.211 From an oration by ʿAlī:

Praise God—exalted beyond comparisons to created beings, greater than the utterances of those who describe, manifest through his wondrous planning to beholders, concealed in his majestic might from thinkers, all-knowing without acquisition, increase, or learning, ordainer of all affairs without reflection or thought. Darkness does not cover him, lights do not illumine him, nights do not torment him, and days do not fatigue him. His perception does not stem from vision, his knowledge does not stem from reports.

From the same oration in praise of the Prophet:

1 Qurʾan, Nāziʿāt 79:26.
2 Presumably in Kufa, between 37/658 and 40/661. B 640: “This is an excerpt from an oration with which ‘Ali frequently urged his associates to muster against the Syrians, delivered after most of them held back from supporting him in the fight.”
أرسله بالضياء وقُدِّمَه في الاصطفاء فرَّقَه به المفائق وساوَرَه بالمغالب وذَلَّلَه الصعوبة وسَهلَ به الحُزُونَة حتَّى سَرَّح الضلال عن يمين وشمال.

1.212 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام وأشهد أنه عدل وحَكَّر فأل وأشهد أن تَحَمَّدَه عبده وسيّد عباده كلما نسخ الله الخلق فرقتين جعله في خيرها لم يسيهم فيه عاهر ولا ضرب فيه فاجر. ألا وإن الله جعل لغير أهل وحق دعائم وللطاعة عصا وان لم كعد كل طاعة عونا من الله يقول على الألسنة ويربت الأفئدة فيه كفاء لمكتف وشفاء لمشتف. وأعلموا أن عباد الله المستحقّين عليه يصونون مصون ويفجرون عيونه يتواصلون بالولاية ويتلاقوان بالبحبة ويتسلقو يكأس رواية ويصدرون برية لا تشوبهم الريبة ولا تسرع فيهم الغيبة على ذلك عقد خلقهم وأخلااقهم فعليه يجابون وبه يتواصلون فكانوا كشفة التأثير مَنْ يتقيد منه ويملق قد ميّزه التخليص وذهبه التحفيص. فقِيَّلَ أَمْرُ كَرَامَة بقعلا وليذير قارعة قبل حوله ولينظ الخروج أمره في قصير أيامه وقيل مقامه في منزل حتى يستبدل به منزل فليصنع لمتحوله ومعرف منتقله. فطُوَّبَ لذي قلب سليم أطاع من يهدّيه وتجَّب من يرده وأصاب سبيل السلامة بيصر من بصره وطاعة هاد أمره وبادر الهدى قبل أن تغلق أبوابه وتقطع أسبابه وأستفتح التوبة وأمامات الحَوْب قَدَ أَقِم على الطريق وهدي نهج السبيل.

1.213 ومن ذكرائه عليه السلام
God sent him with light and precedence among his select. Through him, God repaired torn ties, fought off powerful enemies, made the unruly tractable, and smoothed rough ground—until he had dispelled error from the right and from the left.

1.212 From an oration by ʿAlī:
I testify that God is the fount of justice who always gives justice, the judge whose judgment is final. I testify that Muḥammad is his servant, and the chief among his servants. Whenever God divided a blood line into two, he placed Muḥammad in the best line; no fornicator ever had a share in producing him, nor an adulterer any part. Harken to me! God has created upholders of good, pillars of right, and guardians for acts of obedience. When you perform an act of obedience, you will find that God's aid speaks to you through people's tongues and makes your hearts steadfast—God's aid suffices those who rely on it and cures those who seek to be cured. Know this: Those whom God has entrusted with preserving his knowledge protect its fortifications, pour forth its streams, associate with each other in loyalty, meet each other with affection, offer each other refreshing cups, and leave the waterhole with their thirst quenched; doubts never plague them and backbiting never gains traction. God has bound their bodies and their character to this holy way of being, and they love each other and foster mutual regard. They are like high quality grain used for planting: first it is sorted, and the best—distinguished by purity and refined by fire—is picked out and sown into the ploughed earth. Let each man among you secure honor by adopting this counsel! Let him fear the great calamity before it descends! Let each man reflect on the shortness of his days, on the brevity of his stay, in this abode that he will soon exchange for another! Let him prepare for the journey and watch for the signs of the exodus! Blessed is the person who possesses a sound heart, obeys his guide, and shuns his destroyer, who finds the road to security through the sight bestowed on him by his teacher and obedience to the commands of his guide, who hastens to attain guidance before its doors close and its ropes sever, who knocks on the door of forgiveness and repulses sin! Such a person has been placed on the right path. He has been guided to the straight road.

1.213 From a supplication by ʿAlī:
الحمد الله الذي لم يُصبح بي ميتاً ولا سقيماً ولا مضروباً على عروقي بسوء ولا مأً خوذاً بأسوأ عملي ولا مقطوعاً دابري ولا مرتداً عن ديني ولا منكراً لربي ولا مستوحشاً من إيماني ولا ملتسماً عقلي ولا معدباً بذآب الأمم من قبل. نسخت عبداً مملوكاً ظالمًا لنفسك لَك اللَّجَه عَلي ولا جَهَّة لي لا أستطيع أن أخذ إلا ما أعطتي ولا أتقى إلا ما وقيتي. اللهم إني أعوذ بك أن أفتقر في ذلك أو أضلل في هداك أو أضام في سلطانك أو أضطهد والأمر لك. اللهم أجعل نفسي أبى كريمة تتززعها من كرائمي وأول وديعة ترجعها من وقتك، فعمك عندي. اللهم إني أعوذ بك أن تذهب عن قولك أو نفنت عن دينك. كذك أو تتبع بنا أهواؤنا دون اللهد الذي جاء من عندك.

1.214 ومن خاتمة له عليه السلام بصفين

أَمَا بَعْدَ فَقَدْ جَعَلَ اللَّهُ لَيَعْلَكَ حَقَّ بِولاَيَة أَمْرِكَ وَلَكُمْ عَلَى مِن الحَقِّ مِثْلُ الَّذِي عَلَّكَ فَاللَّهُمَّ فَأَلمَّا أَنْعَمَتْ الْأَشْيَاء فِي الْتَوَاصِفِ وَأَضْيَقَتْهَا فِي الْتَوَاصِفِ لَا يَجِرِي لَأَحَدٍ إِلَّا جَرِي عَلَيْهِ وَلَا يَجِرِي عَلَيْهِ لَكُمْ ذَلِك خَالِصًا لِلَّلَّهِ سَبِيعَهُهُ دَوُنَ خَلْقِهُ لَقَدْرَتِهِ عَلَى عَبَادِهِ وَلَعَلَّهُ فِي كَلِّ مَا جَرَتْ عَلَيْهِ صَرُف قَضَائِهِ وَلَكِنْهُ جَعَلَ حَقَّهُ عَلَى عَبَادِهِ أَنْ يَطِيعُوْهُ وَجِعَ جَزَاءَهُمْ عَلَى مُضَاعَفَة الثوَاب تفَضَّلَّا مِنْهُ وَتوْسِعَ بِما هو من المزيد أهلاً ثم جَعَلَ سَبِيعَهُهُ مِنْ حَقَّهُ حَقُوقَا أَفْتَرَضَهَا لَبِعْضِ النَّاسِ عَلَى بَعْضٍ لَجَعَلَهَا نِكَافَا في وَجُوهِهِ وَيُوضِعَ بَعْضٌ بَعْضًا وَلَا يَجِرِي بَعْضُهَا إِلَّا بَعْضًا أَعْظَمَ ما أَفْتَرَضَ.
Praise God who brought me to this morning alive and healthy with no leprosy in my veins,¹ not seized for my worst deeds, or with my line of descendants severed, or an apostate from my religion, or a denier of my Lord, or estranged from my faith, or with my mind confused, or punished with the punishment meted out to nations before me. God! I have come into this morning your servant and bondsman, one who has oppressed his own soul. You have established your case against me, while I have no case to offer you. I can take nothing except what you give me, I can protect myself against nothing except what you protect me against. God! I seek refuge in you! Let me not be poor when you possess riches. Let me not stray when you are the guide. Let me not be assaulted in the domain of your authority. Let me not be persecuted when you are the one who commands. God! Of all the precious faculties I possess, let my spirit be the first thing you wrest from me. Of all the blessings you have given me in trust, let it be the first deposit you ask to be returned. God! We seek refuge in you! Do not let us forsake your word or be lured away from your religion. Do not let our passions rush us headlong into evil, rather than being led by the guidance that has come from you.

1.214  From an oration by ‘Alī at Ṣiffīn:²

1.214.1  God has given me rights over you by placing me in charge of your affairs, and you have rights over me, just as I have over you. Rights are the broadest of things in the scope of their delineation, but the narrowest in terms of equitable application. They are never credited to any individual except that they can also be credited against him, and they are likewise never credited against him except that they can also be credited to him. If it were possible for any being to have rights credited to but not against him, that position would be reserved for Almighty God alone; it would not apply to any of his creatures because he is all-powerful over his servants and always just in enacting his decrees. But God made it his right over his servants that they obey him, while also making it incumbent upon himself to recompense them with manifold reward through the abundant generosity and expansive bounty only he can bestow.

Then, as part of God’s own rights, he mandated rights for some people over others. He balanced these rights in their various aspects, making some entail others, and some not be entailed except by others. The greatest of his mandated rights are those of the ruler over his subjects and those of subjects over

¹  Ar. sūʾ, lit. “with my veins being hit with evil,” translation based on Ḥ 11:85, who says that “evil” was a euphemism for “leprosy” (baraṣ).
² In 37/657.
 سبحانه: من تلك الحقوق حق الوالي على الرغبة وحق الرغبة على الوالي فريضة فرصها الله
 سبحانه: كلى على كل منفعها نظامًا لأنفسهم وعزّ الدينهم فليست تصلح الرغبة إلا بصلاح
 الولاة ولا تصلح الولاة إلا باستقامة الرغبة. فإذا أدّت الرغبة إلى الوالي حقه وأدى
 الوالي إليها حقه عرّ الحدق بينهم وقامت مناهج الدين وأعادت معامل العدل وجرت
 على أذالها السين فصلح بذلك الزمان وطمّع في بقاء الدولة ويتمست مطامع الأعداء.
 وإذا غلب السين وعليها أو أحّج الوالي برعيته أختلفت تلك الكلمة وظهرت معالم
 الجور وكثرت الإدغال في الدين وتّركت ظاج السين فعل بالهوى وعُلّقت الأحكام
 وكثرت علّ النفوس فلا يُستوحش لعظم حق عاقل ولا لعظم باطل فعمل فهنالك
 تذّل الأبار وتعزّ الأشرار وتعظم ذكات الله عند العباد.

 فعليكم بالتأتي في ذلك وحسن التعاون عليه فليس أحد وإن أشتد على رضي الله
 حرصه وطال في العمل أجهاده ببالغ حقّيقيه ما الله أهله من الطاعة له ولكن من
 واجب حقوقيات الله على العباد النصيحة ببلغ جهدهم والتعاون على إقامة الحق بينهم.
 وليس أمرأء وإن عظمت في الحق منزلته وتقدّمت في الدين فضيلته فقوّى أن يعان على
 ما حمله الله من حقه ولا أمرأء وإن صغرته النفوس واقتحمته العيون فدّون أن يعين على
 ذلك أو يعان عليه.

 1.214.2 فأجابه رجل من أصحابه بكلام طويل يكثر فيه التناء عليه ويذكر سمعه وطاعته له فقال:
 عليه السلام
 إنّ من حق من عظم جلال الله في نفسه وجلّ موضعه من قبل أن يصغر عنه لعظم
 ذلك كل ما سواء وإنّ أحق من كان كذلك لأن عظمت نعمة الله عليه ولطف
 إحسانه إليه فإنّ لم تعظم نعمة الله على أحد إلاّ أزداد حق الله عليه عظّمًا. وإنّ من
 أخفى حالات الولاة عند صالح الناس أن يظلّم بهم حضب الفخر ويوضع أمرهم على
 الكبير وقد كرهت أن يكون جال في ظلمّ أنّ أحبّ الإطاء وأستماع النساء ولست
 بمحمد الله كذلك ولو كنت أحب أن يقال ذلك تتركه أخطئًا لله سبحانه عن تناول
their ruler. This is a duty that God has mandated for everyone over everyone, in a system that generates mutual regard and strengthens Islam. For subjects will not be righteous except when their ruler is righteous, and a ruler will not be righteous except when his subjects are steadfast. If subjects render the ruler his rights and the ruler renders them theirs, truth will become strong, the ways of religion will be established, the waymarks of justice will be fixed, and the road of the Sunnah will become easy to follow. Thereby, the age will become virtuous, the state can be expected to remain stable, and its enemies’ ambitions will be thwarted. But if subjects overpower their ruler, or if the ruler overburdens his subjects, voices will be divided, oppression will rage, religious corruption will increase, and the straight road will be abandoned. Then, passions will drive actions, rules will be forsaken, and hearts will become diseased. People will cease to be outraged even when essential rights are abandoned, or great injustices perpetrated. In that moment, the pious will be shamed and the evil honored, and God will afflict his servants with great punishments.

People, counsel one another in this matter and help one another as you should. No one, no matter how strong his wish to secure God’s pleasure, or how far-reaching his efforts in doing good, is capable of rendering to God the obedience that is truly his due. God has mandated as a right for himself over his servants that they counsel one another as much as they are able, and help one another in establishing what is proper. No man, no matter how great his station in truth, or how superior his precedence in religion, is above needing help in establishing God’s charge. And no man, no matter how servile people might think him, or how humble he may appear to their eyes, is too lowly to help in this, or to be helped.

1.214.2 One of ʿAlī’s associates responded with a long speech, in which he praised ʿAlī profusely and declared that he would hear and obey, to which ʿAlī countered:

Those who feel God’s majesty in their souls and his grandeur in their hearts should find all else insignificant by comparison; those who have received his great blessings and sublime favors should be the most assiduous in this regard, for when God’s blessings for a person increase, God’s rights over him also increase. The pious would say that it is the most foolish rulers who crave acclaim and who ground their authority in pride, so I am mortified that you thought your adulation and praise would please me. But, by God’s grace, I am not that man. Even if I had relished that kind of speech, I would have set it aside in submission to God, not daring to stretch my hand toward that greatness and

1 Text of the man’s full speech reported by Kulaynī, Kāfī, 5352.
ما هو أحقّ به من العظمة والكبرياء. وربما أستحلِّ الناس الثناء بعد البلاء فلا تُنزَّل على بُعْجَم ثنائي لإخراجي نسي إلى الله وإليكم من البيقّة في حقوق لم أُفرَّغ من أدائها وفرائد لا بد من إيضاحها. فلا تكتموني بتكمَّلُهم الجبنية ولا تخفّفوا مني بمَّائحتهم. عند أهل البادرة ولا تخلطوا بالمُضيف ولا تظُّنوا في استقلاال الحق قبل لي ولا أتمّاس إخراجي نسي فإنه من أستقل الحق أن يقول له أو العدل أن يعرض عليه كان العمل بهما عليه أثقل. فلا تكفوا عن مقالة بحث أو مشورة بعد قَلِّي لست في نسي بمَّائحتهم أن أخطئ ولا آمن داز فعلي إلاّ أن يكني الله من نسي مى هو أملك به مَّني. فإمّا أنا وأتّم عبيد مملوكون لرب لا رب غيره يملك منا ما لا تملك من أنفسنا وأخرجنا ما كَّنا فيه إلى ما صلحتنا عليه فأبدلنا بعد الضلال بالهدى وأعطانَا البصيرة بعد العمي.

1.215

ومن كلام له عليه السلام

1.215.1 اللهم إنّي أستعديك على قريش فإنّهم قد قطعنوا رحمي وكتُبوا إناني وأجموا على منازعتي حقًا كنت أولي به من غيري وقولوا ألا إن في الحق أن أتّخذ في الحق أنّكم فاصير ممّومًا أو مُّتَّماشًا. فنظرت فإذا ليس لي رافد ولا ذاب ولا مساعد إلا أهل بيتي فضنت بهم عن الدنيا وأغثيت على القُدّر وجرعت رقيًا على الشجاع Ward من كَّتِب النفي على أمَّر من العلماء وألِّم للقلب من حَرّ السئَّار. وقد مضى هذا الكلام في أثناء خطة متقدّمة إلاّ أتّي كُرّته هَنَا لاختلاف الروائيين.

1.215.2

وش، هّ، مصححة في ش. كما ن، وأصل ش، ونسخة في ه: "التأثِّر".
glory of which he is far worthier than I. It may be that some people do find praise sweet after achieving an intensely contested victory, but don’t shower me with praise just yet for having fought in God’s cause and yours—I still have many obligations to discharge and many requirements to fulfill. Don’t address me as you would tyrants, don’t be wary of me as you would those quick to anger, don’t try to influence me with flattery. Don’t think, moreover, that I should be pained by a word spoken to me in truth, or that I should think myself above it. Anyone who finds the truth painful to hear, who is angered when presented with a sound opinion, will find action even harder. Don’t hold back from telling me the truth or offering good counsel, for I don’t consider myself above error, nor do I count myself safe in my actions, except that God, who has the power to do so, will save me, I know. You and I are his slaves and bondsmen, there is no Lord other than he—he owns us more surely than we own ourselves. He brought us out from where we were to a better place, replacing our error with guidance, and our blindness with sight.

1.215 From an address by ‘Alī:

1.215.1 God! I ask your help against the Quraysh! They have severed my kinship, upended my vessels, and banded together to wrest from me a right that I have always been worthier of than any other. They mocked, “A right may be taken, and a right may also be denied, so bear your grief, or die lamenting!” I looked around and saw no supporter, no protector, no helper other than my own family, and I chose to save them from sure death. I closed my eyes tight against the dust, choked on my saliva, and swallowed my anger, in a state that was more bitter than colocynth and caused my heart more anguish than a knife wound.

Raḍī: These lines were seen in an earlier oration—I have repeated them here because some language is different.

---

1 The Shi’i commentators see this line as evidence of ‘Alī’s humility (R 2:357; B 650). The Sunni commentator interprets it as an admission of fallibility (Ḥ 11:107–108).

2 Some sources transcribe this text as part of an epistle ‘Alī sent to be read out in public to his supporters following ‘Amr ibn al-‘Āṣ’s killing of Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr in Egypt in 38/658 (‘Thaqafī, Ghārāt, 1:302, 308, 314; Ibn Ṭāwūs, Kashf, 174, 180). It refers to the succession after the Prophet’s death in 11/632 and also to the Shūrā Council that appointed ‘Uthmān in 23/644. The text could have been first delivered as an oration, then transcribed and disseminated as an epistle. It could also be that the historians are unsure about the genre because excerpts from orations and epistles from the early period are stylistically quite similar. See discussion of this similarity in Qutbuddin, Arabic Oration, 416–419.

3 First half of § 1.215.1 in § 1.170.3, second half in § 1.26.2.
1.215.2 ومنه في ذكر السائحين إلى البصرة لحريه
فقدمو على عبّالي وجزيرة مال المسلمين الذي في يدي وعلى أهل مصر كلهم في طاعتي
وعلى بيعتي فشّشوا كلهم وأفسدوا علي بحاجاتهم ووقفوا على شيعتي فقتنوا طائفة منهم.
غدرنا وطائفة عضوا على أسياحهم فضاروا بها حتى لقوا الله صادقين.

1.216 ومن كلام له عليه السلام لما مر بطنحة وعبد الرحمن بن عطاب بن أسد وها قتيلا
يوم الجمل
لقد أصبح أبو محمد بهذه المكان غريبًا أما والله لقد كنت أكره أن تكون قريش قتلى
تحت بطن الكواكب أدركت وترى من بني عبد مناف وألفتني أعينًا بن جمجم.
لقد أتلهوا أعناقهم إلى أمر لم يكونوا أهله فوقعوا دونه.

1.217 ومن كلام له عليه السلام
قد أحيا عقله وأمات نفسه حتى دق جليله ولفظ غليظه وبرق له لامع كثير البرق
فأبان له الطريق وسلكه به سبيله وتدارعته الأبواب إلى باب السلامه ودار الإقامة
وثبتت رجلا بكتاب نبأده في قرار الأمن والراحة بما استعمل قلبه وأرضي ربه.

1.218 ومن كلام له عليه السلام بعد تلاوته «أيها كثر التكاثر حتى زرمت المفارث».

۱، ش، ي، ومصبححة في ه: كذا، م، وأصل ه، ومصاححة في ش، ونسخة في ي مع تعليق
معًا: «أعيان»، ونسخة أخرى في ه: «أغبار».
1.215.2 From the same address, describing those who marched to Basra to fight him:¹
They advanced against my governors in Basra and the custodians of the public treasury under my jurisdiction, and against others among the townspeople—all bound to my obedience and pledged to my allegiance—creating division and fragmenting their unity. They attacked my followers, killing a group of them through treachery, while another group of loyalists gripped their swords and exchanged blows until they met God, having fought with true courage.

1.216 From words that ʿAlī spoke when he passed by the corpses of Ṭalḥah and ʿAbd al-Raḥmān ibn ʿAttāb ibn Asīd, who had been slain during the Battle of the Camel:²
Abū Muḥammad sleeps here this morning, an exile from his home! By God, I am grieved that the Quraysh should lie slain under the stars! The chieftains of Jumāḥ have escaped my grasp, but I have obtained my revenge against the clan of ʿAbd Manāf. Their necks strained after a position that did not belong to them and they were broken.

1.217 From an address by ʿAlī:
This man resuscitated his intellect and killed his sentient soul, until his body became emaciated and his frame became slight. Lightning shone in a brilliant flash that illuminated the road for him and showed the way. Doors opened before him, one after another, until they conveyed him to the door of safety and the abode of permanence. His feet stood firm, his body serene, in the stable earth of security and comfort. All this because he engaged his heart in good and pleased his Lord.

1.218 From an address by ʿAlī upon reciting, «You are obsessed with gathering more and more until you visit your graves.»³

---

¹ Some lines of § 1.215.2 also in § 1.170.3.
² Outside Basra, in 36/656. Abū Muḥammad is Ṭalḥah. ʿAbd Manāf—to which ʿAlī’s and the Prophet Muḥammad’s clan of Hāshim also belonged—was a sub-tribe of the Quraysh. At the Battle of the Camel, the ʿAbd Manāf clansmen killed fighting ʿAlī included ʿAbd al-Raḥmān ibn ʿAttāb, from the clan of Umayyah (H 11:123–124); Ṭalḥah and Zubayr—from the clans of Taym and Asad respectively—were also descended from ʿAbd Manāf on their mothers’ side (B 652). Jumāḥ was another sub-tribe of Quraysh, and, although some of its chieftains were killed, others, including ʿAbdallāh ibn Ṣafwān and ʿAbd al-Raḥmān ibn Ṣafwān, fled; Marwān ibn Ḥakam, also from Jumāḥ, was captured and pardoned (B 652; H 11:125; see also § 1.70).
³ Qurʾan, Takāthur 102:1–2.
218.1 يالله مَرَأَمَا ما أبَعْدَه وَزُوَّرَوْا مَا أُغْفِله وَخُطَّر مَا أَفْقِهِ لَقَدَ أَسْتَخْلَلُوا مِنْهُمْ أَيْ مْعِنْكِ وَتَنَاوْسُهُمْ مِنْ مَكَانِ بَعْدَ أَفْمَصْارِعِ أَبِيَّمُهُمْ يَفْخَرُونَ أَمْ بَعْدَ الْمَلِكِ يَنتمُونَ بِرَجُوْنَ مِنْهُمْ أَجْسَاسًا حَوَّرَتْ وَحُرُكَاتْ سَكْنَتْ وَلَوْ أَنْ كَيْنَا عِيْراً أَحْقَ منْ أَنْ يَكُونَا مُفْتَخِرَاً وَلَانَ يَبِطْوُا بِهِمْ جَنَابٍ ذَلِكَ أَحْجِي مِنْ أَنْ يَقُومُوا بِهِمْ مَقَامَ عَرْة. لَقَدْ نَظَرُوا إِلَيْهِمْ بِأَبِصَارِ الْعَشْوَةِ وَضَرَبُوا مِنْهُمْ فِي عَمَرةِ جَهَالَةٍ وَلَوْ أَسْنَطْقُوا عَنْهُمْ عِرْصَاتَ تَلَكَ الْدِّيَارِ الخَاوِيةِ وَالْرَبْعَ، الخَالِيةَ لَقَالَتْ ذِهِبَوا فِي الْأَرْضِ صَلَالَ أَوْ ذَهَبَتْ فِي أَعْقَابِهِمْ جَهَالَةً تَطْوُؤُنَّ فِيهِمْ وَتَسْتَنِبُونَ فِي أَجْسَاسِهِمْ وَتَرْثَعُونَ فِيهِمْ لَقِيَّاً وَتَسْكُنُونَ فِيهِمْ خَرْيَاءً.

وَإِنَّمَا الْأَيَّامِ بِبَيْنِهِمْ بَالْكِ وَتَوْانُ عَلِيُّكَ.

218.2 أولئك سلف غايتكم وفرّط منهاهلكم الذين كانت لهم مقاوم العزّ وحلبات التفخ ملوكًا وسُوقًا سلكوا في بطن الْبُرَّزِ فِي سِبَالِ سُلْطَتِ الأَرْضِ عليهم فيه فأكلت من خؤومهم وشربت من دمائمهم فأصبحوا في جفوت قبورهم جامدًا لا يَمْسَ وَضَمْرًا لا يوجدون لا يفزعهم ورود الأهل ولا يخزّنهم تَكُّر الأحواز ولا يخفون بالرواجف ولا يأذوون لُفْوَاصِف غيابًا لا يُنْتَظرون وشُهُدًا لا يُخْضَرون وَأَيُّما كَأْنَا فَقْنِشْتُوا وَأَلَا فَأَقْرَءْوَا. وما عن طول ظهدهم ولا بعد خُلُصهم عيَّن أَخْبَارهم وحَصَّت ديارهم ولكنهم سَعُقو كَأْنَا بِدَلَّتِهِم بِالنَّطِقِ خَرَسًا وَبَالسُّمَّ عَصْمًا وَالحَرَّاكاتْ سَكُونًا فَكَأْنِهِمْ فِي أَرْجُالٍ الصَّفَنة عَرْسِي سَبَعَ جَيْهَانَ لَيْتَأْسِيْنَ وَحَجِبُوا لا يَتَزَوَّرُون بَلْ بْيَتُهُمْ عَرْيَ الْتَعَارِف وَأَتَقَطَّعْتُمْ مِنْهُمْ أَسْبَابَ الإِخْوَةِ فِكّلِّهِمْ وَحِيدٌ وَهُمْ جَمِيع وَيَجِبُ الْمَجْرُ وَهُمْ أَخَلَاء لا يَعْتَفَرُون لِلْلَّيْلِ صَبَاحًا لَا لَنْهَار مَسَاءٍ أَيُّ الْجَدِّينِ ظَلَّعُوا فِيْهِ كَانَ عَلَيْهِمْ سَرْمَدًا شَاءَدُوا مِنْ أَخْطَارُ دَارِهِمْ أَفْظُل مَمَّا خَافُوْ وَرَاوْا مِنْ أَيْتَمَّهَا أُعْزُمُ مَمَّا قَدْ رَوَاهُ فَكَلاً

العاين يُدْنِهُمْ لِمَتَّةٍ فَتَتْ مَبَانِي النَّفْوِ وَالرِّجَاءِ.

١، مِّيَ، وَمَصِحَّةٌ فِي هِدْ: كَذَا. ش، ن، وَأَصُلُّ هُدْ: سَقْطَتْ جَهَالَةٌ. ١٠٠، ش، ي، وَهُدْ: كَذَا مَرْسُومٌ. ١٠١، م، مِّ وَمَصِحَّةٌ فِي شِ نُكَذَا. يِ، وَأَصُلُّ ش، ن: [ْتَسْتَنِبُونَ]. ١٠٢، مِّيَ، هْ: كَذَا ن، وَنَسْخَةٌ فِي شَ: أَرْجَالُ. ١٠٣، مِّ، ش، ي، وَمَصِحَّةٌ فِي نُ وَنَسْخَةٌ فِي. ١٠٤، هْ: كَذَا. هْ، وَأَصُلُّ ن، وَنَسْخَةٌ فِي شَ: [ْالْفُوْتِ].

al-Sharīf al-Raḍī - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
1.218.1 What a goal, and how distant! What a visitor, and how heedless! What a danger, and how terrible! You reckless people have emptied your minds of every lesson the dead could teach you but have seized on their ancient glories! Is it of the felling of your forebears that you boast? Or about the large numbers of their dead that you crow? You attempt to resurrect those spiritless corpses and stilled movements—they should be harsh lessons for you rather than a source of pride, more correctly denigrating to a place of shame than elevated to a position of honor! You view the deceased with night-blind eyes and plunge with them into the deep waters of ignorance. But if you were to ask their ruined homes and empty courtyards about them, they would answer: “They were laid in the earth in their error, and you follow in their footsteps in your ignorance. You trample on their skulls and grow crops in their corpses. You pasture on grass growing from their bodies and inhabit what they laid waste. The days will weep and wail over you, just as they wept and wailed over them.”

1.218.2 They have preceded you to the destination that you too will reach. They are the early arrivals scouting out your watering hole. Rulers or subjects in this life, they grasped ploughshares of might and raced steeds of pride. Then they journeyed into the belly of the earth, where she took over, eating their flesh and drinking their blood. Morning dawned on them, inert in the clefts of their graves, a mortgage that could not be recovered. Now, the onset of dangers terrifies them no more, worsening conditions cause them no grief, they are neither shaken by earthquakes nor do they heed claps of thunder, they have vanished and are no longer awaited, they are present yet do not appear, they were all together, but now are fragmented, they were friends, but now they are separated. Their stories are forgotten and their homes silent, but not because of the time that has passed or the distance of their abodes. They have been given a cup to drink that has made their tongues dumb, their ears deaf, and their movements still—a passing observer would describe them as deep in slumber, but they are neighbors who do not give each other comfort, friends who no longer visit, the ropes of affection between them have frayed, the ties of brotherhood are severed, each of them is alone, though they are all together, each of them is forsaken, though they are all fellows. They do not recognize the morning after the night, or the evening after the day, whichever of the two they departed in, be it day or night, it stays with them forever—either they have found the dangers of their new abode far more terrifying than they had feared, or they have seen its blessed signs to be far greater than they had anticipated. Both destinations are a home whose reality surpasses all fear and all hope.

---

1 Reference to Qur’an, Saba’ 34:52.
1.218.3 فلو كانوا ينطقون بها لُعِبَوا بصفة ما شاهدوا وما عاينوا ولائ عُميت آثارهم 
وأنقطعت أخبارهم لقد رجعت فيهم أصام العبر وسمعت عنهم آذان العقول وتكبوا 
من غير جهات النطق فقالوا كلّحة الوجه النواضر وخرجت الأجسام النواعم وليستا 
أهادام إلي وتكبّذنا ضيق المضعم وتوترنا الوحشة وتهيّئت علينا الربيع الصموت 
فتّاحت محاكم أجسادنا وتنكرت معافر صورنا وطال في مساكن الوحشة إقامتنا 
ولم نجد من كرب فرجا ولا من ضيق متسعا. فلو مثّتبهم بعقال أو كشف عنهم موجب 
العطاء لك وقد أرسخت أسماعهم باللهوم فأمستك وأكتشف أبصارهم بالتراب 
خففت وتقتطعت الأسئلة في أفواهم بعد ذللوها وهمدت القلوب في صدورهم بعد 
يظتها واعث في كل جارحة منهم جديد لي سمّتها وسّل طرق الأفآفة إليها مستسلمات 
فلا أغز يدفع ولا قلوب تجزع لا أت لأسنان قلوب وأقذاء عيون. لهم في كلّ فظاعة صفة 
حال لا تنتقل وعمرة لا تنتهي.

1.218.4 فقلم أكمل الأرض من عزيج جسد وأتيق لون كان في الدنيا غدي ترف 
وبير شرف يتعلّ بالسروري في ساعة حزنه وشيء إلى السّوأة إن مصيبة نزلت به ضنًا 
بغضارة عيبه وشجاعة بلجويه وله. فإنّه هو يضحّك إلى الدنيا وضحّك إلى ظلُّ عيش عقوله إذ وعطى الدهر به حسكة ونقضت الأيام قواه ونظرت إليه الحواف من 
كُبت نفاطلته بَتَ لا يعرفه ونحّي هم ما كان يجد وتزولت فيه قوات علّ آنس ما كان 
بصحبته فنفّع إلى ما كان عُوكّ الأطباء من تسكن الحاج بالقير وتعريز البارد بالحار 
فلم يطفّع بيار إلا ثور حارّة ولا حرك جحّر إلا هيج برودة ولا أعتمد بممازج لتلك 
الطلائع إلا أمّدمنا كلّ ذات داء حتى فتر معلله وذهل مرضه وتعاي أهل بصفة دانته 
ونحرسا عن جواب السائلين عنه وتنازعوا دونه شبي خيبركعون. فقاله هو ما له ومومن 
له إيااب عافيته ومصير لهم على فقده يذّكرهم أسي الماضي من قبله. فإنّا هو كذلك على
1.218.3 Had they been able to speak, they would have faltered in describing what they witnessed, what they saw. But even though their traces are effaced, and their stories erased, eyes that heed warnings can still see them, and ears of the intelligent can hear. For they speak to us, though without the instruments of speech, and this is what they have to say: “Our fresh faces have become foul, and our soft bodies putrid; we have donned the rags of decay, and the narrow walls of our bedchambers hem us in, we have inherited the desolate strip of the grave, and this silent bier mocks us—here the beauties of our bodies are erased, our defined features are unrecognizable. Long has been our stay in this desolate residence—we find no relief from our agony, no release from our fetters!” If you were to depict them in your imagination, or if the veil were removed and you could actually see them, this is what you would see: ears blocked up and crawling with scorpions, eyes burst open and dirt the kohl that smears them, tongues cut out after keen eloquence, hearts once vigilant fallen silent in breasts, decay, ever new, ravaging each of their limbs, making them hideous, and preparing the way for yet more calamities to attack. All this, while the dead lie submissive, hands unable to push anything away, hearts unable to recoil. You would see the real anguish in each of their hearts and the pus in each of their eyes. The abominations never move away. The pangs of horror never dissipate.

1.218.4 How completely has the earth eaten up that precious body, that elegant color that was nurtured in luxury and reared in grace! Whenever its owner was faced with grief, he would soothe himself with sensual pleasures, whenever a catastrophe descended, he would seek comforts, clinging to the freshness of his life and unwilling to give up his frolicsome play in the shade of his reckless life. But even as he smiled at the world, and even as she smiled back at him, time pierced him with its thorns, the days assaulted his senses, and death’s eyes drew ever closer. Then, a new and alien sorrow infected him, and anxieties never felt before whispered in his ear. Earlier smugly complacent about his health, disease now birthed lassitude in his body. He rushed to physicians for treatments, suppressing hot with cold and expelling cold with hot, but his attempt to extinguish hot with cold only made the heat blaze, and his attempt to expel cold with hot only made the blast more frigid—his attempt to balance the mixtures of these elements only worsened his diseased organs. Eventually, his consolers grew tired and his attendants neglectful. His family were no longer able to describe his disease, and they stopped answering any who inquired about his condition. They argued among themselves about the gravity of his condition and concealed their thoughts from him. One said, “His disease will take him.” Another spoke hopefully of recovery. A third urged the family to bear his loss with patience, reminding them of how generations had borne losses in the past.
جَنَاحٌ من فراق الدنيا وترك الأخبَة إذ عرض له عارض من غُصصه فتحيّرت نواذ
فظنته ووُضِعت رطوبة لسانه فَكَم من حَمٍ فَعَّاضه عن رده ودعاؤهم لقلبه
سمعه فقتام عنده من كبير كان يغصمه أو صغير كان يرحمه. وإن للموت لعمات هي
أفحف من ان تُسَطر بصفة أو تعتدل على عقول أهل الدنيا.

ومن كلام له عليه السلام عند تلاوته: "رَجُالٌ لا تُثِيبهم بِجَاهَةٍ ولا بِعِينٍ عَن ذِكْرِ اللَّهِ".

١.٢١٩

إِنَّ اللَّهَ سَيِّئَانَه جَعَلَ الذُّکِر جِلَاءً للقَلْوَب تَسَمِّع به بِعِينَةٍ وتَبصِر به بِعِينَةٍ
العِشَّة وَتَتَفَقَّد به بِعِينَةٍ وما يَهِر اللَّه عَرَّت آلِهٔ في الْبَرْحَة بِعِينَةٍ وِرَبَّه
الفَتْرَات عَبِيد نَاجِهِم فِي فَتْرَات وَكَلَّمِهم فِي آيَةٍ فَأَصْبَحُوا بِنَور يَقَظِّةٍ فِي
الأَسْمَاع وَالأَبْصَار وَالْأَفْتِدَة يَذْكَرُون بِيَٰمِ اللَّهِ وِيَخْفُون مُقَامِه بِمَسْتَعِدةٍ فِي
الْقَلَّوَاتِ مِن أَخْذِ الْقَصَدٍ حَمَّداً إِلَيْهِ رِيَايَةٍ وَبَشَّرُوه بِالْجَهَةَ وَمِن أَخْذِ يِمِينٍ وَشَمَالٍ ذَّمَّوا إِلَيْهِ
الطَّرِيق وَحِدّّرُوه مِن الْهَلْكَة وَكَانُوا كَذَلِك مُسَابِحٍ فِي الْقَلَّوَاتِ وَأَذُلَّة تَأْلِفُهُم
إِنَّ اللَّذَّكِر لَأَهْل أَخْذِهِم مِن الدَّنِينَة بَلَّاء فَلْتَشَغَّلُهُمْ تَجَارِيَّة وَلَا بِعِينٍ
الحِيَّة وَيَهْيَنُون بِالْزَّوَارِج عَن مَّحَارِم اللَّه فِي أَسْمَاعِ الغَافِلِين وَيَأْمَرُون بِالْقَسْط وَيَأْمَرُون
بِهِ وَيَهْيَنُون عَن الْمَنْكَر وَيَتَنَأُون عَنْهُ فَكَأَنَّمَا قَطَعُوا الدَّنِينَة إِلَى الْآخِرَة وَهُمْ فِيْهَا فَشَاهُدُوا مَا
وُءَرَ ذَلِكَ وَكَأَنَّمَا أَطْلَعُوا غِيْبَ أُحِلَ الْبَرْزُخ في طُولِ الإِقَامَة فِيهِ وَحَقِّقَت الْقِيَامَة عَلَيْهِمِ
While this man was thus perched on the wing of departure from the world and of separation from loved ones, a sudden obstruction choked his throat. His acumen turned to bewilderment and the saliva dried up on his tongue. How many an important answer he knew but was unable to give! How many an entreaty pained his heart, but he was forced to turn a deaf ear! A question coming from an elder whom he revered, an appeal from a young one whom he loved! Truly, the pangs of death are too terrible to be contained in any description, or to be grasped by the minds of the living.

1.219 From an address by ʿAlī upon reciting, «They are men whom neither commerce nor trade distracts from God’s remembrance.»

1.219.1 God has made his remembrance the burnish for your hearts—with it, you can hear after your earlier deafness, see after your earlier night-blindness, and quieten after your earlier recalcitrance. Age after age, even in periods of dormancy, God communicates with certain servants whose minds he speaks to and whose intellects he engages, who kindle bright lamps of vigilance in people’s ears, eyes, and hearts. God’s gifts are precious! Guides in the wilderness, his chosen men remind the nations of his special days, and warn them that their meeting with him is near. They praise those who keep to the middle road and give them tidings of salvation, they censure those who stray to the right and the left and caution them against damnation—in this way, they serve as lamps in times of darkness and guides in periods of doubt. Remembrance is the province of men who consider it fair exchange for worldly chattels, neither commerce nor trade distracts them from it. They traverse their days always remembering God, crying warnings against the illicit to the ears of the heedless, commanding justice and undertaking it, forbidding evil and staying away from it. You would think they have already cut through the world to the hereafter and are there now, as though they have already witnessed what is beyond the grave. You would think they were privy to the mysteries of the Barzakh from

---

1 Qurʾan, Nūr 24:37. On this oration, see Shah-Kazemi, Justice and Remembrance, 134–207.
2 “Remembrance” (dhikr) refers to (1) remembering God with the heart and with the tongue (H 11:78; R 2:381; ‘A 668); and, specifically, (2) the Qurʾan (B 658–659), among whose names is “The Wise Remembrance (al-Dhikr al-ḥakīm),” which reminds people of God.
3 Lit. “God’s days” (ayyām Allāh), were either (1) days of calamity when retribution descended on past nations who defied God (R 2:382; B 659), or (2) days that God had consecrated for his worship.
لا يوجد نص يمكن قراءته بشكل طبيعي من الصورة المقدمة.
long residence in it, as though they have already seen the resurrection fulfilling its promise. These men draw back the veil for the living, until those who heed them see what most cannot see and hear what most cannot hear.

1.219.2 You will see the strength of their piety if you picture them in their praiseworthy standings and laudable sittings. You will see them as they unfold the registers of their deeds and apply themselves to reckoning their accounts; as they list every small and large deed they were commanded to perform but fell short in accomplishing, and note every one they were forbidden but transgressed; as they feel the weight of their sins on their backs, but find themselves too weak to bear the burden; as they sob then and choke with tears, and wail to one another, and cry out to their Lord from repentance and recognition. You will see that they are true banners of guidance and lamps in the darkness, shaded by angels, enveloped by gentle calm, awaited by heaven’s open doors. There, they are promised seats of high honor near God—he will be pleased with their deeds and praise their efforts, and they will surely inhale the wafting fragrance of his pardon. In this world, they choose to remain hostage to his generosity and captives to his majesty. Long repentance has wounded their hearts and long weeping has wounded their eyes. Their hand knocks ceaselessly at every door of divine supplication—and surely, they petition the one whose generosity never fades, whose suppliants are never rebuffed. O listener, call yourself to account for your own soul! Other souls have a reckoner other than you.

1.220 From an address by ʿAlī upon reciting, «O human, what has deceived you into neglecting your Generous Lord?»

1.220.1 Of all who could be questioned, you have the most unstable arguments and the most deficient excuses, your ignorance of yourself is extreme—O human, what has emboldened you to sin, what has deceived you into neglecting your Lord, what has made you complacent about the damnation of your soul? Will you not cure yourself of your disease, will you not wake from your slumber, will you not feel compassion for your own soul as you have compassion for others? You see a person burning in the hot sun, and you offer him shade. You see a person whose body is wracked with pain, and you weep for

---

1 “The Barzakh,” lit., “a thing that intervenes between any two things,” (Lane, Lexicon, s.v. “B-R-Z-Kh”), interpreted as the intermediary station between life on earth and the final end in hell or paradise.
2 Qur’an, Infiṭār 82:6.
وجِدِّدُكَ على مصابك وعرَّاك عن البكاء على نفسك وهي أعرَّك الأنس فيك وكيف لا يوقظك خوف بيات نزمة وقد تورَّطت بمعاصبك مدارج سلطاتك. فتداعاً من داء الفترة في قلبك بعزمية ومن كرى الغفلة في ناظرك ببئسية، وكن الله مطيعًا وذكره آمنًا وتمتل في حال تولبك عنه إقباله عليك يدعوك إلى عفوه ويتعمدك بفضله، وأنت مSELME نه عنه إلى غيره.

أعتقد من قويّ ما أكرمه وتواضعت من ضعيف ما أجرأك على معصيته وأنت في كشف ستره مقيمّ وفي سعة فضلله متوغلّ فلم يمنعك فضلله ولم يهلك عنك ستره بل لم تخل من لطفه مطرَّفٍ طين في نعمة يحدها لك أو سيئة يسرها عليك أو بلّبة يصرفها عنك فيما ظنّك به لا أطعه وأيام الله لو أن هذه الصفة كانت في متفقين في القوة متوازيين. في القدرة لكنكَّ أولاً حاكم على نفسك بذميم الأخلاق ومساوي الأعمال. وحققًا أقول ما الدنيا غريبك ولكنها أغترررت ولقد كاذفتك العظات وآذبتك على سواء ولهي بما تعدد من نزل البلاء بجسمك والتقص؛ في قوتاك أصرّق وأوفي أن تكذبك ألا تغرّك وربّ ناحي لها عادك بميث مصداق من خيرها مكدش واثن تعرّفتها في الديار الحالية والزروع الحالية لتجدُّها من حسن تذكيرك وأبلغ موعظتك بحيلة الشفيق عليك وقشيح بك ونامم دار من لفَّرض بهدا دارا وحلل من لم يوطنها محلاً وأن السعداء بالدنيا عّدًا هم الحارون منها اليوم إذا رجفت الراجفة وحفت بجلالها القيامة وحق بكل منسك أهله و بكل معبد عبده و بكل مطاع أهل طاعته. فلم يجزُّ في عده وقسطه يومه خرق بصر في الهواء ولا همس قدم في الأرض إلا بخلق قتم حجة يوم ذلك داحضة وعلائق عذر منقطعة. فتحرّ من أمرك ما يقوم به عذرك وتنبّه به جحّك وخذ ما يبقي لك مما لا يبقى له وليس لسفرك وشم برق النجاة وأرحل مطايا التشمير.

ن، ش، ه: كذا م، ي: (النقض).
him. What has made you so stoic about your own disease, so forbearing in your own affliction, so resigned that you do not weep for your own soul? It is surely the most precious of all souls to you! How is it that fear of a sudden strike in the night does not keep you awake, when your sins have hurled you into the path of God’s assaults? Renew your resolve and vigilance, O human, cure your heart of apathy and your eyes of slumber. Obey God and take comfort in his remembrance! While you are turning away from him, picture him turning to you, calling you to his forgiveness, covering you with his generosity, even as you turn from him to another.

1.220.2 How exalted is God, how strong, how generous! How lowly you are, how weak, how brazen! You continue to disobey him while you enjoy his shelter, while you live in the shade of his expansive generosity, yet he neither holds back his gifts nor rends the veil he has drawn. Never, even for the blink of any eye, are you deprived of his many kindnesses—here he bestows a favor, there he conceals a transgression, here again he turns a calamity away from you. How do you think he will treat you then if you obey him? By God, if this situation obtained among two individuals equal in strength and identical in power, you would be the first to condemn yourself for your immoral traits and wicked deeds!

I say this truly: The world has not deceived you, it is you who have chosen to be deceived. She, in fact, has given you open counsel and fair warning. In all that she promises—of affliction attacking your body and your strength waning—she is too true, too faithful to lie or deceive. How many counsellors she sent have you accused of falsehood? How many reports she recounted have you refused to believe? If you were to seek knowledge of her reality in her empty homes and abandoned courtyards, you would discover through these striking reminders and far-reaching counsel that the world feels only compassion for you and deep caring. O how good a home she is for those who don't want her as their home! How good an abode she is for those who don't adopt her as their native land! Those who flee from the world today are those to whom she will grant true happiness tomorrow. This, when the earth convulses at the blast of the trumpet, when the resurrection with its great calamities arrives, when all followers are given over to the rites they followed, all worshippers are given over to the deities they worshipped, and all who obeyed are given over to those they obeyed. That day, in the realm of God’s fairness and justice, every glance of an eye, every tread of a foot, will be requited with its due. How many arguments will be refuted on that day, how many trailing excuses will be severed! Follow a course, then, that will support your account and prove your claim. Take provisions that will remain for you, from this place in which you will not remain. Prepare for your journey. Seek the rain-giving lightning of salvation. Saddle the steeds of readiness.
1.221.1
وَلاَّ اللَّهُ لَنَ أَبْيَتُ عَلَى هَسَّكَ السَّعدَان مَسِهَّدٍ وَأَجَرٍّ في الأَغْلَال مَصَفَّدٌ أَحْبَ.
إِلَّيُّ مِن أَنْ أَلْقَى اللَّهُ وَرَسُولُهُ يَوْمَ الْقِيَامَةِ ظَلَمًا لِبعْضِ الْعَبَّادَ وَعَاشِبًا لِشَيْءٍ مِنَ الْحُطَامِ
ويرجع إلى القيامة ليطول في الترى حواله.

1.221.2
وَلَكَ لَنَأْتَ عَقِبًا وَقَدْ أَمْلِقَ هَنَّ يِبَصَتَ أَرْبَعَةٌ فَعَأَجَّ الْمَوْظُولَ وَعَادَتْ مَعْلَمٌ مَثْنَى وَكَرَرَ عَلَّ اَلْقُولْ مَرْدًادًا فَأَصْغَى إِلَيْهِ سَمِيعًا فَخَطَّلَ أَنَّ أَبِيَّ مَدْرُوْ.
وَأَتَبَعَ قِبَادَةَ مَفَارِقًا طَرِيقِيَّ فَأَحْيِيَهَا هَلْ يَحْيَيْهَا تِحْدِيَّةً ثُمَّ أَدْنَى مِن أَمْلَاهَا وَكَادَ أَنْ يُخْرِقَ مِنْ مِسْمِكِهَا. فَقَلَّتْ لَكِنْتُكَ الْفَوْلُ كَلِّيٌّ يَعْقِبُ أَنَّمِنْ حَدِيَّةٍ أَحْمَاهَا إِنْسَأْهَا
للعبة وهجرها إلى نار بجرها جبارها لغضبه أست من الأذى ولا أست من لقين.

1.221.3
وَأَجْعَبَ مِن ذَلِكَ طَرِقًا طَرِقًا بَعَظِفَةٍ وَوِعَاهَا وَمُجَوَّاةً بَشَرَى بَشَرَى كَأَنَا بُعْعَتْ
بِرَيق حَيَاةٍ أَوْ خَيْرًا فَقَلَتْ أَصْلَةَ أَمْ زَكَاةَ أَمْ صَدَقَة فَذَلِكَ مُحَرِّمُ عَلَى أَهْلِ الْبَيْتِ فَقَالَ لَا ذَا
ولَا ذاك ولكنها هديها فقَلَتْ هَيْ لَكَ الْمُهْوِلْ أَنْ ذَيَّلُ اللَّهُ أَنْ تَخْدَعَنِي أَعْتَبِثَ أَمْ ذَا
جَنَّةُ أَمْ تَهْجِرُ. وَاللَّهُ لَوْ أَعْطِيتِ الأَقَالِيم السَّبْعَة بِما جَتَّ أَفَلاَكَا عَلَى أَنْ أَعْصِي اللَّهُ فِي مَلَكَة
1.221 From an address by ʿAlī:¹

1.221.1 By God! I would prefer to lie on a bed of three-pronged Saʿdān thorns and be dragged along the ground in iron fetters than to meet God and his Messenger on the day of resurrection having oppressed any of his servants or having usurped any part of any person’s property! How could I oppress someone to benefit a body that is part of a caravan speeding toward decay, which will long reside inside the belly of the earth!

1.221.2 By God! I saw ʿAqīl, in his dire poverty, begging me for a measure of wheat from the treasury, and I saw his children, ashen from destitution, as if their faces had been blackened with indigo.² He implored, he insisted, he entreated over and over, and since I listened, he assumed I would sell out my religion. He thought I’d be led by his rope and step off my path. I wanted him to understand. I heated an iron bar and brought it close to his body, and he screamed in pain, as if stabbed by the pangs of an excruciating illness. “May your women mourn you, ʿAqīl!” I cried, “How do you bawl so from the pain inflicted by an iron that a human has carelessly heated, while you drag me into the Fire of Wrath stoked by the All-Powerful Lord? How is it that you scream from this small injury and think I should not scream from the flames of hell?”

1.221.3 Even stranger is the case of the night visitor who brought me a gift wrapped in a box, a cake that I found as hateful as though it had been kneaded with the venom or bile of a snake.³ “Is this an offering to curry favor, or the alms-levy, or charity?” I asked him, “for all those are forbidden to us, the Prophet’s household.” “It is none of those, but a free gift,” he replied. I rebuked him then, “May your mother lose you! Have you come to lead me astray from God’s religion? Has the devil touched you, or the jinn? Are you in a state of delirium?”⁴ By God, if I were given the earth’s seven climes and everything that lies below the celestial spheres in exchange for disobeying God in something as paltry as snatching the husk of a single grain of barley from the mouth

¹ Presumably in Kufa after the arbitration in 37/658, since ʿAqīl (mentioned at § 1.221.2) then went to Muʿāwiyah for help.
² ʿAqīl ibn Abī Ṭālib was ʿAlī’s brother. Details of ʿAlī’s exchange with him are related in Ḥ 11:250–254; Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 125–131.
³ The “night-visitor” is said to be the Kufan notable al-ʿAsh’ath ibn Qays. Ḥ 11:247–248; B 667.
⁴ It is possible that ʿAlī’s reply to Ash’ath continues to the end of the following line, “… I should not do so.”
أرسلها جلبت شعيرة ما فعلته. وإن دنياكم عندي لأهون من ورقة في فم جرادة تقضيها، ماعلى ولنعم يقصي ولدك لا تبقى. يعود بالله من سهات العقل وقبح الزلل ونه نستعين. 

1.222 ومن دعاء له عليه السلام اللهم صن وعجي باليسار ولا تبذل جاهي بالإفتقار أسترزق طالي رزقك وأستغطف شرار خلقك وأيتي بمجدع من أعطاني وأفتتن بهم من منعني وأنت من وراء ذلك كله ولي الإعطاء والمعن \( إِنَّكَ عَلَى كُلِّ شَيْءٍ قَدِيرٍ \)

1.223 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام دار بالبلاء محفوفة وبالهدار معرفة لا تدوم أحوالها ولا يصل تزحلها أحوال مختلفة وتاريات متصرف العيش فيها مدموم والأمان منها معدوم وأيما أهلها فيها أعراض مستهدفة ترهم بسهامه وتغيثهم جميعها، وآثروا عباد الله أنتم وما أتم في من هذه الدنيا على سبيل من قد مضى قبلكم من كان أطول منكم أعمارًا وأعم ديارًا وأبعد آثارًا أصبحت أصواتهم هامدة ورحاهم راكدة وأجسامهم نالي وديرهم خالية وآثارهم عافية فأilstبوا بالقصور المشيدة والجريان المهدئة الصخر والأحجار المسندة والقبور اللاطئة المحددة التي قد بني على الحواش فوقها وشيء بالتراب بناها فحلها مقرب وساكنة مغرب بين أهل محلة موحشين وأهل فراع متشاغلين لا يتأسسون بالأوطان ولا يواصلون تواصل الجيران على ما بينهم من قرب الحواش ودوال الدار وكيف يكون بينهم تزاور وقد طحنهم بكالك البلع وأكلهم الضال والثيري، وكان قد صرح إلى ما صاروا إليه وأرتهن ذلك المضيوع وضمكم ذلك المستودع فكيف بكم لو تناهت بكماً، نش، ن، ي، و، م، ونسخة في م: كذا أصل م: رفده، الرفدية al-Sharif al-Radi - 978-90-04-68260-3 Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM via Open Access. https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
of a single ant, I should not do so. This world of yours is worth less to me than a leaf munched in the mouth of a locust. What would ʿAlī want with delights that will perish and pleasures that will not remain? We entreat God to protect our intelligence from dulling, and from terrible slips and falls. It is him we ask for aid.

1.222 From a supplication by ʿAlī:
God! Protect my countenance through prosperity, do not dissipate my dignity through poverty. Let me not importune seekers of your sustenance or beg kindness from your worst creatures. Let me not be afflicted with flattering those who give or provoked to reviling those who refuse. You—beyond them all—are the one who gives or refuses, «you are powerful over all things».

1.223 From an oration by ʿAlī:
This is a residence encircled by trials and renowned for deceit, its conditions are never stable, its residents are never safe, its states are changing, its times are unstable, its life is sordid, its security is nonexistent, and its people are targets for arrows that shoot to kill. Servants of God, know that you, along with the world you live in, tread the path of those who went before: they were longer lived than you, they had more flourishing homes than you, they had more lasting monuments than you, but their voices have fallen silent, their breath has stilled, their bodies have decomposed, their homes are abandoned, their monuments are gone. They have exchanged fortified palaces and cushioned thrones for immovable stones and rocks, for the crushing recess of graves whose courtyard is built on ruin and shored with dirt, whose dwelling is near, but whose residents are far away and out of reach. For they reside in a community who take no comfort from one another, who need not labor yet are preoccupied, who, though they live in proximity and their homes are near, find neither solace in their homeland nor visit their neighbors. But how would they visit? For decay has crushed them, like a massive camel with a heavy chest, and rocks and earth have consumed their bodies. People, imagine that you too have arrived at the place where they have gone, as though that same bed has claimed you, that

1 Qurʾan, Taḥrīm 66:8.
2 Sibṭ (Tadhkirah, 122–123) reports this as part of an oration he says is named The Attainer, or The Eloquent Oration (Bālighah). In his text, he includes lines also present in §1.42, delivered in Kufa immediately following ʿAlī’s arrival there after the Battle of the Camel in Rajab 36/January–February 657.
الأمور وبعثت القبور (هناك) تبلى كل نفس ما أسلمت وردوا إلى الله موالهم الحق وضل عليهم ما كانوا يفترون.

1.224 ومن دعائه عليه السلام

اللهم إنيك آنس الآسنين لأوليائك وأحضرهم بالكفاية للمتوكلين عليك تشاهدهم في سرائرهم وتطلع عليهم في ضرائرهم وتعلم مبلغ بصائرهم فأسرارهم لك مكشوفة وقوفهم إليك ملهوقة. إن أوشكتهم الغربة آنهم ذكرك وإن صبمت عليهم المصائب جأوا إلى الاستعارة بك علماً بأن أزمة الأمور بيدك ومصادراً عن قضائكم اللهم إن فهعت عن مسألتي أو عهت عن طلبتي فدلني على مصلحي وخذ بقلبي إلى مراشي فليس ذاك بتك من هدياتك ولا بد عمن كفائاتك. اللهم أحملي على عفوك ولا تحملي على عدلك.

1.225 ومن كلام له عليه السلام

الله بلادنا فالان فقد قوم الأئد وداوى العمد أقام السنة وخلف الفتنة ذهب نقي الثوب قليل الديع أصاب خيرها وسبق شرها أدى إلى الله طاعته واتقاه بحقه رحل وتركهم في طرق متشعبة لا ينتهي فيها الفضالة ولا يستقن المهدي.

1.226 ومن كلام له عليه السلام في وصف بيعته بالخلافة وقد تقدى مثله بأنفاظ مختلفة

ب: م؛ ونسخة في ش، ه: كذا. ن، وأصل ش، ه: (عميت). ش، ن، ي، ه، ومصححة

في م: كذا. أصل م، ونسخة في ي، ه: (بلاة).

al-Sharīf al-Raḍī - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
same dwelling has encased you! How will it be with you when affairs end, when graves are emptied?¹ «There, each soul will be tried for what it did in past times, and all creatures will be returned to God, their true master—their falsehoods will no longer avail.»²

1.224 From a supplication by ‘Alī:

God! You are the greatest comforter for those who love you, the readiest caregiver for those who trust you. You see their minds, view their thoughts, and know the strength of their perceptions, their secrets are open to you, and their hearts long for you. When loneliness makes them fearful, your remembrance gives them comfort, when calamities rain down, they seek refuge in your protection. They know that your hand holds the reins of all things, that your decree steers the course of all events. God, whenever I falter in asking, whenever I stray from my goal, guide me to my advantage and lead my heart to the right path, for that is not alien to your way of guidance or new to your way of care. God, mount me on the steed of your forgiveness, do not mount me on the steed of your justice.

1.225 From an address by ‘Alī:

May God cherish the land that produced that man!³ He straightened crooked backs and healed lesions that were hidden inside fatty humps, established tradition and shunned sedition, departed with clean garments and few faults, hit the target of good and raced away from evil, offered obedience to God and feared him as was his due. But he went on, leaving others to scatter in many different paths—paths in which the errant find no guidance, the guided no certainty.

1.226 From an address by ‘Alī describing the manner of the pledge to him as caliph. Similar lines have been recorded earlier in slightly different language:⁴

---

1 Reference to Qur’an, Infiṭār 82:4.
2 Qur’an, Yūnus 10:30.
3 This is an idiom used for commendation. “That man,” lit. “So-and-So (fulān),” refers, according to the Shi‘i commentators, to an unnamed Companion (R 2:402; B 682). According to the Sunni commentators, the reference is to ‘Umar (H 12:3–5; Tābarī, Tārīkh, 4:218).
4 Delivered at Dhū Qār just before the march on Basra and the Battle of the Camel in 36/656; § 1.228 is part of the same oration (Mufīd, Jamal, 143–144, citing Wāqidī). See details of the event in Iskāfī, Mi‘yār, 49–50. Similar lines in § 1.3.4 (Shiqshiqiyah), § 1.53, and § 1.135.2.
وبسطم يدي فكفتها ومدتها فقبضتها ثم تداك كتم على تدك الإبل هم على حياضها يوم ورودها حتى أنقطعت النعل وسقط الرداء ووطئ الضعيف وبلغ من سرور الناس بيعتهم إنّي أحتبح بها الصغير وهفادج إليها الكبير وتحمل نحوها العليل وحفرت إليها الكعاب.

1.227. ومن خطة له على السلام

1.227.1 فإنّ تقوى الله مفتاح سداد وذخيرة معاد وهايتح الطالب وينجو البار وتَناف الرغائب فأعملوا والعمل يرفع والثوبة تنفع، والدعاء يسع والحلا هادية والأقلام جارية وبادروا بالأعمال عملًا تأكّا أو مرضًا حابسًا أو موتًا خالصًا فإنّ الموت هادم لذاتكم ومكّرّ شهواتكم ومباعد طيّانكم رائح غريب بمير وقوّة غير مطلوب قد أعلقتم تحباه وتكتفت غواه وآ sócتم عماله وعزمت فيكم سطره وتتابع أليك عدوته وقَللت عتمك بوى فيوشك أن تغشاكم دواجي ظلهه وأحذام علله وحَنادس غمراته وعراشي سكرائه وأَمّ إزهاقاه ودُعوّ إطابقه وجشوعة مداقه فكان قد أتاك بئاسك نجيكم وفوق نيديكم وخفى أثاركم وعله ديارك وبهت وراثكم يقاتمون تراتكم بين جميع خاصّ لم ينفع وقريب محزون لم ينعم وآخر شامت لم يجزّ.

1.227.2 فعليكم بالجد والجهد والثوب والاستعداد والتزود في منزل الزاد ولا تفرّكم الدنيا كما غرّت من كان فيلكم من الأم منماضية والقوانين الخالية الذين أختلوا ديرتها وأصابوا غرّتها وأفجوا عدّتها وأخلقوا جِدّتها أصبحت مساكين أجدادًا وأموالهم

You pulled my hand toward you, and I resisted. You forced it open, and I closed it shut. Then, like parched camels jostling each other at the waterhole on their allocated day, you crowded around me, your sandals tearing, your cloaks falling, the slow trampled underfoot. In your delight to pledge me allegiance, children sped rejoicing, the old and unsteady hurried, the sick asked to be carried, and young girls ran out without putting on a veil.

1.227 From an oration by ʿAlī:1

1.227.1 Consciousness of God is the key to righteousness and a store of treasure for the return. Because of it, one who seeks succeeds, one who flees escapes, and all wishes are obtained. People, act while deeds still ascend, repentance still benefits, supplications are still heard, affairs are still calm, and pens still flow with ink. Hasten to do good before your lifespan runs out, disease seizes you, and death snatches you away. Remember that death is the destroyer of pleasures, the roiler of passions, and the expeller of hopes, a visitor who is not loved, an adversary who is never vanquished, and a shedder of blood from whom no vengeance can be extracted. Already its snares have entrapped you, its misfortunes have encircled you, and its arrowheads fly toward you. Its assault is terrible, its attack is unremitting, and chances are small that its sword will glance off your skull. Soon you will be surrounded by its lowering clouds, its burning illnesses, its dark floods, its calamitous spasms, its painful piercing, its dusky folds, and its coarse rations. Imagine that death has already, abruptly, arrived, as though it has already silenced your conversations, scattered your assemblies, erased your footsteps, emptied your homes, and prompted your heirs to divide your inheritance. There you lie—among close relatives who cannot help you, and grieving kinsfolk who cannot push away death, and among others who gloat and feel no sorrow at your departure.

1.227.2 Expend effort, work hard, prepare stocks, ready supplies, and gather provisions in this waystation. Let not the world deceive you as she deceived those before you, ancient nations and past generations who milked her udders, hoarded her choice parts,2 used up her days, and wore out her new clothes.

---

1 Ḥ 13:7: “This is one of ʿAlī’s most beautiful orations—its rhetorical embellishments (bādīʿ, referring here to parallelism, paronomasia, antithesis, and consonant-rhyme) are clearly visible to any who would look.”

2 Ar. aṣābū ghurratahā. Or, “benefitted from her (temporary) carelessness (ghīrraftahā),” after R 2:404; ‘A 973.
ميراً لا يعرفون من أتاهم ولا يخفون من بكاهم ولا يجيبون من دعاهم فأخذوا
الذين فأنبها ظلالة خدوع معطية من نوع ملبسة تزوع لا يدوم رحاؤها ولا ينقضي عناها
ولا ينذك بلاها.

227.3 منها في صفة الزهد:
كانوا قوماً من أهل الدنيا وليسوا من أهلها فكانوا فيها كم ليس منها عملوا فيها بما
يبررون وبادرروا فيها ما يذكرون تقلب أبداتهم بين ظهراني أهل الآخرة برون أهل
dنيا يعفون قتام أحسادهم وهم أشد إعظاماً لموت قلوب أحبائهم.

228 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام خطبه الذي قار وهو متوجه إلى البصرة ذكرها الواقدي في
كتاب البلجل
فصدر بما أمر به وبلغ رسالة ربه فلر الله به الصدع ووقت به الفتق وألف به بين ذوي
الأرحام بعد العداوة الوارقة في الصور والضائع القادحة في القلوب.

229 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام كتم به عبد الله بن زمعة وهو من شيعتء وذلك أنه قد قدم عليه
في خلافته وطلب منه مالاً فقال عليه السلام إن هذا المال ليس لي ولا لك وإنما هو في المسلمين وجلب أسيافهم فإن شركتهم في
حرقه كان لك مثل حظهم وإلا فنجاة أدتهم لا تكون لغير أفواهم.

230 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام
Their homes have become sepulchers and their possessions have been inherited by others. They no longer recognize those who come to them, or heed those who weep over them, or answer those who call out to them. Beware of the world! She deceives and cheats, gives then denies, provides clothes then strips them away. Her ease does not last, her struggles do not end, and her trials never quieten.

1.227.3 From the same oration, in praise of renunciants: They were of this world yet not of her. They lived in her as those who never truly belonged, enacting what they believed and outracing what they feared. Their forms moved among the people of the hereafter: they saw men here fear the death of their bodies, but they were more afraid of the death of the hearts of the living.

1.228 From an oration by ‘Alī delivered at Dhū Qār, en route to Basra, related by Wāqūdī in his book on the Battle of the Camel: God’s Messenger proclaimed what he had been commanded to proclaim, and communicated the messages of his Lord. Through him, God mended divisions and stitched rips and tears. Through him, God brought kinsfolk together after enmity had burned in their breasts and rancor had kindled in their hearts.

1.229 From an address by ‘Alī to ‘Abdallāh ibn Zama’ah, one of his followers, who came during his caliphate to ask for money: These funds do not belong to me, and they do not belong to you. They are battle gains won by the Muslims and wealth procured by their swords. If you join in their warfare, you will get a similar share, otherwise, the harvest of their swords is for their mouths alone.

1.230 From an address by ‘Alī:

1 I.e., death (Ḥ 13:8); or God’s punishment (B 677).
2 In 36/656, before the Battle of the Camel. Part of the same oration as § 1.226.
3 Reference to Qur’an, Ḥijr 15:94.
4 Presumably in Kufa, between 36/656 and 40/661. ‘Abdallāh ibn Zama’ah was from Quraysh, and one of ‘Alī’s devoted followers.
5 Part of a long oration (presumably in Kufa, during his caliphate, 35–43/656–661) after Ja‘dah ibn Hubayrah al-Makhzūmī, ‘Alī’s nephew, who had ascended the pulpit at his command to orate, stood there tongue-tied. The Abbasid commander who defeated the Umayyads, Abū Muslim al-Khurāsānī, re-used these lines by ‘Alī in one of his well-known orations. Ḥ 13:33; B 679.
ألا إنّ اللسان بَضْعَة من الإنسان فلا يُصدعه القول إذا أمتعب ولا يُجهله النطق إذا أنسٌع.
وإنّا لأمراء الكلام وفينا تنشبت عروقه وعلى تبدلت غصونه.
وأعلموا رحمكم الله أنكم في زمان القاتل فيه بالحقّ قليل ولسان عن الصدق كليل.
واللازم لحق ذلّه متعكون على العصيان مصطلحون على الإهدان فتاهم عارم.
وتشبهم آنهم وعقولهم منافق وقراؤهم ماذق لا يعطم صغيرهم كبيرهم ولا يعلو غنيهم.
فقيرهم.

1.231 ومن كلام له السلام في ذكر أختلاف الناس. روى اليمنيّ عن أحمد بن قتيبة عن
عبد الله بن يزيد عن مالك بن دِجَّة قال كَذَا عند أمير المؤمنين على السلام فقال وقد ذكر عنده
اختلاف الناس.
إِمَّا فَرَقَ بِنَيْمٍ مبادئ طبكم وذلك أنّهم كانوا فلّقة من سَّح أَرْضٍ وعَدُّواه وحُزون
ترة وسهلها. فهم على حسب قرب أرضهم يتقاربون وعلى قدر اختلافهم يتفاوتون.
فتنم الرواء ناقص العقل وحَمْد القامة قصير الهمة وزاكي العمل قبيح المنظر وقريب
الفزع بعيد السَّب، ومعروف الضربة منكر الجليل وثاني القلب متفرّق اللب وطليق اللسان
حيد الجنان.

1.232 ومن كلام له عليه السلام قاله وهو يلي غسل رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله وتجهيزه
بأبي أنت وامي لقد أنقطع بموت ما لم يقطع بموت غيرك من النبوة والأبناء وأخبار
السماء. خصصت حتى صرت مسلياً عَمِّن سواك وعممت حتى صار الناس عليك سواء.

أوامر: كذا م: "الثانيّ". ي: "الأيّام". ن: سِقٌط الاسم. تَخْلَف مخططات شرح الراوادي، حيث
ثبت "ذلِكَ الْيَمِينِي" و"أبو محمد الْيَمِينِي". شرح ابن أبي الحديد "ذلِكَ الْيَمِينِي". شرح
اللفظة: ي: "قَرَأ".
Hark! The tongue is but an instrument wielded by men.\(^1\) Words do not come to it when a man feels constrained, nor does it hesitate to produce speech when its owner feels at ease. Indeed, it is we, the Prophet’s family, who are the princes of language.\(^2\) It is in us that its roots are fixed, upon us that its branches dangle.

Know this, may God have mercy on you! You live in an age when upholders of right are few, tongues are blunted against truth, and champions of justice are shamed. People in this age practice incessant disobedience and shake hands on treason. Their youth are violent, their old are sinners, their scholars are hypocrites, and their Qur’an-readers are two-faced. Their young do not respect the old, their rich do not care for the poor.

\textbf{1.231} From ʿAli’s address explaining why people differ. Yamānī\(^3\) narrated this report from Aḥmad ibn Qutaybah, who narrated it from ʿAbdallāh ibn Mālik ibn Dajnah,\(^4\) who said: We were with the Commander of the Faithful when the talk turned to differences among people, and he said:

What differentiates them is the source of their clay, for they are fragments from saline or sweet soil, and from hard or smooth earth. They resemble one another based on the closeness of their soil and diverge in accordance with its difference. A person may have perfect features but an imperfect mind, or be tall in stature but short in aspiration, or have beautiful deeds but an ugly appearance, or he may have little depth yet be able to sense a great deal, or his temper could be good while his traits are bad, or his heart could be lost while his wits are also scattered, or he could possess an eloquent tongue as well as a strong heart.

\textbf{1.232} From an address ʿAli delivered as he conducted the Messenger’s funeral ablutions and prepared his body for burial:\(^5\)

May my father and mother give their lives for you! Your death has cut short what the death of no other has: prophecy, divine reports, and accounts of the heavens. You brought some of us so close that you comforted us against the loss of anyone else, yet you were there for all—all people were equal in your

---

\(^{1}\) Ar. \textit{baḍʿah}, lit. “part” or “piece,” translated here as “instrument,” based on \textit{Ḥ} 13:12; B 679.

\(^{2}\) I have added “the Prophet’s family” based on context in B 679.

\(^{3}\) Or, “Yamāmī” (\textit{MS Y}), or, “Thumālī” (\textit{MS M}), or, “Dhiʿlib al-Yamānī” (\textit{Ḥ}, and some \textit{MSs} of \textit{R}).

\(^{4}\) Or, “Dujunnah” (\textit{MS M}), or, “Dīhyah” (\textit{MS Y}).

\(^{5}\) In Medina, in 11/632.
ولولا أنك أُمرت بالصبر وتهيت عن الجزع لأُنْفِدَنا عليك ماء الشؤون ولكن الداء مماطلًا والكُلُّ محالًا وقائِلًا لكي ولكنه ما لا يملك رده ولا يستطيع دفعه. أي أنت وأمي أذكرونا عند ربك وأجعلنا من بالي.

زيادة على الصلح:

1.233 ومن كلام له عليه السلام أقتص في ذكر ما كان منه بعد هجرة النبي صلى الله عليه وآله

ثم وقعت به

جعلت أتبع مأخذ رسول الله صلى الله عليه فأطأ ذكره حتى أنتهت إلى الربح في حديث طويل قوله عليه السلام «أطأ ذكره» من الكلام الذي رمى به إلى غابي الفصاحية والإيجاز وأراد آني كنت أعطي خبره عليه السلام من بُعد خروج إلى أن أنتهت إلى هذا الموضع فكنت عن ذلك بهذه الكتابة العجيبة.

1.234 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام في شأن الحكيم وذم أهل الشام جفاة طعام وعبيد أُقرَام جمعوا من كل الأوب وتلقوا من كل شوب ومن يفِقه ويدب ويدب ويدب عليه ويوخذ عليه ليسوا من المهاجرين والأنصار ولا الذين تبَّؤوا الدار. إلا وإن القوم أختاروا لأنفسهم أقرب القوم مَا يحبون وأتم أختارُهم لأنفسكم أقرب القوم مما تكرهون. وإنما عهدكم مكَّ بعد الله بن قيس بالأمس يقول إنها فتنا فقطعوا أو تاركُم

أضافت هنا في بعض الخطوط زيادة على الأصل قديمة، وهي عبارة عن ست خطب أخرى لعلي مسبوقة في خطوطها يد، لبسط يشير إلى أن الخطبة زادت على الأصل: زيادة من نسخة كتب في عهد المصنّف. والخطب السِّتَّة الزائدة مثبئة أيضاً في م، ج، ك، وثلاث منها في س، ولكن بدون إشارة إلى أنها زائدة. والزوائد ساقطة عن ش، ن، د، ق، ع.
eyes. If you had not commanded us to be patient in adversity or forbidden outpourings of grief, we would have used up all the tears in our eyes weeping over you, and our ailment would be chronic, our grief would endure—and yet both would be sorely inadequate! But enough! Death cannot be fended off or rebuffed. May my father and mother be your ransom, O Messenger! Remember us to your Lord and keep us in your thoughts.

**Additional Orations**

1.233 From an address by 'Alī in which he narrated what all he did after the Prophet's migration until he caught up with him:

I began to follow the path taken by God's Messenger and continued to tread the footsteps of his reports until I reached 'Arj.

Raḍī: This is a passage from a long address by 'Ali. His words, “I continued to tread the footsteps of his reports (ata'u dhikrahu),” strike the targets of eloquence and pithiness both. He means that “I kept receiving word of God's Messenger from when I started out until I reached this location.” He expressed this meaning through this marvelous allusion.

1.234 From an oration by 'Alī discussing the two arbitrators and censuring the Syrians:

They are uncouth riffraff and vile bondsmen gathered from every shore and gleaned from every rabble, who need to be taught, disciplined, instructed, trained, supervised, and restricted in their doings. They belong neither to the Emigrants nor the Allies who made their homes in Medina. Hark and listen! The Syrians have selected the person who is closest to what they love, while you have selected the person who is closest to what you hate. You have experienced ʿAbdallāh ibn Qays (Abū Mūsā al-Ashʿarī)! Just yesterday, he was saying to you, “This is sedition—cut your bowstrings and sheathe your swords!” If he was right then, he is wrong in marching with us today, but if he was wrong then—and he was—he deserves to be viewed with suspicion. Strike 'Amr ibn

---

1. I have translated this differently than Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd and Baḥrānī (Ḥ 13:24–25; B 682), who state that “making special (khasaṣta)” and “making common (ʿamanta)” both refer to the grief of the Prophet’s passing: with their interpretation, I find the next phrase—“that you comforted us against the loss of any other”—difficult to understand. Rāwandī (R 2:415) states that the two phrases refer to the manner of the Prophet's life and death.

2. An additional six orations—perhaps added by Raḍī, or by others—are transcribed in some of our primary and secondary manuscripts (further details in the Edition's footnotes, and in Note on the Edition and Translation).


4. Presumably in Ṣiffīn, in 37/657, after the Syrians asked for arbitration.
ويشترى سبيله، فإن كان صادقًا فقد أخطأ بمسيره غير مستمر وان كان كاذبًا فقد لزمته النهبة.
فأدعوا في صدر عمر بن العاصر بعد الله بن العباس وخذوا مثّل الأشياء وحولوا قواصي الإسلام ألا تزور إلى بلادكم تغزى وإلى صفاتهكم ترمي.

1.235 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام ذكر فيها آل محمد عليهم السلام.
هم عيش العلم وموت الجهول يخبره حاممه عن علمهم وصمهم عن حكم منطقهم لا يخالفون الحق ولا يكذبون فيه. هم دعاة الإسلام وواجت الاعتقام بهم عاد الحق في نصبه وآزاح الباطل عن مقامه وأنقطع لسانه من منتهيه عقلوا الدين عقل وعالية ورعاية لا عقل سعاع ورواية.
وإن رواة العلم كثير ورعاته قليل.

1.236 ومن خطبة له عليه السلام.
فأعمالوا وأنتم في نس البقاء والصحب منشورةً وأنثوية مبسوطة والمدر يدعي والمسيء يرجى قبل أن يَدْعَد العمل ويقطع المنفع وتنقيض المدة ويسدّ باب التوبة وتصعد الملائكة. فأخذ أمرؤ من نفسه لنفسه وأخذ من حي لميت ومن فان لباق ومن ذاهب لدائم. أمرؤ خاف الله وهو معمر إلى أجله ومنظور إلى عمله. أمرؤ أُجْمَل نفسه لِجِبَامهِ وزَمَّها بِمُسْكِهِمُ فَأَمَسَكها بِجِبَامها عن معاصر الله وقادها بَزِماها إلى طاعة الله.

1.237 ومن كلام له عليه السلام يحت في أصحابه على الجهاد.
والله مِستَاذَكِم شَكَّرَهُ وورثكم أمره وميهمكم في مضمار ممدود لتنزاعهم سببًا فشدّوا عقد المآذن وأولو أوها (أو: أطوا أوها) فضول الخواصر. لا تجتمع عزيمة ووليمة. وما أنقض النوم لعزيزهم اليوم وأحى الظلم، للذأكير الهمم.
al-ʿĀṣ in the chest with ʿAbdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās! Take advantage of the respite granted by these days and protect the borders of Islam! Don't you see your lands under attack, your ramparts under siege?

1.235 From an oration by ʿAlī in which he speaks of the Prophet's family: They are the life of knowledge and the death of ignorance. Their forbearance stems from their knowledge, and their silence from the wisdom of their speech. They never go against what is right and never differ in it. They are the pillars of Islam and the doors to the halls of protection. It is through them that right has returned to its home, wrong has been displaced from its residence, and its tongue has been excised at the root. They have assimilated religion with understanding and mindful attention, not by rote learning and narration. There are many narrators of hadith,¹ but those who tend to it mindfully are rare.

1.236 From an oration by ʿAlī: Act while you still possess the breath of life, while registers are open and repentance is extended, while one who turns away is invited back and one who sins is asked to desist, before action is extinguished, the respite is cut short, the interlude ends, the door of repentance is shut, and the angels ascend. Let each man gather provisions by himself, for himself, by the self that is living for the self that will soon be dead, by the self that will perish for the self that will remain, by the self that will depart, for the self that will abide. Such a man fears God during his allotted span, while he is given time to act. Such a man places a bridle and halter on his sentient soul. He curbs it with this bridle from acts of disobedience to God and leads it with the halter toward acts of obedience to God.

1.237 From an address by ʿAlī urging his supporters to jihad:² God has required you to thank him, given you his command, and a lengthy respite to prepare for the race so that you may compete and win. Tighten your belts and lose your belly fat, for resolve and feasting never come together. How completely does sleep destroy resolutions made in the day! How completely does darkness erase the memory of high aspirations!

---

¹ Lit. "knowledge," ʿilm; in early Islamic times, the word usually referred to religious knowledge, and often specifically to the Prophet Muhammad's teachings.
² Presumably in Kufa, after the arbitration in 37/658.
1.238 من كلام له عليه السلام قاله لعبد الله بن العبّاس رضي الله عنهما وقد جاءه برسالة من عثمان بن عفان وهو محرّف يسأل فيه الخروج إلى ماله يسمع ليقل هتف الناس باسمه للغ`
بعد أن كان سأله مثل ذلك من قبل. فقال عليه السلام: يا ابن عبّاس ما يريد عثمان أن يجعلني إلا جمالًا ناضحًا بالغرب أقيل وأدير. بعث إليّ أن أخرج ثم بعث إليّ أن أقدم ثم هو الآن بعث إليّ أن أخرج. والله لقد دفعت عنه حتى خشيت أن أكون آمنًا.

آخر الخطاب. ويتلاه المختار من كتبه ورسائله.

---

هم: كذا ش: "يمتّ الختامات من خطب أمير المؤمنين عليه السلام ويئلوه باب المختارات من كتبه وصلّى الله على محمد وآلله الطيّبين. ن، ي، ه: سقّت التعليق.

al-Sharif al-Ra’di - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
1.238 From words ʿAli spoke to ʿAbdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās—Ibn al-ʿAbbās had brought ʿAlī a missive from ʿUthmān ibn ʿAffān, who was under siege, asking him to depart for his estate in Yanbuʿ al-Nakhl, hoping this would stop people calling out ʿAlī's name for the caliphate; ʿUthmān had made the same demand of ʿAlī earlier. ʿAlī responded to Ibn al-ʿAbbās:

Ibn al-ʿAbbās! ʿUthmān wishes to make me a camel drawing water with a pulley, constantly going forward and back! He insisted that I leave, then sent for me to return, and now he has again sent you with instructions for me to leave! By God, I have defended him until I feared I was sinning!

This is the end of the section on orations. It is followed by selections from ʿAlī's letters and epistles.

---

1 In Medina, 35/656.
باب المختار من كتب أمير المؤمنين عليه السلام ورسائله إلى أعدائه وأمراء بلاده
ويدخل في ذلك ما أُختير من عهوده إلى عماله ووصاياه لأهله وأصحابه

2.1 من كتاب له عليه السلام إلى أهل الكوفة عند مسيره من المدينة إلى البصرة
من عبد الله علي أمير المؤمنين إلى أهل الكوفة جهة الأنصار وسهام العرب. أما بعد
فإني أخبرهم عن أمر عثمان حتي يكون سمعه كعبانه. إن الناس طعنوا عليه فكنت
رجلًا من المهاجرين أكثر اعتباثه وأقل عنده وكان طلحة والزبير أهون سيره فيه
الوجه وأرقق حدائهما العنيد وكان من عائشة في عائلة غضبه فأصبح له قوم فقتلوه
وبابعنه الناس غير مستكره ولا مجرين بل طائعين مخترين. وأعلموا أن دار الهجرة قد

al-Sharīf al-Raḍī - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
Letters

Chapter containing selections from the Commander of the Faithful’s dispatches and letters to his enemies and his regional governors, including selections from instructions to his tax collectors and testaments to his family and companions

2.1 From ‘Alī’s dispatch to the residents of Kufa, when he was about to march from Medina on Basra:

From God’s servant, ‘Alī, Commander of the Faithful, to the residents of Kufa—renowned face of the Allies, crest of the Arabs. And now to the matter at hand:

I write to inform you of what happened to ʿUthmān, and when you hear my words, you will see the events unfold before your eyes: The public censured ʿUthmān for his conduct, and the Emigrants each took their stand. I tried hard to reconcile and lower the heat, while Ṭalḥah and Zubayr galloped to escalate the affair, harshly driving the camels of castigation toward their destination, and ʿĀʾishah fired out an angry outburst. A group, emboldened, killed ʿUthmān. The Muslims then pledged allegiance to me as their caliph, willingly and of their free choice, without any coercion or force. Kufans, know that Medina

---

1 Sent with Ḥasan and ʿAmmār in 36/656, from Rabadhah, 200 km to the NE of Medina, soon after ‘Alī’s accession to the caliphate, on his way to confront ʿĀʾishah, Ṭalḥah, and Zubayr, who had rebelled and marched to Basra to garner military support (Mufīd, Jamal, 131–132). See also Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd’s (Ḥ 14:8–21) “Accounts of ‘Alī’s march on Basra, and his letters to the residents of Kufa.” See also comments on ʿĀʾishah’s, Ṭalḥah’s, and Zubayr’s later repentance, according to this Sunni-Muʿtazilī account (Ḥ 14:24–25).

2 "Allies" (Anṣār) here refers either to (i) the Medinese Allies, of which there was a small but discrete section in Kufa in the earliest time of its settlement (cf. Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 4:44–45); or (2) ‘Alī’s allies more generally (Ḥ 14:6; R 3:12). “Crest,” lit. “camel’s hump (sanām).”

3 Note that ‘Alī writes, “When you hear my words.” At this time, and for some centuries thereafter, official state letters and proclamations were read out to the populace in the mosque or other public space. Similarly, in § 2.73.

4 When ʿUthmān stood up in the mosque trying to appease the public, ʿĀʾishah reportedly spoke harshly from behind a curtain, and she displayed a pair of the Prophet’s slippers, shouting that ʿUthmān had “changed the Prophet’s religion, when the Prophet’s slippers had not even worn out” (B 785). ʿĀʾishah reportedly called out to the people of Medina to “Kill the Long-beard (naʿthal)!” ʿUthmān’s nickname (R 313). Unusually, ʿAlī calls her out by name in this letter, presumably due to the very real and imminent danger she posed in that moment. In the aftermath of the battle, he used the generic “woman/women” to allude to her: § 1.13, § 1.77, § 1.151.3, § 1.154.1.
قلّعت بأهلها وقّعها بها وقّعها بها، وجاءت جيش المرجل وقامت الفتنة على القطب فأسرعوا إلى أميركم وبادروا جهد العدوّكم في نبة شاه الله

ومن كتاب له عليه السلام فيم بعد فتح البصرة وجازاكم الله من أهل مصر عن أهل، بِنْتٌ تَبْعِهْ أَحْسَن مَنْ يَجْزُى العاملين بطاعته والشاكونين لعمتته فقد سمعتهم وأطعت والآجيم.

٢.٢ ومن كتاب كتبه عليه السلام لشَرَحٍ بن الحارث قاضي روِي أن شَرَح بن الحارث قاضي أمير المؤمنين أشترى على عهده داراً بثمانين ديناراً فبلغه عليه السلام ذلك فاستدعى شريحاً وقال له بلغني أنك أعبت داراً بثمانين ديناراً وكنت كتاباً وأشهدت شهوداً. فقال شريحاً قد كان ذلك يا أمير المؤمنين. قال نظري إليه نظر مغصّب ثم قال له شريحاً أما إنّنا سيأتيك من لا ينظر في كتابك ولا يسألك عن بيئة حتى يخرجك منها شامخاً ويسلّب إلى قبرك خالصاً. فأظهرنا شريحاً لا تكون أبتعت هذه الدار من غير مالك أو نقدت التمن من غير حليّ لّك، فإذا أنت قد خسرت دار الدنيا ودار الآخرة، أمّا إنك لو كنت أنتيتي عند شرائك ما أشتريت لك كتاباً على هذه النسخة فلم ترغب في شراء هذه الدار بدرهم فما فوقه.

والنسخة

هذا ما أشتري عبد ذلّيل من مّثّ قد أُرّج للرحيل أشترى منه داراً من دار الغرور من جانب القانون وخطّة الهالكين. وتجمع هذه الدار حدود أربعة الحدّ الأول ينتهي إلى دواعي الآفات والحدّ الثاني ينتهي إلى دواعي المصائب والحدّ الثالث ينتهي إلى الهوى المردي والحدّ الرابع ينتهي إلى الشيطان المغوي وفيه يُشرّع باب هذه الدار. أشتري هذا

٢٠٣، ي، ومصّحة

في ن، ه: كذا: ن، وأصل ش، ه: من غير خالق.
reels, and its people reel with it. It boils like a cauldron and revolt has raised its banner, so hasten to join your ruler and advance to fight your enemy! Battle, if that be God's will, looms ahead.

2.2 From 'Ali's dispatch to the residents of Kufa, after his victory at Basra:

Residents of Kufa, may God reward you on behalf of your Prophet's family! May he bestow on you the reward he reserves for those who obey him through their actions and thank him for his favors! You heard and you obeyed, you were called, and you answered.

2.3 From a missive that 'Ali wrote to his judge, Shurayh ibn al-Ḥārith. It is related that during 'Ali's reign, Shurayh ibn al-Ḥārith, a judge appointed by the Commander of the Faithful, purchased a house for eighty gold dinars. The news reached 'Ali, who summoned Shurayh and said, "I'm told that you have bought a house for eighty gold dinars, and that you wrote up a contract and called witnesses to attest to the purchase." Shurayh responded, "That is correct, Commander of the Faithful." 'Ali looked at Shurayh with some anger, then said to him:

Shurayh, soon there will come to you one who will not look at your written contract nor ask for your testimonials but will turn you out of your house and over to your grave. Take heed, Shurayh! You had better not have bought this house with money that doesn't belong to you or in coin gained from unlawful sources. If so, you will have lost the abode of this world and the abode of the hereafter. If you had come to me when you were about to buy the house, I would have written up a different kind of contract, in this manner. You would not then have wished to purchase this house for a single silver dirham, let alone for the sum you paid.

The transcript:
This is what a humble servant has bought from a soon-to-be-dead man whose departure from the world has already begun. The humble servant bought from the soon-to-be-dead man one of the houses of calamity located in the district of those soon-to-perish in the quarter of the dead. There are four borders to this house: The first extends to the summons of calamity, the second extends

---

1 "Medina," lit. "The Home of Migration" (dār al-hijrah; H 14:8; B 785; R 315). Rāwandī (R 315) states it could also refer to "Kufa, to which 'Ali migrated," which appears incorrect, as 'Ali settled there only after the Battle of the Camel.

2 In 36/656, in Basra, following the Battle of the Camel, sent with 'Amr ibn Salamah al-Hamdānī al-Arḥabi. The Kufans had been the mainstay of 'Ali's army. Full letter in Mufid, Jamal, 216, after Wāqidī.

3 Shurayh served as judge in Kufa during 'Ali's reign, 35–40/656–661.
المفتر بالفعل من هذا المزج بالأجل هذه الدار بالخروج من عرّ القناعة والدخول في ذلل الطب والطريقة فلادرك هذا المشتري فيما أسترى من ذرّ. فعلى مُبلّيل أجسام الملك ونسأل نفوس الجبارة ومغيل ملك الفراعة مثل كسرى وقيصر وطيب وعمير ومن جمع المال على المال فأكثر ومن بين وشيد وزخرف ونجل وأدّخر وأعتقد وننظر بضمته للولد إخضاعهم جميعًا إلى موقف العرض والحساب وموضع الثواب والعقاب إذا وقع الأمر بفصل القضاء وَخَسْرُ هَذَاكْ المُبْطَلُونَ. شهد على ذلك العقل إذا خرج من أسر الهوى وسلم من علاقات الدنيا.

2.4 ومن كتاب له على السلام إلى بعض أمراء جيشه فإن عادوا إلى ظلّ الطاعة فذاك الذي نحب وإن توافت الأمور بالقوم إلى الشقاق والعصيان فانهاد مأطاعك إلى من عصاك وأستغنّي بين أنقاذ مكع عمّن تقاعس عنك فإن المتكاره مغيده خير من مشده وقوده أغني من نهوه.

2.5 ومن كتاب له على السلام إلى الأشعث بن قيس وهو عامل أذرّيكان وإن عملك ليس لك بحمة ولكنه في عنفك أمانة وأنت مسترعى لمن فوقك ليس لك أن تتغطّي فرجي ولا تخاطر إلا بوثيقة وفي يدك مالي من مال الله عزّ وجلّ وأنت من خزائن حتى تسله إلى لعلي ألا يكون شير ولا تلك لك والسلام

١ ميفة الخسنو، ھ، ی، ١: اذك.

MLA: al-Sharīf al-Raḍī - 978-90-04-68260-3

Copyright © 2024 Brill. All rights reserved.

Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM via Open Access.

https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
to the summons of catastrophe, the third extends to destructive passions, and the fourth extends to Satan, the great deceiver. The door of this house opens from this side. This man, deceived by false hopes, has bought this house from that man, who is soon to be evicted by death. The buyer has left the protective might of contentment and entered the shameful condition of petition and entreaty—he has not purchased anything good. Might belongs to God, who decomposes the bodies of kings, snatches the souls of pharaohs, destroys the empire of despots such as Chosroes, Caesar, Tubba’, and Ḥimyar, rulers who amassed wealth, who constructed, fortified, decorated, furnished, hoarded, and stockpiled, thinking they were providing for their children. When the command comes for the final judgment, all will be forced to the dock of review and reckoning, the station of reward and punishment, «and there shall the falsifiers lose everything.»¹ This contract has been witnessed by an intellect liberated from the shackles of passion and protected from worldly attachments.

2.4 From ʿAlī’s dispatch to one of his army commanders:²
If they reenter the canopy of obedience, then that is what we desire. But if their affairs direct them to dissent and disobey, then rise up with those who obey you to fight those who disobey, make do with those who accept your leadership, without seeking the help of the recalcitrant. One who marches against his will is better absent than present. He is more helpful to us sitting than standing.

2.5 From ʿAlī’s dispatch to al-Ashʿath ibn Qays, his governor in Azerbaijan:³
Your governorship is not a meal for you to devour but a trust to which your neck is shackled. You have been charged with taking care of it by a man who is superior to you in rank, and are not authorized to order your subjects around, or to imperil their funds—those must be secured. What you have in your hands is property belonging to God—you have been entrusted with safeguarding it and submitting it to me. Rest assured, however, that I shall be one of the kinder rulers you encounter.⁴ Go in peace.

---

¹ Qurʾan, Ghāfir 40:78.
² Excerpt from dispatch to ʿUthmān ibn Ḥunayf, governor of Basra, when many residents had turned away from their sworn pledge to ʿAlī, after ʿA’ishah, Ṭalḥah, and Zubayr marched there in the lead-up to the Battle of the Camel in 36/656. B 787.
³ Excerpt from letter to Ashʿath following the Battle of the Camel in 36/656, when Ashʿath seized 100,000 dirhams from the treasury. Minqārī, Waqʿat Siffin, 23; B 787; H 14:34, also records preceding lines of the text.
⁴ Lit. “I shall not be the worst of rulers you encounter.” The line is meant to placate. B 787; H 14:34.
2.6 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى معاوية

إنه باب عن القوم الذين بابوا أبا بكر وعمر وعثمان على ما بابوا عليه فلم يكن للشاهد
أن يختار ولا لاغباب أن يرد وآثمت الشورى للمهاجرين والأنصار فإن آجتمعوا على رجل
وسممو إماما كان ذلك لله رضي فان خرج من أمرهم خارج بطبع أو بدعة ردوه إلى
ما خرج منه فإن أبي قاتله على أتباعه غير سبيل المؤمنين وولا الله ما توّلي. ولعمري
يا معاوية أين نظرت بعطقك دون هواك لتجديدي أبأ الناس من دم عثمان وتعلمن أني
كنت في عزلة عنه إلا أن تجنني فتجن ما بداء لك. والسلام.

2.7 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إليه أيضا

أما بعد فقد أتنتي منك موعظة موصيلة ورسالة مخبرة تمعنها بضلالك وأمضيتها بسوء
رأيك. وكتاب آخر لابني ليس له بصريه ولا قائد يرشده قد دعا الهوى فأتاه وقاده
الضلال فأتبعه فهجرا لا غط وصل خابطا.

مهن

لا تبعة واحدة لا ينت فيها النظر ولا يستأنف فيها الخيار الخارج منها طاعن والمروي
فيها مداهن.
2.6 From ʿAlī’s letter to Muʿāwiyah:\(^1\)

The same people who pledged allegiance to Abū Bakr, ʿUmar, and ʿUthmān pledged allegiance to me, and they did so on the same basis.\(^2\) Those who were present did not have the right to choose, and those absent did not have the right to object—consultation is reserved for the Emigrants and Allies alone, and if they agree on someone and name him their leader, then that is God’s will. Afterward, if a person secedes from the consensus with accusations and excuses, they should compel him to return. If he refuses, they should fight him, for he has strayed from the path of believers, and God will shun him for as long as he continues his recalcitrance. By my life, Muʿāwiyah, if you would look with your mind and not your passion, you would find me of all people to have the least share of blame in the matter of ʿUthmān’s blood, you would know that I kept away from the fray. Unless you insist on making a patently false accusation—if so, then go ahead and accuse me of what you will! Go in peace.

2.7 From another letter sent by ʿAlī to Muʿāwiyah:\(^3\)

I have received from you a string of advice, enclosed in an embroidered epistle, embellished with your misguidance, and dispatched by your specious views. It is the letter of a man with no perception to direct him and no guide to show him the way, a man who answered the call of his passions, who was led by the reins of misguidance, a delirious man who rambles and blunders from the path.

From the same letter:

The pledge of allegiance happens once. It is not open to reconsideration or a second round of selection. One who breaks the pledge is an aggressor, one who holds back and wavers is a traitor.

---

\(^1\) One of ʿAlī’s earliest letters to Muʿāwiyah following the Battle of the Camel, sent from Kufa to Damascus in 36/656 with Jarīr ibn ʿAbdallāh al-Anṣārī. Full text and context in Minqarī, \textit{Waqʿat Ṣiffīn}, 28–30. Further details of Jarīr’s embassy to Muʿāwiyah in Damascus as ʿAlī’s envoy, and related events and letters, in H 374–91; Jarīr’s prior dealings with ʿAlī in H 370–74.

\(^2\) The Sunni Muʿtazilī commentator (Ḥ 14:35) takes these lines to endorse the validity of the people selecting a caliph. The Shiʿi commentators (B 787; R 318) say ʿAlī used this argument here, rather than citing the Prophet’s designation (\textit{nass}) of himself, because it was what his addressees were more likely to accept.

\(^3\) Excerpt from letter in response to Muʿāwiyah’s, (1) sent from Kufa, while ʿAlī’s envoy Jarīr was in Damascus in 36/656, persuading Muʿāwiyah to give the pledge of allegiance to ʿAlī (Minqarī, \textit{Waqʿat Ṣiffīn}, 57–58; Māmaṭīrī, \textit{Nuzhah}, 300–303); and/or (2) written in Ṣiffīn, toward the end of the battle, in 37/657 (Ḥ 14:42–43, includes text of Muʿāwiyah’s letter, and ʿAlī’s full response; B 788).
2.8 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى جبرين يعود إلى معاوية مُا أرسله إلى معاوية
أما بعد. فإذا أتاك كتاب فاحمل معاوية على الفصل وخذه بالأمر الجَمْل مُا خَيْرُه بِهِ حَرب مَجْلِثة أو سلم عَنْه فإن أختار الحرب فأذن إليه وإن أختار السلُم نفذ بيعتاه.
والمسلم.

2.9 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى معاوية فأراد قومنا قتله نبينا وأجتاه أسلنا وهموا بنا الهوم وفعلوا بنا الأفاعيل ومنعونا العذبة وأتَّحَيْسونا الخوف وآضطرونا إلى جبل وعر وأوقدوا لنا نار الحرب فعزم الله لنا على الذب عن حوزته والريح من وراء حرمته مؤمنا يبيغ في ذلك الأجر وكافرا يهاجم على الأصل ومن أسلم من قريش خليما مما نحن فيه بحلف يمنعه أو عشيره تقوم همه من الفعل بمكان أمن. وكان رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله إذا أحرم البأس وأحجم الناس قدّم مأه بيه فوق بهم أصحابه حر الساوة والأسنان. فقطع عبيدة بن الحارث يوم بدر وقتل حمدَة يوم أحد وقتل جعفر يوم مؤتة وأراذ من لو شفت ذكرت اسمه مثل الذي أراذوا من الشهادة ولكن أجازهم عجلت وتمتته أخّرت. ففي خُيْبَة للدهر إذ صرة فقره بي من لم يسع بقدي وليكن له كسابقتي التي لا يدلي أحد بمثلها إلا أن يدعي مدّع ما لا أعرفه ولا أظن الله يعرفه. والحمد لله على كل حال. وأمّا ما سألت من دفع قتلة عثمان إليك فإني نظرت في هذا الأمر.
2.8 From ʿAli’s missive to Jarīr ibn ʿAbdallāh al-Bajalī, his emissary to Muʿāwiyah:¹
When you receive my letter, tell Muʿāwiyah that he must take a final decision and give a binding response. Then ask him to choose between a war that displaces or a settlement that disgraces. If he chooses war, then dissolve the covenant of peace and fling that threat at him. If he chooses to settle, then make him give me the pledge of allegiance. Go in peace.

2.9 From ʿAli’s letter to Muʿāwiyah:²
Our tribe decided to kill our Prophet and extirpate our root. They came at us with evil intentions and spiteful actions, denying us the sweetness of life, throwing over us a blanket of fear, forcing us into the rugged mountains, and kindling the flames of war. But God willed that we should protect the enclosure of his religion and shield its sanctity from piercing arrows. Those of us who were believers did so in the hope of God’s reward, and those who were unbelievers acted in defense of their kin. Muslims from other clans of Quraysh—protected by a pact or by kin—were not exposed to our hardships but were protected from lethal assault. Whenever red flames of battle blazed, moreover, whenever the Muslims drew back in fear, the Messenger would send men of his own family to the front, and, through them, he would shield his Companions from the heat of swords and spears. Ṭabāk was killed at the Battle of Badr, Ḥamzah was killed at the Battle of Uḥud, Jaʿfar was killed at the Battle of Mu’tah. Another man—and I could name him if I wished—sought to attain martyrdom just as they did, but their deaths were decreed early, while his was deferred.³ What a strange age we live in, when I am placed on the same level as men who have not raced out in front, who do not possess my precedence! If any man were to make this, or any similar claim, they would be claiming a status I do not recognize, nor, I believe, does God. But God deserves praise in every situation. You demand that ʿUthmān’s killers be handed over—I have looked

---

¹ From Kufa to Damascus, 36/656, between the Battle of the Camel and Ṣiffīn. Minqarī, Waqʿat Ṣiffīn, 55.
² In response to Muʿāwiyah’s letter sent with Abū Muslim al-Khawlānī before the Battle of Ṣiffīn, in 36/656, in which Muʿāwiyah accused ʿAli of envying the first three caliphs and treachery toward them (Minqarī, Waqʿat Ṣiffīn, 85–94; H 1573–78, after Minqarī; includes text of Muʿāwiyah’s letter, and ʿAli’s full response; a lengthy account of the historical events during the Prophet’s lifetime is provided in this letter, particularly with regard to Muhammad’s years in Mecca and the actions of Quraysh against his family, as well as his major battles after the migration to Medina; these are recorded from the histories of Wāqidī, Ibn Isḥāq, and other sources in H 1452–58, end, 153–78; see also F 368; B 789; R 3:26–31). § 2.28 is possibly another part of this letter (B 819).
³ Referring to himself. R 3:38; H 1450; B 789.
فلم أره يسعي دفعهم إليه ولا إلى غيره. ولعمري أن لم تنزع عن غيّك وشقاقي
لتعرقّهن عن قليل يطلبونك لا كلفّونك طلبهم في بر ولا جبر ولا جبر ولا سهل إلاأن طلب يسوى وجداته ووزّر لا يسرّك لفيته. والسلام لأمه.

2.10

ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إليه أيضًا

وكيف أنت صانع إذا تكشفت عنك جلا بيب ما أنت فيه من دنيا قد تبينت بزيتها
وحدعت بلذّتها دعك فأجأتها وقامتك فأجأتها وأمركك فأعثتها وإنه يوشك أن
يقفك واقف على ما لا يُجِبَك منه محسن فأفRESS عن هذا الأمر وخذ أمه الحساب
ومثّر بما قد نزل بك ولا تمكن الغواية من سمعك وآلا تفعل أعملك ما أغفلت من
نفسك فإنك مترف قد أخذ الشيطان منك ما أخش وبلغ فيك أمه وجرى منك مجرى
الروح والدم. ومتي كنت يا معاوية ساحة الرعيّة وولاية أمر الأمة بما تغير قدم سابق
ولا شرف باسق ونعوذ بالله من لزوم سواق الشقاء. وأحذّرك أن تكون متمادياً
في غزّة الأمميّة مختلف العلانة السريرة. وقد دعوت إلى الحرب فدع الناس جاناً
وأخرج إلي وأعط الفريقين من القتال لتعلم أيّا المرين على قيّب والمغطى على بصره
فأنا أبو حسن قاتل جدك وخالك وأخيك شدّخاً يوم بدر وذلك السيف معي وبرك
القلب ألقي عدوي ما استبعدت دينا ولا استعتدت نبيّا. وإني لعلي المنهاج الذي
تركتموه طائعين ودخلتم فيه مكرهين. وزعمت أنك جئت ثائرًا بعثمان ولهد علمت

1 م، ي، ه، موصحة في ش: كدا ن. وأصل ش، ونسخة في م، ه: (<مُتقن>)
وموصحة في ش: ه: كدا ن. وأصل ش، ه: سقطت (ومتي كنت ... أن تكون)
into the matter and have concluded that I am unable to hand them over to you, or to anyone else. By my life, if you do not desist in your deceit and dissent, you will very soon see those same men seeking you out, saving you the trouble of seeking them out on land, or sea, or mountains, or plains. Your search will end badly—these are visitors you will not enjoy meeting. Peace to the deserving.

2.10 From another letter sent by ‘Alī to Muʿāwiyah:1
How will you fare when the robes with which this world adorns herself, with whose beauty she has ensnared you, are stripped off? She called, and you answered, she led, and you followed, she commanded, and you obeyed. Very soon, you will face something no shield can protect you from. Stand down from this path, gather provisions for the final reckoning, roll up your sleeves to prepare for life’s imminent end, and do not give ear to the wicked. Desist, or let me inform you about your own situation, a situation that you appear not to know: You live a life of excess. Satan has had his way with you, he has achieved his fullest hopes of you, and he now moves inside you as your own blood and spirit. When were your family ever rulers of the people, Muʿāwiyah, or guardians of the community’s affairs? You can claim no high honor there, no winning horse! We should all seek refuge in God from clinging to the stakes of wretchedness! I give you warning: Cease to be deceived by false hopes. Cease to hide intentions that differ from your speech. You call me to war, do you? Leave the people out of this and take the field! Meet me yourself and spare our armies the killing! Let it be known to all which of us possesses a blinded heart and blindfolded eyes!2 I am Abū Ḥasan, who killed your grandfather, your uncle, and your brother in the Battle of Badr with the cutting blow of my sword—that same sword is with me today, and so too that same heart with which I shall meet my enemy!3 I have not changed my religion or adopted a new prophet. I walk the path that you abandoned so willingly, that you had joined only under com-

---


2 “Blinded heart” is a reference to Qurʾan, Muṭaffifūn 83:14.

3 Ar. anā Abū Ḥasan (I am Hasan’s father), i.e., I am ‘Alī; it was common to refer to use a filionymic (“father of X”) to address individuals; see also § 2.18. At the Battle of Badr, ‘Alī had killed Muʿāwiyah’s maternal grandfather, ‘Utbah ibn Rabīʿah, his maternal uncle Walīd ibn ʿUtbah, and his brother Ḥanẓalah ibn Abī Sufyān. B 792; R 3:31; F 369.
الحرب إذا عضت ضحية الجمال بالأثقال وكأنْ يجمعك تدعوني جزعا من الضرب المتنابع والقضاء الواقع ومصارع بعد مصارع إلى كتاب الله وهي كافة جائدة أو مبائعة جائدة.

2.11
وصَبَّلّهُ بِهَا عَلَى السَّلَامِ جِنْشًا بَعْثَهُ إِلَى العَدْوَ،
فَإِذَا نَزَلَ تَوَدُّعًا أَوْ نَزَلَ بِمِلْكٍ فَلْيَكُن مَعَكَمُ كَمْ في قَبْلِ الأَشْرَافِ أَوْ سَفَاحِ الجَبَالِ أَوْ أَنْهَارِ، كِيْمَا تَكُونُ لَكُمْ رَدّاً وَدُونَكُمْ مَرَداً وَلَتَكُن مَقَالَتَكُمْ مِنْ وَجْهٍ أَوْ أَثْنَيْنِ وَأَجْعَلُوا
لَكَمْ رَقْبَاءٍ فِي صَبَائِنِ الجَبَالِ وَيَنَاكِبُ الْمِضَابِ لَتَّلَآ أَنْ تَهْيَيْنَا العَدْوَ مِنْ مِكَانٍ مُخَافَةٍ أَوْ أَمْنٍ وَأَعْلَمُ أَنَّ مَقَدْمَةَ الْقُوَّمِ عِيْنِهِمْ وَيَعْوَونَ الْمَقْدَمَةَ طَلَّاعُهُمْ إِيَّاكمْ وَتَتَفَرَّقُ إِذَا
نَزَلَ فَأَنْزَلُوا جَمِيّعًا وَإِذَا أَرْتحَلَّمَا فَأَرْتَحِلُوا جَمِيّعًا وَإِذَا غَشِيَّمُ الْلِّيْلُ فَأَجْعَلُوا الرَّماحُ كِفَةً
وَلَا تَذْوِقُوا النَّوْمُ إِلَّا غَرَّارًا أوُ مُضَمَّسَةً.

2.12
وَصَبَّلّهُ عَلَى السَّلَامِ لِمَقْلِيلٍ بَنَ قَيْسِ الرَّيْحَيْيٍ حِينَ أَنْفُذَهُ إِلَى النَّشَامِ فِي ثَلَاثَةٍ أَلَافٍ
مَقْدَمَةٍ لِهِ
أَتَّقِ اللَّهِ الَّذِي لَا بَدِّلُ لِكَ مِنْ لَقَائِهِ وَلَا مَنْتَبِي حَزْنُهُ وَلَا تَقَالُنَّ إِلَّا مَقَالَتَكُمْ وَسَرُّ الْبَرْدَيْنِ وَغَيْرُ بَالْنَاسِ وَرَهْقٍ فِي السَّيْرِ وَلَا تَسْرُّ أُولُ الْلِّيْلِ فَإِنَّ اللَّهَ جَعَلَ سَكِيْنَ وَقَدَّرَهُ مُقَامًا
لا تَظَنُّنَّ فَأَرْحَ فِي بَدْنِكَ وَرُوْحُ ظَهْرَكَ إِذَا وَقَتَّلَهُ حَيْنَ يَنْتَحِحُ السَّحَرُ أَوْ حَيْنَ يَنْفِجُ

الشَّرْفِ الْمَرْجُوْيَ، رَحَمَتُ اللَّهِ عَلَيْهِ، مِنْ تأْطِيرٍ ١:٢٥، يَ، وَنَسْخَةٌ فِي شَ: كُدَأَنْهُ، وَأَصْلُ شَ: بِنْطِحَ.
You claim to seek vengeance for ʿUthmān—you know well who was responsible for shedding ʿUthmān’s blood, so seek vengeance there if you wish! I can see you now, mauled by battle, screaming like a camel grumbling under a heavy load. I can see your faction panicked by unrelenting sword strikes, by the descent of fate, by death after death, inviting me, ironically, to follow the Qurʾan’s judgment, while you yourselves are unbelieving deniers, or men who swore allegiance then broke the pledge.  

2.11 From ʿAlī’s instructions to a battalion he had dispatched against the enemy:  
When you reach the enemy, or when they reach you, set up camp just before the high ground, or on the foothills of a mountain, or at the bend of a river, so these can serve as protection and barrier. Attack from a single side or from two at most. Place sentries on the horns of mountains and the shoulders of knolls—the enemy should not be able to take you by surprise, whether from a side you fear or even one you think is secure. Know that the eyes of the army are its vanguard, and the eyes of its vanguard are its scouts. Don’t split up into separate groups—stay together when you set up camp and stay together when you set off. When night descends, place your spears in a circle around you and sip the cup of sleep only from time to time.

2.12 From ʿAlī’s instructions to Maʿqil ibn Qays al-Riyāḥī, when he dispatched him to Syria at the head of a three-thousand-man vanguard:  
Fear God, whom you must meet, and beyond whom you have no goal. Fight only those who fight you. March during the two cooler periods of the day, alight at noon so your men can rest, and drive your camels at a comfortable pace. Don’t march in the first part of the night, for God has made it a time for repose and ordained it as a time of quiet and calm, not as a time for marching—so rest your body and your mounts. Then, when you rise at the spread of dawn, at the

---

1 The reference is to Muʿāwiyah and his clan, who waged war against the Prophet for years, then accepted Islam only after the Conquest of Mecca, in 8/637, when they had no choice.

2 Prophecy regarding the Battle of Ṣiffīn and how it would end. H 15:83.

3 Excerpt from a missive ʿAlī wrote in 36/657 from his army camp at Nukhaylah, near Kufa, to Ziyād ibn al-Naḍr al-Ḥārithī and Shurayḥ ibn Hānī, whom he had sent at the head of his vanguard to Syria. Ziyād was commander of the contingent. Shurayḥ was commander of a sub-contingent, and subordinate to Ziyād. B 793. Text of full letter in Minqarī, Waqʿat Ṣiffīn, 123–125. See also § 2.13 and § 2.56.

4 From Kufa in 36/657, in the lead-up to Ṣiffīn, when ʿAlī sent Maʿqil to Mosul from Madāʾin, both cities in Iraq, at the head of three thousand men, and asked him to go on from there to Raqqah, in Syria, where he, ʿAlī, and the main army would meet up with him. Minqarī, Waqʿat Ṣiffīn, 148–149; B 794.
الفجر فسر على بركة الله. فإذا قيت العدوّ فقفت من أصحابك وسطًا ولا تنام من القوم دنً من يريد أن ينشب الحرب ولا يلتفظ منهم تباعد من يهاب البأس حتى يأتيك أمري. ولا تحملنكم سبابهم على قتالهم قبل دعائهم والإعذار إليهم.

ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى أميرين من أمراء جيشه وقد أمّرت عليهما وعلى من في حريصهما مالك بن الحارث الأشتر فأمسعا له وأطاعا وأجعلاه درعًا وحجناً فإنه ممن لا يخف وتهو ولا سقته ولا بطلوه عمّا الإسراع إليه أحزم ولا إسراعه إلى ما البطل عنه أمش.

2.13 ومن وصيته عليه السلام لعسكره قبل لقاء العدوّ بعضين لا تقاطلوهم حتى يبدؤكم فإنكم بحمد الله على حجة وترككم إياهم حتى يبدؤكم حجة أخرى لكم عليهم فإنها كانت المرمية إذن الله فلا تقاطلو مدبرًا ولا تسمحوا معمورًا ولا تتجهوا على جريح ولا تنهجو النساء بأذى وإن شئت أعراضكم وسبين أمراءكم فإنهم ضعفاء القوى والأفانس والعقول فإن كنا نمؤون بالكيف عنهنّ وإننهم لمشركات وإن كان الرجل ليتناول المرأة في الجاهلية بالفرح أو الهراوة فيعير بها وتمبيه من بعده.

2.14 وكان عليه السلام يقول إذا لقي العدوّ محارباً للهمّ إنك أفضلت القلوب ومدّدت الأعناق وخصنت الأبحار وقعت الأقدام وأقلقنت الأبدان. اللهم قد صرح مكتومين الشبان وجاشت مرال الأصحاب. اللهم إنّا

2.15 وش، ن، ي، م: كذا. اللهكما. 2.15 ي، ومصححة في: كذا: ش، ن، وأصله: ونصحه في: م: (مكتون).
break of day, march forward with God’s blessing. When you meet the enemy, stand at the center of your men. Don’t allow your army to draw so near to the enemy that they fear you are on the verge of battle, but don’t stay so far away from them that they think you fear their attack. Wait on my further orders. Don’t let their insults incite you to begin the fight before you have called on them to make peace and exhausted your pleas.

2.13 From ‘Ali’s missive to two of his army commanders:1
I have appointed Mālik ibn al-Ḥārith al-Ashtar over both of you and over all those under your command. Listen to him and obey his orders, consider him your armor and shield. He is a person from whom neither weakness nor error is to be feared—he will not delay when speed is of the essence, nor hasten when measured steps are called for.

2.14 From ‘Ali’s instructions to his army just before confronting the enemy at Ṣiffīn:2
Don’t attack them unless they attack you first. Praise God, you already possess proof of righteousness, and waiting until they begin the fighting will be yet another proof against them and in your favor. If we defeat the enemy—and with God’s permission, we shall!—then don’t kill those who flee, don’t strike the unarmed, and don’t bear down on the wounded. Don’t threaten or hurt women, even if they insult your honor or abuse your leaders, for women are weak in strength, spirit, and mind, and we were commanded not to hurt them even when they were unbelievers. Even in the Age of Ignorance, if a man struck a woman with as much as a pebble or a small stick, he was held in shame for his act evermore, and so too were his descendants after him.

2.15 ‘Ali would offer this supplication whenever he met his enemy on the battlefield:3
God, it is to you that our hearts flow, our necks stretch, our eyes are raised, and our feet move. It is from the swiftness of our journey to you that our bodies have

---

1 The two commanders are Ziyād ibn al-Nadr and Shurayḥ ibn Hānī, whom ‘Ali sent from Kufa, at the head of his 12,000-strong vanguard, to Syria in 36/657 (see also § 2.11 earlier, and § 2.56 later, addressed to them). En route, the vanguard encountered a Syrian contingent under Abū al-A’war al-Sulamī. They wrote for help to ‘Ali, who responded by sending Mālik. Details of ‘Ali’s instructions to Mālik and the incident in B 795; Minqarī, Waqʿat Ṣiffīn, 152–155; Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 4:566–567 (letter at 567).


لتكو إليهب غيبة نبئنا وكثره عدوتنا وتشتت أهواهنا "ربنا افتح بيننا وبين قومنا بالحق " وأنت خير الفاتحين ".

وكان يقول عليه السلام لأصحابه عند الحرب لا تشتذVEN عليكم قوة بعدها كردة ولا جولة بعدها حملة. وأعطوا السيف حقوقها ووطئوا للجُنوب مصارعها وأذروها أنفسكم على الطعن الدعسي والضرب الطَّليقي. وأميروا الأصوات فإنه أطرد للفشل. والذي فلق الحبة وبرأ النسمة ما أسلموا ولكن أستسلموا وأسروا الكفر فلما وجدوا أخوانا عليه أظهروه.

2.16 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى معاوية جوابا عن كتاب منه فأما طلبه إلى الشام فإني لم أكن لأعطيك اليوم ما منعتك أمس فأما استواًنا في الحرب والرجال فست بأمضي على الشك مني على اليقين وليس أهل الشام بأحرص على الدنيا من أهل العراق على الآخرة. وأما قولك إنك أبو عبد مناف فذلك خمن وليس أميّة كهناش ولا حرب كان المطلب ولا أبو سفيان كأبي طالب ولا المهاجر كالطليق ولا الصريح كالصيوق ولا الخلق كالمطلب ولا المؤمن كالمدِّّي. وليه الخلف خلف ينبع سلفاً هوى في نار جهنم. وفي أيدينا بعد فضل النبوة التي أذلتها بها العزيز ونعشنا بها الدليل. ولما أدخل الله العرب في دينه أفرجا وأسلمت له هذه الأمم.

2.17 جميع المخطوطات الرئيسية: كذا شروح الروايدي والمجري وآين ابي الحديدي: (الطليقي) والمعنى واحد. 20، ش: ن: كذا ي: م، وزادة في هامش ش: م: أضيفت (وأما قوله إن الحرب فقد أكلت العرب إلا حشائش أنفس بقيت ألا ومن أكله الحق إلى الجنة ومن أكله الباطل إلى النار.}

al-Sharif al-Radi - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
become emaciated.\textsuperscript{1} God, buried rancor has surfaced today, and cauldrons of malice simmer. God, we complain to you of our Prophet’s death, our enemies’ numbers, and our community’s implosion. «Lord, decide between us and our tribesmen with truth, for you are the best conqueror.»\textsuperscript{2}

2.16 ‘Ali would give his supporters these instructions ahead of battle:\textsuperscript{3}
Don’t hesitate to retreat then assail, to withdraw then attack. Give your swords their due. Think of the place where your body may fall as your home. Prepare your frames for piercing spear-throws and powerful sword-strikes. Deaden your voices, for this will drive out your fear. I swear by him who split the grain and created the soul—your enemies have never really accepted Islam! They had to surrender but concealed their unbelief. When they found supporters, they revealed it again.

2.17 From ‘Ali’s letter replying to Mu‘āwiya:\textsuperscript{4}
You demand Syria, but I’m not about to give you today what I refused you yesterday. We are not equal in war and men—you in your state of doubt don’t possess sharper perception than I do in my certainty, and the people of Syria don’t covet this world more than the people of Iraq covet the hereafter. You say, “We are all sons of ‘Abd Manāf”—yes, we are, but Umayyah is not the equal of Hāshim, Ḥarb is not the equal of ‘Abd al-Muṭṭalib, Abū Sufyān is not the equal of Abū Ṭālib, the Emigrant is not like the Freedman,\textsuperscript{5} the purebred is not like the adopted, the righteous is not like the falsifier, and the believer is not like the closet antagonist! The worst son is one who follows his forebears into the Fire of Gehenna! Our hands possess the honor of prophecy, with it we brought low the mighty and raised the humble. When God brought the Arabs in droves into

\textsuperscript{1} Lit. “It is to you that bodies become emaciated (unḍiyat).” I have inserted, “from swift journeying,” based on the literary context, which evokes a journey in which the rider pushes his camel to swift and continuous travel, thereby emaciating it—in our text, the emaciated camel signifies the rider himself.

\textsuperscript{2} Qur’an, Aʿrāf 7:89.

\textsuperscript{3} At Ṣiffīn, 37/657. Minqarī, Waqʿat Ṣiffīn, 235–236.

\textsuperscript{4} On one of the battle-days at Ṣiffīn, 37/657. Muʿāwiyah wrote to ‘Ali at Ṣiffīn, offering him the pledge in return for the governorship of Syria. Muʿāwiyah’s letter and ‘Ali’s full reply in Minqarī, Waqʿat Ṣiffīn, 470–471; Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 258–259; B 798; R 3:47; Ḥ 1532–124, after Minqarī.

\textsuperscript{5} Freedmen (ṭaliq, pl. tulaqāʾ) is a derogatory term referring to those of the Quraysh, including Muʿāwiyah’s father, Abū Sufyān, who remained the Prophet’s committed enemies until forced to capitulate upon the Muslim conquest of Mecca. On that day, instead of forcing them into captivity according to the standard practice, Muḥammad pardoned them and granted them their freedom, saying, “You are freedmen.” Ibn Hishām, Sīrah, 4:35; Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 3:61.
طوعًا وكرهًا كنت ممن دخل في الدين إما رغبة وعما رهبة على حين فارًا أهل السبق بسباقهم وذهب المهاجرين الأولون بفضلهم. فلا تجعل للكسيتان فيك نصيبًا ولا على نفسك سبيلًا.

2.18 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى عبد الله بن العبّاس رحمهما الله وهو عامله على البصرة وأعلم أن البصرة مخيط إبليس ومغرس الفتى غادث أهلها بالإحسان إليهم وأحل عقدة الخوف عن قلوبهم. وقد بلغت تمرّك بني عميم وغفلتكم عليهم فإن بني عميم لم يغضب لهم نجم إلا طلع لهم آخر وإنهم لم يسبقوا بوغم في جاهلية ولا إسلام وإن لهم بناء رحمة ماسة وقراءة خاصّة تحن ما يجرون على صلتها وما يروون على قطيعتها. فأربع أبا العبّاس رحمة الله فيما جرى على يدك ولسناك من خير وشر فانما شريكان في ذلك وكن عند صالح ظبي بك ولا يقبلنّ رأي فيك. والسلام.

2.19 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى بعض عماله أفأ بعد. فإن دهاقين أهل بلادك شكنك منك غنظة وقسوة وحثراء وحذو فنظرت فلم أُره أهلًا لأن يدنوا لشرككم ولا أن يصقروا ويفحوا معهم فليسهم جلبًا من اللين تمويه بطرف من المشاد وداول بهم بين القسوة والرفاقة وأمزج لهم بين التقرب والإدء وناء والإبعاد والإقصاء إن شاء الله.

١ م، ي، وي، وأصل ش، ومصحتة في ه: كدان، وأصل ه، ومصحتة في ش، ونسخة في م، "فات."
the fold of his religion, when this nation submitted to Islam, some willingly and some by force, you were among those who did so out of greed or fear. By that time, the true winners had already attained precedence, and the first Emigrants had already won distinction. Don’t let Satan have a share in you, Muʿāwiyah, don’t show him a way to control your soul.

2.18 From ʿAlī’s missive to ʿAbdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās, his governor in Basra:¹
Know that Basra is where Iblīs landed after his fall from grace and where the trees of sedition have taken root, so tame its people with kindness and unravel from their heart the knot of fear. It has reached me that you have castigated the Tamīm tribesmen and spoken with them harshly. Know that no star of Tamīm has ever set except that another has risen in its place, and no one has dared to attack them either in the Age of Ignorance or since the coming of Islam. They are our intimate kin and our close relations—we shall be rewarded for fostering their bonds and incur sin if we sever them. Exercise restraint, Abū al-ʿAbbās—may God have mercy on you!—in whatever flows from your hand or your tongue, be it good or bad, for we are partners in this endeavor. Behave as I hope you will behave, and don’t make me change my opinion of you. Go in peace.

2.19 From ʿAlī’s missive to one of his governors:³
The Dihqān landowners in your province have complained of your harshness, strictness, contempt, and ill-treatment.⁴ I have looked into this matter, and although I find them unworthy of being your close associates because of their polytheism, yet they certainly do not deserve to be alienated or to be treated harshly, for they have entered into our compact. In dealing with them, wear a soft garment with an edge of toughness, and alternate between strictness and compassion. Mix intimacy and closeness with remoteness and reserve. You will do this, God willing.

---
¹ Presumably from Kufa, soon after the Battle of the Camel in 36/656. During that battle, the loyalties of the Tamīm tribe of Basra had been divided, and many had fought against ʿAli. Afterward, when ʿAli appointed Ibn al-ʿAbbās governor of Basra, Ibn al-ʿAbbās was harsh with the Tamīm for this reason. Details and ʿAlī’s full letter in B 801.
² “Abū (father of) al-ʿAbbās,” addressing Abdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās. Though commonly known as “Ibn (son of) al-ʿAbbās,” Abdallāh is referred to here in relation to his son, who, like Abdallāh’s father, is also named al-ʿAbbās. For another use of this form of nomenclature, see § 2.10.
³ Presumably from Kufa between 37/658 and 40/661. Baladhuri (Ansāb, 2:161), Yaʿqūbī (Tarikh, 2:203), and Māmaṭīrī (Nuzhah, 258) name the recipient as ʿAmr ibn Salamah al-Hamdānī al-Arḥabī, ʿAlī’s governor in Isfahan.
⁴ Ar. dihqān, pl. dahāqīn, class of lesser nobles in early Muslim Iran. Most were Zoroastrians, while some in northern Mesopotamia were Christians. For details, see Paul, “Dihqān,” EI³. Baḥrānī (B 801) says ʿAlī’s missive refers to Zoroastrian (Majūs) landowners.
2.20 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى زيد بن أبيه وهو خليفة عامله عبد الله بن العباس رحمة الله عليه على البصرة. وعبد الله عامل أمر المؤمنين عليه السلام يومئذ عليه وعلى كور الأهوار وفارس وكرمان.

واني أقسم بالله قسمًا صادقًا أنك خننت من فيء المسلمين شيئًا صغيرًا أو كبيرًا لأشدّن عليك شدة تدعك قليل الوفر تقبل الظهر ضئيل الأمر والسلام.

2.21 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إليه أيضًا فدع الإسراف مقتضيًا وأذكر في اليوم غدًا وأمسك من المال بقدر ضرورتك وقلم الفضل ليوم حاجتك أترجو أن يؤتيك الله أج من المواضعين وأنت عند الله من المتكررين وتطيع وأنت متمرّج في التعليم تمنعه الضعيف والأرملة أن يوجب لك ثواب المتصدّقين وإنما التمرين محبّي بما سلّف وقادم على ما قدّم. والسلام.

2.22 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى عبد الله بن العباس. كان ابن عباس يقول ما أتفعت بكلام بعد كلام رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله و{kamee} النبي يهتيك.
2.20 From ‘Alī’s missive to Ziyād ibn Abīhi, who was acting as deputy for ‘Alī’s governor ‘Abdallāh ibn al-‘Abbās in Basra. ‘Abdallāh was then ‘Alī’s governor in Basra and he also had jurisdiction over the provinces of Ahwaz, Fars, and Kirman.¹

I swear this by God, in all truth: If I hear that you have misappropriated funds from the Muslims’ treasury, whether it be a small or a large amount, I shall inflict on you a harsh punishment that will leave you short of wealth, diminished in strength, and burdened with shame. Go in peace.

2.21 From another missive sent by ‘Alī to Ziyād:²

Turn from extravagance to moderation, think today of tomorrow, and spend what you must, but put by the rest for your day of want. Do you expect God to remunerate you with the humble if he counts you among the arrogant? Do you think he will reward you with the charitable when you wallow in luxuries and refuse to help the weak and the widowed? A man is recompensed for the work he has accomplished. He advances to meet what he sent on. Go in peace.

2.22 From ‘Alī’s letter to ‘Abdallāh ibn al-‘Abbās. Ibn al-‘Abbās used to say: After the words of the Prophet, I have benefited from no words as much as I have benefited from these:³

---

¹ Presumably sent from Kufa to Fars sometime in 37–38/657–658: Ya‘qūbī (Tārīkh, 2:204) prefaced this missive with the words, “[‘Alī] wrote to Ziyād, his governor in Fars”; Ziyād was appointed as governor there after Ṣiffīn, which was in 37/657. This text is an escalation from the earlier, relatively milder reproof against corruption in § 2.21.

² Presumably also from Kufa, but earlier than § 2.20, in 36/657, in the lead-up to the Battle of Ṣiffīn, when ‘Abdallāh ibn al-‘Abbās left his post to join ‘Alī for preparations. ‘Alī had dispatched his freedman Sa‘d to Ziyād, instructing him to send funds to him in Kufa from the treasury of Basra; they argued, and, presumably, Ziyād did not send the funds, which is what prompted ‘Alī’s reply. Details of the context, ‘Alī’s full missive, and Ziyād’s reply, in Balādhurī, Ansāb, 2:164–165; H 16:196–197, within the commentary on § 2.44.

³ Excerpt from a letter—of which § 2.66 is a variant rendering, and § 2.41 and § 2.72 are possibly other parts—likely sent from Kufa to Mecca in 40/661, a short while before ‘Alī’s death. ‘Abdallāh ibn al-‘Abbās, ‘Alī’s cousin and governor of Basra during ‘Alī’s reign, apparently took money for personal use from the Basra treasury, arguing that as a member of the Prophet’s family, he had a right to the Qur’anic “fifth” (khums) share. When ‘Alī chastised him, he retracted his claim and returned the money. Text and context for § 2.22 and § 2.66 in Ya‘qūbī, Tārīkh, 2:205. The commentators also discuss the episode under § 2.41, which includes explicit mention of the affair: H 16:169–172; B 867, includes ‘Abdallāh’s reply, and ‘Alī’s further reply; details are also given in Balādhurī, Ansāb, 2:164–176; Rāwandī (R 3:134–135) argues—contra the other commentators—that the reference is more likely to ‘Abdallāh’s brother ‘Ubaydallāh ibn al-‘Abbās.
أَنَّهَا بَعْدَهُ. فَإِنَّ الْمَرْهِمِ يَسْرَهُ دَرُكَ مَا لَمْ يَكُن لِيْفُوتهُ وَيَسْوِه فُوَت مَا لَمْ يَكُن لِيَدْرِكَهُ فَلَيْكُن
سَرُوْرُكَ بِمَا نَلْتُ مِنْ أَخْرِجْكَ وَلِيْكُنْ أَسْفَكَ عَلَى مَا فَاتَكَ مِنْهَا وَمَا نَلْتُ مِنَ الدُّنِيَا فَلا
تَكْثِرْهُ فِرْحًا وَمَا فَاتَكَ مِنْهَا فَلَا تَأْسَ عَلَى جَزَاءٍ وَلِيْكُنْ هَمْكُ فِي مَا بَعْدَ الْمَوْتِ.

وَمِنْ كَلَامِهِ لَهُ مُحَدَّثَةُ سَبْيلِ الوَصْيَةِ فِي الْخَيْرَاتِ وَكَلَامْهُ لَكُمْ أَلاّ تَشْرَكُوا بِاللَّهِ شَيْئًا وَحَمْدُ صَلِّي اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَآلهَ فَلا تَضْيِعُوا سَنْتَهُ أَقِيمُوا هَذِينَ الْعَمُودِينَ وَخَالِكَمْ دِمْ. أَنَا بِالْأَمْسِ صَاحِبِيَّةً وَالِيَومِ عَبْرَةً لَكُمْ وَغَدًا مَفَارِقَمْ. إِنَّ أَقِيمَ أَنَا
وَلِيَ دَمِي وَإِنْ أَفْتَنَـتُ فَالْفَنَاءُ وَمِيعاديَّ وَإِنْ أَعْفُ فَالْعَفْوُ فِي قَرْبَةٍ وَهُوَ لَكُمْ حَسْنَةٌ فَأَعْفَوا
ٌّ أَلَا تَحْبُسُونَ أَنْ يُغَيْرِ اللَّهَ لِكُرْكُ. وَاللَّهُ مَا جَنِينِي مِنَ الْمَوْتِ وَأَرْدَ كَرِهْتُهُ وَلَا طَالِعَ أَنْكَرَهُ
وَمَا كَتَبْ إِلَّا كَقَارِبٍ وَرَدَ وَطَلَبَ وَجَدَ (وَمَا عَيْنَ اللهَ خَيرِ اللَّابِرِ).

وَقَدْ مَضَى بِعْضُ هَذَا الْكَلامِ فِيهِ تَقْدِيمٌ مَنْ الخَطْطِ إِلَّا أَنْ فِيهِ هُنَا زِيَادَةً أَوْجَبَ تَكْرِيرَهُ.

وَمِنْ وَصْيَةِ لَهُ مُحَدَّثَةُ مَا يَعْمَلُ فِي أَمَوَالِهِ كَتَبَهُ بَعْدَ منْصُرَفِهِ مِنْ صُفْقِينَ إِنَّ هُذَا مَأْمُرَهُ عَبْدُ اللَّهِ عَلَىٰ بْنِ أَبِي طَالِبٍ أَمِيرَ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ فِي مَالِهِ أَبْنَاءٌ وَجِهَ اللهَ لِيِلْجِنِي بِهِ
الجَنّْةَ وَيَعْطِينِي الأَمْنَةَ.
A man is gladdened by obtaining a thing he was not going to lose and saddened by the loss of a thing he was not going to obtain. Be glad for what you have achieved for the hereafter. Be sad for what you have lost of it. Whatever you achieve of this world, don’t exult over it excessively. Whatever you may lose of it, don’t grieve too much. Save your worries for what comes after death.

2.23 From ‘Alī’s address after Ibn Muljam struck him with his sword, spoken as a testament just before ‘Alī’s death:

This is my testament to you: Do not assign partners to God or abandon the Sunnah of the Prophet—keep these two pillars upright, and you shall be free of blame. Yesterday I was your companion, today I serve as a plain lesson for you, and tomorrow I shall be gone from your midst. If I survive, I shall claim my own blood-wit, and if I die, well, death is what we are promised. If I forgive, my action will gain me nearness to God, and if you do the same, you too will earn God’s reward. Choose forgiveness—«Do you not wish that God should forgive you?»

By God, death has not surprised me as an unwelcome visitor, or as a sudden arrival that I find unpleasant. I am like a person who has arrived at the watering hole he sought, who found the object he pursued. «What God has prepared for people of virtue is the best!»

Raḍī: Part of this address was previously recorded in the Orations section. This version contains some additions, which is why I have found it necessary to repeat it here.

2.24 From a testament ‘Alī wrote after turning back from Ṣiffīn, regarding the distribution of his properties:

This is what I—I, God’s servant, ‘Alī ibn Abī Ṭālib, Commander of the Faithful—have directed with regard to my property in the pursuance of God’s pleasure, in the hope that God will allow me entry into the celestial garden and grant me his protection.

1 Delivered as part of a testament in his home in Kufa, where he was carried after he was struck the deathblow, in 40/661. Kulaynī, Kāfī, 1299.
2 Blood-wit and forgiveness are mentioned in the context of punishment for ‘Alī’s killer, Ibn Muljam.
3 Qur’ān, Nūr 24:22.
5 § 1.147.
6 En route from Ṣiffīn to Kufa in 37/657. Full testament with list of transmitters and some details of ‘Alī’s concubines in B 806–807. Some details of his properties in H 15:149. The testament starts out in the conventional third grammatical person, which I have changed to first person for clarity, since the final line in Arabic is in the first person.
منها

وأَنَّهُ يَقُولُ بِذلِكَ الْحَسَنُ بْنُ عَلِيٍّ يَأْكُلُ مِنْهَا بالمَعْرُوفِ وَيَنْفِقُ مِنْهَا فِي الْمَعْرُوفِ فَإِنْ حَدَثَ بِحَسَنِ حَدِيثٍ وَحَسَنٍ حَيٍّ قَامَ بَالْأَمْرِ بِهِ وَأَصِدَّرَهُ مَصَدِرُهُ. وَإِنَّ لَأَنَّهُ فَاطِمَةُ فِي صِدَاقَةٍ مَعْلِمٌ مِثلُ الْذِّي بَنِيَ عَلِيٌّ وَإِنَّمَا جَعَلَ الْقِيَامَ بِذلِكَ إِلَى أَنَّهَا فَاطِمَةُ أَبْنَيَةَ وَجَهَّالِلَّ وَقُرْنَتْ إِلَى رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهْ وَرَحْمَتَهُ وَكَرِيمَهُ لِحُرُمِهِ وَتَشْرَفَ لِوَلَدُهُ. وَيَشْرَطُ فِي الْذِّي يَجِبُهُ إِلَى أَنْ يَتْرَكِ الْمَالِ عَلَى أَصْوَلِهِ وَيَنْفِقْ مِنْ فُرْقَةٍ مِنْهُ أَمَرَّ بِهِ وَهَدَى لِهِ وَأَنَّ لَا يَيِبَعُ مِنْ نَخْلِهِ; هُذِهِ الْقَرْيَةُ وَدِينَةٌ حَتَّى نَشَكِّلَ أَرْضَهَا غَرَاسًا. وَمِنْ كَانَ مِنْ إِثْمِيِّ الْلَّاتِي أَطْفَفْنَ عَلَيْنَهَا لَوْلَا أُحْيَى حَافِلٌ فَتَمَّسَّكَ عَلَى وَلِيْهَا وَهِيَ مِنْ حَفْظِهِ فَإِنَّ مَاتَ وَلِيْهَا وَهِيْ حَيَّةٌ فِي بِعْيُنَةٍ قَدْ أَفْرَجَ عَنَّهَا الرِّقَ وَحَرَّرَهَا عَنْهَا.

قُولَهُ عَلَى الْسَلَامِ فِي هِذِهِ الْوَصْيَةِ (وَلَا يَيِبُعُ مِنْ نَخْلِهِ وَدِينَةٍ) فَإِنَّ الْوَدِينَةَ الْفِسَلَةُ وَجَمِيعُهَا وُدِّيٌّ. وَقُولَهُ (حَتَّى نَشَكِّلَ أَرْضَهَا غَرَاسًا) هُوَ مِنْ أَفْصِحٍ الْكَلَامِ وَالْمَرَادُ بِهِ أَنَّ الْأَرْضَ يَبْكِرُ فِيهَا غَرَاسٍ النَّخْلِ حَتَّى يَراَا النَّامِرُ عَلَى غَيْرِ ثُلُثِّ الْكَنْفَةِ الَّتِي عَرَفَهَا بِهَا فِيْشَكِّلُ عَلَى أَمَرَّهَا وَيَبْسُمُهَا غَيْرَهَا. 2.25

وَمِنْ وَصْيَةٍ لَهُ عَلَى الْسَلَامِ كَانَ يَكْتُبُهَا لِمَنْ يَسْتَعْمَلُهَا عَلَى الصِّدَاقَاتِ وَإِنَّمَا ذَكَرْنَاهَا جَمَالًا هُنَا لِيُلْبِمُهَا أَنَّهُ عَلَى الْسَلَامِ كَانِ يَقِمُ عَمَادَ الْحَقِّ وَيَشْرَعُ مَثَلَّةَ الْعَدَلِ فِي صِغِيرَ الْأَمْوَرِ وَكِبْرِيهَا وَدَقِيقَةِهَا وَجِيَلِهَا.

2.25.1 اَنْتَقِلَ عَلَى تَقْوَى اللَّهِ وَحَدِهَا لَا شَرِيكَ لَهُ وَلَا رَيْوَٰعُ مِسْلَمًا وَلَا يَاخْتَازَّنَّ عَلِيهِ كَأَهْوَاهُ وَلَا تَأْخَذَنَّ مِنْهُ أَكَثَرَ مِنْ حَقَّ اللَّهِ فِي مَالِهِ.

١ُن، ش.، ه: كُذُّا، م.، ي: وَنَسْخَةُ فِي هِ: أَوْلَادِ النَّخْلِ، مم.، ي: كُذُّا، ن.، ش: "تَجَازَنَّ".
From the same testament:
My property shall be administered by al-Ḥasan ibn ʿAlī. He should use a portion from it in licit ways and disburse from it also in licit ways. If something happens to Ḥasan while Ḥusayn lives, Ḥusayn shall administer the property thereafter and in the same way. Fāṭimah’s sons are both to have the same share from my trusts as my other sons, but I have selected them for the charge of administering my trusts in order to obtain God’s pleasure, gain closeness to God’s Messenger, honor his sanctity, and privilege his kinship. The administrator is to leave the property’s principal in its original form and spend only from its fruits as he has been directed and instructed. He may not sell the estates’ date-palm shoots until the entire land has ripened with them and become a fully green plantation. If any of my concubines with whom I cohabit has a child or is pregnant, then the cost of freeing her is to be deducted from her child’s share. If her child dies and she lives, she is still free, for her bondage has already been removed, and my freeing her has certified her liberty.

Raḍī: As for ʿAlī’s words in this testament, “He may not sell the estates’ date-palm shoots (wadiyyah)”: wadiyyah are saplings, and the plural is wadī. His words: “until the land has ripened with them and become (an tushkila) a green plantation” is among the most eloquent of expressions. It means that date-palm plantings will grow with such abundance in that land that the beholder will think it a landscape different to the one before; he will be thrown into doubt (ashkala, which also means ripen) and will think it is a different piece of land altogether.

2.25 From a testament ʿAlī would customarily inscribe for tax collectors he appointed to oversee collection of the alms-levy. I have recorded some sections from it here to show how ʿAlī raised the pillar of right and followed the path of justice in matters small and large, and in affairs trivial and momentous:

2.25.1 Set out in consciousness of God, who is one and has no partner. Don’t threaten a Muslim, don’t survey his property without his consent, and don’t take from his possessions more than what is due to God.

---

1 This is ʿAlī’s son Ḥasan from his wife Fāṭimah Zahrah, daughter of the Prophet. Following convention for official documents, ʿAlī refers to him as “Ḥasan ibn (= son of) ʿAlī” rather than saying “my son Ḥasan.”
2 Translation after Ḥ 15:150.
3 In Kufa, during his caliphate, 35–40/656–661, when he sent tax collectors to agricultural lands to collect the alms-levy (ṣadaqāt) annually required of Muslims. Thaqafī, Ghārāt, 1:126–131.
2.25.2 إذا قدمت على الحي فأنزل بمائهما من غير أن تخلط أبائهما ثم أمض إليهم بالسكيكين والوقار حتى تقوم بينهم فقسمل عليهم ولا تخلع بالتحية لهم ثم تقول عباد الله أرسلني إليكم ولي الله وخليفته لأخذ منكم حق الله في أموالكم فهل في أموالكم من حق فئذدهو إلى وليه. فإن قال قائل لا فلا ترجعه وإن أنعم لك منعم فتنطلق معه من غير أن تخيفه أو توعده أو تسأله أو ترهقه نقد ما أعطاك من ذهب أو فضة. فإن كانت له ماشية أو مبل فالآدخله إلا إذنك إلا إذا أتيت فلا تدخلها دخلت سلطه عليه ولا تعني به ولا تستيرن بينه ولا تستعده ولا تسوون صاحبك فيها. وأصدع المال صدقين ثم خسره فإذا أختار فلا تعرضن لما أختار ثم أصدع الخبائين صدقين ثم خسره فإذا أختار فلا تعرضن لما أختار فلا تزال بذلك حتى يبني ما فيه وفاء له في ماله فاققض حق الله منه فإن استقالك فأقام ثم أظلمهما ثم اصنع مثل الذي صنعت أولى حتى تحذف حق الله في ماه. ولا تأخذ غودًا ولا هرمًا ولا مكورة ولا مهولة ولا ذات عوار.

2.25.3 ولا تأمنن عليها إلا من تلق بدينه رافقًا بمال المسلمين حتى يوصله إلى وليه فيقسمه بينه ولا توقيلي بها إلا ناسحًا شقيقًا وأمينًا حفيفًا غير معنف ولا محتف ولا ملغب ولا متعب ثم أدخر إليها ما أجتمع عندك نصيره حيث أمر الله به. فإذا أخذها أمينك فأوسع إليه إلا لا يجلس به بين فضيلته ولا يحكم بين ماله ولا يصير له إلى بولدها ولا يجهدهم ركوبًا أو بيعده بين صاحباتها في ذلك وبينه وليه على اللاغه وليستان بالثحث والطاعل وليوردها ما تمرره من المان لا يعد بها عن نبت الأرض إلى جواد الطريق وليروجها في الساعات وليهله عند الباطن والأعشاب حتى تأتيتنا إذن الله.
2.25.2 When you arrive in the lands of a tribe, pitch your tent at their watering hole and don't enter their residential areas. Then walk toward them calmly and with dignity and stand in their midst. Then hail them in peace and don't stint with your greeting. Then say, “Servants of God, God's vicegerent, his caliph, has sent me to secure God's due from your property. Is there anything you owe God from your property that you should submit to his vicegerent?” If a person says no, don't ask him again. If a person is forthcoming, set out with him, but don't frighten, threaten, force, or oppress him—accept whatever gold or silver he submits to you freely. If he has goats or camels, don't enter their pens without his permission, for most of the animals belong to him. When you do enter, don't behave rudely or with violence. Don't frighten the animals or startle them, and don't cause the owner distress by maltreating them. Divide the animals into two groups and have the owner select one set. When he has made his selection, don't object. Then divide the remaining animals again into two groups, and have the owner select one set. When he has made his selection, don't object. Keep doing this until God's due is fulfilled by the number of animals that remain in your share, then accept them as God's due from the owner. If, after that, he asks you to rescind the operation, rescind it. Then bring all the animals together once again and repeat what you had done earlier until you have secured his acceptance of God's due from his property. Make sure, however, that you don't accept animals that are old, decrepit, broken-boned, sickly, or defective.

2.25.3 Assign the animals only to the care of someone you know to be pious and who will be gentle with these flocks that belong to the Muslim community, until he delivers them to their leader, and that leader distributes the animals among them. Entrust the animals only to the care of someone who is kind and sincere, a vigilant custodian who won't treat them roughly, overburden them, fatigue them, or drive them too hard. Then hasten to send me all the animals that have been collected under your supervision so that I may distribute them in the manner commanded by God. When your deputy takes charge of them, instruct him not to separate a camel from her calf, or to milk her to the extent that it harms the calf, or to ride her so hard that she collapses. He should divide his riding evenly between her and her fellow mares. He should allow tired animals to rest and be unhurried in herding the animals with worn hooves or a limp. He should let them drink whenever they pass a pool of water and not force them from green shoots to the beaten road. He should let them have a respite every few hours and pause wherever there is water and grass. He should do this until he delivers the animals to me, with God's permission, healthy and fat with marrow, neither fatigued nor distressed, so that I may distribute them
بدّنا منقيبات غير متعبات ولا مجاهدات لنقسمها على كتاب الله وسنة نبيه صلى الله عليه وآله. فإن ذلك أعظم لأجرك وأقرب لرشدك إن شاء الله.

2.26 ومن عهد له عليه السلام في مثله إلى بعض عماله وقد بعثه على الصدقة

2.26.1 أمره يتقوى الله في سرائر أمره وخفّيات أعماله حيث لا شهيد غيره ولا وكل دونه وأمره لالا يعمل شيئا من طاعة الله فيما ظهر فيخلف إلى غيره فيما أمر ومن لم يختلف سر وعلايته وفعله ومقامه فقد أدى الأمانة وأخلص العبادة وأمره أن لا يجهّبهم ولا يعصبهم ولا يرغب عنهم تفضلاً بالإمارة عليهم فإنهم الإخوان في الدين والأعمال على أستخراج الحقوق.

2.26.2 وإنّ لك في هذه الصدقة نصيباً مفروضاً وحقّاً معلوماً وشركاء أهل مقسة وضعفاً ذوي فاقة وإنا موفوك حقك فورّهم حقوقهم وإنا فإنك من أكثر الناس خصوصاً يوم القيامة ووبأساً لي خصمه عند الله الفقراء والمساكين والسائلون والمدافعون والغارد وآمن السبيل ومن أستبان بالأمانة ورّعت في الخيانة ولم ينزع نفسه وديه عنها فقد أجل بنفسه في الدنيا الخزي وهو في الآخرة أذل وأخزى. وإن أعظم الخيانة خيانة الأمّ وافتقع الغشّ غشّ الأمّ.

2.27 ومن عهد له عليه السلام إلى محمد بن أبي بكر رحمه الله حين قادده مصر
Chapter 2: Letters

559

according to God's Book and the Prophet's Sunnah. Do this, and God willing, it will increase your reward and bring you closer to the way of guidance.

2.26 From ‘Ali’s missive to one of his tax collectors whom he had sent to collect the alms-levy:¹

2.26.1 ‘Ali commands his tax collector to be conscious of God in private affairs and hidden acts, for there is no true witness, and no real agent, other than God. ‘Ali commands his tax collector to make sure that while he shows obedience to God in public, he should never do the opposite in private. To discharge his trust and offer worship with sincerity, the tax collector’s private and public life should not contradict, and his actions and words should not be in opposition. ‘Ali also commands him to make sure he never abuses or reviles his subjects. He should never raise himself above them because of his charge, for they are his brothers in faith and his helpers in the collection of dues.

2.26.2 You have a prescribed share, a recognized right, in this levy. You also have partners—the poor, the weak, and the destitute. I will give you your share in full, but you should leave them their full share, else you will be among those who face an army of adversaries on the day of resurrection. Woe to the man whose adversaries before God are the mendicant, the poor, the beggar, the helpless, the debtor, and the wayfarer!² If you scorn your trust and forage in the pastures of embezzlement, if you don’t keep your soul and your faith clean from its filth, you will secure shame for yourself in this world, and even greater shame and humiliation in the hereafter. The most dreadful embezzlement is embezzlement of property that belongs to the community. The most terrible deception is deceiving the Imam.

2.27 From ‘Ali’s testament to Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr, when he placed him in charge of Egypt:³

¹ In Kufa during his caliphate, 35–40/656–661, when he sent Mikhnaf ibn Sulaym al-Azdī to collect the alms-levy (ṣadaqah). Nu’mān, Da‘āʾim, 1:252.

² These are among the eight categories of recipients for the alms-levy named in the Qurʾan, Tawbah 9:60. Discussion in B 81; H 15:61. The Arabic word madfūʿūn—translated here as “helpless” (after R 3:61; H 15:61, in the Qurʾanic category of “in the path of the God,” fi sabīl Allāh)—could also be interpreted, pace H 15:61, as “weakly faithful,” i.e., the category of those “whose hearts are reconciled” (al-muʾallafati qulūbuhum) to Islam.

³ Presumably written in Kufa between 36/656 and 38/658, in answer to questions Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr posed to him in a letter. Thaqafi, Ghārāt, 1:235–248; Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 264–281, Jurjānī, Iʿtibār 561–572 (Māmaṭīrī and Jurjānī include the text of ‘Ali’s full letter, and Muḥammad’s letter of request). These lines are similar to § 2.46.
2.27.1 فأخذنا هم جناثنا وأثناءهم جانبنا وآبستهم وهم وجههم وآس بينهم في الحظة والنظرة حتى لا يطمع العظام في جيفهم ولا يتأس الضعفاء من عدلك عليهم. وإن الله يسألكم معظم عباده عن الصغرى من أعمالكم والكبيرة والظاهرة والمستورة فإن يعذب فتأم أظلم وإن يغف فهو أكرم.

2.27.2 وأعلموا عباد الله أن المتّقين ذهبوا بعاجل الدنيا وآجل الآخرة فشاركوا أهل الدنيا في دناهم ولم يشاركهم أهل الدنيا في آخرهم. سكنوا الدنيا بأفضل ما سكنت وأكلها بأفضل مما أكلت حظوا من الدنيا بما حظوه مرتّفين وأخذوا منها ما أخذوا الحجازة المتّكرون ثمّ أنقلبوا عنها بالزاد المأله والملتب الراحي أصابوا أهل زهد الدنيا في الدنيا وتنقى أنهم جيران الله غداً في آخرهم لا يردد لهم دعوة ولا ينقصهم نصيب من لده.

2.27.3 فأخذوا عباد الله الموت وقريه وأعدوا له عدته فإنه يأتي بأمر عظيم وخطب جليل يكثر لا يكون معه شر أبداً أو شر لا يكون معه خير أبداً فإن أقرب إلى الجنة من عاملها ومن أقرب إلى النار من عاملها وأتمنو طرداة الموت إن أقيم له أحدكم وإن فرتم منه أدرككم وهو أرث لكم من ظلال الموت معقود بواصلكم والدنيا تطوى من خلفكم فأخذوا ناراً قدرها بعيد وحرّها شديد وغذاها حديد دار ليس فيها راحة ولا تسمع فيها دعوة ولا تفرج فيها كرية وإن استطعتم أن يشّتت خوفكم من الله وأن يحسن ظنكم به فأججعوا بينهما فإن العبد إذا يكون حسن ظن لربه على قدر خوفه من ربي وإن أحسن الناس ظناً بانه أشدهم خوفاً لله.

2.27.4 وأعلموا يا محمد بن أبي بكر أي قد ولبتك أعظم أجناد في نفسي أهل مصر فأنت محقق أن تتأفف على نفسك وأنت تائل عن دينك ولو لم يكن لك إلا ساعة من الدهر

2.27.1  Lower your wing over them, offer them your softer side, show them your face, and give equal attention to all in glance and look, such that the powerful are not emboldened to expect unfair favors and the weak do not despair of getting justice. God will ask all his servants about small and large deeds, those open and those concealed. If he punishes, it is because you are the sinners. If he forgives, it is because he is the benefactor.

2.27.2  Servants of God! Know that the pious partake of the joys of this world and the next. They share the world with the worldly, but the worldly do not share the hereafter with them. In this world, they reside in the most splendid of residences and consume the finest of delicacies. They possess the opulent comforts of the wealthy and partake of the lavish luxuries of the mighty. Yet, when they depart, they leave with a full supply of provisions and a large profit. They enjoy the pleasures of this world without becoming immersed in worldliness, content in the certain knowledge that they will be God’s neighbors in the next—no prayer rejected, no pleasure withheld.

2.27.3  Servants of God! Beware of death, for it is imminent! Ready your provisions, for death will bring a momentous affair, a fateful end—good with no evil attached to it forever after, or evil with no good attached to it forever after. Tell me: Who is closer to paradise than its seeker? Who is closer to hellfire than its seeker? Death stalks you. If you remain motionless, it will snatch you, if you flee, it will find you—it is more firmly attached to you than your shadow. Death is bound to your forelock while behind you the earth continues to be rolled up, like a scroll. Beware of the Fire whose pit is bottomless, whose heat is intense, and whose punishment is ever renewed! It is an abode where there is no mercy, no prayer is heard, no pain is healed. If you can fear God intensely and also place your hopes in him at the same time, then do so, combine the two. Indeed, a servant’s hope in his Lord is only as strong as his fear of his Lord. Those who harbor the greatest hopes of God’s bounty are the ones who fear him most.

2.27.4  Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr! Know that I have placed you in charge of the region most important to me—Egypt. This is what is due from you: oppose your passions and defend your religion, even if you have only a single hour left in this world. Do not anger God in trying to please his creatures. God compensates for
ولا تُسَيّخ اللّه بِرَاءَةٍ أَحَدٍ مِّن خَلْقِهِ فَإِنّ فِي اللّه خَلَقًا مِّن غَيْرِهِ وَلِيَسْ مِن اللّه خَلَفٌ فِي غَيْرِهِ. صِلْ الصلَّة لَوْقَتَهَا وَلَا تَغْلِب وَقُتْنَ لِفِرَاغٍ وَلَا تَتَأَخَّرَهَا عَن وَقَتِّهَا لَا شَتَّالٌ وَأَعْلَم أَنّ كُلّ شَيْءٍ مِّن عَمَلِكَ مَعَ صَلَائِكَ.

2.27.5 ومنه: فإِنّا لَسَوْاءٌ إِمَامِ الْهَدَى وَإِمَامِ الرّدِّي وَوَلِيِّ النَّبِيِّ وَعَدُوٌّ النَّبِيِّ وَلَقَدْ قَالَ لِرِسُولِ اللّه صَلَّى اللّه عَلَيْهِ وَرَحْمَتُهُ وَلَا أَخَافُ عَلَى أَمْرِي مُؤْمِنًا وَلَا مُشْرِكًا أَمُّ الْمُؤْمِنِ فِي مَنْهِجِهِ اللّهِ إِيَّاهُ وَأَمَّا مُشْرِكٌ فِي مَنْهِجِ اللّهِ بِشَرَكَةٍ وَلَكِنَّ أَخَافُ عَلَيْكُمْ كُلّ مَنْافِقِ الْجَنَّانِ عَالِمٌ الْلِّسَانِ يُقُولُ ما تَعْرَفُونَ وَيَعْفَوُنَّ ما يَتَكَرُّونَ.

2.28 ومن كِتَابِهِ لّهُ السَّلَامِ إِلَى مَعَاوِيَةِ جَوَابًا وَهُوَ مِنْ مَحَاشِيِّ الْكِتَابِ: أَمَّا بعَدُ. فَقَدْ أَتَاهَا كِتَابُ تَذَكَّرَ فِيهِ أَصْطَفَاءُ اللّه مَحْمُودًا صَلِّي اللّه عَلَيْهِ وَآلهِ لَدِينِهِ وَتَأْيِذَهُ إِيَّاهُ مِنْ أَيْدِهِ مِنْ أَصْحَابِهِ. فَلْقَدْ خَبَأَ لَنَا الَّذِي نَكَّشَ عَنْهُ إِذْ طَفَقَتْ تَخْبِرَانَا بِبِلَاءِ اللّهِ عَنْهُ وَنَعْمَةَ عَلِيَّةً فِي نِّيَابَة فَكُنْتُمْ فِي ذلِكَ "كَافَّةً التَّرْيِقَةِ لِلْمُحَرَّرِ" أُوْدُّدِي مُسَدِّدُهُ إِلَى النَّيَبَاتِ. وَزَرْعَوْتَ أَنْ أَفْضَلُ الْنَّاسِ فِي الْإِسْلَامِ فَلَانٌ وَفَلَانٌ فَذَكَّرْتُ أَمَرًا إِنَّمَا أَعْتَزِلَ كُلُّهُ وَإِنْ نَقْصُ لمِّلْيَحْقِكْ فَلَهُ وَمَا أَنتَ وَالْفَاضِلُ وَالْمَفْضُولُ وَالسَّائِلُ وَالْمَسْؤُوسُ".م، ي، ومَسَحَّةُ فِي شَ: كَذَا نَ، هُ، وَأَصِلُ شَ: يَنْقَصُكَ".
the loss of others, but no one can compensate for the loss of God. Pray the ritual prayer at its appointed time. Do not pray it early just because you have time or delay it because you are occupied. Know that every single one of your duties is subordinate to prayer.

2.27.5 From the same testament:
They are not equal—an Imam who leads to guidance and an Imam who leads to perdition, a man who loves the Prophet and a man who hates the Prophet. God’s Messenger said to me: ⟨I do not fear harm for my community from either believer or unbeliever. As for the believer, God holds him back because of his belief. As for the unbeliever, God thwarts him because of his unbelief. I fear harm for you from every man whose heart harbors hypocrisy while his tongue spouts knowledge, who says what you know to be good, but does what you know is evil.⟩¹

2.28 From ‘Ali’s reply to Mu‘āwiyah. This is one of the most eloquent letters of all time:²

2.28.1 I received your letter in which you speak of how God selected Muḥammad to propagate his religion and aided him through his Companions. How astonishing the things time reveals about you! You presume to inform us about the bounties God has bestowed upon us and of the fact that he has blessed us with our Prophet—you are ⟨like the man who carried dates to sell in Hajar⟩, the motherlode of dates,³ or the man who challenged his instructor to duel with bow and arrow! You allege that So-and-So and So-and-So are the most excellent Muslims.⁴ If what you say is true, you have disqualified yourself from consideration, whereas if what you say is false, the breach is none of your concern. What have you to do with deciding who possesses more and who less excellence, who is to lead and who is to be led! How dare Freedmen and sons of

² In response to Mu‘āwiyah’s second letter in 36/656 before the Battle of Šīfīn—which Mu‘āwiyah sent with Abū Umāmah al-Bāhilī—in which he again accused ‘Ali of envy of the first three caliphs and treachery towards them. Text of Mu‘āwiyah’s letter in H 15:185–187. Baḥrānī (B 819) says that § 2.28 is part of ‘Ali’s reply to Mu‘āwiyah, of which another part was transcribed earlier as § 2.9.
³ Ar. ka-nāqīli tamrin ilā Hajar, lit. ⟨like one who carries dates to Hajar⟩, is an ancient proverb, also rendered, ⟨like one who carries dates to sell in Hajar⟩ (ka-mustabdi‘i tamrin ilā Hajar), similar in meaning to the English idiom, ⟨carrying coal to Newcastle⟩. Hajar is a town near Bahrain famous for its dates. I have added “the motherlode of dates” in the translation for clarity. Proverb’s explanation in H 15:188; B 819; F 372.
⁴ Abū Bakr and ‘Umar, the first two Sunni Caliphs. H 15:189.
وما للطلقاء وأبناء الطلقاء والمتميز بين المهاجرين الأولين وترتيب درجاتهم وتعريف طبقاتهم هيئات لقد خصق لئيس منهما وطبع يحكم فيها من عليه الحكم لها. إلا تسمع أني الإنسان على ظلمك وتعرف قصور ذرك وتأخِّر حيث أدرك القدر فعالك عليه المغلوب ولا لك ظفر الظافر وإنك لذهاب في الته رواة عن القصد.

2.28.2 ألا ترى غير مخبير لك لكن بنعمة الله أحدث أن قوما أستشهدوا في سبيل الله من المهاجرين وكل فضل حتى إذا أستشهد شهيدا قبل سيد الشهداء وخصه رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله وسلم تكبيره عند صلاته عليه. ألا ترى أن قوما قطعت أيديهم في سبيل الله وكل فضل حتى إذا فعل بوحدنا ما فعل باحدهم قيل الطيار في الجنة وذو الجنانين. ولا ما نهى الله عنه من تركيبة المرء نفسه لذكر ذكر فضائل جمّة تعرفها قلوب المؤمنين ولا ت 넘يها آذان السامعين. فدع عنك (من مالك يه الرمية).
Freedmen presume to draw distinctions between the first Emigrants, by classifying their stations and determining their ranks! Woe! ⟨An arrow has whirred that does not belong to the quiver!⟩

A person has passed judgment on a matter in which he should be the one judged, not the judge! You, man! Will you not pity your limping hoof, recognize the shortness of your stride, and retreat to where destiny has placed you? What have you to do with the defeat of the defeated or the victory of the victorious! You are plunging deep into the waterless desert and straying far from the right path!

2.28.2 Do you not see—and I say this not to give you information but to speak of God’s blessings—that many Emigrants were martyred in God’s cause, and each one had merit, but when our martyr was killed, he was named the King of Martyrs, and God’s Messenger singled him out by performing seventy supplications when he prayed over his body? Do you not see that many warriors had their hands severed in God’s cause, and each one had merit, but when the same injury was inflicted on one of us, he was named He-Who-Soars-in-Paradise and He-of-the-Two-Wings? And if God had not forbidden men to praise themselves, I could mention someone else whose abundant virtues are known to believers’ hearts and not rejected by the ears of them who listen!

Leave off talking about ⟨one whose arrows pursued an animal that veered to one side⟩!

We are beholden only to our Lord and all people are beholden to

---

1 On “Freedmen,” see note at § 2.18.
2 Ancient Arabian proverb. B 820; H 1539; R 3;72.
3 Reference to Qur’an, Ḍuḥā 93:11.
4 The passage is about the excellence of the Prophet’s and ‘Ali’s clan of Ḥāshim. He compares their virtue and their service in the cause of Islam to the ignobility and anti-Islamic activities of Mu’āwiya’s Umayyad clan. The “King of Martyrs” (Sayyid al-Shuhadā’) is the Prophet’s and ‘Ali’s uncle Ḥamzah ibn ‘Abd al-Muṭṭalib, who was killed fighting for him at the Battle of Uhud. Translated here as “supplications,” the term takbīr, lit. “proclaiming that [God] is the greatest (Allāhu akbar),” is invoked during a funeral prayer, where it leads into a supplication for the deceased (takbīr is also used in other contexts); the usual number of supplications in a funeral prayer is five, and the seventy that the Prophet prayed over Ḥamzah were unprecedented and never repeated. Ḥ 1539; B 8ug; F 373; R 3;73.
5 “He-Who-Soars-in-Paradise” (Ṭayyār), also called “He-of-the-Two-Wings” (Dhū al-Janāḥayn) is ‘Ali’s brother and the Prophet’s cousin, Ja’far ibn Abī Ṭālib, killed at the Battle of Mu’tah. Ḥ 1539; B 821; F 373; R 3;73.
6 The one with ‘abundant virtues’ is ‘Ali himself, who fought valiantly in the Muslims’ early battles. Ḥ 1539; B 820–821; R 3;74.
7 Ar. mālat bihi l-ramīyyah, lit. ⟨his arrows pursued an animal that veered to one side⟩, is a proverb denoting one who pursues the elusive prey of worldly gain. Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd (Ḥ 1539) says ‘Ali alludes here to ‘Uthmān, who was from the clan of Umayyah. Bahrānī (B 821) says the reference is to ‘Amr ibn al-Āṣ, and if so, the translation should be amended to “Leave off talking with (instead of: about) one whose arrows pursues an animal that veers to one side.”
إذاً صناع ربا والناس بعد صناع لنا لم يمنعنا قدم عزنا وعادي طولنا على قومك أن خلقناكم بأنفسنا فنصحنا وأنصحنا فعل الأكفاء ولست هناك. وأي يكون ذلك كذلك ومنا النبي ومنكم الكذباب ومنا أسد الله ومنكم أسد الأحلاف ومنا سيئا شباب أهل الجنة ومنكم صيبة النار ومنا خير نساء العالمين ومنكم حمالة الحطب في كثير مما لنا وعليكم فإسلامنا قد سمع وجالبكم لا تدفع كتاب الله يجمع لنا ما شد عنا وهو قوله: وَلَمْ يُؤْمِرَ أَرَّاحَمْ بِعَضْفٍ أَوْ أَوَّلِيْ بَعْضٍ فِي كِتَابِ الْلَّهِ وَقَوْلُهُ الْقَوْلُ عَلَى أَوْلِي الْنَّاسِ بَيْنَ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ فِي نَارِ الْعَذَابِ الْكُبْرَىَّ لِلْذِينَ ابْعَرَوْهُا هَذَا النَّبِيُّ وَالذِينَ آمَنُوا وَلَهُمْ أَنَّ اللَّهُ وَلَيْسَ مَعْلُومًا.}

م، ي، ونسخة في ش: كذا ن، ه، وأصل ش، ونسخة في م: (جاهليتنا).
us. We intermingled with you despite our time-honored might and our ancient superiority over your people. We married among you and let you marry among us as though we were peers—we are not. How could we be equal when we have the Prophet and you have the Nay-Sayer, when we have the Lion-of-God and you have the Lion-of-the-Alliances, when we have the Chiefs-of-the-Youth-of-Paradise and you have the Boys-of-Hellfire, and when we have the Most-Virtuous-Woman-of-all-People and you have the Woman-Who-Carries-Firewood-to-Hell? And there are many more things that speak for us and against you. Our noble deeds in Islam have been heard by all, and your Age-of-Ignorance misdeeds cannot be denied. God’s Book brings together for us what was taken from us, in his words, «Those who are from the same womb have more claim upon each other according to God’s Book,» with his words, «Those who have the most claim on Abraham are the ones who followed him, and this Prophet, and those who profess belief. God is the believers’ master.»

1 Marriages between the Hāshim and Umayyah clans discussed in Ḥ 15:195–196.
2 “The Prophet” (Nabī) is Muḥammad. “The Nay-Sayer” (Mukadhdhib) is the Umayyad Abū Jahl ibn Hishām, at the head of nine other men who fought Muhammad at Badr (Qurʾan, Muzzammil 73:11; B 821; R 3:75; ‘A 681), or, less likely, Muʿāwiyah’s father, Abū Sufyān ibn Ḥarb (Ḥ 15:196).
3 “The Lion-of-God” (Asad Allāh) is Ḥamzah ibn ‘Abd al-Muṭṭalib (B 821; Ḥ 15:196; F 374; ‘A 681) and/or ‘Ali himself (again, F 374). “The Lion-of-the-Alliances” (Asad al-Aḥlāf) is one of several possible Umayyads, either from the pre-Islamic period (more likely)— Utbah ibn Rabīʿah (Ḥ 15:196; F 374), or some other men who had the name “Asad,” viz., Asad ibn ‘Abd al-ʿUzzā (B 821; R 3:76), Asad ibn Khuzaymah ibn Mudrikah ibn Ilyās (again, F 374), or Asad ibn Rabīʿah ibn Nizār (again, F 374)—or from the early Islamic period, viz., Abū Sufyān (‘A 681). “The Alliances” refers to the so-called “Alliance of the Pure Ones” (Ḥilf al-Muṭayyabīn) between certain Quraysh clans in the pre-Islamic period, regarding the allocation of the ritual offices of the Kaʿbah (R 3:86; B 821); if the “Lion” is Abū Sufyān, it refers to the tribal alliance put together by the Quraysh against Muhammad.  
4 “The Chiefs-of-the-Youth-of-Paradise” (Sayyidā Shabāb Ahl al-Jannah) are Ḥasan and Ḥusayn, ‘Alī’s sons with Fāṭimah, the Prophet’s grandsons (R 3:77; F 77; Ḥ 15:197; B 822; ‘A 681). “The Boys-of-Hellfire” (Ṣibyat al-Nār) are the sons of the Umayyad ‘Uqbah ibn Abī Muʿīṭ, who was killed fighting against the Muslims at the Battle of Badr (Ḥ 15:197; F 374; B 822), or the sons of Muʿāwiyah’s second cousin Marwān ibn al-Ḥakam (R 3:77; again B 822; ‘A 681).
5 “The Most-Virtuous-Woman-of-all-People” (Khayr Nisāʾ al-ʿĀlamīn) is Fāṭimah al-Zahrāʾ, the Prophet’s daughter and ‘Ali’s wife (R 3:77; Ḥ 15:197; B 822; ‘A 681). “The Woman-Who-Carries-Firewood-to-Hell” (Ḥammālat al-Ḥaṭab; “to-Hell” is added in the translation from the Qur’anic context) is Umm Jamīl bint Ḥarb, Muʿāwiyah’s paternal aunt and wife of Abū Lahab (Reference to Qur’an, Masad 111:4; Ḥ 15:197; B 822; R 3:77; F 374; ‘A 681).
6 In some manuscripts, the pronoun is “our” (-nā), which would read, “and our noble deeds in the Age of Ignorance (jāhiliyyatunā) cannot be denied.” On the virtues of the Hāshim clan, see Ḥ 15:298–295. Rebuttal of virtues attributed to the Umayyads in Ḥ 15:270–295.
7 Qur’an, Ahzāb 33:6.
8 Qur’an, Āl ʿImrān 3:68.
بالطاعة. وَمَا أَحْتَجَّ المهاجرون إلى الأنصار يوم السقيفة يرسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله فلاِجِّوا عليهِ، فإن يكن الفُلُجَّ به فَالْحَقُّ لنا دونكم وَإِنْ يَكِن بِغيْرِه فَالأنصار على دِعَوَاهُم.

وَزَوَّجَتْ أُيُّوْنَ لِكُلْ الْخُلَافاء حَسْدُهُمْ وَكَلْ لِهِمْ بَيْتُ فَيَنَى ذَلِكْ كَذَلِكْ فَلِيَسْ لِلْجِنَابَة عَلَيْكِ فَيُكَرِّمَكَ عَلَيْهَا. وَقَلَّتْ إِيَّيْنِي كَأَنَا أَفْقَدْتُ الْجِلْثَ الْمَخْشِوشُ حَتَّى أَحْيَا وَلِعْمَرَ اللَّهُ لَمْ يَأْتِنَا أَنْ تَذْمَّ فَدَفْحَتْ وَأَنْ تَفْتَحَ فَأَفْتَضَحَتْ وَمَا عَلِيَّ الْمُسْلِمْ مِنْ غَضَاضَةٍ أَنْ يَكُونَ مِثْلُهُ هَمْ أَمْ لَنْ يَكُنْ شَكَّاً فِي دِينِهِ وَلَا مُرْتَابً بِيِبْعِيْنِهِ. وَهَذِهِ جَحْبَيْنِ إِلَيْنِإِرْكِ فِصْدَهَا وَلَكِنْ أُطْلِقَتْ لَكْ مِنْهَا بِقَدْرٍ مَا سَنَحَّ مِنْ ذَكْرِهَا.

ثُمَّ ذَكَرَتْ مَا كَانَ مِنْ أَمْرِي وَأَمْرِ عَثْمَانِ فَلَكْ أَنْ يَجْبَ عَنْ هَذِهِ لِرَحْمَةِ مِنْهُ. فَأَيْنِي كَأَنْ أَقَدْنِي أَيْنِي إِلَيْ مِقَالِهْ أَمْ مَنْ بَذَلَ لِهِ نَصْرَهُ فَأَسْتَقَعَهُ وَأَسْتَكْفَهُ أَمْ مِنْ أَسْتَنْصَرَهُ فَقَرَأَهُ عَنْهُ وَبَقَّ الْمَنْوَانْ إِلَيْهِ حَتَّى أَيْنُي قَدَّرَهُ عَلَيْهِ كَلَا وَاللَّهُ لَمْ يَقْدَّرْهُ لَهُ وَلَا يَأْتَيْنَ الْبَأْسِ إِلَّا قَلْيَالاً. وَمَا كَنْتُ لَأَعْتَرَفْ مِنْ أَيْنِي كَأَنْ أَقْبَمْ عَلَيْهِ أَحْدَاثًا فَإِنْ كَانَ الْذِنْبُ إِلَيْهِ إِرشادي وَهَدَائِي لَهُ قُرْبً
We possess the higher claim—because of our kinship, yes, but also because of our obedience to God. When the Emigrants argued against the Allies on the Day of the Portico, the Emigrants challenged the Allies’ claim on the basis of their own kinship with God’s Messenger. If the argument is based on kinship with the Messenger, then we, not they, possess the truer claim. If it is based on something else, then the Allies’ claim stands.

2.28.3 You allege that I was envious of every caliph and disloyal to all. If that is true, then the crime was not committed against you, and you are due no justification. As the saying goes, ⟨that is a disease whose shame is external to you.⟩ You also say that I had to be dragged to give the pledge of allegiance, like a camel pulled by a wooden bit in its nose. God’s life, you intended to revile but have offered praise instead, you intended to disgrace but are yourself disgraced! A Muslim is never shamed because he is a victim of oppression, as long as he does not doubt in his faith or falter in his certainty. The argument I have made here is intended for another, but I have set it before you to the extent that I thought necessary.

2.28.4 You recount what happened between me and ‘Uthmān—you are due a response in this matter because of your kinship with him. So tell me, which of us was more wrong in our actions toward him and did more to bring about his assassination? Was it the one who offered him support, but who he insisted should stand back and desist? Or was it the one with whom he pleaded for help, who loosened the reins of his mount to slow it down and stalled in giving a response, who pushed death toward him until his fate overpowered him? No, indeed! God knows the identity of “those among you who impede, who say to their brothers, “Come help us,” while they themselves seldom enter the fray.” I will not apologize for the fact that I chastised him for some of his actions. If my crime against him is my counsel and guidance, then how often are the

---

1 “The Day of the Portico” (Yawm al-Saqqāfah) refers to the assembly, immediately after Muḥammad’s death, when some of the Emigrants and Allies gathered in the covered assembly area of the Banū Sāʿidah clan, and which ended with the pledge for Abū Bakr. See ‘Alī’s similar initial response (and references for further details) in § 1.64 and my note there.

2 Second hemistich of a verse by the pre-Islamic poet Abū Dhuʾayb al-Hudhalī (Dīwān al-Hudhalīyyīn, 121), used as a proverb. The first half is (اَهُّبِحُأيِّنَأَنوُشاَولااَهَرَّيَعَو: Accusers shamed her, saying I was in love with her.) F 373; R 3:79; B 822.

3 “The one who offered him support” is ‘Alī. “The one with whom he pleaded for help” is Muʿāwiyah. Details in B 823.

4 Qurʾan, Āhzāb 33:18.
لَمْ حِيَّتْ نِئَبَةُ مَعْصَرَانِ عَلَى الْأَنْفُسِ، وَلَمْ يَكُنْ لَهُمُ الْخَطْرُ مَا أَرْتُ بِهِ. 2.28.5

وَذَكَرْتُ أَنَّهُ لَيْسَ لِي وَلَأَحْصَابِي عِندَكَ إِلَّا السِيفُ فَلَمْ يَطْفَعُ بِهِ. مِنْ أَنْفُسِهِ أَمْرَاءُ الْمَتَّلَبِ عَنِ الأَعْدَاءِ نَاكِلٌ وَبَالسِيوْفِ مَخْوَفٌ فِي دُرُّ قَلِيلٍ يَلَحِّي اْلْمِهْيَةَ حَمِلَ. فَسَيَطَّلِبَهُ مِنْ تَتَّلَبُّ وَيَقْرُبُ مِنْكَ مَا تَسْتَبَدِعُ وَأَنَا مُقْرَّنُ فِي بُحْرٍ مِنَ الْمُهَاجِينَ وَالْأَنْصَارِ وَالْتَابِعِينَ بِإِحْسَانِ شَدِيدٍ زَحْامِ سَمَّى تَأْمُّهُمُ سَاطِعٌ قُتَامُهُمُ مَتْسِرَلِينَ سَرَايِ الْمَوْتِ أَحْبَبَ الْلَّالِقَاءِ إِلَيْهِمْ لِقَاءٍ رَبِّهِمُ قَدْ صَحِبُهُمُ ذَرَّيَةٌ بَدْرِيَّةٌ وَسَيْفُ هَامِيْهَةٌ قَدْ عَرَفَتْ مَوَافِقَةً نَصَالُهَا إِلَى أَخِيُّكَ وَخَالُكَ وَأَهْلُكَ "وَمَا هِيَ مِنَ الْقَطَّالِمِينَ يَبْعَدُ".

وَقَدْ كَانَ مِنْ أَنْتَشَارِ جِلْبَكِ وَشَقَاكِمْ مَا لَمْ يَعْفَوَ عَنْهَا عَفْوُ نِعْمَةٌ عَلَى مَجِيرِكِمْ وَرَفْعَ السِّيفِ عِنْدِ مِدْرَكِ وَقِلتِ مِنْ مِقْبَلِكِ. فَإِنَّ خَطْتُ لَكَ الأَمْوَرُ الْمُرْدَيْةَ وَسَفَهَ الْآرَاءِ الْجَائِرَةَ إِلَى

اش، ن، ي، ه، ونسخة في م: كذا أصل م: "يدرِك". 
 Chapter 2: Letters

571

innocent blamed! ⟨Sometimes, the only benefit a well-wisher derives is suspicion!⟩

I intend «only to set things right as much as I can. My direction comes from God. In him I place my trust.»

2.28.5 You also say that you have nothing to offer me and my supporters but the sword. My eyes were moist earlier and now you make me laugh! When have you ever found the sons of ʿAbd al-Muṭṭalib to shrink from enemies or fear the sword? ⟨Wait just a little—Ḥamal will soon join the fray!⟩ The one you seek shall soon seek you, and what you think is far will come close indeed! I shall ride to you swiftly, bringing a large army of Emigrants, Allies, and Followers-in-Virtue, pressing strongly, raising dust, clothed in robes of death, and longing to meet their Lord. They number children of the warriors of Badr, wielding the swords of Hāshim—you have experienced their strikes on your brother, your uncle, your grandfather, and your kinsmen! The blade «is never far from the wicked.»

2.29 From ʿAlī’s letter to the people of Basra:

You know this well: You severed your rope of allegiance earlier and seceded from the community, but I pardoned those among you who had committed crimes, lifted the sword from those who had turned their backs, and accepted those who returned to me. If damning events and the immaturity of your

---

1 Second hemistich of a verse by an anonymous poet used as a proverb. The first half is (مَا ُمِهِرَةَتْنِمْسُمَّتٌ فِي أَثَرُهُمْ مِنْ صَيْحَة): ⟨How many camels of counsel did I drive toward them!⟩ F 375; B 824.

2 Qurʾan, Hūd 11:88.

3 First half of a verse by the pre-Islamic warrior Ḥamal ibn Badr (or: Hamal ibn Saʿd al-ʿAshirah), in response to threats by Mālik ibn Zuhayr, used as a proverb. The second half is (َلَزُنُتْوَملاِإُتْوَملاَءِدَا أَلْوَتْمَنَّلِإ): ⟨O how beautiful is death when death alights!⟩ F 374; R 3:82; B 824.

4 The Umayyad men slain by the Muslims in the Battle of Badr included Muʿāwiyah’s brother Ḥanẓalah ibn Abī Sufyān, his maternal uncle Walīd ibn ʿUtbah, and his grandfather ʿUtbah ibn Rabiʿah. R 3:83; B 824.

5 Qurʾan, Hūd 11:83.

6 Excerpt from a letter to the Basrans in 38/658, during the Ibn al-Ḥaḍramī episode: After Muʿāwiyah took Egypt, he sent ʿAbdallāh ibn ʿAmir ibn al-Ḥaḍramī to Basra to recruit its people, and many welcomed him. ʿAlī’s governor, Ziyād ibn Abihi, wrote for help, and ʿAlī sent the Basran Jāriyah ibn Qudāmah al-Saʿdī with fifty men from Kufa, and with this letter addressed to the Basrans. Jāriyah confronted Ibn al-Ḥaḍramī and killed him and his men. Details of Ibn al-Ḥaḍramī’s attack in Thaqafi, Gharāt, 2383–412 (with full text of the letter at 2403–404); Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 5310–12. See also oration § 1.1.90 (Qāṣiʿah), which is said to have been delivered at this time.
مُنابذتٍ وخلافٍ فها فئاذا قد قُرِبت جيادي ورحلت وركابي وئين ألمأتونى إلى المسير. 
إليك لا وقَعْن بكم وقعة لا يكون يوم الحبل إلها إلا كلمعة لاعق. مع أني عارف لذي الطاعة متمmakt ضلود ولي الديني الصيحة حكية غير متجاوز متممًا إلى بريء ولا ناكًا إلى وف. 

2.30 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى معاوية
فأثقت الله فيما لديك وأنظر في حقه عليك وأرجع إلى معرفة ما لا تُذَر بجهالته فإن للطاعة أعلامًا واضحة وسبلًا نيرة ومحجة نجهة وغذية مطلبة يردها الأكفاء ويخالفها الأنكاس من نجك عنها جار عن الحق وخط في الته وكفر الله نعمته وأحل به نقمته.
فنفسك نفسك فقد بين الله لك سبيلك ويستانت بك أمروك فقد أجريت إلى غابة خسر وحضة كفر وإن نفسك قد أوجلة شرا وأجتمعت غيا وأوردتك المحايل وأوعرت عليك المسالك.

2.31 ومن وصية للحسن بن علي عليه السلام كتبها إليه باحثرين عند أنصاره من صفين

2.31.1 من الوالد الفان، المقر للزمان المدير العمر المستسلم للدهر الدائم للدنيا الساكن مساكن الموت الطاعن عنها غداً إلى المولود. المؤلم ما لا يدرك الساكن سبيل من قد هلك غرض الأسقم ورهبة الأيام وسريعة المصائب وعبد الدنيا وتاج العروغ وجريم المنايا وأسريق الموت وحليف الهدوء وقرى الأحزان ونصب الآفات وصريح الشهابات وخليفة الأمواط.

ش: كذا، ن، ي، ه، ونسخة في م: كذا. أصل م، ونسخة في ش: «يؤدِي بها». ٢٠٠، ن، ه، ونسخة في ش: كذا. أصل ش: «الولد».
despotic views now incite you to break your pledge again and challenge me, then beware! I have kept my steeds close, and my mounts saddled! If you force me to march, I shall charge against you in a battle that will make the thrashing you received at the Battle of the Camel seem like a romp in the meadow. I am also aware of the virtue of those of you who are obedient and the rights of those who are sincere. In punishing the guilty I shall not violate the innocent, in punishing those who break the pledge I shall not violate the faithful.

2.30 From ‘Ali’s letter to Mu‘awiyyah: 1
Fear God in all that you do and reflect on what you owe him. Return to the path of obedience, for your ignorance of it will not be excused. Its waymarks are clear, its roads are bright, its thoroughfare is open, and its destination is the one you should seek. The intelligent traverse it to reach water, while the wretched turn away. Whoever deviates from it strays from the truth and is lost in the waterless desert—God overturns his blessings and afflicts him with harsh punishment. Look out for your soul, Mu‘awiyyah, look out for your soul! God has shown you the grim reality of your current path and where your affairs will end. You speed inexorably toward the destination of utter loss and the resting-place of unbelief. Your passions have led you into evil, cast you into error, brought you to uncharted wastes, and made the road ahead of you steep and arduous.

2.31 From a testament of counsel that ‘Ali wrote to his son Ḥasan, at Ḥāḍirīn, on the return from Ṣiffīn: 2

2.31.1 From a father who admits the power of time, bows to the supremacy of fate, censures this world below, lives in the abodes of the dead, and will depart from them tomorrow, to a son who hopes for what he cannot attain and walks the path of men long gone, a target for disease, a mortgage pledged to the passage of days, a quarry stalked by adversity, a slave of the world, a merchant trading in deception, a debtor bound to doom, a prisoner of death, a friend of sorrow, a companion of grief, a victim of calamity, a man felled by passion, and an heir to the dead.

---

1 Excerpt from a letter—presumably from Kufa, and, since there is no reference to a prior battle, before the Battle of Ṣiffīn in 37/657—in reply to a letter by Mu‘awiyyah containing threats and accusations. Earlier part of ‘Ali’s letter recorded in B 825; Ḥ 16:7–8.

2 In 37/657 in northern Syria. Ḥāḍirīn could be the name of a place, or the word could be ḥāḍrayn, sing. ḥāḍir, meaning “two urban spaces” (Ḥ 16:52). Addressed to Muhammad ibn al-Ḥanafiyah (rather than Ḥasan) in Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 201. One of the most famous and widely narrated of ‘Ali’s testaments.
٢.٣١.٢ أما بعد، فإن فيما تنبّيت من إدبار الدنيا عني وجموع الدهر عليّ وإقبال الآخرة إلي ما يزعم عن ذكر من سواد والاهتمام بما وراءني غير أني حيث تفرد بي دون هوم الناس هم نفسي فصدقني رأيي وصرفي عن هواي وصرح لي محض أمري فأفضي بي إلى حد لا يكون فيه لعب وصدق لا يشوه كذب. وجدتني بل وجدتني كلى حتى كأن شيئًا لا أصابني وأكان الموت لأتاك أتائي فثاني من أمري ما ينبغي.

٢.٣١.٣ فإنني أوصيك بتقوى الله أي بني وازوم أمره وعمرة قلبك بذكره والاعتكام بحبله وأي سبب أو ثقة من سبب بينك وبين الله إن أن أخذت به أي قلبك بالموهبة وأتهبه بالزهدة وقيره بالاقين ونوره بالحكمة وذلله بذكر الموت وقرره بالفناء وبصره جفائع الدنيا ووذده صولة الدهر وفهش تلقّب الليالي والأيام وأعرض عليه أحباؤك الماضين وذكره بما أصاب من كان قلبك من الأوائل وسر في ديارهم وآثارهم فأنتظر ما فعلوا وعمَّ انتقلوا وأين حلوا ونزلوا فإنك تجدهم أنتقلوا عن الأحبة وحلوا دار الغربة. وكأنك عن قليل قد صرت كأحدهم فأصلح مثواك ولا تبع آخرك بدنياك وذع القول فيما لا تعرف والخطاب فيما لا تكفل وأمسك عن طريق إذا خفت ضلالته فإن الكف عن حيرة الضلال خير من ركوب الأهوال وأمر بالمعروف تكن من أجله وأترك الفكر بيدك ولسانك ويبدل من فعله بجهاذك وجاهد في الله حق جهاده ولا تأخذك في الله لومة لائم وخُض الغمّرات لحق حيث كان وتفقه في الدين وعود نفسك الصبر على المكروه ونعم الخلق التصريح وألغِّي نفسك في الأمور كلها.

الن، ي، هـ: ك. ش: "وتحده بالحكمة." م: سقطت "ونوره بالحكمة".
2.31.2 I have observed how the world has turned its back on me, how refractory fate has bolted with my affairs, and how the hereafter steadily approaches. This has restrained me from thinking about anyone else or from worrying about any circumstances I might leave behind—cares about myself have driven out cares about other people. My prudence has led me to rebuff and reject my passions, and my reality has become clear, impelling me to gravity untainted by frolic and truth untarnished by lies. Yet, I realize that you are part of me, nay, you are all of me. If something hurts you, it hurts me. If death comes to you, it comes to me. Your affairs are as important to me as my own, and for this reason, I write this testament for you. It will support you while I remain with you and after I am gone.

2.31.3 My dear son, I counsel you to be conscious of God. Obey his command, nourish your heart with his remembrance, and hold fast to his rope—if grasped tightly, can you imagine a stronger bond between you and God? Revive your heart with pious counsel, kill its appetites through renunciation, strengthen it through certainty, and illuminate it with wisdom. Humble it by the remembrance of death, impress upon it the reality of annihilation, and make it aware of the world’s sudden assaults. Give it warning of the violent attacks of fate and the horrible changes wrought by the passage of nights and days. Place before it reports of past peoples and remind it of the calamities that befell the ancients. Walk among their dwellings, their ruins, and reflect: What happened to them? What did they leave behind? Where did they take up residence? You will find that they left their loved ones and took residence in a strange land. Before long, you too will join them, so strive to build your permanent home and do not sell out the hereafter in exchange for this world. Leave off talking about what you do not know, or calling out people about things you are not charged with addressing; desist from any path that might lead you astray, for holding back when you fear error is far better than sailing the dread swells of the unknown; command good, and you will belong to its people; forbid evil with hand and tongue and strive hard to distance yourself from those who practice it; fight wickedness in the name of God, as is his due; do not be disheartened by any who might revile or shame you for anything you do for God; dive into the depths in the quest for truth, wherever or whenever you may have to do so; gain a good understanding of religion; and habituate yourself to patience—what a beautiful trait is patience! In all your affairs, seek support from God, for in him you seek the

1 "Hold fast to his rope," reference to Qur’an, Āl ʿImrān 3:103. The Shi‘i commentator Rāwandī (R 3:93–94) narrates a hadith in which the Prophet named ʿAlī as the embodiment of God’s rope.
إلى إلهك فإنك تلجِّبي إلى كهف حريز ومنع عزياز وأخلص في المسألة لربك فإن ببه
العطاء والحرمان وأكثر الاستخارات. وتحقق وصيتي ولا تهدِّين صفحا فإن خير القول ما
نفع وآلم أنه لا خير في علم لا ينفع ولا ينفع بعلم لا يحقق تعالمه.

2.31.4 أي بني إني لما رأيتني قد بلغت سنًا ورأيتني أزداد وهناً بادرت بوصيتي إليك
خصالًا منها أن يعجل بي أجل دون أن أقضي إليك بما في نسي وان أتقين في رأي كا
نطقست في جسمي أو بوصيتي إليك بعض علبات الهوى وقتت الدنيا فتكون كالصعب
النفر. وأما القلب الحدث كالأرض الخالية ما ألقين فيها من شيء قيلته فبدرت بكل الأدب
قبل أن يفسق قلبك ويشتعل لبك لستقبل بجد رأيك من الأمور ما قد كنما أهل
التجارب قييت وترجيه فتكون قد كنيت مؤونة طيبة وعرفت من علاج التجربة
فأتاك من ذلك ما قد كنما كاثية وأستبان لك ما ربك أظلم علينا منه.

2.31.5 أي بني إني وإن لم يكن عمرت عمر من كان قبل فقد نظرت في أعمالهم
وفكرت في أخبارهم وسرت في آثارهم حتى عدت كأحدهم بل كأتي بما أنتى إلى من
أمورهم قد عمرت مع أوقام إلى آخرهم فعرفت صفو ذلك من كدره ونفعه من ضره
فاستخلصت لك من كل أمر فتحته وتوخيت لك جميله وصرفت عنك جهوده. وأرآيت
حيث عانى من أمرك ما يعني الولد الشفيع وأجمع عليه من أدبك أن يكون ذلك
وأت مقبل العمر ومقتل الدهر ذو نية سليمة ونفس صافية وأن أدبك ذلك بتعليم كتاب
الله عز وجل وتأويل وشرائع الإسلام وأحكامه وحاله وحلامه لا أجاوز ذلك بك

1) ش، ي، ه، وأضيفت في م: كذا. أصل م: سقطت (وأخلص... تعلمه). 2) م، ش، ي،
ه: كذا. ن، ونسخة في ش: (رأيك). 3) م، ش، ي، كذا: ن، ي، وزيادة في ش، مع إضافة
بعض الألفاظ: (بوضيتي إليك أردت خصالاً منها قبل أن يعجل). 4) م، ي: بخيل رأيك، ه: معاً، وفيها نسخة مع علامة الصحّة: (ب忤ذائلك). 5) م، ي، ونسخة في ش، ه:
كذا: ن، وأصل ش، ه، ونسخة في ي: (قليله).
shelter of a deep cave and a mighty protector. Petition your Lord with a sincere heart, for his hand holds the power to give or refuse, ask him to help you choose what is good. Understand my testament and do not turn your face away, for the best words are those that bring benefit. Know this: There is no good in knowledge that brings no benefit, there is also no benefit in acquiring classes of knowledge that are not recommended for you to learn.¹

2.31.4 My dear son! When I saw that I had lived to a full age, when I saw that I was growing weak, I hastened to prepare this testament for you and listed virtuous traits of character. I worried lest death overtake me before I could reveal to you what was in my heart, before weakness affected my mind as it has my body, and before forces of passion or the seductive powers of the world rushed to make you intractable and skittish. A young heart is like untilled land—it accepts whatever is sown. I have sought to refine your disposition before your heart hardens and before your mind becomes preoccupied. I hope that serious commitment will help you learn through the experiences of the experienced and save you from confrontation and investigation, and that it will spare you the hardship of pursuit and the bitter medicine of suffering. I hope that you learn from my experience, yet I further hope that even those things that may have remained obscure to me become clear to you.

2.31.5 My dear son! Although I have not lived as long as those before me, I have reflected upon their acts, pondered their histories, and walked among their ruins, until I am almost one of them. In fact, because of what I have learned of their affairs, I feel as though I have lived with the first of them all the way to the last of them. I have distinguished the pure from the impure and the beneficial from the harmful. From each of their affairs, I have extracted the essential points of benefit, sought out the most beautiful, and dispensed with those that are unproven. My concern for you is as a loving father, and my hope is to complete the refinement of your character. The time for this is now, while you are still young, with your life ahead of you, while your intentions are innocent and your soul pure. I wish to begin by teaching you the Book of God and its deep meanings, the laws of Islam and its commands, what it has made licit and what illicit. I want you to focus on these things and leave the rest aside.

¹ The "classes of knowledge that are not recommended for you to learn" are interpreted as (1) any kind of knowledge that it is not required or recommended to learn (R 39:4); or (2) that constitutes arts prohibited in Islam, such as magic, soothsaying, and astrology (B 83:1); or (2) that does not bring benefit for the hereafter (F 37:5); specifically, (4) geometry, mathematics, or their like (!) (Ḥ 16:66).
إليه غيره. ثمّ أشفقت أن يلبس عليك ما أختلف الناس فيه من أهوائهم وآرائهم مثل
الذي ألبس عليهم فكان إحكام ذلك على ما كرهت من تنبهك أحب إلى من إسلامك
إلى أمر لا آمن عليك فيه الملكة ووجهت أن يوقّفك الله فيه لرشدك وأن يديك
لقصدلك فعهدت إليك وصيتي. هذه.

2.31.6 وأعلما يا بني أن أحب ما أنت آخذ به إلي من وصيتتي تقوى الله والاقتصاد على ما
أفرضه الله عليك والأخذ بما مضى عليه الأولون من أئتيك والصالحون من أهل بيتك,
فإنهم لم يدعوا أن نظروا لأنفسهم كما أن ناظر وفقروا كما أن مفكر يوم ردهم آخر ذلك
إلى الأخذ بما عرفوا والإمساك عمّا لم يقلقوها. فإن أبت نفسك أن تقبل ذلك دون أن تعلم
كما علما فليكن طلب ذلك بتفهيم وتعلّم لا تبوره الشبات وعلوا الحصومات. وأبداً قبل
نظرك في ذلك بالاستعانة بأهلك عليه والرغبة إليه في توفيقك وترك كلشانة وأجتك
في شبهة أو أسلبتلك إلى ضلالة فإذا ابتُقت أن قد صفتلك نخشع وتم رأبك وأجتمع
وكان همك في ذلك همه واحد فأنظر فيما فسرت لك وإن أنت لم يجتمع لك ما تخب
من نفسك وفراغ نظرك وفكر فأعلم أنك إما تختب العشواء وتثور الضلابه وليس
طالب الدين من خبط ولا من خلط والإمساك عن ذلك مثل.

2.31.7 فطوفهم يا بني وصيتي وأعلمن أن ملك الموت هو ملك الحياة وأن الخالق هو
المعبئ وعئان المفتي هو المعيد وأن المبكي هو المعافي وأن الدنيا لم تكن لتستقر إلا على
ما جعلها الله عن النعماء والابتلاء والجزاء في المعاد حتى هو لما لا نعلم. فإن
أشكال عليك شيء من ذلك فأحمله على جهالتك به فإنك أول ما خلق لحاً ثم علمت وما أكثر ما تجلب من الأمر ويخير في رأيك ويسأل فيك يصرك في تبصره بعد
ذلك. فأعتصل بالذي خلقك ورزقك وسوّاك وليكن له تعبّدك وإليه شغبتك ومنه
شفتك.
I worry lest you should become confused, as others have, about issues on which people's interpretations and views differ. Although I am loath to alarm you, I prefer to strengthen you in advance, rather than leave you without caution about approaching times in which you could perish. I ask God to direct you to the right path and guide you toward your goal. Accordingly, I bequeath to you this testament.

2.31.6 My dear son! Know that the directives of my testament most dear to me, the ones to which I sincerely hope you will adhere, are the following: Remain conscious of God and do not overstep the boundaries of God's mandates for you. Adhere to the path followed by your forebears and your pious family. Like you, they never stopped caring for their souls or reflecting deeply on matters, so they carried out all that was good and refrained from all they had not been charged to undertake. If your heart refuses to accept their path without first learning what they learned, then commence your search with understanding and acumen, without hurtling down the precipice of doubt, or engaging in strident argumentation. Begin your exploration, moreover, by seeking aid from God and petitioning him for direction. Beware of lapses that could throw you into doubt or give you over to error. Once you have ensured that your heart has become pure and humble, your mind mature and composed, your aspiration resolute, begin reflecting on what I have explained. If you cannot achieve this, if you cannot compose your heart or clear your perception and thoughts, then—and this you should know too—you will stumble around heavily like a blind camel and be flung headlong down a dark precipice; and one who stumbles around heavily, one who is delirious, is no seeker of religion. In such a case, it is better to refrain altogether.

2.31.7 My dear son! Try to understand my testament. Know that the master of death is also the master of life, the creator is also the destroyer, the demolisher is also the restorer, the one who inflicts pain is also the one who bestows wellbeing. The world can be sustained only in the way of God's plan—with blessings and affliction, and repayment in the return to him, or other things that he wills that remain unknown to us. If any of this is difficult for you to grasp, attribute it to your ignorance. At the time of your creation, you were created ignorant, then you learned. How often it happens that you are ignorant of something, that your mind is perplexed about it and your perception leads you astray, but then afterward you perceive it clearly! Seek refuge in the one who created you, who sustained you, who molded you in harmonious form. Let your worship be for him, let your hope be in him, let your fear be of him.
2.31.8 وأعلما بنيٍّ أن أحدًا لم يئِد عن الله سبحةنا كما أنتُ عند نبيّنا صلى الله عليه وآله
فأرضّ به رائدًا وإلى النجاة قائدًا. فإني لم آلك نصيحة وإنك لن تبلغ في النظر لنفسك
وإن أجتهدت مبلغ نظري لك.

2.31.9 وأعلما بنيٍّ إنه لو كان لربك شريك لأتك رسله ورأيت آثار علامة وسلطانه
ولعرفت أفعاله وصفاته ولكنك إله واحد كما وصف نفسه لا يُضادّه في ملكه أحد ولا
يزول أبدًا ولم ينزل أولّ قبل الأشياء بلا أولية وآخر بعد الأشياء بلا نهاية عظم عن أن
تثبيت ربوبيّة بإباحة قلب أو بصر. فإذا عرفت ذلك فآفعل كما ينغي لمثلك أن يفعله
في صغر خطره وقلة مقدرتته وكثره حجمه وعظم حاجته إلى ربي في طلب طاعته والرهبة
من عقوبته والشفقة من سخطه فإنه لا أكبر إلّا محسم ولم ينها إلّا عن قبح.

2.31.10 يا بنيٍّ إلّا قد أنبأتكم عن الدنيا وحالها وزوالها وأنتواها وأنبائكم عن الآخرة وما
أعدّ لأهلها فيها وضربت لك فيها الأمثل لتفتت به وتحذو عليها. إذا ما مثل من خرّ الدنيا
كّحيل قوم سفرنا بهم منزل جديد فأمانوا منزلًا خصبًا وجنبا مريحًا فأحتموا وعذبو
الطريق وفرقو الصديق وخشون السفر ووجوده المطعن ليأتوا سعة دارهم و منزل
قرارهم فليس يجدون لشيء من ذلك ألمًا ولا يرون نقطة مغرمًا ولا شيء أحبل بهم ما
قريبهم من منزلهم وأدناهم إلى محلهم. ومثل من أعثر بها كّحيل قوم كانوا يمزلن خصب
فنبأ بهم إلى منزل جديد فليس شيء أكره إليهم ولا أفظل عندهم من مفارقة ما كانوا
فيه إلى ما يهمون عليه ويصررون إليه.
2.31.8 My dear son! Know that no one has brought God's message in the manner of our Prophet, so take joy in accepting him as your scout for salvation and your leader. I have never held back from giving you advice. Though you may strive hard, you will never look out for yourself as much as I look out for you.

2.31.9 My dear son! Know that if your Lord had a partner, his messengers would have come to you. You would have seen the evidence of that deity's kingship and power and recognized his actions and attributes. But there is only one God—he has described himself as one,¹ and no one can challenge him for his kingdom. As he has always been, so he will never cease to be. He is first before all things, yet without beginning, he is last after all things, yet without end. His majesty is too great to be encompassed by heart or eye. If you recognize this, do what someone like you should do, a human of little significance, of meager power, of complete incapacity, a human in great need of his Lord—seek to obey him, beware his punishment, and fear his wrath, for he only ever commands you to do what is right, and he only forbids you from doing what is wrong.

2.31.10 My dear son! I have told you about this world, about its condition, its imminent end, and its inexorable passing. I have told you about the hereafter and what has been prepared in it for its people. You have been given illustrations about both so that you may learn from them and act upon them. Those who have tested the world's reality are like a group of travelers who, finding it an unsatisfactory, drought-stricken abode, seek another that is fertile and rich in pasture. They patiently suffer the tribulations of the road, the separation from friends, the roughness of the journey, and the coarseness of their food, in order to arrive at the vast and lovely expanse of their new home, their permanent residence. They care nothing for the pain they must experience on the road, nor do they deem the expense they must incur an indemnity. Nothing pleases them more than the things that bring them closer to their permanent abode, that draw them nearer to their real home. In contrast, those who are taken in by the world's deceptions are like a group of people who live in a fertile pasture and leave it behind to travel to a place of drought. Nothing will bring them more grief or be more devastating for them than leaving the pleasures they enjoy, and arriving, suddenly, at the place to which they must come, and in which they must stay forever.

¹ E.g., Qur’an, Ikhlāṣ 112:1, Naḥl 16:51, Baqarah 2:63.
2.31.11 يا بنى أجعل نفسك ميزانا فيما بينك وبين غيرك فأحب لغيرك ما تحب لنفسك وأكره له ما تكره له ولا تظليم كما لا تحب أن تظليم وأحسن كما تحب أن يحسن إليك وأستقيم من نفسك ما تستقيم من غيرك وأرض من الناس بما ترضاه لهم من نفسك ولا تتقل ما لا تعلم وإن كل ما تعلم ولا تتقل مال تحب أن يقال لك وأعلم أن الإجواب ضد الصواب وآفة الألباب فأسعى في كذبحك ولا تكن خازناً لغيرك وإذا أنت هديت لقصدك فكن أخشع ما تكون لربك.

2.31.12 وأعلم أن أمامك طريقًا ذا مسافة بعيدة ومشقة شديدة وأنه لا غنى بك فيه عن حسن الارتداد وقدر بلاعك من الزاد مع حقّة الظهر فلا تجعلّ على الظهر كوف طائفك فيكون تقل ذلك وبالا عليك وإذا وجدت من أهل الفاقة من يحمل لك زادك إلى يوم القيامة فيوفيك به غدا حيث تختار إليه فأغتنمه وحمله وإياه وأكثر من تزويده وأنتم قادر عليه فلعلك تطلب فلا تجد واعلم من أستقرضك في حال ناك ليجعل قضاءه لك في يوم عسرتكم وأعلم أن أمامك عقبة كؤودًا مخيف فيها أحسن حالًا من المثل والملطط عليها أثقل أمرًا من المسرع وأن يجيبها بك لا محاولة على جئته أو على نار فأردد نفسك قبل نزولك ووَطْنُ المنازل قبل حاولك قليلا بعد الموت مستعنب ولا إلى الدنيا منصرف.

2.31.13 وأعلم أن الذي يبه خزيان السماوات والأرض قد أذن لك في الدعاء وتکفل لك بالإجابة وأمرك أن تسأله ليعطيك وستترجمه ليرحمك ولم يجعل بينك وبينه من يحجبك عنه ولم يحبك إلى من يشفع لك إليه ولم يمنعك إن أسأت من التوبة ولم

م، ي: كِداَشَا، ن، د: (حَالَّاً). ٢٠، ي، ومصَحَّحة في ش: كُداَم، ه، وأصل ش، ونسخة
في: (وُظَّفَ).
2.31.11 My dear son! How you wish to be treated should be the measure with which you treat others. Choose for others what you would choose for yourself, and dislike for them what you dislike for yourself; do not oppress, just as you would not wish to be oppressed; be good, just as you would have others be good to you; consider ugly in yourself what you consider ugly in others; accept from others what you would have them accept from you; do not speak about things you do not know, even when there is not much that you do know; do not say things you would not wish to have said to you. Know that conceit is the enemy of good judgment and the bane of good minds. Toil hard but do not hoard your wealth for others to inherit. When you are guided to your purpose, humble yourself before your Lord.

2.31.12 Know that ahead of you lies a road whose route is long and whose hardships are severe. You must traverse it as well as you are able and take with you the provisions you will need. Keep your load light, and do not burden your back beyond its capacity, for a heavy load will cause a bad outcome. Whenever you find a mendicant to carry your provisions for you till the day of resurrection, such that tomorrow, when you are in need of them, he can hand them over to you—take advantage of him, give him your cargo to carry, and load him up with as many provisions as you are able. Do this while you have the opportunity, for it could happen that you go out to search for him but cannot find him. Take advantage, too, of any who ask you for a loan on your day of wealth and defer repayment for your day of hardship. Know that there is a tough climb before you in which it is better to travel light than to carry a heavy load, where it is much worse to go slowly than to go in speed. Know that you must dismount in either paradise or hell, so seek provisions for your soul before you are made to alight. Embrace your final home and make it ready before you take up residence. Remember: After death, there will be no way to please God, and no way to return to this world.

2.31.13 Know that he whose hands hold the treasures of the skies and the treasures of the earth has permitted you to petition him and promised to answer. He has commanded you to ask in order that he may give, he has commanded you to beseech his mercy in order that he may shower it upon you. He has not placed any veil between you and him, nor has he required you to seek refuge with anyone who will intercede for you. If you sin, he does not withhold his

---

1 The "heavy load" on your back is a metaphor for sins.
2 "Finding a mendicant to carry your provisions for you" is an injunction to charity, which will bring abundant rewards on judgment day.
يعالجك بالنتيمة ولن يفضحك حيث الفضيحة ولم يشذّد عليك في قول الإبانة ولم يتّفقك بالحريمة ولم يؤسّسك من الرحمه بل جعل تزوعك عن الذنب حسنة وحسب سيبنوك واحدة وحسب حسنتك عشراً وفتح لك باب المتاب فاذا ناديه سمع ندلك وإذا ناجيتك علم نجوتك فأفضيت إليه بجاجتك وأثبتّته ذات نفسك وشكوته إليه همومك وأستكشفت كربك وأستعينته على أمرك وسأله من خزائن رحمته ما لا يقدر

على إعطائه غيره من زيادة الأعمال وضحاء الأبدان وسعة الأرزاق.

ثمّ جعل في يديك منفاجخزائه بما أذن لك فيه من مسألته فتى شئت أستفتحت بالدعاء لأبواب نعمة واستقررت شابب رحمته. فلا يقتنعت إبطاء إجابته فإن العطية على كدر النية وربما أجرت عنك الإجابة ليكون ذلك أعظم لأجر السائل وأجز لعطاء الآمل وربما سألت الشيء فلا تأتيه وأتبت خيراً منه عاجلاً أو آجلاً أو صرف عنك لما هو خير لك. فلرَبّ أمر قد طلبه في هلاك دينك لو أوتيت فلتكن مسألتك فيما يبقي لك جماله وينفي عنك وبالله والمال لا يبقى لك ولا تبقى له.

2.31.14 واعلم أنك إثما خلقت للآخرة لا للدنيا وللفناء لا للبقاء والموت لا للحياة وأنك في منزل قلعة ودار بلغة وطريق إلى الآخرة وأنك طريد الموت الذي لا يتجو منه هاره ولا بد أن مدرك كفن منه على حذر أن يدرك وأنى على حال سيئة فقد كنت تحدث نفسك منها بالثوبية يفرح بينك وبين ذلك فإنا ألتقد أهلكت نفسك. يا بنٌ أكثر من ذكر الموت وذكر ما به جمع عليه وتفضي بعد الموت إليه حتي يأتيك وقد أخذت منه حذرك وشددت له أثرك ولا تأتيك بعثة فيبراك.

2.31.15 وباتُك أن تغفر بما ترى من إخلاء أهل الدنيا إليها وتكاثِّب عليها. فقد نبأك الله عنها ونهى لك نفسها وتكشفت لك عن مساويها فإنا أهلها كلاب عاوية وسبا
pardon, nor does he hasten to punish. He does not disgrace you even when you deserve shame. He does not rebuke while accepting your repentance. He does not chide you for your crimes or cause you to despair of his mercy. Rather, he counts it as a good deed when you shun sin. He reckons your bad deed as a single bad deed but multiplies your good deeds by ten. He has opened the door of repentance for you—if you call out to him, he hears your call, if you whisper to him, he knows your words—so open your heart and plead with him to take care of you. Divulge to him your inner self, tell him of your griefs, entreat him to dispel your sorrows, beseech him to help you in all that you do. Ask him for the treasures of his mercy, for that is something he alone can bestow. Ask him for a long life, a healthy body, and abundant providence.

God has placed in your hands the keys to his treasury, for he has permitted you to pray. Whenever you so desire, you can beseech him and unlock the doors of his favors. Whenever you so desire, you can supplicate him and receive the copious showers of his mercy. Do not despair if the answer is slow in coming, for the gift will be in proportion to the intent. Perhaps the answer has been delayed so that the petitioner may receive yet greater rewards, and the aspirant may obtain yet richer gifts. When you asked for a thing and it was not given to you, perhaps it was because you will be given something even better, either here or in the next world. Perhaps it was turned away for something better. It may so happen that a thing you requested would have ruined your faith if it were granted. Ask for things whose beauty you will always cherish and against whose harm you will be guarded. Wealth will not remain for you, nor will you remain for it.

2.31.14 Know that you have been created for the hereafter, not for this world, for annihilation, not existence, for death, not life. You are in a temporary home, a place for gathering provisions, a path to the hereafter. Death stalks you. No one who attempts to flee can escape, for it will inevitably overtake him. Be watchful lest it seize you in a state of sin. You tell yourself you will repent later, but death may get in the way—if that happens, you will have caused your soul to perish. My dear son! Think about death and do so often. Reflect on what you are rushing toward and where you may be pitched after death. Make sure death does not take you before you have taken the warning to heart or girded your loins. Let it not come upon you suddenly and dash you to the ground!

2.31.15 Beware! Do not be deceived by the world, do not become like the covetous who fight over her like wild dogs! God has informed you about her reality, she too has given you tidings of her own death, shown you her real evils. Are her people anything but howling dogs and savage predators? Yowling at each other,
ضارية يُهِر بعضاً وياكل عزىها ذيلها ويقهر كبرها صغيرها. نعم مُعقَّله، وأخرى مُهملة قد أضلَّت عقولها وركبت مجهولاً. سُجُر عاهة وَوَسل لِها رَاعٍ يقيميها ولا مرسي يُسهمها سلكت بهم الدنيا طريق العبى وأخذت بأبصارهم عن منار الهدى فاتهمها في حيرتها وغرقا في نعمتها ويختذوها رباً فلعبت بهم ولعبوا به ونسوا ما وراءها. رويداً يُسفر الظلم كان قد وردت الأطعمن يوشك من أسرع أن يلحن وأعلم أن من كانت مطيثاً الليل والنهار فإنّه يسره فإن كان واقفاً وينقطع المسافة وإن كان مقيماً وادعاً.

٢.٣١.١٦

وأعلم يقيناً أنك لن تبلغ أملك ولن تعدو ألقاك وأنك في سبيل من كان قبلك نفّض في الطلب وأحِل في المكتب فَإِنَّهُ رَبّ طَلْب قَد جَرَّه إلى حَرْب وليس كل طالب بمبرزُوف ولا كل مُجَّل بِحُرْوم وأكرم نفسك عن كل ديني وإن سافتك إلى الرغبة فإنك لن تعتض بما تبذل من نفسك عوضاً ولا تكن عند غريب وقد جعل الله حراً وما في خيرٍ لا ينال إلا بشر ويسير لا ينال إلا بشر وإياك أن توجّف بك مطايا الطمع فتوردك مناهٍ الملكة وإن استطعت أن لا يكون بينك وبين الله ذو نعمة فاُفعل فإنك مدرك قِسَمك وأخذ سهلك وإن ليسير من الله أكرم وأعظم من الكثير من خلقه وإن كان كل منه.

٢.٣١.١٧

وتَلاَفِيك ما فَرَط من صمتك أيسر من إدراكك ما فات من منطقك.

وحفظ ما في الوعاء بِتَشُد الوراك.

وحفظ ما في يديك أُحِب اَلِيّ من طلب ما في يد غريب.

ومرارة اليأس خير من الطلب إلى الناس.

والحرفة مع العفة خير من الغني مع الفجوز.

١، ش، ي، م، ومَصَّحَّحة في م: كذا. أصل م: مُغفلة، مَي، ومَصَّحَّحة في م: ي، ومَصَّحَّحة في م: ي، ونسخة

في ش: كذا. ن، وأصل ش، م، ونسخة في م: لا يوجد.

al-Sharif al-Radi - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
the strong devour the weak, the large attack the small. Herded and tended
camels, some, but others gone loose, having slipped their ropes and run off in
unknown directions. They graze now on foul weeds in stony valleys, no shep-
herd to watch them, no herdsman to lead them to grass. The world took them on
the path of blindness and struck down their beacons of guidance, they drifted
in her perplexities and drowned in her pleasures, they took her as their lord
and master, she toyed with them, and they dallied with her, forgetting what was
coming. But wait, go gently! Darkness will soon give way to morning. Travelers
have already arrived at the watering hole, yet those who hasten may very well
catch up. Know this: If your steeds are Day and Night, you are driven forward
even when you stand still. You cut the distance to the destination even when
you remain motionless and calm.

2.31.16 Know this with full certainty: Your path is the path of those before you,
and you will not achieve your long hopes and surpass your allotted lifespan, so
be moderate in your pursuits and restrained in what you seek. A pursuit often
leads to deprivation: not every seeker finds sustenance, while not every per-
son of restraint is denied. Honor yourself by rising above despicable acts, even
when they lead to the fulfilment of your passions, for there is no adequate rec-
ompense for expended honor. Do not become a slave to another when God has
created you free. What is the good of something good obtained through evil? Or
of ease obtained through privation? Beware lest ambition's steeds run off with
you and pitch you down at the station of destruction! If you can arrange things
such that no benefactor stands between you and God, then do so. No matter
what, you will attain your destiny and receive your share, and a little from God
is both more in quantity and greater in worth than a lot from his creatures.
Ultimately, everything comes from him.

2.31.17 Making up for too much silence is easier than retracting what escapes
your lips.
   Secure your sack by tightening the strap.
   It is far better to guard your property than to covet another's.
   It is far better to taste the bitterness of resignation than to importune people.
   It is far better for you to combine restraint with employment than to pair
wealth with dissolution.
وَمَرَّةٌ أَحْفَظْ لَسَرَّهِ.
وَرَبَّ سَاعَةٍ فِي مَا يضْرِهِ.
قَآرِنُ أَهْلُ الْخَيْرِ تَكُنْ مِنْهُمْ وَبِأَنْ أَهْلَ الْشَّرِّ تَتَّنِٰعُهُمْ
بَيْنَ الطَّعَامِ الْحَرَامِ.
وَظَلَّ الضَّعِيفُ أُغْشِي الْظلمَ.
إِذَا كَانَ الرَّفَقُ حُرْقًا كَانَ الْحُرْقُ رَفَقًا.
رَبِّمَا كَانَ الْدِّوَاءُ دَاءٌ وَالْبِدَاءُ دَوَاءٌ وَرَبِّمَا نَسْخُ غَيْرِ النَّاصِحِ وَغَشِّي المستَسِحَ.
وَإِبَاكَ الْتَّكَالُ عَلَى الْمَنِّيьюْ بَضَائِعَ الْتَّوَكَّ.
وَالعَقْلُ حَفْظُ الْتَجَارِبِ وَخِيْرَ ما جَرِبتِ مَا وَعَفَكَ.
بَادَرَ الْفَرْصَةُ بِخَلِّ أَنْ تَكُنْ تَعْمُّ.
لِيَسَ كُلُّ طَالِبٍ يُصِيبُ وَلَا كُلُّ غَابِبٍ يُؤُوبُ.
وَمِنَ الْفَسَادِ إِضَاعَةُ الزَّادِ وَمَفَاسِدَةُ الْمَعَادِ.
وَكَلِّلْ أَمَرُ عَافِيَةٌ.
سُوْفَ يَأْتِيكَ مَا قَدَّرَ لَكِ
الْتَاجُرَ خَناَطِرُ.
وَرَبَّ يَسِيرُ أَنْ تَمِيّ كُلِّ أَشْرَكٍ.
لَا خَيْرُ فِي مَعِينٍ مَهِينٍ وَلَا فِي صَدِيقٍ ظَنِينٍ.
سَاهِلُ الْدَّهْرِ مَا ذَلُّ لُكَ قُؤُودَهُ.
وَلَا تَخَاطِرُ بِشَيْءٍ رَجَاءٍ أَكْثَرِ مَنْهُ
وَإِبَاكَ أنْ تَجْحَبَ بِمَطْعِيَةِ النَّجَاحِ.

2.31.18
إِحْمَلْ نَفْسَكَ مِنْ أَخْيِكَ عِنْدَ صَرُّمِهِ عَلَى الْصَّلَةِ وَعَنْدَ صَدْوُدَهِ عَلَى الْلَّطِفِ
وَالْمَقَارِبَةِ وَعَنْدَ جَمْوُهُ عَلَى الْبَذْلِ وَعَنْدَ تَبَاعُدِهِ عَلَى الْدَنُوَّ وَعَنْدَ شَدْدَتِهِ عَلَى الْلَّيْنِ وَعَنْدَ
You protect your own secret best.
Often the very thing you strive for harms you when you get it.
Whoever talks too much, blathers.
Associate with good people, and you will be one of them. Stay away from evil people, and you will be separate from them.
How vile is forbidden food!
Oppressing the weak is the worst oppression.
If goodness is stupid, then stupidity is good.
Sometimes the cure becomes the disease.
A person who does not intend to often unwittingly gives counsel, while a well-wisher sometimes unwittingly deceives.
Beware of placing faith in worldly hopes—they are the property of fools.
Learning from experience is smart—the best experience gives good counsel.
Seize opportunities before they are lost.
Not every seeker gets what he wants, and not everyone who goes comes back.
To squander provisions and to spoil your return is to cause your own ruin.
Every affair has a consequence.
Your destiny will come to you.
A trader takes risks.
A little often produces more than a lot.
There is no good in a contemptible helper or a suspicious friend.
Fate is a camel. Loosen its reins and give it slack as long as it remains docile.
Don't risk what you have in hopes of getting more.
Beware lest a quarrel run away with you.

2.31.18 Maintain bonds of kinship with your brother, even when he is bent on cutting them. Perform kindnesses for him, even when he shuns you. Be generous to him, even when he is aloof and close-fisted. Stay close to him, even when he distances himself. Be kind to him, even when he is harsh. Placate him,
جربه على العذر حتى كاءك له عبد وكأنه ذو نعمة عليك وإياك أن تضع ذلك في غير وضعه أو أن تفعل به غير أهله.

لا تأخذ عن صديقك صديقًا فتعادي صديقك.

ولن لم غلافك فإنه يوشك أن يلين لك.

وخذ على عدولك بالفضل فإنه أحله الظهرين.

إنه أردت قطيعة خليك فأستبرقي له من نفسك بقيه ترجع إليها إن بدأ له ذلك يومًا ما.

ومن ظن بك خيراً فصدقت ذنه.

ولا تضيف حتى خليك أتكالا على ما بينك وبينه فإنه ليس لك بأج من أضعته.

حقه.

ولا يكن أهلك أشقي الخلق بك ولا ترغب في من زهد فيك.

ولا يكونن خليك أقوى على قطيعتك منك على صلته ولا يكونن على الإساءة أقوى منك على الإحسان.

ولا يكبرن عليك ظلم من ظلبك فإنه يسعى في مضرته ونفعك وليس جزء من سرك.

أن تسوءه.

وأعلمه يا بني أن الرزق زرقان رزق تطبه ورزق يطلك فإن أت لم تأته أتاك.

ما أقيم الخضوع عند الحاجة والجفاء عند الغني.

إذا لمك من دنياك ما أصلحت به مثواك وإن كنت جازعا على ما تقلت من يديك.

فأجزع على كل ما لم يصل إليك.

إِسْتَدِلْ عَلَى مَا لَمْ يَكِن بِمَا قَدْ كَانَ فَإِنَّ الْأَمْوَر أَشْباه.

١٢٣١ و١٩. وعُلِمَ بِهِ مِنْ أَرْضِ الْقُرْآنِ رَزَاقُ رَذْقٍ تَطْبِيْهَ وَرَزْقٍ يَطْلِبُهُ فَإِنَّ أَنَّ مَثِيلَ أَنْتَ لِهِ أَتَاكَ.

إِمَّا كَثِيرٌ مِن دَنيَّكَ مَا أَصْلِحَتْ بِهِ مَثِيلُكَ وَإِنْ كَتَبَ جَارِعًا عَلَى مَا تَقَلَّتْ مِن يَدِيكَ.

فَأَجْزَعَ عَلَى كُلِّ مَا لَمْ يَصِلْ إِلِيَّكَ.

إِسْتَدِلْ عَلَى مَا لَمْ يَكِن بِمَا قَدْ كَانَ فَإِنَّ الْأَمْوَر أَشْباه.

١١٠٨ و١٩. وَعُلِمَ بِهِ مِنْ أَرْضِ الْقُرْآنِ رَزَاقُ رَذْقٍ تَطْبِيْهَ وَرَزْقٍ يَطْلِبُهُ فَإِنَّ أَنَّ مَثِيلَ أَنْتَ لِهِ أَتَاكَ.
even when he is cruel. Behave towards him as though you were a slave, and he a
generous benefactor. But beware lest you do this where it is not fitting, or with
people who are not worthy.

To befriend your friend’s enemy is to spurn your friend.

Give your brother sincere advice, whether palatable or unpleasant.

Swallow your rage—no other drink leaves a sweeter taste or has a pleasanter
effect.

Be kind to one who is harsh with you, perhaps, then, he will be kinder to you.

Be generous to your enemy—that is the sweetest of the two ways of cele-
brating victory.

If you must sever relations with your brother, save a small space in your heart
for him, in case, one day, he wants to return.

If someone thinks you are good, prove them right.

Don’t squander your brother’s rights by taking the bond between you for
granted. If you squander his rights, he is no longer your brother.

Don’t give your family members the least share of you. Don’t place your
desires in those indifferent to you.

Don’t let your brother be more capable of severing himself from you than
you of associating with him. Don’t let him be more capable of meanness than
you are of being kind.

Don’t be unduly troubled by an oppressor’s oppression. Know that he harms
himself and benefits you—don’t reward someone who benefits you by doing
him harm.

2.31.19 My dear son! Know that providence is of two types—the one you seek
and the one that seeks you. If you don’t find it, it will find you.

How loathsome is a show of humility in times of need, and aloofness in times
of affluence!

Your greatest assets are the deeds you carry to the grave. If you would bewail
the loss of what you once had, then bewail too the absence of things you never
had.
ولا تكون ممن لا تنفعه العظمة إلّا إذا بالغت في إيلامه فإن العاقل يتنظّب بالآداب
واللهلم لا تنظّب إلّا بالضرب.

اطرح عنك واردات الهموم بعزائم الصبر وحسن اليقين.

من ترك القصد جار.

الصاحب مناسب.

والصديق من صدق غيّبٌ.

والله هو شريك العمي.

ربّ بعيد أقرب من قريب وقرب قريب أبعد من بعيد.

والغرب من لم يكن له حبيب.

من تعدّى الحقّ ضاق مذهبه.

ومن أقتصر على قَذّره كان أبقى له.

وأوقع سبب أخذته به سبب بينك وبين الله سبحانه.

من لم يبالك فهو عدوّك.

قد يكون اليأس إدراكاً إذا كانت الطمع هلاكاً.

ليس كلّ عورة تظهر ولا كلّ فرصة تصاب.

وربما أخطأ البصير قضده وأصاب الأعمى رشده.

أُحرّ الشرر فإنك إذا شيتّ تتجليه.

وقطيعة الجاهل تعدل صلة العاقل.

من أوم الزمان خانه ومن أعظمه أهانه.

ليّس كلّ من رمي أصاب.

إذا تغيّر السلطان تغيّر الزمان.

سّل عن الرفيق قبل الطريق وعن الجار قبل الدار.

إيّاك أن تذكر من الكلام ما كان مضحكاً وإن حكيت ذلك عن غيرك.

إِمّ شَيْ، يَهِ، وَنَسْخَةِ فِي نَكَذَا، وَنَسْخَةَ فِي شَءْ: «الأَمْوَرِ».
Expect what will happen by extrapolating from what has happened—history repeats.\(^1\)

Don't heed counsel only when it haunts you and causes you pain. A rational person takes counsel from rebuke. Only cattle are counseled by the whip.

Cast off the fevers of anxiety with patient resolve and seemly conviction.

To leave the middle road is to deviate.

Friends are like kin.

A friend is true in your absence.

Passion blinds.

Those far are often closer than those close. Those close are often farther than those far.

The real exile is the person who has no one to love.

Whoever transgresses the truth finds his path closing in on him.

Whosoever limits himself to his capacity abides.

The sturdiest rope is the one that links you to God.

A person who doesn’t care for your wellbeing is your enemy.

Accepting that hopes may not be realized could lead to their realization, whereas coveting them could lead to your destruction.

Not every gap in a fortress can be breached. Not every opportunity can be availed.

Sometimes the perceptive miss the target and the blind hit the mark.

Impede evil, else you may hasten its onset.

Dissociating from a fool is equal to befriending an intelligent man.

Trust the world and you will be deceived by it. Venerate the world and you will be reviled by it.

Not every arrow hits the mark.

New ruler, new age.

Before beginning a journey, inspect your fellow travelers. Before buying a house, inspect your neighbors.

Beware of cracking unseemly jokes, even when attributing them to another.

---

\(^{1}\) *Ar. inna l-umūra ashbāhun*, lit. “all things are the same.”
2.31.20 وإياك ومُشَأواة النساء فإنَّ رأينٌ إلى أفن وعَزْمنِ إلى وَهن وَآكَفَ عُليهِنَّ من أُبُصورِن بِجِبَابِكِ إِياَهْنِ فَإنَّ شَدًّة اجْمَالِ أَرْبَى عَلِيهِنَّ وَلَيِس نَحْوِهِنَّ بِأَشْدٍ من إِدْخَالِكِ مِن لا يَوَثِق بِهِ عَلِيهِنَّ وَإِن أَسْتَعْطَتْ أَنَّ لَا يَعْرِفَ غَيرُكَ فَأَفْعَلْ. وَلَوْ تَمْلَكَ الْمَرأَةُ مِن أَمْرٍ مَا جَأَوز نَفْسِهَا فَإِنَّ الْمَرأَةُ رِيحَانَةُ وَلَيْس بِفَتْرَةُ وَلا تَعْدُ بِكَراَمَتِهَا نَفْسُهَا وَلَا تَطْعِمُهَا أَنْ تُشْفَع لِغيَّرِهَا. وإِياكُ والتَّغَيُّرُ في غِير مَوْضِع غَيْرَةٍ فَإِنْ ذَلِك يُدعو الْصَحِيحَةُ إِلَى السَّقَمِ وَالبَرِيثَةِ إِلَى الْرِّيْبِ.

وَأَجْعَل لِكَلِّ إِنْسَانٍ مِن خَدَمَك عَمَّلًا تَأْخُذُهُ بِهِ فَإِنَّه أَحْرٍ أَن لَا يَتَوَكَّلُوا في خَدْمَتَكِ.

وَأَكْرِم عِشْرِتَكِ فِيّهِم جَناَحُكُ الذِّي بِتَطْيرِ وَاصْلُكُ الذِّي إِلَى تَصِيرِ وَيَدُكَّ ذِي بِهَا تَصْوُل.

2.31.21 أَسْتوَدَعُ اللَّهُ دُيِّنَك وَدَنِيَاكَ. وأَسْاله خَيرَ القِضَاءِ لَكِ فِي الْعَالِمِةِ وَالآخِرَةِ إِن شَاءَ اللَّهُ.

2.31.22 وَمِن كَتَابِهِ عَلَى الْسَّلَامِ إِلَى مَعَاوِيَةٍ. وَأَرْدِي جِيْلًاٍ مِن النَّاسِ كَثِيرًا خَدْعَتِهِم بِغَيْبٍ وَأْلقَيْتُهُم في مَوِجٍ بِحَرُك تَغْشَاهُم الظُّلُمَاتُ وَتَبَلَّطَ بِهِم الشِّيَابَاتُ جَفَاوُوا عَن وَجَهْهُم وَنَكَّصُوا عَلَى أَعْقَبَهُم وَتَوْلَّوا عَلَى أَدْبَارِهِم وَعَوَّلُوا عَلَى أَحْسَبِهِم إِلَّا مِنْ فَأَءَ مِن أَحْلَ البِصَارِ فَإِنَّهُم فَارَقُوكَ وَأَمَرُوكَ إِلَى اللَّهِ مِن مُّؤْزِرِتَكَ إِذ حَمْلُهُم عَلَى الصَّعِبِ وَعَدَلُ بِهِم عَن الْقُصْدِ. فَأَتِّقُ اللَّهُ يَا مَعَاوِيَةُ فِي نَفْسِك وَجَاذِبُ السَّيِّئَانِ قِيَادِكُ فِإِنَّ الدُّنْيَا منْ قَطْعَةٌ عَنكَ وَالآخِرَةُ قَرِيبَةٌ منَكَّ. وَالسَّلَامَ.
2.31.20 Beware of seeking advice from women, for their opinion can be weak and their resolve can waiver.¹ Employ the veil to shade their eyes, for strict veiling preserves modesty; also, private visits from untrustworthy men are as harmful as going out unveiled—if you can, make it so that they know only you. Don't allow a woman to govern affairs other than her own, for a woman is a fragrant flower, not a manager of affairs; don't allow your generosity to her extend beyond her to another, don't encourage her to intercede for others. Beware, on the other hand, of irrational jealousy, for jealousy leads the healthy wife to sickness and the innocent one to engage in suspicious behavior.

2.31.21 Make every individual under your command responsible for his own particular task. If you do, he will be less likely to slacken and point a finger.

Honor your kinsmen. They are the wings with which you fly, the tree on which you lean, and the hand with which you attack.

2.31.22 I place your religious and your worldly affairs in God's care. I beseech him to ordain for you everything good, now and later, both in this world and the hereafter, if he so wills, Inshāʾallāh!

2.32 From a letter by ʿAlī to Muʿāwiya:²

You have destroyed a whole generation of people, deceiving them with your evil ways and pitching them into the waves of your turbulent sea, where they were engulfed in darkness and tossed hither and thither by doubt. Straying from the destination, they spun on their heels, turned their backs on religion, and placed their faith in ties of kinship—except for the few who were discerning. When you mounted the latter on refractory camels and led them off the straight path, they recognized your misguidance and fled, leaving your service to return to God. Fear God for your own sake, Muʿāwiya, and wrench your halter out of Satan's hands. Very soon, the world will sever its rope from you. The hereafter has drawn near. Go in peace.

¹ Some of these lines, alongside a few others in which women are referred to harshly in this volume, are usually read as an indirect rebuke of the Prophet's widow ʿĀʾishah, who led an army against ʿAlī at the Battle of the Camel (see also § 1.77, § 2.1, and accompanying notes).
² Excerpt from a letter within a series of acrimonious exchanges, presumably in the lead-up to the Battle at Ṣiffīn in 37/657. Preceding part of ʿAlī's letter in B 859; H 16:133, and Muʿāwiya's reply and the full exchange, in Ḥ 16:133–137.
ومن كتاب له على السلام إلى محمد بن الهيثم وهو عامله على مكانة أثواب. فقد بلغني موضع ذلك من تسمية الأشتر إلى عمله وإنما لم أفعل ذلك استباطاً لك في الجهاد ولا أزيداداً لك في الجيد ولن نزعت ما تحت يدك من سلطاتك ولم يكن ما هو أسر عليك مؤونة وأجيب إليك ولاية. إن الرجل الذي كنت وليته أمر مصر كان رجلاً لنا ناصحاً وعلى عدواناً شديدًا تابعًا فرحه الله فلقد أستظل أياماً ولقت حمامه ويخون عنه راضون أولاه الله رضوانه وضاعف الثواب له. فأفخصر لعدوتك وأمضى على بصريك وتزامن الخرب من حارب وكاد مدعٌ إلى سبيل ربك وأكثر الاستعانة بالله يكفلك ما أهملك ويعنك على ما ينزل بيك إن شاء الله.

أصل م: (سيرتك).

الشريف الرضي - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
2.33 From ʿAlī’s dispatch to Qutham ibn al-ʿAbbās, his governor in Mecca:¹
My agent in the west has written to inform me that a group of Syrians—blind of heart, deaf of ear, and weak of eye—are being sent to Mecca this hajj season. They claim to establish a right through wrong means, obey a human, a creature, while disobeying the creator,² and attempt to milk the world’s udders in the name of religion. They purchase the temporary benefits of this realm and sell off the reward promised to the pious and godfearing. But good will be won only by those who practice good, while the recompense of those who practice evil will be nothing but evil. Govern your city well—be astute, strong, sincere, and thoughtful, a man who follows his leader and obeys his Imam. ⟨Beware of an action you must justify.⟩³ Do not exult in times of prosperity or despair in times of distress.

2.34 From ʿAlī’s letter to Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr, upon learning of Muhammad’s distress at being replaced by Ashtar as governor of Egypt (Ashtar died en route):⁴
I have learned that you are distressed at my sending Ashtar to take charge of your region. That was not because I found you remiss in your efforts or less diligent than I would have wished—although I retracted the authority I had placed in your hands, I had intended to replace it with a governorship that would have been easier for you to handle and more fulfilling. The man I sent as the new governor of Egypt—may God have mercy on him!—was sincere in his love for me and a fierce enemy to my foe. But he has finished his days and met his end. I am pleased with his deeds—may God too be pleased with him and multiply his reward. Now go out and confront your enemy. Be guided by your discerning mind, gird up to fight your attacker, call to the path of your Lord, and beseech God repeatedly for aid. He will dispel your grief and help you to combat the calamities that have come your way, if he so wills.

² Echoes a well-known hadith, ⟨Do not obey humans if it means you will disobey God⟩ (لا طاعة من خالف في معصية الحاصل). Quḍāʿī, Shihāb, § 6.24.
³ Proverb. R 3:381.
⁴ From Kufa to Egypt in 38/658. Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 5:87. See next text, § 2.35, for ‘Alī’s grief when Muhammad ibn Abī Bakr too was killed. “Ashtar died” (توؤفعية الأشتر), or, as per ms Sh, “Ashtar was poisoned” (سوممة الأشتر).
2.35 ومن كتاب له على السلام إلى عبد الله بن العبّاس بعد مقتل محمد بن أبي بكر بمصر أمره بعد. فإنّ مصر قد أشنت ومجّد بن أبي بكر رحمة الله قد استشهد فعند الله تختسبه ولداً ناشئًا وعاملًا كاذباً وسيئًا فاطمًا وركاً دافعًا. وقد كنت حثت الناس على قلّاقه وأمرتهم بغياثه قبل الوقعة ودعوتهم سراً وجهراً وعوّدًا وبعّدًا ففهم الآتي كارهًا ومنهم المعتّل كاذبًا ومنهم القاعد خاذلًا أسأل الله أن يجعل لي منهم فرجًا عاجلاً فوالله لولا طمعي عند لقائي عدوي في الشهادة وتوطيني نفسي على المنية لأحبت أن لا أبقى مع هؤلاء يومًا واحدًا ولا ألتقي بهم أبدًا.

2.36 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام في ذكر جيش أنفذه إلى بعض الأعداء وهو جواب كتاب كتبه إليه أخوه عقيل بن أبي طالب فُسرّحت إليه جيشًا كثيفًا من المسلمين فلمّا بلغه ذلك شنّ هاربًا ونكس نادًا فلحقوه ببعض الطريق وقد طلقت الشمس للايام فاقتتلا شيئًا كثيرًا. فما كان إلا كوقف ساعة حتى نجا جريضًا بعد ما أخذ منه بخنق ولم يَبق معه غير الرمّ فلا أبداً بل يِجا. 
2.35 From ‘Ali’s letter to ‘Abdallāh ibn al-‘Abbās, after Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr was killed in Egypt.1 Egypt has been conquered, and Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr—may God have mercy on him!—has gained martyrdom. I seek God’s recompense for enduring the pain of his death! He was a sincere son, a diligent governor, a cutting sword, and a pillar of support. I had urged people to succor him ahead of the skirmish and commanded them to come to his aid, and I pleaded with them early and often, in private and in public, but to no avail—a few reluctantly stood up, some gave insincere excuses, and others sat back and flatly refused.2 I entreat God to grant me swift relief from their company! By God, were I not hoping for martyrdom when I meet the enemy in battle, had I not trained myself to face death in combat, I would prefer not to stay among these people for another day, I would wish never to see them again!

2.36 From ‘Ali’s reply to a letter from his brother ‘Aqīl ibn Abī Ṭālib, describing the movements of a military unit he had sent against one of his enemies:3 I dispatched a large army of Muslims to fight him. When he learned of its coming, he tucked up his garments and fled, regretting his incursion, and attempting to retreat. They caught up with him on a certain road just as the sun was about to set, and the two sides exchanged quick blows.4 After a short hour’s skirmish, in which he was personally grabbed by the throat and had his breath squeezed out of him, he escaped, choking on his spittle. He escaped, but only with terrible effort.

---

1 From Kufa to Basra in 38/658 (Ṭabarī, Ṭārīkh, 5:109). Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr, ‘Ali’s foster-son and ward, and his governor in Egypt, was tortured and killed by Mu‘āwiyyah’s commander, ‘Amr ibn al-‘Āṣ.
2 ‘Ali’s public and private orations urging his supporters to mobilize and aid Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr are recorded in Ṭabarī, Ṭārīkh, 5:107–108.
4 Ar. fa-qtatalū shay‘ān ka-lā wa-lā, lit. “They fought for a bit like no and no!” (Like no and no) (ka-lā wa-lā) is an idiom signifying something quick and fleeting, onomatopoeic for the staccato shortness of the repeated single-syllable lā. B 863; F 381; H 16:149.
فَدَعَ عَنْكَ قَرِينَا وَرَكَابِهِمْ فِي الضَّلَالِ وَتَجَوَّالِهِمْ فِي الْشَّقَاقِ وَجِمَاحِهِمْ فِي الَّتِيْهِ فَإِنَّهُمْ قد أَجَعَلُوا عَلَى حُرْبِهِ كَإِجَاجِهِمْ عَلَى حَرِبِ رَسُولِ اللَّهِ صَلَّى اللَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَآلِهِ وَصحبهُ نِيَحَتَ قَرِينَا عَنْيَ الجَوَازِي فَقَدَ قَطَعَوْا رَجُمِ وَسِلْبُونِي سُلْطَانِ أَبِي أَمِيّ وَأَمَّا مَا سَأَلْتُ عَنْهُ مِنْ رَأْيٍ فِي الْقَتَالِ فَإِنَّ رَأْيِ قَتَالِ الْمُحْلِّينِ مَثْلُ أَلْقَى اللَّهِ لَا يُزِيدُهُ كَتَرَةَ النَّاسِ حَوْلِي عَرَةً وَلَا تَفْرَقُهُمْ عَنِي وَحِشَةً وَلَا تَحِبَّنَّ أَيْنَ أَبُوك وَلَوْ آسَلَهُ النَّاسِ مَتَضِرَّعًا مِتْخَشْعُا وَلَا مَقْرِرًا لِلْضَّيِّمِ وَاهْنَا وَلَا سَلِسَ الزَّمَامِ لِلَّقَاءِدِ وَلَا وَطِئَ الْظَّهْرِ لِلرَّآئِبِ المُقَتِّعِ وَلَكِنَّهُ كَأَمَّالُ أَخْوَى سَلِيمٌ قَالَ:

فَإِنْ تَسَأَلُونِي كُنْفَ أَنتْ فَإِنَّي
يَعِزُّ عَلَيْنِ أَنْ تَرَى بَيْنِي كَابِهَا
صُبُورُ عَلَى رَمِي الزَّمَانِ صَلِيبٌ
فَيَشِمَتْ عَادَٰتُ أَوْيِسَاءُ حَيْبٌ

١٢.٣٧ مِنْ كَتَابِ لَهُ عَلَيْهِ السَّلَامِ إِلَى مِعاوْيَةٍ، فَسَيَحَانَ اللَّهُ مَا أَشْدَدَ لَزَوْمَكِ لأَهْوَاءِ الْمَبْتَدِعَةِ وَالْحَيْرَةِ المَتْبَعَةِ مَعَ تَضْيُعِ الْحَقَائِقِ وَأَطْرَافِ الْوَقْتِ الَّتِيْهِ يَلِى اللَّهِ طَلِبًا وَعَلِيَّ عِبَادَهُ حَجِّيَّةَ فَأَمَّا إِكَّمَارُ الْجِنَّ فِي عَشْمَانِ وَقَتْلُهُ فَإِنَّكَ إِنَّمَا نَصْرُتَ عَشْمَانَ حِيثَ كَانَ النصرُ لَكَ وَخِذْلَتِهِ حَيْثَ كَانَ النصرُ لَهِ وَالسَّلَامُ.

البحر: الطويل.
Don’t speak to me of Quraysh! They have raced into error, galloped into dissent, and bolted into the waterless waste. They have banded to fight me, just as they banded earlier to fight God’s Messenger. May Quraysh be repaid as they deserve! They have cut the bonds of my kinship and looted the authority given to me by my brother, Muḥammad.\(^1\) You have asked about my view on fighting—here it is: I shall continue to fight all who break their pledge of allegiance until I meet God. My might is not increased by large numbers, nor do I grow uneasy if they disperse. Don’t think that I, your brother will be broken or humbled, even if I am abandoned by any and all! You will not find me weak in the face of oppression, like a docile camel, or one with a broad back on which a rider can sit in comfort. In the words of the Sulaym tribesman:\(^2\)

> If you asked, “How do you fare?” I would answer:  
> I am patient and I am strong in the face of fate’s attacks.  
> I do not allow myself to show distress,  
> Lest my enemy gloat, and my friend grieve.

2.37 From a letter sent by ‘Ali to Mu‘āwiyah:\(^3\)

Great God! How fervently you cling to your outlandish passions and your obsessive machinations! How blatantly you disregard the facts and reject God’s compacts that are proofs against his servants! You make repeated arguments in the matter of ‘Uthmān and his killers, but the reality is that you are only coming forward to defend ‘Uthmān now in order to help yourself. You abandoned him earlier, when you could have helped him. Go in peace.

---

1. Lit. “my mother’s son” (\textit{ibn ummī}), refers to ‘Ali’s closeness to Muḥammad generally, and to the fact that he was raised by ‘Ali’s parents. F 382; R 3126–127; H 16:151; B 832. “Muḥammad” is added to the translation for clarity.

2. Attributed to ‘Abbās ibn Mirdās al-Sulamī, a pagan poet and warrior who converted to Islam after the Conquest of Mecca (d. bet. 18/639 and 36/656). B 863; H 16:152.

2.38 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى أهل مصر ولى عليهم الأشرار حمه الله
من عبد الله عليّ أمير المؤمنين إلى القوم الذين غضبوا الله حين عُصّوا في أرضه وذَهب
لَحَقِّه فضَّرب الجسور سَرَادقه على البر والفارج والمقيم والطاعن فلا معروف يستراح إليه
ولا منكر ينتهاه عنه آمًا بعد.
فَقَد بعثت إليكم عبدًا من عباد الله لا ينام أيام الخوف ولا ينكر عن الأعداء
ساعات الروَع أشد على الفجأ من حريق النار وهو مالك بن الحارث أخر
مَّدَّ جَهَّا فَأَسَّمَعَوا له وأطيعوا أمره فيما طاب الحق فإنه سيف من سيوف الله لا كيل
الظبة ولا نابي الضربة فإن أمرك أتفرموه لأن أمرك أن تقيموا فأقوموا فإنه لا
يقدم ولا يحجم ولا يؤذى ولا يقدّم إلا عن أمري. وقد أتركم به على نفسي لنصبته
لكم وشدة شكيمة على عدوكم.

2.39 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى عمرو بن العاص
فإنك جعلت دينك تعبدًا لدُنيا أمريك ظاهر غيزة متهوك ستره يشين الكريم بِجسمه ويسّه
الخيم بطله فاتبعت أثره وطلبت فضله أتباع الكلب لِلضر غرام يلود إلى مخالب وينظر
ما يلقي إليه من فضل فريسته فأذهب دنياك وآحرتك ولو بالحق أخذت أدركت ما
2.38 From a letter sent by 'Alī to the people of Egypt, when he sent Ashtar to them as their governor.¹

From God's servant, 'Alī, Commander of the Faithful, to the people who rose up in anger for the sake of God, when God was disobeyed on earth and his dues were flouted, when tyranny raised its canopy over pious and debauched, over resident and traveler, when good was no longer pursued, and evil was no longer hindered.²

I have sent you one of God's own servants, who neither sleeps during the days of danger, nor shrinks from confronting the enemy in the hours of terror. He is more ardent in attacking the wicked than a blazing fire. He is Mālik ibn al-Ḥārith, from the tribe of Madhḥij. Listen to him and obey his command in everything that accords with the truth, for he is one of God's own swords. His blade is far from blunt, his blow is never weak. March when he commands you to march, halt when he commands you to halt, for he advances and withdraws, delays and proceeds, only at my command. I would wish to keep him by my side, but have sent him to you instead, because he is sincere in his wish to guide you and unyielding in his severity toward your enemy.

2.39 From a letter sent by 'Alī to 'Amr ibn al-ʿĀṣ:³

You have subordinated your faith to the worldly gain promised to you by a man whose deceit is plain, whose dishonor is manifest, who uses his assemblies to slander the noble, and who transforms mature associates into fools. You follow in his footsteps and seek his favors like a dog trailing a lion, begging for largesse, and waiting for whatever scraps of prey it might toss your way. You

---

¹ Kufa, 38/658. 'Alī sent Ashtar to replace Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr as governor of Egypt when a group there turned to Muʿāwiyah and Muḥammad was besieged. Ashtar was poisoned by Muʿāwiyah’s agent en route. This letter was found among his belongings. Details in Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 5:95–97; Yaʿqūbī, Tārīkh, 2:193–194; Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 282–284 (text of letter, 283–284). Other relevant letters are § 2.53 and § 2.62.

² The reference is to the Egyptians’ displeasure with ‘Uthmān’s rule, which resulted in a delegation demanding reform or abdication. H 16:156–157 and B 864: ‘Alī was supportive of the Egyptians’ grievances, but not of ‘Uthmān’s killing.

طلبت. فإن يُمكِّن الله منك ومن ابن أبي سفيان أُجْرِكَما بما قدّمتما وإن تُعْجِرَ ونبقيْهَا
أماماكا شرّلكا. والسلام.

2.40 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى بعض عَمْلَه
أَا مَا بَعْد. فقد بلغني عنك أمر إن كنت فعلته فقد أخُضعت ربيّك وعصيت إمامك
وأخبرت أمانتك بلغني أَنَّك جردت الأرض فأخذت ما تحت قدميك وأكلت ما تحت يديك فأوقع إلى حسابك وأعلَّم أن حساب الله أعظم من حساب الناس.

2.41 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى بعض عَمْلَه
أَا مَا بَعْد. فإني كنت أشركتك في أمانتي وجعلتك شعاري وبطاني ولم يكن في أهلي
رجل أوثق منك في نفسي لمُواساتي ومُوازري وأداء الأَمَانة إلي. فلما رأت الزمن على
أَن عمك قد كَبِبُ والعدو قد حَرِب وأمانة الناس قد خُزِت وهذه الأمة قد فَتَثَت
وشغرت قَلْبَتَ لأَن عمك ظُهر المُجنَّ ففارقه مع المفارقين وخلعته مع الخاذلين وخذلته
مع الخاذلين فلأَن عمك سبيت ولا الأمانة أَدَت وكانَك لم تكن الله تريد بجهادك
وكانَك لم تكن على بَيّنةٍ من ربيّك وكانَك إِنِّما كنت تكيّد هذه الأمة عن دنياهم وسُوَي
غَرَّتْهُم عن فِيهِم فلما أَمَكنتَ الكُدَّة في خِيالِ الأَمَة أَسرعت الكَرة وعاجلت الوُثْبَة
وأخذت ما قدرت عليه من أُموالِهِن المُصوَّنة لأراملهم وأيتامهم أَختُطاف الدَّيْب.
have lost out in this world and in the hereafter, when you could have achieved your desires through rightful means. Beware! If God grants me victory over you and Abū Sufyān’s son, I will requite you like for like. But should you elude me and manage to stay alive, beware: what lies ahead is much worse. Go in peace.

2.40 From a letter sent by ‘Ali to one of his governors: I am informed that you have done something, which, if you have done it, means you have angered your Lord, disobeyed your Imam, and betrayed your trust. I am informed that you stripped the land bare, devoured whatever was under your control, and consumed whatever you could lay your hands on. Send me your accounts, then, and know that God’s accounting is more stringent than man’s!

2.41 From a letter sent by ‘Ali to one of his governors: I had shared my charge with you and kept you as close to me as an intimate garment, I trusted none of my family to support and serve me, to stay true to his charge, more than I trusted you. But when you saw that the age had turned rabid against your cousin, the enemy was attacking with savage madness, the people were becoming increasingly corrupt, and the community had risen up in revolt and abandoned me, you turned your shield in your cousin’s face. You left me, along with all the others; you abandoned me, along with all the others; you betrayed me, along with all the others. You failed to support your cousin or fulfill your trust. When you fought beside me earlier, you appear to have had something other than God’s cause in mind, to have never truly held a mandate from your Lord; you appear to have been deceiving this community in order to defraud them, as though, all along, you had intended to cheat them of their war gains. For when you saw the opportunity to swindle, you were swift to charge and quick to attack. You swooped and ran off with whatever money you could

1 The governor is ʿAbdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās in Basra and ‘Ali’s letter—sent from Kufa sometime after Nahrawān, in 38/658—was prompted by a complaint written to him by his treasurer there, Abū al-Aswad al-Duʿā‘ī (Balāḍhūrī, Ansāb, 2173; Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih, Ḥaqd, 5103). § 2.43, ‘Ali’s letter to Maṣqalah ibn Hubayrah, governor in Ardashīr, Fars, contains similar language.

2 Excerpt from a letter likely sent from Kufa to Mecca in 40/661 to ʿAbdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās, a short while before ‘Ali’s death; § 2.22, and its variant rendering, § 2.66, is possibly another part from the same letter (text and context in Yaʿqūbī, Tārīkh, 2:205), and perhaps also § 2.72. Details of event in note to § 2.22. Text of § 2.41 in Balāḍhūrī, Ansāb, 2175–176; Ibn al-ʿAbbās’s reply, and ‘Ali’s further reply in B 867.

3 An action usually taken in the face of an enemy, denotes disloyalty; cf. proverb: ‘(Turned the face of his shield)’ (qalaba ẓahr al-mijann). H 16:169; ‘A 690; R 3:136–137; F 382.
الأزهر دامية المعزى الكسيرة فحملته إلى الجناز رحيب الصدر بحمله غير متأنم من أخذه كأدرك لا أبارحُرك حذرته إلى أهل رأيت من أبيك وأملك. فسبحان الله أمّا تؤمن بالمعاد أوما تخفّ اتفاق الحساب. إنّها المعدود كان عندي من ذوي الألباب كيف تُسبح شراباً وطعاماً وأنت تعلم أنك تأكل جراءاً وترسب حراماً وتبني الإماء وتتكّح النساء من مال البتاح والمساكين والمؤمنين والجهاديين الذين أفاء الله عليهم هذه الأموال وأحرز بِهِم هذه البلاد. فأتبع الله وأردت إلى هؤلاء القوم أمواهم فإنّك إن لم تفعل ثمّ أمكنني الله من أن أعزّر إلى الله فيه ولأضربّي بسيفي الذي ما ضربت به أحداً إلا دخل النار. ووالله لو أن الحسن والحسين فعل مثل الذي فعلت ما كانت لهما عندي هواحة ولا شفّر ما بارادة حتى أخذ الحقّ منهما وأزج الباطل عن مَظْلِمتهما. وأقسم بالله رب العالمين ما يسرني أنّ ما أخذته من أمواهم حلال لآركه ميراثاً من بعد، فضّح رُويا فكانّك قد بلغت المدى ودُفنت تحت الثرى وعُرّفت عليك أعمالك بالخلّ الذي ينادي الظلم فيه بالحيرة ويتقيّ المضيّع الرجعة «ولواتِّ حين مناص».

والسلام.

ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى عمرين أبي سلامة المخزومي وكان عامره على البحرين فعِزّه واستعمل النعمان بن مَجلان الرازي مكانه أمّا بعد. فقلت قد وليت النعمان بن مَجلان على البحرين وزعّت يدك بلا ذمّ لك ولا تريب عليك فقد أحسنت الولاية وأدّيت الأمانة فأقبل غير ظلّين ولا مالام ولا مثّم.
grab—money held in trust for their widows and orphans—like a lean-hipped wolf pouncing and snatching a bleeding, limping goat. You blithely carried it away to Mecca, without deeming your appropriation a crime, as though you—may other people be deprived of fathers!—were gifting to your family property inherited from your father and mother! Great God! Do you not believe in the return to him? Do you not fear interrogation at the reckoning? I counted you among the intelligent! How can you eat and drink when you know that what you eat and drink is illicit? How can you purchase slave-girls and marry women, using money that belongs to orphans and beggars, to believers, to warriors on whom God has bestowed these properties, and through whom God has protected these lands? Fear God and return their property! If you do not, and if God places you in my power, I shall redeem myself before him by punishing you appropriately. I shall strike you with my sword, a sword that has thrust every man it has struck into the Fire of Hell. By God, if Hasan and Ḥusayn had done what you have done, they would have met with no leniency from me, nor would they have gotten their way! I would have wrested from them what was due and redressed the injustice wrought by their actions. I swear this by God, Lord of all the peoples—I would not even wish to own lawfully what you have usurped of the community’s property, or to leave it as inheritance for those who live after me. ⟨Pasture lightly in the forenoon!⟩

2.42 From a missive sent by ʿAlī to ʿUmar ibn Abī Salamah al-Makhzūmī, his governor in Bahrain, discharging him and replacing him with al-Nuʿmān ibn ʿAjlān al-Zuraqī:

I have appointed al-Nuʿmān ibn ʿAjlān over Bahrain and discharged you without censure or reproach. You undertook your duties as governor admirably and fulfilled the trust I had placed in you. Come to me, then, without blame, liabil-

---

1 “To Mecca,” lit. “to the Ḥijāz,” western Arabia, where Mecca and Medina are located.
2 Ar. ḏaḥḥī ruwaydan, an idiom enjoining restraint. Two interpretations: (1) The verb ḏaḥḥā means to allow camels to pasture only very lightly in the forenoon (ḍuḥā), to ensure they can resume walking swiftly without needing to rest. Ḥ 16:169; B 868; R 3:138–139. (2) F 382 explains the idiom as “slaughter gently,” from the verb ḏaḥḥā, meaning to sacrifice an animal, which, when followed by “gently” (ruwaydan), similarly denotes restraint.
3 Reference to Qurʾan, Sajdah 32:12.
4 Qurʾan, Sād 38:3.
5 From Kufa to Bahrain in 36/656, in the lead-up to the Battle of Ṣiffīn. ʿUmar ibn Abī Salamah was the Prophet’s stepson and ward, son of his wife Umm Salamah from her previous marriage.
ولا مأثور. فقد أردت المسير إلى ظلامة أهل الشام وأحببت أن تشهد معي فإنك ممن أستظهر به على جهد العدو وإقامة عمود الدين إن شاء الله.

2.43 ومن كتاب له على السلام إلى مصممة بن هُميرة الشيباني وهو عامل على أرْدَشْر خرْبة، بلغني عنك أمر إن كنت فعلته فقد أسخطت إلهك وأغزبت إمامك أنك تقسم فيء المسلمين الذي حارته رماحهم وخيلهم وأريقت عليه دماؤه فيمن أعتاماك؟ من أعراب قومك فوالذي فلق الحبيرة وبر النسمة أنت كان ذلك حقًا لتجدن بك عليّ هوناً ولتخفن عندي ميزانًا. فلا تستن بحق ربك ولا تصلح ذيأكل بمحقق ذينك فتكون من الأخضرين أعملًا ألا وإن حق من قلِّبك وقبيلًا من المسلمين في قسمة هذا الفيء سواء يردون عندي عليه ويصرون عنه. والسلام.

2.44 ومن كتاب له على السلام إلى زيد بن أبيه وقد بلغه أن معاوية كتب إليه يريد خديعته بأسحلائه، وقد عرفت أن معاوية كتب إليه يستلَّببك ويستغلّ غرَّبك فأحضره فإنما هو الشيطان يأتي المرأ من بين يديه ومن خلفه وعن يمينه وعن شماله ليقتتح غفلته ويشتبك.

ity, culpability, or guilt. I intend to march against the despots of Syria and want you beside me in the battle. You are one of those whose support I rely on to fight the enemy and erect the pillar of religion. We shall do so, God willing!

2.43 From a missive sent by ʿAlī to Maṣqalah ibn Hubayrah al-Shaybānī, his governor in Ardashīr-khurrah:¹

I am informed that you have done something, which, if you have done it, means that you have angered your Lord and enraged your Imam. I am informed that you distribute among your ingratiating Bedouin tribesmen the war booty won by the Muslims’ arms, their cavalry, and their blood. I swear by him who split the grain and created the soul—if this is true, you will be disgraced in my eyes and worthless in my scales! Don’t make light of your obligations to your Lord, don’t advance your worldly life by effacing your religion, else you will be among those who lose all their deeds. Hark! All Muslims—those who live in your jurisdiction and those who live in mine—have equal share in the war booty. They come to my watering hole to receive it, and leave, having drunk their fill. Go in peace.

2.44 From ʿAlī’s missive to Ziyād ibn Abīhi, when he learned that Muʿāwiyah had written to Ziyād, enticing him to defect by connecting Ziyād’s lineage to his own:²

I have learned that Muʿāwiyah wrote to you in an attempt to befuddle your mind and dull your blade. Beware of him! He is Satan, approaching a man from the front and the back, the right and the left,³ storming in wherever he finds laxity, and plundering wherever he finds negligence. Once, during the reign of

¹ Presumably sent from Kufa in or just before 38/658. The first line is similar to § 2.40, and Maṣqalah is also castigated in § 1.44 (details of event in notes there). Ardashīr-khurrah was a district in Fars.

² Presumably from Kufa to Fars, between 38/658 and 40/661. The correspondence between Muʿāwiyah and Ziyād likely began when Maṣqalah defected to Muʿāwiyah in 38/658 (see Ibn ʿAsākir, Tūrīkh, 38:269–270). Ziyād was ʿAlī’s governor in Fars who, soon after ʿAlī’s death, left ʿAlī’s son Ḥasan and defected to Muʿāwiyah in 44/665. Muʿāwiyah won him over by officially declaring that Ziyād was his own (illegitimate half-)brother and appointing him governor in Iraq. The Nahj al-Balāghah text—like most primary sources—calls him “Ziyād ibn Abīhi,” lit. “Ziyād, son of his father” (instead of “Ziyād, son of ʿAbīd,” the name of his legal father) because of the uncertainty regarding his parentage; several candidates are mentioned in the sources, including Muʿāwiyah’s father, Abū Sufyān. Ziyād’s mother, Sumayyah, a slave, is characterized as promiscuous, and—this is the incident mentioned in ʿAlī’s letter—Abū Sufyān had once boasted to ʿAlī that he, Abū Sufyān, had “placed Ziyād inside Sumayyah’s womb.” Details of these events, texts of the letters exchanged between Muʿāwiyah and Ziyād, and between ʿAlī and Ziyād, and Ziyād’s orations, in Ḥ 16:179–204 (after Ibn ʿAbd al-Barr, Balādhurī, Wāqidī, Madāʾīnī, and Ṭabarī); B 870–871; F 383–384; R 3:140–142.

³ Reference to Qur’an, Aʿrāf 7:17.
غَرِّته. وقد كان من أبي سفيان في زمن عمر بن الخطاب فلَّتْه من حديث النفس ونَزَّهَه من زُرغَات الشيطان لا يُثبت به نسب ولا يستحق بها إرث والمعتق بها كالوالِغ المدفع والطَّوْف المُدْبِذَب.

فَلَمّا قَرَأ يزَبَد الكُتَّاب قَالَ شَيد بِه وَرِبَّ الكَبْعَة. ولم يُذَر في نفسه حَتَّى أَدَعَاه مَعَاوِيَة.

قَوْلُه عليه السلام (كَالوَالِغ المدْفَع) الوَالِغُ الَّذِي يِهِجُم عَلَى الْشُّرْب لِيَشْرِب مَعْهُ وَلَِّسْمُه فلا يَزاَل مَدْفَعًا مَخْجَازًا. وَ(النَّوْف المُدْبِذَب) هو ما يُناظَر بَرْح الْرَاكِب مِن قَعْبٍ أو قَدْح أو ما أَشَبَه ذَلِك فَهُوَ أَبَدًا يَتَقَلَّق إِلَى حَتَّى ظَهْرَه وَأَسْتَعِجِل سَيْرِه.

وَمِن كُتَّابه لِهِلِيَسَة السَّلَام إِلَى عُثْمَان بن حَنِيف الأَنْصَارِي وَكَانَ عَامِلًا عَلَى البُصَّرَة وَقَدْ أَرْشِعَ بِهِ أَنْ دُعِي إِلَى وَلَايَة قَوْمٍ مِن أَهْلَهَا فَضِيَ إِلَيْهِم.

2.45 أَمَّا بَعْدِي بَنِي حَنِيف فَقَدْ بَلْغَنِيَ أَنْ رَجَلًا مِن فُتْيَة أَهْل الْبُصَّرَة دَعَاءٍ إِلَى مَأْدِبٍ فَأَسْرَعت إِلَيْهِم تُسْتَطَاعُ لَك الأَلَوْان وَتَنْقِل عَلَيْكِ الجَفَان وَمَا ظَنْتَ أَنْكِ تَجْبِب إِلَى طَعَام قَوْم عَالِئِهِم مِهْفُرٌ وَ غَنِيّهِم مَدْخُوُّ فَأَنْظَرِإِلَى مَا تَقَضَّمَهُ مِن هَذَا المَقَضَّم فَمَا أَشْبَه عَلَيْكِ عَلَى فَالْفِظَّة وَمَا أَيْقِنَتْ بِطِبِب وَ جَوْجَه فَنَّلَّ مِنْهُ.

2.45.1 أَلا إِنَّ لِكَلِّ مَأْمُوم إِمَامًا يَقْتَدِي بِه وَ يِسْتَضْيِيء بَوْر عَلَيْهِ أَلا وَأَنَّ إِمَامَكُم قد أَكْتَفِي مِن دُنْيَا بَطْمِرْه وَمِن طَعْمِه بَعْرِشِه أَلَا وَأَنَّكُم لا تَثْقُرُونَ عَلَى ذَلِك وَلَكِنَّ أَعْيُنَينِ يَوَرَعَ وَ أَجْهَذُ فَوَلَّهُ الله مَا كَنَّزَتْ مِن دُنِيَا كِمْ يَإِرُ وَ لا آَخَذْت مِن غَنَائِهَا وَ فَرَا وَ لَا أَعْدَتِ لِبَلَّى تُفْنِي طِيْرًا!

2.45.2 أَلَّا وَأَنَّ لِكُلِّ مَأْمُوم إِماَّمًا يَقْتَدِي بِه وَ يِسْتَضْيِيء بَوْر عَلَيْهِ أَلا وَأَنَّ إِمَامَكُم قد أَكْتَفِي مِن دُنْيَا بَطْمِرْه وَمِن طَعْمِه بَعْرِشِه أَلَا وَأَنَّكُم لا تَثْقُرُونَ عَلَى ذَلِك وَلَكِنَّ أَعْيُنَينِ يَوَرَعَ وَ أَجْهَذُ فَوَلَّهُ الله مَا كَنَّزَتْ مِن دُنِيَا كِمْ يَإِرُ وَ لا آَخَذْت مِن غَنَائِهَا وَ فَرَا وَ لَا أَعْدَتِ لِبَلَّى تُفْنِي طِيْرًا!

١، ن، ش، ه: كَذَا. وَأَضْفِيَتْ فِي ش، ي: (وَلَا حَزْت مِن أَرْضِي شِيَّرًا). شْرُوحَ أَنَّ أَبِي الحَدِيدِيَّة. والبَحْرِيَّة. وَبَعْضُ مَخْتَوْطَاتِ شَرِيحِ الْإِرتُوْدِيَّيَّ: أَضْفِيَتْ (وَلَا حَزْت مِن أَرْضِي شِيَّرًا) وَ لَا أَخَذْتِ مِن غَنَائِهَا وَ فَرَا وَ لَا أَعْدَتِ لِبَلَّى تُفْنِي طِيْرًا.

مِنْهُ إِلَّا كُتُبَ أَثَانِيَة فَدْرَة وَلِيَّي فِي عِينِي أَوَّهَيْ مِن عَفْنَة مَقْرِةً.

al-Sharif al-Radi - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
ʿUmar ibn al-Khaṭṭāb, Abū Sufyān admitted that he had lapsed, an immoral admission that Satan propelled from his mouth, one which establishes neither lineage nor inheritance. Whoever relies on it as evidence is like a gatecrasher who is thrown out, or like a cup dangling from a saddle that is tossed hither and thither.

When Ziyād read ʿAlī’s missive, he exclaimed, “By the Lord of the Ka’bah, he has testified to it!” And this stayed with him, until, eventually, Muʿāwiyah proclaimed him his brother.

Raḍī: ʿAlī said, “like a gatecrasher who is thrown out (ka-l-wāghil al-mudaffa’): a gatecrasher is someone who bursts in uninvited upon a group of drinkers in order to join them, but, since he is not one of them, he is repulsed. “A cup dangling from a saddle that is tossed hither and thither (al-nawṭ al-mudhabdhab)” is a cup or a bowl or something similar fastened to a rider’s saddle, that rattles and jiggles whenever the rider urges his mount and quickens his pace.

2.45 From ‘Alī’s letter to ʿUthmān ibn Ḥunayf al-Anṣārī, his governor in Basra, when he heard that a certain group of people had invited Ibn Ḥunayf to a wedding banquet, and he had attended:¹

2.45.1 Ibn Ḥunayf, I am informed that one of Basra’s grandees invited you to a feast and you rushed to go—choice foods were presented to you there, and many dishes were served, but I would not have expected you to accept an invitation from people who are harsh to the needy and welcome only the rich! Look to the chickpeas you crunch up, and spit out anything you have misgivings about! Eat only what you know to be categorically clean.

2.45.2 Harken to me! Every follower has a leader he emulates, whose knowledge he seeks for illumination. Harken again! Your leader is satisfied for his share of the world with his two shabby garments and his two pieces of bread. And harken once more! You will not be able to do what I do—but help me by practicing restraint and striving for good. By God, I have never hoarded the gold of your world, nor amassed loads of riches, nor even laid aside an extra garment to replace my rags!

¹ Presumably from Medina to Basra at the beginning of ‘Alī’s caliphate in 36/656, before the Battle of the Camel. A Companion of the Prophet, one of the Allies, Ibn Ḥunayf was ʿAlī’s first governor in Basra, and he was expelled by the Camel forces in the lead-up to the battle. He fought for ʿAlī in that battle, then remained with him in Kufa, living there until his death in Muʿāwiyah’s reign. Ṣadūq (Amālī, 604) states that the letter (§ 2.45.4) was to Sahl (not ʿUthmān) ibn Ḥunayf.
2.45.3: على كأنت في أيدينا ندق من كل ما قلته السماء فضحت عليها نفوس قوم ونحت عنها نفوس آخرين ونعم الحكم الله، وما أصبع، فبلك وغيرها، والثائرة مطلبة في قد جدته تتقطع في ظلته آثارها وتغيب أخبارها وحفرة لوعيد في فضحتها. وأوسعست يدا حافرة الأضغصها الخبر والمدر، وسدى جرحها التراب المتراكم، وما هي نفس أروىها بالنوى لتأتي أمينة يوم الخوف الأكبر وثبت على جوانب المراث، ولو شئت لذاهبت الطريق إلى مصفي هذا العسل ولباب هذا القَمَح ونساء هذا الفرن، ولكن هيبات أن يغمي هواي وينفي جِسْعَيْ إلى تَخْرَِي الأعظم، ولعل بالحنجرة وبمثابة من لا طمع له في الفصر ولا عهد له بالشبع أو أيت مَبطُنًا وحول بطن غرئ أكَبَد حَري أو أكون كما قال القائل:

وَحَسَبَ دَاً أَن يُتَبَّطَّتِ وُحَلْكَ أَكَبَادَ حَنِي إِلَى الْقِدَّ.

2.45.4: أتقع من نسبي بأن بقال أمر المؤمنين ولا يُشاركونهم في مكاره الدهر أو أكون أسوة لهم في جنوبية；اًتْلُقَتُ ليشغليَّنِمك الطيبات كالبيئة المرموطية همها علَّفها أو المَرَسَلَة شغلها تَصُمُّها تَكْرِهِ شُكَر من أعلاها وائلها، أو أَتْكَ سَدِّى أو أَحْمَل عَاباً أو أَجْرَ حِل الضلال أو أَعْتَسُف طرقات النَّائِ. وكأن بقائلكم يقول إذا كان هذا قوم أَنَّ مَرْضَيَّ فَقَد قَضَى به الضعف عن قتال الأفزان ومَنازلة الشجعان أَنَّ السَّبِيرَة البَرِّيَّة أَصْبَ عَوداً ورواق الخضرة أرَق جَلَدًا والنباتات العلَّيّ أقوى وقُوًّا وأَبْطَأ حَمُوداً وأَنا من رسول الله صلى الله عليه وأَهِله كأَضْوِهَ من الضوء.

ش، ن، ي، ذ، م، د، ن، ه، ك، م،، وَنِسَخَةِ ﻓِي ﺷ، (خَشْوَةَ). ي، ﻣُعَ،،، ﺷ، س، ك، وَمُصَحَّحَةَ ﻓِي ﻗ، وَشوْرَمَ أَنَّ أَبَّيّ الحَلِيدِ،ّ،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،،，《الصَّوْمَ من الصَّوْرٍ.}}

al-Sharif al-Radi - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
2.45.3 And yes, of all the lands under the sky, we possessed only Fadak. But the hearts of one group coveted it, while the generous hearts of another group relinquished it—and God is the best judge! Yet, what should I do with Fadak, or with a land other than Fadak, when tomorrow every man will make his home in the grave? In that darkness, his features will be erased, his renown will fade. The tomb is a pit which, no matter how wide its hollow, how capacious dug by the grave-digger’s hands, is still crushed by stones and slabs, still sealed with piles of earth. As for my own soul, I train it to piety, so that I can come in full security to the day of great terror and have a firm foothold on the slippery edge of the abyss! If I had wished, I could have enjoyed the purest honey, the finest wheat, and lengths of woven silk. But far be it for passion to overpower me, for gluttony to make me partake of delicate foods, when perhaps in Yamāmah or the Ḥijāz there is someone with no hope of finding a piece of bread, no memory even of having eaten a full meal! Far be it for me to sleep with a full belly when I am surrounded by hungry stomachs and empty bellies! Far be it for me to be among those of whom the poet has said:

How sick you are! You sleep with a full belly
Surrounded by hearts yearning for a mouthful of dry hide.

2.45.4 Should I be content to be hailed as Commander of the Believers without sharing in the hardships inflicted on them by fate, or without serving as an example for how to endure a rough life? I was not created in order to eat sumptuous foods, like a tethered beast who thinks only of fodder, or a pastured animal who merely looks to eat, an animal that fills its belly with grass, while remaining blithely unaware of what is intended for it! I was not created in order to be ignored and unheeded and left alone to frolic, to drag along the rope of error or to wander off into the wilderness! I can hear some of you saying that Abū Ṭālib’s son’s diet of uncooked food has made him too weak to fight his rivals or challenge warriors. Hark! A tree in the wilderness is made of stronger wood. Green shoots that are tended have soft surfaces, while plants watered only by rain produce tougher and longer-burning kindling. I am to God’s Messenger as

---

1 Fadak was an estate near Khaybar, north of Medina, which the Prophet had bequeathed to his daughter, Ṭālib’s wife, Fāṭimah. After the Prophet’s death, Abū Bakr denied it to her, claiming that the community are heirs to the Prophet’s property. Long discussion in H 16:209–286; B 874–876. Fāṭimah’s oration in Abū Bakr’s court, arguing for her right to Fadak, in Qutbuddin, Arabic Oration, 385–388 (text, translation, and analysis).

2 By the pre-Islamic poet Ḥātim al-Ṭāʾī, proverbial for his generosity. B 877; H 16:288.
والذراع من العضد. والله لو تظاهرت العرب على قتالي لما وليت عنها ولو أمكنت
الفرص من رقابها لسارت إليها وساجد في أن أظهر الأرض من هذا الشخص
المعكوس والجسم المركوش حتى تخرج المدرة من بين حض الحصيد.

2.45.5. إليك عن يدنا خليك على غاربك قد أرسلت من هائلك وأفلت من حائلك
وأجتني التذهب في مداهلك. أن القران الذين غرّتهم مداعبتك أن الأمم الذين
فتنتم به خارفوك هازم رهائن القبور ومضايين الخود. والله لو كنت شخصاً مزيكاً وقابلًا
حسياً لاقت عليك حدود الله في عباد غرّتهم بالأمان وأمم ألقّتهم في المهاوي
وملك أسّسهم إلى التلف وأورّديهم موارد البلاء إذ لا ورداً ولا صدر. هبات من
وطني دَحْضَاه زالّ ومن ركب بحبح غرق ومن أزار عن حبالك وفُقّ والسّلَامِ منك
لا يبياني أنّ ضاق به مُنْاخه والديا عندّه كيوم حان أنسلاخه. اغبري; عن كلّ فوالله
لا أذّل ذلك فتستذلّي ولا أسلس للقّواني وآيم الله بعيناً أستثني في مثاليّة الله
لأُروضٍ نفسي رياضه تهّبها إلى القرص إذا قدرت عليه مطلع وتقنع بالملح
مأدوماً ولا دعُ مقتفي كعين ماء نضّب معينها مستفرغة دموها. أمتاع السّلامة من
رعيها فتتَّرَح ونشيع الربيضة من عينها فترفّض ويا كلي من زاده فتتَّغْطى قرّت إذا
عينه إذا أقتدى بعد السنين المطلوبة بالبيّمة الهامة والسّلامة المرعية. طويت نفس أدّت
إلى رِبّها فرضها وعَرّفت بِجِنْبِها بَّوْسَها وجمّر في الليل غمّضها حتّى إذا غلب الكَرّى
عليها أقبرت أرضها وتوسّدت كفّها في معاشر أشهر عيونهم خوف معاءهم وتجافت
عن مضاهجهم جنوبهم وهمّمت بذكر رّبهم فياهمهم وتفشّت بطول أستغفارهم
ذنوبيهم.
light issuing from light,\(^1\) as the hand at the end of the arm. By God, even if all the Arabs came together to attack me, I would stand my ground. If the opportunity to strike off their heads were presented, I would rush forward alone. I shall do my best to cleanse the earth of this warped hulk, this grotesque carcass.\(^2\) All dirt shall be removed from the harvested grain.

2.45.5 Keep away from me, world, go on your way, for I have cast your reins on your withers, evaded your claws, escaped your snares, and sidestepped your slippery paths! Where are the generations you enticed with your pandering, the nations you seduced with your jewels? Here they all are, pledged to their graves, enclosed in their tombs! By God, if you possessed a visible form, a sentient body, I would flog you for the multitudes you enticed with false hopes, for the nations you pitched into the abyss, for the kings you handed over to destruction and swept to their ruin, to a waterhole where no one drinks and no one leaves. Far be you from me! Whoever steps onto your slippery trail tumbles, whoever sails your swelling waves drowns, while whoever escapes your snares is well-directed! Those saved from your harm care not if their beds are narrow. To them, this world is but a day, and its end is near. Get away from me! By God, I shall never be submissive and let you steer me, I shall never be docile and let you lead me! God’s oath, I shall train myself to delight in a piece of bread, should I be fortunate enough to obtain it, and be content with salt as my sauce—God willing, I shall do this! I shall let my eyes stream like a gushing spring until I exhaust all my tears. Camels fill their bellies with fodder and kneel to rest, sheep stuff their stomachs with grass and lie down—should ‘Ali also be content to eat his provisions and sleep? His eyes would close in prolonged torpor if—after many long years of life—he started to emulate the grazing beasts and the cattle of the fields! Blessed is the man who discharges his obligations toward his Lord, who endures the rough grip of calamities on his body, who resists closing his eyes at night in slumber, until, when sleep overpowers him, he stretches out on the earth with his palm for a pillow. He is among a devout group whose eyes stay awake in fear of the return to God, whose bodies renounce their beds, whose lips whisper the name of their Lord, and whose sins are sloughed off by long prayer.

---

\(^1\) Ar. \textit{ka-l-ḍawʾ i mina l-ḍawʾ}. The variant reading is “as brother to brother” (\textit{ka-l-ṣinwi mina l-ṣinw}).

2.46 وَمَنْ كَتَابَ لَهُ عَلَىَّ الْسَلَامِ إِلَىٰ بَعْضِ عَمَّالِهِ
أَمَّا بَعْدُ. فَإِذَاَّكَ مِنْ أَسَظَّهُرَ بِهِ عَلَى إِقَامَةِ الْدُنْيَا وَأَقْبَ عِنْهَا الأَثِيمِ وَأَشْدَدْ بِهِ لَهَا الْثَّغَرُ
الْبَلَحَفِ. فَأَسْتَمِعْ إِلَىَّ الْحَبَّةِ عَلَى مَا أُمِّهَكَ وَأَخْبَثُ الضَّدَّةَ يَضْعِفُ مِنَ اللَّيْلِ وَأَرْفَعُ مَا كَان
الرَّفِقَ أَرْفَعَ وَأَعْزِمَ بِالضَّدَّةِ حُينَ لا يَعْتَنِي عَنْهُ إِلَّا الضَّدَّةَ وَأَخْبَثُ السُّرْجَةَ جَناَحَكَ وَأَن
لَهُمُ جَانِبَكَ وَأَشَّ بَيْنَهُمْ فِي الْمَذْهَبِ وَالْبَصَرَةَ وَالإِسْتِهْراَةَ وَالْمُتَحِيَّةِ حَتَّى لا يَطْمَعُ العَظْمَاءَ فِي
حَيْفَكَ وَلَا يَبَسُّ الْضَعَائِفَ مِنَ عَدَالَكَ وَالسَّلَامِ.

2.47 وَمِنْ وَصْيَٰهُ لِلْخَيْرِ وَالْخَسِينِ عَلَىَّ الْسَلَامِ لَمَّا ضَرَّبَهُ آبًَ مَلْجِهِ
2.47.1 أَوْصِيْتِي بِتَقْوِيَّ الْلَّهِ وَأَنْ لَا تَبْغي الْدُنْيَا وَإِنْ بُنْتِكَ وَلَا تَأْسِفَا عَلَى شَيْءٍ مِنْهَا زُوِي
عَنْكَ وَقُوْا الْحَقّ وَأَعْمَلُوا لِلْأَجْرِ وَكُونَا لِلنَّظَامِ خَصْصَأَ وَالنَّظَامِ عُوْنَ أَوْصِيْتِي وَجِبَعَ ولْدِي وَأَهْلُهُ وَمِنْ بَلْغِهِ كَانِي بِتَقْوِيَّ الْلَّهِ وَنُظِّمْ أَمْرُكَ وَصَلَحُ دَرْجَ بَيْنَكَ فَلَيْتِي سَمَعْتُ
جَذَّكَ صُلِّي الْلَّهُ عَلَيْهِ وَأَلَّهُ يَبْقُوٰ افْجَراهُمْ وَلَا يَضْعَفُوا بِجَهَرِهِمْ وَالَّلَّهُ فِي جِرَانْكَمْ فَإِنّهُمْ
وَصْيَةٌ تُنَبِّيِّكَ مَا زَالَ يُوسُفُ بِهِمْ حَتَّى ظَنُّنَا أَنْهُ سَبْرُهُمْ وَالَّلَّهُ فِي الْقُرْآنِ لا يَسْبِقُهُم
بِالْعَمَلِ بِهِ غَيْرَ مَعْلٍ وَالَّلَّهُ فِي الصَّلَاةِ فَإِنْهَا عَمَّدُ دِينُكَ وَالَّلَّهُ فِي بِتَتَّ رَبُّكَ لا تَخْلُوْهُ مَا

١٠٠، يٰ، وَنَسْخَةُ فِي شِ، هٰ: كُدَّانٍ وَأَوْلِي شِ، هٰ: أَفْوَاهٍ. ٢٨، نٰ، يٰ، هٰ: كُدَّانٍ مٰ: سَمَعْتُ
مِنْ رِسُولِ اللَّهِ.
2.46 From a letter sent by ‘Alī to one of his governors:¹
You are one of those whose support I rely on to establish our religion, break the rebel's false pride, and protect vulnerable gaps at the frontier.² Ask God for help in any matter that causes you anxiety. Mix your firmness with a hint of gentleness, be compassionate when compassion is called for, and be resolutely firm when only firmness will work. Lower your wing over your subjects in humility,³ show them your softer side, and give equal attention to all in glance, look, gesture, and greeting, such that the powerful are not emboldened to expect unfair favors and the weak do not despair of receiving justice. Go in peace.

2.47 From ‘Alī’s testament for Ḫasan and Ḥusayn, after Ibn Muljam had struck him the death blow:⁴

2.47.1 I counsel you both to remain conscious of God. Do not seek this world even if it seeks you, do not grieve over any of its benefits that are turned away from you. Speak the truth, strive to earn God’s reward, be an enemy of the oppressor and a friend of the oppressed. I counsel you both, and all my children and family, as well as all who read my testament, to be conscious of God, to cooperate in common affairs, and to reconcile with kinsfolk. I have heard your grandfather, Muḥammad, say, ⟨To reconcile with kin is even better than to pray and to fast⟩.⁵ Fear God, fear God, in the matter of orphans! Do not fill their mouths only every other day, do not let them be uncared for, for as long as you live. Fear God, fear God, in the matter of your neighbors! Your Prophet counseled you to be good to them, and he did this so often we thought he might actually give them a share of inheritance. Fear God, fear God, in the matter of the Qurʾan! Do not let others precede you in following its guidance. Fear God, fear God, in the matter of the ritual prayer! It is the foundation of your reli-

¹ Excerpt from epistle sent from Kufa to Mālik al-Ashtar, then governor in Naṣībīn, in northern Iraq, after the arbitration in 37/658; by this letter, ‘Alī recalled Ashtar to Kufa, then sent him as governor to Egypt, to take over from Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr, and Mālik died en route. Text and context in Thaqāfī, Ghārāt, 1:257–258; Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 5:94–96; Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 282–283.
² Lit. “protect the uvula (lahāh) of the frontier, [for whose safety we] fear.” The image is of a weak barrier (the uvula) between the enemy and the heartland (the inside of the body, accessed through the mouth).
³ Reference to Qurʾān, Isrāʾ 17:24.
⁴ Kufa, 40/661. Fuller text and context in Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 5:446–447; Abū al-Faraj, Maqātil, 51–53.
⁵ Hadith cited in Tirmidhī, Sunan, § 2531.
بقيت فإنك إن تترك لم تنتظرنا وله الله في الجهاد بأموالكم وأنفسكم واستندركم في سبيل الله.
وعليك بالتنبر والتكافل وإياكم والتداير والتواصيل. لا تتركوا الأمر للمثير، إلا لله.

2.47.2
ثم قال:
يا بني عبدالمطلب لا تفهمنا تخوضون دماء المسلمين خوضًا تقولون قتل كابن أمير المؤمنين.
قلل أمر المؤمنين، ألا لا يقتلن بي إلا قاتلي أنظروا إذا أنا معت من ضربته هذه فاضربوها
ضربة بضربة ولا يمثّل بالرجل فاني سمحت رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم وقال:
وأحيّاكم والملئة وؤلك الكل العقور.

2.48
ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى معاوية.
وإن الليغاء والزور يروي تُيغب بالمر في دينه ودنياه ويبدين خله عند من يعيبه. وقد علمت
أنك غير مدري ما قضني فواته وقد راح أقوم أمرًا بغير الحق فتأولوا على الله فأكذبهم
فاحذر يومًا يغتبط فيه من أحمد عاقبة عمله بيدم من أمكان الشيطان من قيادة فلم
يجالبه. وقد دعوتته إلى حكم القرآن ولست من أهله ولست إياك أجنان وليكن أجنبا القرآن
إلى حكمه.

ash, ن، هـ: كذا م، ي: لم تكرر قتل أمير المؤمنين. 촌، ش، ي، هـ: كذا م، ونسخة في هـ:
"پذيعان".
gion. Fear God, fear God, in the matter of your Lord’s House! Do not abandon it as long as you live, for if you forsake it, you will not be granted reprieve. Fear God, fear God, in the matter of jihad! Fight with your wealth, your lives, and your tongues in the path of God. Furthermore, foster bonds with family and help each other, never turn away from each other or sever relations, and never cease to command good or forbid evil, lest the wicked gain ascendancy. If that happens, your prayers will no longer be answered.

2.47.2 Then he said:
Sons of ‘Abd al-Muṭṭalib! Let me not find you spilling the blood of Muslims, shouting, “The Commander of the Faithful has been killed, the Commander of the Faithful has been killed!” Listen to me! Only my killer should be killed in retaliation for my killing. Pay further attention! If I should die from his blow, then kill him with a single blow. Do not torture him, for I have heard the Messenger say, “Never torture, not even a rabid dog!”

2.48 From ‘Ali’s letter to Muʿāwiyah:¹
Treachery and lies kill a man’s faith and ruin his worldly affairs, and they expose his faults to those who know him to be shameful. You realize you will not attain what is destined to remain unattained?² Certain people coveted a thing they had no right to, and they came up with false interpretations of God’s words that God then proved false.³ Beware the coming day! The man with good deeds will rejoice, the one who surrendered his reins to Satan will regret. You proposed that we should submit to the rule of the Qur’an, yet you are not a man who follows the Qur’an. It was not you I answered, but the Qur’an, whose judgment I agreed to follow.

---

¹ Ṣiffīn, 37/657, after Muʿāwiyah raised pages from the Qurʾan on spears and solicited arbitration, and ‘Ali’s army compelled ‘Ali to accept. Fuller text and context in Minqārī, Waqʿat Ṣiffīn, 489–494 (text at 493–494). Baḥrānī (B 884) places the letter following Muʿāwiyah’s claim to the caliphate after the arbitration in 37/658; in his version, the letter would have been sent from Kufa to Damascus.
² B 884; A 695: the line refers to Muʿāwiyah’s call to avenge ‘Uthmān in 35–36/656. My reading: the line refers to Muʿāwiyah’s bid for the caliphate, based on the subsequent lines, re the proposal to submit to the Qurʾan’s judgment, which took place at the end of the Battle of Ṣiffīn in 37/657.
³ “A certain group” is Talhah, Zubayr, and ‘Āʾishah, who fought ‘Ali in the Battle of the Camel on the same pretext as Muʿāwiyah at Ṣiffīn, namely, vengeance for ‘Uthmān’s killing. The “thing” is the caliphate, which they coveted for themselves. The line, “came up with false interpretations (taʾawwalū) of God’s word,” may alternatively be read, “swore they knew God’s destiny,” as per the variant reading (taʾallahū): F 386, citing the hadith, ⟨God proves wrong those who swear they know his judgments (yataʾallā)⟩, (Quḍāʾī, Shihāb, § 2.3).
2.49 ومن كتاب له علیه السلام إلى غيره: 
أما بعد. فإن الدین موشغلة عن غيرها ولم يصب صاحبها منها شيئاً إلا فتحته له حرصاً عليها ولهجة بها وله يد فينضحي صاحبها بما نال فيها عما لم يبلغه منها ومن وراء ذلك فراق ما جمع ونقض ما أدرم ولو أعترث بما مضى حفظت ما بقي والسلام.

2.50 ومن كتاب له علیه السلام إلى أمرائه على الجيوش من عبد الله علي أمیر المؤمنين إلى أصحاب المسالح. أما بعد.
فإن حقًا على الولائي أن لا يغيره على رعيته فضل ناله ولا طول خصبه وأن يزيده ما قسم الله له من نعمه دوناً من عباده وعطاإ على إخوانه. ألا وإن لكم عندي أن لا أفتحجز دونكم سراً إلا في حرب ولا أطلوي دونكم أمرًا إلا في حكم ولا أؤمركم لكم حقًا عن مخلقه ولا أقف به دون مقطعه وأن تكونون عندي في الحقّ سواء. فإذا فعلت ذلك وجبت الله عليكم النعمة وعليكم الطاعة وأن لا تنكضوا عن دعوة ولا تفرطوا في صالح وأن تخوضوا الغمرات إلى الحقّ فإن أمتن لم تستقيموا على ذلك لم يكن أحد أهون عليّ ممّن أعوج منكم ثم أعظم له العقوبة ولا يجد عندي فيها رخصة نفدوا هذا من أمرائكم وأعطوه من أنفسكم ما يصلح الله به أمركم.

2.51 ومن كتاب له علیه السلام إلى عما له على الخراج من عبد الله علي أمیر المؤمنين إلى أصحاب الخراج. أما بعد.
2.49 From ʿAlī’s letter to someone else:1
This world distracts you from the next. When a worldly man obtains a bit
of the world, it opens the door to further greed and craving. Never satis-
fied with what he has, he is always thinking of what he doesn't have. And
the end? Separation from all he amassed and destruction of everything he
built! If you heed lessons of the past, you will safeguard what remains. Go in
peace.

2.50 From ʿAlī’s letter to his military commanders:2
From God’s servant, ʿAlī, Commander of the Faithful, to officers in charge of the
garrisons.
It befits those in authority that the honor they have received and the favor
for which they have been singled out do not change their behavior toward their
subjects. Rather, God’s blessings on them should prompt them to greater close-
ness with God’s servants and greater kindness toward their brothers. Harken to
my words! You can expect this from me: I shall not keep secrets from you except
in war, I shall not hide matters from you except when I judge, I shall not delay
in paying your stipends or obstruct disbursements, and all of you shall be equal
before me in claiming your rights. If I fulfill my duty, you, in turn, are required
to do the following: Give thanks to God for his bounty, offer me full obedience,
do not hold back when called, do not shirk in doing good, and plunge into
deep and dangerous waters for the sake of truth. If you do not remain upright,
though, beware, for no one will fall more from my regard than those who devi-
ate. I shall punish them harshly and they shall receive no leniency. Take this
promise from me, your Commander, and give me yours. If you do, God will keep
your affairs in good order.

2.51 From ʿAlī’s epistle to his officers in charge of collecting the land tax:3
From God’s servant, ʿAlī, Commander of the Faithful, to the officials in charge
of collecting the land tax.

---

1 From Nukhaylah, just before ʿAlī set out for Syria, addressed, according to Minqārī (Waqʿat Ṣiffīn, 110–111), to ‘Amr ibn al-ʿĀṣ. Minqārī records the text and context, and ‘Amr’s response, calling for ʿAlī to step down as caliph. Addressed to Muʿāwiya, per the variant reading “to him again” (ilayhi) in some MSS and commentaries.
2 Minqārī (Waqʿat Ṣiffīn, 107) and Ṭūsī (Amālī, 222) place this letter in Kufa or Nukhaylah, just before setting out for Ṣiffīn, in 36/656.
3 Along with the previous text, Minqārī (Waqʿat Ṣiffīn, 108) appears to place this letter in Kufa or Nukhaylah, just before setting out for Ṣiffīn, in 36/656. “Land tax” (kharāj) is different from the alms-levy (ṣadaqāt) mentioned in § 2.25.
فإن من لم يذكر ما هو صار إليه لم يقدم لنفسه ما يُحرزها واعلموا أن ما كلفتم بسير وأن ثوابه كثير ولو لم يكن فيما نهى الله عنه من البغي والعدوان عقاب يخفف لكان في ثواب آجتنبهم ما لا عذر في ترك طلبه فانصرفوا الناس من أنفسكم وأقبلوا خروجهم فإنَّ خزان الرعية ووكالات الأمة وسفراء الأمة ولا تحشوا أحدًا عن حاجته ولا تحسوه عن طلبه ولا تتبعون الناس في الخراج كسوة شتاء ولا صيف ولا دابة يعتمدون عليها ولا عبدًا ولا تبشير أحدًا سوّطًا لمكان درهم ولا تمسن من الناس مصل ولا معاهد إلا أن تجدوا فرسا أو سلاحًا يعذى به على أهل الإسلام فإنه لا ينبغي للمسلم أن يدع ذلك في أيدي أعداء الإسلام فيكون شوكة عليه. ولا تذيعوا أنفسكم نصيحة ولا الحنذ حسن سيرة ولا الرعية معونة ولا دين الله قوة وأوابوا في سبيله ما استوجب عليه فإن الله سبحانه قد أسنح عندي وعندكم أن نشكره بجد من دون نصره بما بلغت قوتنا ولا قوة إلا بالله.

2.52 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى أمراء البلاد في معنى الصلاة أمّا بعد. فقولوا بالناس الظهر حين تنفيء الشمس مثل مريض العنز وصلوا بهم العصر والشمس بيضاء حيّة في عضو من البار حين يسار فيها فرخنان وصلوا بهم المغرب حين ينفر الصائم ويدفع الحاج وصلوا بهم العشاء حين يتوارى الشفق إلى ثلث الليل وصلوا بهم الغدوان والرجل يعرف وجه صاحبه وصلوا بهم صلاة أضعفهم ولا تكونوا فتانيين.

م، ي، ونسخة في ه: كذا، ن، ش، م، ونسخة في م: (تخسروا). م، ي، ومصححة في ه: كذا، ن، ش، وأصل ه: أضيفت (العلي).
Whoever fails to care about his end, fails to safeguard himself by advancing provisions for his soul. Know that your obligations are small while their reward will be great. Even if you feared no punishment for breaking God's prohibitions against treachery and hostility, the reward promised for shunning them should leave you with no excuse. Treat people with justice and be patient in tending to their needs. You are the people's treasurers, the community's trustees, and the Imam's agents. Do not come between a man and his needs, do not restrain him from going about his business, do not force people to pay taxes by selling their winter garments, their summer clothes, the beasts they need for work, or their slaves, do not whip anyone for silver. Do not seize the property of a single individual, whether Muslim, Christian, or Jew, except when you find a horse or weapon that could be used to attack the people of Islam, for a Muslim should not leave in the hands of Islam's enemies objects they could use to strengthen their attack. Do not hold back—give each other counsel, set an example for your troops, help your subjects, and support God's religion. Push yourself hard in God's way and fulfil your duties. God has blessed me with his immense favors, and he has blessed you. We must thank him through our actions and serve him with our full strength. All strength comes from God.

2.52 From ʿAlī’s instructions to his governors regarding the ritual prayers:
Pray the noon prayer when the sun casts a shadow equal to a squatting goat. Pray the afternoon prayer while the sun burns intensely bright, when what remains of the day is enough to travel two leagues. Pray the sunset prayer when a person would break fast, and a hajj pilgrim would make his descent. Pray the night prayer when twilight ends and through the first third of the night. Pray the dawn prayer when a man can see his neighbor’s face. Pray the prayer that suits the weakest among them and do not cause sedition.

---

1 Lit. “whether he prays the ritual prayer [of Islam] (muṣallin) or is guaranteed protection by a covenant (muʿāhid).”
3 I.e., when the sun’s shadow reaches the length of a handspan. R 3:163; 17:23.
4 Lit. two farsakh. A farsakh is a unit of distance between four to six miles.
5 From ʿArafāt to Muzdalifah, per the pilgrimage rites.
6 I.e., keep it short—do not pray long Surahs, or people will stop attending. B 888; R 3:164. Similar to § 2.53.16.
2.53 ومن عهد له عليه السلام كتبه للأُثْرَّيْنَ النَّبِيِّيْنَ رَحْمَةُ اللَّهِ عَلَى مَصرَ وَأَعْمَالِهَا حَينَ أَضَطَرَبَ أمر أميره عليها محمد بن أبي بكر رحمه الله. وهو أطول عهد كتبه وأجععه للمحاسب.

2.53.1 بسم الله الرحمن الرحيم

هذا ما أمر به عبد الله علي أمير المؤمنين مالك بن الحارث الأشر في عهده إليه حين ولآه مصر جُوُه جزاحها وجهاد عدوها وأستصالح أهلها وعمارة بلادها. أمره بقُوِي الله وإيثار طاعة وأتباع ما أمر به في كتابه من فرائضه وسنته التي لا يمس أحد إلا بآثابها ولا يشقى إلا مع جَوْدِها وإيضاعتها وأن ينص الله سبحانه بيده وقبره ولسانه فإنه جَلَّ أَسَمَه قد تَكَفَّل بنصر من نصره واعزاب من أعره. وأمره أن يكسر نفسه عند الشهور ومنزها عند الجحات في إن الإنسان لآمارة بالسوء إلَّا ما رحم الله.

2.53.2 ثم أعلَمْ يا مالك أنِّي قد وَجَهْتَكَ إلى بلاد قد جرت عليها دوْلَة قبَلك من عدل وجبور وأن الناس ينظرون من أمورك في مثل ما كنت تنظر فيه من أمور الولاية قبلك ويقولون فيه ما كنت تقول فيه. وإنما يُسْتَدِلُّ على الصالحين بما يجري الله لهم على أَلْسِن عباده فلَيْكُن أَحْبٌ الدُّخَائِر إِلَّيْكَ ذَخِيرَةِ العَمُل السَّالِح فَمَلِكَ هُوَ وَحْيٌ بَنْفَكَ عمَّا لا يُجَلِّلُ كَلَّ فَإَنَّ الشَّحَّ بَنَفْسِ الإِنْصَافِ مِنْهَا أَحْبَتْ وَكَرَهَت.

2.53.3 وأَشَعِرُ قَلْبِكَ الرَّحمَةِ للرَّعِيَّةِ والخَيْبَةِ لِهِمَّ وَاللَّطِيفِ بِهِمْ وَلا تَكُونُوا عَلَيْهِمْ سَبَعًا ضَارِيًا تَغْتَمَّ أَكْلُهُمْ إِلَّا أَحَجَّ لَكَ فِي الْدِّينِ وَإِمَّا نَظَيرُ لَكَ فِي الْخَلْقِ يُقْرِطُ منهم الرَّزْلَ وَتَعَرَضُ لِهِمَّ الْعَلَّ وَيُؤَايِّدُهُمْ عِلْمَهُمْ فَأَعْطُهُمْ عِنْفُوكَ وَسَفَحَكَ مَثَلَ الَّذِي تَحْبُّ أَنْ يُعْطِيكَ اللَّهُ مِنْ عُفُوٍ وَصِفَهَ فَإِنَّكَ فَوْقُهُمْ وَوَالٍ الْأَمْرِ عَلَيْكَ فَوْقُكَ اللَّهُ فَوْقُ مِنْ وَ لَآ كَ وَقَدْ أَسْتَكْفَاكُمْ أَمْرَهُمْ وَأَبْتَلَاكُ بِهِمْ. لا تَنْصِبُ نَفْسَكَ
2.53 From ‘Ali’s testament for Mālik al-Ashtar al-Nakha‘ī when he appointed him governor of Egypt and its provinces, to replace Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr, whose control over the region had been severely challenged. It is ‘Ali’s longest epistle and gathers within it the most beautiful aspects of language:¹

2.53.1 In the name of God, the Compassionate, the Merciful.

This is what God’s servant, ‘Ali, Commander of the Faithful, commands Mālik ibn al-Ḥārith al-Ashtar, in the epistle he writes appointing him governor of Egypt, with the charge to collect its land tax, fight its enemies, reconcile its people, and make its lands prosper: ‘Ali commands him to be conscious of God and prefer God’s obedience above all; to follow what God has commanded in his Book, both the mandatory and the recommended acts, for only those who follow them attain happiness and only those who deny them and squander them fall into wretchedness; and to support God’s cause with his hand, heart, and tongue, for God has promised to support those who support him, and to exalt those who exalt him. ‘Ali commands him to break the passions of his sentient soul and to rein them in when they become restive. For «the sentient soul commands vice unless God shows it mercy».²

2.53.2 Know, O Mālik, that I send you to a land where just and unjust rulers have ruled before you. Its people will watch what you do, as you watched the actions of earlier rulers, they will speak about you, as you spoke about those rulers. The pious are recognized through what God prompts his servants to say about them, so let praiseworthy deeds be your dearest treasure. Control your passions and restrain yourself from all that is illicit for you, holding yourself accountable in what you love and in what you hate.

2.53.3 Clothe your heart with compassion, love, and kindness toward your subjects. Do not be a ravening lion who devours their flesh.³ People are of two kinds: they are either your brothers in faith or your peers in creation. They make mistakes, they are exposed to temptations, and their hands do wrong, be it deliberately or in error. Grant them your forgiveness and pardon, just as you wish for God to forgive and pardon you. You are above them in rank, but the one who appointed you is above you, and God is above him. God has required

¹ In Kufa, 38/658. Harrānī, Ṭuḥaf, 126. See also § 2.38 and § 2.62. On this oration, see Shah-Kazemi, Justice and Remembrance, 73–114; Qutbuddin, “Just Leadership in Early Islam: The Teachings and Practice of Imam Ali.”
² Qur’ān, Yūsuf 12:53.
³ Lit. “predatory beast (ṣabūʿ ḍārī),” usually used for a lion. R 3172.
ل الحرب لله فإن له لا يد ي لك تبقمته ولا غنى بك عن عفو و لا يمجد به عقوبة ولا يسر عون إلى بادر و جدت عنها مندحه ولا يتولى إني مؤمر أمر فأطاع فإن ذلك إدغال في القلب ومى للدين و ترب من الغير وإذا أحدث لك ما أنت فيه من سلطانك أبى أو محبه فأنتظر إلى عظم الله فوقع وقدره منه على ما لا تقدر عليه من نفسك فإنه ذلك يطامين إلك من طهانك و يكش عنك من غر بك ويفيء إلك بما عزب عنك من عقلك وإي الامسامة الله في عظمته والتسببه به في جبره فإن الله يذل كل جبار و يهين كل مختال.

2.53.4 أنصف الله وأنصف الناس من نفسك ومن خاصه أهلك ومن لك فيه هو من رعيتك فإنك إلا تنفل تظلم ومن ظلم عباد الله كان الله خصمه دون عباده ومن خاصه الله تدحضق و كان الله حربا خيش من شجع و يب و ليس شيء أدمع إلى تغيير نعم الله و تعجيل تعمته من إقامة علي ظلم و لينك أحبيب الأمور إليك وأسطلها في الحق وأعماها في العدل وأجعلها لرضى الوعي فإن تحفظ عمامه يجفف برضي الخاصه وإن تحفظ الخاصه يغنت مع رضي العامة وليس أحد من الرعية أثقل على الوالي مؤونة في الرفهة وأقل مؤونة له في البلاء وأكره للإصاف وأرسل بالإلحاف وأقل شكراً عند الإعطاء وأبطله أذراً عند المنع وأضعف صبرًا عند ملبسات الدهر من أجل الخاصه وإذنا عموذ الدين و جماع المسلمين والعيلة للأعداء العامه من الآله ما فليكن صغير لهم وميكل معهم.

2.53.5 ولكن أعدد رعيتك منك و أشر به منك أطبوا لهم معائب الناس فإن في الناس عيباً الولي أحق من سترها فلا تكشفن عمّا غاب عنك منها فإنا لما يظهر لك والله يحكم على ما غاب عنك فأستر العورة ما استطعت يستر الله منك ما تحب ستره من رعيتك. أوقع على الناس عقدة كل حقد وأقطع عنك سبب كل وتر وتغاب عن كل ما لا يصح لك ولا تجلن إلى تصديق ساع فإن الساعي غاش و إن تشبه أن شالولو و مصححة في د و ه ء كما أصل ي د و في هامش م أضيفت (فإن الله سميع دعوة المظلمين وهو للظلمين بالرصاص).
you to tend to their needs and tested you through them. Do not set yourself up to be at war with God, for your hands do not have the strength to repulse his punishment, while you have utter need of his forgiveness and compassion. Never regret having pardoned, never rejoice in punishing, and never hasten to act in a fit of passion when you can find a calmer way. Never say, “I have been given command—I command, and I shall be obeyed,” for that will make hearts fester, weaken religion, and draw calamities close. If your sovereignty makes you haughty, then look to the greatness of God’s kingdom above you, at his power over your own life, which is far beyond anything you possess. That will subdue your recalcitrance, restrain your sword, and bring you back to your senses. Beware of exalting yourself in the face of God’s majesty or of imitating his power. God abases every tyrant and degrades all who show pride.

2.53.4 Render God justice and render people justice against yourself, your close family, and those whom you favor among your subjects. Otherwise, you will have oppressed. Whoever oppresses God’s servants, God, not his servants, will be his adversary, and whoever has God for adversary will find his arguments void. He will find himself at war with God until he desists and repents—nothing calls more strongly for God’s blessings to be rescinded and his punishment to be hastened than persistent oppression. Let the way most dear to you be the most moderate in truth, the most universal in justice, and the most far reaching in achieving your subjects’ satisfaction. The people’s dissatisfaction washes away the satisfaction of the elite, while the elites’ dissatisfaction is not significant when the people are satisfied. In fact, there are none among a ruler’s subjects more burdensome in times of ease, less helpful in times of trial, more opposed to equity, more importunate in demands, less grateful for gifts, more petulant when denied, and less patient in the face of calamities than the elite. The support of religion, the majority of Muslims, and the armies with which to combat enemies come from the common people of the community. Let your attention be focused on them, let your inclination be toward them.

2.53.5 Loathe and distance those who persist in exposing other people’s shame. Everyone possesses faults, and it behooves the ruler, more than any other, to conceal them. Do not seek to unearth a shame that is hidden from you, for your charge is to cleanse what is exposed—it is for God to judge the hidden. Conceal people’s shame as much as you are able, and God will conceal the things you wish to conceal about yourself from your subjects. Unbind the people from knots of rancor and sever yourself from ropes of vengeance. Close your eyes against things you should not inspect. Do not be hasty to uphold a slanderer, for the slanderer deceives, even when he comes in the guise of a well-
بالناصحين. ولا تدخل في مشورتك بخلياً يعدكم بك عن الفضيل ويعدك الفقر ولا جاناً يضعفك عن الأمور ولا حرصاً يزين لك السحر بالجور فإن البخيل والجنيح والحرص غرارٌ شتى يجمعها سوء الظن بالله.

شّر وزناتك من كان بالأشارات قبله وزيرًا ومن شركهم في الآثام فلا يكون لك ببطانة فإنهم أعوان الأئمة وإخوان الظلمة وأنتم واجب فيهم خبر الخلف ممن له مثل آرائهم وتفاذاهم وليس عليه مثل آصارهم وأوزارهم، ممن لم يعاون ظالمًا على ظلمه ولا آمنًا على إمه أوئلك أخفٌ عليك مؤونة وأحسن لك معونة وأحني عليك عطانًا وأقل لغيرك إنّما أتَّنصّ أولئك خاصةً لخوائتك وحفلاتك. ثمّ ليكن آثرهم عندك أقولهم مبكر الحقّ لك وأقلّهم مساعدة فيما يكون منك ما كره الله لأولياته واقعاً ذلك من هواك بحتر وآلت في الورع والصدق ثم رضعت على آليّة ركوب ولا ينتزح بباطل لم تفعل فإن كثرة الإطراء تحدث الزهو وتدني من العزة. ولا يكونن الحسن والمسيء عندكم بمثابة سواء فإنّ في ذلك تزهيداً لأهل الإحسان في الإحسان وتدربياً لأهل الإساءة على الإساءة وألزم كلّاً منهم ما ألزم نفسه.

2.53.6 وآلم أنه ليس شيء بأدعي إلى حسن ذهن والبرهنة من إحسانه إليه وتغفيه الموئون عنهم وترك آثاره إياهم على ما ليس له قبلهم فليك منك في ذلك أمر يجمع لك به حسن الظن يرعبه فإن حسن الظن يقطع عنك نصاب طويلَ وإن أحق من حسن الظن به لدّ حسن بلاؤك عنه وإن أحق من ساء الظن به فمن ساء بلاؤك عنه ولا تتقض ستة صالحة عمل بها صدور هذه الآثام وأجتمعت بها الأئمة وصلحت عليها الرعية ولا تحقّق ستة تضرّ بشيء من ماضي تلك السين فيكون الأجر من سبّاً والوزر علىك بما نقضت منها. وأكثر مدارسة العلماء ومثاففة الحكفاء في تثبت ما صلح عليه أمير بلادك وإقامة ما استقام به الناس قبلك.

الن، ش، ي، ه: كذا. م: أضيفت (وأتامهم).
wisher. Do not appoint as counsellor a miser who will stem your generosity, who will alarm you with the specter of poverty, or a coward who will weaken your resolve in the face of combat, or a glutton who will render attractive the tyranny of avarice. Miserliness, cowardice, and greed are diverse temperaments united by a common lack of trust in God.

The worst people you could choose to serve as your viziers are those who served as viziers for evil rulers before you, who were their partners in crime. Do not include them among your courtiers, for they are supporters of criminals and brothers to tyrants. You will find excellent choices among similarly astute and equally effective men who are not encumbered by wickedness and sin, who have never supported a tyrant in his tyranny or a criminal in his crime. They will be a lighter burden and a firmer support. They will be more inclined to feel affection for you and less inclined to feel esteem for another. Take them as your confidantes, keep them by your side in private assemblies and public gatherings. Favor above all the one who most often tells you bitter truths, who least often supports actions that God dislikes—especially from his chosen ones—and who does so without pandering to your wishes. Embrace people of restraint and truth. Train them never to flatter, never to lavish upon you undue praise. Too much praise generates vanity and propels the praised one toward pride. Do not give the good and the evil equal consequence. That would discourage the good from doing good and encourage the evil to do evil. Keep each person in the position that befits him.

2.53.6 Know that nothing helps build a stronger bond of trust between a ruler and his subjects than when he is good to them, lightens their burdens, and does not coerce them. You should endeavor to achieve a manner of governance that includes trust in your subjects, for trust will terminate longstanding apprehensions. It is also important to remember that the person whom you have tested and found trustworthy is the one who most deserves your trust. In contrast, the person whom you have tested and found untrustworthy is the one who most deserves your mistrust. Do not end any pious tradition enacted by leaders of this community that has created harmony among your subjects and helped them prosper. Do not introduce any new tradition that harms traditions of the past. If you do, those who established the earlier traditions will be rewarded for establishing them, and you will be punished for ending them. Devote time to understanding this aspect—study with scholars and converse with sages about consolidating the prosperity of your lands and perpetuating earlier practices that ensured success for the people.
فمنها جنود الله ومنها كتّاب العالّة والخاصة ومنها قضّة العدل ومنها عال الإنصاف والرفق ومنها أهل الجزيرة والخروج من أهل الذمة ومسلمة الناس ومنها النجار وأهل الصناعات ومنها الطبقه السفلى من ذوي الحاجة والمسكنة. وكلٌّ قد سمي الله سمحه ووضع على حدّه وفرصته في كابه أو سٌنّةٌ نبيّة صلى الله عليه وآله وعهدًا منه عندما محفوظًا. فما جنود بذبذله حاصون العالمة وزين الولاية وعر الدين وسبل الأمن وليس تقوم الرعية إلا بهم. ثم لا قوام للجنود إلا بما يخرج الله لهم من الخراج الذي يقولون به في جهاد عدَّهُم ويعتدلون عليه فيما أصحابهم ويكون من وراء حاجتهم. ثم لا قوام لهذين الصنفين إلا بالصنف الثالث من القضاة والعمال والكلاب لما يحكمون من المعامل ويجمعون من المنافع ويلمرون عليه من خواص الأمر وعوامته. ولا قوام لهم جميعًا إلا بالتجار وذوي الصناعات فيما يجتمعون عليه من مراقبيهم ويقيمونه من أسوائهم ويكفرونهم من الترق بيدهم مما لا يبلغه رفق غيرهم. ثم الطبقه السفلى من أهل الحاجة والمسكنة الذين يحق رفعهم ومعونتهم. وفي الله لكل سعة و لكل على الوالي حقّ بقدر ما يصلحه.

2.53.8 فولم نجند كأنصحهم في نفسك الله ورسله والإمام جيّباً وأفضلهم حلماً ممّن يبطئ عن الغضب ويستريح إلى العذر ويروف بالضعفاء ويبقى على الأقوياء وممّن لا يثيره العنف ولا يقعده به الضعف. ثم آلافي بذوي الأحساب وأهل البيوت الصالحة والساويا الحسنة ثم أهل النجدة والشجاعة والسخاء والسامحه فإنهم جماع من الكرم وشعب من العرفة. ثم تتقف من أمرهم ما يتقفده الوالدان من ولدهما ولا يتفقّف في نفسك شيء قولهم به ولا تحترم لطفتهم به وإن قيل فإنه داعية لهم إلى بذل النصيحة لك وحسن الظنّ بك ولا تدع تتقف لطيف أمرهم أكثراً على...
Know that the subject population consists of categories of people, each category sustained by the others and in need of the others. The categories are these: soldiers who fight in God’s cause, scribes who write for the public or for the elite, judges who dispense justice, administrators who work with equity and compassion, members of the protected peoples and the conquered who have converted to Islam and who pay the poll tax and land tax, merchants and artisans, and the lowest category, the poor and needy. God has prescribed a role for each, drawing boundaries through the laws mandated in his Book and in the practice of his Prophet. This is a covenant from him, one that we preserve. Soldiers serve with God’s permission as a fortress for the public, the ornament of the realm, the might of religion, and the path to security—the public can be sustained only through them. Soldiers, in turn, are sustained by the land tax that God has ordained to be used for their maintenance, through which they gain the strength to fight their enemy, and upon which they depend to improve their living conditions and fulfill their basic needs. These two groups are sustained by the third—judges, tax collectors, and administrators, who draw up careful contracts, collect taxes, and are entrusted with affairs of private and public utility. All these groups are sustained by the merchants and artisans who gather together the stuff of life, set up markets, and suffice the other groups in their daily needs with services that no one else can perform. Then comes the lowest category, the poor and needy, who merit help and aid. God’s grace encompasses all. Each group has rights that the governor should uphold to the best of his ability.

Place in charge of your soldiers the man who, in the service of God, his Messenger, and your Imam, has kept his pockets clean, who is the most forbearing, a man who is slow to anger, happy to pardon, compassionate with the weak, and harsh with the mighty, who is neither quick to violence nor restrained by weakness. Select for leadership people of noble lineage who belong to virtuous families and have performed many good deeds. Look for people of valor, courage, generosity, and benevolence, for they are storehouses of nobility and wellsprings of honor. Afterward, keep an eye on their affairs as parents keep an eye on their children. Do not consider excessive the benefits you bestow on them in order to strengthen them. Do not consider trivial the little kindnesses you have habituated them to. All this motivates them to wish

---
1 Lit. “who is the sincerest of pocket” (anstahahum...jayban), where “sincere” refers to “clean,” meaning trustworthy and not corrupt. R 3:172; B 898.
2 Lit. “make cling to” (alṣiq), i.e., “make” the leadership of the army “cling to” people who possess these attributes. B 900; H 17:53; R 3:180–181.
 cứngها فإن للسِّير من طفلك موضعًا ينتمعون به والجسم موقعًا لا يستغنون عنه وليكن آخر رؤوس جنودك عنك من واساهم في معوته وأفضل عليهم من جدته بما يسعهم ويسع من وراءهم من خُلوه أهليهم حتى يكون همهم هما واحدًا في جهاد العدو فإن عطفك عليهم يعطي قلوبهم عليك ولا تصح نصيحتهم إلا بخيطتهم على ولاية أمرهم وقلّة استقبال دولهم وترك استبطة أنقطاع مدتهم أفافح في آمالهم وأواصل من حسن الشعور عليهم وعديد ما أبلغ ذوي البلاء منهم فدّى كثرة الذكر لحسن فعاهم به البذاع وفرضي النراك إن شاء الله ثمّ أعرف لكل أمر منهم ما أبلغ ولا تضمن بأمراء إلى غيره ولا تقتصرن به دون غاية بلائه ولا يدعونك شرف أمراء إلى أن تعظّم من بلائه ما كان صغيرًا ولا ضعة أمراء إلى أن تسترقص من بلائه ما كان عظيماً.

وأردّ إلى الله ورسله ما يطلحك من الخطرب ويشيّب عليك من الأمور فقد قال سبحانه لقوم أحب إرشادهم أي أيها الذين آمنوا أطيعوا الله وأطيعوا الرسول وأولي الأمر منك فان تأثعتم في شيء فردوه إلى الله والرسول فإن بالله الأخ محمد كتابه وأرد إلى الرسول الأخ بسنته الجامعة غير المنفرة.

2.53.9 ثم اختير الحكم بين الناس أفضل رعيتكم في نفسكم ممن لا تضييق به الأمور ولا تحكى الخصوم ولا يقتاد في الزلة ولا يحصرون من القيء إلى الحق إذا عرفه ولا يشرف نفسه على طموع ولا يكتفي بدنى فيهم دون أقصاه أوقفهم في الشهابات وآخذهم بالحج وأقلهم تبرداً بمرافعه الخصم وأصرهم على تكشّف الأمور وأصرهم عند إيضاح الحكم ممن لا يزدهره إطرا ولا يستميله إغراء وأولئك قليل. ثم أكثر تعاهم قضاياه وآفسح

١ م، ي، ومصححة في ش، ونسخة في ن: كذا أصل ش، ن: «تضييفن» ٢٠، م، ي، ومصححة في ه: كذا ش: وأصل ه: (يضلعلك) ونسخة في ش: (يعضلك).
you well and place their trust in you. Do not be remiss in keeping an eye on their small affairs, relying solely on your inspection of greater ones. There are places where small kindnesses benefit, just as there are circumstances in which people cannot survive without more substantial support. Among the officers of your troops, give preference to those who give the troops steady assistance, and give your troops the means to sustain themselves and the families they leave behind. Do all this until their aspiration becomes as one—to fight the enemy. Your kindness will attract their hearts to you. Unless they are devoted to their commanders, unless they find their control not burdensome and their continuing tenure acceptable, they will not be sincere in service. Encourage their hopes, praise them profusely, and be generous in mentioning the great services of those who have rendered these services. God willing, your frequent praise of their deeds will encourage the bold and inspire the timid. Recognize each man’s service, do not attribute one man’s service to another, and do not fall short in articulating the extent of his service. A man’s eminence should not prompt you to glorify his trifling service, and another’s humble position should not prompt you to belittle his great deed.

Refer to God and his Messenger the problems that make you stop in your tracks, the matters that you find obscure. God has said to a people whom he wished to set right, «Believers, obey God, obey the Messenger, and the people in command among you. If you disagree over something, refer it to God and the Messenger.»1 Referring something to God is to abide by the clear text of his Book. Referring something to the Messenger is to abide by his agreed upon Sunnah, keeping away from what is disputed.

2.53.9 Select the man you deem the most excellent among your subjects to judge between the people: a man who will not be overwhelmed by lawsuits or angered by litigants, who, upon recognizing the truth, will not persist in error or hesitate to revert to what is right, whose heart is not drawn to greed, who is not satisfied with superficial understanding but goes the full course, the most cautious when encountering points of doubt, the one who puts the most emphasis on evidence, the one who is least wearied by having to question litigants, who is the most patient in probing truths, and the most decisive in determining when the truth has become clear, the one who does not strut when he is praised, and is not seduced by temptations. Such men are rare. Once you have appointed a judge, moreover, exercise vigilance in checking his judgments. Pay him generously to remove his wants and to reduce his need to appeal to others. Give him

---

1 Qurʾan, Nisāʾ 4:59.
الله في البذل ما ينفع علّته وتقلّ معه حاجته إلى الناس وأعطه من المنزلة لديك ما لا يطمغ فيه غيره من خاصّتك لآمن بذلك أُغتيال الرجال له عندك. فأنظر في ذلك نظراً بليغاً فإن هذا الدين قد كان أسيئاً في أيدي الأشّار يدخل فيه بالهوية وتطلب به الدنيا.

2.53.10 تمّ أنظر في أمور عّمّاك فاستعملهم أختباراً ولا ترّفِّهم محااباة أو ثّورة فإنّها جمع من شعّب الجوهر والخيانة. وتوّجّ منّهم أهل التجربة والخليج من أهل البيوت الصالحة والمقتّد في الإسلام المتقدّمة فإنهم أكرم أخلاقاً وأصحّ أعراضاً وأظلّ في المطامع إسراً وأبلغ في عواقب الأمور نظرًا. ثمّ أثب أنّهم الأزرق فإن ذلك قوة لهم على استصلاح أنفسهم وغنى لهم عن تناول ما تحت أيديهم وحّجه عليهم فإن خالفوا أمرك أو تَمْلَوا أمانتك.

2.53.11 وتفقد أمّالهم وأبعث العيون من أهل الصدق والوفاء عليهم فإنّه تعالى في السّائر لأمورهم حدوة لهم على استعمال الأمانة والرفق بالرعية. وتحفظ من الأعوان فإن أحد منهم بسط يده إلى خيانة أجمعهم بها عليه عندك أخير عيونك أكثفت بذلك شاهداً فبسطت عليه العقوبة في بدنه وأخذته بما أصاب من عمله ثمّ نصبته بمقام المذلة ووسّعته بالخيانة وقبلته عرار التهمة.

الله في البذل ما ينفع علّته وتقلّ معه حاجته إلى الناس وأعطه من المنزلة لديك ما لا يطمغ فيه غيره من خاصّتك لآمن بذلك أُغتيال الرجال له عندك. فأنظر في ذلك نظراً بليغاً فإن هذا الدين قد كان أسيئاً في أيدي الأشّار يدخل فيه بالهوية وتطلب به الدنيا.
a high station by your side, such that none of your associates dare to slander him and that he be secure against harm threatened him by prominent men. In sum, be vigilant in your inspection of the dispensation of justice. In recent times, our religion has become a prisoner in the hands of the wicked, who have abused it to further their passions, and who, through it, have sought worldly gain.¹

2.53.10 Scrutinize the affairs of your administrators. Test people, then employ them. Do not make appointments based on caprice or nepotism, for these two attributes bring together all kinds of oppression and dishonesty. Seek individuals with experience and modesty from virtuous families who have precedence in Islam, for they possess nobler character and greater honor, are less prone to greed, and have keener anticipation of consequences. Award them a generous livelihood, for that will strengthen their prosperity and inhibit them from misappropriation. Moreover, that can also be used to shame them if they disobey your command or breach your trust. Exercise vigilance regarding their activities and send truthful and loyal observers to clandestinely observe what they do. If they know you are keeping an eye on them, this will encourage them to be honest and compassionate toward their subjects. Be watchful too with regard to your aides. If an administrator stretches his hands toward illicit gains, and if all your observers’ reports concur, consider their testimony enough to indict. Subject the man to corporeal punishment and chastise him for abusing his authority. Degrade him, brand him as a thief, and garland him with shameful expulsion.

2.53.11 Exercise vigilance in the matter of the land tax and ensure that those who pay it prosper. In its prosperity and in theirs lies the prosperity of all other categories of people. In fact, no one prospers unless taxpayers prosper, for everyone’s prosperity depends on the land tax and on those who pay it. Let your concern for the land to thrive be greater than your concern for collecting abundant land tax—the land tax can be collected only when the land thrives. A governor who seeks to collect the land tax without ensuring the land’s productivity destroys the country and brings death to the people; moreover, his rule will not last. If the people complain that the tax burden is too heavy, if they complain of blight, or lack of irrigation, or insufficient rain, or if their lands have been inundated by floods, or ruined by drought, you should reduce their

¹ Ḥ 17:60: the line about religion becoming a prisoner is a criticism of ‘Uthmān’s judges and governors; in the line, certain particles (fa-inna ... qad kāna) grammatically denote a recent past.
شيء خفيفت به المؤونة عينهم فإنه ذهرب قرورون به عليك في عمار بلادك وتزني وللا ين
مع السجلاك حسن ثمانه ومنجب باستفاضة العدل فيهم معتمدًا فضل قوتهم بما
ذُرِرتً عليههم من إجاما لهم وثقة منهم بما عودتهم من إدلك عليهم في رفلك
هم. فربما حدث من الأمور إذا عولت فيه عليهم من بعد أختحو طيبة أنفسهم به
فإن العُمران محمل ما حملته. وإنما يؤقب خراب الأرض من إعواز أهلها وإنما يُعَزَ أهلها
لإشراف أنفس الولاة على الجمع وسوء ظنهم بالبقاء وقلة أنتفاصهم بالعمر.

2.53.12 ثم أنظر في حال كُناك قُل على أمورك خيرهم وأخص رسائلك التي تدخل
فيها مكائد وأسرارك بأجمعهم لوجود صالحة الأخلاق مِن لا تبتُره الكرامة فيجترئ
بها عليك في خلاف لك بضعة ملأ ولا تقصر به الغفلة عن إيراد مكتبات عمالك
عليك وإصدار جواباتها على الصواب عنك وفيما يأخذ لك وبطعن منك ولا يضِع
عقدًا اعتننق كل ولا يعجز عن إطلاق ما عقد عليك ولا يجهل مبلغ قدر نفسه في
الأمور فإن الجاهل يقدر نفسه يكون بقدر غيره أجهل. ثم لا يكتنَّا أن يكون إياهم
على فرستك وأستنتماك وحسن الظنُّ منك فإن الراحلا يتعرفون لفرضات الولاة
بتصضعهم وحسن خدمتهم ليس وراء ذلك من النصيحة والأمانة شيء ولكن أكتبهم
بما ولوا للصالحين قبلك فأعمد لأحسمهم كان في العامَّة أثراً وأعرفهم بالأمانة وجهًا فإن
ذلك دليل على نصيحتك لله ومن وليت أمره. وأجعل لرأس كل أمر من أموركً أسا
منهم لا يقهره كبرها ولا يشمث عليه كثيرها. ومما كان في كنانك من عيب فتفاغبب
عنه أزْمته.
tax burden and improve their living conditions. Do not let the fact that you had to reduce taxes weigh you down—think of the lost monies as a loan that the farmers will repay manifold by cultivating your lands and enriching your governorate. Besides, you will earn their heartfelt praise and gain great joy yourself when you give them this full measure of justice. You will ensure enough rations for them by providing this relief, while gaining their trust by orienting them to your fairness and compassion. You may need to enlist their support later, and if that happens, they will willingly shoulder the weight—prosperity has the strength to carry whatever burden you load on its back. Conversely, the land is ruined when farmers become destitute, and farmers become destitute when tax collectors become obsessed with collection—this happens when tax collectors think they will live forever,¹ and do not learn from the exemplary lessons of past peoples.

2.53.12 Next: Inspect the abilities of your scribes and put the best of them in charge of your chancery. Entrust the writing of top-secret epistles in which you outline strategies and transcribe confidential information to the scribe who possesses the best character—choose one whom eminence does not embolden to oppose you in public, and whom negligence does not hinder from presenting to you administrative reports, or issuing appropriate responses, or receiving and disbursing funds on your behalf; choose one who does not undercut the agreements he draws up for you, or fail to take down clauses that go against you; choose one who is not ignorant of his own worth, for such a man is even more ignorant of the worth of others. Do not select scribes, moreover, based on casual impression, blind trust, or plain faith. Men deliberately give a certain impression of themselves to rulers by cunning and by ingratiating behavior that is not always supported by sincerity or honesty. Instead, examine the work they have done for virtuous rulers before you, and single out the scribe who has the best reputation among the common people, one whose countenance is recognized by all as trustworthy. If you take this course, you will prove your devotion to God and to the one who has appointed you to govern. Furthermore, appoint a head scribe to lead each of your chancery’s operations, and choose someone who will not be overwhelmed by a large project or panic when more than a few matters need attention. Remember this: all of your scribes’ faults that you ignore will be attributed to you.

¹ Lit. “have doubts about remaining” (ṣūʾ ẓannihim bi-l-baqāʾ), translation based on R 3:287; H 17:73— I prefer this reading because it leads more naturally into the next line about exemplary lessons, which are in these texts a reference to the death of earlier peoples. Alternative translation, “they are afraid they will not remain long in their posts,” based on H 17:73, who gives both explanations; B 903; F 389.
2.53.13.

- المغضوب عليه.
- المصير والملفت.
- من أهمية الصناعات أوّلهم خيراً المصير منهم.
- والمطارح في بر، وحول، وسهلك وجلال، وحيث لا يلمع الناس، ولا ينمشرون عليها فإنهم سلم لا تحالف بائدهم، وصلح لا تحفظ عائدهم، وتفقد أمورهم بحضرهم وفهي حاوله بلاده.
- وأعلم مع ذلك أن في كثير منهم ضيافًا فاحشًا، ومحا حبيبًا، واحترارًا للمنافع وتحكّم في البيعات وذلك باب مضرة للعامة وعيب على الولاية فأمرون من الاحتكار فإن رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله وسلم منه. وليكن البيع تباعًا سمعًا بموازين عدل وأسعار لا يجف بالفريقين من البائع والمبتاع فن قارف حكمة بعد نهيك إياه.
- فنكلًا وعاقب في غير إسلاف.

2.53.14.

- الله أنت الملك في الطبقات السفلى، من الذين لا حيلة لهم، والمتساقين، والمحتاجين.
- والبسالة، وال زمن، فإن في هذه الطبقة قانوناً، ومبروًراً، واحفظ الله ما استحفظ من حقه.
- فيهم وأجعل لهم قسمًا من بيت مالك وقسمًا من غلال صناعي الإسلام في كل بلد.
- فإن الأقصى منهم، مثل الذي للأند، وكل قد استرعيت حقه فلا يشغله عليهم بطر،
- فإليك لا تعيد بتضيع النافع لإحكام الكثير المحتمل. فلا تضحي همك عليهم ولا تصر خذلك، لهم وتفقد أمور من لا يصل إليه منهم من تقتحوه العيون وتحقر الرجال، فنفرغ.
- لأنه لا يسدغ من أهل الخصبة والتواضع، فليس ذلك أموهم، ثم أعمل فيه بالإذاع.
- إلى الله سباعته يوم تلقاه، فإن هؤلاء من بين الرعية أحرج إلى الإنصاف من غيرهم، وكل
- فأعذر إلى الله تعالى في تأديه حقه إليه. وتعهد أهل اليمين، وذوي الرقة في السنّ ممن لا.
2.53.13 Next: Be good to merchants and artisans and instruct your officers to be good to them as well, including those who reside in your towns, those who travel to sell their wares, and those who profit by physical labor. These workers increase everyone’s benefits and provide them with goods. They procure merchandise from isolated and faraway places, from the land and the sea, from the plains and the mountains, from places where people never gather in large numbers and locations where others dare not go. They are peaceful folks from whom no attack is to be feared, docile people from whom no treachery is to be expected. Keep a watch on the prosperity of their affairs in your town as well as in the peripheries of your land. Know also, however, that many merchants can be excessively stingy and monstrously avaricious. They hoard grain and fix prices. These things harm the common people and stain the reputation of rulers. Forbid hoarding, for the Messenger forbade it. Ensure that trading is peaceful, scales are balanced, and prices are set at levels that harm neither buyer nor seller. If someone dares to hoard after you have publicly forbidden it, make an example of him and punish him, but here, too, not in excess.

2.53.14 Beware God’s wrath, and never, ever forsake the people of the lowest strata who have no means—the poor, the destitute, the wretched, the suffering, and the disabled. In this category, too, are the beggar and the suppliant. Protect their rights for the sake of God, for he has entrusted them to you. Set aside for them a share from the common treasury and, in every town, a share from the produce of public lands won in battle by the Muslim army. The indigent in far-off lands have the same right as those who live near you; you are responsible for securing the rights of all. Do not let any kind of pomp and ceremony distract you from attending to the needy. You will not be excused for neglecting small petitions, even if you attend assiduously to the large and important ones. Do not repudiate your solicitude for the poor or avert your face from them in contempt. Keep a check on the welfare of those who do not have direct access to you, people whom eyes disdain and men scorn. Appoint a trusted agent, a man who is godfearing and humble, to care for their needs particularly. Have him bring you their concerns and respond to them in a manner that will earn you God’s pardon on the day you meet him. Of all your subjects, these are most in need of your justice. Render to each of your subjects his rights in a manner that will earn you God’s pardon! Take care of the orphan and the elderly who have no means of support and cannot advocate for themselves.

1 Reference to Qur’an, Ḥajj 22:36.
حيلة له ولا ينصح بالمسألة نفسه وذلك على الولاية تقبل والحق كله تقبل وقد يخففه الله على أقوام طلبو العاقبة فصبروا أنفسهم ووقعوا بصدق موعود الله لهم. وأجعل لذوي الحاجة منك قسمًا تفرّغ لهم في شخصك وتجلس لهم مجلسا عاما فتمتعوا فيه لله الذي خلقك وتقعد عنهم جنودك وأعوانك من أحراسك وشركك حتى يكلّمك مکّنهم غير متعن تعني إستم رسل الله صلى الله عليه وسلم يقول في غير مولن (أنا تقدس امّة لا يؤخذ للضعف فيها حقه من القوي غير متعت)، ثمّ احتفل الخرق منهم والعي ونج عنك الضيق والانف يبسط الله عليك بذلك أكاف رحمته ووجب لك ثواب طاعته وأعط ما أعطيت هنيئا وأمنع في إجمال وإعداد.

2.53.15 ثمّ أمور من أمورك لا بد لك من مبادرتها منها إجابة عمالك بما يحيا عنه كابك ومنها إصدار حاجات الناس عند ورودها عليك بما تخرج به صدور أعوانك وأمضى لكل يوم عمله فإن كل يوم ما فيه.

2.53.16 وأجعل لنفسك فيما بينك وبين الله تعالى أفضل تلك المواقيت وأجز ذلك الأقسام وإن كانت كلها الله إذا صرحت فيها النبي واستمث منها الرعية، ولكن في خاصّة ما تخلص لله به دينك إقامة فرضيتي التي هي للخاصّة فأعط الله من بذلك في ليلك ونهاك ووقّ ما تقريّت به إلى الله من ذلك كمالًا غير مُلْئُوم ولا منقوص بالغاً من بذلك ما بلغ، وإذا قمت في صلاتك للناس فلا تكون متفرغ ولا مضيّعا فإنّ في الناس من له العلة ولا الحاجة وقد سألت رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم أنه حين وُجه إلى أيمن كيف أصلي بهم فقال (صلِّ بهم كصالة أضعفهم وكن بالمؤمنين رحيماً).
This responsibility weighs heavily on rulers, but fulfilling rights is no doubt a weighty responsibility—God lightens the burden for those who seek the hereafter, are patient in adversity, and trust in the truth of God’s promise. Set aside a share of your time for petitioners. Attend to them in person, without distractions. Hold public audience and humble yourself therein before your creator. Keep your soldiers, aides, guards, and police officers at a distance, so that people may speak to you freely without anxiously stammering. I have heard the Messenger say on more than one occasion, ⟨A nation in which the weak are not given justice against the strong except by anxiously stammering will never be made holy.⟩¹ Be patient with their coarse language and faltering speech, put aside your prejudice and pride. In return, God will spread for you the wings of his mercy, and decree for you the reward of his obedience. Give whatever you give in a kind and agreeable manner and refuse when you must, with sympathy and apology.

2.53.15 Next: There are certain matters to which you must attend personally. Reply to your administrators when your scribes cannot find a solution. Respond directly to petitions if your aides find them challenging. Get through each day’s work that very day—to each day its own tasks.

2.53.16 Next: Reserve the best of your hours, the choicest parts of your time, for your soul’s communion with God. Indeed, all your hours and times are spent in devotion to God if your intention is sincere and your subjects secure from your harm. The most important acts of devotion you undertake for God’s religion are the mandatory acts of worship, which are for God alone. Offer God your body’s worship both night and day. When you offer this worship—the worship that you perform to gain nearness to God—offer it perfectly and completely, not damaged or flawed, and push your body to its limits. When you stand to lead the people in ritual prayer, you should neither disrespect the prayer nor repel the people, for among them there may be some who are ill or disabled.² I asked the Messenger when he sent me to Yemen, “How should I lead the prayer?” and he replied, ⟨Pray the prayer of the weakest among them—show compassion to all believers.⟩

¹ Hadith cited in Abū Nuʿaym, Ḥilyah, 7:315.
² I.e., pray at moderate speed. You should neither “disrespect (lit. ‘squander’) the prayer” by rushing and not performing the prayer rites as they ought, nor “repel the people” by praying so long that the “ill and disabled” stop coming. B 908; Ḥ 17:93. Similar to § 2.52.
ةّيعرلانعةالولاباجتحٱّنإلفكتّيعرنعكباجتحٱّنَلِّوطُتالفاذهدعباّمأو ّقحلاباشُيوحيبقلانسحيونسحلاحبقيوريغصلامظعيوريبكـلامهدنعرغصيف
. ّقحلاىلعتسيلورومألانمهبسانلاهنعىراوتامفرعيالرشبيلاولاامّنإو
بذكـلانمقدصلابورضاهبفرعتتامس تاجاحرثكأّنأعم
ةلماعميففاصنإبةّلقولواطتوراثئتسٱمهيفةناطبوةّصاخيلاوللّنإّمث
ةعيطقكتّماحوكتيشاحنمدحألّنعطقُتالولاوحألاكلتبابسأعطقبكئلوأ
كرتشملمعوأبرِشيفسانلانماهيلينمبّرضتةدقعداقتعٱيفكنمّنعمطيالو
ةرخآلاوايندلايفكيلعهبيعوكنودمهلكلذأَنْهَمنوكيفمهريغىلعهتنوؤمنولمحي
نمكلذاًعقاواًبستحماًرباصكلذيفنكوديعبلاوبيرقلانمهمزلنَمّقحلامزلأو
ةدومحمكلذةّبَغَمّنإفهنمكيلعلقثيامبهتبقاعِغَتبٱوعقوثيحكتّصاخوكتبارق
يفّنإفكراحصإبمهنونظكنعلدعٱوكرذعبمهلرحصأفاًفيَحكبةّيعرلاتّنظنإو
ّقحلاىلعمهميوقتنمكتجاحهيفغلبتاًراذعإكلذ
2.53.17 وأَمَّا بعَد هذِه فَلا ٜتَثْوَلَّنَّ أَحْتَجَابَكَ عَن رُعْيَتَكَ فَإِنَّ أَحْتَجَابَ الْوَلَاةَ عَن الرَّعْيَةَ شُعْبَةَ مِن الْضَّيْقِ وَقَلَّةَ عَلَمٍ بِالأَمَورِ وَالْأَحْتَجَابِ مِنْهُمْ يَقْطَعُ عَنْهٌمْ عَلَمٌ مَا أَحْتَجَبْوُا دُوَّهَ فِيَصَغْرٌ عَنْهُمْ الكِبْرِ وَبِعَظَم الصُّغُرِ وَيَقِبَحُ الْحَسَنِ وَيَخْسَنِ الشَّيْبِ وَيَبْشَبُ الْحَقَّ بِالبَلَاطِ. وأَمَّا الْوَلَايَةِ بِشَرْلَا لَا يَعْرَفُ مَا تُوَارِي عَنْهُ الْنَّاسُ بِهِ مِنَ الأَمَورِ وَلِبْسَتْ عَلَى الْحَقِّ سُمَاتُ تُعْرِفُ بِهَا ضُرْوَبُ الصِّدْقِ مِنَ الْكِذْبِ. وَأَمَّا أَنْهُ أَحَدُ رَجَالٍ إِمَّا أَمْرُو تَسْتَنْفِكَ الْبَلَادُ فِي الْحَقِّ فَقَ قَيْمَ أَحْتَجَابُهُ مِن وَاجِبٍ حَقٍّ تَعْطِيْهُ أَوْ فَعِلْ كَرِيمُ تُسْدِهُ أوْ مِبَتِّ الفَيْنَ لَمْ أُسْرَعْ كَفْ الْنَّاسِ عَن مِّسَاتِهِ إِذَا أَبْسَأَ مِنْهُ مَتْ أَنْ أَكْثَرُ هَاجَاتِ الْنَّاسِ إِلَيْكَ مَا لَا مُؤْوِيَةَ فِيهِ عَلِيْكَ مِنْ شَكَأَةٍ مُّظَلِّمَةٍ أَوْ طَلِبٍ إنْصَافٍ فِي مَعَاَمَةً
2.53.18 ثُمَّ إِنْ لَلْوَلَّاَءِ خَاصَّةً وَبِطَانَةٍ فِيهِمْ أَسْتَنْتَارُ وَتَطَوَّرُ وَقَلْبُهُ إِنْفَاصٍ فَأَحْسَمُ مَادَّةٌ أُولُوك بِقَطُع أَسْبَابُ تَلِكَ الأَحْوَالِ وَلَا تُقْطَعُنَّ لَأَحْدٌ مِنْ حَاشْيِتِكَ وَحَامِطُكَ قَطْعِةٌ وَلَا يَطْمِعُ نَكَّ كَيْفَ قَدْ عَقَدْيْتَ عَنْهُمْ مِنَ النَّاسِ فِي شَرْبٍ وَأَمْرُ مِنْهُمْ مَشْتَرَكُ بِهِ يَحْلُونَ مُؤْوِيَةَهُ عَلَى عِجْرَهُمْ فِي كُنْ نَكَّ يَطْمَعُنَّ دُنْوَكَ وَعَيْبُ عَلِيْكَ فِي الْدِّينِ وَالْخَيْرَةِ، وأَلْزِمُ الْحَقَّ مِنْ لَزْمِهِ مِنْ القَرْبِ وَالبَعْدِ وَكَنَّ فِي ذلِكْ صَابِرًا مَخْتَساَبًا وَافْقَعَ ذلِكْ مِنْ قَرَائِبِكَ وَخَاصِتُكَ حِيَةً كَيْفَ قَدْ عَقَدْيْتَهُ فِي كُنْ نَكَّ إِذَا كَفَّرَهُ عَلِيْكَ وَأَجْدَلْ عَنْكَ ظَنْنُهُمْ بِإِحْصَارِكَ فَإِنَّ فِي ذلِكْ إِذْعَارًا بَلِّغَ فِيهِ حَاجَتِكَ مِن تَقَوُّيْهُمْ عَلَى الْحَقِّ
2.53.19 وَلَا تَدْفَعْنَ صَلَحَكَ دَعَاكَ إِلَيْهِ عَدْوَكَ وَلَّهُ فِيهِ رَضِيَ فِانَّ فِي الْصَّلَحِ دُعَاةُ الْجَنَوْدِ كَوْرَاحِةٍ مِنْ هِمْوَاتِكَ وَأَمْنًا لِلْبُلَادِ لَكَ وَلَكَنَّ الْحَذْرُ كَلَّ الْحَذْرِ مِنْ عَدْوَكَ بَعْدَ صَلَحِهِ فَإِنَّ الْعَدْوَ رِمَّتَا قَارِبًا لِيَتَغَفُّلُ نَفْذُ بِالْحَزْمِ وَأَتْمُمُوهُ فِي ذلِكَ حَسَنَ الظَّلَّ. إِنْ عَقَدَتْ بِنَبْكَ وَبِكَ عَدْوَكَ عَقَدَةً أَوْ أَلْبَسْتَهُ مَكْتَمَةً فَخْطُ عَهْدُكَ بِالْوَفَاءِ وَاَّرَعَ ذَمْتُكَ بِالأَمَانَةِ وَأَجْعِلْ نَفْسِكَ جُنَّةً دُونَ مَا أَعْطِيتْ فِيهِ لِيَسُ مِن فَرَائِضِ اللَّهِ شَيْءٍ النَّاسِ أَشْدَ

١٠٠ مِ، شَيِءٍ مِهِّيًا مَصْحَحًا فِي نُ. كَأَمْ رُحُوَتُ. (مُؤْوِيَةٌ).
2.53.17 And further: Do not withdraw from your subjects for long periods. A ruler’s seclusion is a kind of constraint, and it leads to his receiving inadequate information about his subjects’ affairs. Likewise, it cuts them off from getting correct information: they soon begin to deem the trivial great and the great trivial, to think the ugly beautiful and the beautiful ugly, and to mix right with wrong. A ruler is human; he does not know what people conceal from him of their affairs; no waymarks distinguish expressions of truth from falsehood so as to enable easy recognition of what is right. So, you can be one of two men: Either you can be someone who gives generously in the way of truth—and if so, why hold back from dispensing a valid right or carrying out an act of generosity in person? Or else you are afflicted with a stingy nature—if that, well, you will see just how soon people stop petitioning you, when they lose hope in your charity! Besides, most petitions do not impose a financial burden. In most cases, they consist of complaints against unfairness or appeals for justice in a transaction.

2.53.18 Next: A ruler has intimates and courtiers who often misappropriate, transgress, or commit acts of injustice. Check their rise by cutting off their access to such acts. Do not award land grants to any of your retinue or relatives. Do not raise their hopes for an estate, because in their exercise of ownership they might harm a neighboring estate’s water supply, or there may be common services whose burden they pass on to others. If you award them such grants, the benefits will be theirs and the blame will be yours, in this world and the next. Compel all people to abide by what is right, whether they are near to you or distant. In this, be patient and seek God’s reward, no matter how your relatives and intimates react. If any of this should weigh on you, look only to the goal, for its outcome will be admirable. If your subjects should suspect you of an injustice, be open and explain your reasons—deflect their suspicions through your candor. If you explain your reasons, you will attain your objective of keeping them on the path of truth.

2.53.19 Never reject a peace treaty when your enemy calls for peace, if it is a course that pleases God. A peace treaty brings relief to your troops, release from your worries, and security for your lands. But stay wary, utterly wary, of your enemy’s treachery. He may have drawn near only because he hopes to make you careless. Act with prudence. Be cautious, not gullible. And if you draw up a truce with your enemy, or if you offer him a covenant of protection, then fulfill your pledge, abide by your pact, and scrupulously protect your agreement. There is nothing among all of God’s mandated acts about which people are more united—despite their various leanings and divided views—
عليه اجتماعًا مع تفريق أهوائهم وتشتيت آرائهم من تعميم الوفاء بالعهد وقد لزم ذلك
المشركين فيما بينهم دون المسلمين لما أسوأوا من عواقب الغدر فلا تغدرن بذمتك
ولا تخينسن بعهدك ولا تخينسن عدوك فإنّه لا يتجزئ على الله إلا جاهل شقيً وقد جعل
الله عهده وذمته آمنًا أفاض في العباد برحمة وحريماً يسكنون إلى منعه ويستفاضون
إلى جواهره فلا إدغال ولا مداشة ولا خداع فيه. ولا تعتقد عقداً تجوز فيه العلل ولا
تعلونّ على لحن القول بعد التأكيد والتوثيقة ولا يدعونك ضيق أمر زملك في عهد
الله إلى طلب أنفساك بغير الحق فإن صبرك على ضيق ترجو أن تفرجه ففضل عاقبته
خبير من غدرا تخاف بثعته وأن تحيط بك من الله في بلبنة لا تستقيل فيها دنياك ولا
آخر بك.

ولأحرتك.

١٨٤٢.٢٥٣.٢١

إياك والدماء وسفكاك بغير حليها فإنه ليس شيء أدع لناقمة ولا أعظم لثبيتة
ولا أخرى بزوال نعمة وانقطع مدة من سفك الدماء بغير حقها والله سبحانه مبتدئ
بالحكم بين العباد فيما تساوكون من الدماء يوم القيامة. فلا تقولين سلطانك بسفك دم
حرام فإن ذلك مال يضيعه ويوهبه بل يزيله وينقده. ولا عذر لك عند الله ولا عندي في
قتل العمد لأن فيه قود البلد وإن أبتليت بخطأ وأفرط عليك سوتك أو يذك بعقوبة
إنه في الوقعة ما فوقها مقتلة. فلا تطمحن بك نحزة سلطانك عن أن تؤدي إلى أولياء
المقتول حقيهم.

١٨٤٢.٢٥٣.٢٠

إياك والإعجاب بنفسك والثقة بما يعجبك منها وحب الإطراء فإن ذلك من
أوقى فرص الشيطان في نفسه ليحقق ما يكون من إحسان الحسن. وإياك والمن على
ريعتك بإحسانك أو التزديد فيما كان من فعلك أو أن تعدهم فتتبع موعودك مخلوقك فإن
المن يبطل الإحسان والتزديد يذهب بدور الحق والخلف يوجب المقت عند الله والناس
قال الله سبحانه: «كُبِرْ مَنْ أَنْتَ مَنْ أَنْتَوْا مَا لَكُمْ فَاعْلُونَ».

ان، ي، ويبدو أصل ش، ونسخة في م: كذا، وأصل م، ونسخة في ش مع كلمة معاً: عذر."
than the importance they attach to fulfilling a pledge. Not just the Muslims, even idolaters in the past adhered to compacts they had agreed on, because they knew the evil outcome of treachery. Never betray a pledge of protection, never break your covenant, never defraud your enemy. Only a wretched fool dares to transgress against God. God has made his covenant, his pledge of protection, a deed of safe conduct that he, in his mercy, has disseminated among his servants, a haven in whose unassailable strength they can find comfort, and within whose protective shelter they can gather. There should be no malice, no deceit, no treachery in the enactment of a covenant. Do not draw up an agreement and then, after you have concluded and confirmed it, claim loopholes, or rely on misinterpretations to retract. Even if you find the confines of an affair in which God's covenant binds you constraining, you cannot seek an unjust way out. Patience accompanied by hope for relief and a virtuous outcome is far better than deception accompanied by fear of the consequences, the fear of God's all-encompassing reckoning. You will not be able to disavow that deception in this world or the next.

2.53.20  Beware of spilling blood without legal cause. Nothing calls down God's punishment more swiftly, or has graver consequences, or causes God's blessings to be taken away faster, or cuts your allotted lifespan shorter, than spilling blood without legal cause. When God commences judgment among his servants on the day of resurrection, he will begin with cases of spilled blood. Do not attempt to strengthen your hand by spilling forbidden blood, for it will actually weaken and enfeeble your power, in fact, it will rout you and end your rule. You will find no excuse before God or me for willful killing—the punishment for that can be nothing but in-kind reprisal. If by sorry chance you kill someone involuntarily, if your whip or hand go too far when inflicting a punishment and cause death, the blood-wit for a blow with the fist or anything stronger is the one mandated for manslaughter. Do not let the might of your authority embolden you to shirk payment to the family of the man you have accidentally killed.

2.53.21  Beware of self-importance, pomposity, and love of flattery, for that is where Satan is most confident of his opportunity to erase the good deeds of a virtuous man. Beware of keeping tally of the favors you bestow on your subjects,¹ exaggerating your deeds, or making and then breaking a promise. Keeping tally nullifies favors, exaggeration extinguishes the light of truth, and breaking promises earns the outrage of God and men. God has said, «God deems it a great outrage when you say what you do not do.»²

¹ Reference to Qurʾan, Baqarah 2:264.
² Qurʾan, Ṣaff 61:3.
2.53.22 إذًا نُبتُكَرْت أو الود أننا إذا استوفت فضفُع كل أمر موضعه وأوقع كل حال موقعه.
وإياك والاستشارة بما الناس فيه إسوة والتفاني عمّا تعمه به ما قد وضح لنا فإنّه مأخوذ منك لغيرك وما قليل تتلكضف عنك أغنيتة الأمور وينقص منك للمؤلام إملاء حميا أنفك وسورة عدل وسطة فذاك غرب لسانك وآختر من كل ذلك بكف البادرة وتأخير السكرة حتى يسكن عضبتك فتملك الاختيار ولتُحكم ذلك من نفسك.
حتى تتكبر همومك بذكر المعاد إلى ربك.

2.53.23 والواجب عليك أن تذكر ما مضى لن تمّدّكم من حكومة عادلة أو سنة فاضلة أو أثر عن نبيّنا صلى الله عليه واله أو فريضة في كتاب الله فتلقَّد abiما شاهدتنا به فيها وتجته لنفسك في أتّاع ما عهدت إليك في عهدي هذا واستوفت به من الحية لنفسك عليك كيلا تكون لعمة عند تسّرع نفسك إلى هواها:

2.53.24 ومن هذا العهد وهو آخره وأنا أسأل الله بعسا رحمته وعظمة قدرته على إعطاء كل رغبة أن يوفّقني وإياك لما فيه رضاه من الإقامة على العذر الواضح إليه وإلى خلقه مع حسن البناء في العيد وجميل الأثر في البلاد وتمام النعمة وتضعيف الكرامه وأن يختص لي ولك بالسعادة والشهادة إنّا إليه راغبين. وسلام على رسول الله كثيرة.

2.54 ومن كتاب له في إسلام إلى طلحة والزبير مع عمران بن الحصين الخراشي وذكر هذا الكتاب أبو جعفر الإسكافي في كتاب المقامات أمّا بعد فقد علمت만 وإن كنتما أي لم أرد الناس حتّى أراكوني ولم أباحهم حتّى باليوتي.
2.53.22 Beware of rushing into things before their time, or hesitating at the opportune moment, of persistence in the face of ambiguity, or weakness in following through when the facts become clear—place each thing in its rightful place and perform every action in its rightful time. Beware of appropriating property to which the common people possess an equal right, or of feigning ignorance of problems you should handle when they are obvious and plain to see. If you transgress, what is in your hands will be taken away and given to another. Very soon, the veil will be removed, and those you have wronged will obtain justice. Control your prideful passion, your violent anger, your brutal hand, and your cutting tongue. Restrain the blade and delay the strike until your anger abates and you regain control and mastery of your will. Know this: You will not master yourself until you remember that you will return to your Lord.

2.53.23 You should study the methods of just governance used by those who preceded you, their virtuous practices, the traditions of our Prophet, and the mandates of God's Book. You have seen how I have put these principles into practice—emulate me in this. Strive hard to follow the path I have laid out for you in this testament. I trust that I have done my duty to guide you and that your heart has now no excuse to follow its passions.

2.53.24 From this same testament, the final section:
With full trust in God's vast mercy and his power to grant every wish, I beseech him to direct us to do what will please him, what he and his creatures deem good, what earns us praise among his servants and acclaim in his lands, what completes his blessings for us and multiplies his favors. I beseech him to end your days and mine in happiness and martyrdom. In God we place our hopes.¹ I end with abundant greetings of peace to God's Messenger.

2.54 From ‘Alī’s letter to Ṭalḥah and Zubayr, sent with ‘Imrān ibn al-Ḥuṣayn al-Khuzā’ī (Abū Ja’far al-Iskāfī records it in his Book of Exhortations, Kitāb al-Maqāmāt):² Although you deny this now, you know that I did not approach the people until they approached me, you know well that I did not demand their pledge of allegiance until they offered it to me—the two of you were among them, among those who approached me and offered allegiance. You also know well

¹ Reference to Qurʾan, Tawbah 9:59.
وأنكما ممن أرادني وبايعني وأن العامة لم تبايعي لسلطان غاصب، ولا حرص، حاضر.
فإن كنتما بايعتمنا طائعين فآرجعا وتوبا إلى الله من قريب وإن كنتما بايعتمنا كارحين فقد جعلتما لي عليكم السبيل بإظهاركم الطاعة وإسراركم المعصية. ولعمري ما كنتما بأحق المؤحرين بالنفيء والكمان وإن دفعهما هذا الأمر قبل أن تدخلوا فيه كان أوسط عليكم من خروجكم منه بعد إقراركم به. وقد زعمت أنتمن أنت دخلت عثمان بن عفان وبينكما من مختلف عني وعنكما من أهل المدينة ثم يلزم كل أمرئ بقدر ما أوسمه. فأرجعا أيها الشخرون عن رأيكما فإن الآن أعظم أمريا العار من قبل أن يجامع العار والعار.
والسلام.

2.55 من كتاب له عليه السلام إلى معاوية
أما بعد. فإن الله سبحانه جعل الدنيا لما بعدها وأبقى فيها أهلها ليعلم أبين أحسن عمالا ولسننا الدنيا خلقنا ولا بسعي فيها أمنا وإنما وضعتنا فيها لتتبث بها. وقد أبلاني بك وأباطلاك في فعل أحدنا جمعة على الآخر فعذت عل طلب الدنيا بتأويل القرآن فطبتني بما لم تَتَقين لدي ولا لساني وعصبتة أنت وأهل الشام بي وألب عالمكم جاهلتم قالتكم قاعدكم فأنت الله في نفسك وناره الشيطان قيادك وأصرف إلى الآخرة وجهك فهي طريقنا وطريفك أوحى أن يصيبك الله بعجل فارعة تمس الأصل وتقطع الداير فإني أولى لك بالله أليه غيرة فاجرة لئن جمعتي وإياك جوامع الأقدار لا أزال باحتك في هه محبب الله بيننا وهو خير الحمدين.

١٤٥، ١٤٦، ١٤٧، ١٤٨: كذا: ه: "غالب". م، ي، وصحيحه في ه: كذا. ن، وأصل: د، ونسخة في م: "العرض".

al-Sharīf al-Raḍī - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
hhttps://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
that every last one pledged without coercion or inducement. If the two of you pledged freely, then you must return to the fold and ask God's forgiveness, and you must do so directly. If you pledged unwillingly, then by pretending to obey while masking your intent to disobey, you have given me just cause to march against you. I swear by my life, you have no special rights over the other Emigrants that let your concealed thoughts justify your actions. It would have been far less grave if you had challenged my caliphate before giving the pledge, than doing this—giving the pledge and then breaking it. As for your claim that I killed 'Uthmān: There are men in Medina who have held back from supporting either of us—let those neutral individuals judge the matter between you and me, then, on the basis of their judgment, let each man among us be charged with what he perpetrated. Turn back from this path now, O sheikhs, while the greatest penalty you face is shame—turn back before shame combines with flames! Go in peace.

2.55 From a letter sent by 'Alī to Muʿāwiyah:¹

God created this world for the hereafter, and he tests its people to ascertain who among them performs the best of deeds. We have not been created to live in this world, we have not been commanded to strive for this world, we have been placed in it in order to be tested. God has tested me through you, he has tested you through me, and he has made one of us a rightful plaintiff against the other. You transgress in your pursuit of this world, relying on deliberate misinterpretation of the Qurʾān, and hold me responsible for something neither my hand nor my tongue has perpetrated. You and the people of Syria wrap its malicious turban around my head, the learned among you incite the ignorant, those standing incite those sitting.² Fear God, Muʿāwiyah, for the sake of your soul, and snatch your halter from Satan's hands! Turn your face to the hereafter, for it is my destination and yours. Beware, lest God strike you with a calamity that will eradicate you and sever your line! I am more worthy than you of swearing an honest oath: By God, if the will of the gathering fates joins us in battle, I shall encamp in your courtyard «until God judges between us—and he is the best of judges»!³

---

¹ Presumably in 36/656, in the lead-up to the Battle of Ṣiffīn, from Kufa to Damascus (see the threat in the last line).
² “The learned” are Abū Hurayrah, Mughīrah ibn al-Shu'bah, and others among the Prophet's Companions who supported Muʿāwiyah. “Those standing” are 'Amr ibn al-ʿĀṣ and Marwān ibn al-Ḥakam. The “ignorant” and “the sitting” are the common people of Syria. F 391; 'A 733.
³ Qurʾān, Ārāf 7:87.
من كتاب له عليه السلام إلى أهل الكوفة عند مسيره من المدينة إلى البصرة أمان بعد. فإنَّها خرجت عن حيَّي هذا إماً ظالماً واَمأ مظلوماً واَمأ باَغيَّاً واَمأ مبغيًّا عليه. وإنَّها أذَّرَ الله من بلغه كتابي هذا لما نفر إلي فكان محسناً أعانني وإنا كنت مسيبًا أستعتني.

ومن كتاب كتبه عليه السلام إلى أهل الأمصار يقتضى فيه ما جرى بينه وبين أهل صفين وكان بدء أمرنا أَنا أَلتقيان والقوم من أهل الشام والظاهر أن نُرَبَينَا واحد وبيَّنَا واحد ودعوتنا في الإسلام واحدة لا نستزيدهم في الإسلام بالله والتصديق بررسوله صلى الله عليه وآله ولا يستزيدونا. الأمر واحد إلاّ ما أختلفنا فيه من دم عثمان وخرج منه يرَاء فقلنا تعالوا نداوي ما لا يدرك اليوم بإطفاء النارَة وتسكن العامة حتى يشتد الأمر ويستجمع نفسنا على وضع الحقّ في مواضعه فقالوا بل نداوي بالكابرة؟ فأبوا حتى

1. al-Sharif al-Radi - 978-90-04-68260-3
2. Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM via Open Access.
3. https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
2.56 From instructions ʿAlī gave to Shurayḥ ibn Hānī when he appointed him commander of the vanguard he sent ahead of his army to Syria:

Be conscious of God every morning and every night, beware the snares of this treacherous world, don't trust her ever, at any time, and know that if you don't restrain yourself from many of the things you love, if you don't recognize the damage they can cause, your passions will lead you into terrible harm. Restrain your soul and forbid it from evil. Control your impulse to erupt when enraged and vanquish your fury.

2.57 From a letter by ʿAlī to the people of Kufa when he marched from Medina on Basra:

I have marched from my hometown as either oppressor or oppressed, either treacherous or a target of treachery. I call out in God’s name to all whom my letter reaches: Come to me! If I am in the right, support me. If I am in the wrong, berate me.

2.58 From an epistle ʿAlī wrote to the garrison towns, narrating what had taken place between him and those who fought against him at Ṣiffīn:

Events began thus: We and the Syrians faced off, both sides believing in the same God, the same Prophet, and the same call to Islam. We were not attempting to increase their belief in God and his Messenger, and they were not attempting to increase ours, our beliefs were already one. What we differed on was the charge of ʿUthmān’s blood, and we were innocent of it. We said to them, “Come, let us approach this objective—which we are not in a position to achieve today—with prudence. Let us first extinguish these burning fires and bring calm to the community. Once we have strengthened our control, we will have the power to disburse justice and put things where they belong.” “No!”

---

1 In 36/657 at the camp at Nukhaylah, near Kufa. In Minqarī’s version (Waqʿat Ṣiffīn, 121–122), the remarks are addressed jointly to Shurayḥ and his co-commander, Ziyād ibn al-Naḍr. § 2.11, § 2.13 are from the same event.

2 In the lead-up to the Battle of the Camel, sent from ʿAlī’s camp close by, in Dhū Qār, in 36/656, with his son Ḥasan and ʿAmmār ibn Yāsir. Text and context in Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 4:499–500.

3 From the content, the letter appears to have been written soon after the cessation of hostilities at Ṣiffīn in 37/657, before arbitration results were declared a few months later. The main Muslim garrison cities (amṣār, sing. miṣr) in ʿAlī’s time were Kufa and Basra in Iraq, and Fuṣṭāt in Egypt. Additional cities in Iran and Central Asia could also have been addressed; they were set up to serve the early conquests and by his time had become permanent and important settled towns in the region.
جندت الحرب وركبت ووقدت نيرانها وحمِّشتُ فلباً ضرَّستنا وإياهم ووضعنا عمالها فينا وفيهم أجابوا عند ذلك إلى الذي دعوناه إله فأجنههم إلى ما دعوا وسارعناهم إلى ما طلبوه حتى استبانت عليهم الخجَّة وأنقطعهم منهم المعدة. فنَّتم على ذلك منهم فهو الذي أعاده الله من الهلكة ومن جَّ، وتمادى فهو الراكس الذي ران الله على قلبه وصارت دائرة السوء على رأسه.

2.59 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى الأسود بن قطبة صاحب جند حُولان
أما بعد فإنّ الوايلي إذا أختلف هواه منعه ذلك كثيراً من العدل فليكن أمر الناس عندك في الحقّ سواء فإنه ليس في الجور عوض من العدل فأجنبب ما تبكي أمثاله وابتذل نفسك فيما أفترض الله عليك راجياً ثوابه ومثنوياً عقباه. وأعلم أنّ الدنيا دار بليّة لِمِنْ يَعْرَفُ صاحبه قطًّا فيها ساعة إلاّ كانت فرغُت عليه حسرة يوم القيامة وأنّه لن يغتنيك عن الحقّ شيء أبداً ومن الحقّ عليك حفظ نفسك والاحتساب على الرعيّة بجهدك فإنّ الذي يصل إليك من ذلك أفضل من الذي يصل بك. والسلام.

2.60 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى العمال الذين يطأ عملهم الجميшка
they replied, “we shall decide it through combat!” and they refused to budge from this entrenched position, until war spread her wings and settled upon her brood, until her flames crackled and burned hot. When she had chewed both sides with her maw, when she had pierced both sides with her claws, then they came soliciting the course we had proposed earlier. We were nonetheless swift to respond and agreed to their proposal, in a way that made the rightfulness of our claim clear and left them bereft of excuse. God will save all who abide by this realization from perdition, but all who persevere in their wrongdoing will be driven back—God will corrode their hearts, and the wheel of evil fortune will descend on their heads.¹

2.59 From ‘Alī’s letter to al-Aswad ibn Qutbah, commander of the garrison of Ḥulwān:²

A ruler’s passions, if they lean in one direction, prevent him from dispensing justice. Let the rights of all people be equal in your eyes, for injustice is never defensible. Stay away from actions you would find deplorable if directed at you. Hope for God’s reward and fear his punishment, and exert yourself to undertake his charge. Know that this world is a domain of trial—no man wastes an hour of his time here without regretting it on the day of resurrection. Remember: Nothing can release you from the obligation to do what is right, especially the charge to protect your soul, and to safeguard your subjects to the best of your ability. If you do, the benefit that will come to you is greater than the benefit that will come to them through you.

2.60 From ‘Alī’s epistle to administrators whose lands his army would march through:³

---

2 This letter could date from any time in ‘Alī’s caliphate, 35–40/656–661, after his arrival in Kufa. The identity of the addressee, named here as al-Aswad ibn Qutbah, is also uncertain. Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd (Ḥ 17:145) says he was not able to ascertain a genealogy for him, and conjectures that the name may be a mistranscription for al-Aswad ibn Zayd ibn Qutbah ibn Ghanam al-ʾAnṣārī, from the ‘Adī tribe. Mīnqārī (Waqʿat Šīfīn, 106) names the recipient of this letter as al-Aswad ibn Qutnāḥ. Ibn Mākūlā (Ikmāl, 7:283), without any reference to ‘Alī or this letter, mentions a man named Abū Mufazziz al-Aswad ibn Qutbah, who took part in the conquest of Iraq; Ḥulwān is located today in the Kermanshah province of Iran.
3 Presumably from the camp at Nukhaylah, outside Kufa, on the way to Šīfīn in 36/657. Mīnqārī’s version (Waqʿat Šīfīn, 125) is transcribed by ‘Alī’s scribe, Abū Tharwān. “Tax collectors,” in the first line, lit., “collectors of the land tax (kharāj).”
من عبد الله علي أمير المؤمنين إلى من مَرَّ به الجيش من جُباية الخراج وعَمَّال البلاد. أَمَّا بعد.

فإِنَّى قد سَيِّرَت جنوداً هِي مَارَّةً بِكم إن شاء الله وقد أَوْصِيَتِهَا بِما يَجِبُ لله عليهم من كَفَّ الأَذى وصِرَف الشَّيْئَة وأَن أَبَأ إِلَى إِلَى ذَمَّتْكِم مِن مَّيْرَةِ الجَيْشِ إِلَّا مِن جَوْعَةَ المَضَطْرَبَ لَّا يَجِدُ بِهَا مَدْهَبًا إِلَى شَيْئَهُ. فَمُكَلَّفوا مِن تَنَاوَل مِنْهُم شَيْئًا ظَلَّلًا عَن ظُلُمَّهُم وَكَفَّوا أَيْدِي سُفَهَّانِكَم عَن مَّضَادَّهُم وَالْتَّعْرَض لَهُم فِيَا أَثْنَائِيْنِهَا مِنْهُم. أَوَّا بِأَنْظُرُ الجَيْشُ فَأَدْفَعُوا إِلَى مَظَالِمِكَم وَعَرَّاكَم مَّا يَغْلِبُكِم مِن أَرْمَهُم وَلَا تَطْبِيْقُونَ دِفْعَهُ إِلَّا بِاللَّهِ وَبِنَجَايَةِ بِمَعْوَنَةِ اللَّهِ إِن شاء اللَّهِ.

2.61 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى كُلِّ بَن زِيَاد النخعيّ وهو عَامِلُهُ عَلَى هُيَتُوْت على تَكَرِّمْهُ. دَفْعَهُ مِن يَتَسَأْرِبُهُ مِن جَيْشِ الْعَدْوَ يَطْالِبُهُ عَلَى الْمَيْرَةِ. أَمَّا بَعْدُ فَإِنَّ تَضِيعَ الْمَرْهُ مَا وَلِيَ وَتَكْلِفَهُ مَا كَنَّى لَعِجْرَ حَاضَر وُرَأْي مَتَّبِرْ. فَإِن تَعَاطِيْكَ الْمَيْرَةِ عَلَى أَهْلِ فَرْقِيسَةِ وَتَعِطِيْكَ مَسَالِكَ الْبَيْنَئِ وَلِينَانُكَ لِيْسَ بِهَا مِن يَمْنِعُهَا وَلَا يَرَدُّ الجَيْشُ عَنَا لَأَيْ شَعَاعُ. فَقَدْ صَرَّتْ حِضْرًا مَّن أَرَادَ الْمَيْرَةِ مِن أَعْظَمَةِ لَهُ أَوْلَادُهَا نِيْبَ الْمَيْرَةِ وَلَا مَيْرَةُ الْجَيْشِ وَلَا سَدَّ فَثُرْحَةٌ وَلَا كَأْسُ شَكْهُ وَلَا مِنْعٌ عَن أَهْلِ مَصْرَهَا وَلَا مُجَّرٍ عَن أَمِيرِهِ.

2.62 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى أَهْلِ مَصْرَهَا مَعَ مَا لَهُمْ اِمْراَتَهَا.

2.62.1 أَمَّا بَعْدُ فَإِنَّ اللَّهَ سِيَاحَانِه فِيْهِ مَهَدَّدًا تَنَازَعُ المُسْلِمُونَ الأَمْرُ مِن بَعْدِهِ فَوَرَثَهُ مَا كَانَ يَلْقَى فِي رُؤْعِي وَلَا يَخْطَرُ بِبَالِهِ أَنَّ الَّيْثَرَ فَرْجَهُ هذَا الأَمْرُ مِن بَعْدِهِ فَرَتْرَهُ اللَّهُ عَلَى هَلِهِ وَلَهُ عَن أَهْلِ بِيْهُ وَلَا أَنْهَمَ.
From God’s servant, ‘Ali, Commander of the Faithful, to the tax collectors and administrators whose lands my army will pass through.

I have dispatched troops who, God willing, will pass through your lands, and I have instructed them to observe what they owe to God, to refrain from causing destruction or any kind of harm. I repudiate before God and before our compact, any violations by the army except in times of hunger when they have no other way to curb its pangs. Punish anyone who seizes something he has no right to, but restrain too the hands of your rash fools from obstructing the troops or challenging them when they take what I have allowed. I am coming up right behind the army, so bring me any complaints of unjust behavior or hardships which you are not able to repel except through God and me. If God wills it and with his help, I shall correct the wrong.

2.61 From ‘Ali’s letter to Kumayl ibn Ziyād al-Nakhaʿī, his governor in Hit, rebuking him for setting out on a raid while failing to defend his own town from enemy forces:¹

A man’s neglect of what he has been charged with and his zeal in pursuing what others were charged to do reflects palpable weakness and flawed judgment. Your decision to raid Qarqīsiyā, while leaving open the stronghold you are responsible for with no one to defend it or to repel enemy forces, was a rash decision. You opened the gates for enemies waiting to raid your people.² Out in the open, no longer strong shouldered or fearsome of mien, you were rendered powerless to repel a breach or crush an attack, unable to defend your townsfolk or to serve me, your Commander.

2.62 From an epistle ‘Ali sent to the people of Egypt with Mālik al-Ashtar, when he appointed him governor:³

2.62.1 God sent Muḥammad as warner for the world and witness to the truth of the Messengers. When he died, the Muslims quarreled over who was to succeed—by God, the thought had never entered my heart, never crossed my mind, that the Arabs would uproot the caliphate from Muḥammad’s family,
الهيئة عني من بعده فما راعني إلا أن تئي الناس على فلان يبيعونه. فأمسكت يدي
حتى رأيت راحة الناس قد رجعت عن الإسلام يعelon إسن يدعون إلى محق دين محمد صلى الله
عليه وآله وصحبه إن لم أنصر الإسلام وأهله أن أرى فيه ثلثا أو ثلثاً تكون المصيبة بها
على أعظم من فوت ولا يزعم التي إنما هي متع أيام قلائل يزول منها ما كان كا يزول
السراب أو كا يقتشع السحاب فنهضت في تلك الأحداث حتى راح الباطل وذهب
وأطمان الدين وتهبه.

2.62.2

ومن هذا الكتاب
إِنِّي وَلَدَ سَيِّئَاتِي وَأَحَدًا وَهُمْ طَلَاعُ الأَرْضِ كَلُّهَا مَالٌ لَا بَالِ يُ وَلَا أَسْتَوَحَشْتَ وَإِنَّيَـنِ سَلَامًا وَمَرْحَمَةً لِّلَّذِينَ يَتَّقُونَ وَمَا كَانَ مِنْ ذَلِكَ مَالٌ لَّهُ وَلا ضَرَّاءً أَنَّا عَلَىٰ رَبِّنَا ثِلَاثًا صَلِّي لَهُ وَلَحْسُنَ ثُمَّ مَا نَحْسُنَهُ وَلَكِيْنُ الذِّي آسِيَ أنَّ بَلَى هَذِهِ الأَمْرَةِ
سُفِهَاوْهَا وَجَعَّالِها فِي ثَغْرِيْهَا مَالُ اللَّهِ دُوَّالٌ وَعَبْدُهَا خَيْرًا وَالصَّالِحِينَ حُرُبًا وَالْفَاسِقِينَ
حَزْبًا فَإِنَّ مِنْهُمْ الَّذِينَ شَرَبُوا فِي كُلِّ جَاهِلِيَّةٍ وَجَدُّ حَدًا فِي الْإِسْلاَمِ وَإِنَّ مِنْهُمْ مِنْ لِيْسُ
حَتَّى رَضِطَتْ لَهُ عَلَى الْإِسْلاَمِ الرَّضَاعُ فَلُؤَا ذَلِكَ مَا أَكَثَّرَ تَأْلِيعُكُم وَتَأْلِيعُكُمْ وَجَعَمْكُم
وَتَحْرِيضُكُم وَلْتُرِكُّكُمْ إِذْ أَيْتَمْ وَوَيْتَمْ أَلَا تَرَوْنَ إِلَى أَطْرَافُكُمْ قَدْ أَتَقْصَبْتُ وَإِلَى أَمَارَكُمْ قَدْ
أَقْتُصَبْتُ وَإِلَى مَالِلَّكُمْ تُوْيُوْنَ وَأَلَّا نُمِدْ نَزِعْتُ وَرَجْحُمُ اللَّهِ إِلَى قَتَالٍ عَدْوَ كَمْ لا
تَتَقَبَّلُوا إِلَى الأَرْضِ فَتُقُرُّوا بِالْخَسَفِ وَتَبَيَّنُوا بِالْخَلْفِ وَيَكُونُ نَصِيمُكُمْ الأَخْسَ إِنّ أَخَا
الحَرْبِ الأُرُقَ وَمِنْ نَامٍ لَّمْ يُمَّ عَنْهُ. وَالسَّلَامَ.

1م، ه، موصحة في ش ون: كما أصل ش، ن: لحتاج.
that they would seize it from me, and I was stunned when people rushed to So-
and-So to pledge allegiance. I held back my hand, I withheld my pledge, until
I saw that large numbers had apostatized from Islam and were calling for the
eradication of Muḥammad’s religion. I feared then that if I did not show pub-
lic support for Islam and its people, I would see it breached or destroyed. That
calamity would be far greater than losing my right to rule, a rule whose wares
last for a few, short days, then cease to be, as a mirage evaporates or as clouds
disperse. I rose to confront those challenges until falsehood ceased and disap-
peared and religion became calm and still.

2.62.2 From the same epistle:
By God, if I were to face them alone while their legions filled the length of the
earth, I would still not feel uneasy or afraid. I know that I am righteous, and my
certainty is bequeathed by my Lord. I know that they stray while I walk the path
of guidance. I long to meet God, I anticipate and expect his beautiful reward.
What grieves me is the thought that this community could be ruled by the rash
and depraved who take what belongs to God as their own property, treat his ser-
vants like slaves, view the pious as enemies to be struck down and the wicked
as allies, whose numbers include men who drank prohibited drinks, who were
whipped under the aegis of Islam as punishment for their blatant crime, as well
as those who did not accept Islam until they were bought for a paltry sum.1 If
not, I would never go to the trouble to rouse, reprehend, gather, or goad you,
but would consign you to your refusal and your tepid response. Do you not see
that your borders shrink, your cities are conquered, your territories are seized,
and your lands are attacked? March to fight your enemy, may God have mercy
on you! Do not sink to the earth in languor, else you acknowledge your shame
and accept dishonor, and your share will be the vilest and ugliest of all. The true
warrior is ever wakeful. If you sleep, be aware that your enemy does not. Go in
peace.

1 “Those who drank” refers to Walid ibn ‘Uqbah ibn Abi Mu’īt, ‘Uthmān’s stepbrother and his
governor in Kufa (Ḥ 17:227–245—lengthy narrative, after Abū al-Faraj al-Isfahānī and Ibn ‘Abd
al-Barr; B 919; F 393), and/or al-Mughīrah ibn Shu’bah (F 393 again; R 3:226–227). “Those who
did not accept Islam until they were bought” by gifts from the Prophet after the Conquest
of Mecca, refers to Muʿāwiya and his father, Abū Sufyān (B 919), also several members of
Muʿāwiya’s Umayyad clan (Ḥ 17:226), and/or ‘Amr ibn al-ʿĀṣ (F 393; R 3:227; B 919).
63. ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى أبي موسى الأشعري وهو عامه على الكوفة وقد بلغه عنه
شيئه الناس عن الخروج إليه لما ندبهم لحرب أصحاب الجمل.
من عبد الله أمير المؤمنين إلى عبد الله بن قيس، أَمَّا بعده.
فَقَدْ بَلَغَنِي عَنْكَ قُوْلُ حَنَّ رَبِّي، إِنِّي أُفْرَعُوْذًا لَكَ، وَأَشْدَد
مَئَرَكَ وَاخْرِجَ مِنْ بِحْرِكَ وَأَنْدُبُ مِنْ مَعْكَ، فَإِنَّ حَقَّتْ فَأَنْفِدْ وَإِنْ تَفَشَّلَتْ فَأَعْفَعَ وَأَيْمَ الله لَمَوْتِيْنَّ يَحْيِي وَلَا تَنْفِكَ حَتَّى يُخَلَّتْ زِبْدُكَ بِتَأْثِرِكَ وَذَائِبُكَ بِجَامِدِكَ وَحَتَّى تُعِجِّل
عَنْ قَعِدَتِكَ وَتَحْذِرُ مِنْ أَمَامَكَ كَذِكْرَكَ مِنْ خَلْفِكَ، وَمَا هِيَ بِعُمُوْمَيْنَيْنِ الَّيْنِ تَرَجُو وَلَا كِتَابَ الْبَاضِبَةُ الْكَبْرَى يُرْكِب جَلِيلَهَا وَيُذَلِّ سَعْبَهَا وَيُسُحِّب جِبْلِهَا، فَأَعْقَلُ عُقْقُكَ وَأَمَالَكَ أَرَكَ وَخَذْ نَصْبِكَ وَحَفْقُكَ فَإِنَّ كَرَهَتْ فَتَنْحِي إِ لَهُ رَجُبَ وَلَا فِي نُجَاءَ فِي فِتْرَةِ لِتَفْكِينَ
وَأَنَّ نَائِمَ حَتَّى لَا يُقَالُ أَنَّ فَلَانَ وَاللَّهُ إِنَّهُ لَحَقَّ مَعَ مَحِيدٍ وَمَا نَبَلَى مَا صَبَعَ الْمَلَحِدُونَ
والسلام.

64. ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى معاوية جوابًا عن كتاب منه
أَمَّا بعده. فَإِذَا كَانَ حَنَّ وَأَنْفَتْ عَلَى مَا ذَكِرَتْ مِنْ الأَلْفِ طَيْبَةٍ وَالجَمِيعةُ فَفَرَقَ بَيْنَا وَبَيْنَا أَمْسَا أَنْفَا كُفُرُتْمَا وَالْيَوْمَا أَنَا أَسْتَقْفَانَا وَفَتَنْتَمَا وَمَا أَسْلَمُ مُسْلَمَيْنِ إِلَّا كَرَهُمَا وَأَنَّ كَانَ أَنْفَ
From ‘Alī’s letter to Abū Mūsā al-Ashʿarī, his governor in Kufa. ‘Alī had sent word to the Kufans soliciting their support against his opponents at the Battle of the Camel, and he learned that Abū Mūsā was actively dissuading them:¹

From God’s servant, Commander of the Faithful, to ‘Abdallāh ibn Qays.

I am told that you have spoken words that go both for you and against you. When my messenger arrives, roll up your sleeves, gird your loins, emerge from your hideout, and urge your townspeople to fight. If you are capable, get going. If you are a coward, stand down. By God, you will be seized wherever you go and pounded until you are creamed and crushed,² you will be thrown from your seat, fearing what comes at you from the front and from behind. You are not looking at a trivial protest here but at a grave calamity—its camel stallions must be ridden, its restive beasts must be tamed, its threatening heights must be levelled. Return to your senses, man, regain your command, and take your due share and portion. Or, if you find this repugnant, then step aside and leave, taking with you neither greeting nor safe-conduct—we are better off without you! Sleep on. No one will even ask, “Where is So-and-So?” We are righteous, by God, and on the path of right. We care nothing for what the heretics do. Go in peace.

From ‘Alī’s reply to Muʿāwiyah:³

Yes, my clan and yours were on terms of affection and unity, as you say, but what divided us yesterday was our belief and your unbelief, and what divides us today is our right and your wrong. Those of you who accepted Islam did so only because they were forced to, after the foremost Arabians had joined God’s Messenger and formed the vanguard of Islam.⁴ You claim that I killed Ṭalḥah and Zubayr, threatened Ā’ishah, and set up a military base between the two

---

¹ From his camp in Dhū Qār to Kufa in 36/656, in the lead-up to the Battle of the Camel, addressing Abū Mūsā by his given name and patronymic, ‘Abdallāh ibn Qays. In response to ‘Alī’s earlier message instructing him to recruit, Abū Mūsā had given a speech in which, though acknowledging ‘Alī’s caliphate, he cautioned the Kufans against answering ‘Alī’s call to fight; he said he had heard the Prophet say there would come a time when it was better to sit back than to fight, and this was that time, because it was not permitted to Muslims to fight their fellow Muslims. ‘Alī sent his letter with his son Ḥasan to Abū Mūsā in Kufa. Ḥasan dismissed Abū Mūsā from his post and recruited the Kufans to join ‘Alī. B 920; Ḥ 17:246.

² Lit. “... until your cream mixes with your whey, your liquids with your solids.”

³ Presumably sent from Kufa to Damascus in 37/657, in the lead-up to the Battle of Ṣiffīn (contains lines similar to § 2.10). See Muʿāwiyah's letter that prompted ‘Alī’s response in Ḥ 17:251–256.

⁴ After having fought the Muslims in the early years, Muʿāwiyah's father, Abū Sufyān, and most of his clan accepted Islam only after the Conquest of Mecca, when a large part of the Arabian Peninsula had come under Muḥammad’s control. Abū Sufyān’s story in R 3:231–232; B 922.
الإسلام كله لرسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله حزباً. وذكرت أنَّ قتلَ طلحة والزبير
وشردت بعذابئة ونزلت بين المَصرَين وذلك أمر غبته عنه فلا عليك ولا العذر فيه إليك.
وذكرت أنَّك زائر في المهاجرين والأنصار وقد أنْطغعت الهجرة يوم أَسْر أخوك فإن
كان فيك عِقل فأسرفه فإني إن أزرك فذلك جدير أن يكون الله إنا ما بعثي للنقيمة منك
وإن تزرني فكنا قال أخو بي أساً

مُستقيمين رياح الصَيف تضربهم بحاصب بين أعواد وجالود
وعندني السيف الذي أعضضته بجدك وحالك وأخيك في مقام واحد. وإن الله ما
عُلم أغلب القلب المقارب العقل والأولى أن تقول لك إننك رقيت سماء أطلك
مطلع سوء عليك لا لك لا إِنك نشدت غير ضالتك وَرَعِيت غير سامتك وطلبت أمرًا
لست من أهله ولا في معدنها وما بعد قولك من فعلك وقرب ما أشهدت من أعمام
وأخوال حملتهم الشقافة وتميّي الباطل على النجاح محمد صلى الله عليه فصرفوا مصارعهم
حيث علمت لم يدفعوا عظيمًا ولم يمنعوا حريماً يوقع سيوف ما خلا منها الرغى ولم تشاها

البحر: البسيط.
garrison towns.¹ This was an event at which you were not present. Even if an
infraction were committed, it was not committed against you, and you are
owed no explanation. You threaten to attack me with a group of Emigrants and
Allies—in fact, Emigration ended with the battle in which your brother was
taken captive.² Don't bother to make haste, but get some rest—when I attack
you, it will be over. God has sent me to visit his punishment on you. If you attack
me now, then it will be as the Asadī tribesman has said:³

They advance into the burning winds of high summer
As they enter the lowlands,
it blows dust, and pebbles, and rocks in their faces.

I have the same sword with me now with which I severed the heads of your
grandfather, your uncle, and your brother in a single battle,⁴ while you, by
God—for as long as I have known you—have had a hardened heart,⁵ and a
deficient mind. Someone should tell you that you have climbed the ladder to a
height that shows you an evil time ahead, which will go against you, not for you.
You seek another's camels and pasture another's goats, you pursue a thing to
which you have no right, that lies in a different quarry than yours. How far your
words from your deeds! How close your resemblance to paternal and maternal
uncles, who were prompted by their wretched views and unholy desires to chal-
lenge Muḥammad! They were killed in battle, as you know only too well, unable
to defend themselves against the great calamity that befell them, or to protect
their sanctuary from the clash of swords. No battle is empty of sword-thrusts,

¹ The “two garrison towns” are Kufa and Basra.
² Lit. “You say you will visit me.” The subtext is that there are no Emigrants or Allies among
Mu‘āwiya’s supporters; that, in fact, Mu‘āwiya, and his associates are all enemies of Islam.
The Emigrants, mainly from Mecca, who left their homes and emigrated with Muhammad
to Medina, together with the Allies of Medina, are revered for their early and sincere service
to Islam. “The battle” is the Conquest of Mecca, following which Muḥammad said that the
chapter of Emigration was now closed; “your brother” is Yazīd ibn Abī Sufyān, who was taken
captive in a skirmish just ahead of the Conquest. H 17:256; F 394. A different and more convo-
luted explanation is that the “brother” is ‘Amr ibn Abī Sufyān, who was taken captive (by ‘Ali)
during the Battle of Badr earlier, and that the “end of Emigration” is not meant literally but
denotes Mu‘āwiya’s family’s enmity for Islam. B 922. A variant reading here (also B 922) is
“your father”—i.e., Abū Sufyān—instead of “your brother,” and “taken captive” denotes Abū
Sufyān’s defeat rather than actual capture.
³ Verse attributed to the pre-Islamic poet Bishr ibn Abī Khāzim al-Asadi. Ḥ 18:19.
⁴ ‘Alī killed Mu‘āwiya’s maternal grandfather, ‘Utbah ibn Rabi‘ah, his maternal uncle Walīd
ibn ‘Utbah, and his brother Hānzalah ibn Abī Sufyān at the Battle of Badr. Ḥ 19:19; B 792/923;
R 3:234; F 369/394.
⁵ Reference to Qur’ān, Baqarah 2:88.
الهوت. وقد أكدت في قصة عثمان فأدخل فيما داخل فيه الناس ثم حاكم القوم إلى
أحملك وإياهم على كتاب الله. وأمّا تلك التي تريد فإنها خدعة الصبي عن اللين في أول
الفصل. السلام أهله.

65. ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إله أيضا
أمّا بعد. فقد آن لك أن تتنفّض بالصبر من عيان الأمور فقد سلكت مدارج
أسلوبك بأدّعائك الأباطيل والقاص مغروّ الدين والأكاذيب وبانتزلك ما قد علا
عنك وأبتزازك لما أختنز دونك فراراً من الحقّ وسهوّا لما هو أنزّم لك من خلق ودميك
ما قد وعاه سمعك ومُعْبّه صدرك، فماذا بعد الحقّ إلا الضلال؟ وبعد البيان إلا
اللبس. فاحذر الشبهة وأشمِّها على ليست فإن الفتنة طالما أُغْذِفت جلابيبها وأُعِشت
الأبصار ظلمتها. وقد أتاني كتاب منك ذو أفانين من القول ضعفت قوّها عن السّلام
وأساطير لم يَحْكَمْ منها علما ولا حلم. أصبحت منها كالطائش في الدهاس والخابط في
الدّماس وتزّرت إلى عربة بعدة الآلام نازحة الأعلام تقصِّر دونها الأئم ويخادع
بها العيون. وحاس الله أن تلقى المسلمين بعدي صراراً أو ورداً أو أجري لك على أحد منهم
عقداً أو عهداً من الآن فتدرك نفسك وانظر لها فإنك إن فرعت حتّى يهد إليك عباد
الله أرتجح عليك الأمور ومنعت أمرما هو منك اليوم مقبول.

١

al-Sharīf al-Raḍī - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
and you will not find these slow in coming! You go on and on about ʿUthmān’s killers—enter the fold that all the people have entered, then raise to me your plaint against that group, and I shall settle the matter between them and you according to God’s Book. As for your other demand, it is but a toy one gives to an infant to distract him from milk while being weaned. Peace to those who deserve it.

2.65 From another letter sent by ‘Alī to Muʿāwiyah:1

This is the time for you to understand fully the affairs swiftly unfolding before your eyes and take heed. You walked in the path of your forebears by making false allegations, rushing headlong into the paths of deception and dishonesty, claiming what is above your reach, and plundering what is not meant for you. You fled from the truth and denied something that is closer unto you than your own flesh and blood—words your own ears have heard, and your own breast enfolds.2 «But what is there after truth save error>, and after clarity save confusion? Beware of suspicion and the doubts that it brings along! Long has sedition spread its cloak and, with its darkness, robbed eyes of sight! I have received a strange letter from you, filled with contradictory utterances, whose supposedly potent points are too weak to forge any kind of peace;3 in fact, it is stuffed with nonsensical myths that you have clearly not fashioned with any knowledge or maturity. With these proposals, you are like a man sinking into a swamp or stumbling about in a cavern. You attempt to climb a tower that rises beyond your reach, that gives you no waymarks, a tower that is too high even for the soaring kite, as lofty as twinkling Capella. God forbid that after me you should have charge of taking the Muslims to and from their waterhole, or that I should grant you authority now to oversee a single contract or covenant for even one of them!4 Save your soul and look directly to its welfare. If you continue to transgress until God’s servants attack you, all your pathways will be blocked. At that time, you will be denied the chance to offer me what I am willing to accept from you today.

1 Soon after the Battle of the Camel, Muʿāwiyah demanded that ‘Alī confirm him as governor of Damascus, else he would not pledge allegiance. ‘Alī characterizes the demand as a cheap ruse. Ḥ 19:21; R 3:235; B 923.
2 Response to Muʿāwiyah’s letter (not transcribed in the commentaries) after the Battle of Nahrawān in 38/658, proposing that ‘Alī appoint him successor, whereupon he would cease hostilities and pledge allegiance (see also § 2.73). Ḥ 19:27; B 924–925.
3 Refers to the Prophet’s numerous hadiths in praise of ‘Alī, including the proclamation at Ghadir Khumm, which made obeying ‘Alī incumbent on Muʿāwiyah. Ḥ 19:24–25; B 925.
4 Qurʾan, Yūnus 10:32.
5 I translate silm as “peace” (following B 924; R 3:243). If we translate silm as “being Muslim” (following Ḥ 19:25–26), the line reads: “too weak to have come from a Muslim.”
6 The translation is based on B 925; R 3:245.
2.66 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى عبد الله بن العبّاس رحمه الله وقد مضى هذا الكتاب فيما تقدّم تخلُّف هذه الرواية أمامي. فإنّ العبد ليفرج بالشيء الذي لم يكن يفوته ويحزن على الشيء الذي لم يكن ليصيبه فلا يمكن أفضل مما نلت في نفسك من دنياك بلوق لذة أو شفاء غيظ ولكن إطفاء بطل أو إحياء حقًّا.

2.67 ومن كتاب كتبه عليه السلام إلى قَمَّ بن العبّاس رحمه الله وهو عامله على مكة أمامي. فأقام للناس الحجّ وذكرهم بأيام الله وأجلس لهم العصرين فاقت المستفيق وعلم الجاهل وذاكر العالم. ولا ينكر لى الناس سفير إلا لناسائ ولا حطب إلا وجهك ولا تحجّد ذا حاجة عن لائتك بها فإنّها إذ ذُدِتْ عن أربابك في أوّل وردها لم تحدّ فيما بعد على قضائها. وأنظر إلى ما أجمع عنك من مال الله فأصرفه إلى من قبلك من ذي العبل والمجاعة مصباً به مواضع المفاف والخُلافات وما فضل عن ذلك فأحمله إليه لتقومّه فين قبلك. ومّاهر مكة ألا يأخذوا من ساكن أجزاؤه فإنّ الله سبحانه يقول: «سَوَاهَا الْعَاكِفِ فِيهِ وَالْبَارِئُ» فاعاكف المقيم به والبادي الذي يحجّ إليه من غير أهله. وقّعنا الله وآياً كمحبةُ والسلام.

2.68 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى سلبان الفارسي رحمه الله قبل أيام خلافته صلوات الله عليه أمامي. فإنّ ملك الدنيا مثل الحنَّة لين مسّها قاتل سُمّها فأعرض عمّا يعجّك فيها ليلة ما يصحّب منها وضعك هوموهما لما أينت به من فراقها وكن آنس ما تكون بها أحذر ما تكون منها فإنّ صاحبها كلما أطمئن فيها إلى سرور أخذته عنه إلى مخزور.

1 م، ش، ن: كدا،ي، ونسخة في هامش: ه: أضيفت (ولينك سرورك بما قدّمت وأسفك على ما خُلِفت وهمك فيما بعد الموت). 2 م، ش: كدا،ي، م: زيادة في هامش: م أضيفت (وإلى إيناس أزالته عنه إيحاش).
2.66 From ‘Ali’s letter to ‘Abdallāh ibn al-‘Abbās (this letter was recorded earlier with slightly different wording):¹
A man is overjoyed by gaining a thing he was not going to lose and grieved by the loss of a thing he was not going to gain. The choicest thing your soul takes from your life in this world should not be a pleasure indulged or a revenge achieved, but the obliteration of a wrong or the restoration of a right.

2.67 From a letter sent by ‘Ali to Qutham ibn al-‘Abbās, his governor in Mecca:²
Lead the hajj among the people and remind them to revere these, God’s special days. Hold audience every morning and evening, and explain legal rulings to the inquirer, teach the ignorant, and discourse with the knowledgeable. Your tongue should be your only ambassador, your face your only chamberlain. Do not conceal yourself from any petitioner who wants to present his petition—if a petitioner is driven away from your door when he first approaches, you will not be thanked for a subsequent response. Keep an eye on goods belonging to God that have accumulated in your jurisdiction—disburse them among the destitute and the starving in your land, those who are beset with poverty and need; whatever remains, send it to me so that I may distribute it among the people here. Forbid the people of Mecca from charging rent to pilgrims, for God has said, «its resident and the foreigner are equal»³—a resident is one who lives there permanently, and a foreigner is someone who has come for the pilgrimage. May God direct you and me both to perform the deeds that he loves. Go in peace.

2.68 From ‘Ali’s letter to Salmān al-Fārisī, before the time of his caliphate:⁴
This world is like a snake—it is soft to the touch, but its venom is lethal. Turn away from its attractions, for it will be with you only a short while. Shrug off its cares, for you know you will soon depart. Beware of it most when you are most comfortable in it. For each time the dweller finds himself happy in a joyful event, it hurls him toward something he had feared.

¹ § 2.22, see note there.
² From Kufa to Mecca in 38/659, when ‘Ali deputed Qutham to lead the pilgrimage. Tabari, Tārīkh, 5:132.
³ Qur’an, Ḥajj 22:25.
⁴ Salmān moved to Kufa during ‘Uthmān’s reign (23–35/644–656). He died in ca. 35/655 in Madā‘īn (Ctesiphon), near present-day Baghdad. Ḥārūnī (Taṣyrū, 506) says ‘Ali’s letter was in response to Salmān’s letter asking him, “I fear that I may lean toward worldliness, so counsel me!”
69. ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى الحارث الحمداوي:

وَتَمَّّمَّكَ بِكُلِّ الْقُرْآنِ وَأَنْتَشِهَّ أُحْلَلَ حَلَالَهَ وَحَرَّمَ حَرَامَهُ

وَصِدِّقَ بِمَا سَلَفَ مِنَ الْحَقِّ وَأَعْتَبَرَ بِمَا مَضَى مِنَ الْأَنْتَهَى مَا بَقَى مِنَا فَإِنّا بَعْضٌ بعضاً يَشَهِه.

بَعْضَا وَأَخْرَى لَأَحْقَبَ أَوْلُها وَكَلّها حَائِلٌ مَفْارِقٌ.

وَعَظَّمَ آَمَّنَ اَلْلَّهُ أَنْ تَذَكَّرِهِ إِلَّا عَلَى حَقِّ

وَأُحِصْرَذَ ذَكَرَ الْمَوْتَ وَمَا بَعْدُ الْمَوْتِ لَا عِلْمُ الْمَوْتِ إِلَّا بِشَرْطٍ وَثِيقٍ.

وَأَحْذَرُ كُلِّ عَمَلٍ بِمَضْرِبِهِ صَاحِبِهِ لِنَفْسِهِ وَيَكِرَ عَلَى الْمُسْلِمِينَ وَأَحْذَرُ كُلّ عَمَلٍ يُعْمَل

بَيْنَهِ بِالْسَّرِّ وَيُسْتَجِيِّ مِنْهُ فِي الْعَلَّانِيَّةِ وَأَحْذَرُ كُلّ عَمَلٍ إِذَا سَيْلٌ عَلَى صَاحِبِهِ أَنْكِرَهُ أَوْ

أَعْتَدَرُ مِنْهُ.

وَلَاتَ أَتْجَعَ عِرَضُكُ غَرْضًا لِيْنَبَالْقُولِ

وَلَا تَتَبْدِّئِ النَّاسِ بِكُلِّ مَا سَمَعَتْ فَكَفِيتْ بِذلُّكَ كُلُّ دُنْبِي لَوْ لَتْرَدَّ عَلَى النَّاسِ كُلُّ مَا

حَدَّثْتُكُ بِهِ فَكَفِيتْ بِذلُّكَ جَهَلًا.

وَأَكْثَرُ الْغَيْظِ وَأَحْلَمُ عَنْدَ الْعَضْبِ وَتَجَاوَزَ عَنْدَ الْقَدْرَةِ وَأَصْفَحَ عَنْ الْدِّوْلَةِ تَنْكُتُ لِكَ

العَالِقَةِ.

وَآتَصْلِحَ كُلّ نَعْمَةٍ أَنْعِمَهَا الَّلَّهُ عَلَيْكُ وَلَا تُضْيِعَنَّ نَعْمَةَ مِنْ نَعْمَ الَّلَّهِ عَلَيْكُ وَلَا يُرِبْ عَلَيْكُ

أَثْرُ مَا أَنْعِمَ اللَّهُ عَلَيْكُ.

وَأَعْلَمُ أَنَّ أَفْضِلَ الْمُؤْمِنِينَ أَفْضِلُهُمْ تَقْدِيمَةً مِنْ نَفْسِهِ وَأَهْلِهِ وَمَالِهِ وَأَنْكَ ما تَقْدِيمَ مِنْ خِيرِ

يِبَقَّ لَكَ ذَخْرُهُ وَمَا تَأْخُّرُهُ يَلْغِي كَخَيْرِهِ.

وَأَحْذَرُ صَاحِبَةِ مِنْ يُقِيلُ رَأْيِي وَيَنْتَكِرُ عَمَلِهِ فَإِنْ الصَّاحِبُ مُعْتَبِرَ بِصَاحِبِهِ.

وَآسَكَنَّ الْآمَرَ الصَّحَامَ طُبُّهُ فِيْنَ جَمَاعُ الْمُسْلِمِينَ وَأَحْذَرُ مَنَاشِرَ الْعِفْلَةِ وَالجَفْأَ وَقِلَّةَ

الأَعْوَانِ عَلَى طَاطُعِ اللَّهِ.

وَأُقْصَرُ رَأْيِكُ عَلَى مَا يَعَنِّيْكَ وَأَياً كَمَقَاعدِ الأَسْوَاقِ فَإِنْ تَعْدِيْكَ مَحَاضِرُ السَّيْطَانَ

وَمَعَايِضِ الفَتْنِ.

۶۹۲۸۸، ش، ي، ه: كَانَ مَحَاضِرًا.
2.69 From a letter sent by 'Ali to al-Ḥārith al-Hamdānī:

Hold fast to the Qur’an and embrace its counsel. Deem licit what it deems licit and deem illicit what it deems illicit.

Believe in the true messages brought in bygone times,¹ and apply the lessons you learn from the past to what is yet to come. One time resembles another, and the last will catch up with the first—then all of it will end and be gone.

Exalt the name of God, do not invoke it save in truth.²

Contemplate death and what comes after death. Don’t wish for death without surety.³

Beware of every deed that a man finds pleasing when he does it, but hateful when other Muslims do it. Beware of every deed that a man does in private and is ashamed of in public. Beware of every deed that a man denies when asked about it or for which he offers excuses.

Don’t let your honor become a target for the arrows of scandal.

It is a sufficient mark of falsehood that you pass on everything you hear, a sufficient mark of ignorance that you dispute everything you are told. Don’t venture there!

Swallow your rage, be patient in times of anger, forgive when you could punish, and pardon when you have power.⁴ Do this, and the outcome will be good.

Be grateful for each blessing God has bestowed. Don’t squander any of God’s blessings. Let the marks of God's blessings be manifest on your person.⁵

Know that the most generous of believers is the most generous in presenting his life, his family, and his property to God. The treasury of deeds you present will remain in safekeeping for you, the benefits of deeds you hold back will accrue to others.

Beware of keeping company with those of unsound judgment and evil deeds—a man is judged by the company he keeps.

Live in large towns, for that is where Muslims gather. Beware of camps where rashness and vulgarity prevail, where there are few allies in obedience to God.

Confine your opinions to things that concern you.

Beware of loitering in the marketplace—it is Satan’s home and the place where seditions shoot their arrows.

---

¹ I.e., the missions of past prophets. B 927; H 18:43.
² Reference to Qur’an, Baqarah 2:224.
³ I.e., don’t wish for death unless you are sure your deeds will gain you entry to paradise. H 18:44; B 928. Reference to Qur’an, Jun’ah 62:6–7.
⁴ Reference to Qur’an, Āl ‘Imrān 3234.
⁵ Reference to Qur’an, Duḥā 93:31.
وما أكثر أن تتذكر إلى من قُضِّئت عليه فإن ذلك من أبواب الشكر.
ولا تفسر في يوم جمعة حتى تشهد الصلاة إِلَّا فاصلا في سبيل الله أو في أمر تُعذر به.
وأطع الله في جُمل أمورك فإن طاعة الله فاضلة على ما سواها.
وحادث نفسك في العبادة وأرق بها ولا تفتقرها وخذ عفواً ونشاطها إِلَّا ما كان
مكتوبًا عليك من الفريضة فإن لا بد من قضايتها وتعاهدها عند محلّها.
وإياك أن تنظر وتذكّر أن أبصر من رُبٍّ في طلب الدنيا.
وإياك ومُصاحبة الفساق فإن الشر بالشر ملحق.
ووقّر الله وأحب أحباه.
واحذر الغضب فإنه جند عظيم من جنود إبليس.
والسلام.

2.70 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى سهل بن حنيف الأنصاري وهو عامله على المدينة في معنى قوم من أجلها لحقوا بمعاوية.
أمس بعد. فقد بلغني أن رجالًا من قبّلك يتسلىون إلى معاوية فلا تأسف على ما يفوتكم من عددهم ويذهب عنك من مُدَّدهم فكنى لهم غياباً ولك منهم شافياً فرارهم من الهدى والحق وإيضاعهم إلى العمي والجهل. وإنما هم أهل دنيا مقبولون عليها ومُطبعون إليها قد عرفوا العدل ورُأوا وسمعوا ووعَّموه وعلموا أن الناس عندما في الحق إِسوة فهربوا إلى الآثرة فبعدًا هم وعُقَطًا إِنهم والله لم ينفر من جنور ولم يلحقوا بعدم. وإننا لنتغضع في هذا الأمر أن يذَلِل الله لنا صعبه ويسِلِّ لنا حزنه إن شاء الله والسلام عليك.

2.71 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى المندرين الجارود العبدي وقد خان في بعض ما وَلَاه من أعماله.
Always think about those who have less—that door leads to gratitude.
Do not commence a journey on Friday until after the prayer, unless it is to fight in God’s path, or for another urgent matter.
Obey God in all that you do, for that is more important than anything else.
Coax your heart to worship God but be gentle and do not force its compliance—take advantage of it when it first awakens and enjoys its moments of fresh vigor. The exception is the case of mandated acts—these must be performed with regularity at the prescribed times.
Beware lest death seize you while you are fleeing from your Lord in pursuit of the world.
Beware of keeping company with the depraved—vice is drawn to vice.
Extol God, and love those whom he loves.
Beware of anger, for it is one of Iblīs’s most powerful battalions.
Go in peace.

2.70 From a letter sent by ʿAlī to Sahl ibn Ḥunayf al-Anṣārī, his governor in Medina, about a group of Medinans who had defected to join Muʿāwiyah:
I have learned that men from your town are stealing out to join Muʿāwiyah. Do not grieve over the loss of their numbers or supplies! Their flight from true guidance, their haste toward blind ignorance, proves their waywardness and shows that you are well rid of them. They are worldly people, stretching their necks toward wealth and power. They personally experienced my justice—they saw it, heard it, understood it, and realized that all are equal before me in claiming their rights—and they fled from this toward nepotism! Let them go far away and yet farther! By God, they did not leave to escape from injustice or to arrive at justice! I beseech God to make the recalcitrant camel docile and the rough ground smooth. God willing, it will happen. Go in peace.

2.71 From ʿAlī’s letter to al-Mundhir ibn al-Jārūd al-ʿAbdī, whom he had appointed tax collector in a certain district, after Mundhir had embezzled treasury funds:

---

1 Sahl was ʿAlī’s governor in Medina for a short while in 36/656, before the Battle of the Camel, and if the letter is addressed to him, then it was sent from Iraq at that time; it is possible that some people left Medina for Damascus immediately after ʿAlī left for Iraq, in the lead-up to the Battle of the Camel, and the references to witnessing ʿAlī’s fairness fit well with the steps he took to level stipends immediately upon assuming the caliphate. Or, if there is an error in naming Sahl as the recipient, the letter could be from after the Battle of Ṣiffīn in 37/657.

2 Presumably sent from Kufa to Iṣṭakhr, in Fars, where Mundhir was tax collector or governor sometime during ʿAlī’s caliphate, 35–40/656–661. Text and context in Balādhurī, Ansūb, 2:163–164. The follow-up lines about Mundhir were spoken by ʿAlī to Şaʾṣaʾah ibn Şūḥān in Kufa. Yaʿqūbī, Tārīkh, 2:204.
أما بعد. فإنّ صلاح أبيك غرني منك وظنت أنك تتبع هديه وتسلك سبيله. فإذا أنت فيما رقي إليّ عنك لا تدع لهواك أثقيادًا ولا تبقى لأحترقك عتادًا تعمر دنياك بخراب آخرك وتصعل عشيرتك بقطيعة دنيك. ولتن كان ما بلغني عنك حقًا للملعّن أهلك وشمس نعلك خير منك ومن كان بصفتك فليس بأهل أن يسّدّ به ثغر أو ينبذ به أمرًا أو يعتليه. فقد الآئم يشرك في أمانته أو يؤمن على خيانة. فأقبل إليّ حين يصل إليك كتابي هذا إن شاء الله.

والمنذر هذا هو الذي قال فيه أمير المؤمنين عليه السلام:

إنه نظّار في عقلك. مختال في وَرَديه تَفَّال في شراكك.

2.72 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى عبد الله بن العبّاس رحمه الله أما بعد. فإنّك لست بسبق أجلك ولا مرزوق ما ليس لك. وأعليم بأن الدهريومان يوم لك يوم عليك وأن الدنيا دار دُوّل فما كان منها لك أتاك على ضعفك وما كان منها عليك لم تدفعه بقوتك.

2.73 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى معاوية وأما بعد. فإني على التردّ في جوابك والاستماع إلى كتبك لم بيني رأيي وخطئي فراسي وإنّك إذ تحاولين الأمور وتراجعين السطور كالمستقبل النائم تذكره أحلامه أو المتحرّ القائم يبيّنه مقامه لا يدري الله ما يأتي أم عليه ولست به غير أته بك شبيب. وأقسم بالله...
I was deceived about you by your father’s piety—I thought you would follow his guidance and walk his path. According to what I have learned, however, you neither pull against passion’s halter, nor put aside provisions for the next world—you adorn your abode in this world by demolishing your home in the hereafter, you strengthen bonds of gift-giving with kin by severing the bonds of your faith. If what I am told about you is true, your family’s mangy pack-camel and your sandal’s frayed thong are more valuable than you! Someone with your immoral character cannot be expected to fill a breach or carry out a command, he cannot be raised in station, given partnership in matters of responsibility, or trusted not to embezzle. Come to me when my letter, God willing, reaches you.

Raḍī: Mundhir is the one about whom the Commander of the Faithful also said: He looks at himself in glee, preens in his pretty robes, and shines his sandal straps with his spittle.

2.72 From ‘Alī’s letter to ʿAbdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās:
You will not exceed your lifespan or be granted sustenance that is not yours. Know that life alternates between two days—one day is for you, another day is against you. The world is an abode of change—whatever is decreed for you will come despite your weakness, whatever is decreed against you cannot be repelled by your strength.

2.73 From ‘Alī’s letter to Muʿāwiyah:
I attribute to weak judgment and flawed acumen the fact that I exchanged letters with you in the first place and listened to your epistles at all! When you make such demands of me and repeat such lines, you are like a man deep in slumber who dreams false dreams, or like one who stands perplexed, not knowing whether the future will be for or against him! If you are not that man, then that man certainly resembles you! I swear this by God: If I did not have good reasons to hold my tongue, you would have received evidence from it damning

---

1 Possibly part of the same letter sent from Kufa to Mecca in 40/661, parts recorded as § 2.22 (see note there), § 2.41, and § 2.66.
2 Presumably from Kufa to Damascus after the arbitration in 37/658, in the context of Muʿāwiyah’s demand that ‘Alī make him successor (similar themes in § 2.65). “Listened (istimāʿ)” to your epistles” signals the practice of official epistles being read out in a public setting; see also § 2.1.
لولا بعض الاستياء لوصلت إليك مني نوازة تفرع العظام وتبلس الحم. وأعلم أن الشيطان قد شبلتك عن أن تراجع أحسن أمرك وتاذن مقال نصيحك. والسلام.

2.74 ومن حلّك كتابه عليه السلام بين أهل اليمن وربيعته نقل من خط هشام بن الكبي.
هذا ما أجتمع عليه أهل اليمن حاضرها وبداهها وربيعها حاضرها وبداهها أنهم على كتاب الله يدعون إليه ويأمرون به ويجيبون من دعا إليه ومأمر به لا يشترون به ثمنا ولا يرضون به بدلاً وأنهم يد واحدة على من خالف ذلك وترك أنصار بعضهم لبعض دعونهم واحدة. لا يقضون عدهم لمتبتعة عاتب ولا لغضب غاضب ولا لاستدلال قوم قوما ولا لمسكة قوم قوما. على ذلك شاهدهم وغايهم وحلهم وجاجهم. ثم إن عليهم بذلك عهد الله وميثاقه.

وكتب علي بن أبي طالب.

2.75 ومن كتاب له عليه السلام إلى معاوية من المدينة في أول ما بوعله وذكره الواقدي في كتاب الجبل من عبد الله علي أمير المؤمنين إلى معاوية بن أبي سفيان. أما بعد. فقد علمت إعداري فيكم.
enough to crush bones and consume flesh! But know this: It is Satan who prevents you from returning to a better way, or from listening to the words of a sincere counselor. Go in peace.

2.74 From a treaty of alliance that ʿAlī concluded between the people of Yemen and the tribe of Rabīʿah (copied here from a script in the hand of Hishām Ibn al-Kalbī). This is what the people of Yemen, both its townspeople and its country-dwellers, and the tribe of Rabīʿah, both its townspeople and its country-dwellers, have agreed upon: They will follow God’s Book—they will call to it and command by it, and answer those who call to it and command by it; they will not betray it for a price or accept another in its place; they will act as one hand against all who oppose or abandon it. They will support one another—their mission will be one. They will not break their pledge, even if one tribesman hurls rebuke, rage, humiliation, or abuse at another. This agreement has hereby been accepted by all present as well as those absent, mature elders as well as impetuous youths. They are bound to it through God’s pledge, to which all are accountable.

Written by ʿAlī ibn Abī Ṭālib.

2.75 From ʿAlī’s letter to Muʿāwiyah from Medina, when allegiance was first pledged to him as caliph. (It is recorded by Wāqidī in the Book of the Camel, Kitāb al-Jamal): From God’s servant, ʿAlī, Commander of the Faithful, to Muʿāwiyah ibn Abī Sufyān.
You know that I was justified both in my efforts for your clan and in turning away from them, until that which was going to happen, that which could not be repelled, came to pass. The story is long and there is much to be said, but

---

1 Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd (Ḥ 17:65) explains that ʿAlī had witnesses to the fact that the Prophet had cursed Muʿāwiyah as a hypocrite destined for hellfire, and that he chose not to make this information public for fear of Muʿāwiyah’s false retaliation.
2 Rabīʿah and Yemen signify North and South Arabia respectively. Hishām ibn Muḥammad ibn al-Sāʾib al-Kalbī (= Ibn al-Kalbī) (d. 206/821) is the famous genealogist, whose grandfather, Sāʾib fought alongside ʿAli in the Battles of the Camel and Ṣiffīn. Ibn al-Kalbī is the compiler of a lost book titled Khuṭab ʿAlī (Orations of ʿAlī, Ibn al-Nadīm, al-Fihrist, 125). The treaty would have been concluded some time in ʿAlī’s caliphate in Kufa, 35–40/656–661.
3 Reference to Qurʾan, Isrāʾ 17:34.
4 In 35/656.
5 The reference is to ʿAlī’s efforts to negotiate between ʿUthmān, who was from Muʿāwiyah’s Umayyad clan, and the group of Muslims who had come to Medina demanding his resignation and who eventually killed him (H 18:67; B 932). Another, to me less convincing, reading (R 3:258) is that the reference is to ʿAlī’s efforts to appease Muʿāwiyah when ʿAlī first became caliph.
وإعراضي عنكم حتى كان ما لا بد منه ولا دفع له والحديث طويل والكلام كثير وقد أدرد ما أدرد وأقبل ما أقبل شعاع من قبلك وأقبل إلي في وفد من أصحابك والسلام.

2.76 ومن وصيته عليه السلام لعبد الله بن العبّاس عند استخلاجه إياه على البصرة:

سَعِي الناس بوجهك وملبسك وحكمك. وإياك والغضب فإنه طيرة من الشيطان. وأعلمن أنّ ما كرسك من الله يجعلك من النار وما باعسك من الله يجعلك من النار.

2.77 ومن وصيته له عليه السلام لما بعثه للاحتجاج على الخوارج:

لا تخاصمهم بالقرآن فإن القرآن حامل ذو وجه تقول ويقولو ولكن حاجتهم بالسنة فإنّهم لن يجدوا عنها محبصاً.

2.78 ومن كتابه عليه السلام إلى أبي موسى الأشعري جوابا في أمر الحكّين ذكره سعيد بن بحى الأموي في المغازي.

فإن الناس قد تغير كثير منهم عن كثير من حفظهم فالأكل من الدنيا ونطقوا بالموهبو. وإنّه نزلت من هذا الأمر منزل ثُمّ جمعوا أجتمع به أقوم أخِبرهم أنفسهم فأثنا أثنا وهم قرأوا أخف أن يعودون لله. وليس رجل فآلم أحرص على جمعة أمّا محمد وألفتمني أو أبغي بذلك حسن الثواب وكرم المَلَّاب سأفي بالذي وأبيت على نفسي وإن تغيرت عن صلح.
what has passed has passed, and what is coming is coming. Take the pledge of allegiance for me, then, from your townspeople, and come to me here with a delegation of your associates. Go in peace.

2.76 From Ṭalḥa’s counsel to ʿAbdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās when Ṭalḥa departed from Basra, and appointed Ibn al-ʿAbbās to remain there as governor:¹
Be generous with your attention, your audiences, and your judgment. Beware of anger, for it is a surge of rashness prompted by Satan. Know that whatever takes you closer to God takes you away from the Fire, and whatever takes you away from God takes you closer to the Fire.

2.77 From Ṭalḥa’s counsel to ʿAbdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās when he sent him to debate the Kharijites:²
Don’t argue with them on the basis of the Qurʾan, for the Qurʾan can be interpreted in many ways—you will say something, and they will say something else. Debate with them instead with the Sunnah, for there they will find no escape.

2.78 From Ṭalḥa’s letter to Abū Mūsā al-Ashʿarī, replying to him in the matter of the arbitrators (recorded by Saʿīd ibn Yaḥyā al-Umawī in his book The Expeditions, al-Maghāzī):³
The state of the people is such that many have bartered away most of their allotted share,⁴ they sway with the world’s swaying and speak from sheer caprice. In the matter at hand, I am astonished that my camp has become a gathering place for the conceited and the disobedient. I treat the wound they have inflicted,⁵ but fear that it might suddenly spurt blood again. There is no man—and you should know this—who is more concerned than I am to maintain unity and affection among Muḥammad’s community. I seek only God’s

¹ In 36/656, after the Battle of the Camel. Mufīd, Jamal, 223–224, after Wāqīḍī.
² Soon after the Battle of Ṣiffīn in 37/657, when the Kharijites faulted Ṭalḥa for accepting the arbitration and encamped at Ḥarūrāʾ. Context in Ṭabarî, Tārīkh, 5:73.
³ In the lead-up to arbitration at Dūmat al-Jandal in 37/657–658. Abū Mūsā al-Ashʿarī was the arbitrator from Ṭalḥa’s side, and ‘Amr ibn al-ʿĀṣ from Muʿāwiyah’s. This letter signals Ṭalḥa’s distrust of Abū Mūsā. Ḥ 18:75.
⁴ I.e., of religion and the hereafter.
⁵ Refers to both the arbitration with Muʿāwiyah, which a group of Ṭalḥa’s own army forced him to accept, even though they were on the verge of victory, and the choice of Abū Mūsā as the arbitrator from their side, who was not loyal to Ṭalḥa. See also § 2.63.
ما فارقتني عليه فإن الشقي من حرم نفع ما أوقت من العقل والتجربة. وإنني لأُعْبَدُ أن يقول قائلٌ بباطل وأن أُفسد أمرًا قد أصلحه الله. فِذَّعَ ما لا تعرف فإن شرار الناس طائرون إليك بقول السوء.

زيادة على الأصل:

واذهب إلى كتاب له عليه السلام لَّا استخف إلى أمراء الأجناد، أَمَّا بعد فإنما أَهْلَكَ من كان قبلكم أنهم منعوا الناس الحق فأشتروه وأخذوه بالباطل فاقتِدوه.

*مَعْطَى، كِيْ، نَمْ، شَ، في: لاُعْبَدُ*.

*أَضْفِيفْتُ هِنَا في جميع المخطوطة زيادة على الأصل، وهي عبارة عن كتاب آخر لعلي مسوق في مخطوطة م، وخطوطة لِبسطريشيار إلى أنه زيادة على أصل الرشيدي: "زيادة من نسخة كتاب على عهد المصنف". الكتاب ساقط عن متن مخطوطة م، وأضيفت في الهامش. وهو مثبت في متن مخطوطة ي، ش، ن، من غير إشارة إلى أنها زائدة.*
pleasing reward and an honorable return to him, and I shall remain true to my pledge, even if you move away from the position that you held when you left here. The true wretch is the person who is deprived from using his own intelligence and experience, and I refuse to let anyone speak what is wrong or to blight a matter that God has resolved. Don't heed false suspicions—the foulest of men are racing to you now, carrying wicked rumors.

Additional Letter

From a missive ʿAlī wrote to governors of the garrison towns when he became caliph:
Governors before you were destroyed by this: They denied the people their rights, so the people were forced to purchase them. They ruled the people unjustly, and the people emulated their injustice.

1 An additional letter—perhaps added by Raḍī, or by others—is transcribed in all our primary and secondary Nahj al-Balāghah manuscripts (further details in the Edition’s footnotes, and in Note on the Edition and Translation).
باب المختار من حكم أمير المؤمنين عليه السلام ومواطنه
ويدخل في ذلك المختار من أجوبة مسائله والكلام القصير الخارج في سائر أغراضه.

قال عليه السلام: كن في الفتنة كأبن اللَّبن لا ظهر فُركب ولا ضَرع في حَلب.

3.1 قال عليه السلام:

3.2 وقال عليه السلام:

أُرِيَ بنفسه من أستشعر الطَّمَع ورضي بالذَّل من كشف ضرره وهانت عليه نفسه من أمرها عليها لسانه.

والبِخَل عار ولجین مَنْقَصَة والفقر يخسر القَطن عن حَتَّه ومقَلل غريب في بلدته.

والجُزَّاء والصدِّقَ الشّجاعة والزهد ثروة والورع جَنّة ونعم القرآن الرضى.

والعلم وراثة كريمة والآداب حَلَل مُجَداة ولفكر مَرآة صافية.

وصدر العاقل صنِّدوق سرّ.

والبُشاعة حياة الموتة والاحتمال قبر العبوب.

وروي أنه عليه السلام قال في العبارة عن هذا المعنى أيضًا: المُسالمة خيب العبوب.

ومن رضي عن نفسه كثير الساخط عليه.

والصدقة دواء مُنجد.

وأعمال العباد في عاجلهم نَصْب أَعيْنهم في آجلهم.
Sayings

Chapter containing selections from the Commander of the Faithful’s wise sayings and words of counsel, including selections from his answers to questions and short texts from all genres of his literary production

3.1 In times of sedition, be like a young camel buck—no back to be ridden, no udders to be milked.¹

3.2 To wear the robe of greed is to degrade yourself. To reveal your troubles to others is to humiliate yourself. To let your tongue control you is to demean yourself.²

   Stinginess is a vice, cowardice is a defect, poverty strikes a clever man dumb, and a pauper is an exile in his hometown.

   Incapacity is a calamity, forbearance is a form of courage, renunciation is a treasure, restraint is a shield, and acceptance of God’s will is the best companion.

   Knowledge is a noble legacy, refined behavior is like new clothing, and thought is a polished mirror.

   A wise man’s heart is a vault for his secrets.

   Cheerfulness is a snare for friendship, forbearance is a tomb for shortcomings.

Raḍī: It is also narrated that ʿAlī said similarly: Conciliation is a tomb for flaws.

   The smug invite detractors.

   Almsgiving is powerful medicine.

   Believers’ deeds in this world will be placed before them in the hereafter.

¹ Ar. ibn al-labūn, lit. “the son of a lactating camel mare,” referring to a buck that has just reached two years of age—his mother has had another foal and is again producing milk—he has no udders because he’s male and his back is weak because he’s young. ʿAlī advises his followers to be shrewd in times of conflict, so that despotic rulers are not able to harness their support for evil acts or bully them (Ḥ 18:82; B 935; R 3:267; F 397). From ʿAlī’s counsel to his son Ḥasan (Majlīsī, Biḥār, 74:234).

² The sayings in § 3.2 are from ʿAli’s counsel to Ashtar. Ḥarrānī, Tuḥaf, 201–202.
3.3 وقال عليه السلام: إنهُوا بهذا الإنسان ينظر بشَحم ويتكلَّم بلَحم ويسمع بَعظم ويتنفس من خُرم.

3.4 وقال عليه السلام: إذا أقبلت الدنيا على أحد أعارته مخاسن غيره وإذا أدبرت عنه سبيله مخاسن نفسه.

3.5 وقال عليه السلام: خالِطوا الناس مخالطة إن متم معها بَكوا عليه وإن عشتتى حَنْوا إليه.

3.6 وقال عليه السلام: إذا قدرت على عدوّك فأجعل العفو عنك شكرًا للقدرة عليه.

3.7 وقال عليه السلام: أُجز الناس من جز عن أكتساب الإخوان وأجز منه من ضيَع من ظفر به منهم.

3.8 وقال عليه السلام في الذين اعتزلوا الفتاح معه خذلوا الحق ولم ينصروا الباطل.

3.9 وقال عليه السلام: إذا وصلت إليكم أطراف النعم فلا تنفرعوا أقصاها بقلب الشكر.

3.10 وقال عليه السلام: من ضيَع الأقرب أُتيح له الأبعد.

3.11 وقال عليه السلام: ما كُل مفتون يعاتب.

١ شيفة حَحصمو، ه، ي، م: اذك. شلصأو، ن: ام، ي، ه، ومصِححة في ش: كذا. ن، وأصل ش: غيم.  
3.3 Behold the wonder of the human! He sees with a bit of fat, speaks with a piece of flesh, hears with a shard of bone, and breathes through a tiny hole!

3.4 When the world smiles at a person, it lends him the good qualities of others. When it turns away from him, it snatches from him his own.¹

3.5 Associate with people in such a manner that they cherish your company while you live and weep for your loss when you die.²

3.6 If you succeed in subduing your enemy, thank God by forgiving the man.

3.7 The most incapable person in the world is the one who is incapable of making friends. Even more incapable than he, though, is the person who loses the friends he has made.

3.8 ‘Alī said this about the men who sat out the battles during his reign:³
They abandoned right, while not aiding wrong.

3.9 If the harbingers of God’s blessings reach you, don’t drive away the favors yet to come with a lack of gratitude.

3.10 A man who is shunned by those close to him will find help from distant strangers.

3.11 Not every deluded person can be chastised.⁴

---

¹ I.e., when a person’s luck is in, people attribute to him qualities he doesn’t have, but when his luck is out, they don’t give him credit for the qualities he does have.

² Or, per the variant reading in mss N and Sh, “they long for you when you are absent (ghibtum, vs. ‘ishtum), and weep for your loss when you die.” From ‘Alī’s deathbed counsel to his children (Sibt, Tadhkirah, 142; Ṭūsī, Amālī, 209). I have switched the two phrases around in the translation for more idiomatic English.

³ These were the prominent Medinans ʿAbdallāh ibn ‘Umar, Saʿd ibn Abī Waqqāṣ, Saʿīd ibn Zayd, Usāmah ibn Zayd, Muhammad ibn Maslamah, and Anas ibn Mālik (Ḥ 18:115; text and context in Ṭūsī, Amālī, 83). According to some commentators, they also include the Kufans Abū Mūsā al-Ashʿarī and Aḥnaf ibn Qays (B 939; F 432).

⁴ Interpreted as (1) a reference to the prominent Medinans who refused to support ʿAlī against the associates of the Camel (Ḥ 18:119; Mufīd, Jamal, 46; names in note to § 3.8), or (2) a general observation on human nature (F 431; B 938).
3.12 وقال عليه السلام: "قل الأمور المقدّرة حتى يكون الحَق في التدبير.

3.13 وسُلّط عليه السلام عن قول النبي صلى الله عليه وآله "مِنْيَهَ وَاِذْهَبْ بَيْنَ الْمُتَّقِينَ وَلا تَشَبَّهُوا بِاللِّيْلَوْد".

فقال عليه السلام: إنما قال صلى الله عليه وآله ذلك والذين قال فأما الآن وقد أنسع نطاقه وضرب بصريته فأمرُ وما أختار.

3.14 وقال عليه السلام: من جرى في عنان أمله عثر بأجله.

3.15 وقال عليه السلام: أقيلوا ذوي الْمُروَّات عثراتهم، فايهبحرون منهم عاثر إلا ويده بيد الله يرفعه.

3.16 وقال عليه السلام: "قرفت الهيبة بالخيبة والحياء بالحرمان.

والفرصة تمرْ السحاب فتأتِيوا فرض الخير.

3.17 وقال عليه السلام: لنا حق فإن أعطيناه وإلا ركبتنا أعجز الإبل وإن طال السَّرِي.

وهذا من لطيف الكلام وفصيحه ومعناه أنا إن لم يسمي حقنا كأذاذ، وذلك أن الرديف يركب جَزَّ السَّبَيع كالبُعد والأسير ومن يجري مجريا.

3.18 وقال عليه السلام: من أبطأ به عمله لم يسرع به حسبي.

3.19 وقال عليه السلام: من كفّارات الذنوب العظام إِغَاذة الملهوَف والتنفيس عن المكروه.
3.12 Affairs bow to the fates—sometimes planning leads to death.¹

3.13 ʿAlī was asked about the Prophet’s words, ⟨Dye your white hair and don’t emulate the Jews⟩, to which he answered:²

The Prophet said this when Muslims were few. Now that Islam has loosened its halter and laid its withers flat on the ground, let every man decide for himself.

3.14 Whoever gallops forward, giving the rein to his hopes, will be hurled into the pit of death.

3.15 Forgive good people their mistakes—when one of them slips, God takes his hand and helps him to rise.

3.16 The timid will falter, the meek will lose their share.

   Opportunity passes like a cloud, so seize every opportunity for good.

3.17 We have a right. If it is given to us, good. If not, we will ride the camel’s rump through the long night.³

Raḍī: This statement is among the most refined and eloquent of expressions, and it means that when we are not given our due, we are being dishonored; that is because a pillion rider rides on the camel’s rump, as does a slave, or captive, or another person of lowly status.

3.18 If your deeds are slow, your lineage will not take you far.⁴

3.19 To console the heartbroken and comfort the grieving is to atone for the gravest sins.

---

¹ In an address to the Persian emperor’s daughter Shāh Zanān (= Shahr Banū) after her capture, ca. 17/638 (Mufīd, Irshād, 1:302). Similar to § 3.426.
² The hadith is cited by, e.g., Ibn Ḥanbal, Musnad, § 1415. The command is for men to dye white hair black in battle and pertains to the importance of appearing young and strong in order to instill fear in the enemy (Ḥ 18:122; B 939; R 3:269; F 402). The metaphor of the camel relaxing indicates Islam’s expansion and firm establishment.
³ The sources place these words by ʿAlī in Medina, either (1) immediately after the death of the Prophet, in 11/632, when Abū Bakr was sworn in as caliph (Ḥ 18:33, citing the Twelver Shiʿa interpretation); or (2) in ‘Alī’s oration to the Shūrā Election Council, following the death of ʿUmar, in 23/644 (Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 4:236; Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 327–328; full text in both; Ḥ 18:133).
⁴ The line is attributed to the Prophet in Ibn Ḥanbal, Musnad 2:252; Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih, Ḩaq, 2148; Rāżī, Mafātīḥ, 3573.
3.20 وقال عليه السلام: يا أبن آدم إذا رأيت ربك سبحانه يتبع عليك نعمة فاحذره.

3.21 وقال عليه السلام: ما أشعر أحد شيئا إلاُّ ظهر في قُلُوبه وسُلُوتُه وجهه.

3.22 وقال عليه السلام: إمشي بِذاتك ما مشي بك.

3.23 وقال عليه السلام: أفضل الهد إخفاء الهد.

3.24 وقال عليه السلام: إذا كنت في إدبار وموت في إقبال فآسر الملتقي.

3.25 وقال عليه السلام: الحذر الحذر فوالله لقد ستر حتى كأنه قد غفر.

3.26 وسئل عليه السلام عن الإيمان فقال

الأيمان على أربع: دعائم على الصبر واليقين والعدل والجهاد. فالصبر منها على أربع: صَبَب
على الشوق والشفقة والزهد والترقب فن أشتق إلى الجهنة سلا عن الشهوات ومن أشتق من النار أجتنب الخِرَّات ومن زهد في الدنيا أستعن بالنصيبات ومن أشتق الموت سارع إلى الخُيرات. واليقين منها على أربع: شعب على تبصُّر الفضيلة وتأوَّل الحكمة وموظفة العبيرة وسنة الأولين فمن تبصِّر في الفضيلة تبيّنت له الحكمة ومن تبيّنت له الحكمة
عرف العبيرة ومن عبر العبيرة فكأنما كان في الأولين. والعدل منها على أربع: شعب على
غائص الفهم وغور العلم وزهرة الحكم ورساحة الحلم فن فهم علم غور العلم ومن علم غور
3.20 Son of Adam! When your Lord’s blessings keep coming, be on guard!¹

3.21 When a person conceals something in his heart, it shows in the slips of his tongue and the planes of his face.

3.22 If you fall ill, get on with your life as best as you can.

3.23 Rejection of worldliness is best done in secret.

3.24 How soon the meeting when you retreat and death presses forward!

3.25 Fear God and beware! I swear he has concealed for so long you think he has forgiven!

3.26 ‘Alī was asked about faith, and he expounded:²

Faith stands on four pillars: forbearance, conviction, justice, and struggle against evil. Forbearance has four branches: longing, fear, rejection of worldliness, and patient expectation. Whoever longs for paradise is diverted from indulging passions, whoever fears hellfire retreats from forbidden things, whoever rejects worldliness makes light of calamities, and whoever awaits death hastens to do good. Conviction also has four branches: sagacious perceptivity, interpreting divine wisdom, heeding the counsel offered by history’s lessons, and following the practice of those who went before. Whoever perceives with sagacity recognizes divine wisdom, whoever recognizes divine wisdom heeds history’s lessons, and whoever heeds history’s lessons has lived with those who went before. Justice, in its turn, has four branches: deep understanding, profound knowledge, blossoms of wisdom, and deep-rooted restraint. Whoever understands gains profound knowledge, whoever gains profound knowledge

¹ I.e., if you continue to be ungrateful and disobey God while still enjoying his blessings, beware his retribution, which will surely come (F 423). Some later MSS and commentaries (H 18:136 and B 940) make this subtext explicit by adding to the text, “while you continue to disobey him” (wa-anta taṣīhi).

² Excerpt from oration delivered in his home, either in Medina or Kufa, additional parts recorded as §1.69, §1.1303 (further details in note there), §3.259. Alternatively, the text is cited as an answer given during an oration in the mosque in Basra, a few days after the Battle of the Camel in 36/656 (Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 225–227), where the questioner is named as ʿAbbād ibn Qays (another version, which conforms more directly to the version here, is also recorded in ibid., 198–199). Other parts of the same oration (ibid., 221–233) are listed in note to §1.23. On this text, see Qutbuddin, “Piety and Virtue in Early Islam: Two Sermons by Imam Ali.”
العلم صدر عن شرائع الحكم ومن حلم لم يرتف في أمره وعاش في الناس حيداً. والجهاد منها على أربع شعوب على الأمر بالمعروف والنهي عن المنكر والصدق في الموافقة وشنان الفاسقين فمن أمر بالمعروف شدّ ظهور المؤمنين ومن نهي عن المنكر أرغم أئذى المنافقين ومن صدق في المواطنين قضى ما عليه ومن شئ الفاسقين وغضب الله غضب

الله له وأرضاه يوم القيامة.

والمكر على أربع دعائم على التعّمّ والتنازع والزبى والشقيق فن تعّمّ لم يُبِب إلى الحقّ ومن كثير نزاعه بالجهل دام عمه عن الحقّ ومن زاغ ساءت عنده الحسنة وحسنت عنه السيّئة وسّك ركض الضالة ومن شقى وعرت عليه طرقه وأفضل عليه أمره وضحى شرته. والشغف على أربع شعوب على التمثلى والمول والتردد والاستسلام فن جعل المراء ديداً لم يصبح له ومن هلاه ما بين يديه نكس على عقبه ومن تردد في الريب وطنه شبايك الشياطين ومن أسلم هلك الدنيا والآخرة هلك فيما.

وبعد هذا كلام ترك ذكره خوف الاطالة والخروج عن الغرض المقصود في هذا الكتاب.

3.27 وقال عليه السلام: فاعل الخير خير منه وفاعل الشرّ شرّ منه.

3.28 وقال عليه السلام: كن سهباً ولا تكن بديراً وكن مقدراً ولا تكن مقبراً.

3.29 وقال عليه السلام: أشرف الغني ترك المني.

3.30 وقال عليه السلام: من أسرع إلى الناس بما يكرهون قالوا فيه ما لا يعلمون.

3.31 وقال عليه السلام: من أطلال الأمل أساء العمل.
advances on the path of wisdom, and whoever possesses restraint shuns extremes in his affairs and lives among people loved and respected. Struggle against evil similarly has four branches: commanding good, forbidding evil, valor in battle, and abhoring the corrupt. Whoever commands good strengthens the believers’ backs, whoever forbids evil cuts off the hypocrites’ noses, whoever shows valor in battle has discharged his duty, and whoever abhors the corrupt and is roused to anger for the sake of God, so too will God be roused to anger on his behalf, and, on the day of resurrection, will make him truly happy.

Unbelief stands on four pillars: overthinking, fractiousness, deviation, and rebellion. Whoever overthinks misses what is right, whoever constantly disputes remains blind to the truth, whoever deviates deems good to be evil and evil to be good until he becomes intoxicated by his errant ways, and whoever rebels finds his way rugged, his affairs straitened, and his escape blocked. Doubt also has four branches: skepticism, dread, vacillation, and surrender. Whoever makes skepticism his practice finds that his night never brightens into day, whoever dreads what is ahead turns back on his heels, whoever is suspicious and vacillates is trampled by devils’ hooves, and whoever surrenders to the perishing forces of this world and the next perishes in both.

Raḍī: There is text after this that I have omitted, for fear of being prolix or going beyond the book’s goals.

3.27 The doer of a good deed is better than the deed itself. The doer of an evil deed is worse than the deed itself.

3.28 Be generous without being extravagant. Be thrifty without being stingy.

3.29 The most honorable wealth is abandoned desire.¹

3.30 If you are quick to say bad things about people, they will make up things about you.

3.31 Long hopes, foul deeds.

¹ Identical line in § 3.195.
قال عليه السلام وقال لاتبه الحسن عليه السلام:

3.32

تَلْفَّ بِهِ أَحَفَظ عَني أَرْبَعًا وأَرْبَعًا لا يَضَرِّكُ ما عَمِلتَ مَعِينَ إِنَّ أَغْنِي الْغُنْي الْعَقْل

وأَكْبَرَ الفَقْرُ الْحَمٍّ وَأَوْحَشَ الْوُلِّدَة الْعُجْبُ وَأَكْرَمَ الْحَسَبُ الْحُسْنُ الْخَلَقُ. يَا بَيْكَ إِيَّاكُ

وَمُصَادِقَةُ الْأَحْمَقُ إِنَّهُ يَرِدَ أن يَنْفِعَ فَضْرَكُ وَأَيَّاكُ وَمُصَادِقَةُ البَخِيلُ إِنَّهُ يَقِدَدٌ

عَنْكَ أَحْجُجَ مَا تَتَكُونُ إِلَّيِّ إِيَّاكُ وَمُصَادِقَةُ الْفَافِرُ. فَإِنَّهُ يَبيِعُكَ بِالْبَيْتِ إِيَّاكُ وَمُصَادِقَةُ

الْكُذْبُ إِنَّهُ كَالْسَرَّابُ يَقِرَّبِ عَلِيكَ الْبَيْدُ وَيَبِعُ عَلِيكَ الْقَرَبِ.

3.33

وَقَالَ عَلَى الْسَلاَم: لَا قَرِيبَ بِالْتَوَافِلِ إِذَا أَضْرَّتِ بِالْفَرَائِضِ.

3.34

وَقَالَ عَلَى الْسَلاَمُ:

3.35

لسَانُ العَقَالُ وَراَءَ قَلَبِهِ وَقَلَبُ الْأَحْمَقِ وَراَءَ لَسَانِهِ.

وَهَذَا مِنِّ الْمَعَانِي الْعَجِيبَةِ الْشَّرِيعَةِ وَالْمَرَادِ بِهِ أَنَّ الْعَقَالَ لَا يَتَلَفُ لَسَانِهِ إِلَّا بَعْدَ مُشَارَةِ الرُّوْيَة

وَمُؤَمِّرَةُ الْفِكْرَةِ وَالْأَحْمَقِ تَسْبِقُ حَذَفَاتِ لَسَانِهِ وَفَلَتَاتِ كَلَامِهِ مَراَجِعَةً فِي وَمَاخْضَةِ رَأْبُهِ.

فَكَانَ لَسَانُ الْعَقَالُ تَابِعُ لَقَلِبِهِ وَكَانَ قَلِبُ الْأَحْمَقِ تَابِعُ لَسَانِهِ. وَقَدْ رَوَى عَنْهُ عَلِيِّهِ السَّلاَمُ هَذَا

الْمَعْنَى بِلْفَظٍ أَخْرَٰٰ وَهُوَ قُوْلُهُ "قَلِبَ الْأَحْمَقِ فِي فِي وَلَسَانِ الْعَقَالِ" وَمِعَانَاهُ وَاحِدٌ.

3.32

مَعَ يَنِ، وَمَسْحَةً فِي شَ: كَذَا نَ، وَأَصِلُ شَ: ‹‏الجَّن›.
3.32 At Anbar, during ʿAlī’s march to Syria, its landowners and merchants came out to meet him, and when they reached him, they dismounted and began to run ahead of his mount on foot. He asked, “What is it you are doing?” and they answered, “This is our custom—it is our way of showing respect to our rulers.” ʿAlī responded:

By God, this behavior does not benefit your rulers at all! All you are doing is causing suffering to yourself while earning wretchedness for the hereafter. O how great the loss when suffering is followed by punishment! How great the profit when ease is followed by freedom from hellfire!

3.33 ʿAlī said to his son Ḥasan:

My dear son, remember four things from me, and four things more—nothing will harm you as long as you follow them. The best wealth is intelligence, the greatest poverty is foolishness, the loneliest alienation comes from conceit, and the noblest lineage is good character. My dear son, beware of befriending a fool—he wants to help you but will harm you. Beware of befriending a miser—he will hold back from helping you when you need him most. Beware of befriending a wanton—he will sell you out for a trifle. Beware of befriending a liar—he is like a mirage that makes near what is distant and makes distant what is near.

3.34 Supplementary acts of worship bring no reward if they cause you to neglect mandatory ones.

3.35 ʿAlī said:

A sage’s tongue is located behind his heart, a fool’s heart is located behind his tongue.

Raḍī: This is among the most wondrous and noblest of concepts. The point is that an intelligent man doesn’t allow his tongue free rein until after consulting with his mind and conferring with his reason, while the pebbles flung by the fool’s tongue and the blunders of his speech race out of his mouth without being reviewed by his reason or assessed by his thought. The intelligent man’s tongue follows his heart, while the fool’s heart follows his tongue. The aphorism has also been narrated from ʿAlī in a variant rendering, thus: ⟨A fool’s heart is located in his mouth, a sage’s tongue is located in his heart.⟩ The meaning of both versions is the same.

1 In 36/656, during the march toward Ṣifṭīn. Anbar is in northern Iraq, and the merchant family is named as the Banū Khushnūshak (Persian name). Text and context in Minqārī, Waqʿat Ṣifṭīn, 143–144.
2 This text is among ʿAlī’s deathbed counsels to Ḥasan. Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 182–183, Hārūnī, Taysīr, 563, Quḍāʿī, Dustūr, 100–101, Ibn Ṭsākīr, Tūrīkh, 42:561.
3 Similar to § 3.271.
السلام، وقال عليه السلام لبعض أصحابه في علّة أعتلّها جعل الله ما كان من شكوك حِطّة لسيّئاتك. فإنّ المرّض لا أجر فيه، ولكنه يحترم السيّئات ويبتجرها حتّى الأوراق وإنما الأجر في القول باللغة والعمل بالأيدي والأقدام وإن الله سبحانه يدخل بصدق النّية والسريرة الصالحة من يشاء من عباده الجَنّ.

وأقول صدق عليه السلام إنّ المرّض لا أجر فيه لأنّ العوض يُستحقّ على ما كان في مقابلة فعل الله تعالى بالعبد من الآلام والأمراض وما يجري مجري ذلك، والأجر والثواب يُستحقّان على ما كان في مقابلة فعل العبد. فبُينهما فرق قد بَينه عليه السلام كما يقضى عليه الثاقب ورأيه الصائب.

3:37 وقال عليه السلام في ذكر خيار السلام رحمه الله يرحم الله خيارًا فلقد أسحل راغبًا وهاجر طاعًاCAA وعاش ماجادًا. طويى من ذكر المعاد وعمل للحساب وقّنعت بالكفاف ورضي عن الله.

3:38 وقال عليه السلام: لو وضعت خشيوم المؤمن بسيئي هذا على أن يُغرضي ما أبَغضي ولو صبت الدنيا بجُمّتها على المفاق على أن يُحني ما أحبني وذلك أنّه قد فَأنقضى على لسان النبي الآمِي رضي الله عليه، قال (لا يغضك مؤمن ولا يُحبك منافق).
3.36 ‘Ali said to an associate who had been taken ill:1
May it please God to make your suffering decrease your burden of sin! Illness, while it does not earn you reward, decreases your sins, making them fall off like leaves in the Fall. Reward, on the other hand, is earned through words spoken by tongues, and actions performed by hands and feet. Nevertheless, God willingly admits into paradise all his servants who possess true intentions and pious hearts.

Raḍī: ‘Ali is absolutely correct when he says that illness earns no reward, for it belongs to the category of things that are requited, and requital operates in cases of God’s actions toward his servant, such as suffering, illness, and their like. Reward and recompense, on the other hand, operate in cases of God’s servant’s actions. There is clearly a difference between the two categories, which ‘Ali explains with penetrating knowledge and precise judgment.

3.37 ‘Ali prayed for Khabbāb ibn al-Aratt:2
May God have mercy on Khabbāb! He accepted Islam with joy, emigrated in obedience to his Lord, and lived his life fighting for the truth. Blessed is he who contemplates the return to God, does good in anticipation of judgment, contents himself with basic rations, and accepts God’s will.

3.38 Were I to strike a believer on the bridge of his nose with my sword, an action that should cause him to hate me, he will not hate me. Were I to shower the riches of the world on a hypocrite, an action that should prompt him to love me, he will not love me. This is because it was proclaimed, and thus decreed, on the tongue of our Meccan Prophet, who said, ⟨No believer will hate you, ‘Ali, and no hypocrite will love you⟩.3

---

1 In 37/657, on the return from Ṣiffīn, within view of Kufa. The addressee was an old man named Ṣāliḥ ibn Sulaym from the tribe of Salāmān ibn Ṭayy, a follower of ‘Ali, who apologized that his illness had kept him from accompanying ‘Ali to battle—note the last line comforting Ṣāliḥ, reassuring him that his good intention had earned him paradise. Text and context in Minqarī, Waqʿat Ṣiffīn, 528–529.
2 Also in 37/657, on the return from Ṣiffīn, just outside Kufa. ‘Ali enquired about the graves he saw there and was told that one was the grave of Khabbāb, a venerable Companion of the Prophet and ‘Ali’s supporter, who had died after ‘Ali left for Šiffīn. Text and context in Minqarī, Waqʿat Šiffīn, 530–531; Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 5:61–62. ‘Ali’s address to the people of those graves in § 3.119.
3 From an oration in Kufa, after the Battle of Nahrawān, around 39–40/659–661, attempting to mobilize the Kufans to fight Muʿāwiyah. Text and context in H 2:195–196 (within their commentary on § 1.34 of present volume; see my note there). “The Meccan Prophet,” lit. “the āmmī Prophet,” see note at § 1.151.2.
وقال عليه السلام: سِيِّئَةٌ تَسَوءَكَ خَيرٌ عَنْذَا الَّذِي مِنْ حَسَنَةٍ تَعْجِبُكَ.

وقال عليه السلام: قُدِرُ الرِّجُلِ عَلَى قُدْرِ هُمَّتِه وَصِدَّقَهَ عَلَى قُدْرِ مُرَوَّتِه وَشَجَاعَتِه عَلَى قُدْرِ أَنْفُسِه وَعَفَّتِه عَلَى قُدْرِ غَيْرِهِ.

وقال عليه السلام: الظَّفِرُ بالحُزُمِ وَالحُزُمُ بِإِجَالَةِ الرَّأيِ وَالرَّأيُ بَخْصِينَ الأَسْرَارِ.

وقال عليه السلام: أُحِدَّرْوَا صَوْلَةَ الْكَرِيمِ إِذَا جَاعَ وَلَمْ يَشَّعِ.

وقال عليه السلام: قَلْوِبُ الرِّجُلِ وَحَشْيَةُ فَنِ تَأْلِفُهَا أَقْبَلَتْ عَلَىَهُ.

وقال عليه السلام: عَيِّبَكَ مِسْتَوَرُ ما أَسْعَدَكَ جَذَلْكَ.

وقال عليه السلام: أُولِي النَّاسِ بَعْنَفِ أَقْدَرْهُمْ عَلَى العَقْوَةِ.

وقال عليه السلام: السَّعَاءُ مَا كَانَ أَبْدَاً فَاَمَا مَا كَانَ عَنْ مَسَأَةٍ حَيَاءٍ وَتَذْمُمٍ.

وقال عليه السلام: لَا غَنِيَ كَالْعِقْلِ وَلَا فِقْرٌ كَالْجِهَلِ وَلَا مِرْأَةٌ كَالأَدْبِ وَلَا ظَهْرٌ كَالمَاشَوْرَةِ.

وقال عليه السلام: الصِّبْرُ صِبْرٌ صِبْرُ علِى مَا تَكْرَهُ وَصِبْرُ عِمَّا تُحْبِبُ.

وقال عليه السلام: الْغَنِيُّ فِي الْغَرْبَةِ وَطَنٌ وَالْفَقِرُ فِي الْوَطْنِ غَرْبَةِ.

وقال عليه السلام: الْقَنَاةُ مَالٌ لَا يُفَقَدُ.

وقال عليه السلام: المَالُ مَادَّةُ الْشَّهِرَاتِ.
3.39 A shameful act about which you are sorry is better in God's eyes than a virtuous act of which you are proud.

3.40 The measure of a man is in accord with the measure of his resolution, the measure of his truthfulness is in accord with the measure of his chivalry, the measure of his valor is in accord with the measure of his self-respect, and the measure of his chastity is in accord with the measure of his jealous sense of honor.

3.41 Victory is reached through resolution, resolution is reached through reflection, and reflection is reached through guarding your secrets.

3.42 Beware the peer's attack when he's hungry, and the churl's when he's sated.

3.43 Men's hearts are wild beasts, but they soften toward those they love.

3.44 Your flaws will remain concealed as long as your luck holds.

3.45 Those who hold the most power to punish should be the foremost in forgiving.

3.46 True generosity is spontaneous. Giving when solicited is merely to avoid shame and blame.

3.47 There is no wealth like intelligence, no poverty like ignorance, no bequest like refinement, and no shield like consultation.

3.48 Patience is of two kinds: patience in the face of adversity and patience in the absence of privilege.

3.49 The rich man is at home in a foreign land, the pauper is a stranger in his hometown.

3.50 Contentment is wealth that never runs out.

3.51 Wealth fuels passions.
وقال عليه السلام: من حذّرك كمن ينكر.

وقال عليه السلام: اللسان سيعب إن خُلّع عنه عَقْر.

وقال عليه السلام: المرأة عقرب حُواة اللَّسْبة.

وقال عليه السلام: الشفيع جناح الطالب.

وقال عليه السلام: أهل الدنيا كَركب يَسار بهم وهم يَيَام.

وقال عليه السلام: فَقَد الأَحْجَة غَرْبَة.

وقال عليه السلام: فوت الحاجة أهون من طلبها إلى غير أهله.

وقال عليه السلام: لا تستحي من إعطاء القليل فإن الحرمان أقل منه.

وقال عليه السلام: العَفَاف زينة الفقر.

وقال عليه السلام: إذا لم يكن ما تريد فلن بَن كِيف كنت.

وقال عليه السلام: لا ترى الجاهل إلا مَفَرَطًا أو مَفْرَطًا.

وقال عليه السلام: إذا تمَّ العقل نقص الكلام.

وقال عليه السلام: الدهر يُغْلِق الأَبْدَان ويُجِدَّد الآمال ويقرِّب المَنِيَّة ويِبَعِد الأَمْنِيَّة من ظفْرِه نصِب ومن فاتِه تِعَب.

وقال عليه السلام: من نصب نفسه للناس إِمَامًا فعليه أن يبدأ بتعليم نفسه قبل تعلُّم غيره وهيكن تأديبه بسيرته قبل تأديبه لسانه ومُعَلِّم نفسه ومؤَّدِّبها أَحْتَيْ بالِإِجْلَال. من معلم الناس ومؤِّدْبه.
3.52 One who brings dire warnings is like one who gives glad tidings.

3.53 The tongue is a wild beast—let loose, it attacks.¹

3.54 A woman is a scorpion with a sweet sting.

3.55 The intercessor is the suppliant’s wing.

3.56 People in this world are a company of travelers who are carried along while they sleep.

3.57 Living without loved ones is like living in a strange land.

3.58 Not getting what you want is better than asking those you shouldn’t.

3.59 Don’t be embarrassed to give a little—not giving is even less.

3.60 Temperance adorns poverty.²

3.61 If what you wanted didn’t happen, don’t bewail your lot—in fact, don’t bewail anything at all!

3.62 An ignoramus is either stingy or extravagant.

3.63 Where intelligence abounds, words are few.

3.64 Time wears out bodies, renews hopes, draws death close, and makes goals distant. It wearies those who win a share and grieves those who don’t.

3.65 A man who would lead should teach himself before teaching others, he should discipline with his behavior ahead of his tongue—a man who teaches and disciplines himself is worthier of reverence than a man who teaches and disciplines others.

² From ‘Alī’s oration titled Wasīlah (Ḥarrānī, Ṭuhaf, 90). This saying is similar to the first half of § 3.325.
وقال عليه السلام: نفَّس المَرء خُطَاه إِلَى أُجَلِه.

وقال عليه السلام: كَل مَعَدُو مُنْقَضِ وَكُل مَتَوْقِع آتِ.

وقال عليه السلام: إِن الَأَمْوَرِ إِذَا أَشْتَهَتْ أَعْتَبِرَ أَرْحَابُهَا بِأُوْهَا.

ومن خبر ضُرَارِ بِنِحَةِ الصِّبَابِيِّ عند دخوله على معاوية ومسأله عن أمير المؤمنين عليه السلام. قال فتأشهد لقد رأيه في بعض مواجهته وقد أرى الليل سُدُوله وهو قائم في محرابة قابض على حليته يُثَلَّبُ حمْلِ السَّلَام ويبكي بكاء الحزين ويقول:

يا دنيا يا دنيا إليك عنى أبي تعرضت آم إليَّ تسرفت لا حان حينك هبات غري غري لا حاجة لي فيك قد طلبتك ثلاثًا لا رجعة فيها فعيشك قصير وخطرك يسير وأملك حقيح آه من قلة الزاد وطول الطريق بعد السفر وعظم الموارد.

ومن كلام له عليه السلام للشامِّيما سَأله أكَان مسيرة إلى الشام بقضاء من الله وقدر.

بعد كلام طويل هذا عَتْبَه وَبَيَّنَك لعلك ظننت قصة لا زَمَا وَقَدْرَا حَاتِماً. ولَو كَانَ كَذَلِك لَبَطَل الثواب والعقاب وسقط الوعد والوعيد. إن الله سبحاته أمر عباده تَفْخِيرًا ونباهم تَفْخِيرًا وكلف يسرًا ولم يكلف عسيرًا وأعطى على القليل كثيرًا. ولم يُعطَ مقغوبة ولم يُعَط مكرها ولم يرسل الأنبياء لعبًا ولم ينزل الكتب لعباد عنيًا ولا خلق السماوات {وَالْأَرْضُ وَمَا بَيْنَهَا بَاطِلًا ذَلِكَ ظَنَّ الَّذِينَ كَفَرُوا فَوْيِلَ لِلَّذِينَ كَفَرُوا مِن اثْنَيَّةَ}.
3.66 Each breath is another step toward death.

3.67 Everything you can tally will run out. Everything you can anticipate will happen.

3.68 When affairs grow murky, predicate endings on beginnings.¹

3.69 From a report relating Ḍirār ibn Ḍamrah al-Ḍibābī’s visit to Mu‘āwiyah, who asked him to describe the Commander of the Faithful. Ḍirār declared: I testify that I saw ʿAlī as he prayed when night had lowered its curtain. Standing in his prayer niche, hand upon his beard, writhing as though bitten by a snake and weeping grievously, he exclaimed:²

World, O world, get away from me! Is it me you try to tempt, is it for me you adorn yourself? May your time never arrive, go deceive another, for I have no need of you—I have divorced you thrice and there can be no reversal!³ Your life is short, your worth is little, all hopes placed in you are of no consequence. Alas, how scarce my provisions, how long the road, how distant the journey, and how momentous the arrival at the watering hole!

3.70 From ʿAlī’s words to the Syrian who asked whether the march on Syria was decreed by God. ʿAlī gave a lengthy answer from which the following is a selection:⁴

Woe! Perhaps you think destiny is final and fate absolute! If that were the case, God’s reward and punishment would be invalid, and God’s promise and threat would have no meaning. God has commanded his servants to do certain things, while giving them free choice, and forbidden them from doing other things, while giving them fair warning. He has imposed on them easy, not harsh tasks, and has promised great rewards for small efforts. When he is disobeyed, it is not because he is overpowered. When he is obeyed, it is not because he coerced. He has not sent prophets in play, or revealed scriptures on a whim, or created the skies «and the earth in vain. That is the claim of those who do not believe—woe and hellfire to unbelievers!»⁵

¹ From ʿAlī’s oration on the last night of fighting, The Night of Clamor, at the Battle of Siffin in 37/657. Minqarı, Waqʿat Siffin, 476.
² Presumably in Kufa, during the final years of his caliphate, around 39–40/660–661.
³ In most schools of Islamic law, a man is permitted to remarry his divorced wife up to a total of three times.
⁴ According to Ṣadūq (Tawḥīd, 380), the man who asked the question was not a Syrian, but one of ʿAlī’s Iraqi followers.
⁵ Qur’an, Sād 38:27.
3.71 وقال عليه السلام: خذ الحكمة أنّا كانت فإن الحكمة تكون في صدر المنافق فتجلج في صدره حتى يخرج فتكسن إلى صواحبها في صدر المؤمن.

وقال عليه السلام في مثل ذلك الحكمة ضالّة المؤمن نفاذ الحكمة ولو من أهل النفاق.

3.72 وقال عليه السلام: قيمة كل أمرّي ما يحسن؟

وهذه الكلمة التي لا تصاب لها قيمة ولا توزن بها حكمة ولا تقرن إليها كلمة.

3.73 وقال عليه السلام: أوصيكم بخمس لو ضربتم إليها أباع الإبل كانت لذلك أهلا لا يرّجؤن أحد منكم إلاّ رهن ولا يخفف إنّا ذنبو ولا يستحيين أحد إذا سئل عمّا لا يعلم أن يقول لا أعلم ولا يستحيين أحد إذا لم يعلم الشيء أن يتغلّبه وبالصبر فإن الصبر من الإنسان كالرأس من الجسد لا خير في جسد لا رأس معه ولا في إيمان لا صبر معه.

3.74 وقال عليه السلام ل الرجل أفرط في الثناء عليه وكان له متينً أنا دون ما تقول ووفق ما في نفسك.

3.75 وقال عليه السلام: بقيّة السيف أبقى عدّا وأكثر ولدا.

3.76 وقال عليه السلام: من ترك قول لا أدي أصيبت مقاتلة.

3.77 وقال عليه السلام: رأي الشيخ أحبّ إلهي من جلد الغلام.

3.71 Seize wisdom wherever you find it. A wise maxim may reside in the breast of a hypocrite, and it quivers and trembles there until it settles next to its kin, in the breast of a believer.

ʿAlī also said in a similar vein:
Believers, wisdom is your own lost camel—seize it, then, even from hypocrites!

3.72 The measure of a man is the good he does.¹

Raḍī: This maxim is priceless. No adage can be equated with it, no maxim can be compared to it.

3.73 I counsel you to five traits so precious it is only right that you should whip your camels to reach them: Place your hopes in no one save your Lord. Fear nothing save your sins. When asked about something you don't know, don't be ashamed to say, “I don't know.” If you don't know something, don't be ashamed to learn. And be patient in adversity, for patience is to faith as the head is to the body—what good is a body without a head, or faith without patience?²

3.74 ʿAlī said to a secret calumniator who praised him effusively to his face:³
I am less than you say but more than you think.

3.75 Survivors of the sword multiply in number and their descendants proliferate.⁴

3.76 The moment you stop saying, “I don't know,” you will be struck the deathblow.

3.77 An elder's advice is worth more to me than a youth's muscle.⁵

¹ Listed among ʿAlī's "signature replies" (tawqīʿāt), inscribed on the letter to his associate Ṣaʿṣaʿah ibn Ṣuhān (Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih, Ḥaqf, 4:288). The line could also be translated as, “The measure of a man is what he does well”—i.e., does well in terms of professional skill (B 954), or knowledge and worship (F 408).

² Part of a sermon in the mosque (Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 154–157), presumably in Kufa; other parts are § 3.81, § 3.100.

³ The calumniator was al-ʿAshʿath ibn Qays, and the exchange presumably happened in Kufa during ʿAlī's caliphate, 35–40/656–661. Abū ʿUbayd al-Bakrī, Faṣl al-Maqāl, 33.

⁴ Among ʿAlī's signature replies (tawqīʿāt), inscribed on his letter to his associate Ḥuṣayn (or Ḥuḍayn) ibn al-Mundhir. Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih, Ḥaqf, 4:288.

⁵ Among ʿAlī's "signature replies" (tawqīʿāt), inscribed on his letter to his son Ḥasan. Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih, Ḥaqf, 4:288.
وروي (من مشهد الغلام).

3.78 وقال عليه السلام: عجبت مِن يَقْنِطَ وَمَعِهِ الاستغفار.

3.79 وحَكِيَ عنهُ أبو جعفر محمد بن عليّ الباقر عليه السلام أنَّهَ قَالَ: كان في الأرض أمانًا من عذاب الله صحبةه فرفع أحدهم فدُونَ السُّفُقَفْتُمُسَّكوا به. أمّا الأaman الذي رفع فهو رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله. وأمّا الأaman الباقِي فلا استغفار. قال الله عَزْ وَجَلَّ: «وَمَا كَأْنَ اللَّهُ يُعْلَمُ بِهِمْ وَأَنتُ فِيهِمْ وَمَا كَأْنَ اللَّهُ مَعْلُوبَ بِهِمْ وَهُمْ يَسْتَغْفِرُونَ».

وَهَذَا مِنْ مَهْسَانِ الْاستِخْرَاجِ وَلِتَائِفَاتِ الاستِبَاطِ.

3.80 وقال عليه السلام: من أصلح ما بينه وبين الله أصلح الله ما بينه وبين الناس ومن أصلح أمر آخره أصلح الله له أمر دنياه ومن كان له من نفسه واعظ كان عليه من الله حافظ.

3.81 وقال عليه السلام: الفقى كلُّ الفقى من لم يَقْنِطَ الناس من رحمة الله ولم يَعْتَبَرَ من مكره الله.

3.82 وقال عليه السلام: أوضِع العلم ما وقف على اللسان وأرفع ما ظهر في الجوارح والأركان.

3.83 وقال عليه السلام: إن هذه القلوب تمّلَ كما تمّل الأبدان فآبتَغوا لها طرائِف الحكمة.

3.84 وقال عليه السلام: لا يقول أحدُكم للهِمَّ إِلَّا أَعْوَزَ بَكُم مِن الفُتْنَةِ لَبَنَة لَيَسْ أَحَدِ إِلَّا وَهُوَ مَشْتَقُّ علَى فَتْنَةٍ لِكَانَ فِي مُضَالَائِ الفُتْنَةِ إِنَّ اللَّهِ سَبِحُهُ الله يَقُولُ «وَاعْلَمُوا أَنْ أَوْلَادُهُمْ وَأَوْلَادُ كُرْفَتُهُ» وَمِنْهَا ذَلِكَ أَنَّ سَبِحَةَهُ يَخَيْرُهُمْ.
Chapter 3: Sayings

Raḍī: The saying is also narrated as “a youth’s martyrdom.”

3.78 I marvel at one who despairs when he could ask forgiveness!

3.79 Abū Ja’far Muḥammad ibn Ṭabī’ah, al-Bāqir, reported these words by ‘Ali:

Of the two refuges from God’s punishment, one is taken away, but the other remains—so hold fast! The refuge that is taken away is God’s Messenger, the one that remains is repentance—the Almighty said to the Prophet, «God will not punish them while you are among them, and he will not punish them if they repent.»¹

Raḍī: This is one of the most beautiful of interpretations and the most sublime of inferences.

3.80 Whoever puts right what is between him and God, God puts right what is between him and others. Whoever puts right affairs of the hereafter, God puts right for him affairs of the world. Whoever has himself as counsellor has God as protector.

3.81 A true sage teaches people never to despair of God’s mercy, and never to lose hope in God’s compassion, yet, at the same time, never to stop fearing God’s retribution.²

3.82 The lowest form of knowledge stops at the tongue. The highest form of knowledge manifests in limbs and appendages.

3.83 Minds tire just as bodies tire, so seek for them wondrous novelties of wisdom!³

3.84 Never say, “God, protect me from trial!” for no one is free from exposure to trial. If you wish to seek God’s protection, seek it against the inducements to stray that occur during times of trial. God has said, «Know that the riches you own and the children you beget are nothing but trials!»⁴ This means that the Almighty tests people through wealth and children to see who is unhappy with his lot and who accepts his share with equanimity. The Almighty knows what

¹ Qur’an, Anfāl 8:33.
² Part of a sermon in the mosque (Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 154–157), presumably in Kufa; other parts are § 3.73, § 3.100.
³ Nearly identical to § 3.181.
⁴ Qur’an, Anfāl 8:28.
بالأموال والأولاد ليتبني الساخط لرزقه والراضي بقسمه وإن كان سيحانه أعلم بهم من أنفسهم ولكن لتظهر الأعمال التي بها يستحق الثواب والعقاب لأن بعضهم يحب الذكور ويكره الإناث وبعضهم يحب تثير المال ويكره أعمال الحال.

وهذا من غريب ما سمع منه عليه السلام في التفسير.

3.85 وسلت عليه السلام عن الخبر ما هو فقال ليس الخير أن يكثر مالك وودك ولكن الخير أن يكثر علمك وأن يعظم حملك وأن تباهي الناس بعبارة ربك فإن أحسنت حمد الله وإن أسأط استغفرت الله ولا خير في الدنيا إلا لرجلين رجل أذنب ذنوبًا فهو يداركاها بالتوهباء ورجل يسارع في الخيرات.

ولا يقل عمل مع التقوى وكيف يقال ما يتقبل.

3.86 وقال عليه السلام: إن أولي الناس بالأنبياء أعلمهم بما جاءوا به ثم قال على السلام إن أولي الناس أبى إيمان لذين أتبعوه وهذا النبي والذين أمنوا بالله ولي المؤمنين ثم قال عليه السلام: إن أولى مسلم من أطاع الله وإن بعدت حمته وإن عدو محمد من عصى الله وإن قريب قرابة.

3.87 وقال عليه السلام: وقد سمع رجلا من الحريرية يتجه ويدقرأ نوم على يقين خبر من سلأة في شك.

3.88 وقال عليه السلام: إعلقو الخبر إذا سمعتموه عقل رعاية لا عقل رواية فإن رواة العلم كثير ورعايتهم قليل.

3.89 وقال عليه السلام: وقد سمع رجلا يقول "إن الله وانان إليه راجعون"
is in their hearts more than they do, but the trials prompt them to actions by which they earn either reward or punishment. Some prefer male children and dislike girls. Others are obsessed with amassing wealth and lose patience when their robes fray.

Raḍī: This is among the wondrous commentaries on the Qur’an heard from ‘Alī.

3.85 ‘Alī was asked, “What constitutes distinction?” and he replied: Possessing great wealth and having many children are not marks of distinction—distinction is obtained through vast knowledge and abundant kindness, and by vying to worship the Lord. If you do good, praise God, if you do ill, beg his forgiveness. Distinction in this world is reserved for two kinds of men: one who commits a sin but atones for it by repenting, and one who hastens to perform good deeds. No deed is too small if performed with piety—how can something that God accepts ever be small?

3.86 ‘Alī said: Closest to prophets are those who discern their message best. Then he recited, «Closest to Abraham are those who followed him, as is this Prophet, and those who profess belief—God is close to believers.»1 Then he continued: One who obeys God is Muḥammad’s kinsman, however distant he may be in kinship. One who disobeys God is Muḥammad’s enemy, however close he may be in kinship.

3.87 ‘Alī heard a Ḥarūrī Kharijite praying late in the night and reciting the Qur’an, and he said:2
Sleep accompanied by certainty is better than prayer accompanied by doubt.

3.88 Study any hadith you hear with mindful attention, not by rote learning.3 Narrators of knowledge are many, its true custodians few.

3.89 ‘Alī heard a man intone, «To God we belong and to him we shall return!» and he said:4

---

1 Qur’ān, Āl ʿImrān 3:68.
2 Presumably in Kufa, soon after the Kharijites’ secession in 37/658. The Ḥarūriyyah were the first Kharijites—Ḥarūrā’ was the place near Kufa where they initially gathered to protest against ‘Alī.
3 Ar. khabar, lit. “report,” translated here as “hadith.” The last lines of § 1.236 are similar.
4 Qur’ān, Baqarah 2:156. The man is al-Ash'ath ibn Qays, to whom ‘Alī was offering condolences at the death of his brother, ‘Abd al-Raḥmān (Harrānī, Tuḥaf, 209). See also ‘Alī’s condolence to Ash’ath on his son’s death in § 3.277, and for an unnamed relative in § 3.385.
إن قولنا «بسم الله» إقرار على أنفسنا بالملك، وقولنا «وَانَّا إِلَيْهِ راجِعُونَ» إقرار على أنفسنا بالهلك.

3.90 وقال عليه السلام: وقد مدحه قوم في وجه الله إنك أعلم بي من نفسي وأنا أعلم بنفسي منهم الله أجعلنا خيراً مما يظلون واغفر لنا ما لا نعلمون.

3.91 وقال عليه السلام: لا يستقيم قضاء الحاجة إلا بثلاث بآستصارها لتعظم وباستثكما لتظهر ويتجلوها لتبنا.

3.92 وقال عليه السلام: يأتي الناس زمان لا يقر به إلا الماهل ولا يظرف فيه إلا الفاجر ولا يضعف فيه إلا المنصف. يعثون الصدقة فيه غرما وصلة الرحم منا والعبادة أستطالية على الناس. فعند ذلك يكون السلطان بمشورة الإمام وإمارة الصبيان وتدير الخصيان.

3.93 ورُؤى عليه إزارٌ خالق مزروع فقيل له في ذلك فقال يخشع له القلب وتذل به النفس وينتدي به المؤمنون.

3.94 وقال عليه السلام: إن الدنيا والآخرة عدوان متفاوتان وسلبان مختلفان فمن أحب الدنيا وتولاه أبوض الآخرة وعذاه وهما ينزلة المشرق والمغرب وماشى بينهما كُلما قريب من واحد بعد من الآخر وهم بعد ضَرْتَان.

3.95 وعن نَوَفَ اليبكَيّ قال رأيت أمير المؤمنين عليه السلام ذات ليلة وقد خرج من فراشته فنظر إلى النجوم فقال يا نوفر أرقت أنت أم رامع قلت بل رامع يا أمير المؤمنين فقال:

١

إن، ش، ي، ح، وأضافت في م: كذا أصل م: سقطت 'وتدير الخصيان'.
When we say, «To God we belong,» we acknowledge our subjugation. When we say, «To him we shall return,» we acknowledge our mortality.

3.90 Lord, you know me better than I know myself, and I know myself better than others know me. Lord, make me more virtuous than they think, and forgive those of my actions they don’t know.¹

3.91 Your benefaction becomes perfect only when you add three more actions: when you deem your favors small, they become great, when you conceal them, they become clear, and when you expedite them, they are received with joy.

3.92 An age is coming to the world in which none but the schemer will be granted intimacy, none but the debauched will be considered witty, and none but the just will be deemed weak. People will regard charity a tax, gifts to relatives a favor, and God’s worship a means to self-glorification. At that time, power will be wielded through the counsel of concubines, the command of boys, and the governance of eunuchs.

3.93 ʿAlī was seen wearing a worn and patched garment, and when someone remarked on this, he explained: The heart bows to him and the soul prostrates before him—true believers will follow my practice.

3.94 This world and the hereafter are mutual enemies and divergent paths—to love and follow this world is to hate and reject the hereafter. The two are like East and West for the person who walks between them—the nearer he draws to one, the further he moves from the other. They are like two wives married to one man.

3.95 Nawf al-Bikālī narrated this report, and he said: I saw the Commander of the Faithful one night as he rose from his bed, gazed at the stars, then said to me, “Nawf, are you asleep or awake?” “I’m awake, Commander of the Faithful,” I replied. ʿAlī then said to me:²

¹ Presumably in Kufa during ʿAlī’s caliphate, 35–40/656–661. Response when he was praised to his face (Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 243–244). Similar final line in § 1.191.3 (see note on context there).
² Presumably in Kufa during ʿAlī’s caliphate, 35–40/656–661. The words in parentheses within ʿAlī’s text are Raḍī’s explanatory insertions.
يا نف طؤبَيًّن للزاهدين في الدنيا الراغبين في الآخرة أولئك قوم أَخَذوا الأرض بساطًا وترابها فراشًا وماهها طيبًا والقرآن شعارًا والدعاء دثارًا ثمّ قرروا الدنيا قرضاً على منهج المسيح. يا نف إنّ داود عليه السلام قام في مثل هذه الساعة من الليل فقال: "إنّها ساعة لا يدعو فيها عبد إلاّ أَسْتيجِب له إلاّ أن يكون عثراً أو عرفاً أو شرطيًا أو صاحب عرطة (وهي الطُّنبور) أو صاحب كعبة (وهي الطُّبل).

وقد قبل أيضًا إنّ العرطة الطبل والكوية الطنبور.

3.96 وقال عليه السلام: إنّ الله أَفتَرض عليكم الفرائض فلا تضيعوها وحدّكم حدودًا فلا تعتديوها ونهاكم عن أشياء فلا تنتهكوها وسكت لكم عن أشياء ولم يدعها نسيانًا فلا تتكَّنفوها.

3.97 وقال عليه السلام: لا يترك الناس شيئًا من دينهم لأَستصالح دنياهم إلاّ فتح الله عليهم ما هو أَضرّ منه.

3.98 وقال عليه السلام: ربّ عام قتله جهله وعلمه معه لا ينفعه.

3.99 وقال عليه السلام: لقد عَلَق بنبط استحاث هذا الإنسان بسّعة هي أعجَب ما فيه وذلك القلب وله موارد من الحكمة وأضداد من خلافه. فإنّ سُنّه لرجاء أَذله الطمع وإن هاج به العقاب أَهله الخرس وإن ملكه يأس قتله الأسد وإن عرض له الغضب أَشتدّ به الغيظ وإن أسعده الرضى نسي التحقظ وإن عادًا الخوف شغله الحذر وإن أسع له الأمن آمن تثبته الغرفة وإن أصابه مصيبة فضحته الجزع وإن أفاد مالًا أطغى الغنى وإن عضته الفاقة شغله البلاء وإن جَدَه الجزع قعد به الضعف وإن أفتر به السِّبع كفَّته البينة. فكلّ تقصير به مُضِير وكلّ إفراط له مفسد.


٢ مٍ، ي: كذا ش، ن: (عَرَة).
Nawf, blessed are those who reject worldliness and focus their desire on the hereafter! They take God’s earth for a carpet, its dust for a bed, its water for perfume, the Qur’an as their garment, and prayer as their robe. They cut their bonds with the world as the Messiah did. Nawf, the Prophet David stepped outside at just such an hour, and said, ‘This is an hour when the prayer of any who prays will be answered, unless he is a tax collector, an appraiser, an enforcer, an oud player (that is, a lute player), or a percussionist (that is, a drummer).’

Raḍī: Alternatively, it is said that ‘ārṭabah, the first word of the last pair, means drum, and kūbah, the second word, means lute.

3.96 God has mandated certain things for you—don’t squander them. He has laid down certain limits for you—don’t transgress them. He has forbidden you certain actions—don’t violate them. He has stayed silent about certain things deliberately and not because he had forgotten—don’t burden yourself with them.¹

3.97 When people forego a religious duty to rally their worldly affairs, God opens for them a door that leads to more harm.

3.98 A learned man is sometimes killed by ignorance, and his learning fails to come to his aid.²

3.99 There is a piece of flesh attached to the jugular vein that is the human’s most wondrous organ—the heart. It has elements of wisdom, and others that are quite the opposite. If it is lifted by hope, ambition debases it, and if ambition boils over, greed destroys it, but if disappointment takes hold, regret kills it. If aggravated, its rage runs rampant, but if made happy, it forgets to be circumspect. If overwhelmed by fear, caution preoccupies it, but if safety is secured, heedlessness strips it away, and if calamity strikes, it panics. If it gains property, wealth makes it a tyrant, but if poverty bites, distress preoccupies it. If hunger enfeebles it, weakness prevents it from rising, but if satiety is excessive, surfeit oppresses it. Every deficiency does it harm, and every excess injures it.³

¹ Hārūnī (Taysīr, 272) cites this excerpt as part of §1.50, an oration ‘Alī delivered in Medina six days after he became caliph, in 35/656.
² The line—which refers to Ṭalḥah and Zubayr—is from ‘Alī’s oration in Medina in 36/656, when news arrived that the two had set out for Basra with ‘Āʾishah to raise an army against him. Ḥ 1:233 (in commentary on §1.8), after Abū Mikhnaf, Jamal.
³ From an aphoristic oration titled Wasīlah (Ḥarrānī, Tuḥaf, 92–100).
وقال عليه السلام: تحن التمرقة الوسطى بها يلحق التالي وإليها يرجع الغالي.

وقال عليه السلام: لا يقيم أمر الله سبحانه إلّا من لا يصنع ولا يضرع ولا يبيع المطعام.

وقال عليه السلام وقد توفي سهل بن حنيف الأنصاري رحمه الله بالكوفة مرّ جهته معه من صفّيّين وكان من أحبّ الناس إليه لوحيني جبل تهافت.

ومعنى ذلك أن المحتلة تغلظ عليه فتسرع المصائب إليه ولا يفعل ذلك إلّا بالأتمياء الأبرار والمضطهدين الأخبار. وهذا مثل قوله عليه السلام من أحبّنا أهل البيت فليستعد للفقر جلبًا.

وقد تؤوّل ذلك على معنى آخر ليس هذا موضوع ذكره.

وقال عليه السلام: لا مال أعود من العقل ولا وحده أو حش من العجب ولا عقل كالتدبير ولا كرم كالتحفيز ولا قرين كحسن الخلق ولا ميراث كالأدب ولا قائد كالتوافق ولا تجارة كالعمل الصالح ولا ربّ كالثواب ولا ورع كالوقف عند الشبهة

al-Sharif al-Radi - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
3.100 We are the saddle-pad in the middle—those who lag must catch up, while those who exceed bounds must return to it.¹

3.101 God's faith is established only by a man who never blandishes, or succumbs, or follows the path of greed.

3.102 When Sahl ibn Hunayf, one of the people ʿAlī loved dearly, died in Kufa soon after returning with him from Șīffīn, he exclaimed:² Were a mountain to love me, it would crumble!

Raḍī: The expression means that troubles bear down on such a man and calamities rush to strike him, and that this happens only to pious savants and virtuous saints. It resembles another saying by ʿAlī, in which he said: Whoever loves us, the family of the Prophet, should prepare to wear the robe of poverty.

Raḍī: This saying has also been interpreted differently, but this is not the place for those details.

3.103 There is no wealth more profitable than intelligence, no solitude more desolate than vanity, no intelligence like prudent planning, no honor like god-fearing piety, no companion like a beautiful character, no legacy like mannered refinement, no leader like divine direction, no trade like good deeds, no profit like heavenly reward, no restraint like pausing when in doubt, no renunciation

¹ “We” refers to the Prophet's family according to all the commentators, but the enigmatic image of the “saddle-pad in the middle” (al-numraqah al-wusṭā) is interpreted variously as: (1) the true and just Imams, embodiment of the middle way between two extremes, presumably those who deem ʿAlī the fourth caliph and those who believe in his divinity; this explanation focuses on “in the middle,” while “saddle-pad” is not explained (B 961; F 419); (2) the virtuous mean between the vices, because the “saddle-pad” is placed higher than everything else on the camel's back, and, being the place where the rider sits, it is akin to a person's theological position (Ḥ 18:273); (3) the intermediate position of authority held by the family of the Prophet, where the Prophet is the “greatest saddle-pad,” and other Muslim authorities are the “lesser saddle-pad” (R 3:302–303); (4) comfort-givers, like the saddle-pad that supports and cushions the body (ʿA 713). The text's context is also given variously as: (1) part of ʿAlī's address to Ḥārith al-Hamdānī (ʿImād al-Dīn al-Ṭabarī, Bishārah, 21); (2) Part of a sermon in the mosque, presumably in Kufa; other parts are § 3.73, § 3.81 (Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 154–157, where the first line is, “Follow the middle path,” while the rest is the same as here); (3) ʿAlī's address to a group from “the West” (presumably, Syria), in praise of the truly pious (Yaʿqūbī, Tārīkh, 2:210).

² In 37/657 or 38/658.
ولا زهد كالزهد في الحرام ولا علم كالتفسير ولا عبادة كأداء الفرائض ولا إيمان كالحياء والصبر ولا حسب كالتواضع ولا شرف كالأعمال ولا مظهرة أوثى من مشاعرة.

وقال عليه السلام: إذا أستوبل الصلاح على الزمان وأهله ثم أساء رجل الظن برجل لم تظمه خذية فقد ظلم وإذا أستوبل الفساد على الزمان وأهله فأحسن رجل الظن برجل فقد غرر.

3.105 وقال له عليه السلام كيف تجدك يا أمير المؤمنين فقال كيف يكون من يفني بقائه ويوسف بصحته ويوقن من أمانته.

3.106 وقال عليه السلام: كم من مستدرج بالإحسان إليه ومغزور بالستر عليه ومفتيو بحسن القبول فيه وما أبلى الله أحدًا يمثل الإسلام له.

3.107 وقال عليه السلام: هلك في رجلان محظَّتان وامتنع قال.

3.108 وقال عليه السلام: إضاعة الفرصة غصة.

3.109 وقال عليه السلام: مثال الدنيا كمثل الحياة ليين مساها والسما النافق في جوفها يهوي إليها الغر الجاهل ويغذرها ذو اللب العاقل.

3.110 وقال عليه السلام: وقد سئل عن قريش أتما يعومر فرجة قريش تحب حديث رجلاهم والتكاح في نسائهم وأمما بوعبد شمس فأبهدها رأيا وأمنعتها لما وراء ظهورها وأمما نحن فأبذلنا لم في أدينا وأصبح عند الموت برفوسنا. وهم أكثر وأمركم وأكثر ونحن أصح وأصبح وأصبح.
like renouncing the forbidden, no knowledge like contemplation, no worship like the mandated rites, no faith like modesty and endurance, no lineage like humility, no nobility like knowledge, and no support surer than consultation.¹

3.104 Among a people and at a time when integrity prevails, you are being unjust if you entertain suspicions about a man who has never performed an act of villainy. Among a people and at a time when corruption prevails, you are rushing into peril if you trust any man.

3.105 ‘Alî was asked, “How do you fare, Commander of the Faithful?” and he replied.² How fares he who is led to death by his life, carried to sickness by his health, and about to be attacked in his place of safety?

3.106 ‘Alî said:
How many are made complacent by continued favors, deceived by concealment of sins, and duped by people's praise! The most severe of God's tests is time and a slack rein.

3.107 Two kinds of men are damned because of how they feel about me: one is excessive in his love, the other is extreme in his hatred.³

3.108 Missed opportunities produce regret.

3.109 This world is like a snake—soft to the touch but filled with deadly poison. The foolish lad reaches out for it, but the intelligent man is wary.⁴

3.110 ‘Alî was asked to describe the clans of the Quraysh, and he said:
Makhzûm are the sweet blossoms of Quraysh, you enjoy the conversation of their men and delight in marrying their women. ‘Abd Shams are the most far-sighted and the most valiant in protecting their own. We, Hâshim, are the most openhanded in giving and have the biggest hearts when facing death. They are more numerous, more cunning, and more repugnant. We are more eloquent, more sincere, and fairer of countenance.

¹ Part of an oration ‘Alî delivered nine days after Muḥammad's death, in Medina in 11/632 (Sâdûq, Amâlî, 399). Also included in Wâṣilah (Harrânî, Tubaﬁ, 94).
² The man who asked is ‘Alî's nephew Abdallah ibn Ja'far, who had come to visit ‘Alî, who was ill. Ṭûsî, Amâlî, 631.
³ Similar to § 1.125, addressed to the Kharijites in Kufa, 37/658.
⁴ Similar to § 2.68, written to Salmân al-Fârisî, who moved to Kufa in 'Uthmân's reign, and died in Madâ‘în in ca. 35/655.
3.111 وقال عليه السلام: شتان بين علايين عمل تذهب لذته وتبقى نعهته وعمل تذهب ماؤونته ويبقى أجره.

3.112 وتبع جناءة فسمع رجلًا يضحك فقال عليه السلام: كأن الموت فيها على غرينا كتب وكأن الحق فيها على غرينا وجب وكأن الذي نرى من الأموات سفرهم قبل إلينا راجعون نبوؤهم أجازهم ونأ كثرتهم قد نسينا كل واعظة ورمينا بكل جائحة. طويع لمن ذل في نفسه وطاب كسبه وصلحت سريرته وحسنذ خليفته وأنفق الفضل من ماله وأمسك الفضل من لسانه وعزل عن الناس شرته ووسعته السنة ولم ينسب إلى بذعة.

ومن الناس من ينسب هذا الكلام إلى رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله.

3.113 وقال عليه السلام: غيرة المرأة كفر وغيره الرجل إيمان.

3.114 وقال عليه السلام: لأنسي الإسلام نسبة لم ينسبها أحد قبل الإسلام هو التسليم والتسليم هو اليقين واليقين هو التصديق والتصديق هو الإقرار والإقرار هو الأداء والأداء هو العمل.

3.115 وقال عليه السلام: حجب فيخيل يستعمل الفقر الذي منه حرب ويفوته الغني الذي إياه طلب فيعيش في الدنيا عيش الفقراء ويجاسب في الآخرة حساب الأغنياء وحجب للمتكرب الذي كان بالأمس نففة و يكون غدا جيفة وحجب من شك في الله وهويرى خلاق الله وحجب مثل نسي الموت وهويرى من يموت وحجب من أنكر النشأة الأخرى وهويرى النشأة الأولى وحجب لعامر دار الفناء وتارك دار البقاء.
3.111 How different these two actions! An action whose pleasure passes but whose punishment remains, and an action whose suffering passes but whose reward remains.

3.112 ʿAlī was following a bier in a funeral procession when he heard a man laugh. He exclaimed:
We behave as though death were decreed for everyone other than ourselves, as though duties were incumbent upon everyone other than ourselves, as if those who die before our eyes are travelers who will soon return! We consign their bodies to the grave and consume their wealth, forgetting every counselor and shrugging off every tragedy. Blessed is he whose soul is humble, whose earnings are pure, whose heart is sincere, whose character is good, who shares his surplus wealth, who restrains his tongue from gratuitous utterances, who spares people his evil, who finds sufficient room within the accepted practice, and to whom no heretical innovation can be ascribed!

Raḍī: Some people attribute these words to God’s Messenger.¹

3.113 Woman’s jealousy is heresy, man’s jealousy is faith.²

3.114 I shall trace the pedigree of Islam as no one has done before: Islam means submission, submission means certainty, certainty means belief, belief means acknowledgment, acknowledgment means discharge of duties, and discharge of duties means action.³

3.115 I am amazed by the miser who hastens to bring on himself the very poverty he flees and fails to enjoy the very wealth he seeks—he spends his life in this world among the destitute, yet is held to account in the hereafter with the wealthy. I am amazed by the conceited bighead who was but yesterday a droplet of sperm and who will tomorrow be a rotting corpse. I am amazed by one who doubts God when he can see God’s creation. I am amazed by one who forgets death when he can see the dead. I am amazed by one who denies the afterlife when he can observe this life. I am amazed by one who furnishes the abode of transience and ignores the abode of eternity.

¹ Within an oration the Prophet delivered “from the back of his camel” upon his return to Medina from the Last Pilgrimage in 10/632. Yaʿqūbī, Tārīkh, 2:100; Kulaynī, Kāfī, 8:68.
² Islamic law allows a man to marry up to four co-wives, while a woman may only marry one man at a time. B 966; R 3:315; F 421–422, citing Qurʾan, Nisāʾ 4:3.
³ “Submission” (taslīm) derives from the same root (“S-L-M”) as “Islam,” whose lexical purview includes submission, commitment, peace, and wellbeing.
وَقَالَ عِلْيَ السَّلَامُ: مِن قَصْرِهِ الْعَمَلِ أَبْتِي بِهِمْ وَلَا حَاجَةٌ لِلَّهِ لِيَمُن لِيَسِرَّهُ فِي نَفْسِهِ وَمَا لَهُ نَصْبٌ.

۳.۱۱۷ وَقَالَ عِلْيَ السَّلَامُ: تَوَافَرَ الرُّبْدُ فِي أُولَهُ وَتَلْقَوْهُ فِي أُخْرِهِ فَإِنَّهَ يَفْعَلُ فِي الْأَبْدَانِ كَفَعْلَهُ.

۳.۱۱۸ وَقَالَ عِلْيَ السَّلَامُ: عِظَمُ الخَلَاقِ عَنَّدَكِ يَصَغُّ النَّخَلَوِقُ فِي عَينِكِ.

۳.۱۱۹ وَقَالَ عِلْيَ السَّلَامُ: وَقَدْ رَجَعْ مِن صَفِّيْنِ فَأَفَشَرَ عَلَى الْقَبْوِ بِظَاهِرِ الكُوفَةِ يَا أُهْلَ الْدِّيَارِ الْمُوَحِّشَةِ وَالْمَخَالِقَةِ المُقْفَرَةِ وَالْقَبْوِ الْمُظْلِمَةِ يَا أُهْلَ الْقُرْءَةِ يَا أُهْلَ الْغُرْبَةِ يَا أُهْلَ الْوَحْدَةِ يَا أُهْلَ الْوَحْشَةِ أَتَنِّمُ لَنَا فَرَطَ سَابِقٍ وَخَنْ لَكُمْ بَعْضًا لَا يَحْقُ أَمَا الْخَيرَ فَقَدْ سَكَنتَ وَأَمَّا الأَرْوَاجِ فَقَدْ نَكْحَتْ وَأَمَّا الْأَمْوَالِ فَقَدْ قَسَمَتْ. هَذَا خَبِيرٌ مَا عَنَّدَنَا فَمَا حُبْرِمَ عَنَّدَكِ.

۳.۱۲۰ وَقَالَ عِلْيَ السَّلَامُ: يَا لَوْ أَذَنُ لَهُمْ فِي الْكِلَامِ لَا كَبْرُوْمَ أَنَّ (يَبْرُدُ الْزَّادَ الْتَقْرُّىُّ).

وَقَالَ عِلْيَ السَّلَامُ: وَقَدْ سَمَعَ رِجَالًا يَدَمُّ الدِّيَنِ
3.116 If you fall short in deeds, you will be afflicted with anxiety. God has no need of someone who offers him no share of his life or wealth.

3.117 Protect yourself against the cold when the wintry weather begins, and expose yourself to it as it ends, for its action on bodies is the same as its action on trees: the first cold burns, while the last prompts leaves to sprout.

3.118 The majesty of the Creator in your heart should make his creatures insignificant in your eyes.¹

3.119 When ʿAlī reached the cemetery outside Kufa upon his return from Ṣiffīn, he intoned:²
O people of desolate abodes, ruined quarters, and dark tombs! O people of dust, O people of exile, O people of isolation, O people of desolation! You preceded us, and we shall follow. As for your homes—others have occupied them. As for your wives—others have bedded them. As for your properties—others have divided them. This is our news—what is yours?

Then he turned to his companions and said:
If they were permitted to answer, they would say, «The best provision is piety.»³

3.120 ʿAlī retorted to a man whom he overheard criticizing this world:⁴

¹ From ʿAlī’s Hammām Oration describing the pious, § 1.191.2.
² According to Ḥarrānī (Tuḥaf, 186–188), this is the second part of an oration ʿAlī delivered late in the night immediately following the Battle of the Camel, outside Basra in 36/656, to a group of men from his own army, of which the first part is recorded with some variants as § 3.120 (the next text here). Alternatively, the first line is recorded by Minqarī (Waqʿat Ṣiffīn, 531) and Ṭabarī (Ṭurāštī, 5:61–62) as part of a longer address ʿAlī intoned just outside Kufa in 37/657, on his return from Ṣiffīn, when he saw the graves of his companion Khabbāb ibn al-Aratt and others; he prayed for them (§ 3.37), then addressed them thus. The line could have been used more than once by ʿAlī, and both contexts could be correct.
³ Qurʾān, Baqarah 2:197.
⁴ Ḥarrānī (Tuḥaf, 186–188) says ʿAlī delivered this oration late in the night outside Basra, immediately following the Battle of the Camel in 36/656, to a group of men from ʿAlī’s own army, who were presumably blaming the world for the inexplicable failings of Ṭalḥah, Zubayr, and ʿĀ’ishah. ʿAlī reminds them that the world is not responsible for the fate of its inhabitants. It is followed in this source and some others by § 3.119. Ibn al-ʿAsākir (Ṭurāštī, 42:499) places this oration in the Grand Mosque in Kufa, in response to a man whom ʿAlī heard chastising the world. Muwaffaq biʾllāh (Iʿtibār, 51) narrates it from Aṣbagh ibn Nubātah, who says ʿAlī spoke these words in response to a man who complained about the state of the world. See further analysis of § 3.119–200 in Qutbuddin, “ʿAlī’s Contemplations on this World and the Hereafter,” 345–348.
آية الهدام للدنيا أتفرّت بالدنيا ثم تدمّها أنت المتجرم عليها أم هي المتجرّمة عليك. مثّلّ النحو أمّ متي غرّت كأتيه مبطرأ عمّانه من الليّه أم بضائع عمّانه تحت الثرى. كم علّلت بكفّيّك وكما مرضي ببديك تهغي لهم الشفاء وتستوصف لهم الأطباء لم ينع أحدهم إشفاقا ولم تسعف فيه بطّيّتك ولم تدفع عنه بقوّتك. قد مثلت لك به الدنيا نفسك وبصره مصراً. إن الدنيا دار صدق من صداقها دار غافلة فإنّ الدنيا دار صدق من صداقها دار غافلة. مسجد أحباب الله ومصلّا مسجدا. الله وميّط وحي الله وميت أولياء الله أكتبوا فيها الرحمة وريحوا فيها الجنة. فنّ ذا يدمه وقد أخذت ببمها ونادت بفرقاءها ودعت نفسها وأهلها لم يلتهم لهم بللائها البلاء وشوقهم بسرورها إلي السرور. راحت بعفافها وأبتكرت بفجيعة ترغيباً وترهيباً وتحذيراً فدّموها رجال غداة الندماء وجمدها آخرهم يوم القيامة ذكرتهم الدنيا ذكروكوا ودعّتهم فصدّقو ووعظتهم فاتَّظوا.

3.121 وقال عليه السلام: إن الله ملكاً ينادي في كل يوم لهذوا للموت وأجمعوا للفناء وأبوا للغرب.

3.122 وقال عليه السلام: الدنيا دار مرّ إلى دار مرّ الناس فيها رجال رجل بأعف نفسه فأوصواه ورجل أباع نفسه فأعتقوا.

اشن، هنّ: كذا م: (المغترّ بغورها). ي: (المغتر بغورها فيّدّمها أتفرّت بالدنيا).
You who reproach this world—do you choose to be deceived by her yet censure her? Should you be accusing her, or should she be accusing you? When did she lure or deceive you? Was it by her destruction of your father and grandfather and great-grandfather through decay? Or by her consigning your mother and grandmother and great-grandmother to the earth? How carefully did your hands tend them! How tenderly did your fingers nurse them! All the while you were hoping against hope for a cure, begging physician after physician for a treatment. Your apprehension did not benefit any one of them, your appeal remained unanswered, and you could not keep death away from them, even though you applied all your strength. In this way, the world warned you of your own approaching end. By their death, she illustrated your own. Indeed, this world is a house of truth for all who stay true to her, a house of wellbeing for all who understand her, a house of riches for all who gather her provisions, a house of counsel for all who take her advice. She is a mosque for God’s loved ones, a place where God’s angels pray, where God’s revelation alights, where God’s saints transact, earning his mercy and gaining paradise. Who would blame her, when she has declared her imminent separation, proclaimed her impending departure, and announced her and her people’s impending destruction? By her trials she has illustrated the greatest trial, and by her delights awakened a desire for the truest delight. In the evening she leaves you healthy and happy, only to turn up the next morning with a terrible calamity. All this, to awaken your desire and your alarm, to stir up your fear and your vigilance. Some will blame her on the morning of regret. Others will praise her on the day of resurrection. For she reminded them, and they took heed. She told them about herself, and they believed. She counseled them, and they were mindful.

3.121 An angel has been assigned by God to call out every day: “Give birth for death! Gather for annihilation! Build for destruction!”

3.122 The world is a course through which we must pass, not a permanent home. Its people are of two kinds: those who sell their souls and destroy them, and those who ransom their souls and set them free.

1 Lit. “your fathers” (ābāʾika) and “your mothers” (ummahātika), meaning parents and forebears.

2 This saying is echoed in the verse of the Abbasid poet Abū al-ʿAtāhiyah (Dīwān, 46), “Give birth for death and build for destruction, for each of you walks the path of death.”
وقال عليه السلام: لا يكون الصديق صديقًا حتى يحفظ أخاه في ثلاث في نكبة وغيبته ووفاته.

وقال عليه السلام: من أعطي أربعًا لم يحرم أربعًا من أعطي الدعاء لم يحرم الإجابة ومن أعطي التوبة لم يحرم القبول ومن أعطي الاستغفار لم يحرم المغفرة ومن أعطي الشكر لم يحرم الزيادة.

وتذكر ذلك في كتاب الله سبحانه قال الله عزّ وجلّ في الدعاء: أدعوُنا أستجب لكر. وقال في الاستغفار: ومن يعمل سوءًا أو يظلم نفسه ثم يستغفر الله يجد الله غفورًا رحمًا. وقال في الشرك: إِن شُكِرتُم لا زِيدتُنِّي كُلّ شَكْرٍ أو زِيدَتْنِّي كُلّ شَكْرٍ وَعَفَوْنِي. وقال في التوبة: إِنَّمَا التوبةَ عَلَى اللَّهِ إِنَّ اللَّهَ عَلِيمٌ رَحِيمٌ.

وقال عليه السلام: الصلاة قربان كل تقي.

والحجّ جهاد كل ضعيف.

وكل شيء زكاة وزكاة البدن الصائم.

وجهاد المرأة حسن التبعل.

وقال عليه السلام: استنسلوا الرزق بالصدقة ومن أيُّن بإخفاء جادًا بالعطيّة.

وقال عليه السلام: تنزل المعونة على قدر المؤونة.
3.123 A friend is not true unless he protects his brother in three circumstances: in his misfortune, during his absence, and after his death.

3.124 Whoever is granted four gifts will not be refused four others: Whoever is granted the gift of prayer will not be refused an answer. Whoever is granted the gift of repentance will not be refused acceptance. Whoever is granted the gift of seeking forgiveness will not be refused forgiveness. And whoever is granted the gift of gratitude will not be refused further blessings.¹

Verification is provided by the Book of God:² About prayer, he has said, «Pray to me and I will answer.»³ About seeking forgiveness, he has said, «Whoever does wrong or oppresses his soul, but then seeks forgiveness from God, will find that God is forgiving and merciful.»⁴ About gratitude, he has said, «If you give thanks, you will be given more.»⁵ About repentance, he has said, «God accepts the repentance of those who do wrong in ignorance then repent soon thereafter; they are the ones whose repentance God accepts; God is knowing and wise.»⁶

3.125 The pious draw near to God through the ritual prayer.⁷

Hajj is the jihad of the frail.
There is a levy on all things—the body’s is fasting.
Being a good wife is a woman’s jihad.

3.126 Draw down God’s sustenance by giving alms. Those who are certain about the hereafter give generously.⁸

3.127 Assistance is sent in accordance with need.⁹

¹ Similar to § 3.407.
² Both paragraphs of § 3.124 are attributed to ‘Alī in Sibṭ, Tadhkīrah, 133, which is how I have presented it here, whereas Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd (Ḥ 18:331) reads the second paragraph as Raḍī’s commentary, Baḥrānī (B 970) does not clarify his position, and the manuscripts of Rāwandī’s commentary (R 3:309) differ between the two positions. Both paragraphs are attributed to Imam Jaʿfar al-Ṣādiq in Ṣadūq, Khīṣāl, 202.
³ Qurʾān, Ghāfîr 40:60.
⁴ Qurʾān, Nisāʾ 4:110.
⁵ Qurʾān, Ibrāhīm 14:7.
⁶ Qurʾān, Nisāʾ 4:17.
⁷ This set of sayings, § 3.125, is attributed to the Prophet in Quḍāʿī, Shīḥāb, § 1.205, 1.72, 1.176, 1.73.
⁸ Second line attributed to the Prophet in Quḍāʿī, Shīḥāb, § 2.31.
⁹ Similar line attributed to the Prophet in Quḍāʿī, Shīḥāb, § 7.21.
3.128 وقال عليه السلام: ما عال مروأ أقصص.

3.129 وقال عليه السلام: قلّة العيال أحد اليسارين.

3.130 وقال عليه السلام: ينزل الصبر على قدر المصيحة ومن ضرب يده على نفقه عند مصيبته حيب أجره.

3.131 وقال عليه السلام: كم من صائيم ليس له من صيامه إلا الظلماء, كم من قائم ليس له من قيامه إلا العنا. حبدّا نوم الأقياس وإفطارهم.

3.132 وقال عليه السلام: سوسوا إيمانكم بالصدقية وحسّنا أموالكم بالزكاة وأدفعوا أمواج البلاء بالدعاء.

3.133 كلامه عليه السلام لكُل بـ نتبوت كنبو بـ نزياد الخخفي. قال كيل بن زياد أخذ يد لء أمير المؤمنين على باب أبي طالب صلوات الله عليه فأخرجني إلى الجبهة فلم أنا أصبر نفسم الصدائد ثم قال يا كيل بن زياد إن هذه القلوب أوعية خفيرة أوهاها فأحفظ عيتي ما أقول لك. الناس ثلاثية فعلم بحاليا ومتعمّ على سبيل النجاة وهمج راع أتباع كيل ناعق يميلون مع كل رجح لم يستضيوا باور العلم ولم يبلجوا إلى ركن وثيق. يا كيل العلم خير من المال العلم يحرص وآت تحرس المال والمال تنقصه النفقية والعلم يركز على الإطفاء وصنع المال يبول بزواله. يا كيل بن زياد معرفة العلم دين يدان به يكسب الإنسان الطاعة في حياته وجميل الأدوحة بعد وفاته العلم حاكم والمال حاكم عليه. يا كيل بن زياد هلك خزّان الأموال وهن أحباء والعلماء باقون ما بقي الدهر أعيانهم مفقودة وأمثالهم في القلوب

م، ش، ن، ه: كذا ي، زياديا في م، ش، وفي هامش ه: أضيفت «والجوع».
3.128 Practice moderation and need nothing.¹

3.129 Having a small family is one way to affluence.²
   Affection is one half of discernment.
   Worry is one half of aging.

3.130 Patience is rewarded in proportion to the affliction. Those who strike
   their hand on their thigh when afflicted lose their reward.

3.131 Many who fast gain nothing but thirst. Many who pray gain nothing but
   fatigue. O how excellent the sleep and the food of the wise!

3.132 Foster your faith through charity. Fortify your wealth by paying the alms-
   levy.³ Ward off the gales of calamity by supplicating God.

3.133 These are ‘ʿAlī’s words to Kumayl ibn Ziyād al-Nakhaʿī, who narrated: The Com-
   mander of the Faithful, ‘ʿAlī ibn Abī Ṭālib, took my hand and led me toward the cemetery.
   When he reached the desert, he sighed deeply, and said to me:⁴

Kumayl, these hearts are like vessels, and the best are those that best receive
and store. Take heed of what I am about to tell you. There are three types of
people: those with divine learning, apprentices who walk the path of salvation,
and the ignorant rabble, followers of any bleating fool, who sway with every
wind, seeking neither illumination from the light of knowledge, nor support
from a sturdy column. Kumayl, knowledge is better than wealth: knowledge
protects you, whereas you must protect wealth, wealth decreases with spend-
ing, whereas knowledge increases when you distribute it, and the benefits of
wealth cease with its ceasing. Kumayl, knowledge is a faith to be followed: it
earns a man obedience during his lifetime,⁵ and leaves a beautiful legacy of
remembrance after his death—and knowledge rules, whereas wealth is ruled
over. Kumayl, those who hoard wealth are dead even as they live, whereas the
learned remain for as long as the world remains—their persons may be lost,
but their teachings live on in the hearts of men. Truly, abundant knowledge is
housed here (signaling to his breast), if only I could find bearers for it! But no! I

---

¹ Similar line attributed to the Prophet Muḥammad in Quḍāʿī, Shihāb, § 5.1.
² Similar lines to § 3.129, attributed to the Prophet in Quḍāʿī, Shihāb, § 1.23, 1.21, 1.22.
³ Ar. ḥazān. The line is attributed to the Prophet in Quḍāʿī, Shihāb, § 4.56.
⁴ Presumably in Kufa during ‘ʿAlī’s caliphate, 35–40/656–661. The Arabic word jabbān, an
uncommon word for “cemetery,” frequently refers in the sources to the cemetery outside Kufa.
⁵ Translation based on B 973. Or, “It helps you practice obedience to your Lord in your lifetime,”
وجودة. ها إنها لعلماً جماً (والشريار إلى صدره) لآصبت له حملة بل أصيبت لفأناً غير مأمون على مستعملاً الله الدين لندلنا ومستظفراً بعيم الله على عباده ويججه على أولائه أو ملتقاً لحملة الحقاً لا بصيرة له في أحنائه ينتقد الشاك في قلبه لأول عارض من شبهة ألا لا وذال ذلك أو منهومًا باللذة سلس القياد للشهوة أو مغرماً بجمع والإدان خار ليسا من رعاة الدين في شيء أقرب شيء شاهً بها الأعلام السائمة. كذلك يموت العلم بموت حامله. الله يلأ لا تتحلو الأرض من قائم الله يحже إما ظاهرة مشهوراً أو خانتاً مغموراً سلّ بطل حاج الله وبيتته وكذا وأين أولئك أولئك والله الأقاوون عدداً والأعظمون قدراً يكشف الله يحجه وبيتته بهم حتى يودعوا نظيراً لهم ويزعوها في قلوب أشباحهم نحب بهم العلم على حقيقة البصرة وبشاروا روح اليقين وأسلانوا ما استوعره المترفون وأنتوا بما استوحش منه الجاهلون وصحوا الدنيا بأبادن أرواحها معلقة بالحل الأعلى لأولئك خلفاء الله في أرضه والدعاء إلى دينه. آه آه شوقاً إلى رؤيتهم.

عُنَصِر إذا شئت.

3.134 وقال عليه السلام: المرء يخوؤ تحت لسانه.

3.135 وقال عليه السلام: هلك آخر لم يعرف قدره.

3.136 وقال عليه السلام لرجل سأله أن يعظه لا فكر ممن يرجم الآخرة بغير العمل ويزجي التوبة بطول الامل يقول في الدنيا يقول الزاهدين ويعمل فيها بعمل الراغبين إن أعطي منها لم شعوان وان منع منها لم يЦентр يعجز عن شكر ما اتوبو يبتغي الزيادة فيما يبيق بينه ولا ينتهي ويامر بما لا يأتي يحب الصالحين ولا يعمل عملهم ويبغض المذنبين وهو أحدهم يكز الموت لكرارة ذنه ويسمي على ما يكره الموت له إن سقم ظلّ نادماً وان صحّ أن لايأه يعجب بنفسه إذا عوفي ويجنز إذا أنتي إن أصابه بلاء دعا مضطراً وإن ناله رخاه أعرض معتراً تعلبه

ان، ش، ه: كذاي، ونسخة في ه: (يرجي).
encounter clever students who are not trustworthy, who use the instrument of religion for worldly benefit, who attempt to use God's favors to attack his servants, and his proofs to gain victory over his select. I encounter others who have been guided to the bearers of truth but have no real perception—doubt is kindled in their hearts by the first appearance of misgivings. Hark, neither is to be countenanced! There is a third type, enamored of carnal pleasures, easily led to passions, or yet another, in thrall to hoarding and collecting. Neither is mindful of religion. In fact, they are closest to grazing cattle. This is how knowledge dies, through the death of its bearers. But no, by God! There will always be a person on earth who upholds God's proof—whether visible and known or fearful and concealed—for God's proof can never be overthrown. How many are they, and where? By God, they are few in number, but great in stature! Through them God protects his proof, until they entrust it to others like them, sowing it in the hearts of their peers. Knowledge has led them to real perception, enabling them to touch the spirit of certainty, to deem easy what the dissolute find difficult, and take comfort in what the ignorant find miserable. In this world they live in bodies whose spirits are linked to the highest abode. They are God's vicegerents on his earth, who call to his religion. Ah! Would that I could see them!

You may take your leave now.

3.134 A man is concealed behind his tongue.

3.135 The man who does not recognize his own worth will perish.

3.136 ‘Ali said to a man who asked him for counsel:¹ Do not be one of those who expect the hereafter without work or who postpone repentance through complacent hopes of a long life. They talk of rejecting the world but reveal their desire for it in their conduct. When they are given of its stocks, they are not satisfied, when those are withheld from them, they are angry. Incapable of gratitude for God's gifts, they want more. They forbid others from evil but do not desist, they command others to do good but do not perform. They love good people but do not behave like them, they detest the wicked but resemble them. They fear death because of their many sins yet continue to do the very things that make them fearful. If they fall ill, they repent, but once healthy, they feel secure and resume their frolics. When fit, they are full of themselves, but when tested, they despair. When afflicted with poverty, they supplicate God and beg him, but when they regain affluence, they turn

¹ Part of an oration delivered on the pulpit in the Grand Mosque of Kufa, following the Battle of Nahrawān in 38/658. Muttaqi-Hindi, Kanz, 16:205.
نفسه على ما يظن ولكن لا يعلم على ما يستيقن يخف على غيره بأدنى من ذبه ويرجول نفسه
بأكثر من عمله إن استغنى بطرق فلتكن وإن أفتقر ففى وى يفسر إذا عمل ويبلغ إذا
سأل إن عرضت له شهوة أسلف المعصية وسواف النوبة وإذ عزه مهنة أتفرج عن
شرائع الليلة يصف العمرة ولا يعتبر ويبلغ في الموظفة ولا يعطه بالقول مدل من
العمل ميل بنافس فيما يبقى ويساوح فيما يبقى برى الغنم مغرما والغرم مغربا.
يشتى الموت ولا يبادر الفوات يستعطم من معصية غيره ما يستقل أكثر منه من نفسه ويستكثر
من طاعته ما يجوز من طاعة غيره فهو علي الناس طاعن ولنفسه مداهين اللهو مع
الأغنية أحب إليه من الذكر مع الفقراء يحكم على غيره لنفسه ولا يحكم عليها لغيره ويرشد
غيره ويغوي نفسه فهو يعطع عضي ويستوكي ولا ينوي ويشتى الخلق في غيره ولا
يشتى ربه في خلقه.
ولو لم يكن في هذا الكتاب إلا هذا الكلام لكفني به موعظة ناجعة وحكمة بالغة وبصيرة لبصار
وعبرة لناظر متكر.
وقال عليه السلام: لكل أمرى عاقبة حلوة أو مرة.
3.137
وقال عليه السلام: لكل مقبل إدبار وما أدرك كان لم يكن.
3.138
وقال عليه السلام: لا يعدم الصبر الظفر وإن طال به الزمان.
3.139
وقال عليه السلام: الراضي بفعل قوم كالداخل معهم فيه وعلى كل داخلي في
باطل إثنان إثم العمل به وإثم الرضى به.
3.140

١

٢

٣

٤

٥

٦

٧

٨

٩

١٠

١١

١٢

١٣

١٤

١٥

١٦

١٧

١٨

١٩

٢٠

٢١

٢٢

٢٣

٢٤

٢٥

٢٦

٢٧

٢٨

٢٩

٣٠

٣١

٣٢

٣٣

٣٤

٣٥

٣٦

٣٧

٣٨

٣٩

٤٠

٤١

٤٢

٤٣

٤٤

٤٥

٤٦

٤٧

٤٨

٤٩

٥٠

٥١

٥٢

٥٣

٥٤

٥٥

٥٦

٥٧

٥٨

٥٩

٥٠

٥١

٥٢

٥٣

٥٤

٥٥

٥٦

٥٧

٥٨

٥٩

٦٠

٦١

٦٢

٦٣

٦٤

٦٥

٦٦

٦٧

٦٨

٦٩

٧٠

٧١

٧٢

٧٣

٧٤

٧٥

٧٦

٧٧

٧٨

٧٩

٨٠

٨١

٨٢

٨٣

٨٤

٨٥

٨٦

٨٧

٨٨

٨٩

٩٠

٩١

٩٢

٩٣

٩٤

٩٥

٩٦

٩٧

٩٨

٩٩

١٠٠
away in prideful delusion. Their ego compels them to follow its inclinations, they do not compel it to follow the path of certainty. For others, they expect punishment for sins lesser than their own, for themselves, they expect greater reward than their deeds have earned. If they acquire wealth, they turn insolent and are seduced, if they become poor, they despair and grow weak. They fall short in their deeds yet make grand requests. If passions tempt them, they go ahead and sin, postponing repentance for later. If tribulation strikes them, they cast off the curbs of religion. They describe the world’s lessons to others but do not themselves learn. They deliver pretentious sermons but do not take them to heart. Their words are bold, but their deeds are few. They compete for what perishes but are generous in giving away what endures. They see gain as loss and loss as gain. They fear death yet do nothing in its anticipation. They consider others’ sins momentous yet deem insignificant their own numerous transgressions. They glorify their own acts of obedience yet think the same acts contemptible when others do them. They calumniate others and flatter themselves. Idle talk with the rich is dearer to them than worshipping God with the poor. They judge others but not themselves. They counsel others but delude themselves. They expect others to obey them, yet they disobey. They expect full measure but do not pay a fair price. When facing their Lord, they fear his creatures. When facing his creatures, they do not fear their Lord.

Raḍī: If this book contained just these words and nothing else, it would contain enough effective counsel, far-reaching wisdom, discernment for those who discern, and lessons for those who see and think!

3.137 Every man faces an outcome, whether sweet or bitter.¹

3.138 Everything that moves forward turns back, and everything that turns back is as if it never were.

3.139 Success comes to those who are patient, even if the wait is long.

3.140 Anyone who agrees with other people’s deeds is a doer himself, and anyone who does wrong commits two sins: the sin of committing the deed and the sin of agreeing with those who committed it.

¹ *Ar. kullu-mriʾin.* Or, based on the variant reading in ms Sh, “Everything (*kullu amrin*) has a consequence, whether sweet or bitter.”
3.141 وقال عليه السلام: اعتصموا بالذميم في أوطانها.

3.142 وقال عليه السلام: عليكم بطاعة من لا تُعذرون بجهالته.

3.143 وقال عليه السلام: قد بصرتم إن أبصرتم وقد هديتم إن أهديتم.

3.144 وقال عليه السلام: عاتب أخاك بالإحسان إليه وآردد شره بالإنعام عليه.

3.145 وقال عليه السلام: من وضع نفسه موضع التهمة فلا يلوم من أساء به الظن.

3.146 وقال عليه السلام: من ملك أستأثر ومن استبد برأبه هلك ومن شاور الرجال شارکها في عقوتها ومن كنت سرّه كانت الخيرّة بيه.

3.147 وقال عليه السلام: الفقر الموت الأكبر.

3.148 وقال عليه السلام: من قضى حق من لا يقضي حقه فقد عبده.

3.149 وقال عليه السلام: لا طاعة مخلوق في معصية الخالق.
3.141 Protect your covenants and secure their fastenings.\(^1\)

3.142 Obey the one you are required to obey—your failure to recognize him will not be pardoned.\(^2\)

3.143 Truly, you have been given the capacity to see if you would but look, to be guided if you would but follow.\(^3\)

3.144 Chastise your brother by being good to him. Deflect his malice by being generous to him.

3.145 A person who frequents places of ill repute should not blame those who suspect him of wrongdoing.

3.146 One who gains power usurps. One who clings to his own opinion perishes. One who consults mature men partakes of the fruit of their minds. One who conceals his secret retains his options.

3.147 Poverty is the ultimate death.

3.148 If you offer dues to a man who does not offer you yours in return, you have offered him servile worship.

3.149 Do not obey humans if it means that you will disobey God.\(^4\)

---

\(^1\) From a lengthy address by ‘Ali when Marwân ibn al-Ḥakam and several of the Freedmen of Quraysh came to offer him allegiance after they were taken captive by ‘Ali’s forces at the Battle of the Camel in 36/656. ‘Ali is reported to have exclaimed, “Did you not pledge allegiance to me yesterday?” i.e., in Medina after ‘Uthmân’s death (similar lines in § 1.70). H 18:372. “Fastenings,” lit. “pegs” (awtād) refers to “commitments,” after R 3:336; or to “trustworthy persons,” thus translating as: “Protect your compacts with trustworthy persons,” and do not rely on compacts offered by disbelievers and rebels, after H 18:372, citing Qur’an, Tawbah 9:10–12.

\(^2\) Included in a deathbed testament of counsel ‘Ali wrote for his children and followers, thus in Kufa in 40/661 (Nu‘mân, Da‘â‘im, 2:353). According to all the commentators, “the one you must obey” refers to ‘Ali himself. Ibn Abi al-Hadid (H 18:373) explains: ‘Ali is an Imam, obedience to whom is mandatory according to all Muslims, through the community’s pledge, according to Sunnis, and through the Prophet’s appointment, according to the Shi‘a; and whoever fails to recognize his imamate will burn in hellfire; no excuse will be deemed acceptable.

\(^3\) Included in § 1.20.

\(^4\) Attributed to the Prophet in Quḍā‘i, Shihāb, § 6:34.
3.150 وقال عليه السلام: لا يُعَابّ المرء بتأخير حقه إنما يعاب من أخذ ما ليس له.

3.151 وقال عليه السلام: الإجابة يمنع من الازدياد.

3.152 وقال عليه السلام: الأمر قريب والاصطحاب قليل.

3.153 وقال عليه السلام: قد أضاء الصبح لذي عينين.

3.154 وقال عليه السلام: ترك الذنب أهون من طلب التوبة.

3.155 وقال عليه السلام: كل من أكلة منعت أكلات.

3.156 وقال عليه السلام: الناس أعداء ما جهلوا.

3.157 وقال عليه السلام: من أستقبل وجوه الآراء عرف مواقع الخطأ.

3.158 وقال عليه السلام: من أحد سنان الغضب الله وقى على قتل أشداء الباطل.

3.159 وقال عليه السلام: إذا هُبِبّ أمرًا فقع فيه فإن شدّة توقّيّه أعظم مما تخاف منه.

3.160 وقال عليه السلام: آلة الرياسة سعة الصدر.

3.161 وقال عليه السلام: ازرج المسيء بثواب المحسن.

3.162 وقال عليه السلام: احصد الشر من صدر غيرك بقلبه من صدرك.

3.163 وقال عليه السلام: النجارة تنسل الرأي.

3.164 وقال عليه السلام: الطمع رقق مُؤبد.
3.150 Don’t condemn the man who delays in securing what belongs to him. It’s the man who takes what does not belong to him who deserves your condem-

nation.

3.151 Vanity impedes growth.

3.152 The end is near, and the fellowship is short.

3.153 The morning is bright for those who have eyes.

3.154 Not sinning is easier than seeking pardon.

3.155 How many a morsel has prevented a full meal!¹

3.156 People hate the unfamiliar.²

3.157 Those who seek others’ opinions recognize potential pitfalls.³

3.158 Those who sharpen spears of righteous anger have the strength to strike down champions of evil.

3.159 If you fear something, jump right into it. The strain of avoiding is worse than the thing you fear.

3.160 Broad-mindedness is the instrument of leadership.⁴

3.161 Repay malice with kindness and you will have rebuked.

3.162 Cut away malice from others’ hearts by uprooting it from your own.

3.163 Hostility robs one of judgment.⁵

3.164 Greed is perpetual bondage.

¹ Repurposed by Ḥarīrī (Maqāmāt, 24), in his Kufa Maqāmah, § 5.
² Identical to § 3.409.
³ Part of ‘Alī’s testament of counsel to his son Ḥusayn. Harrānī, Tuḥaf, 90.
⁴ Ar. saʿat al-ṣadr, lit. “An expansive chest is the instrument of leadership.”
⁵ The translation follows B 979. Or it could be translated more specifically as “[Your] hostility steals [the opportunity to implement my, i.e., ‘Ali’s] good strategy,” after Ḥ 18:412.
3.165 وقال عليه السلام: ثمرة التفريض النذامة وثمرة الحزام السلماء.

3.166 وقال عليه السلام: لا خير في الصمت عن الحكم كما أنآ لا خير في القول بالجهل.

3.167 وقال عليه السلام: ما أختلفت دعوتان إلا كأنها إحداهما ضالة.

3.168 وقال عليه السلام: ما شكلت في الحق مذ أريته.

3.169 وقال عليه السلام: ما كذبت ولا كذبت ولا ضللت ولا ضل بئ.

3.170 وقال عليه السلام: للظلم الباقي أعدا بكفف عصبة.

3.171 وقال عليه السلام: الرحيل وشك.

3.172 وقال عليه السلام: من أبدى صفحته للحق هلك.

3.173 وقال عليه السلام: من لم يَجهْ الصبر أهلكه الجز grub.
3.165 Extravagance yields regret, prudence yields wellbeing.

3.166 There is no virtue in holding back wisdom, just as there is no virtue in ignorant speech.

3.167 When two missions differ, one is wrong.

3.168 I have never doubted the truth ever since it was shown to me.1

3.169 I have never lied, nor have I been lied to.2 I have never strayed, nor have I been led to stray.

3.170 One who instigates violence will bite his knuckles on the morrow.3

3.171 The time for departure draws nigh.

3.172 Those who challenge the truth perish.4

3.173 Those who are not saved by patience are slain by panic.

---

1 From oration §1.4, delivered after the Battle of the Camel in 36/656, addressing Ṭalḥah and Zubayr posthumously, as well as their defeated followers. R 136 (after Miskawayh); H 1:239; B 164.

2 “Nor have I been lied to,” means I have never been lied to by the Prophet in what he informed me would happen (B 980). This line is placed by the sources within several orations by ‘Ali, and may have been spoken by him on various occasions: (1) At the Battle of the Camel, outside Basra in 36/656, responding to a man who chastised him for fighting Muslims (H 1:265, after Abū Mikhnaf); (2) in the Kufa mosque, addressing a man from Basra (Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 178); (3) at Ṣiffīn in 37/657, addressing his followers (Minqārī, Waqʿat Ṣiffīn, 315); and (4) at the Battle of Nahrawān, in 38/658 either before the battle, or afterward, while instructing people to look for Dhū al-Thudayyah among the Kharijites’ corpses (Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 5:88; Nuʿmān, Manāqib, 214; H 6:129, 18:368).

3 I.e., in remorse. Reference to Qurʾan, Furqān 25:27.

4 Included in §1.16, ‘Ali’s first oration after the pledge of allegiance to him as caliph in Medina in 35/656. Translation follows H 18:371; R 3:337. Following B 980 and F 436, the line may alternatively be translated as, “Whoever exposes his face for the sake of truth will be killed [by the ignorant masses]”—the inserted final phrase is stated explicitly in §1.16.
3.174 وقال عليه السلام: وانبهاء أن تكون الخلافة بالصحابه ولا تكون بالصحابة والقراءة.

وروي له شعر في هذا المعنى وهو:

فَإِنْ كُنْتَ بِالشَّورِىَ مَلَكَتَ أُمُورُهُمْ فَكَيْفَ بِهِذَا وَالْمُشِيرُونَ غِيْبَانَ كَانَتْ بِالقَرْبِيَّةِ بَحْتَ خَصِيمَهُمْ فَفِي أَمْرِكَ أَوْلِيٍّ بِالنِّسَىَّ وَأَقْرِبَانَ

3.175 وقال عليه السلام: إنما المرء في الدنيا عرض تتضلل فيه المنايا ونهب تبادره المصالح ومع كل جرعة شرّة وفي كل أكلة غصص ولا ينال العبد نعمة إلا بفراق أخرى ولا يستقبل يومًا من عمره إلا بفراق آخر من أجله. فنحن أعيان الملوئين وأنفسنا نصب الحكوف في أن نرجع البقاء وهذا الليل والنهار لم يرفعا من شيء شرفا إلا أسراعا الكرب في هدم ما بنيا وتفريق ما جمعا.

3.176 وقال عليه السلام: يا أبن أدم ما كسبت فوق قوتل فأنت فيه خازن لغيرك.

3.177 وقال عليه السلام: إن للقلوب شهوة وإقبالا وإداربا فأثوها من قبل شهوتها وإقبالها فإن القلب إذا أكره عمي.

3.178 وكان عليه السلام يقول متي أشفى غيظي إذا غضبت أحب أنجز عن الانتقام فيقال لي لو صبرت أم حين أقدر عليه فيقال لي لو عفت؟

البحر: الطويل. 28، ن، ونسخة في ه: كذا ي: ه، ونسخة في ش: ن (عفرت).
3.174 How sad, how strange! So, the caliphate can be justified through the Prophet’s companionship, but not through companionship and kinship together!¹

The following verses are attributed to ʿAlī in the same vein:

If you became their ruler through consultation,
How is this valid when the counsellors were absent?
If you argued against your opponent through kinship,
Then another, closer than you to the Prophet, is worthier!

3.175 Every man in this world is a target at which fate shoots its arrows, he is booty for calamity to plunder. With every sip he chokes, with every bite he gags. He obtains no blessing without relinquishing another, greets no new day except after bidding farewell to one from his allotted share. We are all death’s assistants, and our human forms are quarries of doom—how can we hope to survive? Night and Day erect nothing without swerving back to destroy what they have built, to scatter what they have brought together!²

3.176 Son of Adam, whatever you earn above your needs, you keep in store for another.

3.177 Hearts have passions, there are times when they are receptive and others when they are withdrawn. Approach them by way of their passions, then, and at times when they are receptive, for a heart turns blind when coerced.³

3.178 When should I satisfy my rage? Should it be when I have no power to demand vengeance and am admonished, “You should forbear!” or when I have the power to exact retribution and am advised, “You should forgive”?

¹ Immediately after the death of the Prophet in Medina in 11/632, when Abū Bakr was sworn in as caliph. As explained in my Note on the Edition and Translation: Previous Editions (p. 48), this is the original text (واعجباه أوكون الخلافة بالصحابة ولا تكون بالصحابة والقراءة), transcribed thus in all early manuscripts I used and all medieval commentaries I looked at. (See also lines to this effect in ʿAlī’s letter to Muʿāwiya, § 2.28.2.) In the modern print editions, it has been corrupted to: (واعجباه أوكون الخلافة بالصحابة والإقراءة): “How strange that the caliphate is justified through companionship and kinship!”

² Related with some variants in § 1.143.1. Ḥarrānī (Tuhaf, 98) transcribes it within the aphoristic oration titled Wasilah.

³ First lines similar to § 3.298.
3.179 وقال عليه السلام وقد مرّ بقذر على مربّلة
هذا ما يحمل به الباطلون.

وُروي أنه قال عليه السلام
هذا ما كنت تتناقشون فيه بالأمس.

3.180 وقال عليه السلام: لم يذهب من مالك ما وعظك.

وقال عليه السلام: إن القلوب تملّى كما تملّ الأبدان فأبتعثوا لها طرائف الحكمة.

3.181 وقال عليه السلام لما سمع قول الخوارج (لا حكم إلا لله).
كلمة حقّ يراد بها باطل.

3.182 وقال عليه السلام في صفة الغوغاء.
هم الذين إذا أجتمعوا عليهم وإذا تفرقوا لم يعرفوا.

وقيل بل قال:
هم الذين إذا أجتمعوا ضرروا وإذا تفرقوا نفعوا.

ف tanggal قد علمنا ممّا اجتماعهم مما متفق عليه فقيل
يرجع أصحاب المهن إلى مهنهم فيتفع الناس بهم كوجوع البناء إلى بنائه والنساج إلى
ممسّجه والخياثار إلى خيبره.

3.183 وقال عليه السلام وقد أتى يحان ومعه غوغاء
لا مرحبًا بوجهه لا ترى إلا عند كل سوء.

3.184 وقال عليه السلام: إن مع كل إنسان ملكين يحفظانه فإذا جاء القدر خلّا بينه
وبينه وإن الأجل جنّة حصنينة.
3.179  Walking past refuse on a rubbish dump, ʿAlī exclaimed: This is what the misers hoarded!

Raḍī: It is alternatively narrated that ʿAlī exclaimed: This is what you were brawling over yesterday!

3.180  Wealth is not lost if losing it teaches you a lesson.

3.181  Minds tire, just as bodies tire, so seek for them wondrous novelties of wisdom.¹

3.182  Hearing the Kharijites’ slogan, ⟨No rule save God’s!⟩ ʿAlī remarked:² The statement is true, but the intent is false.

3.183  Describing the rabble among people, ʿAlī said:³ When they unite, they overpower. When they disperse, they can’t be recognized.

Raḍī: It is alternatively narrated that what he said was this: When they unite, they harm. When they disperse, they benefit.

Raḍī: He was asked, “We know of the harm they cause when they unite, but what is the benefit they offer when they disperse?” and he replied: Workers return to their work, and everyone benefits. The builder returns to building, the weaver returns to weaving, and the baker returns to baking.

3.184  A felon, with a crowd behind him, was brought before ʿAlī, who exclaimed:⁴ How contemptible these faces seen only at the site of someone’s shame!

3.185  Each person has two angels assigned to protect him, until, when his ordained fate approaches, they let it in. In truth, your allotted span is a powerful shield.⁵

¹ Nearly identical to § 3.83.
² In Kufa, after the arbitration in 37/658. Yaʿqūbī, Tārīkh, 2391; Ṭabarī, Tārīkh 5:72–73. See also § 1.40 and § 1.182 and the accompanying notes.
³ Presumably in Kufa, during ʿAlī’s caliphate, 35–40/656–661.
⁴ Presumably in Kufa, during ʿAlī’s caliphate, 35–40/656–661. Lit. “No welcome to these faces” (lā marḥaban bi-wujūhin).
⁵ A little before ʿAlī was killed in Kufa in 40/661, when a man from the Murād tribe came to him to warn him of his tribesmen Ibn Muljam al-Murādī’s intent to kill him. Ibn Sa‘d, Ṭabaqāt, 3:43.
3.186 وقال عليه السلام: "وقد قال له طلحة والزبير بني بكر على أنَا شكركُؤُك في هذا الأمر، لا ولكن كم شريكك في القوة والاستعانة وعونان على العجز والأود.

3.187 وقال عليه السلام: "أيُّها الناس إن قُلتم الله الذي إن قُلتم سمع وإن أصرتم علم وبادروا الموت الذي إن هُزِّتم أدرككم وإن أتقتم أخذكم وإن نسيتموه ذكركم.

3.188 وقال عليه السلام: "لا يَزَهَدْنَك في المعروف من لا يشترك لك فقد يشترك عليه، من لا يستمع بشيء منه وقد تدرك من شكر الشاكِّر أكثر ما أضاع الكافر، والله يحب المحسنين.

3.189 وقال عليه السلام: "كل وعاء يضيق بما جعل فيه إلا وعاء العلم فإنه يتسع.

3.190 وقال عليه السلام: "أُول عِرْض الحليم من حلبه أن الناس أنصاره على الجاهل.

3.191 وقال عليه السلام: "إِن لِمْ تَكُن حِلَيْمًا فَتَحْلِيمٌ فَإِنَّهُ قَلِّ مَن تَشِيٌّ بَقَوْمِ إِلَّا أَوْشَك أَن يكون منهم.

3.192 وقال عليه السلام: "من حاسَب نفسه ريح وفُغَفْل عنها خسر ومن خاف أمن ومن أعترَب أعبر ومن أعبر فهم ومن فهم علم.
3.186 Ṭalḥah and Zubayr said to ʿAlī, “We will pledge allegiance to you if you make us partners in your caliphate,” and he replied:\footnote{Presumably in Medina in 35 or 36/656, soon after the pledge of allegiance to ʿAlī as caliph. “Victory” (istiʿānah, after Ḥ 19:22, who explains it as al-fawz wa-l-ẓafar) is an unusual denotation for istiʿānah, which is more commonly used to denote “seeking aid.” As Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd explains, though, here it is derived from the proverb, qad jarā bnā ʿinān (⟨The two ‘sons’ of ʿinān⟩—i.e., two lines drawn in the earth to frighten off birds—⟨have made their run⟩), said of one who draws the winning arrow in a pre-Islamic game of chance; istaʿāna al-insān (“A person performed istiʿānah”, with the xth form verb of the same root, “-W-N”) is said of someone who utters this proverb. On Ṭalḥah’s and Zubayr’s pledge to ʿAlī and their subsequent breaking of it, see Ḥ 11:10–20. See also §1.203.} No, but you are partners in strength and victory, and advisors in distress and adversity.

3.187 People, fear God, for he hears what you say and knows what you conceal. Hasten to prepare for death, for death will seize you even when you stay still and remember you even if you forget.

3.188 Don’t let a recipient’s ingratitude stop you from doing good—the one who reaps no benefit from your generosity thanks you, and you may well find more gratitude there than the ingrate withheld! «God loves those who do good.»\footnote{Qurʾan, Āl ʿImrān 3:134,148, Māʾidah 5:93.}

3.189 Every vessel constricts as it fills up, except the vessel of knowledge, which expands.

3.190 The first reward of a man who shows restraint is that people side with him against his boorish challenger.

3.191 If you are not a patient man, then mimic those who are—rarely does someone mimic people without becoming at least a little bit like them.

3.192 Whoever takes himself to task profits, whoever neglects his soul loses, and whoever fears God secures safety. Whoever heeds lessons discerns, whoever discerns understands, and whoever understands realizes the truth.
3.193 وقال عليه السلام: "لِتَعْطِفَنَّ الدِّينَا عَلَيْنَا بَعْدَ شَمَاسَهَا عَطْفَ الْضَّرُّ وَسَوْلُهَا عَلَى وَلَدَهَا.

وَتَلا عَقِيبَ ذَلِكَ: "وَرِيدَ أَنْ تَمَّ عَلَى الْذِّينَ أَسْتَضْعَفْوُا فِي الْأَرْضِ وَنَجِلُّهُمْ آمَّةً ".

وَجِيلُهُمْ الْوَلَٰدِينَ.

3.194 وقال عليه السلام: "أَتَقُوَّا اللَّهُ تَقْيَةً مِنْ شَمْرِ تَجْرِيدَ وَحَدَّ تَشْمِيَّرَا وَأَكَّشِفَ فِي مَلَلٍ وَبَادِرَ عَن وَجْلٍ وَنَظْرٍ فِي كَرَةِ الْمَرْأَةِ وَعَاقِبَةِ الْمَصْدَرِ وَعَقِبَةِ الْمَرْجَعِ.

3.195 وقال عليه السلام:
الجُوُدُّ حَارِسُ الْأَعْرَاضِ.
والْجُلْمُ فَدَامُ السَّفِيهِ.
والْعَفْوُ زَكَّاءُ الْبَلْدِ.
وَالسَّلَاوَةِ عَلَى مَنْ غَدِرٍ.
والْاسْتِشَارَةُ عِينَ الْلِّدَايَةِ وَقَدْ خَاطِرْتُ مِنْ أَسْتَغْنَى بِرَأْيِهِ.
والصِّبْرُ يَنَاضِلُ الحَدِيثَانِ وَالْجُزُعُ مِنْ أَعْوَانِ الزَّمَانِ.
وَأَشْرَفُ الْغَنِّيُّ تَرَكَ الْمَنْيِ.
وَكَمْ مِنْ عَقْلٍ أَسْبِرُهُ بَرْعَتْ هُوَ أَمِيرٌ.
وَمِنِ التَّوَفِيقِ حَفْظٌ الْمَتَّجِرَةِ.
وَالْمُوَدَّةُ مَرَابَةٌ مُّسْتَفَادَةٌ.
وَلا تَأَمَّنْ مَلْوَلَا.

3.196 وقال عليه السلام: "تَجْبُهُ الْمُرَءُ بِنْسِهِ أَحَدٌ حُسْنَةٌ عِقْهَا".

3.197 وقال عليه السلام: "أَعْضِي عَلَى الْقُدْرِ وَأَلَا لِيُتَرَّضَ أُبْدَا.

3.198 وقال عليه السلام: "مِنْ لَنَ مَعْوَهُ كَثْفُ أَغْصَانُهُ".

3.199 وقال عليه السلام: "الخِلافُ يُهَدِمُ الرَّأْيِ".
3.193 ‘Ali said: The world will bend for us after refusing us its back, just as an irascible camel mare bends toward its young. He then recited the Qur’anic verse: «We intend to bless those rendered weak on earth with abundant favors. We shall make them Imams. We shall make them inherit.»¹

3.194 Fear God, people! Gird your loins and sprint, roll your sleeves and strive, race ahead during this brief reprieve, act quickly against the danger that looms! Remember the final return, the inexorable outcome, and the ultimate end!

3.195 Generosity protects reputations.
   Forbearance muzzles the fool.
   The tax due on victory is pardon.
   Solace serves as recompense for betrayal.
   Consultation is the essence of direction—whoever disdains advice faces danger.
   Patience shoots down calamities. Panic is an ally of fate.
   The most honorable wealth is abandoned desire.²
   Many minds lie captive under passion’s rule.
   Learning from experience is evidence of God’s direction.
   Affection is a valuable form of kinship.
   Don’t trust the discontent.

3.196 A man’s vanity is his intellect’s jealous foe.

3.197 Forget about the speck in your eye, else you will never be happy.

3.198 If your trunk is pliant, your branches will be thick.³

3.199 Resistance ruins strategy.

¹ Qur’an, Qaṣaṣ 28:5.
² Exact line in § 3.29.
³ I.e., if you are humble, you will have many supporters (B 985; Ḥ 19:35). Or, “One who is too soft is disrespected by his subordinates” (Waṭwāṭ, Maṭlūb, 44).
وقال عليه السلام: من نال أستطال.

وقال عليه السلام: في تقلب الأحوال علم جواهر الرجال.

وقال عليه السلام: حسد الصديق من سقى المودة.

وقال عليه السلام: أكثر مصارع العقول تحت بروق المطاعم.

وقال عليه السلام: ليس من العدل القضاء على الثقة بالظن.

وقال عليه السلام: يسَّر الزاد إلى المعاد العدوان على العباد.

وقال عليه السلام: من أشرف أفعال الكريم غفلته عمّا يعلم.

وقال عليه السلام: من كمّال الحياة ثوابه لم ير الناس عيبه.

وقال عليه السلام: بكثرة الصمت تكون الهيبة وبالنصفة يكثر الواصول.

وقال عليه السلام: الإفاضال تعظيم الأقدر وتلاوّض تنزّل النعمة وباحتمال المؤمن يجب السود ونور السيرة العادلة ينهر المناوي وبالحلم عن السفية تكثر الانتصار عليه.

وقال عليه السلام: الجُب لغفلة الحُساد عن سلامة الأجساد.

وقال عليه السلام: الطاعم في وثائق الذّل.

وقال عليه السلام وقد سألى عن الإمام

الإيمان معرفة بالقلب وإقرار باللسان وعمل بالأركان.
3.200 One who gets what he wants waxes arrogant.

3.201 Capricious conditions reveal the mettle of men.

3.202 Envying a friend poisons affection.

3.203 Most shattered minds are felled by the lightning bolt of greed.

3.204 When suspicions dictate judgment, justice fails.

3.205 Aggression toward God’s servants is your worst provision for the return to him.

3.206 The noblest deed of the generous is to overlook.

3.207 Wear the robe of modesty and conceal your flaws.

3.208 Silence generates awe, justice multiplies friends, generosity elevates stature, humility completes blessings, providing for others brings glory, upright behavior vanquishes the enemy, and forbearance in the face of a fool increases your helpers against him.

3.209 I wonder at the envier’s disregard for the harm he brings to his own health!

3.210 The greedy are tethered to shame.

3.211 ‘Ali was asked about faith, and he said: To believe is to recognize with your heart, acknowledge with your tongue, and act with your limbs.
وَقَالَ عَلَيْهِ الْسَلَامُ 3.212
مِنْ أَصْحَبِ الثَّيَاثَةِ حَزِينًا فَقَدْ أَصْحَبَ قَضَاءَ اللَّهِ سَاخِطًا وَمِنْ أَصْحَبِ يَشْكُوْ قِصْبَةٍ
نُزِّلَ بِهِ فَقَدْ أَصْحَبَ يَشْكُوْ قِصْبَةٍ وَمِنْ أَلْيَنَاعْتِمَتْ قَضِائَعَ لَعْنَةَ ذَهَبَ ثَلَاثَ نِسَابٍ وَمِنْ قِرَأَ الْقُرْآنِ
فَإِنَّ فَدْخِلَ الْنَّارَ فَهُوَ مَنْ كَانَ يَشْكُوْ قِصْبَةٍ اللَّهُ هُزْوَاءَ وَمِنْ لِقَ اللَّهِ بَيْتُ الْدُّنْيَا ٱلْأَنَاَّثَ مِنْهَا
بَلَاتِهِمْ لاَ يَغَبِّلُ وَهَرْصٌ لاَّ يُرَكُّ وَأَمْلٌ لاَ يُدْرِكُهُ.

وَقَالَ عَلَيْهِ الْسَلَامُ 3.213
وَقَالَ عَلَيْهِ الْسَلَامُ: كَفَّٰنِيُّ الْقُنَّةَ مُلْكًا وَيَحْسَنُ ٱلْخَلْقِ ۖ نَعِيمًا.

وَسَلَّمَ عَلَيْهِ الْسَلَامُ 3.214
وَسَلَّمَ عَلَيْهِ الْسَلَامُ: عِنْ قَوْلهُ تَعَالَى "فَلِتَحْيَهُ يَتَابِعَ طَيِّبَةٍ" فَقَالَ
هِيَ الْقُنَّةَ.

وَقَالَ عَلَيْهِ الْسَلَامُ 3.215
وَقَالَ عَلَيْهِ الْسَلَامُ: شَارِكَهُ بِالْخَلْقِ ۖ فَإِنَّهُ أَقْبَلَ عَلَيْهِ الرَّزْقُ فَإِنَّهُ أَخْلَقُ ۖ فَأَجْدُرُ
بِإِقْبَالِ ٱلْحَذَّ.

وَقَالَ عَلَيْهِ الْسَلَامُ 3.216
وَقَالَ عَلَيْهِ الْسَلَامُ فِي قَوْلِهِ تَعَالَى "إِنَّ اللَّهَ يَا مَرْ بِالْعَدْلِ وَٱلإِحْسَانِ" ۖ
الْعَدْلُ ٱلْإِنْصَافُ وَالْإِحْسَانُ ٱلْتَفْضِّلُ ۚ

وَقَالَ عَلَيْهِ الْسَلَامُ 3.217
وَقَالَ عَلَيْهِ الْسَلَامُ: مَنْ يُعْطِي بَيْلَ الْقُصْرِ يُعْطَ بَيْلَ الْطَوْلِ ۖ
وَمَعْنَى ذَٰلِكَ أَنَّ مَا يَنفَقَهُ الْمَرْءُ مِنْ مَالِهِ فِي سَبِيلِ الْخَيْرِ وَالْبَرِّ وَإِنَّهُ يَسِيرُ إِفَّانَ اللَّهِ تَعَالَى يَجِلُّ
الجَزَاءَ عَلَى عَظِيمًا كِبْرَىٰ. ۖ وَالْيَدَانَ ۡهَاٰنَا عَبْرَانَا عَبْرَتَانِ عَنَّ النَّعْمَانِ فَفِرْقَ بَيْنَ نَعْمَةِ ٱلْعِبْدِ وَنَعْمَةِ ٱلرَّبِّ
يَجْعَلُ تَلَكَ قَصِيرَةٍ وَهَذِهِ طَوْلِيَّةٍ لَّا إِنَّ نَعْمَهُ سَبِحَانَهُ أَبْدًا تَضْعَفُ عَلَى نَعْمَ ٱلْمَخْلُوقِينَ أَضْعَافًا
كَثِيرَةٍ إِذْ كَانَتْ نَعْمَهُ تَعَالَى أَصِلُّ نَعْمَهُ كَلَّهَا فَكَلِّ نَعْمَةُ إِلَيْهِ تَرْجَعُ وَمِنْهَا تنْزِعُ.

وَقَالَ لَّاَّبَّهُ الْحَسَنُ عَلَيْهِ الْسَلَامُ 3.218
لَا تَدْعُوْنَ إِلَى مَبَارِزَةٍ وَإِنْ دُعِيَّتْ إِلَيْهَا فَأَجْبُ إِنَّ الدَّوْعَى بَاغٌ وَبَاغٌ مَّصْرُوعٌ.
3.212 ‘Ali said:
Whoever laments the world is discontent with God’s providence, whoever com-
plains about an affliction complains about his Lord, whoever humbles himself
before a rich man because he is rich forfeits two thirds of his religion, any
Qur’ān reciter who dies and enters hellfire was one of those who mocked God’s
signs,¹ and any heart that accustoms itself to loving the world will receive three
gifts in return: worries that will not quit him, greed that will not forsake him,
and aspirations he will never attain.

3.213 Contentment is kingdom enough. Character is blessing enough.

3.214 ‘Ali was asked about the meaning of God’s words, «We shall grant him a good
life»,² and he said:
A good life is a life of contentment.

3.215 Partner with the prosperous and win a share of his riches and luck.

3.216 ‘Ali explained the meaning of God’s words, «God commands justice and good-
ness»:³
Justice means balanced behavior. Goodness means bountiful giving.

3.217 Whoever gives with a constrained hand will be recompensed by an open
one.

Raḍī: The meaning of this saying is that God will recompense whatever a man spends
in the way of charity and benevolence, no matter how little, with a great and abundant
reward. “Hands” refers to “gifts,” and ‘Ali differentiates between gifts given by God’s ser-
vant and gifts given by the Lord, making one constrained (lit. short) and the other open
(lit. long). God’s gifts are always many times more than the gifts of his creatures. God’s
gifts are the source of all gifts—all gifts may be traced back to God’s gifts and originate
from them.

3.218 ‘Ali said to his son, Ḥasan:
Don’t challenge someone to a duel,⁴ but if you are challenged, respond, for a
challenger is a traitor, and a traitor will be felled.

¹ Reference to Qur’ān, Jāthiyah 45:9, Baqarah 2:231.
² Qur’ān, Naḥl 16:97.
³ Qur’ān, Naḥl 16:90.
⁴ I.e., for frivolous issues. In contrast, and in a grave situation, ‘Ali himself challenged Mu‘āwiyyah
to a duel at Ṣiffin. Minqarī, Waqʿat Ṣiffin, 387.
3.219 وقال عليه السلام: خيار خصال النساء شرار خصال الرجال الزَّهَو الرجَم،
والبغل فإذًا كانت المرأة مَزْهَو لم تمكن من نفسها وإذا كانت بخيلة حفظت ما لها
ومال بعلها وإذا كانت جبانة فِرقت من كل شيء يعرض لها.

3.220 وقال له عليه السلام صف لنا العاقل فقال

３.２２０: هو الذي يضع الشيء مواضعه.

قيل فصف لنا الجاهل قال قد فعلت.

３.２２１: يعني أن الجاهل هو الذي لا يضع الشيء مواضعه فكان ترك صفته صفة له إذا كان بخلاف
وصف العاقل.

3.221 وقال عليه السلام: والله لديناكم هذه أهون في عيني من عراق خنزير في يد
مجدوم.

3.222 وقال عليه السلام: إن قومًا عبدوا الله رغبة فتلك عبادة التجـار وإن قومًا عبدوا
الله رغبة فتلك عبادة العبید وإن قومًا عبدوا الله شكرًا فتلك عبادة الأحرار.

3.223 وقال عليه السلام: المرأة شر كلهما وشر ما فيها أنه لا بد منها.

3.224 وقال عليه السلام: من أطاع التواني ضيج الحقوق ومن أطاع الواشي ضيج
الصديق.

3.225 وقال عليه السلام: المجر العصب في الدار رهن على خرابه.

３.２２５: ويرى هذا الكلام النبي صلى الله عليه وآله ولا يجب أن يشبه الكلامان فإن مستقبهما من قليب
ومفرغهما من ذئب.
3.219  The best traits of women are the worst traits of men: pride, cowardice, and stinginess. If a woman is proud, she will not allow a strange man to touch her. If she is stingy, she will safeguard her property as well as her husband’s. If she is a coward, she will draw back from dubious invitations.

3.220  People asked ‘Ali, “Describe for us a man of reason,” and he said: One who puts things in their rightful place.

They then asked him, “Describe for us a man of ignorance,” and he replied, “I have already done so.”

Raḍī: He means that the ignorant man is one who does not put things in their rightful place, describing him without actually describing him, for the description of an ignorant man is the reverse of the description of a man of reason.

3.221  By God, this world of yours is worth less in my eyes than the bones of a pig in the hand of a leper.

3.222  Some worship God out of desire for his reward—that is the worship of merchants. Others worship God from fear of his punishment—that is the worship of slaves. A third group worship God to give thanks for his favors—that is the worship of the free!

3.223  Woman is utterly evil, and the evilest thing about her is that there is no doing without her!

3.224  Whoever bows to languor squanders rights. Whoever listens to slander squanders friends.

3.225  One stolen brick guarantees a home’s destruction.

Raḍī: This saying is also attributed to the Prophet—it is no surprise that the two sayings should resemble each other, for they are drawn from the same well and poured from the same bucket.

---

1  Ṣadūq (Amālī, 370) includes the line as part of the oration in which ‘Alī also exclaims, “This world of yours is worth less to me than a leaf being chomped in the mouth of a locust,” §1.221.3, which was reportedly delivered in Kufa after the arbitration in 37/658 (see note at §1.221).

2  Lit. "one stolen stone (ḥajar)."
قال عليه السلام: يوم المظالم على الظلماء أشد من يوم الظلماء المظالم.

3.226 وقال عليه السلام: أي الله بعض النقي وآمن قل وأجعل بينك وبين الله سترًا وإن رق.

3.227 وقال عليه السلام: إذا أزدحنا الجواب خفي الصواب.

3.228 وقال عليه السلام: إن الله في كل نعمة حقا فن أداه زاده منها ومن قصر عنه خاطر يزال نعمته.

3.229 وقال عليه السلام: إذا كنت المقدرة قلبة الشهوة.

3.230 وقال عليه السلام: احذروا نفار النعم مما كل شارد بمردود.

3.231 وقال عليه السلام: الكرم أعطف من الرحم.

3.232 وقال عليه السلام: من ظن بك خيرًا فصدى ظنه.

3.233 وقال عليه السلام: أفضل الأعمال ما أكرهت نفسك عليه.


3.235 وقال عليه السلام: مرارة الدنيا مرارة الآخرة وحلاوة الدنيا مرارة الآخرة.

3.236 وقال عليه السلام: فرض الله الإيمان تطهيرًا من الشرك والصلاة تنزيها عن الكبر والزكاة تسببًا للرزق والصيام أبلا لإخلاص الخلق والجرح تقويته للدين والجهاد عزز للإسلام والأمر بالمعروف مصلحة للعوام والنبي عن المنكرو ردعًا للسفاها وصلة

١ لن فب، ج، ك، خ: ذكي.

اش، ي، ه، نسخة في: كذا أصل ن: حقّ. 
3.226 The day of the oppressed over the oppressor will be harsher than the day of the oppressor over the oppressed.\(^1\)

3.227 Fear God, even if just a smidgen. Draw a curtain between you and God, even if almost sheer.

3.228 Too many answers obscure the answer.

3.229 God is due a share from your every blessing. If you render it to him, you are rewarded with more. If you fall short, you risk losing the original one.

3.230 When opportunity increases, desire decreases.

3.231 Beware lest blessings abscond, for not every runaway camel can be recovered.

3.232 Generosity produces more affection than kinship does.

3.233 If someone thinks you are good, prove them right!\(^2\)

3.234 The most virtuous deeds are those you force yourself to do.

3.235 I recognized the hand of God through broken resolves and dissolved compacts!

3.236 Bitterness in this world leads to sweetness in the next, sweetness in this world leads to bitterness in the next.

3.237 God has mandated belief to purify you from polytheism, the ritual prayer to repulse pride, the alms-levy to draw in sustenance, fasting to test people's sincerity, the hajj to strengthen faith, jihad to fortify Islam, the commanding of good for the public's benefit, the forbidding of evil to restrain fools, and the fostering of relatives to increase numbers. He has mandated fair retribution to prevent bloodshed, criminal penalties to emphasize the gravity of his prohibitions, abstention from wine-drinking to preserve reason, desisting from thievery to promote temperance, refraining from fornication to safeguard lineage,

---

\(^1\) § 3.326 is similar.

\(^2\) From 'Ali's lengthy testament of counsel for 'Hasan (§ 2.31), written in Ḥāḍirīn after leaving Ṣiffīn in 37/657.
الرحم منمّةة للعدّد والقصاص حقّا للدّماء وإقامة الحدود إعضاً للبحار وترك شرب
الخمر تحصينا للعقل وجذب السرقة إيجاباً للعفة وترك الزنا تحصينا للنسب وترك اللّوائ.
تكثيراً للنسّل والشهادات، استظهاراً على المُحاصدة وترك الكذب تشرفاً للصدق.
والسلام أماناً من المخاف والإماماً لنظاماً للأمة والطاعة تعظيمًا للإماماً.

3.238 وكان عليه السلام يقول.
أحّنفوه النّظام إذا أردتم زكيته بأنه يربى من حول الله وقوته فإنّه إذا حلف بِه كاذباً
عوّجلاً وإذا حلف بِالله الذي لا إله إلا هو لم يعجال لأنه قد وحده سحانه.

3.239 وقال عليه السلام: يا أبن آدم كن وصّي نفسك وأعمل في ماك ما تؤثر أن يعمل
فيه من بعدك.

3.240 وقال عليه السلام: الجمّة ضرب من الجنّون لأنّ صاحба ينذد فإن لم ينذد فجعله
مستحُكم.

3.241 وقال عليه السلام: ص حة الجسد من قلّة الحسد.

3.242 وقال عليه السلام لكيلين بن زياد النّخعي.
يا كيلين مأهلك أن يروحوا في كسب المكارم ويٌدرون في حاحة من هو نائم فوالذي
وسع سمعه للأصوات ما من أحد أوعي قلباً سروراً إلا وخلق الله له من ذلك السرور
لطفاً فإذا نزلت به نائبة جري إليها كمالما في أخباره حتى يطردتها عنه كما تطرد غريبة
الإبل.

۰۰۰ش، ن، ي، ه، (أي جميع الخطوط الريئية ما عدا ما نقلتها هذه الصفحة، ل، ز، ق،
آ، ت، ك، كدا س، ج، ومصحّحة في ش، ق: الأمانة)، ويدو أنها غيرت في زمن ما عدداً
۰۰۰ش، ه، ومصحّحة في ن، ونسخة في ي: كذا أصل ي، ويدو أصل ن: (برجوا).

al-Sharif al-Radi - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
refraining from sodomy to ensure an abundance of offspring, and the giving of testimony to curb false denials. He has mandated refraining from untruth to honor truth, and a plainly voiced peace-greeting to protect against fear. He has mandated the Imamate as a system of governance for the community, and obedience to the Imam to show the Imamate’s lofty status.

3.238 When a criminal takes the oath at his testimony, have him swear that if he lies, he will be cut loose from God’s strength and power. Then, if he lies, God will punish him soon. Whereas if he swears by God, there is no god but He, his punishment will be delayed because he has acknowledged the oneness of the Almighty.

3.239 Son of Adam, execute your own will. Do with your property now what you wish to be done with it after you are gone.

3.240 Rage is a kind of madness, and the perpetrator repents. If he does not repent, his madness still rages.

3.241 Health increases when envy decreases.

3.242 ‘Alī said to Kumayl ibn Ziyād al-Nakhaʿī:
Kumayl, teach your children to venture out every morning to perform noble deeds, and to go out every night to ease people’s travails while they sleep. I swear by the one whose hearing encompasses all sounds, that if anyone puts a bit of joy in another’s heart, God creates a grace from that joy—then, if ever a calamity descends upon him, that grace flows to him like streaming water, driving away the calamity like a herdsman driving away trespassing camels.

1 Thus in all my primary manuscripts. The word “Imamate (imāmah)” is substituted in later manuscripts with the word “trust (amānah),” which could be a deliberate corruption. See details in my Note on the Edition and Translation: Previous Editions (p. 48).
3.243 وقال عليه السلام: إذا أتمتم فتابروا الله بالصدقة.

3.244 وقال عليه السلام: الوفاء لأهل الغدر عند الله والغدر بأهل الغدر وفاء عند الله.
3.243 If ever you fall into penury, make a deal with God by offering alms to the poor.

3.244 Loyalty toward people of deception counts with God as deception. Deception toward people of deception counts with God as loyalty.
فصل

نذكر فيه شيئًا من أخبار غريب كلامه المحتاج إلى التفسير

3.245 في حديثه عليه السلام
فإذا كان ذلك ضَرب يَعْبُسُ الدَّينَ بِذَنَبِهِ فِي جَمِيعٍ إِلَى كَانَ يَجْتَمَعُ قَرْعَ الخَرِيفِ.

3.246 في حديثه عليه السلام
هذا الخطيب الشَّخْشَح. يريد الماهر بالخطبة الماضي فيها وكل ماض في كلام أو سير فهو (شَخْشَح)، والكشح في غير هذا الموضع البخيل الممسك.

3.247 في حديثه عليه السلام
إِنْ لَلْخَصْوَمِ خَمِّمًا.
يريد بِذَلِكَ الْجَمِيعُ لَكَ بِئْسُهُ تَقَحَّمُ أَحْصَايْهَا فِي الْمَهَالِكَ والْمَتَالِفِ فِي الأَكْثَرِ، وَمِن ذَلِكَ خَمِّمُ الْأَفْرَابِ وَهُوَ أَنْ تَصِيعُهُمُ السَّنَةَ فَتَنْتَعَرَّقُ أُمُوَّلَهُمْ فَذَلِكَ تَقَحَّمُهَا فِيهِمْ. وَقَبْلِ فِيهِ وَجَهَّ أَخْرَ وَهُوَ أَنْ تَقَحَّمُهُمُ بِلَادَ الرِّيَفِ أَيْ تَحْرُجُهُمْ إِلَى دَخُولِ الْحَضُّ وَعَدَّ حُولَ الْبَدْوِ.

3.248 في حديثه عليه السلام
إِذَا بَلَغَ النَّسَاءَ نَصّ الحَقَّاقِ فَالْحُصَّةَ أَوْلِي.
وَبِرَوِيْ (نَصّ الحَقَّاقِ) وَ(الْحَقَّ) مِنْتَهِي الأَشْعَاءِ وَمِبْلَغُ أَقْصَاهَا كَالْحَقِّ فِي السَّيْرِ لَكَ بَعْضُ أَقْصَى ما تَقُدُّرُ عَلَى الْدِّبَابَةِ وَتَقُولُ (نَصَصَتْ الرِّجْلُ عَنِ الْأَمَّ) إِذَا أَسْتَقْصَت مَسَأَلَتِهِ عَنْهُ لَتَسْتَخْرِجْ مَا
Section on Rare Words
A selection from ‘Ali’s sayings that need lexical explanations

3.245 When that happens, religion’s queen bee will rest its abdomen on the ground, and people will gather around it like puffs of cloud gathering rapidly in autumn.\(^1\)

Raḍī: “Religion’s queen bee (\(ya'sūb al-dīn\))” denotes the great leader who will rule people’s affairs on that day. “Puffs (\(quza'\))” are wisps of waterless clouds.

3.246 This swift-tongued orator.\(^2\)

Raḍī: ‘Ali means someone who is skilled and adept in oratory. A man who is adept in speech or travel is called “swift (\(shaḥshaḥ\)).” \(Shaḥshaḥ\) in other contexts can also mean stingy and tight-fisted.

3.247 Quarrels are bucking steeds that hurl their riders into perils.\(^3\)

Raḍī: By “hurling into perils (\(quḥam\)),” ‘Ali means into pits of death, because quarrels often fling their riders into pits of death and perdition. The similar phrase, “the peril into which the Bedouin are hurled (\(quḥmat al-a’rāb\)),” denotes a year when drought strikes the Bedouin and emaciates their herds; that is what drought’s bucking with them means. The latter phrase is alternatively explained as the desert’s hurling the Bedouin into farmlands, meaning that it forces them to enter settled locales when their nomadic pastures dry up.

3.248 When a girl enters the life-phase of a three-year-old camel, her paternal relatives have greater right over her guardianship.

Raḍī: The phrase is also narrated as \(nasṣ al-ḥiqāq\), instead of \(nasṣ al-ḥaqāʾiq\). \(Naṣṣ\) means the limit of things and their ultimate reach, like the limit in traveling, because that is the farthest a camel can go. You say “I pressed the man to the limit about that matter”

---

1 Explained as a prophecy about the Messiah (\(Mahdī\)) coming at the end of time. “Resting its abdomen on the ground” refers to the establishment of his rule. R 3:362–363; H 19104–105.
2 ‘Ali is praising (1) Ṣaʿṣa‘ah ibn Ṣūḥān (H 19106); or (2), an unnamed young orator from the tribe of Qays, just before the Battle of the Camel outside Basra in 36/656 (Ṭabarī, \(Tārīkh\) 4:492).
3 When appointing his nephew Abdallāh ibn Ja‘far as his deputy in resolving a dispute. H 19107.
 عندنا فيه فنّننخف الحقائق، يرقد به الإدراك لأنّه منتبٍي الصغر والوقت الذي يخرج منه الصغير إلى حد كبير وهو من أفصح الكتّاب عن هذا الأمر، وأمّا إذا كاّنوا محتوىً مثل الإخوة والأعمال ويتوزّعها إن أرادوا ذلك، فالحِّقاق الأول بالمرأة من أمّا إذا كانوا محتوىً مثل الإخوة والأعمال ويتوزّعها إن أرادوا ذلك.\\n\\n(الحقائق) محاكمة الأم للحِّقاق في المرأة، وهو الجدال والخسومة، يقول كل واحد منهما للآخر أما أحقّ منه، هذا ويعطى منه «حافظه حقاً» مثل جاذله جذالًا. وقد قال إنّ (نص الحقيقة) بلغ العقل، وهو الإدراك لأنّه عليه السلام، أراد منتهى الأمر الذي يجب عليه الحقائق والحكم.

ومن رواه (نص الحِّقاق) فإمّا أراد جمع (حقاً). هذا معنى ما ذكره أبو علي القاسم بن سلام، والذي ينطبّق أنّ المراد بـ(نص الحِّقاق) هاهنا بلغ العقل إلى الحد الذي يجوز فيه تزيجها وتصرّفها في حقوق تشبه في الحقائق من الإبل وهي جمع حقّة وحِّق وهو الذي استكمل ثلاث سنين ودخل في الرابعة وعند ذلك يبلغ إلى الحد الذي يتّكل فيه من ركب ظهره، ونصّ في السير، و(الحقائق) أيضًا جمع حقّة، فالروايتان جميعاً ترجعان إلى معنى واحد وهذا أشبه بطريقة العرب عن المعنى المذكور أولًا.\\n\\n3.249 في حديثه عليه السلام: إنّ الإمام يبدو لحِّظة في القلب كمّا أردده الإمام أرداداً للمَّظة.

(المَّظة) مثل النكتة أو نحوها من البياض، ومنه قيل: (فرس المَّظة) إذا كان يجّحّلته شيء من البياض.
if you pushed him on a question to extract all the information that he had about it. *Naṣṣ al-ḥiqāq* means reaching physical maturity, because that is the limit of childhood, the point at which a child becomes an adult. This is among the most eloquent and marvelous of expressions that connotes this transformation. ‘Ali is saying: When a girl reaches that stage, her paternal relatives—close blood relatives such as brothers and uncles—have a greater right to her than her mother does, and they have a right to contract the girl’s marriage if they choose to do so. *Ḥiqāq* is the dispute (*muḥāqqah*) in which the mother engages against the girl’s paternal relatives, i.e., the clash and the quarrel, each of the two parties saying to the other, “I have more right (*anā aḥaqq*) in this matter than you.” From this comes the phrase, “I contested with him for a right (*ḥāqaqtuhu ḥiqāqan*),” which is similar to, “I disputed with him (*jādaltuhu jidālan*).” It is also said that *naṣṣ al-ḥiqāq* refers to the development of the mind, and that is what is meant by maturity, because ‘Ali meant the final stage of mental development, after which an individual can be trusted to look after her own rights and obligations. As for those who narrate the phrase with the variant *naṣṣ al-ḥaqāʾiq*, they take *ḥaqāʾiq* to be the plural of *ḥaqīqah* (a reality). The above paragraph constitutes Abū ʿUbayd al-Qāsim ibn Sallām’s explanation of the phrase.\(^1\) In my view, what is meant here by the phrase *naṣṣ al-ḥiqāq* is a woman’s reaching the stage at which she can be married and when she can be allowed to administer her own rights. ‘Ali compares young women at that stage to *ḥiqāq*, the plural of *ḥiqqah* and of *ḥiqq*, namely, a camel that has ended three years and begun its fourth. At this age, its back is strong enough to ride, and it can be pushed hard on a journey. The word in the variant narration, *ḥaqāʾiq*, is also a plural of *ḥiqqah*, and thus, both variants in the narration have the same meaning. This explanation conforms better with the ways of the Arabs than the first one given by Abū ʿUbayd.\(^2\)

### 3.249 Faith begins as a shining spot in the heart. As faith increases, the light expands.

Raḍī: “A shining spot (*lumẓah*)” is a fleck of white or something like a fleck. From this comes the phrase “a horse with a shining spot (*farasun almaẓ*),” when it has a fleck of white on its lip.

---

2. Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd (Ḥ 19:109–110) also finds problems with Abū ʿUbayd’s grammatical and lexical parsing. He prefers Raḍī’s explanations overall, but corrects the last part, saying that the Arabic word *ḥaqāʾiq* is the “plural of the plural” (*jamʿ al-jamʿ*) of *ḥiqqah*, the plural being *ḥiqqāq*. 
3.250 في حديثه عليه السلام
إِنّ الرَّجُلَ إِذَا كَانَ لِهِ الْدِّينُ الْظَّلُونُ يُحِبُّ عَلَيْهِ أَن يُزْرَكُهُ لِمَا مَضِى إِذَا قَبَضَهُ.
فِهِمُ الظَّلُونُ الَّذِي لا يَعْلَمُ صَاحِبُهُ أَيْبُهُ مِنْ الَّذِي هُوَ عَلَيْهِ أَمْ لَا فَكَانَهُ الَّذِي يَطْلُبُ بِفَرْقَةٍ يِرْجُوهُ وَمَرْزا لَا يِرْجُوهُ. وَهُوَ مِنْ أَفْصِحَتِ الْكَلَامِ. وَكَذَلِكْ كُلْ أُمِرْ تَتَالِبُهُ وَلَا تَدْرِي عَلَى أَيْشَٰهُ مِثْلَ الْفَرْقَةِ إِذَا مَا طَمَّا
أَنَّ مِنْهُ فُهُوَ الْظَّلُونُ. وَمِنْ ذَلِكْ قُوَّلُ الْأَعْشَى:
مَا يَصِلْلُ الجَدُّ الْظَّلُونُ الَّذِي يَقْدِفُ بِالْبُوْصَيَّةِ وَالْمَهْرِ
مَّوْلَةَ الْفُرْقَةِ إِذَا مَا طَمَّا
وَالْجَدُّ الْبَيْثُوَ الْظَّلُونُ الَّذِي لَا يُدْرِي هِلْ فِيهَا مَا ءَامَرَاهُ
۱
3.251 في حديثه عليه السلام أنَّهُ شَيْعَ جِيْشًا يَعْزِبُهُ فَقَالَ
أَعْتَبَا عَنِ النَّاسِ مَا أَسَطَعَمُ
وُمَعَانَهُ أَصَدَفَهُ عَنْ ذِكْرِ النَّاسِ وَشَغَلَ الْقَلْبِ بِهُنَّ وَأَصِنَّعُوا مِنَ الْمَقَارِبَةِ لَمْ يَكَفْ قَدْ أَخَذَ ﻓِي عِضْدِ الْحُجَّةِ وَيَقْدِحُ ﻓِي مَعَافِدَ العَزْمِ وَيِكَسَرُ عِنْ الغَدِّ وَيُبْلِقُ عَنْ الْإِبْدَاعِ فِي الْغَزْوِ وَكَلِّـنِّـ
آتِمَتْ مِنْ شَيْءٍ فَقَدْ أَعْتَبَ عَنِهِ وَالْعَذَابُ وَالْعَذَابُ المَمْتَعُوْمُ مِنْ الأَكْلِ وَالشَّرْبِ
۱
3.252 في حديثه عليه السلام
كَالِبِيَابِسِ الْفَالِحِ يُنَظُّرُ أَوَّلُ فُوْزِي مِنْ قِدَامِهِ.
If a man recovers a dubious debt, he should pay any past levies due on it.

Raḍī: A “dubious (zanoon)” debt is one whose owner is not sure whether he will recover it from the borrower or not. He vacillates, at one point hopeful, and at another losing heart. This is among the most eloquent of expressions. Similarly, everything you seek but do not know where you stand regarding it is “dubious.” A’shā’s verses are relevant to this explanation:

The dubious well
That the thunder clouds pass by
Is not the surging Euphrates
Which tosses ship and captain.

“Well (judd)” means a borehole, and “dubious (zanoon)” describes a well which one cannot be certain contains water.

As ʿAlī bade farewell to a military contingent he was sending on a raid, he said to them:
Abstain as much as possible from the sweetness of women.

Raḍī: This means desist from brooding over your women and occupying your hearts with thoughts about them; do not have intimacy with them either. These things dampen zeal, undo the knots of resolve, delay expeditious travel, and distract from committed fighting. A person who refrains from something has “desisted from it (a’dhaba anhu).” A person who desists (ʿadhīb or ʿadhūb)” is one who refrains from eating and drinking.

Like the successful gambler who awaits his first winning arrow.

---

1 A’shā, Diwān, 141, verses 19–20.
2 Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd (Ḥ 19:114) agrees with Raḍī’s explanation overall, but he says the verb in this explanatory phrase should be in Form i (ʿadhaba), not Form iv (a’dhaba).
3 Part of oration §1.23 (see context and note on drawing arrows to divide camel meat there).
الباسرون هم الذين يتضاربون بالقتال على الجزر. والفاتخ القاهر غالب يقال: قد فلج عليهم وفلجهم. وقال الرازي: لما رأيت فلنجا قد فلنجا.

في حديثه عليه السلام

كما إذا أاهر الباءأس أثنينا رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله وسلم يكن منا أقرب إلى العدو منه.

ومعنى ذلك أنه إذا عظم الخوف من العدو وآشت عضاض الحرب فزع المسلمون إلى قتال رسول الله بنفسه فينزل الله تعالى النصر عليهم ويأمنون معا كأنهم يخافونه ببكته. وقوله عليه السلام (إذا أهرب الباؤس) كتابية عن اشتت الأثام. وقد قيل في ذلك أقوال أحسنتها أنه شبه حماي الحرب بالنار التي تجمع الحراة والحررة فجعلها ولونها. ونما يقوي ذلك قول النبي صلى الله عليه وسلم: والذي رأى مجتلم الناس يوم حنين وهي حرب هوازن (الآن حمي الوطيس) والوطيس. مستويق النار فشيص الله عليه وآله ما استحر من جلال القوم بأحتدام النار وشدّة انتهاها.

انقضى هذا الفصل ورجعنا إلى سن غرض الأول في هذا الباب.
Raḍī: “Gamblers (yāsirūn)” are those who draw arrows to divide a slaughtered camel’s meat. A “successful (fālij)” person is one who conquers and is victorious. It is said, “He was victorious over them (falaja ʿalayhim)” or “He successfully overpowered them (falajahum).” A rajaz-poet has said, ⟨When I saw a successful man who was victorious (fālijan qad falajā).⟩

3.253 When the fighting raged red-hot, we would seek help from the Messenger, and when that happened, no one engaged the enemy more closely than he did.

Raḍī: This means that when fear of the enemy was greatest and the battle sank its teeth into us, the Muslims beseeched help from God’s Messenger, who then entered the fray in person. When that happened, God sent them victory and they were secured against what they had feared, because of the Messenger’s closeness to God. ʿAlī’s words, “When the fighting raged red-hot (idhā ḥmarra l-baʾs),” connotes the severity of the battle. Many explanations have been given for this metaphor, and the best of them holds that ʿAlī compared the heat of battle to fire because it combines burning and redness, thus, action and color. This explanation is supported by some words the Prophet spoke when he observed the impassioned fighting against the Hawāzin in the Battle of Ḥunayn: ⟨Now the furnace burns (al-āna ḥamiya l-waṭīs)!⟩ A furnace is the place where fire is stoked, and the Prophet compared the heat of the fighting to the flames of a fire and its intense blaze.

The section on rare words ends here. We return now to the chapter’s original thread.

---

1 Rajaz is a poetic meter used, in pre-Islamic and early Islamic times, for spontaneous verse recited in battle or otherwise, in the form mustafʿilun mustafʿilun mustafʿilun. The line is grammatically incomplete, and the second hemistich is not recorded in the commentaries. I have not been able to identify the poet: the line is not in the published Dīwāns of the famous Umayyad rajaz poets ʿAjjāj (d. ca. 90/715) or his son Ruʾbah (d. 145/762).

2 Hadith cited by Suyūṭī, Jāmiʿ, §3012.
3.254 وقال عليه السلام لما بلغه إغارة أصحاب معاوية على الأمراء نخرج بنفسه ماشياً حتى أتيت النخيل فأدرك الناس وقالوا يا أمير المؤمنين نحن نكفيكهم فقال عليه السلام والله ما تكفوني أنفسكم كيف تكفوني غيركم إن كانت الرعايا قبلي لتشكو حرف رعايتها فإني اليوم لأشكو حرف رعيتي كأني المقدوم وهم القادة أو الموزع وهم الزعمة.

فليما قال هذا القول في كلام طويل قد ذكرنا مختاره في جملة الخطاب تقدم إليه رجلان من أصحابه فقال أحدهما: «إنّي لا أملك إلا تفتيلي وأخي» فرزا بأمرك يا أمير المؤمنين نفذ له فقال عليه السلام وأبن تقعان ما أريد.

3.255 وقيل إن الحارث بن حوط أتاه عليه السلام فقال أطْرَاي أظل أصحاب الجمل كانوا على ضلالته فقال عليه السلام.
When news reached ʿAlī that Muʿāwiyah’s militia had raided Anbar, he stormed from the town and walked all the way to Nukhaylah. People caught up with him there and entreated him, “Stay back, Commander of the Faithful, let us take care of them for you!” He exclaimed:1

By God, you are not even able to protect me against yourselves, how will you protect me against others? In the past, people used to complain of the injustice of their rulers. I complain of the injustice wrought by my subjects! I seem to be the one being led, they the leaders. I seem to be the one under command, they the commanders.

Raḍī: When ʿAlī spoke these lines—followed by a long oration (of which a selection is included in our chapter on orations)2—two men from among his supporters stepped forward, and one of them declared, “I have jurisdiction only over myself and my brother”3 so give us your command, Commander of the Faithful, and we shall execute it forthwith.” ʿAlī replied, “What can the two of you accomplish? You are far short of what I need!”

It is narrated that al-Ḥārith ibn Ḥawṭ came to ʿAlī and challenged him, “Are you asking me to believe that the people who fought you at the Battle of the Camel were misguided?” ʿAlī replied:4

---

1 In 39/660, led by Sufyān ibn ‘Awf al-Ghāmidī, in which he killed ʿAlī’s governor, Ḥassān al-Bakrī. After the event described in our text, ʿAlī set up camp at Nukhaylah, preparing to march against Muʿāwiyah, but when evening came, most people returned to Kufa and ʿAlī was left with only his family and a handful of his staunch supporters, and he was forced to return to Kufa (F 443). ʿAlī’s oration at Nukhaylah is recorded in § 1.27.

2 § 1.27, § 1.94.1.

3 Qurʾān, Māʾidah 5:25.

4 Ḥārith ibn Ḥawṭ challenged ʿAlī thus while orating on the pulpit, presumably in Kufa, before marching to Ṣiffīn in 36/356. Jāḥiẓ, Bayān, 3:211. There are various speculations about Ḥārith’s father’s name, which indicate that Ḥārith was not well known. Most likely the name is “Ḥawṭ,” following mss Sh and N, and the commentaries R 3:374, and H 191:47, 148, as well as Jāḥiẓ, Bayān, 3:211, who adds “al-Laythī.” R 3:368 and H 191:48 also record the variant “ Kháṭ,” and state that Raḍī wrote the name thus in his own hand, “with the letter ‘Kh’, dotted, and vocalized as ‘ū’ (khāʾ muʿjamah maḏmūmah).” Ms Y says the same, but adds that the correct spelling according to the hadith scholars, however, is “Ḥawṭ.” Other variants of the name are “Ḥawt” and “Ḥūt” (B 993).
يا حارٍ إنك نظرت تحتك ولم تنظر فوقك فجرت إنك لم تعرف الحق فتعرف من أباه.
ولم تعرف الباطل فتعرف من أتاه.
فقال الحارث فإني أعتزل مع سعد بن مالك وعبد الله بن عمر فقال عليه السلام
إن سعداً وعبد الله بن عمر لم ينصرا الحق ولم يخذلا الباطل.

3.256 وقال عليه السلام: صاحب السلطان كراكب الأسد يغيب بموقعه وهو أعلم
بموضعه.

وقال عليه السلام: أحسنوا في عقب غريبكم تخفُّظوا في عقبكم.

3.257 وقال عليه السلام: إن كلام الحكماء إذا كان صوابا كان دواء وإذا كان خطأ
كان داء.

3.258 وقال عليه السلام: إذا كان غد فأتتني حتى أخبرك على أسماع الناس فإن نسيت مقالتي حفظها عليك غيرك.
فإن الكلام كالشاردة يغيبها هذا ويخطئها هذا.

وقد ذكرنا ما أجابه به عليه السلام فيما تقدمن من هذا الباب وهو قوله (الإيمان على أربع شعب).

3.259 وقال عليه السلام: يا ابن آدم لا تحمل هم يومك الذي لم يأتك على يومك الذي
أتاك فإنه إن يك من عمرك يأتي الله فيه برزقك.

ش، ن: كذا، وتبدو مصححة في ش: (فتعرف أهله).
Chapter 3: Sayings

Ḥārith, you have looked below you and not above you, which is why you have strayed.¹ You haven't recognized right, else you would have recognized its deniers, and you haven't recognized wrong, else you would have recognized its perpetrators.

Raḍī: Ḥārith responded, “I will sit out the fighting, alongside Sa’d ibn Mālik and ‘Abdallāh ibn ‘Umar,”² and ‘Alī exclaimed:
But Sa’d and ‘Abdallāh ibn ‘Umar refused to aid right or fight wrong!

3.256 A ruler rides a lion. People envy his status, but he knows his situation.

3.257 Be kind to orphans, and others will care for yours.³

3.258 When the learned speak truth, their words heal. When they speak falsehoods, they cause disease.

3.259 A man asked ‘Alī to define faith for him, and ‘Alī directed him:⁴ Come back tomorrow and I will inform you when others are present to hear me. Then, if you forget my words, others will remember them. Words are like runaway camels—this person catches them, another person loses them.

Raḍī: I have recorded the answer ‘Alī gave to this man in a text earlier in this chapter, which begins, “Faith has four branches.”⁵

3.260 Son of Adam, add not the worries of a day that has yet to arrive to the burdens of the day that is here! If your lifespan extends to tomorrow, God will provide sustenance.⁶

¹ The line is interpreted as follows: (1) You have followed those who broke the pledge of allegiance at the Battle of the Camel and not followed your rightful Imam (B 993); or, (2) you have followed the Syrians and Mu‘āwiyyah and not the majority of the Prophet’s Companions (F 443). Ṭāḥā Ḥārith (O Ḥārith), with the final letter “Th” dropped, is the apocopated (murakhkham) form of the vocative, Ṭāḥā Ḥārith.
² Sa’d ibn Mālik is better known as Sa’d ibn Abī Waqqāṣ.
³ Ibn ʿAsākir (Tārīkh, 42:497–498) places this line within oration § 1.63, that ‘Alī delivered in Ṣiffīn, in 37/657.
⁴ Excerpt from oration that ‘Alī delivered in his home, either in Medina or Kufa, additional parts of which are as § 1.69, § 1.103 (details in note), § 3.26.
⁵ § 3.26.
⁶ Similar lines in § 3.358.
وقال عليه السلام: أَحْبَبِ حُبِّي مَوْنَى مَا عَسِي أَن يَكُونَ بِغيضك يوْمًا مَا وأَبْغض بِغيضك مُوْنَى مَا عَسِي أَن يَكُونَ حُبِّي يوْمًا مَا.

وقال عليه السلام: الناس في الدنيا عاملاً عاملان في الدنيا والدنيا قد شغلته نيةه عن آخرته يعشق على من يُعْلِف الفقر وياَمَّه على نفسه فَيُنْفِي عمره في منفعة غيره. وعامل عمل في الدنيا لما بعدها الجاه الذي له من الدنيا غير عمل فَأَحْرَز الحَظُّين معاً وملك الدارين جميعًا فأصبح وَجِيَّهًا عند الله لا يسأل الله حاجة فيمنه.

وروي أنه ذكر عند عمر الخلافات في أيامه كِلَّة الكعبة وكَرَّهه فقال قوم لو أخذته فَجَهَّزته به جيوش المسلمين كان أعظم للأجر وما تصنع الكعبة بالحلي فيهم عمر بذلك وسأل عنه أمير المؤمنين عليه السلام فقال إن القرآن نُزّل على النبي عليه السلام والأموال أربعة أَمْوَال المسلمين فقسمها بين الورثة في الفريضة والثَّيْن فقسمه على مستحقيه واحْمَس فوضعه والصدقات فجعلها الله حيث جعلها. وكان حَلِّ الكعبة فيها يوشّده من ترَكَه الله على حالية ولم يترك في نسيانًا ولم يخفّ على مكاناً فَأَقَرَّه حيث أقره الله ورسوله.

قال عمر لولاك لأفضحك وترك الحلي بحالة.

وروي أنه عليه السلام رفع إليه رجلان سرقاً من مال الله أحدهما عبد من مال الله والآخرين من عُرض الناس فقال عليه السلام: أَمَّا هذا فهم من مال الله ولا حدّ على مال الله أَلَّا كَل يَبْعَضه بعضًا وأَلَّا الآخَرَ فعليه الحَدّ.
3.261 Love your friend but hold back some—someday he could be your foe. Hate your foe but hold back some—someday he could be your friend.¹

3.262 Those who labor in this world are of two kinds. The first is a man who labors in this world for this world. This world has distracted him from the hereafter. He fears leaving his family without means but thinks himself safe from want, and he uses his life only to provide profit to others. The second is a man who labors in this world for the hereafter and this world's benefits come to him without effort. He wins both fortunes and secures both abodes. He has earned a place of honor in God's eyes—whatever he asks for, God grants him.

3.263 It has been narrated that the many precious objects inside the Ka'bah were brought to 'Umar ibn al-Khattāb's attention, and someone suggested to him, "Why don't you sell these ornaments to equip the Muslim armies? That would win you greater reward from God, for what does the Ka'bah want with jewels!" The idea appealed to 'Umar, and he asked the Commander of the Faithful for his opinion—ʿAlī replied:² At the time when the Qurʾan was revealed to the Prophet, there were four kinds of property: property that belonged to Muslims that the Prophet distributed among their heirs according to the mandated shares; war gains that he distributed to whomever they accrued; the fifth share that God assigned where he did; and the alms-levy that he allocated where he did. These precious objects were present then inside the Ka'bah, and God left them as they were. It was not that he forgot to legislate about them, nor was their presence unknown to him—you too must keep them where God and his Prophet kept them.

ʿUmar exclaimed, "But for you, I would have been disgraced!" and he left the precious objects as they were.

3.264 It is narrated that two men who had stolen from the public treasury were brought before ʿAlī. One was a slave, himself belonging to the public treasury, and the other was a member of the public. ʿAlī pronounced:

As for this one, he comes from God's treasury and no corporal punishment accrues to him. In his case, part of God's property consumed another part of God's property. ‘Alī pronounced:³

As for this one, he comes from God's treasury and no corporal punishment accrues to him. In his case, part of God's property consumed another part of God's property. The other, however, is warranted the criminal penalty.

¹ Reportedly spoken on the day that 'Uthmān was killed, in Medina in 35/656. Balādhuri, Ansâb, 5:588.
³ Presumably in Kufa, sometime during 'Alī's caliphate, 35–40/656–661.
قال عليه السلام: لا تجعلوا علمكم جهلاً وقينكم شكًا إذا علمتم فأعموا وإذا تيقنتم فاقدموا.

قال عليه السلام: إن الطعم مورد غير مصدر وضمان غير وفٍّ. وربما شرق

شارب الماء قبل ره وكبّا عظم قدر الشيء المتنافس فيه عظمت الرزيّة لفده

والأثمن تعمي أعين البصائر والحلز يأتي من لا يأتيه.

قال عليه السلام: اللهم إني أعود بك أن تحسن في لمعة العيون علانيتي وتقبل

فهما أبطلت لك سيرتي محافظًا على رباء الناس من نفسي بجميع ما أنت مطلصع عليه من

 فأبدي للناس حسن ظاهري وأفضي إليك بسوء علٍّ تقربا إلى عبادك وتباعدا من

مرضباتك.
Accordingly, he ordered the second thief’s hand to be cut off.

3.265 If my feet had gained a foothold on this slippery path, I would have changed many things.

3.266 People, know with full certainty that God never gives to any of his servants—no matter how great his intrigues, how intense his passions, or how strong his maneuvers—more than what is ordained for him in the Wise Remembrance. God also never withholds from any of his servants—no matter how weak his form, or how paltry his wiles—what is ordained for him in the Wise Remembrance. The person who recognizes this truth and acts on it enjoys the greatest comfort and the most abundant gains. The person who rejects and doubts it is beset with the greatest preoccupations and much harm. Some who have been given many blessings are deceived by their blessings. Others who are burdened with many afflictions are given much good through their trials. So multiply your thanks, O listener, and lessen your haste. Do not stretch your hand beyond your share of sustenance.

3.267 Don’t exchange knowledge for ignorance or certainty for doubt. If you have knowledge, then act. If you are certain, go forward.

3.268 Greed drives people to the pools of death, from which there is no return, and it promises success but breaks its pledge—a man drinking water could choke before his thirst is quenched. Moreover, the greater the value of a thing, the greater the grief over its loss. Desire blinds the eyes of the discerning, while fortune comes to those who don’t chase after it.

3.269 God, I seek refuge in you! Let me not present a beautiful appearance to people’s eyes, while concealing from you an ugly heart. Let me not try to save face before them, when you know everything about me. Let me not show a beautiful form to them, while approaching you with wicked deeds. Let me not seek closeness to your servants, while distancing myself from your pleasure.

---

1 The Wise Remembrance (al-Dhikr al-ḥakīm) is the Qur’an, believed by Muslims to contain knowledge of all things.

2 Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih (ʿIqd, 3:74) ascribes this supplication to ʿAli’s grandson ʿAli Zayn al-ʿAbidin. Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd (Ḥ 6:178–187) explains—with examples, including the famous Eid supplication—that Zayn al-ʿAbidin often recited his grandfather’s supplications, and some of them became part of the latter’s collection of supplications, al-Ṣaḥīfah al-Sajjādiyyah.
وقال عليه السلام: لا والذي أمسينا منه في غُرْر ليلة دَهْمَاء تكُرُح عن يوم أَغْرَماً كان كَذَا وَكَذَا.

وقال عليه السلام:
قيلَ تدوم عليه أرجى من كثير مملوك منه.
إذا أَضْرَّت النواتِفالفرائض فآَرَضوها.
من تَّذكَّرُ بعد السفر أَسْتَعِدَ.
ليست الرؤية مع الأبيات فقد تذكِب العيون أَهَلها ولا يَغْشِ العقل من أَسْتَصِحه.
بينك وبين الموعظة حساب من الغرة.
جاِهلُكُم مَرْدَاد مُسْوَفَ.
قَطَعَ العلَمُ عَذَرَ المعَلِّمِينَ.
كَلّ مَعَاجِل يَسَأَل الْإِنَظَارٌ وكَلّ مَوْجَل يَتَعَلَّل بالِتَّسْوَيف.

وقال عليه السلام: ما قال الناس لشيء طوبيه له إلا وقد خُبِأ هل الدحر يوم سَوَء.

قال عليه السلام وقد سُلَّ عن القدّر:
طريقٌ مَظْلُومٌ فلا تَسْكُو، وَيَحَر عَميقٌ فلا تَلْجُو، وَسَر الله فلا تَنْكَفَو.

وقال عليه السلام: إذا أَرْذَل اللَّهُ عَبِداً حِكَّر عَلَى الْعَلَم.

وقال عليه السلام: كان لي فيما مضى أَخٌ في اللَّه وكان يَعْظُمِه في عيني صُغر
الدنيا في عينه وكان خارجاً من سلطان بَطْنه فلا يَشْتَيِ ما لا يَجِد ولا يُكَثِّر إذا وَجَد
وكان أكثر دهْر صامتاً فإن قال بَدَ القائِلين وَقْعَ عَلَي السائِلين وكان ضعيفاً مُسْتَضِعَّاً.
3.270  No, I swear by the one in whose protection we spent the black night, a night that smiled to reveal the brightness of day—that such-and-such a thing never happened!

3.271  Doing a little often is better than tiring of a lot.\(^1\)
If supplemental deeds of worship cause you to neglect mandatory ones, stop doing them.\(^2\)

One who ponders the journey’s length will be prepared.
True sight is not just seeing with your eyes. Eyes can lie, but the intellect never deceives those who seek its counsel.
Negligence veils you from counsel.
The ignorant among you do more of this and put off that.\(^3\)
Knowledge severs excuses.
Those who are summoned early ask for more time. Those who are given time indulge and procrastinate.

3.272  Never have people exclaimed, “What joy!” without fate setting up their secret day of doom.

3.273  ‘Alī was asked about destiny, and he warned:
It’s a dark road, don’t tread it. It’s a deep sea, don’t enter it. It’s God’s mystery, don’t torment yourself trying to understand it.

3.274  When God wants to debase a man, he denies him knowledge.

3.275  In a time now past, I had a brother whom I loved in God’s name.\(^4\) What made him great in my eyes was the smallness of the world in his. He was not controlled by his stomach—he neither craved what he could not have, nor indulged in what he had obtained. Mostly, he was silent. When he spoke, he quietened all who spoke and quenched the thirst of any who sought. He was frail, and people considered him weak, but when battle approached, he was a

---

\(^1\) Similar to §3.414.
\(^2\) Similar to §3.34.
\(^3\) See for... 3.34.
\(^4\) Lit. “brother in God” (akhun fi-llāh). The reference could be to the Prophet Muḥammad, or Abū Dharr al-Ghifārī, or Miqdād ibn al-Aswad, or Ṭūhāf, 234–235, and others); it is presented in the edition of Ibn al-Muqaffa’s al-Adab al-kabīr, 314, without attribution, perhaps a copyist error.
فإن جاء الجيد فهو لبث غاب وصل واد لا يدلي بحجّة حتي يأتي قاضيًا وكان لا يلوم أحدًا على ما يجد العذر في مثله حتى يسمع اعتذاره وكان لا يشكو وحجة إلا عند برئه وكان يقول ما يفعل ولا يقول ما لا يفعل وكان إن غلب على الكلام لم يغلب على السكت وكان على ما يسمع أخر منه على أن يتكلم وكان إذا بدأه أمران نظر أبا أقرب إلى الهوى نفائه. فعليم بهذا الخلافات فألزمها وتنافسوا فيها فإن لم تستطيعوها فاعلموا أنّ أخذ القليل خير من ترك الكثير.

3.276 وقال عليه السلام: لا لم يُوزّع الله على معصية لكان يجب أن لا يُعْصى شكرًا لنعمة.

3.277 وقال عليه السلام وقد عزى الأشعث بن قيس عن ابن له يا أشعث إن تحرن على أنك فقد استحققت ذلك منك الرجح وإن تصبر في الله من كلّ مصيبة خلفاً يا أشعث إن صبرت جرى عليك القدر وأنت مأجور وإن جرعت جرى عليك القدر وأنت مأجور سرّك وهو بلاء وفتنة وحزنك وهو ثواب ورحمة.

3.278 وقال عليه السلام على قبر رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله وازعنا إن الصبر جميل إلّا عنك وإن الجزء لبيقح إلّا عليك وإن المصاب بك لجليل وإنّه قبلك وبعدك جليل.

3.279 وقال عليه السلام: لا تصحب الماتي فإنه يُزين لك فعله ويود أن تكون مثله.
lion of the thicket, a viper of the ravine. He never presented an argument unless it was decisive. He never censured anyone for what might be excused until he had heard them out. He never complained of an ailment until he had recovered. He preached only what he practiced, and never what he did not. He may have been overcome in words, but he was never overcome in silence—he was more eager to listen than to speak. If two options presented themselves to him, he would look to see which appealed to his passions and do the opposite. You, too, should emulate these character traits. Stay with them, race to acquire them. If you cannot do them all, then know that doing a little is better than renouncing a lot.

3.276 Even if disobedience were not subject to punishment, you should never disobey God, in gratitude for his many blessings.

3.277 Offering condolences to al-Ash‘ath ibn Qays on the death of his son, ‘Ali said: Ash‘ath, it is fitting that you mourn your son—his relationship to you makes it right that you should mourn. But if you can bear his loss with fortitude, know this: you can find consolation for every loss in God. Ash‘ath, if you bear your affliction with fortitude, fate will have assailed you, yes, but you will be rewarded, whereas if you break down in shock, fate will have assailed you anyway, and you will be punished. Your son’s life made you happy, but he was a trial for you then and a test. His death has caused you grief, but it is a means for you now to earn God’s mercy and reward.

3.278 ‘Ali spoke these lines at the Messenger of God’s grave, just after burying him: Patience is beautiful except in our loss of you. Shock is loathsome except in our loss of you. The calamity brought by your death is enormous, while deaths before and after you mean nothing.

3.279 Don’t spend time with a fool. He will lure you to his ways and try to turn you into him.

---

1 See also ‘Ali’s expressions of condolence to Ash‘ath on the death of his brother in § 3.89, and to an unnamed relative, in § 3.385. Abū al-‘Atāhiyah paraphrased this theme in a line of consolation, “You will no doubt be subject to the flow of destiny, and either you will be rewarded for your response or a sinner” (ولا بد من جريان القضاء، إما مناسباً وإما أليماً). H 19:192; not in the published Dīwān.
2 Reference to Qur’an, Taghābun 64:15.
3 In Medina, 11/632.
وقال عليه السلام وقائ عن مسافة ما بين المشرق والمغرب مسيرة يوم الشمس.

وقال عليه السلام: أصدقاءك ثلاثة وأعداؤك ثلاثة فأصدقائك صديقك وصديقه سليمان رضي الله عنه وصدقيك وصديقه عندو او يعدو وصدقيك.

ومما أنت كالطاعن نفسه لينقل رده.

وقال عليه السلام: ما أكثر ال عبر وأقل ال اعتبار.

وقال عليه السلام: من بالغ في الخصومة أثم ومن قصر فيها ظلم ولا يستطيع أن يتقي الله من خاصم.

وقال عليه السلام: ما أهمني ذنب أميلته بعده حتى أصلي ركعتين.

وقال عليه السلام: كيف يحاسب الله الخلق على كثرتهم فقال: كيف يحسبهم ولا يرونهم قال كييرقصهم ولا يرونهم.

وقال عليه السلام: رسولك ترجمان عقلك وكتابك أبلغ من ينطق عنك.

وقال عليه السلام: ما البطل الذي قد أشتد به البلاء بأحوج إلى الدعاء من المعافي الذي لا يأمن البلاء.

واي ه وه، ونسخة في ش: كذا أصل ش: (ما). ن: معاً.

al-Sharif al-Radi - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
3.280 ʿAlī was asked, “What is the distance between East and West?” and he answered: The sun’s day-long trek.

3.281 You have three friends and three enemies. Your friends are your friend, the friend of your friend, and the enemy of your enemy. Your enemies are your enemy, the enemy of your friend, and the friend of your enemy.

3.282 A man bore down on an enemy, putting himself in harm’s way. Seeing this, ʿAlī said to him:¹
You are like one who pierces himself with a spear to kill the man riding pillion behind.

3.283 How many lessons and how few heeded!

3.284 To argue too much is to sin, and to argue too little is to lose, but it is impossible for a man who argues all the time to remain godfearing.

3.285 As long as I can pray for forgiveness, I don’t fear punishment for past sins.

3.286 ʿAlī was asked, “How will God judge people when there are so many?” and he replied:²
Just as he feeds them though there are so many!

He was then asked, “How will he judge them when they cannot see him?” and he replied:
Just as he feeds them though they cannot see him!

3.287 Your envoy is your intellect’s interpreter, your letter your most effective spokesman.

3.288 A man who is afflicted, whose hardship is severe, is not more in need of prayer than a man who has been spared but has no guarantee of safety.

¹ Ṭabarī (Tārīkh, 4:277) narrates a version of this line as ʿAlī’s words to a group of people in Medina who were criticizing ʿUthmān in the affair of his governor in Kufa, Walīd ibn ʿUqbah, in 30/651.
² The man who asked is reported to be Salmān al-Fārisī, presumably in Medina, before Salmān left for Iraq in ʿUthmān’s caliphate (r. 23–35/644–656). Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih, Ḥaqīqat, 4:288.
وقال عليه السلام: الناس أبناء الدنيا ولا يلازم الرجل على حب أمه.

وقال عليه السلام: إنّ المسكين رسول الله فمّن منعه فقد منع الله ومن أعطاه فقد أعطى الله.

وقال عليه السلام: ما زنى غيّر قطّ.

وقال عليه السلام: كفى بالأجّل حارسًا.

وقال عليه السلام: ينام الرجل على اللُّكِل ولا ينام على الحَرَب.

ومعنى ذلك أنّه يصير على قتل الأولاد ولا يصير على سلب الأموال.

وقال عليه السلام: مودّة الآباء قربة الأبناء والقرابة إلى المودّة أُحِوج من المودّة.

وقال عليه السلام: اتَّقوا ظُنُون المؤمنين فإنّ الله تعالى جعل الحقّ على أَلْسِتِهم.

وقال عليه السلام: لا يصدق إِيَمٌان عبد حتّى يكون بما في يده الله سبحانه أوقه منه بما في يده.

إنّ ش: كذا، ي، ومصّحّحة في ش: أضيفت «بين». 
3.289 People are children of the world, and a man can't be blamed for loving his mother.

3.290 A beggar is God's messenger, whoever refuses him, refuses God, whoever gives to him, gives to God.¹

3.291 A man with a jealous sense of honor never fornicates.

3.292 My allotted lifespan is protection enough!²

3.293 A man may sleep when bereaved, but he can't find sleep when looted.

Raḍī: This means that a man might endure if his sons are killed, but he cannot endure when his wealth is plundered.

3.294 Affection among fathers produces kinship among their sons. Kinship needs affection more than affection needs kinship.

3.295 Beware lest you arouse suspicions in believers' hearts, for God has placed truth on their tongues!

3.296 A person's faith is not sincere until he trusts God's gifts more than his own possessions.³

¹ Narrated by ʿAlī from the Prophet in Nuʿmān, Daʿūm, 1:243.
² Spoken at Ṣiffīn when ʿAlī's associates asked him to be wary of Muʿāwiyah's assassins. Ṣadūq, Tawḥīd, 368.
³ Masʿūdī (Murūj, 2:417–418) reports that a suppliant came to ʿAlī's door, and ʿAlī instructed his son Ḥasan to fetch a dirham from his mother, Fāṭimah (this would presumably be shortly before Fāṭimah died, in 11/632, when Ḥasan was a young child). Ḥasan came back with her caution that they had only six dirhams, which were needed to buy flour. ʿAlī responded with the line at hand, and told Ḥasan to bring all six dirhams, which he proceeded to give to the beggar. The next morning, ʿAlī bought a camel on credit for 140 dirhams, which he then resold for 200, thus coming home with a profit of 60 dirhams, and he said to Fāṭimah that this was a fulfilment of God's promise, ﴿اَهِلَاثْمَأُرْشَعُهَلَفِةَنَسَحْلاِبَءاَجنم﴾: «Whoever brings one good deed shall be rewarded with ten of its kind» (Qurʾan, Anʿām 6:160). A similar line is attributed to the Prophet in Quḍāʿī, Shihāb, § 2.34.
3.297 وقال عليه السلام لأنس بن مالك وقد كان يبعث إلى طلحة والزبير لما جاءا إلى البصرة يذكّرهما شيئاً سمعه من رسول الله صلى الله عليه وسلم في معاها قلبي من ذلك فرجع إليه فقال:
إني أُنسبت ذلك الأمر فقال عليه السلام:
إنه كنت كاذباً فضربت الله بها بيضاء لامعة لا تواريها العشمة.

يعني البرص. فأصاب أنساً هذا الداء فيما بعد في وجهه وكان لا يرى إلا مثيرقاً.

3.298 وقال عليه السلام: إن للقلب إقبالاً وإداراً فإذا أقبلت فأحملها على النواقل وإذا أدرت فأقتصروا بها على الفرائض.

3.299 وقال عليه السلام: في القرآن نباء ما قبلكم وخبر ما بعدكم وحكم ما بينكم.

3.300 وقال عليه السلام: ردد الخبر من حيث جاء فإن الشر لا يدفعه إلا الشر.
3.297 When Ṭalḥah and Zubayr marched on Basra, ‘Alī sent Anas ibn Mālik to remind them of something he, Anas, had heard about the two of them from God’s Messenger. Anas wanted to evade this task, and he came back to ‘Alī, saying, “I forgot what it was I had heard.” ‘Alī exclaimed: 

If you are lying, may God mar your face with a bright white patch that your turban cannot conceal!

Raḍī: He meant vitiligo (baraṣ). Shortly thereafter, Anas contracted this disease, and was never seen thereafter without a veil on his face.

3.298 Hearts are sometimes receptive and sometimes withdrawn. When they are receptive, urge them to the supplementary rites of worship. When they are withdrawn, let them stay with the mandatory rites.

3.299 The Qurʾan contains reports about what happened before you, prophecies about what will come after you, and laws about what is present among you.

3.300 Cast back the stone to whence it came. Only evil repels evil.

---

1 Some commentators (R 3:390; B 1000) say that this line, with Raḍī’s contextualization, refers to ‘Alī’s sending Anas to Ṭalḥah and Zubayr before the Battle of the Camel outside Basra in 36/656, to remind them of Muhammad’s prophetic warning, ⟨You will fight ‘Alī in battle, and you will be in the wrong.⟩ Disagreeing with the etymology, Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd (19:217–218, citing Ibn Qutaybah, Maʿārif, chapter on vitiligo, baraṣ) says the histories do not report that ‘Alī ever sent Anas to speak with Ṭalḥah and Zubayr. Rather, they report that ‘Alī once called out to people in the gathering space of Kufa (sometime during his caliphate between 36/656 and 40/661), and said, “Whoever has heard God’s Messenger say about me, while he was returning from the Farewell Pilgrimage, ⟨For whomsoever I am master, ‘Alī is his master; God, love those who love him, and hate those who hate him⟩, I ask him in God’s name to step forward and testify!” Some men stepped forward and testified that they had been present and heard. ‘Alī said to Anas, “You were there too! What is the matter with you?” Anas replied, “Commander of the Faithful, I have grown old, and what I have forgotten is more than what I remember.” It was then that ‘Alī spoke the lines in the text above.

2 Similar to § 3.177.

3 Masʿūdi (Muṣrī, 3:306) reports that Ḥārith al-Hamdānī complained to ‘Alī that people had forsaken the Qurʾan and were following specious hadith. ‘Alī replied that the Prophet had informed him about upcoming seditions and instructed that people should cleave in such times to the Qurʾan, and the saying at hand is from the Prophet’s words that ‘Alī quoted.
3.301 وقال عليه السلام: لكتابته عبد الله بن أبي رافع أله دوابتك وأطلق حطة قلمك وفرج بين السطور وقَرَمْطَ بين الحروف فإن ذلك أجر بصباح الخلق.

3.302 وقال عليه السلام: أنا يعسوب المؤمنين والمال يعسوب الفجّار.

ومعنى ذلك أن المؤمنين يتبوعون الفجّار ينال المال كما ينال النحل يعسوبهما وهو رئيسي.

3.303 وقال له بعض اليهود ما دفتم نيكم حتى أختلفتم فقال له إما أختلفنا عنه لا فيه ولكنيما ما جفت أرجلكم من البحر حتى قلت لنيكم أجعل لنا إلىها كما لهم آلهة قال إنك قوم نجاهون.

3.304 وقال له بأي شيء غليت الأقران فقال عليه السلام ما لقيت رجلاً إلا أناعني على نفسه.

يؤمن بذلك إلى تمكّن هيبته في القلوب.

3.305 وقال عليه السلام لأبي محمد رحمه الله يا بني إسرائيل أخف عليك الفقر فأستعد بالله منه فإن الفقر متَقَقصة للذين مدهشة للعقل داعية للعِمق.

3.306 وقال عليه السلام لسائل سألته عن معضلته سأل تفقت ولا تسأل تعتن فأن الجاهل المتعلم شبيه بالعالم وإن العالم المتعلّم شبيه بالجاهل.

اش، يا: كذا نضيف (المتعلّم).
3.301 ʿAlī instructed his scribe, ʿUbaydallāh ibn Abī Rāfiʿ, as follows: Thicken the ink in your inkpot, lengthen the nib of your reed-pen, keep spaces between the lines, and bring the letters close together. Your lettering will then be beautiful.

3.302 I am the queen bee of the believers.1 Money is the queen bee of the depraved.

Raḍī: This means that while the depraved follow money, believers follow me, just as honeybees follow the queen. The “queen bee (yaʿṣūb)” is the leader of the honeybees.

3.303 A Jew taunted ʿAlī, “Hardly had you buried your Prophet, when you fell into disagreement!” and ʿAlī retorted: We disagreed after him, not about him. But your feet had not dried from the sea when you demanded of your Prophet, «“Make for us a god like their gods!” whereby he castigated you saying, “you are an ignorant people!”»2

3.304 ʿAli was asked, “What force did you use to overthrow your adversaries?” and he replied: I never met a man who didn't help me against himself!

Raḍī: ʿAli is alluding to the terror he would strike deep into their hearts.

3.305 ʿAlī counseled his son Muḥammad ibn al-Ḥanafiyyah: My dear son, I fear for you if you ever fall into poverty, so ask God to protect you from it. Poverty harms the faith, bewilders the mind, and incites to malice.

3.306 ʿAli replied thus to a man who asked him about a complicated matter:3 Ask to understand, not to challenge. An ignorant man who seeks knowledge is almost like the learned, whereas a learned man who is overly aggressive is almost an ignoramus.

---

1 ʿIzz al-Dīn Ibn al-Athīr (Uṣd, 5:287) states that the Prophet made this statement about ʿAlī.
2 Qurʾan, Aʿrāf 7:138.
3 In Kufa, to a man named Ibn al-Kawwāʿ, who later became one of the leaders of the Kharijites. Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 146; Jurjānī, Iʿtibār, 587.
قال عليه السلام لعبد الله بن العباس وقد أشار عليه في شيء لم يوافق رأيه
لك أن تشير علي وأرى فإن عصيتك فأطعني.

وروي أنه عليه السلام لما ورد الكوفة قادماً من صفين مر بالشاميين فسمع بكاء
الناس على صلى صفين وخرج إليه حرب أبن شريح الشامي وكان من وجه قومه فقال له
أبلغكم نفسكما على ما أسمع ألا تنهومن عن هذا الرنين.

أقبل منهم معه وهو عليه السلام راكب فقال له
ارجع فإن من يشبي مثلك مع مثل فتحة للوالي ومذالة للمؤمن.

وقال عليه السلام وقد مرتقتل الخوارج يوم النهر
بُؤسًا لكم لقد ضركم من غربكم.

فقيل له من غرهم يا أمير المؤمنين فقال
الشيطان المضل والنفس الأمارة بالسوء غرته بالأماني وفسحت لهم في المعاشي
وضعتهم الزهور فأخفشتهم بماء النار.

وقال عليه السلام: اتقوا معاصي الله في الحلوات فإن الشاهد هو الحاكم.
3.307 ‘Abdallāh ibn al-‘Abbās offered ‘Alī counsel in a certain matter. ‘Alī, who had a
different opinion, replied:\footnote{When the Muslims had pledged allegiance to ‘Ali in 35/656 in Medina, ‘Abdallāh ibn al-‘Abbās advised him to appoint Ţalḥah as governor of Basra and Zubayr as governor of Kufa. Ibn al-‘Abbās also advised ‘Alī to reaffirm Mu‘āwiyah as governor of Damascus, and then, when Mu‘āwiyah had pledged allegiance, to affirm him if he continued to obey, and replace him if he stirred up dissent. ‘Alī exclaimed, “Great God! Should I corrupt my faith with another’s worldliness!” then spoke the lines in our text. F 452; B 1004; Ṭabarī, Tārīkh 4:441.}

You have the right to offer counsel, and I shall give it thought. But if I decide
against it, then you will need to obey.

3.308 It is related that when ‘Alī arrived in Kufa from Șiffīn, he passed by the lodg-
ings of the Shibām clan and heard women weeping loudly over their fallen warriors.

One of their leaders, Ḥarb ibn Shuraḥbīl al-Shibāmī, came out to greet ‘Alī, who said to
him:\footnote{In 37/657. Details in Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 5:62; Minqarī, Waqʿat Șiffīn, 531 (with this text).}

Do your women rule you? What is this I hear—can’t you stop their wailing?

Ḥarb then began to walk alongside ‘Alī, who was on horseback, and ‘Alī said to him:

Go back inside! A man like you, walking beside a man like me, bodes nothing
but sedition for the ruler and shame for the believer.\footnote{I.e., it puffs up the ruler and humiliates the believer, because his chest and face are close to
the mounted rider’s feet. Ḥ 19:234.}

3.309 Following the Battle of Nahrawān, ‘Alī walked out among the Kharijites’ corpses,
and he addressed them as follows:\footnote{In 38/658. Details and text in Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 5:88.}

What misfortune you have earned! The one who deceived you is the one who
injured you.

Asked, “Who deceived them, Commander of the Faithful?” he answered:

Satan the great deceiver and their own evil-inciting passions. The two together
deceived them with false hopes, opened their path to sin, promised them con-
quest and victory, and then pitched them into hellfire.

3.310 Beware of disobeying God in private, for the witness is himself the judge.
وقال عليه السلام: لا بلغه قتل محمد بن أبي بكر.

3.311 إن حزناً عليه على قدر سرورهم به إلا أنهم نقيصوا بغيضًا ونقيصنا حببًا.

وقال عليه السلام: العمر الذي أذن الله فيه إلى ابن آدم ستون سنة.

3.312 وقال عليه السلام: ما ظفر من ظفر الإمام به والغالب بالشر مغلوب.

وقال عليه السلام: إن الله سبحانه فرض في أموات الأغنياء أقوات الفقراء مما جاع فقير إلا مما منع غني والله تعالى سائلهم عن ذلك.

3.313 وقال عليه السلام: الاستغتاء عن العذر أعرّ من الصدق به.

وقال عليه السلام: أقلّ ما يلزمك قال أن لا تستعينوا بنعمة على معاصيه.

وقال عليه السلام: إن الله سبحانه جعل الطاعة غنيمة الأياض عند فترته العجزية.

3.314 وقال عليه السلام: السلطان وزّعة الله في أرضه.

وقال عليه السلام في صفة المؤمن المؤمن يشربه في وجهه وحجزه في قلبه وأوسه شيء صدرًا وأذلّ شيء نفسهينين كره الرفعة ويشنّ السمعة. طويل عن بعد همّ كثير ضمه مندعل وقته شكور صبور مغمور بنكرته.

3.315 ضنين بخلّته سهل الخليقة لينّ العريقة نفسه أصلب من الصلد وهو أذل من العبد.
3.311 When the report of Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr’s slaying reached ʿAlī, he exclaimed:¹
Our grief for him equals their joy at his death! They have dispatched an enemy and we have lost someone we loved!

3.312 Anyone to whom God has granted sixty years of life has no excuse left.²

3.313 A person who is conquered by sin can never win. A person who prevails through evil will be crushed.

3.314 God has mandated food for the poor from the wealth of the rich. Whenever a poor man goes hungry, it is because a rich man has refused to give, and God will surely hold him accountable.

3.315 Not needing to give an excuse is even better than giving a genuine one.

3.316 The least you owe God is not to use his gifts to sin against him.

3.317 God has made obedience to him a prize for the wise at a time when the weak are remiss.

3.318 The ruler is God’s custodian on earth.³

3.319 Describing the believer, ʿAlī said:⁴
A believer shows his joy in his face and hides his sorrow in his heart. His generosity is vast, his humility is deep. He dislikes fame and detests praise. His grief is long lasting, his aspirations reach far. He stays mostly silent and spends his time well. He always gives thanks and is patient in adversity. He remains immersed in thought and is cautious when making friends. His temperament is mild and his nature is easygoing. He is stronger than a rock yet humbler than a slave.

---

¹ In Kufa, 38/658. Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr, ʿAlī’s ward and his governor in Egypt, was tortured and killed by ʿAmr ibn al-ʿĀṣ. Text and details of the news reaching ʿAlī from Egypt of Muḥammad’s death and from Syria of the Syrian’s rejoicing, in Ṭabarī, Ṭārīkh, 5:108.

² Similar saying attributed to the Prophet in Quḍāʿī, Shihāb, § 2.66.

³ Narrated within ʿAlī’s epistle to commanders, presumably sent from Kufa at the beginning of his caliphate in 36/656. Minqarī, Waqʿat Ṣiffīn, 125–126.

⁴ Kulaynī (Kāfī, 2:226–230) presents this saying as part of the Hammām Oration (§ 1.191) in which ʿAlī describes the pious.
3.320 وقال عليه السلام: لو رأى العبد الأجل ومصيره لأبغيض الأمل وغروره.

3.321 وقال عليه السلام: لكل آمرئ في ماله شريكان الوارث والحوارث.

3.322 وقال عليه السلام: الداعي بلا عمل كالراحي بلا وتر.

3.323 وقال عليه السلام: العلم علان مطبع ومسموع ولا يفع المسموع إذا لم يكن المطبع.

3.324 وقال عليه السلام: صواب الرأي بالدول يقبل بإقلاها ويذهب بدهابها.

3.325 وقال عليه السلام: العفاف زينة الفقر والشكر زينة الغنى.

3.326 وقال عليه السلام: يوم العدل على الظلم أشد من يوم الجور على المظلوم.

3.327 وقال عليه السلام: الأقوال محفوظة والسرائر مبلى و كل نفس بما كسبت رهينة الناس منقصون مدحلون إلا من عصم الله سائلهم متعنت ومحيبهم مكلف يكاد أفضلهم رأيا يرده عن فضل رأيه الرضي والسخط ويكاد أصلهم عودا تطأه المحظة وتستحيل الكلمة الواحدة. معاشر الناس انقرأ الله فكم من مؤصل ما لا يبلغه وبيان ما لا يسكنه وجامع ما سوف يترك وله من باطل جمعه ومن حق منهه أصابه حراما وأحتمل به آئاما فإبوزره وقدم على ربه آسفًا لا أسف مما خسروه وألذروها ذلك هو الخسران للدين.

3.328 وقال عليه السلام: من العصمة تذغر المعاصي.
3.320 If a man saw his end and his final destination, he would scorn all desires and their deadly deception.

3.321 Every man's wealth is shared by two partners: heirs and accidents.

3.322 A person who prays without deeds is like an archer who shoots with an unstrung bow.

3.323 Knowledge is of two kinds, innate and acquired—the acquired gives no benefit in the absence of the innate.

3.324 Good judgment turns on preordained revolutions of power. It comes when they come, and leaves when they leave.

3.325 Temperance adorns poverty, gratitude adorns wealth.¹

3.326 Justice's day against the oppressor will be harsher than tyranny's day against the oppressed.²

3.327 Words are remembered, intentions are tested, and «every soul is mortgaged to what it has earned.»³ Most people—except those whom God has protected—are flawed and weak-minded. The one who asks questions asks only to object, the one who answers pretends to know the answer. Even the person who possesses judgment is in danger of being subverted by desire or annoyance. Even the person who has inner strength is in danger of being injured by a look or altered by a word. O people, remain conscious of God! How many a person hopes for what he will not attain! How many a person builds what he will not inhabit! How many a person amasses what he will soon abandon! And perhaps he amassed it from illicit sources or by denying someone's rights. Perhaps he seized it unlawfully and loaded his back with a burden of sin. He then returns to the hereafter with his heavy load and arrives before his Lord filled with guilt and pain, «having lost this world and the hereafter—that is the most catastrophic loss!»⁴

3.328 One way to protect from sinning is to deny access to its means.

---
¹ From 'Ali's oration titled Wasilah (Ḥarrānī, Tuhaf, 93). The first half of this saying is similar to § 3.60.
² § 3.226 is similar.
³ Qur'an, Muddaththir 74:38.
⁴ Qur'an, Ḥajj 22:11.
وقال عليه السلام: من نظر في عيب نفسه أشتغل عن عيب غيره. ومن رضي برزق الله لم يحزن على ما فاته. ومن سلّ سيف البغي قُبل به. ومن كابذة الأمور عطب. ومن أقتحم الْجِحَّة غرّق. ومن دخل مداخل الْسُوء أتَهُم. ومن كلّ كلاّمه كثر خطاؤه ومن كثر خطاؤه قلّ حياؤه ومن قلّ حياؤه قلّ ورَعه. ومن قلّ ورَعه مات قلبه ومن مات قلبه دخل النار. ومن نظر في عيوب الناس فأدركها ثمّ رضيّها لنفسه فذلك الأحقّ بعينه. القناعة مال لا ينفد. ومن أكثر من ذكر الموت رضيّ من الدنيا بالبِسيِر. ومن علم أنّ كلاّمه من عمله قلّ كلاّمه إلا فيما يعْنيه. وقال عليه السلام: للظلمن من الرجال ثلاث علامات يظلم من فوقه بالمعصية ومن دونه بالغَلَبة ويُظاهر القوم الظلمة. وقال عليه السلام: عند تناهي الشدّة تكون الفرجة وعند تضايّق حَلَق البلاء يكون الرخاه.
3.329 Think of the dignity of your countenance as water frozen in place until melted away by solicitation—to whom will you offer its droplets?

3.330 Praise beyond a person's worth is flattery. Praise below a person's worth is impotence or envy.

3.331 The worst sin is one its perpetrator thinks inconsequential.

3.332 Those who perceive their own faults are too preoccupied to notice the faults of others.

Those who are happy with the sustenance God has given them are not saddened by what they don't have.

Those who draw the sword of treachery are slain by it.
Those who pitch themselves against fate perish.
Those who rush blindly into the deep sea drown.
Those who enter places of vice invite suspicion.

When words multiply, errors multiply; when errors multiply, modesty decreases; when modesty decreases, restraint decreases; when restraint decreases, the heart dies—and whoever's heart has died enters the Fire.

If you remark on the faults of others while tolerating your own, you are the epitome of the fool.

Contentment is wealth that never runs out.1
Contemplate death, and you will want little from this world.
If you realize that words are deeds, you will speak only when it benefits you.

3.333 An oppressor is identified in three ways: he oppresses those above him by his disobedience, he oppresses those below him by his brutality, and he supports the faction of oppressors.

3.334 When suffering becomes intense, deliverance will arrive. When an ordeal's noose tightens, its grip will slacken.

---

1 § 3.50 is identical.
وقال عليه السلام: أكبر العيب أن تعب ما فيك مثله.

3.336

وهنا يحضرته رجل رجلا بغلام ولد له فقال له (ليشة الفارس) فقال عليه السلام: لا تقل ذاك ولكن قل شكرت الواهب وبوريك لك في الموهوب وبلغ أشهد ورزقت ير. وبني رجل من عماره بناء نقمة فقال:

3.338

أطلعت الورقة رؤوسها إن البناء ليصف لك الغنى.

3.339

وقيل له عليه السلام لو سدّ على رجل باب بيت وترك فيه من أين كان يأتيه rez قف.

3.340

وعرّى عليه السلام قوماً عن ميّت فقال:

3.341

إن هذا الأمر ليس بكمن بداية ولا إليك أنتئوى وقد كان صاحبكم هذا يسافر فعدوه في بعض أسفارا فإن قدم عليك ولا قدتم عليه. وقال عليه السلام: إنها الناس يبركم الله من النعمة وقوّين كما يرا كم من القامة.

3.342

وقال عليه السلام: يا أسرى الرغبة أقسموا فإن المعرج على الدنيا لا يروعه منها إلا صريف أتباع الحداثة. إنها الناس تولوا من أنفسكم تأديبها وأعدوا بها عن ضرارة عاداتها.

ش، ن، ي، ونسخة في هـ كذا. أصل هـ، ومصححة في ش، ونسخة في ن، ي: (ضراوة).
3.335 ʿAlī said to one of his associates:
Don't devote the major part of your life to your spouses and children. If they are God's devotees, God will take care of them. And if they are God's enemies, well then, why should you occupy yourself with caring for God's enemies?

3.336 Your biggest fault is faulting others for a fault you too possess.

3.337 A man congratulated another on the birth of a son in ʿAlī's presence, saying, ⟨May the warrior bring you joy!⟩1 ʿAlī rebuked him:2
Don't say that! Say instead: May you thank your divine benefactor, may his heavenly grace encompass this child who is his gift, may the child grow to full strength, and may you be blessed with his devotion!

3.338 One of ʿAlī governors built a grand mansion, and ʿAlī said to him in rebuke:
Here are silver dirhams displaying their faces! The mansion speaks loudly of your wealth.

3.339 Asked, “If a man's door is locked with him inside, from where does his sustenance enter?” ʿAlī replied:
The same place from where his death will enter.

3.340 Offering condolences to some persons upon the death of a loved one, ʿAlī said:
This matter has not begun with you and will not end with you. Your friend used to travel, so think of him as being away on one of his journeys. If he does not come back to you, you will go forward to meet him.

3.341 People! Let God see you vigilant in times of ease, just as he sees you wary in times of hardship. Whoever fails to see the test when his hands fill with blessings is complacent about the impending terror. Whoever fails to see the trial when his hands straiten, squanders the reward he could have received.

3.342 Prisoners of craving, desist! Anyone who fixes his hopes on the world fails to take warning until calamity, gnashing her teeth, approaches. People, restrain yourselves, turn away from your rapacious ways!

---

1 Preferred felicitation used in the pre-Islamic period at the birth of a son. Ḥ 19:270; R 3:403.
2 Māmaṭīrī (Nuzahah, 394) records ʿAlī's line (without the rebuke) as having been addressed to ʿAbdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās, congratulating him on the birth of a son, upon whom ʿAlī then proceeded to bestow, at ʿAbdallāh's request for a name, the name ʿAlī and the patronymic Abū al-Ḥasan, after his own.
وقال عليه السلام: لا تظننّ بكلمة مخرجت من أحد سوءًا وأن تتجد لها في الخير محتملًا.

وقال عليه السلام إذا كانت لك إلى الله سبحانه حاجة فأبدأ بمسألة الصلاة على النبي صلى الله عليه وآله ثم سأل حاجتك فإنّ الله أكرم من أن يسأل حاجتين فيقضي إحداها ويبع الآخر.

وقال عليه السلام: من ضمن برضه فليدع المراء.

وقال عليه السلام: من الخُرق المُعاجلة قبل الإمكان والآثاء بعد الفرصة.

وقال عليه السلام: لا تسأل عمّا لا يكون في الذي قد كان لك شغل.

وقال عليه السلام: الفكر مَرآة صافية.

والمعتبار منذر ناصح.

وكنى أدبًا لنفسك تحتشّ ما كرهته لغيرك.

وقال عليه السلام: العلم مقرر بالعمل فمن علم عمّ وإن العلم يُتَّبَع بالعمل فإن أجابه وإلا أرتاح.

وقال عليه السلام: يا أيها الناس متاع الدنيا حُطام موية فنجبوا مُرعاه قلعتها أحوز من طموحكما وبلغتها أركا من سرورها حكّ على مكتوبها بالقافية واكتن من غني عنها بالراحه ومن رأده زيرها أعقبت ناظرة كِمَا ومن أستشر السُخف بِها مالأت ضيّرها أثناها لّن يمْصّ على سوداء قلبه هم يِشْغَله وهم يِجْزهه. كذلك حتى يؤخذ بكتَّّه قبل الفَضْل منقطعًا أبَرَه هُنّا على الله فناويمه وعلى الإخوان إلقاؤه. وإنما ينظر المؤمن إلى الدنيا بين الاعتبار وِيَتائِمها يهبت الاضطرار ويسمع فيها بأذن المقت والإبغاض إن قيل أثرى قبل كمال وإن فرح له بالبقاء حرين له بالنفاس. هذا ولم يأتهم
3.343 Don’t regard a statement as spiteful if you can find a way to interpret it as good.

3.344 If you wish to ask God for something, begin by asking him to bless the Prophet, then put forward your petition. When God is asked for two things, he is too generous to grant the one and deny the other.

3.345 Anyone who wishes to preserve his dignity should not quarrel.

3.346 The one who rushes in before the time is right and the one who hesitates when the opportunity arrives are both fools.

3.347 Don’t ask about what is not going to happen. You have enough to preoccupy you in dealing with what has happened.¹

3.348 Thought is a polished mirror.  
   A lesson learned counsels best.  
   To shun doing what you dislike in others is discipline enough!²

3.349 Knowledge is linked with action—whoever knows should act. In fact, knowledge calls out to action—if action steps forward, good, otherwise, knowledge will depart.

3.350 People! The stuff of this world is like rotten grass, so stay away from its pastures! Leaving it is better than residing in it, obtaining basic rations here is more wholesome than finding great wealth. He who covets its riches is destined for poverty, while he who is content is at peace, and he who is drawn to its glitter finds both his eyes blinded. In fact, he who is enamored of it finds his heart crowded with sorrows that dance inside its dusky core, one sorrow giving him worry, another causing him pain, continuing in this manner until his breathing stops, his arteries puncture, and he is thrown into an empty strip of earth. God feels no compunction in taking his life, and his brothers feel no guilt in tossing him into the grave. Beware! A true believer looks at the world with eyes that reflect on it, swallows a bit of its food into a belly compelled to consume it, and hears its sounds with ears that hate and abhor their frivolity. A man may get

¹ Or, “Don’t yearn for forbidden things, for what you have is enough to stop you from withholding acts of obedience to God” (R 3:408). Or, “Don’t yearn for more and more worldly things—what you have should be enough to satisfy you” (B 1011).
² § 3.385 is similar.
يوم فيه يُليِسون إن الله سبحانه وضع الثواب على طاعته والعقاب على معصيته زيادة لعباده عن نقمته وحياشة لهم إلى جنته.

وُروى أنه عليه السلام قال: اعتصموا بالله من البغيء. أَيْنَ الناس أنتموا لله فاكمل أموركم عبادًا فيungeons ولا تكصف سدى فيمجرد وما دنياه التي تحسنت له بخلاف من الآخرة التي قبِحها سوء النظر عنه وما المغور الذي ظفر من الدنيا بأعلى همته كالآخر الذي ظفر من الآخرة بأدنى سُمته.

وقال عليه السلام: لا شرف أعلى من الإسلام.
ولا عزة أعظم من التقوى.
ولا مَقْتَل أَحْصى من الورع.
ولا شفين أَنْجح من التوبة.
ولا كنز أَكْنِى من الفنامة.
ولا مال أَذْهَب دَفِافي القورة.
ومن أَقَطَّص على بلْغة الكفاف فقد أَتْنَظَر الراحة وتيَّاو خفض الدعة.
والرغبة مفتاح النصب ومطلبة التعب.
والحرص والكبر والحسد دواعي التنْجُم في الذهوب.
والشرة جامع مساوئ العيوب.

اش، ن، ومصحح، في: كذا ي، وأصله: أضيفت كلمة (وقال يأتي على الناس زمان لا يقتفي فيهم من القرآن إلا اسمه ومن الإسلام إلا اسمه مساجدهم يومئذ عامة، من البيت خراب من الهدى سكّتها ووقعوا شرَّ أهل الأرض منهم تخرج الفتنة واليه تأتي الخطيئة يردون من شدة منها ويسوقون من تأرجح عنها إليها يقول الله في حلفه لأبعث إلى أولئك فتنة أترك الحلم فيها حبرًا وقد فعل ونحن نستقبل الله عزّة الغفالة. الحراني في تحف العقول: كذا مخطوطة النهج الرئيسي معا م، حيث هذه الحكمة ساقطة عنها) وأكثر الشرح: (الشر١، ونسخة في هامش: البخل).
rich in this world, but then he is reduced to penury; people may rejoice at his living, but soon they must grieve at his death; and this is but little, for the day of despair is yet to come! God has promised reward for those who obey him and punishment for those who disobey him, in order to caution them against his Fire and tempt them toward his Garden.

3.351 It is said that ʿAli rarely ascended the pulpit to deliver an oration without opening with these lines:

People, be conscious of God at all times! Humans are not created in vain—don't waste your lives in the pursuit of pleasure! You are not given an indefinite reprieve—don't squander your time in idle chatter! This world that you find so pleasing is no substitute for the hereafter that you find so distasteful. Indeed, the fool who wins the largest share of this world falls far short of the man who wins the smallest part of the hereafter.

3.352 There is no honor more exalted than Islam.

There is no might more powerful than piety.
There is no refuge more shielding than restraint.
There is no intercessor more effective than repentance.
There is no treasure more precious than contentment.
No wealth alleviates poverty faster than satisfaction with one's basic rations. If you content yourself with basic rations, you will attain tranquility and peace of mind.
Desire is the key to fatigue and the steed of exhaustion.
Greed, pride, and envy invite you to rush blindly into sin.
Gluttony combines all the worst faults.

---

1 Reference to Qurʾan, Muʾminūn 23:77, Rūm 30:12.
2 Presumably in Medina and Kufa throughout his caliphate, 35–40/656–661.
3 Reference to Qurʾan, Muʾminūn 23:115.
4 Reference to Qurʾan, Qiyāmah 75:36.
5 These sayings are from ʿAli’s oration titled Wasīlah. Harrānī, Ḥarrānī, Ḥarrānī, 93.
6 Ar. sharrah, after Harrānī, Ḥarrānī, Tuḥaf, 93, thus similar to § 3.357: “Stinginess (bukhl)” combines all the worst faults.” My Nahj al-Balāghah primary manuscripts all have “sharr,” lit. “evil,” thus, “Evil combines all the worst faults,” which appears to be a tautology, and thus a mistranscription from sharrah.
٣٣٥٣
قال عليه السلام:
قدام الدنيا بأربعة عالم مستعمل عليه وجلال لا يستنكف أن يتطلع وجواد لا يجلب
بموعوه وفقيرة لا يبيع آخرهته بنديمه. فإذا ضيع العلم عليه أستنكف الجاهل أنتطلع وإذا
جبل الفنام بموعوه ففيه الفقيه آخرتهته بنديمه. من كثرت بَنَتَ النَّاس
إليه من قام الله فيها بما يجبر عرضها للدوار والبقاء ومن لا يقت لله فيها بما يجبر عرضها
للمزوال والفاء.

٣٣٥٤

٣٣٥٤.١
أيها المؤمنون؟ إنه من رأى عدوانا يعمر به ومنكرا يدعى إليه فأنكره بقلبته فقد
سلم وري ومن أنكره بلسانه فقد أجر هو أفضل من صاحبه ومن أنكره بالسيف لتكون
كلية الله العليّا وكلية الفاطميين السُلَّميّ فذلك الذي أصاب سبيل المدى
وقام على الطريق وتور في قلب اليقين.

٣٣٥٤.٢
وقال عليه السلام في كلام آخر غير هذا يجري هذا المجرى
فقوم المنكر للسكك بيدة ولسانه وقلبته فذلك المستقل خصائص الخير ومنهم المنكر بلسانه
وقلبته والترك بيدة فذلك عصر مثل صارم خصائص الخير ومضروب خصلة ومنهم
المنكر بقلبته والترك بيدة ولسانه فذلك الذي ضيّع أشر الخصائص من الثلاث وتمسّك
بواحة ومنهم ترك لإنكار المنكر بلسانه وقلبته وبدا فذلك ميّت الأحياء. وما أعمال البرّ

اش، ن: كد، ي، ه: (وفى نسخة الرضاي). أضيفت قبلها (وروى ابن جيرير الطبري) في تاريخه عن
عبد الرحمن بن أبي ليله الفقيه وكان من خرج لقتال المجاج مع أن الأشمعي (تأل فيما كان
فيه جمعه على الناس إلى مدحه) سمع رفع الله دريحه في الصلاحين وأتاه ثواب الشهاده
والصديقين يقول يوم لينبا أهل الشام. تاريخ الطبري: ١٠٥٧: ٦٠.
3.353 The world is sustained by four types of people: the learned who act according to their knowledge, the ignorant who are not reluctant to learn, the generous who are not stingy with acts of charity, and the poor who don’t trade in their share of the hereafter for worldly chattels. But if the learned squander their knowledge, the ignorant will be reluctant to learn, and if the wealthy are stingy with their charity, the poor will trade in their share of the hereafter for worldly chattels. Know that when God’s blessings increase for a person, people’s petitions to him also increase. The one who shares his blessings as he ought to do for the sake of God earns their continuance and perpetuity. The one who does not share them as he ought to do for the sake of God exposes them to cessation and termination.¹

3.354

3.354.1 Believers, whoever sees wrong enacted and evil propagated and condemns them with his heart is cleared and absolved. Whoever also condemns them with his tongue earns greater reward. Whoever also condemns them with his sword in order that «God’s word may be the most lofty» and the oppressors’ «word the most lowly»² has walked the way of guidance, stayed true to the path, and illuminated his heart with certainty.³

3.354.2 ‘Alī spoke similar words in another address:⁴
One of them condemns evil with his hand, his tongue, and his heart—this man has perfected all the traits of virtue. Another condemns evil with his tongue and his heart, but not with his hand—this man has grasped two aspects of virtue but has squandered the third. A third condemns evil with his heart, but not with his hand or his tongue—this man has squandered the two noblest aspects while still holding on to one. Finally, there is the man who fails to condemn evil at all, be it with tongue, heart, or hand—that man is the living dead. Know this:

¹ Reportedly addressed to (1) Jābir ibn ‘Abdallāh al-Anṣārī, when he went to visit ‘Alī during an illness (Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 173; Khwārazmī, Manāqib, 368; MSS Y and H); and/or (2) Jarīr ibn ‘Abdallāh al-Bajalī (Sībī, Tadhkīrah, 168).
² Reference to Qurʾan, Tawbah 9:40.
³ § 3.354.1 is said to be part of an oration by ‘Alī at Ṣiffin in 37/657, cited by ‘Abd al-Raḥmān ibn Abī Laylā to rouse the Qurʾan reciters in his army in the fight against Ḥajjāj and the Umayyads at Dayr al-Jamājim, in central Iraq in 83/702. Ṭabarī, Tārīkh, 6:357.
⁴ § 3.354.2 is cited as an answer given during an oration in the mosque in Basra, a few days after the Battle of the Camel (Māmaṭīrī, Nuzhah, 228). Other parts of the same oration as cited in ibid., 221–233 are listed in note to § 1.23.
كلها والجهاد في سبيل الله عند الأمر بالمعروف والنهي عن المنكر إلا كفتة في بحر الديني وإن الأمر بالمعروف والنهي عن المنكر لا يقربان من أجل ولا ينقصان من رزق وأفضل ذلك كلمة عدل عند إمام جائر.

ووفق أبي حنيفة قال سمعت أمير المؤمنين عليه السلام يقول: إن أول ما تعلمون عليه من الجهاد الجهاد يا يديكم ثم سنتكم في بقاواكم فن لم يعرف بقلبه معروفا ولم ينك منكرا قلب جعله أعلاه أسفله.

وقال عليه السلام: إن الحق ثقيل مري وأن الباطل خفيف وبين.

وقال عليه السلام: لا تأمن على خير هذه الأمة عذاب الله لقوله سبحاته فلا يأمن منك الله إلا القوم الخيرون ولا تيأسن لشر هذه الأمة من روح الله لقوله سبحاته إنه لا ينسب من روح الله إلا القوم الخيرون.

وقال عليه السلام: البخيل جامع لمساوئ العيوب وهو زمام يقاد به إلى كل سوء.

وقال عليه السلام: الرزق رزقان رزق تطلب ورزق يطلب فإن لم تأتيك فلا تجعلهم سنتك على هم يومك كماك كل يوم فإنه إن تكون السنة من عفر فإن الله تعالى سيصيبك في كل غد جديد ما قسم لك وإن لم تكون السنة من عفر فدائع بالحم لما ليس لك ولن يسبقك إلى رزقك طالب ولن يغلبك عليه غالب ولن يبطئ عنك ما قد قدر لك.
Compared to fighting in the path of God, compared to commanding good and forbidding evil, all other deeds together are like ephemeral foam «upon the deep ocean».¹ Commanding good and forbidding evil never bring your death closer, nor do they cause your sustenance to lessen. Best of all is a just word spoken in the face of a tyrannical ruler.

3.354-3 Abū Juḥayfah related: I heard the Commander of the Faithful say:
In the fight against evil, the first thing to be overcome is the hand, then the tongue, then the heart. Once the heart stops recognizing good or condemning evil, it is upended and turned topsy-turvy.

3.355 Right is heavy but wholesome. Wrong is light but pestilent.²

3.356 Don't suppose even the best of this community secure against God's punishment, for the Almighty says, «Only losers feel secure against God's reckonings».³ Don't suppose that even the worst of this community is without hope of receiving God's grace, for the Almighty says, «Only unbelievers despair of God's grace».⁴

3.357 Stinginess combines all the worst faults—its halter is used to lead people to evil acts.

3.358 Sustenance is of two types: one that seeks and one that is sought.⁵ If you don't find it, it will find you. Don't add the worries of the coming year to the burdens of the present day—the present day has worries enough of its own. If your life extends to the rest of the year, God will provide you with his ordained sustenance in each new day, but your life may not extend to the rest of the year, in which case, why worry about a time when you may not be alive? Know this: No seeker can outrace you to your sustenance, no oppressor can seize your share, and nothing ordained for you will be slow in coming.

¹ Qurʾan, Nūr 24:40. Note that “fighting in God’s path (jihād)” is equated with “commanding good and forbidding evil” twice in the subsequent lines.
² To ʿUthmān, who had lost control of the populace and summoned his governors to strategize. Balādhurī, Ansāb, 5:533; Ibn A’tham, Futūḥ, 2:395.
³ Qurʾan, Aʿrāf 7:99.
⁴ Qurʾan, Yūsuf 12:87.
⁵ This first line identical to § 3.402. The next few lines are similar to § 3.260.
فقد مضى هذا الكلام فيما تقدّم من هذا الباب إلاّ أنّه هنا أوضح وأشرح فذلّك كرّتاه على
القاعدة المقرّرة في أول هذا الكتاب.

3.359 وقال عليه السلام: رَبَّ مُستقبِل بُعُومٌ ليس بمستديره ومبوبوط في أول ليلة قامت
بِواكيه في آخره.

3.360 وقال عليه السلام: الكلام في وثائق ما لم تتكلم به فإذا كتبت به صرت في وثائق
فَأَخْرُجُ لسانك كما تخرج ذهبك وورقك فَرَبَ كَلِّمة سلبت ضعمة.

3.361 وقال عليه السلام: لا تقل ما لا تعلم فإنّ الله سبعانه قد فرض على جوارحك
كَلَّها فِرَائِض يُحِتَّج بها عليك يوم القيامة.

3.362 وقال عليه السلام: احذر أن يراك الله عند معصيته ويفقدك عند طاعته فتكون
من الخاسرين وإذا قولت فأقول على طاعة الله وإذا ضعفت فأضعف عن معصية الله.

3.363 وقال عليه السلام: الركوب إلى الدنيا مع ما تعاين منها جهل والتقصير في حسن
العمل إذا وَثَقْت بالثواب عليه عين والطمأنينة إلى كلّ أحد قبل الاختبار عجز
إِلاّ بتركها.

3.364 وقال عليه السلام: من هؤلاء الدنيا على الله أنّه لا يعصي إلاّ فيها ولا ينال ما عندئ

3.365 وقال عليه السلام: من طلب شيئًا ناله أو بعضه.
Raḍī: This text was recorded above, but this version is clearer and more detailed. That is why I have replicated it here, following the method I outlined in the book’s Introduction.¹

3.359 Many begin a day they will not survive. Many enter a night joyful and end it dead and mourned.²

3.360 Words are in your control until you let them go. Once you let them go, you are bound by their tether. Guard your tongue as you guard your gold and silver, for many a careless word has caused the loss of a great blessing!

3.361 Don’t say things that you don’t know to be true. God has assigned duties to each of your limbs, and he will hold you accountable on the day of resurrection.³

3.362 Beware lest God see you where he is disobeyed and not find you where he is obeyed, else you will be one of the losers. Be strong in your obedience to God. Be weak in your transgression of his prohibitions.

3.363 To depend on this world despite everything you see of her is reckless. To fall short in doing good when you are certain of God’s reward is stupid. To trust everyone before putting them to the test is naive.

3.364 The world’s low worth in God’s eyes is clear from the fact that it is only in her that he is disobeyed, and only by forsaking her that his are blessings obtained.

3.365 Whoever seeks something obtains it or at least a part of it.

¹ § 3.358 was transcribed in a variant version earlier in § 3.260. Raḍī explained in his Introduction § 0.7 that he would record variant renderings of text if their language or content adds something new or noteworthy.

² From ‘Alī’s testament of counsel to his son Muḥammad ibn al-Ḥanafiyyah (Ṣadūq, Man lā yahduruhu, 4:386). A similar line is attributed to the Prophet in Quḍā‘ī, Shihāb, § 3.18.

³ From ‘Alī’s testament of counsel to his son Muḥammad ibn al-Ḥanafiyyah. Ṣadūq, Man lā yahduruhu, 2:626.
3.366 وقال عليه السلام: ما خير بخير بعده النار وما شرّ بشر بعده الحياة وكلّ نعيم دون الجنة محكورة وكلّ بلاء دون النار عافية. ألا وإنّ من البلاء الفاقة وأشدّ من الفاقة مرض البدن. ألا وإنّ من مرض البدن مرض القلب. ألا وإنّ من النعم سعة المال وأفضل من سعة المال صحة البدن وأفضل من صحة البدن تقوى القلب.

3.367 وقال عليه السلام: للمؤمن ثلث ساعات فساعة ينادي فيها ربّ وساعة يرّم معاشه وساعة يقلي بين نفسه وبين ذاتها فيما يحلّ ويجلّ. وليس للمعاق أن يكون شاهدًا إلاّ في ثلاث مراممة لمعاش أو خطوة في معاد أو لدة في غير محرم.

3.368 وقال عليه السلام: ذهبت في الدنيا بصرك لله عوراتها ولا تغفل فلست بمحفول عنك.

3.369 وقال عليه السلام: تكَّلوا تعرَّفو فإنّ المرء مخبّو تحت لسانه.

3.370 وقال عليه السلام: خذ من الدنيا ما أتاك وتوّل ولما تولى عنك فإنّ أنت لم تفعل فأجنا في الطلب.

3.371 وقال عليه السلام: رَبّ قول أنفد من صوّل.

3.372 وقال عليه السلام: كلّ مقتصر عليه كاف.

3.373 وقال عليه السلام: منيّة ولا الدنيا والتقلّ ولا التماس ولا يعطى فاعداً لا يعطّ قائداً والدهريومان يوم ك ويوم عليك فإذا كان لك فلا تبطر وإذا كان عليك فاصبر.
3.366 How can a thing be good if it leads you into the Fire? How can a thing be bad if it leads you into the Garden? Compared to the Garden, every blessing is contemptible. Compared to the Fire, every trial is a comfort. Hark! A trial may come in the form of poverty—but worse than poverty is disease of the body, and worse than disease of the body is disease of the heart. Hark! A blessing may come in the form of abundant wealth—but better than abundant wealth is soundness of the body, and better than soundness of the body is piety of the heart.

3.367 The believer divides his time into three parts: in one part, he communes with his Lord, in another, he seeks his livelihood, and in the third, he allows himself to enjoy pleasures that are licit and good. The man of reason sets out for no purpose other than these three: to seek his livelihood, to take a step forward on the path of return to God, or to enjoy pleasures that are not forbidden.¹

3.368 Renounce the world and God will show you her flaws. Don't remain heedless for you go not unheeded.

3.369 Speak and you will be known—a man is concealed behind his tongue.

3.370 Take what comes to you of this world and turn away from what turns away. If you can't bring yourself to do so, be moderate in your ventures.

3.371 Many a word pierces deeper than a sword.

3.372 What you are content with is enough.

3.373 Death, not shame! Poverty, not begging! Someone who doesn't receive while sitting will not receive when standing. Life consists of two days: one day is for you, another day is against you. When things are working in your favor, don't swagger. When things are going against you, be patient.

¹ From ʿAlī's testament of counsel to his son Ḥasan. Barqī, Maḥāsin, 2:345.
 وقال عليه السلام: مُقَارَبَة الناس في أخلاقيهم أمن من غوايلهم.

 وقال عليه السلام: من أومأ إلى مُفتِقوه خذلته الحيل.

 وقال عليه السلام: ألا تملك مع الله شيخًا ولا تملك إلا ما ملكت ما هو أملك به منا كلهنا ومثًٍ أخذه منا وضع تكليفه عنة.

 وقال عليه السلام لعَمَّار بن ياسم رحمة الله وقد سمعه يراجع المَغيرة بْن شُعبة كلامًا دَعَءَه يأَمَل فإنه لم يأخذ من الدين إلا ما قاربته الدنيا وعلى عدم لبس عليه نفسه ليجعل الشهوات عادرأ لسقاطته.

 وقال عليه السلام: ما أحسن تواضع الأغنياء للفقراء طلبًا لما عند الله وأحسن منه تب الفقراء على الأغنياء أكثَرًا على الله.

 وقال عليه السلام: ما أستودع الله لَم أُعَقِّل إلا لا أستنقذه به يومًا ما.

 وقال عليه السلام: من صارع الحق صرَعه.

 وقال عليه السلام: القلب مصَحَف البصر.

 وقال عليه السلام: التقي رئيس الأخلاق.

 إن شاء الله، كذا جاء، وزيادة في هامش م: أضيفت كلمة «وقال عليه السلام لبعض مخاطريه وقد تكلَّم بكثرة يستصبر مثله عن قول مثلها لقد طرط شكرًا وهدرت سلبًا» و«الشكور» هَنَّا أول ما ينلب من ريش الطائر قبل أن يقوى وينتدفف و«السقب» الصغير من الإبل ولا يهدر إلا بعد أن يستفلع.
3.374 Coming closer to people's ways protects you from their malice.¹

3.375 One who seeks contradictory goals will not find a way to achieve them.

3.376 ‘Alî was asked about the meaning of the creed, ⟨There is no power or strength save from God⟩, and he replied:
We are not masters of anything in partnership with God, nor are we masters of anything without him having made us its master. When he makes us master over his possessions, he gives us a burden to carry, and when he takes it from us, he relieves us of the burden.

Leave him, ‘Ammâr! Mughîrah has never accepted any aspect of religion that didn't bring him worldly benefit. He deliberately creates doubts for himself so he can use them to excuse his blunders.

3.378 How wonderful when the rich, seeking God's reward, are humble before the poor! How even more wonderful when the poor, placing their trust in God, are dignified before the rich!

3.379 If God has bestowed a man with reason, he will use it to save him some-
day.

3.380 If you wrestle with truth, you will be felled by it.

3.381 The heart is the register of the eye.

3.382 Consciousness of God is the chief of all virtues.

¹ mss Y, H, and M (in margin) add another saying here, with accompanying commentary, thus: Rebuking a person who said something that was not his place to say, ‘Alî exclaimed: “You fly when you still have a fledgling’s down, and bellow when you are but a calf!” Ra’dî: “A fledgling’s down (shakîr)” are the first feathers just appearing on a bird before they have strengthened and toughened. A “calf (saqb)” is the young of a camel, and it does not bellow until it has become a stallion.

² In Medina, soon after ‘Alî became caliph in 35/656, when ‘Ammâr urged Mughîrah to pledge allegiance to ‘Alî and Mughîrah refused, saying he would wait until the confusion about ‘Uthmân's death cleared. Ibn ‘Asâkir, Târîkh, 60:44; Ibn Qutaybah, Imâmah, 1:69.
3.383 وقال عليه السلام: لا تجعل ذَرَب لسانك على من أنطِق بك وبلاغة قولك على من سدّدك.

3.384 وقال عليه السلام: كذلك أداً لنفسك أجناب ما تكره من غيرك.

3.385 وقال عليه السلام: من صبرَ صَبْر الأحرار وألا سِلَوَ الأغمار.

3.386 وقال للأشعث بن قيس مُعَزِّيً: إن صبرت صبر الأكارم وألا سلوت سلو الآبائهم.

3.387 وقال عليه السلام في صفة الدنيا: الدنيا تُغر وتضُر وتصر إن الله تعالى لم يرضها ثوابًا لأولائها ولا عقابًا لأعدائه وإن أهل الدنيا كرَكَب بيناهم حلوًا إذ صاح بهم ساقتهم فأرتحوا.

3.388 وقال لأبي الحسن عليه السلام: يا بْنِي لا تَفْلَقَن وراءك شيئًا من الدنيا فإنكَ تَفْلَقْه لأحد رجلين إما رجل عمل فيه بطاعة الله فسعد بما شقيته به وما رجل عمل فيه بمعصية الله فكنت عونًا له على معصيته.

وليس أحد هذين حقيًا أن تؤثر علَ نفْسك.
3.383 Don’t use the sharpness of your tongue against the one who gave you speech, nor the eloquence of your words against the one who gave you direction.

3.384 To avoid doing what you dislike in others is discipline enough.¹

3.385 Endure with the free or grow fat with the heedless.

Another report states that ‘Ali, offering his condolences, said the following to al-Ash’ath ibn Qays:
You can endure like the noble or grow fat like sheep.²

3.386 Describing the world, ‘Ali said:
The world betrays, and harms, and passes—God has rejected her both as reward for his devotees and as punishment for his enemies. People in the world are like a band of travelers—no sooner do they set up camp than the cameleer gives the call to depart.

3.387 ‘Ali said to his son Ḥasan:³
My dear son, do not leave your wealth for others to inherit, for your heir will be one of two men: a man who will use it to obey God, in which case he will earn happiness where you earned only misery, or a man who uses it to disobey God, in which case you will have aided him in his disobedience. Neither deserves more consideration from you than you give to yourself.

---

¹ § 3.348 is similar.
² From ‘Ali’s expressions of condolence to al-Ash’ath ibn Qays on the death of his son (Ibn ‘Abd Rabbih, Ḥjd, 3:255). See also ‘Ali’s expressions of condolence to Ash’ath on the death of his brother in § 3.89, and of his son in § 3.277. “To be fat like sheep (istalāl)’ is said of one who does not take a lesson from seeing death and prepare more diligently for the hereafter. Another translation is “to be forgetful like sheep.” The commentators note that the Abbasid poet Abū Tammām echoed this saying explicitly citing ‘Ali in his verse: “‘Ali said to Ash’ath in condolence, fearing that he may otherwise sin: Will you take solace and endure this trial—and if you do, you shall be rewarded—or will you be heedless and grow fat like sheep”
³ Kulaynī (Kāfī, 8:72) cites part of this text in a letter from ‘Ali to his freedman, who, dissatisfied with ‘Ali’s offer to help him financially from his personal stipend, went to Mu‘āwiyyah to ask for money. Similar line in § 3.400.
3.388 وقال عليه السلام لقائل بخضته (أستغفر الله)
كتَّبَكَ آمَّك إنْدري ما الاستغفار إن الاستغفار درجة العليّين، و هو Assoc pav a علَّمَتْكَ في السماوات ما بعدك و إياكما أنت جامع لأحد رجلين رجل عمل فيما جمعته بطاعة الله فساعد بما شقيت به أو رجل عمل فيه بمعصية الله فشقى بما جمعته له وليس أحد هنّى إلاّ أن تؤثره على نفسك و تحمّله على ظهرك فأرجو من مرضى رحمة الله ولم يقم رقع الله.

3.389 وقال عليه السلام: الحلم عشيرة.

3.390 وقال عليه السلام: مسكيّن أنآدم مكتوم الأجل مكنون العلائم محفظة العمل.

3.391 وروى أنّه عليه السلام كان جالسًا في أصحبه فرّت بين أمّ رأة جميلة فرمتها القوم بأصحابهم فقال عليه السلام إنّ أصحاب هذه الفحول طواحو وإن ذلك سبب هيباها فإذا نظر أحدكم إلى أمّ رأة تعجبه فليلامس أهلها فإيما هي أمّ رأة كأمّ رأة.

Nie، يه، ومبيحة في: كذا أصل م: (أندري ما الاستغفار درجة النبيّين). ش،
This text is also narrated in the following variant rendering:
All the worldly riches your hands possess have had other masters before you
and will pass to other masters after you. You gather riches for one of two men:
a man who will use it to obey God, in which case he will earn happiness where
you earned only misery, or a man who will use it to disobey God, in which case
you will have aided him in his disobedience. Neither deserves more consider-
ation from you than you give to yourself. Neither is worth your carrying their
sins on your back. Instead, beseech God’s mercy for those who have passed, and
solicit God’s sustenance for those who remain.

3.388 A man uttered the dictum, ⟨I beg God’s forgiveness!⟩ in ‘Alī’s presence, and ‘Alī
rebuked him, saying:
May your mother be bereaved! Do you know what it means to beg God’s forgive-
ness? That is the lofty state of the angels, and it requires six actions: The first
is to regret what you have done. The second is to resolve never to do it again.
The third is to give back to all God’s creatures what you owe them, so that you
can meet God with a smooth and unburdened back. The fourth is to make up
for every mandated act that you have squandered and give it its full due. The
fifth is to target the unlawfully nourished flesh in your body and melt it away
by grieving, until, after your skin touches your bones, new flesh grows and fills
it out. The sixth is to force your body to taste the pain of good deeds, just as
you let it taste the sweetness of sin. Then you can truthfully say: I beg God’s
forgiveness!

3.389 Clemency generates kinship.

3.390 How wretched is the son of Adam! Lifespan unknown, ailments con-
cealed, actions recorded; he hurts from the sting of a gnat, chokes from a sip of
water, and stinks from a drop of sweat.

3.391 It is related that ‘Alī was sitting among his associates when a beautiful woman
passed. The men’s eyes followed her, and ‘Alī exclaimed:¹
O how covetous the eyes of these virile stallions—they stare and they throb! If
your eyes fall on an attractive woman, people, go home and embrace your wife,
for a woman is a woman!

¹ Presumably in Kufa, between the emergence of the Kharijites—who are mentioned here—in
37/657 and the Battle of Nahrawān in 38/658 when they were killed.
قال عليه السلام: كذلك من عقلك ما أوضح لك سبيل غيّك من رشدك.

3.392 وقال عليه السلام: فنال يوم السبب بسب أوعفو عن ذنب.

3.393 وقال عليه السلام: افعلوا الخير ولا تحقروا منه شيئا فإنّ صغيرة كبير وقليله كثير ولا يقولوا أحدكم إن أحداً أولى بفعل الخير منه فيكون لغيره كذلك إذ يخيل والشر أهلا فا كفروموه منهما كفاكموه أهله.

3.394 وقال عليه السلام: من أصلح سيرته أصلح الله له علالته ومن عمل لديه كفاه الله أمر ديناه ومن أحسن فيما بينه وبين الله كفاه الله ما بينه وبين الناس.

3.395 وقال عليه السلام: الحلم غطاء ساطر والعقل حسم قاطع فأفستر خلفك بحلك وقابل هواك بعقلك.

3.396 وقال عليه السلام: إن الله عباداً يختصهم بالنعيم لمناع العباد فيقربها في أنفسهم ما بذلوا فإذا منعوا نزعها منهم ثم حولها إلى غيرهم.

3.397 وقال عليه السلام: لا ينبغي للعبد أن يفق بخصائص العافية والغني بما تراه معايَّ إِذْ سَقِيمَ وَبِيْنَا تَرَاه بَغْنِيّ أَذَا أَفْتَقر.

3.398 وقال عليه السلام: من شكا الحاجة إلى مومن فكأما شكاها إلى الله ومن شكاها إلى كافر فكأما شكا الله.

3.399 وقال عليه السلام في بعض الأعياد: إنهما هو عيد من قبل الله صيامه وشكر قيامه وكل يوم لا يعسى الله فيه فهو يوم عيد.
A Kharijite muttered, “May God fight this heretic, how well he understands!” People jumped on him to slay him, and ‘Alī held them back, saying:
Slow down! You can either return his curse with another curse or pardon his offence.

3.392 Your intellect gives you enough guidance if it distinguishes error from direction.

3.393 Do good and don’t think any deed too humble, for a small deed is large in value and though little it counts for a lot. No one among you should say that so-and-so is better able to do good than I, else, by God, it will be so. Both good and evil have their adherents—whatever you leave off doing, others will step forward to do.

3.394 If someone sets right his thoughts, God sets right his behavior. If someone strives for his religion, God takes care of his needs. If someone steps forward to serve God, God helps him in his dealings with people.

3.395 Forbearance is a curtain that conceals, and intelligence is a keen blade—veil your flaws by exercising forbearance and fight your passions by using your intelligence.

3.396 God has singled out some servants for particular blessings to use for the benefit of all—he leaves them in their hands as long as they do. If they don’t, he takes them back and entrusts them to others.

3.397 There are two things no one should take for granted: health and wealth. You see a man healthy one day and suddenly he is taken ill. You see a man wealthy one day and suddenly he loses all his money.

3.398 To complain to a believer is to complain to God. To complain to an unbeliever is to complain about God.

3.399 On a certain feast day, ‘Alī declared:
The blessing of Eid is for those whose fast God accepts and whose worship he rewards. In fact, every day in which God is not disobeyed is Eid.
قال عليه السلام: إن أعظم الحرسات يوم القيامة حسرة رجل كسب مالًا في غير طاعة الله فورثه رجلًا فأنت متهك في طاعة الله فدخل به الجنة ودخل به الأهل الآخر.

وقال عليه السلام: إن أخر الناس صافقة وأكثروا سعى رجل أحق بدنه في طلب بآماله ولم تساعده المقدم على إرادته فخرج من الدنيا بفسخرته وقدم على الآخرة بثوبه.

وقال عليه السلام: الرزق رفقات طلب ومطلب فإن طلب الدنيا طلبه الموت حتى يخرج عنه ومن طلب الآخرة طلبه الدنيا حتى يستوفي رزقه منها.

وقال عليه السلام: إن أولئك الله هم الذين نظروا إلى باطن الدنيا إذا ظهر الناس إلى نظارها وأشتعلوا بأجلها إذا أشتعل الناس بعاجلها فأنا ما خشوا أن يمتنعهم وتركوا منها ما علموا أن سيرتهم ورأوا استغاثتهم منها استقلاً ودراً لهم لما أعداء ما سلم الناس وسلب ما عادى الناس بهم علم الكتاب وهم علماً وبهم قام الكتاب وهم قاموا لا يرون من جواً فوق ما يرون ولا مخوفاً فوق ما يخفون.

وقال عليه السلام: اذكروا أنقطاع اللذات وحماية التّبعة.

وقال عليه السلام: أخبر تفهّمًا.

ومن الناس من روي هذا إلى رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله وسلمFinding his companions, they asked him: Who is this? He replied: He is the companion of the other side.
3.400 The greatest remorse on judgment day will be felt by a man who earned his wealth through God's disobedience and bequeathed it to an heir who spent it in his obedience—the heir will enter the Garden, the man will enter the Fire.¹

3.401 The biggest loser, the worst failure, is a man who wears down his body to satisfy his desires, but destiny does not side with him—he leaves the world with only remorse and arrives in the hereafter with a burden of sin.

3.402 Sustenance is of two types: one that seeks and one that is sought. Seekers of the world are sought by death, and death will expel them from her. Seekers of the hereafter are sought by the world, and she will give them her full share.²

3.403 God's special devotees are those who perceive the world's reality when others are deceived by her appearance. They occupy themselves with what is coming when others occupy themselves with the present. They kill desires they fear will kill them and reject pleasures they know will reject them. They find wealth of meager benefit, and other men's gain as loss. They deem the world an enemy when others deem it an ally. They deem the hereafter an ally when others deem it an enemy. God's Book is recognized through them, and they are recognized through God's Book. God's Book is established through them, and they are established through God's Book. They see nothing more desirable than what they desire and nothing more terrifying than what they fear.³

3.404 Remember that pleasures pass, and consequences remain.

3.405 Put people to the test and you will come to hate them.

Raḍī: Some people attribute these lines to God's Messenger, but what supports its attribution to the Commander of the Faithful is Thaʿlab's narration on the authority of Ibn al-Aʿrābī, who reported: Maʾmūn stated: If ‘Ali had not said "Put people to the test and you will come to hate them (ukhbur taqlih)," I would have said, "Hate people and you will have an incentive to test them (aqlih takhbur)." ⁴

---

¹ Similar line in § 3.387.
² First line identical in § 3.358.
³ This text is attributed to Jesus in Abū Nuʿaym, Ḥilyat, 1:10.
⁴ § 3.405 is attributed to the Prophet in Quḍāʿī, Shihāb, § 4.8. Thaʿlab and Ibn al-Aʿrābī were grammarians. Maʾmūn was an Abbasid caliph.

3.407 وسل عليه السلام أيما أفضل العدل أو الجود فقال:

العدل يضع الأمور مواضعها والجود يخرجها عن جهتها والعدل ساؤس عامّ والجود عارض خاصّ فالعدل أشرفهما وأفضلهما.

3.408 وقال عليه السلام: الناس أعداء ما جهلاوا.

3.409 وقال عليه السلام: الزهد كله بين كليتين من القرآن قال الله عزوجل: ﴿لا تتأسوا على ما فاتكم ولا تفرحوا بما آمرككم﴾ ومن لم يتأس على الماضي ولم يفرح بالآتى فقد أخذ الزهد بترفه.

3.410 وقال عليه السلام: الولايات مضامير الرجال.

3.411 وقال عليه السلام: ما أنقض النوم لعزائم اليوم.

3.412 وقال عليه السلام: ليس بلد بأحقّ بك من بلد خير البلاد ما حملك.

3.413 وقال عليه السلام وقد جاء نعي الأشرت رحمه الله مالك وما مالك لكان جبالاً لكان قنداً لا يرتقي الحافر ولا يوجد عليه الطائر.

3.414 وقال عليه السلام: قليل مدوم عليه خير من كثير مملول منه.
3.406 When God has opened the door of gratitude for you, he will not close the door of increase. When he has opened the door of prayer for you, he will not close the door of fulfillment. When he has opened the door of repentance for you, he will not close the door of forgiveness.\(^1\)

3.407 ʿAlī was asked, “Which is better, justice or generosity?” and he replied: Justice puts things in their rightful place, while generosity takes things out of their proper sphere. Justice is a universal motivator, while generosity is a particular aspect. Justice is thus the nobler and better of the two.

3.408 People hate the unfamiliar.\(^2\)

3.409 The whole of renunciation is encompassed in two injunctions from the Qurʾan: «Do not weep over what you have lost, and do not exult over what you have gained.»\(^3\) Those who don’t weep over the past or exult over what they have gained have grasped renunciation from both sides.

3.410 Rulership is the racecourse where men show their mettle.

3.411 How completely does sleep crush the resolutions of the day!\(^4\)

3.412 No land is better for you than another—the best land is one that sustains you.

3.413 When news arrived of Mālik al-Ashtar’s death, ʿAlī exclaimed:\(^5\) Mālik, O Mālik, O what a man! If he were a mountain, he would be a towering peak that no hoof could ascend, no bird fly over.

Raḍī: “A towering peak (\textit{fīnd})” is a mountain that soars above all others.

3.414 A little done often is better than a lot you tire of.\(^6\)

---

1 Similar to § 3.407. Reference to Qurʾan, Nisāʾ 4:60, Ibrāhīm 14:7.
2 § 3.156 is identical.
3 Qurʾan, Ḥadīd 57:23.
4 From ‘Alī’s oration §1.237 (one of the early additions to Raḍī’s original \textit{Nahj a-balāghah}), presumably delivered in Kufa, after the arbitration in 37/658.
5 In Kufa, 38/658. ʿAlī had sent Ashtar to replace Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr as governor of Egypt and he was poisoned en route by Muʿāwiyah’s agent. Māmaṭīrī, \textit{Nuzhah}, 282–283.
6 § 3.271 is similar.
وقال عليه السلام: إذا كان في الرجل خِلَّةٌ رائعة فَأَنْظُرُوا أَخوَتَها.

وقال عليه السلام لغالب بن صَعْصَعْة أبِي الفَرْزَدَقَ في كَلامٍ دَارٍ بِينَهُما

ما فعلت إِبْلِكِ الكَثِيرَةِ.

قالْ ذَٰلِكَ خَيْرًا يَا أُمِّي الْمُؤْمِنِينَ فَاقْتُلِظُوا صَلَاوَاتُ اللَّهِ عَلَیْهِ

ذلك أحمد سبئلًا!

وقال عليه السلام: من عظَّم صَغَار المصائب أبَنَاه الله بَكَارَا.

وقال عليه السلام: من كَرَمَت عليه نَفَسِهُ هَانِئَت عليه شَبوَتِه.

وقال عليه السلام: ما مَرَح رَجُلٌ مَرْحَة إِلَّا جَعَّلَ من عَطْلَةٍ جَّهَة.

وقال عليه السلام: زِدَّك في رَاغِب فِيَكِ نَقْصَان حَقْ وَرَغِبَتِكِ فِي زَاهِد فِيكِ

ذَلَّ نَفْسِ.

وقال عليه السلام: ما لَا بَنٌ أَدَمِ وَالفَخْرِ أَوْلِهِ نَطْفَةٌ وَأَخَرِ جِينَةٌ لَا يَرْزُق نَفْسَهِ

وَلَا يَدْفِع حَتِّفَهِ.

وقال عليه السلام: الغَنَي وَالقُرَى بعْد الْعَرْض عَلَى اللَّهِ

وَسَتَّلَهُمْ عَلَى الْسَلَامٍ عَنْ أَشْهَرِ الشَّرَاعَاءِ فَقَالَ

إِنَّ الْقُوْمَ لَمْ يَجْرُوا فِي حَلَّةٍ تَعْرِفُ الغَلَّاءَ عِنْدَ قَصْبَتِهَا فَإِنَّ كَانَ وَلَا بَدَّ فَالْمَلَِّيْكَ الصَّبِّيلِ

يريد أمَّةَ القِيسِ.

۱۰ مُّ، شَ، هَ، كُذا، يَ، وَزِيَادَةَ فِي هَامِشِ مُ، شَ: أَضْيَفْتَ كَلِمَةً وَقَالَ عَلَيْهِ السَّلَامُ ۴۰ مُ، أَمْرَّةً ۱۰ مُ، شَ، نِ، يَ، هَ، كُذا، مُ، ۴۰ مُ، أَمْرَّةً ۱۰ مُ، شَ، نِ، يَ، هَ، كُذا، مُ، ۴۰ مُ، أَمْرَّةً
3.415 If a man possesses one brilliant quality, expect to see others.

3.416 ‘Ali said to Ghālib ibn Ṣaʿṣa‘ah, Farazdaq’s father, during a longer conversation:1
What happened to your large herd of camels?

Ghālib replied, “The winds of duty have scattered them, Commander of the Faithful,” and ‘Ali responded:
That is the most admirable path they could have taken.2

3.417 If someone makes much ado about small trials, God will afflict him with large ones.

3.418 The self-respecting don’t follow their passions.

3.419 Each time a man spurts out a joke, he spits out a bit of his brain.

3.420 If you spurn a person who wants you, you reduce your designated share.
If you want a person who spurns you, you humiliate yourself.

3.421 How, O son of Adam, are you entitled to conceit? You began as a drop of semen and will end as a rotting corpse. You cannot sustain your life, nor can you fight off your death.3

3.422 Who is wealthy and who is poor will be known after God’s accounting.

3.423 Asked who was the best poet, ‘Ali replied:
Poets don’t all race on the same track, so we can’t speak about who reached the goalpost first. But if you insist on an answer, I choose the Wandering King.

Raḍī: He meant Imru’ al-Qays.

---

1 In Kufa, sometime during ‘Ali’s caliphate, 35–40/656–661 (H 2996). Farazdaq is the famous poet.
2 Ms Y adds another saying here: “Whoever trades without knowing the law becomes mired in usury.”
3 Mubarrad, Kāmil, 2:11: Abū al-ʿAtāhiyah (Dīwān, 178) paraphrased this saying in four verses:
3.424 وقال عليه السلام: أَلَّا حَرَّمْتُ عَلَى الْمُؤَمِّنِينَ الْجَنَّةَ فَلاَ تَبِيعُوهَا إِلَّا بِهَا.

3.425 وقال عليه السلام: علامة الإيمان أن تؤثر الصداق حيث يضرّك على الكتب حيث ينفعك، وألا تكون في حديثك فضل عن عملك وأن تنقّي الله في حديث غيرك.

3.426 وقال عليه السلام: يغلب المقدار على التقدير حتى تكون الآفة في التدبير.

وقد مضى هذا المعنى فيما تقدم برواية تناولت بعض هذه الألفاظ.

3.427 وقال عليه السلام: الحلم والأناة تؤمان ينتجهما عِلْوَة الهمّة.

3.428 وقال عليه السلام: الغيبة جهد العاجز.

3.429 وقال عليه السلام: رَبَّ مَفْتَنٌ بِحَسَنِ الْقِولِ فِيهِ.
Is there no free man who will leave these chewed-up scraps for the gluttons? There is no price high enough for your souls except paradise—don't sell them for anything less.

True belief is this: to prefer a truth that hurts you over a falsehood that benefits you, to ensure that your words don't outpace your deeds, and to fear God when speaking about others.

The fates vanquish all—sometimes too much planning can lead to pain.

Raḍī: This saying was recorded earlier with some variant words.¹

Clemency and patience are twins born of lofty aspirations.²

Slander is the enterprise of the weak.

Many are seduced by praise.

---

¹ § 3.12.
² In praise of the Persian emperor Anūshīrwān. Māmaṭīrī, Νuzhah, 380; Muwaffaq biʾllāh, ʿIṭbār, 576.
زيادة على الأصل

3.430 وقال عليه السلام: الدنيا خُلِقَت لغيرها ولم تخلق لنفسها.

3.431 وقال عليه السلام: إن لبني أمية مَرَّةً يُهم لم يرون فيه ولو قد أختلفوا فيما بينهم ثم كادتهم الضبع لغليفهم.

والمروود هنا مفحل من الإرواد وهو الإميل والإنكار وهذا من أفضح الكلام وأغرقه فكان عليه السلام شبة المثلة التي هم فيها بالمضمار الذي يرون فيه إلى الغاية فإذا بلغوا منقطعاً أنتقض نظامهم بعدها.

3.432 وقال عليه السلام في مذبح الأنصار: هم والله ربوا الإسلام كما يرَى الفُلُوق مع غنائم بأيديهم السَّبَاط وألستهم السِّلَاط.

أضيفت في بعض المخطوطات قبل الخاتمة أو بعدها زيادة على الأصل قديمة، وهي عبارة عن بعض عشرة كلمة لعل مستوفى في أقدم المخطوطات بسطر يشير إلى أنها زادتها على الأصل: ش: زيادة من نسخة كتبته في عهد المصنف» (ملاحظة عن ش: ثبتت الزيادات من 8 إلى وسط ٤، حيث فقدت بعدا صفحات من المخطوطة: ن: زيادة كتبته من نسخة مسيرة عراقية) ي: زيادة من نسخة كتبته على عهد المصنف رحمه الله. والزيادة لم تثبت في م، أو في شرح ابن الفندق المؤلف سنة ٥٥٢ هجري وهو من أقدم التسريح، وأثبتت الزيادة بلا فاحصة أو تنبيه في أكثر المخطوطات التالية في الزمن، وكذلك في بعض التسريح مثل شرح الرأويدي. والرضى كان قد ترك فراغات لإثبات زيادات في نهاية كل من الأبواب الثلاثة للكتاب، وذكر هذا الأمر في ختمه للكتاب، وقيل إن الزيادة التي بين أيدينا أثبتت في حياة الرضي بإيضاته: قال أبو الحبيس (١٨٠٢): «ثم وجدنا نسخة كثيرة فيها زيادات بعد هذا الكلام قبل إِنَّها وجدت في نسخة كتبته في حياة الرضي رحمه الله وبرثة عليه فأمضاه وأذن في إلحاقها بالكتاب ونحن نذكرها). وقال البيهقي (١٣٩): «أقول إنه ضمان الله عليه بلغ في اختيار كلامه عليه السلام إلى هذه الغاية وقطعه عليها ثم كتب على هده زيادة من محسون الكلمات إِماً بأختياره هو أو بعض من كان يحضره من أهل العلم. تلك الزيادة تارة توجو خارجة عن المتين وتارة موضوعة فيه ملحة بمنقطع أختياره. وروى أنها قررت عليه وأمر بإلحاقها بالمتن».
**Additional Sayings**

3.430 The world was created not for herself but for another.

3.431 The Umayyads have a short stretch in which to race ahead. Once they quarrel, the hyenas will strike.

Raḍī: “Reprieve (mirwad)” is the mifʿal form derived from the verbal noun irwād, which means “delay (imhāl)” and “respite (inẓār).” This is among the most eloquent of usages and the most wondrous. ‘Alī compared the reprieve they have been given to a race-course in which they race toward the goal; once they reach it, their government will collapse.

3.432 ‘Alī said in praise of the Allies: By God, they nurtured Islam as one would a prize colt, with generous hands and eloquent tongues.

---

1 An additional seventeen sayings—perhaps added by Raḍī, or by others—are transcribed in some of our primary and secondary manuscripts and commentaries (details in footnote to the present edition, and in the Note on the Edition and Translation)
قال عليه السلام: العين وكأنه السَّه.

وهذه من الأساطير العجيبة كأنه شبه السَّه بالوعاء والعين بالوُكاء فإذا أطلق الوُكاء لم يضبِط

الوعاء وهذا القول في الأشهر الأظهر من كلام النبي صلى الله عليه وآله وقد رواه قوم لأمير

المؤمنين عليه السلام وذكر ذلك المرد في كتاب المقتضب في باب اللظ بالحروف وقد تكمنا

على هذه الأستعارة في كتاباً الموسوم ب italiane الآثار النبوية.

قال عليه السلام في كلام له: ووليهم وال فأقام واستقام حتى ضرب الدين بِجِنَان.

قال عليه السلام: يتأث على الناس زمان عضوض بعض الموسر فيه على ما في يديه ولم

يؤمر بذلك قال الله سبحانه وتعالى: «ولا تنسوا الفضل بينكم» ينهد فيه الأشرار ويستدل فيه الأخيار

ويُبِين المضطرون وقد نهى رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله عن بيع المضطررين.

قال عليه السلام: يَبْلِكَ في رجلان مَثْب مَطْر و باهْت مَفْتَر.

وهذا مثل قوله عليه السلام: هَلِكَ بِرجلان مَثْب عَالِم و مبَغض قال.

وسل عليه السلام عن التوحيد والعدل فقال: التوحيد أن لا يتزعمه والعدل أن لا

تَبَهَّم.

قال عليه السلام: إنه لا خير في الصمت عن الحكَم كما أن لا خير في القول بالجهل.
3.433 The eye is a leather strap fastening the buttocks. 
Raḍī: This is among the most wondrous of metaphors, as though he likened the buttocks to a vessel and the eye to a leather strap—if the strap is loosened (i.e., if the eye is closed in sleep), the vessel is not held fast (i.e., it can emit involuntary secretions). In most narrations, this saying is attributed to the Prophet, but some have attributed it to the Commander of the Faithful, such as Mubarrad, in his Book of Extemporaneous Discourse (Kitāb al-Muqtaḍab), in the chapter on speech with single syllables. I have also discussed this metaphor in my book, Figurative Language of Prophetic Hadith (Majāzāt al-āthār al-nabawiyah).

3.434 ʿAlī said in an oration: Then a certain ruler came to rule them. He stood them upright and he himself stayed upright, until religion, like a docile camel, laid its neck flat on the earth.

3.435 A time like a gnashing camel will come upon the people, when the rich will grip onto their wealth by their teeth, even though they have been commanded otherwise, for God has said, «Do not forget to be generous to one another».¹ At this time, the wicked will rise, while the virtuous will be humiliated, and the helpless will be forced to sell their goods for a pittance, despite the prohibition by God’s Messenger.

3.436 Two kinds of men are damned because of how they feel about me: one who praises too lavishly, and one who slanders and lies. 
Raḍī: This is similar to his saying: Two kinds of men are damned because of how they feel about me: one is excessive in his love, the other is extreme in his hatred.²

3.437 ʿAlī was asked about God’s oneness and justice, and he replied: Declaring God’s oneness means not imagining him, and declaring his justice means never accusing him.

3.438 There is no benefit in keeping silent when you can offer wisdom, just as there is no benefit in speaking words of ignorance.³

---

¹ Qur’an, Baqarah 2:237.
² § 3.107.
³ Similar to § 3.166.

وهذا من الكلام العجيب الفصاحة وذلك أنَّه عليه السلام شبه السحائب ذوات الرعود والبوارق والرياح والصواعق بالجبل الصعب التي تُقَّصَّ من رحاها وتوقَّص بركانها وشبه السحاب الخالية من تلك الروائع بالجبل المذلَّ التي تُحَلَّب طيِّعة وتُقَتِّع مسححة.

3.440 وقال له عليه السلام: لو غُرِّرت شيبة في أمير المؤمنين فقال: الخضاب، زينة ونحن قوم في مصيبة.

يريد رسول الله صلى الله عليه وآله.

3.441 وقال عليه السلام: القناعة مال لا ينفد.

وقد روى بعضهم هذا الكلام عن النبي صلى الله عليه وآله.

3.442 وقال عليه السلام لزياد بن أبي وأبي وقد أستخلفه بعبد الله بن العبّاس على فارس وأعمالها في كلام طويل كان ينتمي نهاه فيه عن تقدّم الخراج: استعمل العدل وآخذ الرعس وال района.

إنَّ العساف يعود بالجلاء والريف يدعوا إلى السيف.

3.443 وقال عليه السلام: أشِدُّ الذنوب ما أستخف به صاحبه.

3.444 وقال عليه السلام: ما أخذ الله على أهل الجهل أن يتبعوا حتى أخذ على أهل العلم أياً يعلموا.

3.445 وقال عليه السلام: شر بالإخوان من تكَّليف له.

3.446 وقال عليه السلام: إذا أحتش المؤمن أخاه فقد قارقه.
3.439 ʿAlī intoned in a prayer for rain: God, send us docile rainclouds, not unruly ones that bolt.
Raḍī: This is an amazingly eloquent saying. He likened rainclouds that have thunder, lightning, and hail with unruly camels that hurl off their saddles and throw off their riders. He likened clouds that do not bring these frightening phenomena to docile camels that are easy to milk and pleasant to ride.

3.440 Someone asked ʿAlī, Commander of the Faithful, why don't you dye your white hair? (meaning in battle), and he replied: Dyeing your hair is a form of adornment, and we are a people in mourning.
Raḍī: He means after the death of God's Messenger.

3.441 Contentment is wealth that never runs out.¹
Raḍī: Some people attribute this saying to the Prophet.

3.442 When ʿAlī replaced ʿAbdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās with Ziyād ibn Abīhi as governor of Fars and its environs, he had a lengthy conversation with Ziyād in which he forbade him from collecting the land tax before it came due, and he warned: Practice justice and beware violence or misappropriation, for violence leads to people fleeing en masse, and misappropriation calls people to arms.

3.443 The worst sin is one its perpetrator thinks insignificant.²

3.444 God has not required the ignorant to learn without first requiring the learned to teach.

3.445 The worst friend is one in whose company you feel constrained.

3.446 If a believer shames his brother, he has disowned him.

¹ Identical to § 3.50 and § 3.332.
² Similar to § 3.331.
وهذا حين أنتهى الغاية با إلى قطع المختار من كلام أمير المؤمنين صلوات الله عليه حامدين لله سبحانه على ما منّ به من توفيقنا لضمن ما أنتشر من أطرافه وتقريب ما بعد من أقطاره ومقرّنين العزم كما شرطنا أولاً على تفضيل أوراق من البياض في آخر كلّ باب من الأبواب ليكون لأقناع الشارد واستلحاق الوارد وما عساه أن يظهر لنا بعد الغموض ويقع علينا بعد الشذوذ.

وما توفيقنا إلا باب الله عليه توكلنا وهو حسننا ونعم الوكيل 
وذلك في رجب من سنة أربعمائة من

1: كذا. م: كذا، وسقط التاريخ. ي: كذا، وأضافت «والله وصلواته على رسوله محمد» وآله الطاهرين. ش: فقدت صفحه تشمل بداية الخاتمة، وثبتت في الصفحة التالية: «ويقع علينا الشذوذ ... أربعمائة».

al-Sharīf al-Raḍī - 978-90-04-68260-3
Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
Raḍī’s Conclusion
I come here to the end of my selection from the words of the Commander of the Faithful. I praise Almighty God who, by his immense grace, has guided me to gather from these words what was scattered here and there, and to collect what was dispersed far and wide. I have carried out my resolve—as I had stated in the beginning—to leave blank pages at the end of each chapter, so that I may capture therein any strays and add any additional discoveries, including anything that becomes clear to me after having been obscure or falls into my hands after being out of sight.

I seek my direction from God. In him I place my trust. He is my refuge, and he is the best trustee.
I write this in the month of Rajab, in the year four hundred [1010 AD].
Glossary of Names, Places, and Terms

This alphabetical list provides dates and brief biographies for all individuals mentioned in the text of the present volume, all unnamed interlocutors identified in the notes, and individuals important to understanding the text who are mentioned in my Introduction. Also glossed are groups, places, battles, and key terms.¹

Aaron (Ar. Hārūn) (fl. 14th c. BC), a prophet in Islam, Moses’ brother, whom he appointed over the Israelites.

al-ʿAbbās ibn ʿAbd al-Muṭṭalib ibn Hāshim (d. ca. 32/653), from the Hāshim clan of Quraysh, paternal uncle of Muḥammad and ʿAlī and eponym of the Abbasid dynasty.

al-ʿAbbās ibn Mirdās al-Sulamī (d. between 18/639 and 35/656), of the Sulaym tribe, pagan poet and warrior who converted to Islam after Muḥammad's conquest of Mecca.

Abbasids caliphal dynasty that came to power in 132/750 after defeating the Umayyads and ended in 656/1258 with the sack of their capital, Baghdad, by the Mongols.

ʿAbdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās (d. 68/686), ʿAlī’s cousin, governor, and staunch supporter, who fought in all his battles, a prolific hadith narrator and esteemed scholar.

ʿAbdallāh ibn Awfah al-Yashkurī See Ibn al-Kawwāʾ

ʿAbdallāh ibn al-Ḥaḍramī (d. ca. 38/658), stepbrother of Ṭalḥah ibn ʿUbaydallāh and the agent Muʿāwiyyah sent to recruit in Basra after the Battle of Ṣiffīn. Ibn al-Ḥaḍramī was killed by ʿAlī’s agent, Jāriyah ibn Qudāmah al-Sa’dī. (See further: Ḥ 4:34–53.)

ʿAbdallāh ibn Jaʿfar (d. after 80/699), from the Hāshim clan of Quraysh, son of Jaʿfar al-Ṭayyār, who was killed in the Battle of Mu’tah. ʿAbdallāh was ʿAlī’s nephew, son-in-law, and staunch supporter.

ʿAbdallāh ibn Mālik ibn Dajnah (or Dujannah, or Dihyah, lived during ʿAlī’s r. 35–40/656–661), one of ʿAlī’s followers who narrated his words. Not much is said about him in the sources, as evidenced also by the confusion about his name. (See further: Ḥ 13:18; B 680.)

¹ This information has been culled from multiple sources, including EIr², EIr³, Elr, “ʿAbd al-Zahrāʾ’s Maṣādir Nahj al-balāghah, medieval biographical dictionaries, and a variety of online sources. Some Nahj al-Balāghah commentators, especially Ibn Abi al-Ḥadid, Bahrānī, and Rāwandī, and also Ibn Funduq and Mughniyyah, offer detailed biographies and event narratives, and their commentaries are referenced in parentheses.
ʿAbdallāh ibn Masʿūd (d. ca. 32/653), early Companion of Muḥammad and prolific transmitter of hadith, famed also for his knowledge of the Qurʾan. He opposed ʿUthmān’s standardization of the holy book. He settled in Kufa, where he taught, and ʿAlī reportedly encouraged the Kufans to respect Ibn Masʿūd’s teachings.

ʿAbdallāh ibn Qays see Abū Misā al-Ashʿarī

ʿAbdallāh ibn Ṣafwān (d. 73/692), from the Jumaḥ clan of Quraysh, who fought with Ṭalḥah and Zubayr at the Battle of the Camel against ʿAlī and escaped from the battlefield. Later, he became a follower of Ibn al-Zubayr and was killed with him. (See further: B 652; Ḥ 11:125.)

ʿAbdallāh ibn ʿUmar (d. 73/693), son of the second caliph, ʿUmar, brother-in-law of Muḥammad, and prolific transmitter of hadith. Ibn ʿUmar was among the handful of prominent Companions who refused to pledge allegiance to ʿAlī and sat out his battles.

ʿAbdallāh ibn Zamaʿah ibn al-Aswad ibn ʿAbd al-Muṭṭalib (d. after 40/661), from the Asad clan of Quraysh, one of ʿAlī’s followers, even though ʿAlī had slain his father, uncle, and brother at the Battle of Badr. Brother of Muḥammad’s wife Sawdah bint Zama’ah, ʿAbdallāh married a daughter of another of Muḥammad’s wives, Umm Salamah, from her previous marriage. (See further: B 678; Ḥ 13:10.)

ʿAbdallāh ibn al-Zubayr (d. 73/692), son of the prominent Companion al-Zubayr ibn al-ʿAwwām, who fought with his father against ʿAlī in the Battle of the Camel. During Umayyad rule, Ibn al-Zubayr laid claim to the caliphate and exercised control over the Ḥijāz and Iraq for almost a decade before being killed by Umayyad forces.

ʿAbd al-ʿAzīz ibn Marwān (d. 86/705), son of the Umayyad caliph Marwān I and half-brother of the Umayyad caliph ʿAbd al-Malik. He served under both as governor of Egypt.

ʿAbd al-Malik ibn Marwān (r. 65–86/685–705), Umayyad caliph.

ʿAbd Manāf ibn Quṣayy ibn Kilāb (fl. 6th c. AD), chieftain of Quraysh, whose son Hāshim was Muḥammad’s and ʿAlī’s great-grandfather. His other son, ‘Abd Shams, was the Umayyads’ progenitor.

ʿAbd al-Muṭṭalib ibn Ḥāshim (d. ca. 579 AD), patriarch of the Ḥāshim clan of Quraysh, Muḥammad’s and ʿAlī’s paternal grandfather. ʿAbd al-Muṭṭalib raised Muḥammad in the first eight years of his life, after the death of his parents.

ʿAbd al-Raḥmān ibn ʿAttāb ibn Asīd (d. 36/656), from the Umayyad clan, killed fighting against ʿAlī during the Battle of the Camel. (See further: B 651; Ḥ 11:123–124.)

ʿAbd al-Raḥmān ibn ʿAwf (d. ca. 31/652), early Muslim convert from the Zuhrah clan of Quraysh, key supporter of Abū Bakr’s nomination to the caliphate and presiding member of the Shūrā Council that elected ʿUthmān.

ʿAbd al-Raḥmān ibn Ṣafwān (d. after 36/656), from the Jumaḥ clan of Quraysh, fought against ʿAlī at the Battle of the Camel.
‘Abd Shams ibn ‘Abd Manaf ibn Qusayy (fl. 6th c. AD), chieftain of the Quraysh tribe of Mecca, father of Umayyah, and great-grandfather of Mu‘awiyyah. ‘Abd Shams and Hashim were twins whose foreheads were reportedly separated by a sword strike, taken as an omen for enmity among their descendants.

‘Abdah, Mu‘ammad (d. 1905), Grand Mufti of Egypt and Shaykh al-Azhar, author of a brief word-list commentary on Nahj al-Balagha, with an important introduction.

Abel (Ar. Hābīl) see Cain and Abel

Abraham (Ar. Ibrāhīm) a prophet in Islam, originator of the Ka‘bah rites. Abraham is the progenitor of the Arabs and the Jews through his sons Ishmael and Isaac respectively.

Abū al-A‘war al-Sulamī (fl. 1st/7th c.), son of ‘Amr ibn Sufyān ibn ‘Abd Shams, commander who led Mu‘awiyyah's vanguard in the Battle of Šiffin and served as ‘Amr ibn al-‘Ās’s aide when he took Egypt for Mu‘awiyyah. Abū al-A‘war’s mother was Christian, while his father had fought against Mu‘ammad at Uhud. During the early Muslim conquests, Abū al-A‘war served under various Umayyad commanders in Syria and later remained attached to them.

Abū Ayyūb al-Anṣārī (d. ca. 52/672), Companion of Mu‘ammad and supporter of ‘Alī who participated in his battles. Abū Ayyūb had taken part in the Muslim conquest of Egypt and later participated in the Umayyad expedition against Constantinople, where he died and is buried. (See further: H 10:111–112; B 591–592.)

Abū Bakr ibn Abī Quḥāfah (r. 11–13/632–634), of the Taym clan of Quraysh, prominent Companion of Mu‘ammad and first of the four Sunni caliphs. He was the father of Muhammad’s wife ‘Ā’isha.

Abū Dhu‘ayb al-Hudhalī (d. ca. 28/649), famous pre-Islamic poet of the Hudhayl tribe, who probably embraced Islam together with his tribe in 9/630.

Abū Hurayrah al-Dawsī al-Yamānī (r. 11–13/632–634), of the Taym clan of Quraysh, prominent Companion of Mu‘ammad and first of the four Sunni caliphs. He was the father of Muhammad’s wife ‘Ā’isha.

Abū Jahl ʿAmr ibn Hishām (d. 2/624), from the Makhzūm clan of Quraysh, fierce enemy of Mu‘ammad, polemically called Abū Jahl: Father of Ignorance. Abū Jahl was killed fighting against Mu‘ammad at the Battle of Badr. (See further: B 776; H 13:214; F 365.)

Abū Juḥayfah Wahb ibn ʿAbdallāh al-Suwā’ī (d. 74/694), from the ‘Āmir ibn Ša‘ṣa‘ah clan of the Suwā‘ tribe, who settled in Kufa. Abū Juḥayfah served as chief of ‘Alī’s police force and would stand at the foot of the pulpit when ‘Alī orated. He narrated hadith from the Prophet and from ‘Alī.
Abū Jundub al-Hudhalī (fl. 6th c. AD), son of Murrah ibn ʿAmr from the Hudhayl tribe, pre-Islamic poet known as al-Mashʿūm (the Inauspicious One).

Abū Lahab ʿAbd al-ʿUzza ibn ʿAbd al-Muṭṭalib (d. 2/624), Muḥammad’s and ʿAlī’s paternal uncle and fierce enemy, assigned by the Qur’an with his wife to hellfire (Qur’an, Masad 111:1–5).

Abū Mūsā al-Ashʿarī, ʿAbdallāh ibn Qays (d. ca. 48/668), ostensibly one of ʿAlī’s supporters but one who caused him great harm. Abū Mūsā was an early convert to Islam who took part in the conquest of Iraq, served as governor of Basra under ʿUmar and ʿUthmān and as the locally appointed governor of Kufa at the chaotic end of ʿUthmān’s reign. When ʿAlī instructed him to rally the Kufans in the lead-up to the Battle of the Camel, Abū Mūsā refused and ʿAlī dismissed him. He was later imposed on ʿAlī as his representative in the post-Ṣiffīn arbitration, where he ruled against his master.

Abū Muslim al-Khawlānī (d. ca. 62/682), Yemeni convert to Islam of ascetic bent, who settled in Syria, an associate of Muʿāwiyah, sent as emissary to ʿAlī in the lead-up to the Battle of Ṣiffīn.

Abū Sufyān ibn al-Ḥarb (d. 32/653), of the Umayyad clan of the Quraysh tribe of Mecca, Muʿāwiyah’s father, and leader of the Meccan opposition against Muḥammad. Abū Sufyān converted to Islam when the Muslims conquered Mecca and later participated in the Syrian conquests. (See further: B 776; Ḥ 13:214; F 365.)

Abū Ṭālib ibn ʿAbd al-Muṭṭalib ibn Hāshim (d. 620 AD), patriarch of the Hāshim clan of Quraysh, ʿAlī’s father, and Muḥammad’s paternal uncle and foster-father, who offered him the clan’s protection.

Abū Tharwān (d. after 37/657), ʿAlī’s scribe in Kufa. Not much else is known about him.

Abū ʿUbayd al-Qāsim ibn Sallām al-Harawī (d. 224/838), prolific philologist from Khurasan who authored works on lexicography, jurisprudence, Qur’anic sciences, and hadith. His book titled Gharīb al-ḥadīth (Rare words in the hadith) became an instant classic. Cited by Radī in Nahj al-Balāghah.

Abū Umāmah al-Bāhilī (d. 86/705), early convert to Islam and transmitter of hadith. Abū Umāmah served as intermediary between ʿAlī and Muʿāwiyah during and after the Battle of Ṣiffīn, but the reports are contradictory about where his loyalties lay.

Adam (Ar. Ādam) a prophet in Islam and the first human.

ʿAfīf ibn Qays (d. after 38/658), from the tribe of Kindah, remonstrated with ʿAlī about marching to Syria, brother of the notorious al-Ashʿath ibn Qays. (See further: R 1:315; B 308.)

Age of Ignorance (Ar. Jāhiliyyah) the pre-Islamic period in which inhabitants of the Arabian Peninsula worshipped idols. Ignorance here is specifically meant as ignorance of the one true God.
Ahl al-bayt (lit. “people of the house”), Muhammad's family, according to the Shi'a, his daughter Fatimah, her husband Ali, and their descendants.

'ahd covenant, testament, or document of appointment.

ahl al-dhimmah see protected peoples

Ahmad ibn Qutaybah al-Hamdani (fl. late 2nd/8th c.), mentioned as narrator of oration § 1.231, likely from the generation after Ja'far al-Sadiq (d. 148/765) or the next one, among the leaders and narrators of the Shi'a. (See further: H 13:18; B 683.)

al-Ahnaf ibn Qays (d. 72/691), chieftain of the Tamim tribe and resident of Basra, who had a reputation for sagacity and was instrumental in persuading his tribe to accept Islam. Ahnaf sat out the Battle of the Camel but fought on Ali's side at Siffin. He later allied with the Umayyads to fight against the Kharijites and Shi'ites. (See further: B 470; Gh 2:253.)

Ahwaz (Ar. Ahwāz) city in the Khuzistan province of southwestern Iran on the Dujayl River, conquered by the Muslims in 17/638.

Ahnab see Confederates

'アイshah bint Abī Bakr (d. 58/678), daughter of the first caliph, Abū Bakr, and one of Muhammad's wives. She, with Ṭalḥah and Zubayr, led an army against Ali at the Battle of the Camel.

'Alā' ibn Ziyād al-Ḥārithī (n.d.), who features in oration § 1.207, is an otherwise unknown individual not mentioned in the sources. Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd (H 11:37) states that the man was actually named al-Rabi' ibn Ziyād al-Ḥārithī and that the name 'Alā' is an error in Radī's transcription.

ʿAlī ibn Abī Ṭālib (r. 35–40/656–661), Muhammad's cousin and ward, who married his daughter Fatimah. Ali is the first Shi'i Imam and the fourth Sunni caliph. (See details of Ali's biography in Introduction.)

ʿAlī ibn al-Ḥusayn al-Sajjād Zayn al-ʿĀbidīn (d. 95/713), Shi'i Imam following his father, martyr of Karbala, al-Ḥusayn ibn ʿAlī. Zayn al-ʿĀbidīn was present at the Battle of Karbala but fell ill and did not take part in the fighting. He later composed a set of supplications, famously known as al-Ṣaḥīfah al-Sajjādiyyah.

ʿAlī ibn Muhammad al-Zanjī (d. 270/883), Chief of the Zanj, who led a fifteen-year rebellion of East African slaves, from 255/869 to 270/883, against the Abbasids, which ravaged southern Iraq.

Allies (Ar. Anṣār, sing. Anṣārī) also translated as Helpers, the people of Medina from the tribes of Aws and Khazraj who supported Muhammad when he migrated there from Mecca.

Amalekites (Ar. ʿamāliq, sing. ʿimlāq) ancient pre-Islamic people, reportedly among the first speakers of Arabic and residents of Mecca. (See further: H 10:93–94; B 588; R 2:190; F 304.)

Amīr al-Muʾminīn see Commander of the Faithful
ʿAmmār ibn Yāsir (d. 37/657), eminent Companion of the Prophet and staunch supporter of ‘Alī who was killed in the Battle of Ṣiffīn. Muḥammad had prophesied that ‘Ammār would be killed by the “treacherous party,” and the Shi’a see his death at Ṣiffīn as proof of Muʿāwiyah’s iniquity. (See further: Ḥ 10:102–107; B 590.)

ʿAmr ibn ʿAbd Wadd (d. 5/626), of the ʿĀmir ibn Luʿayy tribe, famous pagan warrior whom ‘Alī slew in single combat at the Battle of the Confederates. (See further: B 776; Ḥ 13:214; F 365.)

ʿAmr ibn Abī Sufyān (fl. 1st/7th c.), Muʿāwiyah’s brother, from the Umayyad clan of Quraysh, taken captive at the Battle of Badr by ‘Alī.

ʿAmr ibn al-ʿĀṣ (d. 43/664), Muʿāwiyah's chief advisor at the Battle of Ṣiffīn, proverbial for his cunning. Earlier commander of the Muslim armies that conquered Egypt during the reign of ʿUmar, ‘Amr was dismissed by ʿUmar for corruption, but was later governor there for the Umayyads. Before he accepted Islam, ‘Amr had been one of Muḥammad’s fiercest enemies. (See further: Ḥ 6:281–326.)

ʿAmr ibn al-Ḥamiq al-Khuzāʿī (d. ca. 50/670), Companion of Muḥammad and a supporter of ‘Alī. He commanded a battalion in ‘Alī’s army at the battles of the Camel and Ṣiffīn.

ʿAmr ibn Salamah al-Hamdānī al-Arḥabī (d. 85/704), resident of Kufa, poet, and a leader of the Hamdān tribe who participated in the Muslim conquest of Persia. ‘Amr was ‘Alī’s staunch follower, who fought in all his battles and served as his governor in Isfahan. He was also a follower of ‘Alī’s son Ḥasan.

amṣār (sing. miṣr) garrison cities in the early Islamic period. In ‘Alī’s time, the major garrison cities were Kufa and Basra in Iraq, and Fusṭāṭ in Egypt. Initially set up to serve the early conquests, by his time they had become permanent and important settled towns in the region. Other towns in Iran and Central Asia are also identified in ‘Alī’s time as housing permanent garrisons, and as such may be included under this appellation.

Anas ibn Mālik al-Anṣārī (d. 93/712), resident of Medina, Muḥammad’s servant from the age of ten, and prolific narrator of hadith, although Shi’a sources accuse him of widespread forgery. Anas was among the handful of prominent Companions who refused to pledge allegiance to ‘Alī and sat out his battles, and who also refused when ‘Alī entreated all those who had heard Muḥammad’s words about him at Ghadīr Khumm to testify to what they had heard.

Anbar (Ar. Anbār) pre-Sasanian town on the Euphrates, in western Iraq, conquered by the Muslims in 12/634, whose ruins are situated 5 kilometers northwest of present-day Falluja. Lying on a cultivable plain near the first navigable canal between the two great rivers, Anbar controlled an important crossing in early Islamic times. It was also strategically important as the head of the irrigation system of arable lands in Iraq.

Antichrist see Dajjāl
ʿAqīl ibn Abī Ṭālib  
(d. ca. 50/670), ʿAlī's brother, who was vocal in his support for him but for a brief period accepted funds from Muʿāwiyah. He later rejected Muʿāwiyah's sponsorship and returned to Medina. (See further: H 11:250–254.)

Arabian Peninsula (Ar. Jazīrat al-ʿArab)  
Arabia to the ancients, land mass that projects southwards from the main body of the Middle East, surrounded on three sides by sea. Important to Muslims as the birthplace of Islam and its Prophet Muḥammad and site of the Holy Mosques of Mecca and Medina, Arabia was the seat of the Muslim empire for a brief two decades after Muḥammad.

arbitration (Ar. taḥkīm)  
post-Ṣiffīn adjudication at Dūmat al-Jandal in Ramaḍān 37/February 658, with Abū Mūsā al-Ashʿarī and ʿAmr ibn al-ʿĀṣ representing ʿAlī and Muʿāwiyah respectively. The arbitration ended with Abū Mūsā ruling against his master, ʿAlī, and ʿAmr ruling for his master, Muʿāwiyah. ʿAlī rejected the outcome of the arbitration, declaring it contrary to the Qurʾan.

Ardashīr-khurrah  
city in the Fars province of Iran, near Shiraz, surrounded by fertile countryside, built by the Persian emperor Ardashīr (r. 226–240 AD) at the site of the ancient Achaemenid city of Gūr. Conquered by the Muslims in the early 1st/7th century, Ardashīr-khurrah was renamed Firuzabad in the 4th/10th century. The site of the ancient city is located three kilometers east of the new city also named Firuzabad.

ʿArj  
caravan stop near Ṭāʾif, between Mecca and Medina (See further: H 13:303.)

Asad  
tribe in northern Arabia, whose people led a mainly nomadic life in pre-Islamic times. In the Muslim wars of conquest, the Asad served in Iraq and Persia. Most settled in Kufa, where they evolved from warriors to men of learning, including many who handed down the Shiʿa tradition. Smaller groups were incorporated into the Syrian army and settled near Aleppo.

Aʾshā Maymūn  
(d. ca. 7/629), pre-Islamic poet, one of the composers of the famous set of long poems known as the Hanging Odes.

al-ʿAṣbagh ibn Nubātah  
(d. early 2nd/7th c.), a close companion of ʿAlī and a prolific transmitter of his words, including the famous testament to Mālik al-Ashtar. An account of the killing of Ḥusayn at Karbala is also attributed to him. He belonged to the tribe of Tamīm, was a resident of Kufa, and fought alongside ʿAlī at Șīffīn.

al-Asḥāṭ ibn Qays  
(d. 40/661), Kufan noble of the Kindah tribe who revolted at Muḥammad's death. He later repented and fought for the Muslims at the Battle of Yarmūk, and he served as governor of Azerbaijan during ʿAlī's reign. Despite fighting on ʿAlī's side at the Battle of Șīffīn, Ashʿāṭ was instrumental in forcing ʿAlī to accept arbitration and to appoint Abū Mūsā as arbiter.

ʿĀṣim ibn Ziyād al-Ḥārithī  
(d. after 36/656), Basran ascetic, brother of ʿAlī's supporter ʿAlāʾ or Rabīʿ.

Ashras ibn Ḥassān al-Bakrī al-Balawī  
see Ḥassān ibn Ḥassān al-Bakrī al-Balawī
Ashtar  see Malik ibn al-Ḥārith al-Ashtar

Associate of the Camel (Ar. aṣḥāb al-jamal)  see Camel

al-Aswad ibn Quṭbah  (or al-Aswad ibn Quṭnah, or al-Aswad ibn Zayd ibn Quṭbah; fl. 1st/6th c.), commander of the Ḥulwān garrison during ‘Alī’s caliphate, named in § 2.59 (see note there re the confusion about his genealogy).

ʿAyn al-Tamr  lit. wellspring of dates, so called because of its abundant palms, a small town in Iraq west of the Euphrates, on the frontier between Syria and Iraq. In early Islamic times, ʿAyn al-Tamr commanded the military approaches from the western desert to Kufa; it was attacked by Muʿāwiyah’s commander al-Nuʿmān ibn Bashīr al-Anṣārī in 39/659. Today the town is called Shithāthah and lies 128 kilometers west of Karbala.

Azerbaijan (Ar. Ādharbāyjān or Adhrabījān) Sasanian town in northwest Iran conquered by the Muslims in 22/643 under the command of Ḥudhayfah ibn al-Yamān, an early Companion of Muḥammad and close associate of ‘Alī. Al-Ashʿath ibn Qays was governor of Azerbaijan during the caliphates of ʿUthmān and ‘Alī.

Badr  site of the first pitched battle between the Muslims and the Meccans, in 2/624, the year after Muḥammad’s migration to Medina. Badr is located 160 kilometers southwest of Medina and 50 kilometers inland from the Red Sea.

Bahrain (Ar. Baḥrayn) archipelago in the Persian/Arabian Gulf consisting of 33 islands offshore from present-day eastern Saudi Arabia, site of the ancient town of Tylos. Emperor Ardashīr conquered it in the first half of the third century AD, and Sasanian control lasted until ca. 6/628, when the population voluntarily converted to Islam. Also used in the sources to describe the eastern seaboard of the Arabian Peninsula.

Baḥrānī, Maytham  (d. 679/1280), early Twelver Shiʿi commentator of Nahj al-Balāghah, philosopher and theologian active in Bahrain, famous for his commentaries on the works of Avicenna.

Baghdad (Ar. Baghdād) capital of the Abbasid caliphate from its founding in 145/762 until the fall of the dynasty in 656/1258, with a small interregnum when the capital was in adjacent Sāmarrā’. Located at the confluence of the Tigris and Euphrates Rivers, Baghdad was a major hub for political and intellectual activity. Raḍī, compiler of the present volume, lived his entire life in this city.

Basra (Ar. Basrah) garrison city founded in 17/638, during the Islamic conquests of southern Iraq, located near the Shaṭṭ al-ʿArab, the river formed by the confluence of the Tigris and Euphrates. The Battle of the Camel was fought just outside Basra early in ‘Ali’s caliphate.

Baṭḥāʾ (The Flatland)  see Mecca

Battle of Badr  see Badr

Battle of the Camel  see Camel

Battle of the Confederates  see Confederates
Battle of Ḥunayn see Ḥunayn
Battle of Khaybar see Khaybar
Battle of Muʿtah see Muʿtah
Battle of Nahāwand see Nahāwand
Battle of Nahrawān see Nahrawān
Battle of Qādisiyyah see Qādisiyyah
Battle of Sīffīn see Sīffīn
Battle of Uḥud see Uḥud
Bayhaqī see Ibn Funduq al-Bayhaqī
Bedouins (Ar. aʿrāb) pastoral nomads or semi-nomads of the Arabian Peninsula.
Book see Qurʾān
Bishr ibn Abī Khāzim al-Asadī (d. after 575 AD), pre-Islamic poet of the Asad ibn Khuzaymah tribe, predecessor of the Umayyad poet Farazdaq. Bishr’s poems were collected by the anthologists Aṣmaʿī and Ibn al-Sikkīt, and the philologist Abū ‘Ubaydah wrote a commentary.
Bishr ibn Marwān (d. 74/693), son of the Umayyad caliph Marwān I and half-brother of the Umayyad caliph ‘Abd al-Malik, under whom he served as governor of Iraq.
Burak ibn ʿAbdallāh al-Tamīmī (d. 40/661), sometimes called Ḥajjāj, from the Ṣuraym clan of Tamīm, first to utter the Kharijite slogan, ⟨No rule save God’s!⟩ (lā ḥukma illā li-llāh). Burak was one of three Kharijites who conspired to assassinate ‘Ali, Muʿāwiyah, and ‘Amr ibn al-ʿĀṣ in the same night. He undertook to kill Muʿāwiyah but was captured and executed.
Burj ibn Munṣhir al-Ṭāʾī (fl. 1st/7th c.), identified by Raḍī as a Kharijite who called out in ‘Ali’s hearing their slogan, ⟨No rule save God’s!⟩ (§ 1.182). The commentators identify him with the drunkard pagan poet b. 595 AD who migrated to Syria and converted to Christianity (See further: Ḥ 1:340; B 597).
Busr ibn Abī Arṭāt (d. 70/689), of the ʿĀmir ibn Luʾayy tribe, one of Muʿāwiyah’s particularly brutal commanders, who fought with him at Sīffīn. Earlier, Busr took part in the Muslim conquest of Syria and probably of Egypt under ‘Amr ibn al-ʿĀṣ. Muʿāwiyah sent Busr in 37/658 to attack Medina, Mecca, and Yemen, where he killed or forced out ‘Ali’s commanders and terrorized the locals. (See further: Ḥ 1:340.)
Byzantium (Ar. Rūm) refers to the eastern half of the Roman empire, with its capital in Constantinople, which survived for a thousand years after the western Roman empire crumbled. Constantinople was conquered in 1453 AD by the Ottoman Turks, who named it Istanbul.
Cain and Abel (Ar. Qābīl and Hābīl) two sons of the Prophet Adam.
Camel (Ar. Jamal) name of a battle fought outside Basra in Jumādā II 36/ November–December 656 between the Caliph ‘Alī on one side, and Muḥammad’s widow ʿĀʾishah bint Abī Bakr and two Quraysh Emigrants, Ṭalḥah ibn ‘Ubaydallāh and al-
Zubayr ibn al-ʿAwwām, on the other. The battle is named for the camel that ʿĀʾishah rode onto the battlefield and is a metaphor for the rider herself. The rebel leaders and their Basran supporters are referred to in the sources as “associates of the Camel” (aṣḥāb al-Jamal).

colocynth (Ar. ḥanẓal) bitter desert plant used for medicinal purposes. Swallowing or peeling colocynth was a metaphor in early Arabic for bitter grief.

Commander of the Faithful (Ar. Amīr al-Muʾminīn) caliphal title in Islam, according to the Shiʿa associated primarily with ʿAlī. The title was also used by the caliphs of the Fatimid dynasty.

Companions of the Prophet (Ar. aṣḥāb and ṣaḥābah, sing. m. ṣaḥābī, f. ṣaḥābiyyah) individuals who had sustained personal contact with Muḥammad and are revered for their sincere service to Islam in its nascent stage. Key figures in the early history of Islam, Muhammad's Companions are also the first transmitters of his statements and deeds.

Confederates (Ar. Aḥzāb) name of a battle in 5/627 fought by the Meccan Quraysh, joined by several other tribes, to form a force of 10,000 men with 600 cavalry against the Muslims. Muḥammad foiled their attempt to storm Medina by digging a protective trench, and the battle is also known as the Battle of the Trench (al-Khandaq). Unable to enter, the confederates besieged Medina, but their confederacy broke up after a fortnight, and the siege was abandoned. Its failure strengthened Muḥammad's position. 'Alī played a major role by slaying the enemy champion ʿAmr ibn ʿAbd Wadd in single combat.

covenant, people with see protected peoples

al-Ḍaḥḥāk ibn Qays al-Fihrī (d. 64/684), Muʿāwiyah's commander, active at the Battle of Șiffin and in its aftermath. (See further: Ḥ 2:113–117; B 225).

Dajjāl the Antichrist. According to Islamic tradition, he is an evil man who will appear at the end of time, signaling the approach of judgment day.

Damascus (Ar. Dimashq, Dimashq al-Shām, or Shām) largest city in Syria, earlier under Byzantine rule, conquered by the Muslims in 14/635. Muʿāwiyah was governor of Damascus during the reigns of ʿUmar and ʿUthmān, and after ʿUthmān's death he fought ʿAli. After ʿAli's death in 40/661, Muʿāwiyah became caliph and Damascus remained the Umayyad seat of government of the Muslim empire until the Abbasids defeated them in 132/750 and set up their capital in Baghdad.

Dārī attributive of Dārīn, an island near Qaṭīf, on the east coast of present-day Saudi Arabia. In pre-Islamic and early Islamic times, Dārīn was the main port of Bahrain, through which musk was imported from India, which is why Dārī musk is famous. (See further: B 549; Ḥ 9:268.)

David (Ar. Dāʾūd) (fl. 10th c. BC), the biblical King David, a prophet in the Islamic tradition, mentioned in the Qur'an as someone granted prophecy, kingship, wisdom, and justice, as well as being the recipient of the Psalms. Muḥammad's hadith and ʿAlī's orations emphasize David's fervent prayer and fasting.
**Dhakwān** (fl. 1st/7th c.), an individual who is said to have memorized and narrated ‘Ali’s words to Abū Dharr al-Ghifārī (§ 1.128). There is some confusion about his identity: Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd identifies him as a freedman of ‘Ali’s sister Umm Hānī bint Abī Ṭālib (Ḥ 8:253). More often, the sources name Umm Hānī’s freedman as Bādhām (full name: Abū Ṣāliḥ Bādhām), adding that he narrated hadith. Elsewhere, they speak of a freedman of Muḥammad’s wife Juwayriyah, named Dhakwān (full name: Abū Ṣāliḥ al-Sammān Dhakwān ibn ‘Abdallāh), who likewise narrated hadith. Yet elsewhere, they speak of another Dhakwān, freedman of the Hāshim clan or of al-Ḥusayn ibn ‘Ali.

**Dhiʿlib al-Yamānī** (fl. 1st/7th c.), individual from Yemen who asked ‘Alī to describe God (§ 1.177), identified by the sources as among the leaders and narrators of the Shi’a. (See further: Ḥ 13:18; B 680.)

**Dhū Qār** caravan stop east of Kufa in the direction of Wāsiṭ, where ‘Alī camped enroute to Basra, where he fought the Battle of the Camel. Dhū Qār was also the site of a major early 7th-century AD battle between the Arabs and the Sasanian Persians. (See further: Ḥ 2:187–188.)

**Dhū al-Rummah, Abū al-Ḥārith Ghaylān ibn ʿUqbah** (d. 117/735), important Bedouin poet of the Umayyad era.

**Dhū al-Shahādatayn** (The-Twice-Martyred) see Khuzaymah ibn al-Thābit

**Dhū al-Thudayyah** (The Man with the Breast) (d. 38/658), Kharijite killed at Nahrawān, called thus because of a lump of flesh on his shoulder. Some sources identify Dhū al-Thudayyah as Ḥurqūṣ ibn Zuhayr al-Saʿdī, a leader of the Bajīlah tribe, who was killed fighting ‘Alī at Nahrawān. Ḥurqūṣ is in turn identified as ‘Amr Dhū al-Khuwaysirah al-Tamīmī, who was insolent to Muḥammad regarding the distribution of war spoils. (See further: Ḥ 13:183–184; B 771–772; F 364–365.)

**Ḍīrār ibn Ḍamrah al-Ḍibābī** (d. after 40/661), of the clan of Fihr from the Quraish tribe, a loyal associate of ‘Alī, reported in several early sources to have spoken eloquently of his late master’s virtues at the court of ‘Alī’s archenemy, Muʾāwiyah. (See further: Ḥ 18:225–226, R 3:294–295).

**duʿāʾ** supplication.

**Durayd ibn al-Ṣimmah** (d. 8/630), of the Hawāzin tribe, famous poet and warrior who lived mostly in the pre-Islamic period. Durayd was reportedly killed at the age of one hundred, fighting against Muḥammad in the Battle of Ḥunayn.

**Ḍūmat al-Jandal** site of the post-Ṣiffīn arbitration in 37/658, with Abū Mūsā al-Ashʿarī and ‘Amr ibn al-ʿĀṣ representing ‘Alī and Muʾāwiyah respectively. It was an oasis on the route between Medina and Damascus in early Islamic times, and part of Syria. It is located today in the Jawf province of Saudi Arabia, southwest of the provincial capital, Sakākah.

**Egypt** (Ar. Miṣr) refers in the early Islamic period both to the province and to its capital city, Fustāt, Egypt was conquered by the Muslims in 22/643, under the command
of ʿAmr ibn al-ʿĀṣ. At the onset of ʿAlī’s caliphate, in 35/656, the province pledged allegiance to him, but following the arbitration in 37/658, ʿAmr, now Muʿāwiyah’s chief advisor and governor-designate, killed ʿAlī’s governor, Muḥammad ibn Abi Bakr, and took over Egypt.

**Emigrants** *(Ar. Muhājīrūn)* those who migrated with Muḥammad from Mecca to Medina, and those who migrated from elsewhere to be with him. Along with the Allies, they are revered by later Muslims for their sincere service to Islam in its difficult early years and are considered among Muḥammad’s closest Companions.

**Euphrates** *(Ar. Furāt)* together with the Tigris, one of the two defining rivers of Mesopotamia. Originating in Turkey, it flows through Syria and Iraq to join the Tigris and empties into the Arabian/Persian Gulf. The major cities of early Islamic Iraq—Kufa, Basra, and later Baghdad—were all built along or near the Euphrates.

**Fadak** village near Khaybar, with abundant dates and grain, a three-day journey from Medina in early Islamic times. After Muḥammad’s death, his daughter Fāṭimah claimed ownership of Fadak as her inherited right, a right denied her by Abū Bakr. The Umayyad caliph ʿUmar ii (r. 99–101/717–720) returned Fadak to Fāṭimah’s heirs.

**Faith-leavers** *(Ar. māriqūn)* appellation applied to the Kharijites. (See further: Ḥ 13:183–184; B 771–772; F 364–365.)

**Family of the Prophet** see *Ahl al-bayt*

**Farazdaq, Abū Firās Hammām ibn Ghālib** (d. 114/732), Umayyad-era poet who composed eulogies for the Umayyad caliphs, also famous for a lengthy poem in praise of the Shiʿi Imam Zayn al-ʿĀbidīn. When Farazdaq was young, his father reportedly brought him to Iraq to visit ʿAlī.

**Fars** *(Ar. al-Fāris)* Arabicized form of Pārs, English Persia, province in southwestern Iran, with Shiraz as its main city. Earlier center of the Achaemenid and Sasanian dynasties, the Muslims conquered Fars in 28/648, and it became a major province of the Islamic empire.

**Fāṭimah al-Zahrāʾ bint Muḥammad** (d. 11/632), ʿAlī’s wife and Muḥammad’s youngest daughter, about whom he said, ⟨May my life be ransom for yours, Fāṭimah, you are the queen of the women of paradise.⟩ She died young, just two months after her father. Fāṭimah had four children with ʿAlī: Ḥasan, Ḥusayn, Zaynab, and Umm Kulthūm, all of whom played key roles in the political and religious life of early Islam.

**Fifth** *(Ar. khums)* one-fifth share mandated by the Qurʾan of the spoils of war and other specified forms of income, set aside for the Prophet and other designated beneficiaries (Qurʾan, Anfāl 8:41).

**Firās ibn Ghanam** tribe descended from Kinānah and Muḍar, residing in the area north of Mecca in Wādī Qadīd, famous for its members’ courage and loyalty. (See further: R 1:203; B 211.)
Followers-in-Virtue (Ar. al-tābiʿūna bi-iḥsān) or Successors, appellation applied to the second generation of Muslims, directly following Muḥammad's Companions.

Freedmen (Ar. ʿulaqāʿ) derogatory term referring to those members of the Quraysh, including Muʿāwiya's father, Abū Sufyān, who remained Muḥammad's committed enemies until forced to capitulate upon his conquest of Mecca. On that day, instead of forcing them into captivity as per the standard practice, Muḥammad pardoned them, saying, “You are freedmen.”

Fusṭāṭ originally a military encampment on the Nile alongside the Byzantine fortress of Babylon, built in the wake of the Muslim conquest of Egypt in 22/643, and thence capital of the province of Egypt. It was replaced in 358/969 as the capital by the conquering Fatimids’ newly built city of Cairo.

Gabriel (Ar. Jibrīl) archangel in Islamic tradition, who served as God’s messenger in bringing revelation to the prophets, including Muḥammad.

Ghāmidī see Sufyān ibn ʿAwf al-Ghāmidī

Ghālib ibn Ṣaʿṣaʿah (d. ca. 40/666), Tamīmī chieftain famed for his generosity, father of the renowned Umayyad-era poet Farazdaq. A contemporary of Muḥammad, Ghālib is also said to have visited ʿAlī in Iraq and introduced Farazdaq to him; ʿAlī advised Ghālib to teach his son the Qurʾan. (See further: Ḥ 19:96; R 3:441–442.)

Ghāmidī see Sufyān ibn ʿAwf al-Ghāmidī

Ghadīr Khumm (Pool of Khumm) oasis located 5 kilometers from Juḥfah, on the caravan route between Mecca and Medina, where Muhammad delivered an important oration to a large gathering of Muslims following his farewell pilgrimage, and declared, “For whomsoever I am Mawlā, ʿAlī is henceforth his Mawlā.” The Shiʿa interpret the word Mawlā here to mean “master” and deem it proof of Muḥammad’s designation of ʿAlī as his successor. Sunnis interpret the word to mean “kinsman,” and state that the Prophet said what he said to protect ʿAlī from those who wished him harm, but the words did not signify an appointment of succession. Ghadīr Khumm is also used to denote the day and the event.

Ghālib ibn Ṣaʿṣaʿah (d. ca. 40/666), Tamīmī chieftain famed for his generosity, father of the renowned Umayyad-era poet Farazdaq. A contemporary of Muḥammad, Ghālib is also said to have visited ʿAlī in Iraq and introduced Farazdaq to him; ʿAlī advised Ghālib to teach his son the Qurʾan. (See further: Ḥ 19:96; R 3:441–442.)

Ghāmilī see Sufyān ibn ʿAwf al-Ghāmilī

gharīb rare words in Muḥammad’s hadith, ʿAlī’s sayings, and elsewhere in the Arabic literary corpus, that medieval critics deemed in need of explication. A section of 9 wisdom sayings in the present volume contains gharīb words.

Golden Calf (Ar. ʿijl) calf-shaped idol worshipped by the Israelites under the direction of the Samaritan (Ar. Sāmirī), while Moses was on the mountain communing with God.

Ḥāḍirīn place in northern Syria where ʿAlī reportedly wrote a testament for his son Ḥasan on the way back from Ṣiffīn. Ḥāḍirīn does not appear to be mentioned anywhere in the sources; perhaps it is a mistranscription for some form of ḥādir, meaning urban space or town. (See further: Ḥ 16:52.)

hadīth (Ar. ḥadīth) often translated as Traditions, these are reports of Muḥammad’s words, deeds, and gestures. The hadīth hold a special position of authority and guidance for Muslims, complementing the Qurʾan.
Hajar town near Bahrain proverbial for its dates. (See further: H 15:188; B 819; F 372.)

hajj (Ar. ḥajj) pilgrimage to the Ka'bah in Mecca mandated once in a lifetime for every Muslim, combining rituals performed by Abraham and Muḥammad. The hajj is performed in the month named for it, Dhū al-Ḥijjah, the final month in the Islamic lunar calendar.

al-Ḥajjāj ibn Yūsuf al-Thaqafi (d. 95/714), Umayyad governor of Iraq famed for his eloquence and notorious for his harsh rule.

Ḥakīm ibn Jabalah al-ʿAbdī (d. 35/656), early Muslim, contemporary of Muḥammad, known for his piety and valor. Ḥakīm was killed combating the forces of Tālḥah and Zubayr, who were attempting to remove Ṭalḥah's governor in Basra in the lead-up to the Battle of the Camel. (See further: Ḥ 9:110.)

Ḥamal ibn Badr (d. late 6th c. AD), pre-Islamic warrior from the clan of Fazārah of the Dhubyān tribe, who was killed in the Battle of Dāḥis, a decades-long conflict between the tribes of Dhubyān and 'Abs, during the latter half of the 6th century AD. (See further: F 374; R 3:82; B 824.)

Ḥamal ibn Saʿd al-ʿAshīrah (fl. 6th c. AD), pre-Islamic warrior from the clan of Saʿd al-ʿAshīrah of the Madhḥij tribe.

Hammām (d. ca. 36/656), devout associate of 'Alī who reportedly passed away upon hearing 'Ali's oration describing the truly pious, named after him as The Oration to Hammām (§ 1.191). Some commentators give his full name as Hammām ibn Shurayḥ ibn Yazīd, while others identify him as Hammām ibn 'Ubādah ibn Khuthaym. (See further: Ḥ 10:134; B 599.)

Ḥamzah ibn ʿAbd al-Muṭṭalib ibn Hāshim (d. 3/624), known as King of Martyrs and God's Lion, paternal uncle of Muḥammad and 'Alī, who fought valiantly at the Battle of Badr and killed several Meccan warriors in single combat. He was slain by treachery the following year at the Battle of Uḥud by a man who was incited by Muʿāwiyah's mother, Hind. Muḥammad grieved deeply for Ḥamzah and recited the funeral prayer for him 70 times, placing Ḥamzah's bier in front of the bier of each martyr as he prayed for them one by one.

Ḥārith ibn Abī Sufyān (d. 2/624), Mu'āwiyah's brother from the Umayyah clan of Quraysh, killed by 'Ali in the fighting against Muḥammad at the Battle of Badr. (See further: B 792; R 3:3; F 369.)

Ḥarb ibn Shuraḥbīl al-Shibāmī (d. after 37/657), chieftain of the clan of Shibām from the Yemeni tribe of Hamdān, who settled in Kufa. Ḥarb was a follower of 'Alī and fought with him at Siffin.

Ḥarb ibn Umayyah ibn 'Abd Shams (d. ca. 607 AD), Mu'āwiyah's grandfather, from the clan of Umayyah of Quraysh, father of Abu Sufyān and father-in-law of Abū Lahab, both fierce enemies of Muḥammad. Ḥarb was one of the leading chieftains of Mecca in his day.

al-Ḥārith (al-Aʿwar) al-Hamdānī (d. 65/685), resident of Kufa and a learned man,
staunch supporter of ‘Ali who participated in his battles. Ḥārith belonged to the Ḥūth clan of the Hamdān tribe of Yemen, and his full name is al-Ḥārith ibn ‘Abdallāh ibn Ka‘b al-Hamdānī. A famous set of verses addressing him by name is attributed to ‘Ali. He appears in several reports in the present volume. (See further: Ḥ 17:42–43.)

al-Ḥārith ibn Ḥawt al-Laythī (or Khūṭ, or less likely Hawt or Ḥūt) (d. after 36/656), a man who challenged ‘Ali after the Battle of the Camel over the rightfulness of fighting Ā’ishah, Ṭalḥah, and Zubayr. Nothing else is found in the sources about Ḥārith, except discussions regarding the spelling of his father’s name, an additional indication that he was not well known.

Hanlot see Nābighah

Ḥārūriyyah (sing. Ḥārūrī) twelve thousand men who gathered in Ḥarūrā’ near Kufa in 37/657 to protest ‘Ali’s decision to accept arbitration in his dispute with Mu‘awiyyah over the caliphate. The Ḥārūriyyah are considered the first Kharijites. (See further: B 958.)

al-Ḥasan ibn ‘Alī (d. 49/669), eldest son of ‘Alī and Fāṭimah, grandson of Muḥammad, and Shi‘a Imam after his father. The Prophet said, ⟨Ḥasan and Ḥusayn are the leaders of the youth of paradise.⟩ After ‘Alī’s death in 40/661, Ḥasan received the pledge of the caliphate in Kufa. He abdicated six months later and returned to Medina, where he was reportedly poisoned on Mu‘awiyyah’s orders ten years later. (See further: Ḥ 16:9–52.)

Hāshim Muḥammad’s and ‘Alī’s clan within Quraysh, named after their great-grandfather, Hāshim ibn ‘Abd Manāf.

Hāshim ibn ‘Abd Manāf (d. ca. 497 AD), Muḥammad’s and ‘Alī’s paternal great-grandfather and custodian of the sanctuary in Mecca. Hāshim used to travel to Syria to trade and he married and set up a second home in Gaza. He died and is buried there in a shrine within the mosque complex named for him.

Hāshim ibn ‘Utba al-Mirqāl (d. 37/656), tribal chieftain of Kufa, nephew of Muḥammad’s Companion Sa‘d ibn Abī Waqqāṣ, and one of ‘Alī’s staunch supporters. Hāshim was killed at the Battle of Ṣiffīn. (See further: H 6:55–56.)

Ḥassān (or Ashras) ibn Ḥassān al-Bakrī al-Balawī (d. 38/658), Ḥasan’s governor in Anbar, who was killed by a cavalry troop led by Mu‘awiyyah’s commander, Sufyān ibn ‘Awf al-Ghāmidī. (See further: R 1:214–215; B 215–216; H 2:75–76, 85–90.)

Ḥassān ibn Thābit al-Anṣārī (d. ca. 40/669 or 50/669 or 54/673), of the Khazraj tribe of Medina, the best-known of several poets associated with the rise of Islam. Ḥassān was among the handful of prominent Companions who refused to pledge allegiance to ‘Ali.

Ḥātim al-Ṭāʾī (fl. second half of 6th century AD), pre-Islamic poet of the tribe of Ṭayy, proverbial for his generosity.

Ḥawāzin north Arabian tribal federation, including the tribes of Thaqīf and Sa‘d ibn Bakr, who fought the Muslims at the Battle of Ḥunayn in 8/630.
**Ḫijāz** western part of the Arabian Peninsula, where the cities of Mecca and Medina are located. The province runs along the Red Sea coast and is bordered to the east by the Sarat Mountains.

**Ḫijrah (Migration)** Muḥammad’s migration from Mecca to Medina in 622 AD. The Islamic calendar begins from this year, which is considered the first “Hijri” year.

**ḫikmah** wisdom, or wisdom saying, or aphorism.

**Ḫirā’** mountain located northeast of Mecca, where Muḥammad is said to have spent a month every year immersed in God’s worship. It is here that he is said to have received his first Qur’anic revelation.

**Hishām ibn ʿAbd al-Malik** (r. 105–125/724–743), Umayyad caliph.

**Hishām ibn Muḥammad ibn al-Sāʾib al-Kalbī** (d. 206/821), famous Kufan genealogist and scholar, whose grandfather Sāʾib fought with ʿAlī in the Battles of the Camel and Šiﬀīn. Ibn al-Kalbī is also the compiler of a lost book titled *Khuṭab ʿAlī* (Orations of ʿAlī). (See further: Ḥ 18:66.)

**Ḫit** town in northern Iraq on the Euphrates River toward Syria, site of a raid by Muʿāwiyah’s commander, Sufyān ibn ʿAwf al-Ghāmidī, in 39/659. (See further F 392; R:219.)

**House of God** see Kaʿbah

**Ḫudaybiyyah (or Ḫudaybiyah)** village just outside Mecca, site of a peace treaty concluded in 6/628 between Muḥammad and the Quraysh.

**Ḫujr ibn ʿAdī** (d. 52/672), Kufan chieftain of the Kindah tribe of Yemen, staunch supporter of ʿAlī who fought with him at the Battle of the Camel and at Šiﬀīn. During Muʿāwiyah’s caliphate, Ḫujr challenged the Umayyads’ cursing of ʿAlī, and he, along with several other Shiʿis, was tortured and beheaded by Muʿāwiyah’s governor Ziyād.

**Ḥulwān** ancient town situated near the entrance to the Paytak pass through the Zagros range, identified with the present-day village of Sar-i Pul, 33 kilometers east of Qaṣr-i Shīrīn, in the Kermanshah province of Iran. Ḥulwān was a town of note in early Islamic times, and a garrison was stationed there during ʿAlī’s caliphate.

**Ḫunayn** site of the Battle of Ḫunayn, fought between the Muslims and the Hawāzin tribal confederation in 8/630, following the conquest of Mecca, which ended in a decisive victory for the Muslims. Ḫunayn is a deep valley situated a day’s journey from Mecca on the road to Ṭāʾīf.

**Ḫurayth (or Ḫarīth)** Kharajite leader who fled from Iraq to Ramhormoz, against whom ʿAlī sent a battalion under Maʿqil ibn Qays in 38/658. (See further: F 369–370.)

**al-Ḫusayn ibn ʿAlī** (d. 61/680), second son of ʿAlī and Fāṭimah, grandson of Muḥammad, and Shiʿa Imam after his older brother, Ḥasan. Muḥammad said, ʿ Ḥasan and Ḫusayn are the leaders of the youth of paradise. Ḫusayn is killed by the Umayyads with his family and a handful of supporters at Karbala and is famous in Shiʿi lore as King of Martyrs (*sayyid al-shuhadāʾ*).

**al-Ḫuṣayn (or al-Ḫudayn) ibn al-Mundhir al-Raqqāšī, Abū Sāsān** (d. ca. 100/718),
notable and poet of Basra, among the leading members of the second generation of Muslims, a follower of ‘Ali, who carried the banner of Rabī’ah at Șiffin. Later one of the associates of Ja’far al-Šādiq.

Iblīs (Eng. Lucifer), archdevil condemned in the Qur’an. Originally a jinni or angel, he refused to bow down before Adam when God commanded him and was expelled from heaven for his disobedience. He vowed to lead the sons of Adam astray in every age.

Ibn al-‘Abbās see ʿAbdallāh ibn al-‘Abbās

Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd, ʿIzz al-Dīn ʿAbd al-Ḥamīd ibn Hibatallāh (d. ca. 656/1258), Sunni-Muʿtazilī theologian, “tafḍīlī” (one who gave precedence to ‘Ali over the three earlier Sunni caliphs), and a poet, historian, and literary theorist, best known for his twenty-volume commentary on Nahj al-Balāgah. An official in the Abbasid state, he held various administrative posts in the capital, Baghdad, just before the Mongol sack.

Ibn Abī Rāfiʿ see ʿUbaydallāh ibn Abī Rāfiʿ

Ibn al-Aʿrābī (d. 231/846), prominent philologist of the Kufan school.

Ibn Funduq al-Bayhaqī (d. 565/1170), early Sunni commentator of Nahj al-Balāgah from Khurasan, who relied on the lost, possibly the first, Nahj al-Balāgah commentary, by Aḥmad ibn Muḥammad al-Wabrī (fl. early 6th/12th c.), from Khwārazm. Ibn Funduq is the author of more than 70 works in Arabic and Persian on history and an encyclopedic range of subjects.

Ibn al-Ḥaḍramī see ʿAbdallāh ibn al-Ḥaḍramī

Ibn al-Ḥanafiyyah see Muḥammad ibn Ṭalib ibn Abī Ṭalib

Ibn Ḥunayf see ʿUthmān ibn Ḥunayf al-Anṣārī

Ibn al-Kawwāʾ (d. after 44/664), whose given name was ʿAbdallāh ibn Awfah al-Yashkūrī, a Kharijite leader who fought against ‘Ali at Nahrawān and escaped. He visited Muʿāwiyah in 44/664.

Ibn al-Tayyihān Abū al-Haytham al-Anṣārī (d. 37/657), early convert to Islam from the Medinan tribe of Aws and one of the Allies who fought for Muḥammad in the earliest battles of Badr and Uḥud. Ibn al-Tayyihān was killed fighting for ‘Ali at the Battle of Șiffin. (See further: Ḥ 10:107–108; B 590–591.)

Ibn Masʿūd see ʿAbdallāh ibn Masʿūd

Ibn Muljam (or Ibn Muljim) al-Murādī (d. 40/661), of the Kindah tribe of Yemen, the Kharijite who assassinated ‘Ali. He was executed by ‘Alī’s son and successor, Ḥasan.

Ibn Nubātah al-Saʿdī al-Khaṭīb (d. 374/985), famous Aleppan preacher who memorized a large number of ‘Ali’s orations and drew on them for his own.

Ibn al-Sikkīt (d. 244/858), scholar of Arabic lexicography, poetry, and grammar, author of about twenty books.

Ibn ʿUmar see ʿAbdallāh ibn ʿUmar

Ibn al-Zubayr see ʿAbdallāh ibn al-Zubayr
ʿĪd al-Aḍḥā  Eid of Sacrifice, major feast day following the hajj, on 10th Dhū al-Ḥijjah.
ʿĪd al-Fiṭr  Eid of Breaking-the-Fast, major feast day following the fasting month of Ramaḍān, on 1st Shawwāl.

ʿIkrimah ibn Abī Jahl  (d. 13/634 or 15/636), from the Makhzûm clan, son of Muḥammad’s fierce enemy and a leader of the Quraysh in their battles against Muḥammad. ʿIkrimah fled to Yemen near the time of the Muslim conquest of Mecca in 10/632 but was later pardoned. Abū Bakr appointed him to command Muslim expeditions in Yemen and Syria; he was likely killed fighting the Byzantines in the Battle of Ajnādayn in Palestine in 13/634. (See further: B 776; Ḥ 13:214; F 365.)

Imam  (Ar. imām)  lit. leader, refers either to the supreme leader of the Muslim community or to an exemplary scholar or prayer-leader. In Shia doctrine, the term denotes the Prophet Muḥammad, his legatee, ‘Ali, and their descendants, one in each age, who inherit their role of spiritual and temporal leadership, who are divinely guided and sole legitimate leaders of the Muslim community. The concept is rendered as Imamate (Ar. imāmah).

ʿImrān ibn al-Ḥuṣayn al-Khuzāʿī  (d. 52/672), converted to Islam in 7/628 and settled in Basra soon after the conquest of Iraq. He was among the handful of early Muslims who refused to pledge allegiance to ‘Ali, and he actively attempted to dissuade the Iraqis from supporting ‘Ali. ʿImrān fell ill soon thereafter and lived with chronic illness for nearly two decades until his death. (See further: Ḥ 17:132.)

Imruʾ al-Qays ibn Ḥujr al-Kindī  (d. ca. 550 AD), ranked by medieval critics—and by ‘Ali—as the best pre-Islamic poet, one of the composers of the celebrated Hanging Odes. Princely descendant of the Kindah, Imruʾ al-Qays is often called the Wandering King.

Iraq  (Ar. ʿIrāq)  important province in the early Islamic empire, conquered 14–17/635–638. Its major cities in ‘Ali’s reign were Basra and Kufa, the seat of his caliphate.

Isaac  (Ar. Isḥāq)  a prophet in Islam, son of the Prophet Abraham and ancestor of the Jews.

Ishmāel  (Ar. Ismāʾīl)  a prophet in Islam, son of the Prophet Abraham, and ancestor of the Arabs. Muḥammad and ‘Ali reportedly descend from his line.

Iskāfī, Abū Jaʿfar Muḥammad ibn ʿAbdallāh  (d. 240/854), Baghdadi Muʿtazilī who lived to a great age, and “tafḍīlī” Sunni, who maintained ‘Ali’s superiority to all other Companions of Muḥammad. Among Iskāfī’s lost works is Kitāb al-Maqāmāt fī tafḍīl ʿAli  (Book of exhortations, on ‘Ali’s superiority). (See further: Ḥ 17:132–133; B 913.)

Iṣṭakhr  town in the Fars district of Iran, an hour’s journey north of the ancient Achaemenid capital Persepolis, religious center of the Sasanian kingdom. The Muslims conquered it in 23/643 and it remained a fairly important place during the early centuries of Islam.

Jābir ibn ʿAbdallāh al-Anṣārī  (d. ca. 78/697), early Companion and one of the Allies,
resident of Medina from the tribe of Khazraj. He pledged allegiance to Muḥammad at ‘Aqabah before the Emigration and remained a staunch supporter of ‘Alī, fighting in all his battles. He died in Madāʾin, near present-day Baghdad, in his nineties. Jābir was a prolific narrator of Muḥammad’s hadith and ‘Alī’s words.

Ja’dah ibn Hubayrah al-Makhzūmī  (d. after 40/661), ‘Alī’s nephew, son of his sister Umm Hānī, a brave warrior and a learned man. Ja’dah was close to ‘Alī and served as his governor in Khurasan. (See further: Ḥ 10:77–78; B 585; Ḥ 13:130; B 679.)

Jafar ibn Abī Ṭālib  (d. 8/629), ‘Alī’s older brother, commander of Muḥammad’s forces at the Battle of Mu’tah, killed with his arms cut off in the battle. Muḥammad bestowed on him the epithets Ṭayyār, “He-Who-Soars-in-Paradise,” and Dhū al-Janāḥayn, “He-of-the-Two-Wings.” He is buried in Mu’tah, in the south of present-day Jordan.

Jafar al-Ṣādiq ibn Muḥammad al-Bāqir, Abū ʿAbdallāh  (d.148/765), great-grandson of the Prophet’s grandson Ḥusayn, recognized by the Ismaʿili and Twelver Shiʿa as the Imam succeeding his father, Muḥammad al-Bāqir. He spent most of his life in Medina and died there. Known as al-Ṣādiq, The Truthful, he, like his father, is the source of many oral reports in Shiʿi tradition. Ja’far al-Ṣādiq is also reported to be the teacher of two eponymous founders of Sunni legal schools, Abū Ḥanīfah and Mālik.

Jāḥiẓ, ʿAmr ibn Baḥr  (d. 255/868), prolific author who wrote some 240 books and essays on diverse topics, of which 75 survive whole or in part. Among his most famous full-length books is the 4-volume al-Bayān wa-l-tabyīn (Eloquence and exposition), mentioned by Raḍī. He cites and praises ‘Alī’s words frequently in his books, and a compilation of ‘Alī’s sayings titled Miʾat kalimah (One Hundred Proverbs) is also attributed to him.

Jarīr ibn ʿAbdallāh al-Bajalī  (d. after 55/675), of the Bajīlah tribe, converted to Islam shortly before Muḥammad’s death and settled in Kufa, later becoming ‘Uthmān’s governor in Hamadhān. Dismissed by ‘Ali, he came to Kufa and pledged allegiance, then served as ‘Alī’s emissary to Muʿāwiyah in the lead-up to Ṣiffīn and later as his governor in Hamadhān. According to the sources Jarīr remained secretly pro-Umayyad. (See further: Ḥ 3:70–74.)

Jāriyah ibn Qudāmah al-Saʿdī  (d. before 67/686), from the tribe of Tamīm, was a Companion of the Prophet and staunch supporter of ‘Alī. He died in Basra.

al-Jārūd al-ʿAbdī, Bishr ibn Khunays ibn al-Muʿallā  (d. 21/642), chieftain of ‘Abd al-Qays who came with a delegation from his tribe to Muḥammad in Medina ca. 9/630 and converted to Islam. Jārūd dissuaded the ‘Abd al-Qays from apostatizing after Muḥammad’s death. He was killed fighting with the Muslims during their conquest of Persia. (See further: Ḥ 18:55–57.)

Jesus (Ar. ʿĪsā)  a prophet in Islam. In the Qurʾan, he is called the Son of Mary, the Messiah (masiḥ), the Word (kalimah), and the Spirit (rūḥ).
jihad (Ar. jihād)  righteous struggle against the forces of evil. Jihad can refer equally to battle with outside enemies or combat with one’s own base instincts.

jinn  category of beings created from fire, non-corporeal spirits, believed to possess powers for evil and good.

Jisr al-Nahrawān (The Bridge of Nahrawān)  see Nahrawān

Jumāḥ  clan of the Quraysh.

Jumayḥ ibn al-Sharīd al-Taghlībī  (d. ca. 570 AD), pre-Islamic warrior and poet cited as a source of proverbial verses. Jumayḥ is sometimes said to be the sobriquet of Munqidh ibn al-Tammar al-Asadi.

Ka'bah  cuboid in Mecca, the holiest sanctuary of Islam, reportedly built by the Prophet Abraham, also called The House of God (Bayt Allāh). Muslim worshipers throughout the world face the Ka'bah in their daily prayer, and hundreds of thousands of pilgrims circumambulate it every year during the hajj and ‘umrah pilgrimages.

Kalb  Arabian lineage group of the Quḍā‘ah tribal federation. Predominantly camel-breeding pastoralists, the Kalb comprised powerful clans in the deserts between Syria and Iraq in pre-Islamic times and later were allies of the Umayyads.

Khabbāb ibn al-Aratt  (d. 37/63), one of the earliest converts to Islam and an eminent Companion of Muḥammad. As a freed slave of Nabatean origin, he suffered cruel torture at the hands of the Quraysh in Mecca because of his conversion. A strong supporter of ‘Alī, he died in Kufa soon after ‘Alī left for Ṣiffīn. (See further: Ḥ 18:171–172; B 947.)

Khadijah bint Khuwaylid  (d. 619 AD), Muḥammad’s first wife, the first Muslim, mother of all but one (Ibrāhīm, son of Māriyah the Copt) of Muḥammad’s children: daughters Fāṭimah, Zaynab, Ruqayyah, and Umm Kulthūm, and two sons, Qāsim and ‘Abdallāh, both of whom died in infancy.

Khālid ibn al-Walīd  (d. 21/642), from the Makhzūm clan of Meccan Quraysh, lauded by Sunnis for his prominent role as military commander in the conquests of Iraq and Syria and condemned by the Shi‘īs for his antagonism toward ‘Alī.

Kharijites (Ar. Khawārij, sing. Khārijī, Eng. Seceders)  strongly militarist group of Muslims who seceded from ‘Alī’s following subsequent to the post-Ṣiffīn arbitration. With the anti-‘Alī dictum, ⟨No rule save God’s!⟩ (lā ḥukma ʾilla li-llāh), they killed any who disagreed. ‘Alī fought and defeated them at the Battle of Nahrawān in 38/658. Most Kharijite factions eventually died out; they survive today as the milder Ibāḍī denomination in Oman and North Africa. (See further: Ḥ 4:132–278.)

Khaybar  oasis 150 kilometers north of Medina, famous for its abundance of date palms, with a large Jewish population in pre-Islamic times. Khaybar was the site of a major battle between Muḥammad and the Jews in 7/628. ‘Alī played a major role in the Muslim victory when he slew the Jewish champion Marḥab in single combat.

al-Khīrīrī ibn Rāshid al-Nājī  (d. 38/658), chieftain of the Nājiyah tribe, which had
converted to Islam and who, under his leadership, deserted from ‘Ali’s army after the post-Ṣiffin arbitration and reverted to Christianity. ‘Ali sent troops under Maʿqil ibn Qays al-Riyāḥī to fight them, and Khirrit was killed in the ensuing battle. (See further: H 3:120–151.)

Khurasan (Ar. Khurāsān) region comprising present-day northeastern Iran, Afghanistan, and parts of Central Asia. In Sasanian times, Khurasan was one of the four great provincial governorates. The Muslims conquered it ca. 30/651, and it remained one of the richest provinces of the early Islamic period.

Khushnūshak Persian merchant clan, which ‘Ali encountered in Anbar, in northern Iraq, in 36/656, on the march toward the Battle of Ṣiffin.

khūṭbah (oration) official discourse serving various religious, political, legislative, military, and other purposes, and containing diverse themes of piety, policy, exhortation to battle, and law. In modern usage, the term almost exclusively denotes the ritual Friday sermon.

Khuzaymah ibn Thābit al-Anṣārī (d. 37/657), famous as Dhū al-Shahādatayn, The Twice-Martyred, from Muḥammad’s hadith stating that his martyrdom had a two-fold worth. Dhū al-Shahādatayn was an early convert to Islam from the Medinan tribe of Aws and one of the Allies who fought for Muḥammad at Badr and Uḥud. He was killed fighting for ‘Ali at the Battle of Ṣiffin. (See further: Ḥ 10:107–108; B 591; n. 3 of R 2:192.)

Kirman (or Kerman, Ar. Kirmān) province in the southwest of present-day Iran, adjacent to the province of Fars, conquered by the Muslims in ca. 17/638.

kitab letter or book. The Book (Ar. Kitāb) is the Qurʾan.

Kufa garrison city founded in 17/638, during the Muslim conquests along the Euphrates, on the alluvial plains of Iraq. The city served as ‘Ali’s capital and remained a center for Shiʿi Islam for centuries afterward. Today it is a suburb of Najaf, the city that houses ‘Ali’s shrine, and a place of pilgrimage.

Kulayb al-Jarmī (d. after 61/680), son of Shihāb ibn al-Majnūn, a Basran (also identified as Kufan, perhaps having moved there during ‘Ali’s caliphate) who is said to have been an associate of ‘Ali, his sons Ḥasan and Ḥusayn, and his grandson ‘Ali Zayn al-ʿĀbidīn.

Kumayl ibn Ziyād al-Nakhaʿī (d. 82/701), close companion of ‘Ali who fought at Ŝiffin and served as governor of Hit, a frontier town in the north of Iraq. He narrated ‘Ali’s words and the famous Kumayl’s Prayer is one he is said to have learned from ‘Ali. Kumayl, alongside other staunch and vocal supporters of ‘Ali, was executed by the Umayyad governor Ḥajjāj. (See further: Ḥ 17:149–150.)

Laylā bint Masʿūd ibn Khālid al-Nahshaliyyah (d. ca. 61/681), ‘Ali’s wife whom he married during the early part of his caliphate in Basra. She bore him three sons: two died fighting for Ḥusayn in Karbala. In some reports, Laylā also accompanied Ḥusayn to Karbala. She died soon thereafter in Medina. (See further: F 271–272.)
Lucifer  see Iblīs

Madāʾin  lit. The Cities, metropolis of several adjacent cities on the Tigris River, 32 kilometers southeast of Abbadis Baghdad; one of them, Ctesiphon, was the Sasanian capital. At the time of the Muslim conquest in 16/637, Ctesiphon was the residence of the Jewish Exilarch and the Nestorian Catholicos. It was home to a population of around 130,000, with diverse faiths including Jews, Christians, and Zoroastrians, and varied ethnicities, including Aramaeans, Greeks, Persians, and Syrians.

Madhḥij  large tribal group in the southern Arabian Peninsula and Yemen. Madhḥij played an important role in the early Muslim conquests, especially of Egypt. They fought with ʿAlī at Ṣiffīn, under the leadership of Mālik al-Ashtar.

Mahdī  lit. The Rightly Guided One, the Messiah who will come at the end of time and institute an era of justice and peace. The Mahdī is a descendant of Muḥammad.

Makhzūm  prominent clan of Quraysh. (See further: B 964.)

Mālik  angel who guards the gates of hell.

Mālik ibn al-Ḥārith al-Ashtar al-Nakhaʿī  (d. ca. 37/658), tribal chieftain of the Madḥḥij tribe of Kufa, one of the foremost warriors of the early Muslim conquests and one of ʿAlī's strongest supporters. ʿAlī sent Ashtar as governor to Egypt, where he was reportedly poisoned at Muʿāwiyyah's behest. Earlier, he had been among the group who called for ʿUthmān's resignation. (See further: Ḥ 15:98–102; B 888.)

Maʾmūn  (r. 198–218/813–833), Abbasid caliph.

Maʿqil ibn Qays al-Riyyāḥī  (d. 43/663), chieftain of the Tamīm tribe of Kufa, loyal supporter of ʿAlī. Maʿqil commanded battalions at the Battle of the Camel and Ṣiffīn and led troops against renegade groups during ʿAlī's caliphate. Later, he was killed fighting the Kharijites. (See further: Ḥ 3:120–151, 15:92; B 794; F 369–370.)

Maʿrīb (or Mārib)  site of a great dam and capital of the Sabean realm in southwest Arabia, ruled in classical antiquity by the legendary Bilqīs, Queen of Sheba (Sabaʾ, or Sabāʾ), whose story is recounted together with the story of Solomon in the Qurʾan (Q Naml 27:20–44). The Qurʾan also speaks of a devastating flood that submerged the gardens of Sheba and brought drought (Q Sabaʾ 34:15–17). Present-day Maʿrīb is the main town of the district of the same name, 135 kilometers east of Sanaa.

māriqūn  see faith-leavers

Marwān ibn al-Ḥakam  (r. 64–65/684–685), first caliph of the Marwānid branch of the Umayyads, earlier exiled along with his father from Medina by Muḥammad. Marwān returned to become a key supporter of his cousin ʿUthmān. He fought against ʿAlī in the Battle of the Camel but reluctantly pledged allegiance to him when defeated. (See further: Ḥ 6:148–165.)

Mary (Ar. Maryam)  holy woman in Islam, mother of the Prophet Jesus. An entire chapter of the Qurʾan is named for her, which relates there and elsewhere the story
of her upbringing by Zachariah, her receiving food directly from God, her miraculous conception and birth of Jesus.

**Mas’adah ibn Ṣadaqah al-ʿAbdī** (fl. 2nd/8th c.), one of the associates of the Shiʿi Imams Muḥammad al-Bāqir and Jaʿfar al-Ṣādiq, who narrated their words. Mas’adah is the author of a lost book titled *Khuṭab Amīr al-Muʾminīn* (Orations of the Commander of the Faithful).

**Mashrafi sword** an excellent type of blade, so called in relation to Mashārif, a town in Yemen, or to certain towns called the Mashārif of Syria.

**Maṣqalah ibn Hubayrah al-Shaybānī** (d. 50/670), of the Bakr tribe, ‘Alī's governor in Ardashīr-khurrah. Maṣqalah is noted for purchasing the freedom of the Nājiyah war captives from ‘Alī's commander Maʿqil ibn Qays, then fleeing to Muʿāwiyah without paying. After ‘Alī's death, he remained in Muʿāwiyah's service and participated in the killing of ‘Alī's supporter Ḥujr ibn ‘Adī. Muʿāwiyah sent Maṣqalah to conquer Ṭabaristān, where he was killed. (See further: Ḥ 3:120–151.)

**maysir** pre-Islamic game of chance that involved drawing arrows to determine the division of a slaughtered camel's meat; the man who drew the longest arrow won the choicest part. The Qurʾan condemns the practice as Satan's handiwork (Q Baqarah 2:219; Māʾidah 5:90–91.)

**Mecca** (Ar. Makkah) holiest city of Islam, birthplace of Muḥammad and ‘Alī, home to the Ka’bah and locus of worship for Muslims worldwide. In pre-Islamic times, Mecca was the abode of the Quraysh tribe and a site of pilgrimage. Muḥammad spent his youth and the first thirteen years of his mission there. Mecca is also known as Umm al-Qurā (Mother of all Cities), Batḥāʾ (The Flatland), and Bakkah.

**Medina** (Ar. Madīnah) second holiest city of Islam, Muḥammad's home for his final ten years, after he had migrated from Mecca, and capital of the Islamic polity during the first three caliphates. It is located 160 kilometers from the Red Sea and 350 kilometers north of Mecca, in the Hijāz province of present-day Saudi Arabia. Medina is short for *Madīnat al-Nabī*, City of the Prophet. It is also known as Ṭaybah (The Pure City) and Dār al-Hijrah (Home of Migration). In pre-Islamic times, it was a flourishing and fertile settlement named Yathrib, populated by the pagan tribes of Aws and Khazraj, and the Jewish tribes of Naḍīr, Qaynuqāʿ, and Qurayẓah, who collectively invited Muḥammad to settle there as its chief.

**Messiah** (Ar. Masīḥ) an epithet of Jesus, a prophet in Islam.

**Michael** (Ar. Mīkāʾīl) an archangel of Islamic tradition, mentioned in the Qurʾan and paired with Gabriel.

**Migration** see Hijrah

**Mikāʾīl** see Michael.

**Mikhnaf ibn Sulaym al-Azdī** (d. 65/684), embraced Islam, along with his tribal delegation, at Muḥammad's hands. Afterward, he fought at the Battle of Qādisiyyah in Iraq and settled in Kufa. Mikhnaf was a strong supporter of ‘Alī. He commanded the
Azdī battalion in ‘Alī’s battles and served as ‘Alī’s governor in Isfahan. Later, after ‘Alī’s son Ḥusayn was martyred at Karbala, Mikhnaf joined the Tawwābūn (Pentents), who sought revenge for Ḥusayn’s death, and was killed in the ensuing Battle of ‘Ayn al-Wardah. Mikhnaf’s grandson, the important historian Abū Mikhnaf Lūṭ ibn Yahyā (d. 157/774), relates much of his material on ‘Alī and Ḥusayn from his grandfather.

**al-Miqdād ibn ‘Amr al-Bahrāʾī** (d. 33/653), also known as al-Miqdād ibn al-Aswad, staunch supporter of ‘Alī, Companion of Muḥammad, and one of the first Muslims. Earlier, after an altercation in his homeland of Kindah, in Yemen, Miqdād fled to Mecca, where he was adopted by al-Aswad ibn ‘Abd Yaghūth al-Zuhri. He fought in all Muḥammad’s battles and was given command in several. Later, he took part in the Muslim conquest of Syria.

**Moses** (Ar. Mīsā) prophet in Islam

**Mosul** (Ar. Mawṣil) fortress city in north Iraq, important in early Islamic times, located on the Tigris River, opposite ancient Nineveh. After the Muslim conquest of Nineveh in 20/641, Mosul was set up nearby as a military camp city.

**Muʿāwiyah ibn Abī Sufyān** (d. 60/680), major enemy of ‘Alī and the first Umayyad caliph. Muʿāwiyah was ‘Uthmān’s cousin and had served as governor of Syria under him and earlier under ‘Umar. He refused to accept ‘Alī as caliph and fought him, with the support of the people of Syria, at the Battle of Ṣiffīn, in 37/657. After ‘Alī’s death in 40/661, ‘Alī’s son Ḥasan concluded a peace agreement and Muʿāwiyah became caliph. He ruled from Damascus for 20 years. (See further: Ḥ 6:334–340.)

**Muḍar** one of the two largest tribal federations in ancient north Arabia (the other is Rabīʿah). The federation is named for Muḍar ibn Nizār ibn Maʿadd ibn ‘Adnān, eponymous ancestor of Muḥammad’s and ‘Alī’s tribe of Quraysh. (See further: B 772; Ḥ 13:98.)

**al-Mughīrah ibn Shuʿbah al-Thaqafī** (d. ca. 50/670), Meccan notorious for the laxness of his faith and for his political cunning. Mughīrah served as governor of Kufa under ‘Umar, and later again under Muʿāwiyah, at which time he openly cursed ‘Alī on the pulpit. He had been among those who refused to pledge allegiance to ‘Alī after ‘Uthmān’s death. (See further: Ḥ 20:8–10.)

**al-Mughīrah ibn al-Akhnas ibn Shurayq al-Thaqafī** (d. 35/656), poet from the Thaqīf tribe, close associate of ‘Uthmān (he was killed alongside him), and keen enemy of ‘Alī. Mughīrah’s brother Abū al-Ḥakam had been among the Meccans ‘Alī had slain at the Battle of Uhud. Mughīrah’s father, Akhnas, Muḥammad’s fierce enemy, had accepted Islam reluctantly following the conquest of Mecca; presumably, Mughīrah also converted then. (See further: Ḥ 8:301–303.)

**Muḥammad al-Bāqir ibn ‘Alī Zayn al-ʿĀbidīn, Abū Jaʿfar** (d. ca. 114/732), grandson of the Prophet’s grandson Ḥusayn, recognized by the Ismaʿili and Twelver Shi’a as
the Imam after his father, Zayn al-ʿĀbidin. He was a child when he accompanied his father and grandfather to Karbala. Known as al-Bāqir or Bāqir al-ʿilm, “the one who possesses full knowledge,” he is the source of many oral reports in Shiʿi tradition. He spent his life in Medina and died there.

Muḥammad ibn ʿAbdallāh (d. 11/632), Prophet of Islam and Messenger of God (Rasūl Allāh).

Muḥammad ibn Abī Bakr (d. 38/658), ʿAlī’s ward and staunch supporter. His father, the first caliph, Abū Bakr, died when he was a child, and ʿAlī, who married his widowed mother, Asmāʾ bint ʿUmays, raised him. Muḥammad fought alongside ʿAli at the Battle of the Camel, against his sister ʿĀʾishah. Serving for a short time as ʿAlī's governor in Egypt, he was tortured and killed by Muʿāwiyyah's commander ʿAmr ibn al-ʿĀṣ when ʿAmr captured Egypt after the arbitration. (See further: Ḥ 6:53–54, 161:42–143; B 861; R 1:295.)

Muḥammad ibn ʿAbdallāh (d. 81/700), also known as Muḥammad ibn al-Ḥanafiyyah and Ibn al-Ḥanafiyyah, ʿAlī's son, Ḥasan's and Ḥusayn's half-brother, who was active in his father's service, especially at Ṣiffīn. In Umayyad times, the Kufan chieftain al-Mukhtār al-Thaqafī led a major rebellion in Iraq in Ibn al-Ḥanafiyyah's name.

Muḥammad ibn Marwān (d. 101/719), son of the Umayyad caliph Marwān I and half-brother of the Umayyad caliph ʿAbd al-Malik, Muhammad served as governor of Armenia under ʿAbd al-Malik and as the commander of military expeditions.

Muḥammad ibn Maslamah al-Anṣārī (d. 43/663 or 45/666), of the Aws tribe of Medina, an early convert to Islam who later participated in the conquest of Egypt. He was among a handful of Companions who refused to pledge allegiance to ʿAlī and sat out his battles.

al-Mundhir ibn al-Jārūd al-ʿAbdī (d. 61/681), recalcitrant Kufan chieftain who initially fought alongside ʿAlī at the Battle of the Camel, but later, when appointed governor of Fars, stole from the treasury and was dismissed. In 61/681, two decades after ʿAlī's death, when al-Ḥusayn ibn ʿAlī sent a messenger to Mundhir asking for help, he turned the messenger over to the Umayyad governor Ibn Ziyād for execution. As a reward, Ibn Ziyād appointed Mundhir governor of Sind, where he died almost immediately. (See further: Ḥ 17:55–57.)

Muʿtah a town two hours south of Karak, in present-day Jordan, site of a battle between the Muslims and the Byzantines in 8/629, in which three Muslim commanders were killed, one following the other, including ʿAlī's brother Jaʿfar al-Ṭayyār. Three years later, the Muslims returned, under the command of Usāmah ibn Zayd, to defeat the Byzantines.

Muʿtazilah (sing. Muʿtazili) rationalist school of Islamic theology, which used the dialectics of Greek philosophy. Its subscribers called themselves “people of unity
and justice” (*ahl al-tawḥīd wa-l-ʿadl*), meaning that they were strictly non-anthropomorphic proponents of God’s oneness and advocates for his justice and thus of human free will.

**Nābihghah** (fl. 1st/7th c.), “The Harlot,” lit. “the woman who shows herself,” infamous appellation of ʿAmr ibn al-ʿĀṣ’s mother in pre-Islamic times. Her given name is not mentioned in the sources. (See further: Ḥ 6:283; B 335; M 1:415.)

**Nahāwand** (or Nihāwand or Nahāvand or Nihāvand) town in the Zagros Mountains of western Iran, 80 kilometers south of the city of Hamadhān, site of a battle in 21/642 between the Muslims and the Persian Sasanians, in which the Muslims won a decisive victory.

**Nahrawān** (present-day Sīfwhah) also called Jisr al-Nahrawān, a town in the lower Diyālā region east of the Tigris River in Iraq, location of a battle between ‘Ali and the Kharijite defectors from his Ṣiffīn army under ʿAbdallāh ibn Wahb, on 9 Ṣafar 38/17 July 658. Persuaded by ‘Ali’s speech, over a thousand Kharijite fighters left without fighting. Of the 2,800 men remaining, a handful fled during the battle, the 400 wounded were pardoned by ‘Ali, and the rest were killed. (See further: Ḥ 2:265–283; B 245–246.)

**Nājiyah** Christian tribe in pre-Islamic times of contested origins (Nājiyah is their eponymous mother), many of whom had converted to Islam. The Nājiyah tribe served in ‘Ali’s army in the Battle of Ṣiffīn, then deserted under the leadership of al-Khirrit ibn Rāshid and reverted to Christianity. (See further: Ḥ 3:120–151.)

**nākithūn** see *pledge-breakers*

**Naṣībīn** classical Nasibis or Nisibis or Nesbin, Nusaybin in modern Turkey, where it is now located, earlier in northern Iraq. An ancient, fortified, frontier city on the Hīrmās River, conquered by the Muslims in 18/639.

**Nawf ibn Faḍālah al-Bikālī** (fl. 1st/7th c.), member of the Bikāl clan of the Ḥimyar tribe of Yemen, an associate of ‘Ali. (See further: B 585; Ḥ 10:76–77, 18:265–266.)

**Night of Clamor** (*Ar. laylat al-harīr*) Thursday-Friday 7–8 Ṣafar 37/27–28 July 658, the final, bloody night of the two-month Battle of Ṣiffīn, between the forces of ‘Ali and Muʿāwiyah. (See further: B 289.)

**nock** (*Ar. fūq*) notch at the end of an arrow into which the bowstring fits, *fūq* also indicates a broken nock.

**Nukhaylah** town in Iraq near Kufa, on the road to Syria, where ‘Ali stopped enroute to Ṣiffīn. It is said to correspond to present-day Khān Ibn Nukhaylah, located between Karbala and Kufa.

**al-Nuʿmān ibn ʿAjlān al-Zuraqī** (d. after 40/661), from the Zurayq clan of the Khazraj tribe, one of the leaders of Muḥammad’s Allies in Medina, and a poet. Outspoken in supporting ‘Ali’s right to the caliphate over Abū Bakr, Nuʿmān was also one of the thirty witnesses who testified to Muḥammad’s appointment of ‘Ali at Ghadīr Khumm, when ‘Ali called on them in Kufa. He participated in Ṣiffīn and served as ‘Ali’s governor in Bahrain. (See further: Ḥ 16:174; B 869.)
al-Nu‘mān ibn Bashīr al-Anṣārī (d. 65/684), among the handful of Medinans who refused to pledge allegiance to ʿAlī after ʿUthmān’s death and the only person from the Allies who became Muʿāwiyah’s staunch supporter. According to some reports, Nu‘mān brought ʿUthmān’s bloodstained shirt to Damascus, and Muʿāwiyah then exhibited it in the mosque. He fought with Muʿāwiyah against ʿAlī in the Battle of Şīffin, and he undertook an expedition against Ayn al-Tamr on ʿAlī’s frontier in 39/659 but was forced to retreat. (Ḥ 1:301–306.)

**oath of allegiance (bay‘ah)** formal profession of loyalty and obedience rendered, with an oath, to the Prophet and the Caliphs by each of their subjects.

**Pharaoh (Ar. Fir‘awn)** title of the ancient rulers of Egypt in the Qur’ān, Pharaoh is condemned as an evil ruler who refused to obey God and his messenger, Moses.

**Persia** see Fars

**Persian empire (Ar. Fars)** ruled by the Sasanian dynasty, defeated by the Muslims in the Battle of Qādisiyyah in Iraq (bet. 14–17/635–638) and the Battle of Nahāwand in Iran (21/642).

**pilgrimage** see hajj and ʿumrah

**pledge of allegiance** see oath of allegiance

**pledge-breakers (Ar. nākithūn)** appellation of those who fought ʿAlī at the Battle of the Camel. (See further: Ḥ 13:183–184; B 771–772; F 364–365.)

**protected peoples (Ar. ahl al-dhimmah)** also called “people with a covenant,” members of revealed religions, to whom the early Islamic state provided protected status.


**Qādisiyyah** small town south of present-day Najaf in Iraq, site of a major Muslim victory over the Sasanians in ca. 16/637, which opened Iraq and Persia to further conquest.

**Qarqīsiyā (Latin: Circesium)** Roman fortress city near the junction of the Euphrates and Khābūr rivers at the empire’s eastern frontier, corresponding to the present-day village of Buṣayrah. Conquered by the Muslims in 18/638, Qarqīsiyā continued to be contested by competing Muslim states due to its strategic location between Syria and Iraq.

**Qaṣīr ibn Saʿd al-Lakhmī** (fl. 3rd c. AD), proverbial counsellor to the pre-Islamic Iraqi Azdī king Jadhīmah ibn Mālik ibn Naṣr. Jadhīmah was killed by Zenobia (Ar. Zabbāʾ), Queen of Palmyra, whose father he had killed, and whom he had set out to wed against Qaṣīr’s advice.

**qāsiṭūn** see wrongdoers

Qays ibn Saʿd (d. ca. 59/678), son of Muḥammad’s Companion Saʿd ibn ʿUbādah al-Anṣārī, Qays was ʿAlī’s first governor in Egypt and one of his commanders at the Battle of Şīffin. (See further: Ḥ 10:112; B 591.)
Qiblah  direction of the Ka'bah in Mecca, which all Muslims face in ritual prayer. People of the Qiblah refers to Muslims.

Qurʾan (Ar. Qurʾān)  holy book of the Muslims, revealed by God to Muḥammad, also called The Book (Ar. Kitāb) and The Wise Remembrance (Ar. al-Dhikr al-ḥakīm).

Quraysh  Muḥammad’s tribe. They lived in Mecca and were initially his bitter enemies, fighting him in the Battles of Badr, Uḥud, and The Confederates. When Muḥammad conquered Mecca in 8/630, they reluctantly accepted Islam en masse.

Qutham ibn al-ʿAbbās  (d. 56/676), cousin of Muḥammad and ‘Ali, brother of ‘Abdal-lāh ibn al-ʿAbbās, served as ‘Ali’s governor in charge of Mecca, Medina, and Ṭāʾif. (See further: .Hex 16:140–141.)

Rabadhah  early Muslim settlement in the foothills of the Ḥijāz mountains, 200 kilometers to the northeast of Medina, now an archaeological site marked by the cistern of Abū Salīm. In early Islamic times it lay on the main pilgrimage route from Kufa to Mecca.

al-Rabīʿ ibn Ziyād al-Ḥārithī  (d. ca. 48/668), participated in the Muslim conquest of Khurasan and served as governor of Bahrain during ‘Umar’s caliphate, and of Khurasan during Muʿāwiyah’s. (See further: Hex 11:37.)

Rabīʿah  one of the two largest tribal federations in ancient north Arabia (the other is Muḍar), named for Rabīʿat al-Faras ibn Nizār ibn Maʿadd ibn ʿAdnān, eponymous ancestor of the tribes of Bakr and Taghlib. Rabīʿah was divided among ‘Ali and his opponents during the Battle of the Camel and Șīffīn. (See further: B 772; H 13:39:8.)

Raḍī, Sharīf, Muḥammad ibn al-Ḥusayn  (d. 406/1015) descendant of Muḥammad who lived in Abbasid Baghdad, distinguished scholar and poet, compiler of Nahj al-Balāghah.

Ramhormoz (Ar. Rāmahurmuz)  town in the Khuzistan province of southwestern Iran, conquered by the Muslims in 17/638, reportedly the ancestral homeland of Salman al-Fārisī.

Raqqah  town in northwest Syria on the Euphrates, conquered by the Muslims in ca. 48/639. In 36/656, ʿAli crossed the Euphrates at Raqqah on his way to Șīffīn. Located close by, the burials of ʿAli’s followers remain venerated places of Shiʿi pilgrimage.

rare words  see gharīb

Rass  lit. well. The “people of Rass” (aṣḥāb al-Rass) are mentioned in the Qur’an, alongside ʿAd and Thamūd, as unbelieving peoples of ancient times, destroyed for their impiety (Q Furqān 25:38). (See further: H 10:94–95; B 589; R 2:291; F 303–304.)

Rāwandī, Quṭb al-Dīn  (d. 573/1177), early Twelver Shiʿi commentator on Nahj al-Balāghah, a jurist, exegete, theologian, and hadith scholar, student of Ṭabrisī, author of around 60 books. He died in Qum and is buried there.

risālah  letter, treatise, or message.

Sabā  (rendered into English as Sheba; fl. before 7th c. AD), proverbial pre-Islamic
individual from Yemen. In the proverb, “They dispersed like the hands of Sabā,” Sabā’s hands are a metaphor for his sons. Warned by a sybil of the Ma’rib dam’s imminent rupture, they dispersed across Arabia. (See further: Ḥ 7:74–75; B 403; R 1:432.)

**Sacred House** see Ka’bah

**Sa’d ibn (Muḥammad) Abī Waqqāṣ** (d. between 50/670 and 58/677), among the first Muslims, commander of the Arab armies during the conquest of Iraq, and member of the Shūrā Council that elected ʿUthmān. Sa’d was among the handful of prominent Companions who refused to pledge allegiance to ‘Ali and sat out his battles.

**Sa’dān** plant growing in the arid wastes of Arabia, prized for camel pasturing, with a head of prickles that wound human feet.

**Ṣafīyyah bint ʿAbd al-Muṭṭalib** (d. ca. 20/640), from the Hāshim clan of Quraysh, paternal aunt of Muḥammad and ‘Ali, and mother of al-Zubayr ibn al-ʿAwwām. Ṣafīyyah was one of the earliest converts to Islam and migrated with Muḥammad to Medina.

**Ṣafwān ibn Umayyah al-Jumaḥī** (d. ca. 41/661), one of the leaders of Quraysh who spearheaded the Battle of the Confederates against Muḥammad. His father, Umayyah ibn Khalaf, was also Muḥammad’s inveterate opponent. Ṣafwān converted to Islam after the Battle of Ḥunayn, in 8/630. (See further: B 776; Ḥ 13:214; F 365.)

**Ṣahl ibn Ḥunayf al-Anṣārī** (d. 38/658), of the Medinan Aws tribe, was an early Companion and narrator of hadith. ʿAlī’s staunch supporter, Sahl reportedly debated with Abū Bakr about ʿAlī’s rightful succession to Muḥammad. During ‘Alī’s caliphate, he served as governor in Medina, Basra, and Fars, and he fought in the Battle of Ṣiffīn. He died in Kufa, soon after returning from Ṣiffīn.

**Saʿīd ibn al-ʿĀṣ** (d. 59/678), from the Umayyad clan of Quraysh, ‘Uthmān’s governor of Kufa 29–34/649–655, and later, Muʿāwiyah’s governor of Medina.

**Saʿīd ibn Nimrān al-Hamdānī** (d. ca. 70/689), participated in the battles of Yarmūk and Qādisiyyah during the Muslim conquests. A loyal follower of ‘Ali, Saʿīd served as his scribe, and as his governor in Yemen. Later imprisoned by the Umayyad governor Ziyād for denouncing the Umayyads’ cursing of ‘Ali, alongside ‘Alī’s supporter Ḥujr ibn ʿAdī. Saʿīd was released, while Ḥujr was executed.

**Saʿīd ibn Yaḥyā al-Umawī** (d. 249/863), author of *Maghāzī* (Expeditions), a recension of the Book of Expeditions composed by his father, Abū Ayyūb Yaḥyā ibn Saʿīd al-Umawī (d. 194/809). His father was a native of Kufa who settled in Baghdad and had studied with Ibn Ishāq (d. ca. 151/768), author of one of the earliest Expeditions.

**Saʿīd ibn Zayd** (d. 50 or 51/670–671), from Quraysh, cousin and brother-in-law of ʿUmar, and one of the earliest Muslims. Saʿīd was among the handful of prominent Medinans who refused to support ‘Ali during his caliphate.
Salāmān ibn Ṭayy  clan of the ancient Yemeni tribe of Ṭayy (or Ṭayyi’) who migrated in the 2nd century AD to Syria, to what is known as Jabal Ṭayy (later Jabal Shammar).

Ṣāliḥ  ancient Arabian prophet sent to the tribe of Thamūd. The focus of his story is that God sent him with a camel mare as a divine sign; his tribe killed the camel mare, and God destroyed them in retribution.

Ṣāliḥ ibn Sulaym  (d. after 37/658), from the tribe of Salāmān ibn Ṭayy in Kufa, follower of ‘Alī, who was ill and unable to accompany him to Ṣiffīn.

Salāmān al-Fārīsī  (d. 35/655), prominent early Companion of Muḥammad who came from Persia. Muḥammad said, “Salmān is one of us, People of the House.” Salmān was also a close companion and staunch supporter of ‘Alī, Governor of Madā’in in ‘Umar’s reign, he died and was buried there. (See further: Ḥ 19:34–39.)

Ṣaʿṣaʿah ibn Ṣūḥān al-ʿAbdī  (d. ca. 56/676), poet, orator, and chieftain of his tribe of ‘Abd al-Qays, devoted supporter of ‘Alī who fought in all his battles and attempted to persuade the Kharijites to return to the fold in the lead-up to the Battle of Nahrawān. After ‘Alī’s death, at Muʿāwiyah’s court, Saʿṣaʿah discoursed eloquently on ‘Alī’s merits. In some reports, Muʿāwiyah exiled him to Bahrain, where he died. In other reports, Saʿṣaʿah paid homage to Zayn al-ʿĀbidīn when the latter returned from Karbala after ʿḤusayn was killed.

Shariʿah  (Ar. sharīʿah) lit. wide path to the watering hole, term indicating the Law laid down by each of God’s six major prophets: Adam, Noah, Abraham, Moses, Jesus, and Muḥammad.

al-Sharīf al-Raḍī  see Raḍī.

Shaybah ibn Rabīʿah ibn ‘Abd Shams  (d. 2/624), chieftain of the ‘Abd Shams clan of the Meccan Quraysh, slain by Muḥammad’s uncle Ḥamzah in single combat at the Battle of Badr. (See further: B 776; Ḥ 13:214; F 365.)

Shiʿa  lit. followers, shortened from Shiʿat ʿAlī (followers of ‘Alī), Muslims who believe that Muḥammad appointed ‘Alī through divine revelation to lead the Muslim community after him as Imam, and, therefore, that ‘Alī was his rightful successor in both his temporal and spiritual roles. Over time, three major branches of the Shiʿa evolved: Twelver, Ismāʿīlī, and Zaydī.

Shibām  (or Shabām)  clan of the large Yemeni tribe of Hamdan, most of whom fought for ‘Alī at the Battle of Ṣiffīn. The clan is unusually named after the mountain that is their ancestral homeland, Shibām Kawkabān, northwest of Sanaa, and not after an eponymous ancestor.

Shūrā  (consultation)  electoral council set up by ‘Umar to choose one of their members as the next caliph. The six members consisted of ‘Uthmān ibn ʿAffān, who was

**Shurayḥ ibn al-Ḥārith** (d. ca. 80/699), of Yemeni birth and Persian ethnicity, jurist, hadith scholar, and litterateur, served as judge in Kufa during the caliphates of ‘Umar, ‘Uthmān, ‘Ali, and Muʿāwiyah. (See further: Ḥ 14:28–29.)

**Shurayḥ ibn Hānī al-Ḥārithī** (d. 78/697), ‘Ali’s loyal follower and one of his commanders at the Battle of Ṣiffīn, who lived to an old age. Shurayḥ challenged Muʿāwiyah’s execution of ‘Ali’s follower ʿḤujr ibn ‘Aḍī, and was forced to flee to Sijistān, where he was killed. (See further: Ḥ 17:138.)

**Ṣiffīn** site of the major Battle of Ṣiffīn fought between ‘Ali and Muʿāwiyah in 37/657, which ended in arbitration. Ṣiffīn was then an abandoned Byzantine village near Raqqah, in north-central Syria, on the Euphrates River; it is identified in the present day with the village named Abū Hurayrah. The main extant source for the battle is Minqārī’s Battle of Ṣiffīn (Waqʿat Ṣiffīn).

**signature reply** (Ar. tawqīʿ, pl. tawqīʿāt) signature or seal placed on a decree.

**Solomon** (Ar. Sulaymān) (fl. 10th c. BC), biblical king of Israel, son and successor of King David, revered alongside his father as a prophet in Islam. Solomon is frequently mentioned in the Qurʾan, particularly in connection with his knowledge of the language of the birds, and his command over the jinn and the winds.

**Sufyān ibn ‘Awf al-Ghāmidī** (d. ca. 54/674), from the Ghāmid clan of the Azd Sarāt tribe of western Arabia, who fought in the Muslim conquests of Syria and became attached to the Umayyads. Sufyān served as Muʿāwiyah’s commander in his conflict with ‘Ali and led a notoriously brutal raid against Anbar. Later, he commanded a large Umayyad force against the Byzantines and was killed in the battle.

**Sufyānī** lit. the man from the Sufyān clan, whose harm is prophesied in § 1.136.3. The commentators state that it refers to the Umayyad caliph ʿAbd al-Malik. (Ḥ 9:47; B 486.)

**Suhayl ibn ʿAmr ibn ʿAbd Shams** (d. 18/639), of the Umayyad clan of Quraysh, a leader in the Battle of the Confederates in 5/627 against the Muslims, an eloquent orator and one of Muḥammad’s fiercest enemies. Suhayl converted to Islam when Muḥammad conquered Mecca and later participated with the Muslims in the Battle of Yarmūk. (See further: B 776; Ḥ 13:214; F 365.)

**Sulaym ibn Qays al-Hilālī al-ʿĀmirī** (d. 76/695), loyal follower of ‘Ali, who supported him before his caliphate, and who, during his caliphate, participated in all his battles. Later, Sulaym remained a follower of ‘Ali’s sons Ḥasan and Ḥusayn and of Ḥusayn’s son Zayn al-ʿĀbidīn. He is said to be the author of a compilation of ‘Ali’s sayings and sayings of the early Shiʿi Imams, known as Kitāb Sulaym (Sulaym’s Book).

**Sulaymān ibn ʿAbd al-Malik** (r. 96–99/715–717), Umayyad caliph.
**Sumayyah (or Asmāʾ) bint al-Aʿwar** (fl. 1st/7th c.), from the ‘Abd Shams clan of the Zayd Manāt tribe of Tamīm, slave, mother of the Umayyad governor Ziyād. Married to Muḥammad ibn ‘Abdallāh al-Azraqī, Sumayyah is characterized in the sources as promiscuous. Among the stories of Ziyād’s parentage, one story recounts that Mu‘āwiyah’s father, Abū Sufyān, boasted that he, Abū Sufyān, had “placed Ziyād inside Sumayyah’s womb.”

**Sunnah**, lit. “well-trodden path to a waterhole,” refers to the accepted practice of the pious forbears, and when used without qualifiers, specifically to Muḥammad’s.

**Sunni**, lit. “emulator of the Prophet’s practice,” someone belonging to the denomination of Muslims who believe that Muḥammad died without appointing an heir, and who revere the first four leaders of the community—Abū Bakr, ‘Umar, ‘Uthmān, and ‘Ali—as Rightly Guided Caliphs. The term Sunni emerged from the earlier political appellation, “people adhering to the sunnah and majority.”

**Surah** (Ar. sūrah) one of the 114 chapters in the Qurʾan.

**Syria** (Ar. Shām) the Levant. Syria in early Islam included the present-day nation states of Israel-Palestine, Jordan, Syria, Lebanon, and southeastern Turkey. Then, too, the capital was Damascus.

**Syrians** (Ar. ahl al-Shām) refers, in the context of ‘Alī’s caliphate, to Muʿāwiyah and his supporters.

**Ṭalḥah ibn Abī Ṭalḥah al-ʿAbdarī** (d. 3/624), of the clan of ʿAbd al-Dār of the Quraysh tribe, part of the Meccan opposition against Muḥammad. Ṭalḥah was the Meccans’ standard-bearer during the Battle of Uḥud, where he was slain by Muḥammad’s uncle Ḥamzah, or by ‘Alī, and where his two brothers and four sons were also killed.

**Ṭalḥah ibn ʿUbaydallāh** (d. 36/656), of the Taym clan of the Meccan Quraysh tribe, Muḥammad’s Companion who later took part in the Muslim conquest of Syria and Egypt and was a member of the Shūrā Council that elected ‘Uthmān. Ṭalḥah was killed leading the fight against ‘Alī in the Battle of the Camel, outside Basra.

**Tamīm** large tribe in central and eastern Arabia. Their pedigree is Tamīm ibn Murr ibn Udd ibn Ṭabkhah ibn Ilyās ibn Muḍar ibn Nixon ibn Maʿadd ibn ‘Adnān. In the early Islamic period, both Basra and Kufa were extensions of Tamīm’s territories. Tamīmīs in Basra were further divided into the clans of Saʿd, Ḥanẓalah, and ‘Amr; the Saʿd sat out the Battle of the Camel, but they fought for ‘Alī at Ẓiﬀīn. (See further: H 15126–136.)

**Ṭaybah** see Medina

**Taym** clan of the Quraysh tribe of Mecca, whose pedigree is Taym ibn Murrah ibn Kaʿb ibn Luʿayy ibn Ghālib ibn Fihr. Abū Bakr and Ṭalḥah were from this clan.

**Thaʿlab, Abū al-ʿAbbās Aḥmad ibn Yaḥyā** (d. 291/904), leading scholar of the Kufan school of Arabic grammar, cited by Raḍī in Nahj al-Balāghah.

**Thaʿlabiyyah** caravan stop in Najd, on the Kufa-to-Mecca pilgrimage route, in what
is now the northeastern corner of Saudi Arabia toward the Iraqi border. Ḥusayn ibn ʿAlī also stopped there en route to Karbala.

**Thamūd** ancient Arabian tribe that disappeared before the rise of Islam. They are mentioned in the Qur’an as an impious people who disobeyed the Prophet Ṣāliḥ, slaughtered God’s camel mare, and were destroyed by an exemplary divine punishment. Legend associates the cliff dwellings around the northern Ḥijāzī town of Mada’in Ṣāliḥ with the Thamūd.

**Thaqīf** north Arabian tribe of the Hawāzin federation who controlled the walled town of Tā’if in pre-Islamic times and were among Muḥammad’s staunchest enemies, until they converted to Islam after their defeat at the Battle of Ḥunayn. The Thaqīf were a major trading partner with Quraysh, and they intermarried extensively. Later the Umayyads appointed several of their governors from Thaqīf.

**Tigris** (Ar. Dijlah) along with the Euphrates, one the two great rivers of Iraq. The Tigris flows south from the mountains of the Armenian highlands through the Syrian and Arabian deserts and empties into the Arabian/Persian Gulf.

**Turks** refers in the present volume to the Mongols who attacked the Muslim heartlands in the 7th/13th century under Chingiz Khan and his grandson Hülegü Khan.

ʿUbaydah ibn al-Ḥārith ibn ʿAbd al-Muṭṭalib (d. 2/624), of the Hāshim clan of Quraysh, Muḥammad’s and ‘Alī’s cousin, one of the earliest converts to Islam, killed fighting for Muḥammad at the Battle of Badr.

ʿUbaydallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās ibn ʿAbd al-Muṭṭalib (d. 58/677), of the Hāshim clan of Quraysh, Muḥammad’s and ‘Alī’s cousin, and ‘Alī’s governor in Yemen. (See further: Ḥ 1:341–343.)

ʿUbaydallāh ibn Abī Rāfiʿ (d. after 40/661), whose father, Abū Rāfiʿ, was one of the first Muslims and Muḥammad’s freedman, was ‘Alī’s loyal follower, who participated in all his battles and served as his scribe in Kufa. (See further: B 1003; R 3:391.)

**Uḥud** mountain 5 kilometers north of Medina, site of the second major battle between the Muslims and the Meccans, in 3/625, in which the Muslims suffered heavy losses and Muḥammad’s uncle Ḥamzah was killed.

ʿUmar ibn Abī Salamah al-Makhzūmī (d. 83/702), Muḥammad’s stepson and ward, son of his wife Umm Salamah from her previous husband. ʿUmar served as ‘Alī’s governor in Bahrain in the lead-up to the Battle of Ṣiffīn. (See further: Ḥ 16:173–174; B 869.)

ʿUmar ibn al-Khaṭṭāb (r. 13–23/634–644), of the ʿAdī clan of Quraysh, prominent Companion of Muḥammad and father of his wife Ḥafṣah. ʿUmar was the second Sunni caliph of the Muslim community, during whose rule the Muslim polity underwent rapid expansion into Syria, Egypt, Iraq, and Iran.

**Umayyads** (Ar. Banū Umayyah) clan of the Quraysh tribe of Mecca and the first dynasty to rule the Islamic world, beginning with Muʿāwiyah, who became caliph following ‘Alī’s death in 40/661. From their seat in Damascus, the Umayyads ruled...
until 132/750, when they were overthrown by the Abbasids. The third Sunni caliph, ʿUthmān, was also from this clan.

**Umayyah ibn ʿAbd Shams ibn ʿAbd Manāf** (d. 2/624), ancestor of the Umayyad clan of Quraysh, a leader of the Meccan opposition against Muḥammad, killed at the Battle of Badr. (See further: B 776; H 13:214; F 365.)

**Umm Hānī (Fākhitah) bint Abī Ṭālib** (d. after 40/661), a learned woman from the Ḥāshim clan of Quraysh, ʿAlī's sister and Muḥammad's cousin, and close to both. Umm Hānī was one of the earliest Muslims, and although her husband Hubayrah was not, Muḥammad spent many nights in Mecca at their home. Muḥammad's Ascension (Ar. Miʿrāj) to the heavens is reported to have taken place on one such night.

**ummi** epithet used to describe Muḥammad in the Qurʾan (Q Aʿrāf 7:157), variously interpreted as: “Meccan,” an attributive adjective formed from Umm al-Qurā, one of the names of Mecca; or “unlettered”; or “of the community (ummah)”; or “affiliated to previous scriptural communities.”

**Umm Jamīl** (Arwā) bint Ḥarb (fl. 1st/7th c.), Muʿāwiyah's paternal aunt, from the Umayyad clan of the Quraysh tribe, married to Muḥammad's paternal uncle and fierce foe, Abū Lahab. Umm Jamīl actively sought to torment Muḥammad while he lived in Mecca, and in the Surah that curses Abū Lahab, she is characterized as “The Woman-Who-Carries-Firewood-to-Hell” (Ar. ḥammālat al-ḥaṭab), (Q Masad 111:1–4). (See further: Ḥ 15:197; B 822; R 3:77; F 374; ‘A 681.)

**Umm al-Qurā** see Mecca

**ʿumrah** the lesser pilgrimage to the Kaʿbah in Mecca, mandated, along with the hajj, once in a lifetime for every Muslim, combining rituals performed by Abraham and Muhammad. Unlike the hajj, the ʿumrah may be performed at any time in the year.

**Usāmah ibn Zayd** (d. ca. 54/674), son of Muḥammad's Abyssinian freedwoman Barakah Umm Ayman and Muḥammad's adopted son Zayd ibn al-Ḥārithah, born in Mecca in the early years of Islam. In 11/632, Muḥammad put Usāmah in command of an expedition to fight the Byzantines at Muʿtah, but the group turned back just before Muḥammad died. Later, Usāmah was among the handful of prominent Companions who refused to pledge allegiance to ʿAlī and sat out his battles.

**ʿUtbah ibn Rabīʿah ibn ʿAbd Shams** (d. 2/624), of the Quraysh tribe, a leader of the Meccan opposition against Muḥammad, killed at the Battle of Badr. (See further: B 776; H 13:214; F 365.)

**ʿUthmān ibn ʿAffān** (r. 23–35/644–656), of the Umayyad clan of Quraysh, third Sunni caliph of the Muslim community. ʿUthmān married two of Muḥammad's daughters in succession, Ruqayyah and Umm Kulthūm. Major Muslim conquests in Central Asia took place during his reign. Later, he was accused of nepotism and corruption and killed in Medina by a group of Muslims.
ʿUthmān ibn Ḥunayf al-Anṣārī (d. after 40/661), of the Aws tribe of Medina, Companion of Muḥammad who served as ʿUmar’s tax collector in Iraq and ʿAlī’s first governor in Basra. After the Battle of the Camel, ʿAlī replaced Ibn Ḥunayf with Abdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās as governor of Basra, and Ibn Ḥunayf left with ʿAlī for Kufa, where he settled. (See further: Ḥ 16:205–206.)

ʿUthmān ibn Mazʿūn (d. 3/624), of the Jumaḥ clan of Quraysh, one of Muḥammad’s earliest Companions, who took part in the first Muslim migration to Abyssinia, returned soon thereafter, then migrated with Muḥammad to Medina.

al-Walīd ibn ʿAbd al-Malik (r. 86–96/715–705), Umayyad caliph.

al-Walīd ibn al-Mughīrah (d. 2/624), of the Makhzūm clan of Quraysh, persecutor of Muḥammad’s followers in Mecca and a leader of the Meccan opposition against the Muslims at Medina, killed fighting against Muḥammad at the Battle of Badr. (See further: B 776; Ḥ 13:214; F 365.)

al-Walīd ibn ʿUqbah ibn Abī Muʿīṭ (d. 61/680), of the Umayyad clan of Mecca’s Quraysh tribe, whose father, ʿUqbah, was killed fighting against Muḥammad at Badr. Walīd converted to Islam after the conquest of Mecca, in 8/630. He was half-brother to ʿUthmān, who appointed him governor of Kufa, then removed him from office because of his wine-drinking. Later, Walīd supported Muʿāwiyah and fought against ʿAlī. (See further: Ḥ 17:227–245.)

al-Walīd ibn ʿUtbah ibn Rabīʿah (d. 2/624), chieftain of the ʿAbd Shams clan of Quraysh, Muʿāwiyah’s maternal grandfather, slain by ʿAlī in single combat at the Battle of Badr. (See further: B 792; R 3:31; F 369; Ḥ 4:34.)

Wāqidī (d. 207/822), preeminent historian from Medina, also jurist and judge, who settled in Baghdad. Wāqidī authored many books, and only a portion of one book, Kitāb al-Maghāzī (Expeditions), is extant. Names of his lost works, including Kitāb al-Jamal (The Battle of the Camel), and copious quotations from them survive in the historical literature.

waṣṣyyah testament, including but not limited to a deathbed testament, containing moral advice and/or instructions for distribution of property.

Wise Remembrance see Qurʾan

worthdoers (Ar. qāsiṭūn) appellation applied to Muʿāwiyah and the Syrians who fought ʿAlī at the Battle of Ṣiffīn. (See further: Ḥ 13:83–184; B 771–772; F 364–365.)

Yamāmah early Islamic town in the Najd region of Arabia near Kharj, 70 kilometers southeast of the present-day Saudi Arabian capital of Riyadh.

al-Yamānī lit. the Yemeni, the otherwise unidentified individual who narrated oration § 1.231 from one Aḥmad ibn Qutaybah, identified by some commentators as the equally mysterious Dhiʿlib al-Yamānī, one of ʿAlī’s interlocutors in the present volume.

Yanbuʿ al-Nakhl oasis with wellsprings and date groves, 120 kilometers east of Medina (different from the coastal town of Yanbuʿ or Yenbo, formerly called Yanbuʿ al-
Bahr). In pre-Islamic times, Yanbuʿ al-Nakhl was a worship center for a deity called Suwāʿ. Muḥammad conquered Yanbuʿ al-Nakhl and reportedly built a mosque there. ‘Ali owned an estate there. (See further: H 13:296.)


**Yazīd ibn Abī Sufyān** (d. 18/639), from the Umayyad clan of the Quraysh tribe, and Muʿāwiyah's brother. Yazīd was one of the Meccans who fought against Muḥammad, and after the conquest of Mecca in 8/630 converted to Islam. Afterward, he fought in the Muslim army under 'Amr ibn al-ʿĀṣ against the Byzantines. When 'Amr left for Egypt, he appointed Yazīd in charge of Syria, where he died in the Plague of Emmaus. (See further: Ḥ 17:256–257.)

**Yemen** well-known region in the southwest of the Arabian Peninsula. Muḥammad sent ‘Ali to Yemen in 10/632 to call its people to Islam. Yemen and Yemenis feature in several texts in the present volume.

**Zanj** black slaves from East Africa brought into early Abbasid Iraq in large numbers to work in the saltpeter mines near Basra. The Zanj rebelled three times within a space of two centuries, including a violent, lengthy rebellion under ‘Alī ibn Muḥammad al-Zanjī, which ravaged Basra from 255/869 to 270/883, causing immeasurable material damage and killing tens of thousands of people. (See further: Ḥ 8:126–214.)

**Zayd ibn Thābit al-Anṣārī** (d. ca. 55/674), of the Khazraj tribe of Medina, one of Muḥammad’s Companions, who served as his scribe and recorded passages of the Qur’an.

**Zayn al-ʿĀbidīn** see ‘Alī ibn al-Ḥusayn al-Sajjād Zayn al-ʿĀbidīn.

**Zaynab bint Jaḥsh al-Asadiyyah** (d. 20/641), Muḥammad's wife, whom he married in 4/626, after her divorce from his freedman and adopted son Zayd ibn Ḥārithah (Q Aḥzāb 33:37). (See further: Ḥ 9:242.)

**Ziyād ibn Abīhi** (d. 53/658), also known as Ziyād ibn Abī Sufyān, deputy for ‘Alī's governor ʿAbdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās in Basra. Born out of wedlock to a slave named Sumayyah, Ziyād was later declared his half-brother by Muʿāwiyah and made governor of Iraq. (See further: H 16:179–204.)

**Ziyād ibn al-Naḍr al-Ḥārithī** (d. after 37/658), of the Madḥḥij tribe, fought for ‘Alī as a subcommander under his tribesman Mālik al-Ashtar at Ṣiffīn and Nahrawān.

**al-Zubayr ibn al-ʿAwwām** (d. 35/656), of the Quraysh, son of Muḥammad's and ‘Alī's paternal aunt Ṣafiyah, one of the earliest Muslims, later a member of the Shūrā Council that elected ‘Uthmān. Zubayr was one of the leaders at the Battle of the Camel against ‘Alī. He left the battlefield after the fighting began but was killed by a personal enemy as he was leaving.
Appendix of Sources for the Texts of *Nahj al-Balāghah*

This chronological list enumerates all primary medieval sources I was able to locate for each of the texts of *Nahj al-Balāghah*, before and after the time of Raḍī's compilation in 400/1010. The list not only provides evidence for the early spread of these texts, but it also offers a guide to a better understanding of their historical context. A large number of texts are found in the earliest extant works of the Arabic-Islamic corpus: books from the early 3rd/9th century by well-known authors, such as Minqarī (d. 212/827), Abū ʿUbayd (d. 224/838), Ibn Saʿd (d. 230/845), Iskāfī (d. 240/854), and Ibn Aṯam (died early 3rd/9th c.), not to mention copious transcriptions by late 3rd/9th-century and early 4th/10th-century historians such as Balādhurī (d. 279/892), Yaʾqūbī (d. 284/897), Ṭabarī (d. 310/923), and Māmaṭīrī (d. ca. 360/971). Several scholars have compiled print books and online websites that list sources of *Nahj al-Balāghah* texts, ‘Abd al-Zahrāʾ’s 4-volume *Maṣādir Nahj al-balāghah wa-asānīduhu* being one of the most important. The present Appendix makes use of earlier inventories, but it also goes beyond them to catalog sources they do not mention—it is possibly the most complete list to date.¹ My hope is that yet more sources will be tracked—and compared and analyzed—by future researchers.

1 Logistics

- **Numbering:** The numbering of texts in this Appendix corresponds to the numbering in the present volume, including sub-numbers for longer texts.
- **Sequence:** Within the list of citations for each text, the sequence of authors is chronological, based on the author's death date.
- **Names:** For the sake of concision, authors with a single book listed in the Bibliography are noted only by name. For authors with more than one book listed in the Bibliography, a truncated title is also provided. For multiple authors with the same name, either their first name is also given, or their

¹ My thanks to Tynan Kelly for his dedicated and expert assistance in researching this Appendix of Sources.
book title is listed alongside their name of fame. The definite particle (al-) is omitted from names and titles.

- **Versions**: Since the materials are attributed to 'Alī's time, when production and transmission were predominantly oral, and the materials were initially transmitted in different oral recensions, versions recorded in the written sources vary both in length and language. Many are excerpts from larger texts.

- **Raḍī’s stated sources**: These are mentioned at the relevant place in the Appendix, and they include four lost books, one extant book, and several oral transmitters (also listed in the Introduction). Among books of earlier authors, Raḍī’s version is closest to the versions of Minqarī, Ḥarrānī, and Māmaṭīrī, and also close to the versions of Sulaym, Ibn A’tham, Iskāfī, Barqī, Ibn Qutaybah, Baladhurī, Ya’qūbī, Ṭabarī, Abū al-Faraj, and Ṣadūq. The rare words section follows Abū ‘Ubayd’s sequence.

- **Commentaries**: *Nahj al-Balāghah* commentaries are not listed as sources for the obvious reason that they copy from it directly; instances are listed in which Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd provides additional sources.

- **Attributions to other speakers**: A handful of texts are attributed in other sources to other early figures, especially the Prophet Muḥammad; these are flagged below.

### Chapter 1: Orations

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text no.</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>
| 1.1.1    | Thaqafī 1:170–176; Kulaynī 1:134–136; Ḥarrānī 61; Qudā‘ī, *Dustūr* 170;  
            Ṭalḥah 154. |
            s.v. “J-W-Y.” |
| 1.1.3    | Ibn Ṭalḥah 156. |
| 1.1.4–5  | Zamakhsharī, *Rabi‘* 1:326, 367; Shahrustānī, *Mafātiḥ* 2:327; Mu‘ayyad,  
            Ṭirāz 2:137. |
<p>| 1.1.6–7  | Mu‘ayyad, Ṭirāz 2:137. |
| 1.1.8    | None |
| 1.2.1    | Mu‘addib 543; Ibn Ṭalḥah 285–286. |
| 1.2.2    | Ţabarī-Āmulī 399; Āmīdī 331, 354; Muḥammad ibn Ṭahir 187. |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text no.</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1.3.1</td>
<td>as in §1.3 above, and Ṣadūq, Ḥfaxal 1:50; Ṣadūq, Maʿānī 360–361; Mufid, Jamal 62, 92; Mufid, Irshād 1:287; Abū al-Ṣalāh 329; Ṭūsī, Amālī 372; Ṭabrisī, Iḥtijāj 1:282; Ibn Shahraṣhūb 2:48; Majd al-Dīn Ibn al-Ṭahīr s.v. “J-Dh-Dh”; Sibt 124; Qāsimī 249; Ibn Ṭawūs, Ṭarāʾif 2:418.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.3.2</td>
<td>as in §1.3 above, and Ibn Ḥanbal, Faḍāʾil 1:51; Ṣadūq, Ḥfaxal 1:51; Ṣadūq, Maʿānī 361; Mufid, Irshād 1:288; Murtaḍā, Rasāʾīl 2:109–110; Karājīkī, Taʾajjub 99; Ṣāmīm 1:527; Ṭūsī, Amālī 373; Muʿayyad al-Shīrāzī vol. 4 majlis 83; Ṭabrisī, Iḥtijāj 1:284; Ibn Shahraṣhūb 2:48; Ibn Ṭawūs, Ṭarāʾif 2:418.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.3.3</td>
<td>as in §1.3 above, and Ibn Ḥanbal, Faḍāʾil 1:51; Mufid, Ifṣāḥ 46; Mufid, Irshād 1:289; Abī 1:274; Abū al-Ṣalāh 249; Ṭūsī, Amālī 374; Muʿaddīb 507; Ṭabrisī, Iḥtijāj 1:225; Ibn Shahraṣhūb 2:48; Majd al-Dīn Ibn al-Ṭahīr s.v. “H-L-Y,” “Z-B-R-J,” “N-Z”; Ibn Ṭawūs, Ṭarāʾif 2:418.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.3.5</td>
<td>as in §1.3 above, and Māmaṭīrī 256; Ṣadūq, Ḥfaxal 1:53; Ṣadūq, Maʿānī 362; Murtaḍā, Rasāʾīl 2:113; Ṭūsī, Amālī 374; Ṭabrisī, Iḥtijāj 1:288; Maydānī, 1:369; Ibn Shahraṣhūb 2:49; Majd al-Dīn Ibn al-Ṭahīr s.v. “Sh-Q-Sh-Q”; Ibn Ṭawūs, Ṭarāʾif 2:419; Ibn Manẓūr s.v. “Sh-Q-Sh-Q.”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.4</td>
<td>Ṭabarī-Āmulī 408; Mufid, Irshād 1:253; Muʿaddīb 196.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>Ḥulwānī 56; Muʿaddīb 298; Ṭabrisī, Iḥtijāj 1:127; Majd al-Dīn Ibn al-Ṭahīr s.v. “D-M-J”; Sibt 137; Ibn Ṭalḥah 287; Ibn Manẓūr s.v. “D-M-J.”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.6</td>
<td>Ibn Abī Shaybah 7487 (§ 37371); Ibn Shabbah 41257; Ṭabarī, Ṭārīkh 4:456, 458; Ṭabarī-Āmulī 403; Ṭūsī, Amālī 52.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Text no. | References
---|---
1.9 | Mufīd, *Jamal* 177.
1.10 | Mufīd, *Irshād* 1:251; Mu’addib 110.
1.12 | Barqī 1:262.
1.20 | Kulaṁṇī 1:345.
1.21 | Ṭabarānī, *Ṭārīkh* 4:436; Raḍī, *Khaṣāʾīs* 87; Mu’addib 203; Fattāl 400.
1.23 | Minqarī 10; Abū ʿUbayd, *Gharīb* 4:360; Ibn Qutaybah, *Imāmāh* 1:70; Thaqafī 80; Yaḥyūbī 2:207; Kulaṁṇī 2:154, 5:57; Ibn ‘Abd Rabbih 2:208;
Text no. | References
--- | ---
1.24 | Majd al-Din Ibn al-Atlhîr s.v. “-S-B”; Ibn Manẓūr s.v. “-S-B.”
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text no.</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1.37</td>
<td>Kulaynī 1:455 (attrib. anon. addressing ʿAlī); IbnʿAbd Rabbih 533; ʿṢaduq, <em>Amālī</em> 313; ʿṢaduq, <em>Man</em> 2593.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.38.1</td>
<td>Ibn Aṯḥam 2:539; ʿĀmidī 98; Muʿaddib 179.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.38.2</td>
<td>Minqarī 95 (attrib. Ashtar); Iskāfī, <em>Mīyūr</em> 126 (attrib. Ashtar); Abū Ḥanīfah al-Dīnawarī 164 (attrib. Ashtar).</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## Appendix of Sources for the Texts of Nahj al-Balāghah

### Text no. | References
---|---
1.41 | Iskāfī, *Miʿyār* 96; Raḍī, *Khaṣāʾiṣ* 98; Muʿaddib 27, 152; Warrām 3:43; Ibn Ṭalḥah 209.
1.45 | Ṣadūq, *Man* 1:514; Muwaṭṭa biʿl-lāh 583–584; Fattāl 440; Muʿaddib 148.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text no.</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1.60</td>
<td>Fattāl 440; Āmīdī 10, 88, 199; Muʿaddib 108, 148.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.61.1</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 274; Mufīd, <em>Irshād</em> 1:234; Muʿaddib 152, 191, 202, 396; Sīḥr 145; Ibn ʿAsākir 33:300.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.61.2</td>
<td>Āmīdī 238; Muʿaddib 375.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.61.3</td>
<td>Ibn ʿAsākir 33:300.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.62.1</td>
<td>Āmīdī 10, 88, 199; Muʿaddib 108, 148.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.62.2</td>
<td>Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih 4:164; Ẓāḥiḥ, <em>Tawḥīd</em> 43.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.64</td>
<td>Raḍī, <em>Khaṣāʾīṣ</em> 86.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.65</td>
<td>Baladhuri 2:404; Thaqafī 1:1301; Yaʿqūbī 2:194; Ṭabarī, <em>Tārīkh</em> 5:110; Māmaṭīrī 287; Ibn Abī l-Ḥadīd (after Madāʾīnī) 6:94.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Appendix of Sources for the Texts of Nahj al-Balāghah

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text no.</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1.70</td>
<td>Balādhurī 2:263; Zamakhsharī, Rabi‘ 5192; Majd al-Dīn Ibn al-Athīr s.v. “-M-R”; Sibṭ 78.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.72</td>
<td>Iskāfī, Miʿyār 278; Ḥulwānī 50; Ḥarrānī 213; Māmaṭīrī 208; Raḍī, Khaṣāʾiṣ 111; Tawḥīdī, Başaʿır 3:27; Muwaffaq ibn illah 535; Ḥusrī 1:79; Karājikī, Kanz 162; Mu’addib 261, 314; Quḍāʿī, Dustūr 42; Ibn Ṭalḥah 292.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.74</td>
<td>Jāḥiẓ, Miʿat 232; Kulaynī 4:432–433; Muwaffaq Khwārazmī 376.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.75</td>
<td>Ṭabarī, Tārīkh 5:83; Ṣadūq, Amālī 500; Māmaṭīrī 347–349; Ţabrisī, Iḥtiṣāj 1:357; Sibṭ 158; Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd 2:269 (cites Ibrāhīm Ibn Aḥmad Ibn Dayzi’il’s Kitāb Ṣiffūn); Ibn Tawūs, Faraj 57; Quṭṭūbī 1929.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.76</td>
<td>Kulaynī 5:527 (attrib. Prophet); Ṣadūq, Amālī 380; Ṣadūq, Khīšāl 14; Ṣadūq, Maʿānī 251; Mufīd, Ikhtiṣāṣ 226; Ţabarī-ʿĀmulī 199; Fattāl 434; Kulaynī 5:71; Māmaṭīrī 215; Ṣadūq, Khīšāl 14; Sibṭ, Maʿānī 251; Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd; Jāmīʿ 236, 387 (attrib. Jaʿfar al-Ṣādiq); Mu’addib 148; Muwaffaq ibn illah 47; Quṭṭūbī, Dustūr 15; Fattāl 434; Āmidī 109; Ţabrisī, Mishkāt 208.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## Appendix of Sources for the Texts of Nahj al-Balāghah (cont.)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text no.</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1.80</td>
<td>Gharrāʿ Oration</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.80.1</td>
<td>Muʿayyad, <em>Ṭirāz</em> 3:18.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.80.2</td>
<td>Hārūnī 275; Abū Nuʿaym 1:78; Muʿaddib 44; Quḍāʾī, <em>Dustūr</em> 70; Muʿayyad, <em>Ṭirāz</em> 3:18.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.80.3</td>
<td>Hārūnī 275; Muʿaddib 340.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.80.4</td>
<td>Muʿayyad, <em>Ṭirāz</em> 3:23.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.80.5</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 210; Māmaṭīrī 209; Muwaffaq bi’llāh 535–536; Quḍāʾī, <em>Dustūr</em> 66; Muʿaddib 340.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.80.6</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 210; Abū Nuʿaym 1:78; Muʿaddib 59, 359–360.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.80.8</td>
<td>Quḍāʾī, <em>Dustūr</em> 70; Majd al-Dīn Ibn al-Ṭahīr s.v. “N-Ḥ-B”; Ibn Manẓūr s.v. “N-Ḥ-B.”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.80.9</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 211; Māmaṭīrī 210; Abū Nuʿaym 1:79; Muʿaddib 260, 359; Quḍāʾī, <em>Dustūr</em> 72.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.80.10–11</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 507, 542.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.80.12</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.80.13</td>
<td>Ḥulwānī 49; Ḥarrānī 202; Muʿaddib 109, 191, 512.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.81</td>
<td>Ibn Ṭalḥah 246.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.82.1</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.82.2</td>
<td>Ḥārūnī 275; Abū Nuʿaym 1:78; Muʿaddib 438; Sībṭ 131.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.82.3</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 256.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.83.1–2</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.83.3</td>
<td>Minqarī 10; Abū Ḥanīfah al-Dīnawarī 153; Muʿaddib 314, 368.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text no.</td>
<td>References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.84.1</td>
<td>Ibn Durayd, <em>Mujtānā</em> 1:21; Quḍāʾī, <em>Dustūr</em> 72, 162; Āmidī 290.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.84.2</td>
<td>Hārūnī 258.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.84.3</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.86</td>
<td>Qummi 12–3; Kulaynī 1:60; Muʿayyad, <em>Ṭirāz</em> 2:179.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.87</td>
<td>Āmidī 285; Muwaffaq biʿllāh 72; Majd al-Dīn Ibn al-Athīr s.v. “S-J-Y.”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.88</td>
<td>Ashbāḥ Oration</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.88.1</td>
<td>Ṣadūq, <em>Ṭawḥīd</em> 48–49; Hārūnī 287.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.88.2</td>
<td>Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih 4:164; Ṣadūq, <em>Ṭawḥīd</em> 50, 51, 55; Hārūnī 288.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.88.3</td>
<td>Ṣadūq, <em>Ṭawḥīd</em> 53; Muʿayyad, <em>Ṭirāz</em> 2:135.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.88.4</td>
<td>Ṣadūq, <em>Ṭawḥīd</em> 54, 55.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.88.6</td>
<td>Zamakhsharī, <em>Rabiʿ</em> 1:310.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.88.7</td>
<td>Āmidī 329; Majd al-Dīn Ibn al-Athīr s.v. “-S-L”; Ibn Manẓūr s.v. “-S-L.”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.88.9</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.88.11</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 401.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.90.1</td>
<td>Sulaym 2:256; Ibn Abī Shaybah 7:528 (§ 37734); Thaqafi 1:3; Yaʿqūbī 2:93; Nuʿmān, <em>Sharḥ</em> 2:38, 286; Abū Nuʿaym 1:68.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.90.3</td>
<td>Sulaym 2:256; Ibn Abī Shaybah 7:528 (§ 37734); Thaqafi 1:8; Majd al-Dīn Ibn al-Athīr s.v. “H-Z-B.”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.90.4</td>
<td>Sulaym 2:256; Ibn Abī Shaybah 7:528 (§ 37734); Thaqafi 1:10; Majd al-Dīn Ibn al-Athīr s.v. “-Dh-M”; Ibn Manẓūr s.v. “-Dh-M.”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.90.5</td>
<td>Sulaym 2:258; Thaqafi 1:12.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.91.1</td>
<td>Iskāfī, <em>Miʿyār</em> 255; Thaqafi 1:172; Kulaynī 1:134; Ṣadūq, <em>Ṭawḥīd</em> 42.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text no.</td>
<td>References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.91.2</td>
<td>Ibn ‘Abd Rabbih 4:165; Ṣadūq, <em>Tawḥīd</em> 72.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.91.3</td>
<td>Kulaynī 1:335; Mu’addib 192.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.92–93</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.97–98–99</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.100.1</td>
<td>Kulaynī 8:17; Ḥarrānī 202; Hārūnī 508; Quḍāʿī, <em>Dustūr</em> 56–58; Mu’addib 90–92; Ibn Ṭalḥah 258–259.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.100.2</td>
<td>Mu’addib 29, 163; Quḍāʿī, <em>Dustūr</em> 160.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.102.2</td>
<td>Iskāfī, <em>Mi’yār</em> 278; Ṭabarānī-Āmulī 403; Majd al-Dīn Ibn al-Athīr s.v. “Ṣ-W-H.”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.103.1</td>
<td>Sulaym 2:179; Iskāfī, <em>Mi’yār</em> 260; Thaqafi 1138; Kulaynī 2:49; Ḥarrānī 162; Māmaṭīrī 222; Mufid, <em>Amālī</em> 275; Ṭūsī, <em>Amālī</em> 37; Mu’addib 513; Quḍāʿī, <em>Dustūr</em> 132.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text no.</td>
<td>References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.103.3</td>
<td>Iskāfī, Miʿyār 276–277.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.105.1</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 242.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.105.2</td>
<td>Āmidī 85, 209; Muʿaddib 319; Zamakhsharī, Rabīʿ 1:445; Ibn Shahrāshūb 1:36 (from Nahj al-Balāghah).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.105.3</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 79.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.106.1</td>
<td>Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih 4:166.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.106.2</td>
<td>Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih 4:167; Zamakhsharī, Rabīʿ 1:313.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.106.3</td>
<td>Iskāfī, Miʿyār 284–285; Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih 4:168.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.106.4</td>
<td>Iskāfī, Miʿyār 288; Muʿaddib 544.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.106.5</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 161, 499; Ṭabrisī, Makārim 10.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.107</td>
<td>Iskāfī, Miʿyār 281; Barqī 1:289; Yaʿqūbī 2:96 (attrib. Prophet); Ahwāzī, Zuhd 13; Ḥarrānī 149; Ṣadūq, Ilal 1:247; Ṣadūq, Man 1:205; Ṭūsī, Amāli 216.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.108.2</td>
<td>Iskāfī, Miʿyār 265–267; Ḥarrānī 182; Hārūnī 262; Quḍāʿī, Dustūr 60; Ibn Ṭalḥah 253; Nuwayrī 7:252.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.109</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.110</td>
<td>Āmidī 86, 189; Muʿaddib 145; Zamakhsharī, Rabīʿ 1:63; Warrām 1:247; Ibn Ṭalḥah 176.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.111.1</td>
<td>Nahḥās 352.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.111.2</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 219; Nahḥās 353 (attrib. Zayd ibn ʿAlī); Ṭūsī, Amāli 443; Muʿaddib 147, 157; Quḍāʿī, Dustūr 42; Warrām 2:494; Ibn Ṭalḥah 260.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.111.3</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 370; Zamakhsharī, Rabīʿ 2:310.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.113.1</td>
<td>Ṣadūq, Man 1:428; Ṭūsī, Miṣbāḥ 381; Ibn Shahrāshūb 1:36 (from Nahj al-Balāghah).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text no.</td>
<td>References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.114</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.117</td>
<td>Sulaym 2:142; Ḥarrānī 152; Āmidī 81–83; Muʿaddib 104; Ibn Kathīr, <em>Bidāyah</em> 8:78.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.119</td>
<td>Ṭabarī, <em>Iḥtijāj</em> 1:274.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Text no. References

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Number</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1.130.1</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.130.2</td>
<td>Āmidī 282; Majd al-Dīn Ibn al-Athīr s.v. “W-F-Z,” “H-B-L.”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.131.1, 5</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.131.2</td>
<td>Muwaffaq Khwārazmī 7.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.131.3</td>
<td>Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih 4:159; Āmidī 88; Ibn Shahrāshūb 1:136.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.131.4</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 147.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.133</td>
<td>Ibn Aṭham 2:380; Muʿayyad al-Shīrāzī vol. 4, majlis 56.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.135.2</td>
<td>Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih 4:162; Majd al-Dīn Ibn al-Athīr s.v. “W-Dh.”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.136.1</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 554; Āmidī 296; Ṭabrīsī, <em>Iḥtijāj</em> 1:290.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.136.2–3</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.138</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 179; Āmidī 135, 359.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.139</td>
<td>Thaqafi 1:88; Ṣadūq, <em>Khiṣāl</em> 236; Ṭabarī, <em>Dustūr</em> 158.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.141.1</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.142.1</td>
<td>Ṭabarī-Āmūlī, <em>Dalāʾil al-imāmah</em> 20; Ibn al-Maghāzīlī 78.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.145.1</td>
<td>Kulaynī 8:386; Ḥarrānī 227.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text no.</td>
<td>References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.145.2–3</td>
<td>Kulaynī 8:388, 391.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.148.1</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 521.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.148.2</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.148.3</td>
<td>Ṭabarānī-Āmulī 401.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.149.1, 4</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.149.2</td>
<td>Muʿayyad, <em>Ṭirāz</em> 1:170.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.149.3</td>
<td>Muʿayyad, <em>Ṭirāz</em> 1:169.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>150.1</td>
<td>Kulaynī 1339; Āmiddī 232; Warrām 1:549.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>150.2</td>
<td>Karājīkī, <em>Kanz</em> 114; Muʿaddib 179, 366.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>151.1</td>
<td>Kulaynī 5:86; Ḥarrānī 154; Muʿaddib 513.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>151.2</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 154; Muʿaddib 77.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>151.3</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 154; Muʿaddib 49, 142.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>152.1</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 498; Āmiddī 324.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>152.2</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 155, 359, 401; Āmiddī 331, 252; Muʿayyad, <em>Ṭirāz</em> 1:113.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>153.2</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.154.2</td>
<td>Sulaym 2:80; Iskāfī, <em>Miʿyār</em> 261; Thaqafī 1:140; Kulaynī 2:50; Ḥarrānī 164; Furāt 615; Māmaṭīrī 225; Mufīd, <em>Amālī</em> 277; Tūsī, <em>Amālī</em> 37.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.154.3</td>
<td>Warrām 2:394.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.155.1</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 223; Māmaṭīrī 233; Majd al-Dīn Ibn al-Athīr s.v. “Sh-W-L,” “R-B-K.”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.155.2</td>
<td>Māmaṭīrī 233–235; Āmiddī 97; Muʿaddib 202.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.156.1</td>
<td>Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih 2:340 (attrib. Prophet); Kulaynī 1:60; Qummī 1:2; Majd al-Dīn Ibn al-Athīr s.v. “-Ḍ-R.”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.156.2</td>
<td>Qummī 1:384; Majd al-Dīn Ibn al-Athīr s.v. “M-Q-R,” “N-Kh-M.”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.157</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.158.2</td>
<td>Ṭabrisī, <em>Makārim</em> 8.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text no.</td>
<td>References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.159</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.162.1</td>
<td>Balādhurī 2:549 (§ 1411); Ṭabarānī, <em>Tārīkh</em> 4:337; Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih 5:58; Mufīd, <em>Jamal</em> 100; Majd al-Dīn Ibn al-Athīr s.v. &quot;S-F-Ḥ.&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.162.2</td>
<td>Ṭabarānī, <em>Tārīkh</em> 4:337; Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih 5:58.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.163</td>
<td>Peacock Oration</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.163.2</td>
<td>Majd al-Dīn Ibn al-Athīr s.v.&quot;-R-R.&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.163.3</td>
<td>Zamakhshari, <em>Rabi</em>’ 1:239; Warrǎm 1:226; Majd al-Dīn Ibn al-Athīr s.v. &quot;-S-L-J.&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.164.1</td>
<td>Majd al-Dīn Ibn al-Athīr s.v.&quot;Q-Y-D.&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.164.2</td>
<td>Kulaynī 8:65.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.170.1</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### APPENDIX OF SOURCES FOR THE TEXTS OF NAḤJ AL-BALĀḠAH

(continuation)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text no.</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1.171.1</td>
<td>ʿImād al-Dīn al-Ṭabarī 3.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.171.2</td>
<td>Miṅqari 10; Abū Ḥanīfah al-Dīnawarī 153; Nuʿmān, <em>Sharh</em> 1:369; Ibn Shahrāshūb 1:222.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.171.3</td>
<td>Iskāfī, <em>Miʿyār</em> 111; Ḥarrānī 184.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.173</td>
<td>Āmidī 191.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.174.1</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 151.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.174.2</td>
<td>Zamakhsharī, <em>Rabīʿ</em> 2:258; Muʿaddib 143.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.174.3</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 152.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.174.4, 6</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.174.5</td>
<td>Zamakhsharī, <em>Rabīʿ</em> 2:130; Muʿaddib 511.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.174.7</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 513.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.180</td>
<td>Nawf al-Bikālī transmitter (Raḍī names him).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.180.1, 4–5</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.180.6</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 107; Zamakhsharī, <em>Rabīʿ</em> 5192.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.180.7</td>
<td>Ibn Shahrāshūb 2:373.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.181.1–2</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Text no. | References
--- | ---
1.182 | Abū Hilāl, *Ṣināʿatayn* 277.  
1.183.1 | Hārūnī 273, 282; Ṭabrisī, *Iḥtijāj* 1:305.  
1.184.5 | Thaqafi 1:173–174; Ḥarrānī 63.  
1.186 | Iskāfī, *Miʿyār* 111; Ḥarrānī 184; Thaʿālibī, *Iʿjāz* 40–41; Muʿaddib 360; Warrām 1230.  
1.189 | Muʿaddib 153, 518; Ṣīfī, 87, 180, 245.  
1.190 | Qāṣiʿah Oration  
1.190.2 | Thaqafi 2:396; Muʿaddib 104.  
1.190.3 | Muʿaddib 521.  
1.190.4 | Kulaynī 4198; Muʿaddib 88.  
1.190.5 | Kulaynī 4299; Iskāfī, *Tamhīs* 5; Muʿaddib 19, 358.  
1.190.6 | None  
9–10 |  
1.190.7–8 | Muʿaddib 204, 210.  
1.190.11 | Ṭūsī, *Talkhīṣ* 1/2:264  
1.191 | Oration to Hammām  
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text no.</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1.192</td>
<td>Mu‘addib 498; Āmidī 54, 269; Mu’ayyad, Ṭirāz 2:160.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.193</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.194</td>
<td>Muwaffaq bi’llāh 534; Mu‘addib 109, 146, 556; Āmidī 87.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.195</td>
<td>Minqarī 224; Ṣadūq, Man 4:420; Mufid, Amālī 234–235; Mufid, Kāfiyyah 24; Ṭūsī, Amālī 10–11; Mu‘addib 506; Āmidī 243.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.196.3–4</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.197</td>
<td>Kulaynī 5:36–38.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.198</td>
<td>Iskāfī, Mi‘yār 166; Kulaynī 2:336, 338; Nu‘mān, Manāqib 267.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.199</td>
<td>Barqī 1:262; Thaqafi 2:584; Ibn Abī Zaynab 37; Ṭabarī-Āmulī 407; Mufid, Irshād 1:276; Mufid, Amālī 137; Ibn Abī Zaynab, Ghaybah 1:263; Mufid, Amālī 98–199; Mufid, Irshād 1:234; Ṭūsī, Amālī 109; Fattāl 2:147; Ibn Shahrāshūb 3:339; Sibt 319.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.200</td>
<td>Kulaynī 1:458; Mufid, Amālī 281; Ṭūsī, Amālī 109; Fattāl 152; Irbili 2:147; Ibn Shahrāshūb 3:139.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.201</td>
<td>Șadiq, Amālī 172; Șadiq, ‘Uyūn 2:267; Mufid, Irshād 1:295–296; Fattāl 442; Ṭabarī, Mishkāt 468; Mu‘addib 147; Warrām 66; Sibt 132.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.202</td>
<td>Iskāfī, Miʿyār 270; Māmaṭīrī 236, 420; Șadiq, Amālī 587; Ṭabarī, Baṣāʿīr 2:63; Mufid, Amālī 198–199; Mufid, Irshād 1:234; Ṭūsī, Ḵaṣā’īṣ 98; Abī 1:213; Ḥarrānī 193; Ibn Abī Ḥasan, Dustūr 104; Ṭabarī, Mishkāt 524.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.203</td>
<td>Iskāfī, Miʿyār 114; Ṭūsī, Amālī 732.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.204</td>
<td>Minqarī 103; Iskāfī, Miʿyār 137; Abū Ḥanīfah al-Dinawarī 165; Sibt 154.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.205</td>
<td>Minqarī 530; Iskāfī, Miʿyār 151; Ṭabarī, Tūrīkh 5:61, 7:69 (attrib. ‘Abdallāh ibn Ḥasan).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.206</td>
<td>Ibn Aṯam 3:186; Minqarī 484; Iskāfī, Miʿyār 175; Ibn Qutaybah, Imāmah 1:139; Masʿūdī, Murūj 2:387.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.207.1</td>
<td>Iskāfī, Miʿyār 243; Ibn ‘Abd Rabbih 2:214; Zamakhsharī, Rabīʿ 1:277; Ṭabarī, Daʿawāt 230.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.207.2</td>
<td>Kulaynī 1:410; Māmaṭīrī 384; Ibn ‘Abd Rabbih 7:250.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.208</td>
<td>Sulaym 2:181; Iskāfī, Miʿyār 301–302; Kulaynī 1:62, 2:62; Ḥarrānī 193; Ibn Abī Zaynab, Māmaṭīrī 229; Șadiq, Ḵiṣāl 255; Ṭabarī-Āmulī 231; Ṭabarī, Iḥtijāj 1:393; Sibt 142.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.210</td>
<td>Iskāfī, Miʿyār 279.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## Appendix of Sources for the Texts of Nahj al-Balāghah

883

(cont.)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text no.</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1.211</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.212</td>
<td>Mu’addib 313; Ibn ībāṣūs, Kashf 192.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.213</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.215.2</td>
<td>Thaqafi 1:311.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.217</td>
<td>Mu’addib 366; Āmidī 233.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.218.1</td>
<td>Mu’ayyad, <em>Ṭirāz</em> 2:45; Muhallabī 1:141.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.218.2</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.218.3</td>
<td>Majd al-Dīn Ibn al-ʿAthīr s.v. “S-M-J.”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.219.2</td>
<td>Mu’ayyad, <em>Ṭirāz</em> 2:159.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.220.1</td>
<td>Mu’addib 203, 392, 483; Āmidī 232; Mu’ayyad, <em>Ṭirāz</em> 2143.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.220.2</td>
<td>Mu’addib 203.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.221.1</td>
<td>Kulyānī 5:39; Mu’addib 506; Ṣadūq, <em>Amālī</em> 719; Zamakhshari, <em>Rabīʿ</em> 3:319; Ibn Ḥamdūn 1:97; Warrām 1:197; Sibt 155.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1.221.3</td>
<td>Ṣadūq, <em>Amālī</em> 722; Warrām 1:197.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Text no. | References
--- | ---
1.227.3 | Zamakhsharı, *Rabī’* 5145.
1.229 | Ibn Shahrāshüb 1:377; Āmidī 69.

**Additional Orations:**

1.235 | Māmaṭīrī 350–352; Ṣadūq, *Amālī* 388; Muwaffaq biʾllāh 557–558; Quḍāʿī, *Dustūr* 154; Fattāl 446; Sibṭ 149; Zarandi 169–171.

### Chapter 2: Letters

| Text no. | References |
--- | ---|
2.3 | Māmaṭīrī 350–352; Šadūq, *Amālī* 388; Muwaffaq biʾllāh 557–558; Qudāʾī, *Dustūr* 154; Fattāl 446; Sibṭ 149; Zarandi 169–171. |
2.4 | Sibṭ 66, 129, 157. |
2.5 | Minqarī 20; Ibn Qutaybah, *Imāmah* 1:111; Ibn ‘Abd Rabbih 5:78. |
2.7 | Ibn Aṭham 2:534; Minqarī 57–58; Ibn Qutaybah, *Imāmah* 1:122; |
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text no.</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>
| 2.8      | Ibn Aṭham 2:516;  
Minqārī 55;  
Ibn Qutaybah, *Imāmah* 11:16;  
Ibn ʿAbd Rabbīh 5:80. |
| 2.9      | Minqārī 85;  
Balādhurī 2:228;  
Abū Ḥanīfah al-Dinawarī 163;  
Ibn ʿAbd Rabbīh 5:84;  
Muwaffaq Khwārazmī 252. |
| 2.10     | Ibn Aṭham 2:536;  
Minqārī 109;  
Ibn ʿAsākir 59:133;  
Muʿayyad, *Ṭirāz* 11:16,  
1:171, 2:153. |
| 2.11     | Minqārī 123;  
Iṣkāfī, *Miʿyār* 142;  
Abū Ḥanīfah al-Dinawarī 166;  
Ḥarrānī 191;  
Majd al-Dīn Ibn al-Aṭhīr s.v. “K-F-F”;  
Ibn Manẓūr s.v. “K-F-F.” |
| 2.12     | Minqārī 148–149;  
Ibn Abī Shaybah 7:100 (§ 34499);  
Muwaffaq Khwārazmī 368;  
Muʿaddib 82. |
| 2.13     | Minqārī 154;  
Ṭabarī, *Ṭarīkh* 4:567. |
| 2.14     | Ibn Aṭham 3:32;  
Minqārī 203;  
Ṭabarī, *Ṭarīkh* 4:492, 5:10–11;  
Kulaynī 5:38;  
| 2.15     | Minqārī 230, 477;  
Mufīd, *Jamal* 182. |
| 2.16     | Minqārī 215;  
Kulaynī 5:41;  
Nuʿmān, *Sharḥ* 21:55, 53;  
Muʿaddib 505, 530. |
| 2.17     | Sulaym 2:337;  
Ibn Aṭham 3:154–155;  
Minqārī 150, 471;  
Ibn Qutaybah,  
*Imāmah* 1104;  
Abū Ḥanīfah al-Dinawarī 187;  
Masʿūdī,  
Māmaṭīrī 259;  
Karājikī, *Kanz* 201;  
Bayhaqī, *Makāsin* 53;  
Muwaffaq Khwārazmī 256;  
Ibn Shahrāshūb 2:361. |
| 2.18     | Māmaṭīrī 352–353;  
Bāqillānī 68;  
| 2.19     | Balādhurī 2:61;  
Yaʿqūbī 2:203;  
Māmaṭīrī 258. |
| 2.20     | Balādhurī 2:62;  
Yaʿqūbī 2:204;  
Bayhaqī, *Makāsin* 449;  
| 2.21     | Balādhurī 2:64–165;  
Muʿaddib 359. |
| 2.22     | Minqārī 107;  
Balādhurī 2:116–117;  
Yaʿqūbī 2:205;  
Thaʿlab 155;  
Kulaynī 8:243;  
Ibn Durayd, *Amāli* 149;  
Ibn ʿAbd Rabbīh 3:84;  
Naḥḥās 377;  
Ḥarrānī 200;  
Qālī, *Amāli* 294;  
Māmaṭīrī 220;  
Makki 1138;  
Bāqillānī 146;  
Raḍī, *Khaṣāʾiṣ* 95;  
Quḍāʿī, *Dustūr* 156;  
Muʿaddib 155, 525;  
Rāghib, *Muhāḍarāt* 2:416;  
Ghazālī, *Iḥyāʾ* 4:402;  
Ibn ʿAsākir 42:303;  
Diyāʾ Ibn al-Āthīr 1275;  
Sibṭ 150;  
Ibn Ṭalḥah 272;  
Muwaffaq Khwārazmī 374;  
| 2.23     | Ibn Abī Dunyā, *Maqtal* 56;  
Kulaynī 1:299;  
Masʿūdī, *Ithbāt* 103;  
Masʿūdī,  
Mūrīj 2:418;  
Ṭabarānī, *Muʿjam kabīr* 196;  
Raḍī, *Khaṣāʾiṣ* 108;  
Ibn ʿAsākir 42:562. |
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text no.</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2.26.1</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 440.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.27.1</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 177; Māmaṭīrī 268; Muwaffaq biʾllāh 562; Warrām 1:80.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.27.2</td>
<td>Thaqafī 1:235; Māmaṭīrī 269; Mufid, <em>Amālī</em> 263; Muwaffaq biʾllāh 563–564; Ṭūsī, <em>Amālī</em> 26; Warrām 1:80.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.27.3</td>
<td>Thaqafī 2:238–239; Māmaṭīrī 270–271; Mufid, <em>Amālī</em> 266; Hārūnī 265; Muwaffaq biʾllāh 564–565; Ibn Hamdūn 1:81; Ṭūsī, <em>Amālī</em> 29; Muʿaddib 174.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.27.4</td>
<td>Māmaṭīrī 275; Mufid, <em>Amālī</em> 266; Muwaffaq biʾllāh 568; Ṭūsī, <em>Amālī</em> 29.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.27.5</td>
<td>Thaqafī 1:248; Muwaffaq biʾllāh 570.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.28.1</td>
<td>Ibn Aʿtham 2:560; Nuwayrī 7:233.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.28.2</td>
<td>Ṭabrisī, <em>Iḥtijāj</em> 1:258–259; Nuwayrī 7:233; Qalqashandī 1:275.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.28.3</td>
<td>Abū al-Ṣalāḥ 23; Nuwayrī 7:236; Qalqashandī 1:276.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.28.4</td>
<td>Ṭabrisī, <em>Iḥtijāj</em> 1:262; Nuwayrī 7:236; Qalqashandī 1:276.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.28.5</td>
<td>Ibn Aʿtham 2:561; Ibn Shahrāshūb 2:351; Nuwayrī 7:236; Qalqashandī 1:276–277.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.29</td>
<td>Thaqafī 2:403.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.31</td>
<td>Testament of Counsel for al-Hasan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.31.1</td>
<td>Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih 3100; Ḥarrānī 68; Māmaṭīrī 201; Raḍī, <em>Khaṣāʾiṣ</em> 118; Hārūnī 130; Muwaffaq biʾllāh 540; Muʿaddib 505; Ibn Ṭawūs, <em>Kashf</em> 159 (cites Kulaynī and Abī Hilāl).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.31.2</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 68; Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih 3100; Māmaṭīrī 201–202; Hārūnī 130–131; Muwaffaq biʾllāh 541; Ibn Ṭawūs, <em>Kashf</em> 160.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.31.3</td>
<td>Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih 3100; Ḥarrānī 69; Māmaṭīrī 202–203; Hārūnī 131; Muwaffaq biʾllāh 541; Muʿaddib 79; Ibn Ṭawūs, <em>Kashf</em> 160.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.31.4</td>
<td>Ḥulwānī 58; Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih 4:166; Ḥarrānī 70; Raḍī, <em>Khaṣāʾiṣ</em> 116; Ibn Ṭawūs, <em>Kashf</em> 161.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.31.5–6</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 70–71; Ibn Ṭawūs, <em>Kashf</em> 161–162.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.31.7</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 72.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text no.</td>
<td>References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.31.8</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 71.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.31.9</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 72; Mu‘addib 416.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.31.10</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 73; Ibn Ṭawūs, <em>Kashf</em> 163.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.31.11</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 74; Māmaṭīrī 211; Quḍā‘ī, <em>Dustûr</em> 22; Mu‘addib 79, 136.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.31.13</td>
<td>Māmaṭīrī 203–204; Hârûnî 133; Muwaffaq bi‘llâh 543; Ibn Ṭawûs, <em>Kashf</em> 165.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.31.14</td>
<td>Ḥarrâni 76; Mâmaṭîrī 204; Hârûnî 133; Muwaffaq bi‘llâh 544; Warrâm 2:346; Ibn Ṭawûs, <em>Kashf</em> 165.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.31.15</td>
<td>Ḥarrâni 76; Mâmaṭîrī 204; Hârûnî 133; Muwaffaq bi‘llâh 544–545; Mu‘addib 155; Warrâm 1:246; Ibn Ṭawûs, <em>Kashf</em> 166.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.31.16</td>
<td>Ḥarrâni 77; Mâmaṭîrī 204; Muwaffaq bi‘llâh 545–546; Quḍâ‘î, <em>Dustûr</em> 26; Mu‘addib 80, 171, 526; Ibn ‘Âsâkir 66:347; Ibn Ṭawûs, <em>Kashf</em> 166.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## Appendix of Sources for the Texts of Nahj al-Balâghah

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text no.</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2.31.20</td>
<td>Ḥulwānī 60; Kulaynî 5:338, 510; Ḥarrānî 86; Muwaffaq bi’l-lâh 550; Quḍâ’î, Dustûr 86; Mu’addib 100; Ibn Ṭâwûs, Kashf 171; Ibn Manẓûr s.v. “F.-N.”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.31.21</td>
<td>Ḥarrānî 87; Muwaffaq bi’l-lâh 550; Ibn Ṭâwûs, Kashf 173.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.31.22</td>
<td>Ḥarrānî 88; Muwaffaq bi’l-lâh 551.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.32</td>
<td>Iskāfî, Mi’yâr 138.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.33</td>
<td>Thaqafi 2:509; Ibn Aṭham 4:222.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.34</td>
<td>Balâdhurî 2:400; Thaqafi 1:269, 2:368; Ṭabarî, Ṭârîkh 5:96–97; Mâmaṭîrî 286; Mu’ayyad, Tirāz 2154.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.36</td>
<td>Iskāfî, Mi’yâr 180; Ibn Qutaybah, Imâmah 1:75; Thaqafi 2:432; Abû al-Faraj, Aghânî 16:289; Mâmaṭîrî 296–297; Hârûnî 104–105.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.37</td>
<td>Ṭabrisî, Iḥtiyâj 1:264</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.38</td>
<td>Thaqafi 1:267–269; Ya’qûbî 2:194; Ṭabarî, Ṭârîkh 5:96; Mâmaṭîrî 283; Mufid, Amâlî 81; Mufid, Ikhtiṣâṣ 80; Najâshî 203; Ibn ‘Asâkîr 56:390.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.41</td>
<td>Balâdhurî 2:174; Ibn Qutaybah, Gharîb 1:376; Ibn Qutaybah, ‘Uyûn 1:94; Ibn ‘Abd Rabbîh 5:60; Mâmaṭîrî 299; Kashshî 58; Maydânî 2:101; Sîṭ 151.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.42</td>
<td>Balâdhurî 2:158; Ya’qûbî 2:201.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.43</td>
<td>Balâdhurî 2:173; Ya’qûbî 2:201.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.44</td>
<td>Zamakhsharî, Râbî’ 4:281.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.45.1–2</td>
<td>Zamakhsharî, Râbî’ 3:241; Warrâm 2:506.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.45.3</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.45.4</td>
<td>Şadûq, Amâlî 604; Fattâl 127; Ibn Shahrâshûb 1:355.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.45.5</td>
<td>Warrâm 2:172; Mu’ayyad al-Shîrâzî vol. 4 majlîs 99.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.46</td>
<td>Balâdhurî 2:398; Thaqafi 1:257–258; Ṭabarî, Ṭârîkh 5:95; Mâmaṭîrî 282; Mufid, Amâlî 80.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.47.1</td>
<td>Sulaym 2:446; Iskâfî, Mi’yâr 245; Ṭabarî, Ṭârîkh 5:147; Kulaynî 7:51; Nu’mân, Sharh 2:447; Ḥarrânî 198; Zajjâjî 112; Maṣûdî, Murûj 2:408; Abû al-Faraj, Maqâtil 51–52; Ṭabarânî, Mu’jam kabîr 1:01; Mâmaṭîrî 375; Şadûq, Man 4:193; Hârûnî 126, 128–129; Muwaffaq bi’l-lâh 315–316, 5:572 73; Fattâl 136; Muwaffaq Khwârazmî 384; ‘Izz al-Dîn Ibn al-Athîr, Kâmîl 2:741.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
| 2.47.2   | Iskâfî, Mi’yâr 246; Kulaynî 7:51; Nu’mân, Sharh 2:449; Ḥarrânî 198; Abû
## Appendix of Sources for the Texts of Nahj al-Balâghah

(continuation)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text no.</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2.48</td>
<td>Ibn ʿAṭḥām 3:191; Minqarī 493.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.52</td>
<td>Thaʿālibī, <em>Ījāz</em> 42.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.53</td>
<td>The Testament of Ashtar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>as in §2.53 above, and Muʿaddib 137.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>as in §2.53 above, Warrām 2:1215, 22125; and Ibn Manẓūr s.v. “Gh-B-Y.”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>as in §2.53 above, and Qudāʾī, <em>Dustūr</em> 166.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>as in §2.53 above, and Raḍī, <em>Khaṣāʾīš</em> 122, 123.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.56</td>
<td>Minqarī 121; Iskāfī, <em>Miʿyār</em> 140; Ḥarrānī 191; Muʿaddib 393.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.58</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.59</td>
<td>Minqarī 106; Muʿayyad, <em>Ṭirāz</em> 1:89.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.60</td>
<td>Minqarī 125; Māmāṭūrī 298; Muwaffaq biʾllāh 613; Majd al-Dīn Ibn al-Athīr s.v. “Sh-Dh-Y”; Ibn Manẓūr s.v. “Sh-Dh-Y.”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.61</td>
<td>Balādhurī 2:473; Muʿayyad, <em>Ṭirāz</em> 1:89.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.62.2</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.63</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.65</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## Appendix of Sources for the Texts of Nahj al-Balāghah (cont.)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text no.</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2.66</td>
<td>This epistle is similar to epistle § 2.22. See sources there.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.69</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 84, 85, 96, 98, 99 203, 504, 528.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.70</td>
<td>Balādhurī 2:175; Yaʿqūbī 2:203; Raḍī, <em>Khaṣāʾiṣ</em> 113.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.71</td>
<td>Balādhurī 2:163; Yaʿqūbī 2:203–204.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.72</td>
<td>Karājikī, <em>Kanz</em> 16; Muʿaddib 21.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.73</td>
<td>Muʿayyad, <em>Ṭirāz</em> 2:154.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.74</td>
<td>Ibn al-Kalbī’s transcribed document, lost (Raḍī’s stated source).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.75</td>
<td>Wāqidī, <em>Jamal</em>, lost (Raḍī’s stated source).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.77</td>
<td>Majd al-Dīn Ibn al-Athīr s.v. “Ḥ-M-M.”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.78</td>
<td>Saʿūd ibn Yaḥyā al-Umawī, <em>Maghāzī</em>, from his father, after Ibn Isḥāq, lost (Raḍī’s stated source).</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Additional Letter

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text no.</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2.79</td>
<td>Ibn ’Abd al-Barr, <em>Bahjah</em> 583.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

## Chapter 3: Sayings

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text no.</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>3.2</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 201–202; Ḥuṣrī 1:80; Muʿaddib 449; Warrām 1:128.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.3</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 88; Āmidī 70.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.4</td>
<td>Masʿūdī 3:416; Quḍāʾi, <em>Dustūr</em> 29; Āmidī 142.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.5</td>
<td>Ṣadūq, <em>Man</em> 4:387; Ṭūsī, <em>Amālī</em> 595; Muʿaddib 242; Sibṭ 142.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.6</td>
<td>Jāḥiẓ, <em>Miʿāt</em> 232; Māmaṭīrī 212; Muwaffaq bi’llāh 535; Ḥuṣrī 1:81; Rāghib, <em>Muḥāḍarāt</em> 1:282; Ibn Munqidh 335; Nuwayrī 3:258.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Appendix of Sources for the Texts of Nahj al-Balāghah

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text no.</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>3.7</td>
<td>Qālī, <em>Dhayl</em> 110.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.10</td>
<td>Maydānī 2:318, 453.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.11</td>
<td>Mufīd, <em>Jamal</em> 46 (cites Abū Mikhnaf); Muʿaddib 476; Āmidī 307.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.13</td>
<td>Ibn al-Muʿtazz 77; Ḥarrānī 13; Bāqillānī 68, 91; Zamakhsharī, <em>Rabiʿ</em> 4:419.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.14</td>
<td>Jāḥiẓ, <em>Mīṭat</em> 232; Quḍāʾī, <em>Dustūr</em> 34; Muʿaddib 436; Fattāl 490.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.19</td>
<td>Tawḥīdī, <em>Baṣāʾir</em> 1:117; Quḍāʾī, <em>Dustūr</em> 29; Muʿaddib 469; Warrām 1:235; Sibṭ 132.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.20</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 550; Fattāl 473; Āmidī 139; Ṭabrīsī, <em>Majmaʿ</em> 4:55; Sibṭ 132; Ḥabbāni, <em>Tārīkh</em> 8:443.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.22</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 75; Āmidī 62.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.23</td>
<td>Quḍāʾī, <em>Dustūr</em> 20; Muʿaddib 119; Sibṭ 136.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.24</td>
<td>Quḍāʾī, <em>Dustūr</em> 22; Muʿaddib 132; Fattāl 490; Āmidī 142; Sibṭ 132.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.25</td>
<td>Fattāl 490.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text no.</td>
<td>References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.27</td>
<td>ʻArrānī 57; Muʻaddib 358.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.28</td>
<td>Muʻaddib 393; Fattāl 384; Ṭabarī, <em>Mishkāt</em> 408.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.29</td>
<td>Kulaynī 8:23; ʻArrānī 97; Șādūq, <em>Man</em> 4:389; Muʻaddib 114.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.30</td>
<td>ʻArrānī 97; Muʻaddib 435; Ibn ʻAsākir 24:337; Muḥammad al-Waṭwāṭ 134; Dhahabi, <em>Siyar</em> 4:93.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.31</td>
<td>Kulaynī 3:259; ʻArrānī 211; Küfī 81; Șādūq, <em>Khišāl</em> 15; Muʻaddib 479; Muwaффeq Khwārazmī 377; Maydānī 2:455; Rāwandī, <em>Daʻawāt</em> 236; Ṭabarī, <em>Mishkāt</em> 525; Sibt 132; Warrām 78.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.32</td>
<td>Mīnqarī 144.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.34</td>
<td>Muʻaddib 533; Āmidi 345; Ṭabarī, <em>Iḥtijāj</em> 3:53.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.37</td>
<td>Mīnqarī 530; ʻĀdab, ʻĀdab 3195; ʻĀdab, <em>Muʿjam kabīr</em> 4:56.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.39</td>
<td>Ibn ʻAbd Rabbih 3167 (unattrib.); Ṭabarī, <em>Mishkāt</em> 539; Sibt 132.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.40</td>
<td>Āmidi 199, 202, 235; Maydānī 2:455; Ṭartūshī 199; Ibn ʻAlḥāḥ 281.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.43</td>
<td>Muʻaddib 372; Zamakhsharī, <em>Rābī</em> 1:397; Ṭartūshī 203.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.47</td>
<td>Fattāl 4; Ṭabarī, <em>Mishkāt</em> 437.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text no.</td>
<td>References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.49</td>
<td>Mu’addib 28; Fattāl, <em>ʿUyūn</em> 454; ʿĀmidī 33; Ṭabrisī, <em>Mishkāt</em> 228.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.50</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 100; Raḍī, <em>Khaṣāʾiṣ</em> 152; Fattāl 454 (attrib. Prophet); Ṭabrisī, <em>Mishkāt</em> 228 (attrib. ʿAlī), 233 (attrib. Prophet).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.51</td>
<td>Mu’addib 25; Maydānī 2:455; Ibn al-ʿArabī 1:293; Ibn Ṭalḥah 281.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.52</td>
<td>Mu’addib 430; ʿĀmidī 269; Ṭartūshī 203.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.54</td>
<td>Ābī 1:222.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.55</td>
<td>Jāḥiẓ, <em>Mīṭāt</em> 224; Mu’addib 28; Muwaffaq Khwārazmī 375 (cites Jāḥiẓ).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.58</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 359; ʿĀmidī 228.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.60</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 90; Mufid, <em>Irshād</em> 1:300; Quḍāṭ, <em>Dustūr</em> 14; Mu’addib 69; Ibn Ṭalḥah 280.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.61</td>
<td>Mu’addib 135; ʿĀmidī 140.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.64</td>
<td>Mu’addib 22; ʿĀmidī 42; Sibṭ 133.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.66</td>
<td>Mu’addib 497; Warrām 2:370.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.67</td>
<td>Mu’addib 376; ʿĀmidī 322.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.68</td>
<td>Sulaḥm 2:335; Ibn Aṭḥām 3:171; Minqarī 476; Mu’addib 141.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text no.</td>
<td>References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-----------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text no.</td>
<td>References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:81</td>
<td>Abū Khaythamah 33; Dārimī 1:338; Kulaynī 1:32; Ibn ‘Abd Rabbih 4170; Ḥarrānī 204; Ṣadūq, Ma‘āni 226; Māmaṭīrī 156, 398; Makkī 1:370; Ibn Baṭṭah 16, 27; Abū Nu‘aym 1:77, 7:298; Ibn ‘Abd al-Barr, Jāmi‘ 281; Mu‘addib 55; Ghazālī, ʻIhyā‘ 1:32; Ibn Munqidh 293; Ibn ‘Asākir 42:510; Ibn Ṭalḥah 245; Dhahabī, Tadhkirah 115.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.82</td>
<td>Āmidī 91; Zamakhsharī, Rabi‘ 4:40.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.83</td>
<td>Jāḥiẓ, Rasā’il 289 (attrib. Sha‘bī); Balādhurī 2135; Ibn Abī al-Dunyā, ‘Aql 71; Kulaynī 1:48; Ibn ‘Abd Rabbih, 8:90; Māmaṭīrī 153; Tha‘ālibī, Tamthīl 30; Māwardī, Amthāl 19; Ḥuṣrī 1:202 (attrib. Ibn Mas‘ūd); Ṭabrisī, Mishkāt 437.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.85</td>
<td>Ibn Abī Shaybah 7100 (§ 34499); Iskāfī, Mi‘yār 250; Barqī 1:224; Ḥarrānī 174; Māmaṭīrī 185; Dāraquṭnī, Mu‘talif 2:1062; Muwaffaq biʾllāh 617; Mufīd, Ṣifāt 22; Murtaḍā, Amālī 1:198; Raḍī, Khaṣāʾiṣ 96; Karājikī, Kanz 32; Āmidī 90; Zamakhsharī, Rabi‘ 2155; Ibn ‘Asākir 47:359 (attrib. Abū al-Dardā’); Ṭabrisī, Majmaʿ 1:441.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.86</td>
<td>Mu‘addib 142; Āmidī 90; Zamakhsharī, Rabi‘ 4:281; Ţabrisī, Majma‘ 2:318; Warrām 1111.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.87</td>
<td>Tawḥīdī, Baṣāʾir 2:225; Ḥarrānī 213; Āmidī 322; Maydānī 2:455; Ibn Ṭalḥah 281; Sibī 105 (attrib. Ibn ‘Abbās); Warrām 1111.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.88</td>
<td>Kulaynī 8:391; Mu‘addib 92; Rāghib, Muḥāḍarāt 1:53; Fattāl 4; Ţabrisī, Mishkāt 437.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.89</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 209; Ţabrisī, Majma‘ 1:441.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.90</td>
<td>Sulaym 2:2373; Balādhurī 2188; Ḥarrānī 160; Ṣadūq, Amālī 668; Māmaṭīrī 244–245; Muwaffaq biʾllāh 587; Mufīd, Siḥāt 22; Murtaḍā, Amālī 1:98; Raḍī, Khaṣāʾiṣ 96; Karājikī, Kanz 32; Āmidī 57; Zamakhsharī, Rabi‘ 5:97; ‘Izz al-Din Ibn al-Athīr, Usd 3:217; Ibn Ṭalḥah 264; Muḥammad al-Wāṭwāṭ 52.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.91</td>
<td>Ḥulwānī 50; Ya‘qūbī 2:210; Raḍī, Khaṣāʾiṣ 96; Mu‘addib 543; Āmidī 57; Zamakhsharī, Rabi‘ 1:36.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.92</td>
<td>Ya‘qūbī 2:209; Mubarrad, Kamīl 1:241; Māmaṭīrī 409; Samarqandi 1:587 (attrib. Prophet); Raḍī, Khaṣāʾiṣ 96; Ābī 1:277; Mu‘addib 554; Rāghib, Muḥāḍarāt 1:230; Āmidī 363; Warrām 2:200; Mu‘addib 144.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text no.</td>
<td>References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.97</td>
<td>Raḍī, <em>Khaṣāʾīs</em> 97; Āmīdī 351.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.100</td>
<td>Khalīl 7:442; Ibn Qutaybah, <em>ʿUyūn</em> 1:463; Ya’qūbī 2:210; Ḥarrānī 116; Māmāṭīrī 154–157 (156); Raḍī, <em>Khaṣāʾīs</em> 98; Mu’addib 499; ‘Īmād al-Dīn al-Ṭabarī 21; Muḥammad ibn Ṭahir 187; Rāẓū, <em>Maḥsūl</em> 4:70 (attrib. Prophet); Qurṭūbī 2:154; Ibn al-ʿArabī 1:140.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.101</td>
<td>‘Abd al-Razzāq 8:299 (attrib. ‘Umar); Mu’addib 431; Āmīdī 351.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.104</td>
<td>Mu’addib 131; Āmīdī 143; Zamakhshārī, <em>Rabīʿ</em> 3:297.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.105</td>
<td>Āmīdī 641; Mu’addib 384; Rāwandū, <em>Daʿwāt</em> 121.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Appendix of Sources for the Texts of Nahj al-Balâghah

(continued)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text no.</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Amâlî 709; Șadûq, 'Uyûn 1:217; Kûfî 2:284; Raḍî, Khaṣâʾîs 124; Ābî 1:296; Kârâkîji, Ma’dîn 26; Bayhaqî, Maḥâsîn 41; Mu’addib 511; Āmîdh 329.</td>
<td>Mu’addib 70, 127, 132; Āmîdh 24.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.109</td>
<td>Raḍî, Khaṣâʾîs 99; Murtaḍâ, Amâlî 1:153; Āmîdh 199; Zamakhsharî, Râbi’ 4:217; Warrâm 1:108.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.111</td>
<td>Nu’mân, Majâlîs 305; Abû Bakr al-Khârârazmî 132; Raḍî, Khaṣâʾîs 100; Mu’addib 347; Āmîdh 223; Zamakhsharî, Râbi’ 1:345; Muḥammad ibn Tâhir 378–379.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.112</td>
<td>Hûlwanî 53; Barqî 2:222; Kuyûnî 2:45; Qummi 1:100; Șadûq, Amâlî 432; Șadûq, Ma’anî 185; Fattâl 43.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.113</td>
<td>Nu’mân, Majâlîs 305; Abû Bakr al-Khârârazmî 132; Raḍî, Khaṣâʾîs 100; Mu’addib 347; Āmîdh 223; Zamakhsharî, Râbi’ 1:345; Muḥammad ibn Tâhir 378–379.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.114</td>
<td>Mu’addib 330; Zamakhsharî, Râbi’ 3:422; Warrâm 1:211.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.115</td>
<td>Raḍî, Khaṣâʾîs 101; Mu’addib 426; Āmîdh 295; Warrâm 1:148.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.116</td>
<td>Hûlwanî 65; Raḍî, Khaṣâʾîs 101; Mu’addib 204; Nuwayrî 1:176.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.117</td>
<td>Raḍî, Khaṣâʾîs 101; Ibn al-’Arabî 180.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.119</td>
<td>Iskâfî, Mi’yâr 268; Hûlwanî 68; Jâhîz, Bayân 2:190; Jâhîz, Maḥâsîn 132; Ibn Qutaybah, ‘Uyûn 2:358; Ibn Abî al-Dunyâ, Dhamm 77; Ibn Abî al-Dunyâ, Islâh al-mâl 1:30; Ya’qûbî 2:208; Ahwâzî, Zuhd 47; Harrânî 188; Abû Bakr al-Dinawarî 4:51; Mas’ûdi, Murûyî 3:298; Mâmaṭîrî 240; Nu’mân, Sharh 2:224; Kûfî 47; Raḍî, Khaṣâʾîs 102; Huṣârî 1:80; Tawhîdî 5:227; Mufîd, Irshâd 1:296; Abî 1:85–186; Harrânî 5:265; Muwaffaq bi’llâh 63; Mâwardî, Adab 131; Bayhaqî, Maḥâsîn 358; Tûsî, Amâlî 594; Khaṭîb, Târikh 7:297; Râghib, Maḥâdarât 2:403; Fattâl 441; Zamakhsharî,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text no.</td>
<td>References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---</td>
<td>---</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.121</td>
<td>Kulaynī 2:132; Muḥāfīd, Ikhtīṣāṣ 234; Raḍī, Khaṣāʾīṣ 103; Muʿaddīb 160.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.122</td>
<td>Ibn Durayd, Jamharah 1:125; Māmaṭīrī 209; Raḍī, Khaṣāʾīṣ 103; Muḥāfīd, Irshād 1:298; ‘Abbī 1:296; Muwaffaq biʾllāh 535; Quḍāʾī, Dustūr 46; Ḥulwānī 67; Ibn ʿAbd al-Barr, Bahjāh 2:281; Zamakhshārī, Rabiʿ 1:48; Warrām 1:243, 3:22; Nuwayrī 7:96.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.123</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 219; Raḍī, Khaṣāʾīṣ 103; Muwaffaq biʾllāh 586; Zamakhshārī, Rabiʿ 1:355; Muḥammad al-Waṭwāṭ 540.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.124</td>
<td>Ṣadūq, Khiṣāl 202 (attrib. Jaʿfar ʿal-Ṣādiq); Sibṭ 133.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.126</td>
<td>Kulaynī 4:10; Ḥarrānī 111, 221, 423; Ṣadūq, Amālī 532; Ṣadūq, Khiṣāl 619, 621; Ṣadūq, Man 4:381, 416; Ṣadūq, ʿUyūn 1:59; Raḍī, Khaṣāʾīṣ 104; Thaʿālībī, Taftīr 5:446 (attrib. Prophet); Ḥuṣrī 1:81; Quḍāʾī, Musnad 1:233 (attrib. Prophet); Muʿaddīb 89; Ṭabrisī, Mishkāt 138; Faḍlallāh al-Rāwandī 86; Dhahābī, Mīzān 1:452 (attrib. Prophet).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.127</td>
<td>Raḍī, Khaṣāʾīṣ 104; Amīdī 152; Ibn al-ʿArabī 1102.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.128</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 60, 214; Ṣadūq, Khiṣāl 620; Ṣadūq, Man 2:64; Ibn ʿAbd al-Barr, Tāmhīd 21:20 (attrib. Prophet through ʿAlī).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.129</td>
<td>Ḥulwānī 49; Jāḥiẓ, Bayān 1:85; Jāḥiẓ, ʿUthmāniyyah 36; Sūlī 74; Raḍī, Khaṣāʾīṣ 104; Ḥarrānī 111, 214, 221, 403; Ṣadūq, Amālī 532; Ṣadūq, Khiṣāl 620; Ṣadūq, ʿUyūn 1:59; Ṣadūq, Man 4:416; Karājīkī, Kanz 287; Bayhaqī, Maḥāsīn 232 (attrib. Luqmān al-Ḥakīm); Zamakhshārī, Rabiʿ 4:160; Dhahābī, Mīzān 1:262, 2481.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.131</td>
<td>Raḍī, Khaṣāʾīṣ 104; Muwaffaq biʾllāh 51; Muʿaddīb 380; Fattāl 350; Zamakhshārī, Rabiʿ 2:283.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.132</td>
<td>Raḍī, Khaṣāʾīṣ 105; Muʿaddīb 284.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.133</td>
<td>Kumayl ibn Ziyād transmitter (Raḍī names him); Ḥulwānī 57; Iskāfī,</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Text no. | References
--- | ---


3.137 | Quḍāʿī, *Dustūr* 8; Muʿaddib 492.


3.140 | Muʿaddib 64, 98; Āmidī 54.

3.141 | Āmidī 46.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text no.</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>3.151</td>
<td>Mu‘addib 40; Āmidī 21; Zamakhsharī 4:86; Warrām 1:252.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.152</td>
<td>Mu‘addib 37, 512; Āmidī 13–14.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.154</td>
<td>Kulaynī 2:451, 8:385; Ḥarrānī 208; Rađi, <em>Khaṣa'īš</em> 110.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.155</td>
<td>Jāḥiẓ, <em>Bukhalā’</em> 148 (attrib. anon); Rađi, <em>Khaṣa'īš</em> 110; Mu‘addib 103, 380; Āmidī 236.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.162</td>
<td>Mu‘addib 82; Āmidī 61; Ṭartūshī 203; Zamakhsharī, <em>Rabi‘</em> 3:75; Warrām 34.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.163</td>
<td>Rađi, <em>Khaṣa'īš</em> 110.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Appendix of Sources for the Texts of Nahj al-Balaghah

Text no. | References
--- | ---
3.166 | Balâdhurî 2:114; Kulaynî 8:20; Ḥarrānî 94; Māmaṭîrî 354; Raḍî, Khaṣâʿîs 112, 124; Muwaffaq bi’llâh 155; Mu’addib 542; Warrâm 2:183, 3:113; Râzî, Maṣfâtîḥ 2:401.
3.167 | Raḍî, Khaṣâʿîs 107; Mu’addib 377; Âmîdî 310.
3.169 | Mînqarî 315; Iskâfî, Mi’yâr 61; Ibn Abî Shaybah 6:333 (§ 31840), 7:555 (§ 37898), 7:559 (§ 37915); Mubarrad, Kâmil 3:339, 163; Abû Ya’lâ, Musnad 1:397; Ṭabarî, Târîkh 5:88; Mas’ûdî, Murûj 2:408; Mâmaṭîrî 178; Nu’mân, Sharh 2:293, 321; Nu’mân, Manâqib 112, 124; Muwaffaq biʾllâh 155; Muʾaddib 542; Warrâm 2:183, 3:113; Râzî, Mafâtîḥ 2:401.
3.170 | Qummî 2:287; Raḍî, Khaṣâʿîs 107; Mu’addib 404.
3.171 | Raḍî, Khaṣâʿîs 107.
3.172 | Jâḥîz, Bayân 2:50; Jâḥîz, Miʿat 230; Iskâfî, Mi’yâr 292; Ibn Qutaybah, ‘Uyûn 2:220; Ya’qûbî 2:212; Kulaynî 8:67; Ibn ‘Abd Rabbih 1:240; Râzî, Khaṣâʿîs 107; Mufîd, Irshâd 1:254; Muwaffaq biʾllâh 376.
3.173 | Raḍî, Khaṣâʿîs 111; Mu’addib 444; Âmîdî 274.
3.174 | Raḍî, Khaṣâʿîs 111; Karâjîkî, Tuʾajjub 54; Âmîdî 326.
3.175 | Qâlî, Amâlî 2:54, 2100 (attrib. ‘Umar ibn ‘Abd al-’Azîz); Hârûnî 261; Mu’addib 179; Wârāmî 2:243.
3.176 | Balâdhurî 2:115; Mas’ûdî, Murûj 4:262; Šâdûq, Khîshâl 16; Tanûkhî 135; Raḍî, Khaṣâʿîs 112; al-Mufîd, Irshâd 1:243; Muwaffaq biʾllâh 587; Fattâl 427; Zamakhsharî, Râbî’ 590.
3.177 | Ḥulwânî 47; Jâḥîz, Miʿat 228; Balâdhurî 2:115; Mubarrad, Kâmil 2:211; Mâmaṭîrî 153; Raḍî, Khaṣâʿîs 111; Âmîdî 113.
3.178 | Ibn Qutaybah, ‘Uyûn 1:415 (attrib. ‘Umar ibn ‘Abd al-’Azîz); Balâdhurî 122; Raḍî, Khaṣâʿîs 112; Mu’addib 489; Âmîdî 318; Ţartûshî 86 (attrib. anonymous sages); Zamakhsharî, Râbî’ 2:217.
3.179 | Balâdhurî 2:34; Raḍî, Khaṣâʿîs 112; Mu’addib 512; Zamakhsharî, Râbî’ 4:393; Ibn Shahrâshîb 1:370.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text no.</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>3.181</td>
<td>Nearly identical to § 3.83. See sources there.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.183</td>
<td>Jāḥiẓ, Rasāʾil 1:283; Balādhurī 2:115; Ibn ‘Abd Rabbihi 2:152 (attrib. Ibn al-ʿAbbās); Raḍī, Khaṣā’īs 113; Zamakhsharī, Rabī 2:345; Samʿānī, Tafsīr 2:424;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.184</td>
<td>Balādhurī 2:115; Ya’qūbī 2:209–210; Ibn ‘Abd Rabbihi 2:152 (attrib. ‘Umar); Tūsī, Tahdhib 10:150; Rāghib, Muḥāḍarāt 1:376; Mu’addib 544; Āmidī 354; Zamakhsharī, Rabī 533.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.187</td>
<td>Mubarrad, Kamīl 1:298; Mu’addib 87; Fattāl 437; Ţabrisī, Mīshkāt 523.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.188</td>
<td>Mubarrad, Fāḍil 94; Abū Hilāl, Dīwān 1:154; Raḍī, Khaṣā’īs 115; Māwardi, Adab 202; Bayhaqī, Maḥāsin 124; Āmidī 340; Ibn Munqidh 335; Nuwayrī 3:248.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.189</td>
<td>Māmaṭīrī 153; Raḍī, Khaṣā’īs 115; Mu’addib 376; Āmidī 239; Mu’ayyad, Tīrāz 1:88.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.190</td>
<td>Ibn Quitaybah, ‘Uyūn 1:408; Ibn ‘Abd Rabbihi 2:140; Māmaṭīrī 243; Raḍī, Khaṣā’īs 115; Muwaffaq bi’llāh 588; Karājīkī, Kanz 147; Quḍāʿī, Dustūr 29; Mu’addib 55; Ghazālī, Iḥyāʾ 3:478; Zamakhsharī, Rabī 2:238; Mu’ayyad, Tīrāz 1:88; Warrām 1:355.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.191</td>
<td>Ḥulwānī 53; Kulaynī 2:112; Mu’addib 162; Daylamī 296.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.192</td>
<td>Ḥulwānī 51; Ibn ‘Abd Rabbihi 3:96; Ḥarrānī 89; Raḍī, Khaṣā’īs 118; Karājīkī, Kanz 225; Āmidī 265.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.193</td>
<td>Furāt 314; Raḍī, Khaṣā’īs 70; Mu’addib 495; Zamakhsharī, Rabī 1:463; Ţabrisī, Majma‘ 7:414.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.194</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 211; Māmaṭīrī 210; Quḍāʿī, Dustūr 72; Mu’addib 360.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.195</td>
<td>Ibn Abī al-Dunyā, Ikhwān 128; Kulaynī 8:16; Ḥarrānī 97, 98, 381; Ṣadūq, Man 4:389; Karājīkī, Kanz 34, 163; Māwardi, Adab 185, 342 (anon);</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text no.</td>
<td>References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.197</td>
<td>Ḥuṣrī 41056; Āmidi 62; Muʿayyad, <em>Ṭirāz</em> 269.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.199</td>
<td>Ibn `Abd al-Barr, <em>Adab</em> 111; Ṭarṭūshī 203.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.206</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 121, 467.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text no.</td>
<td>References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.212</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 8, 217; 'Ayyāshī 1120; Mufīd, <em>Amālī</em> 188 (attrib. Ja’far al-Ṣādiq); Mu‘addib 34; Qurṭubi 10:165.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.218</td>
<td>Ibn Qutaybah, <em>'Uyūn</em> 1:197; Mubarrad, <em>Kāmil</em> 1:67; Ibn ‘Abd Rabbih 1:94; Māmātirī 376; Muwaffaq bīllāh 573; Mu‘addib 527; Rāghib, <em>Muḥādarāt</em> 2:147; Ibn Munqidh 222.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.220</td>
<td>Āmidt 48; Zamakhsharī, <em>Rabī‘</em> 446.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.221</td>
<td>Ṣadūq, <em>Amālī</em> 722; Mu‘addib 145, 404; Āmidt 116; Muḥammad al-Waṭwāṭ 138; Warrām 1:249.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.222</td>
<td>Ḥuṣrī 2:430; Āmidt 139; Šuṭṭushī 197; Zamakhsharī, <em>Rabī‘</em> 2:85.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.224</td>
<td>Ḥuṣrī 1:80; Mu‘addib 53; Āmidt 42; Taṭūṣī 203.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.227</td>
<td>Ibn Qutaybah, <em>'Uyūn</em> 3:119 (attrib. anon); Makkī 2:316 3:119 (attrib. anon); Āmidt 139.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.228</td>
<td>Ḥuṣrī 2:430; Āmidt 139; Šuṭṭushī 197; Zamakhsharī, <em>Rabī‘</em> 2:85.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.229</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 206; Mu‘addib 155; Āmidt 108.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.230</td>
<td>Ibn Qutaybah, <em>'Uyūn</em> 3:119 (attrib. anon); Makkī 2:316 3:119 (attrib. anon); Āmidt 139.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text no.</td>
<td>References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.235</td>
<td>Ṣadūq, <em>Khīṣāl</em> 33; Ṣadūq, <em>Tawḥīd</em> 288; Mu‘addib 339; Fattāl 30.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.237</td>
<td>Ḥulwānī 46; Āmīdi 230; Muḥammad ibn Ṭāhir 323–324; Nuwayrī, 8:182; Ibn Ṭalḥah 301.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.239</td>
<td>Mu‘addib 392; Āmīdi 246.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.240</td>
<td>Mu‘addib 62; Āmīdi 52.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.242</td>
<td>Kumayl ibn Ziyād transmitter (Raḍī names him); Bā‘ūnī 2:140.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.243</td>
<td>Muwaffaq Khwārazmī 376 (cites Jāḥiz); Mu‘addib 135.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text no.</td>
<td>References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.251</td>
<td>Abū ʿUbayd, <em>Gharib</em> 4:359; Harawī s.v. “-Dh-B.”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.254</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 164.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.256</td>
<td>Ḥuṣrī 3:730; Muʿaddib 304; Ṭartūshī 120 (attrib. “a wise man”).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.258–259</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.260</td>
<td>This saying is part of § 3.358. See sources there.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.265</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 414.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.266</td>
<td>Harrānī 155; Kulaynī 5:82.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.267</td>
<td>Ṣadūq, <em>Tawḥīd</em> 365; Thaʾlabī 2:225; Muʿaddib 319; Fattāl 40; Ibn Ṭalḥah 281; Nuwayrī 3:376.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.269</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.270</td>
<td>None</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.271</td>
<td>Harrānī 236; Muʿaddib 135; Ṣadūq, <em>Tawḥīd</em> 365; Thaʾlabī 2:225; Muʿaddib 319; Fattāl 40; Ibn ʿAsākir 42:512; Sibt 156; Muḥammad al-Waṭwāṭ 104.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.272</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 132.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text no.</td>
<td>References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.276</td>
<td>Fattāl 420; Āmīdī 262.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.277</td>
<td>Yaʿqūbī 2:209; Ibn ‘Abd Rabbih 3:255; Kulaynī 3:261; Ḥarrānī 209; Māmaṭīrī 289–290; Fattāl 423; Muʿaddib 161–162; Āmīdī 121; Ṭabrisī, Mishkāt 489; Ibn ‘Asākir 9313; Nuwayrī 5167.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.278</td>
<td>Quḍāʾī, Dustūr 212; Āmīdī 103; Nuwayrī 5396.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.279</td>
<td>Ibn Qutaybah, ʿUyūn 2:494; Ḥarrānī 205; Muʿaddib 523.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.281</td>
<td>Ibn ‘Abd Rabbih 2:227 (rendered into verse); Zamakhsharī, Rabīʾ 1:405.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.283</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 476; Āmīdī 309; Sibṭ 135.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.285</td>
<td>Āmīdī 313; Muʿaddib 64; Ṭartūshī 197; Irbilī 3:319.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.286</td>
<td>Ibn ‘Abd Rabbih 4:288; Murtaḍā, Amālī 1:149.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.287</td>
<td>Quḍāʾī, Dustūr 14; Āmīdī 187; Maydānī 2:454; Ṭartūshī 203; Ibn Ṭalḥah 280.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.288</td>
<td>Quḍāʾī, Dustūr 28; Muʿaddib 478; Āmīdī 313; Zamakhsharī, Rabīʾ 3:163; Quṭb al-Dīn Rāwandī, Daʿawāt 21.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.289</td>
<td>Māmaṭīrī 239; Ābī 1:284; Muwaffaq biʾllāh 586; Ṭabhib, Muḥāḍarāt 2:405.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.292</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 224; Ṣadūq, Tawḥīd 368; Abū Nuʿaym 1:75; Muʿaddib 386; Irbilī 3:142.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.293</td>
<td>Mubarrad, Kāmil 1:70; Mufid, Irshād 2:185; Fattāl 209; Āmīdī 361; Zamakhsharī, Rabīʾ 5:292; Maydānī 2:454; Ibn Shahrāshūb 3:357; Irbilī 3:383.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.294</td>
<td>Ibn Ṭalḥah 279.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.296</td>
<td>Masʿūdī, Muraj 2:418; Hārūnī 506.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.297</td>
<td>Ibn Qutaybah, Maʿārif 1:580; Ṭabarī-Āmūlī 674; Abū Nuʿaym 5:26; Ṭabhib, Muḥāḍarāt 1:490.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text no.</td>
<td>References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.298</td>
<td>Ḥulwānī 129; Kulaynī 3:454; Mu‘addib 158; Fattāl 414; Āmīdī 113; Zamakhsharī, Rabī‘ 2:279.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.300</td>
<td>Zamakhsharī, Rabī‘ 27; Maydānī 1306; Nuwayrī 6:65 (attrib. anon).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.301</td>
<td>Rāghib, Muḥādarat 1:133.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.303</td>
<td>Murtaḍā, Amālī 1:274; Zamakhsharī, Rabī‘ 2:47; Sibṭ 162; Nuwayrī 8:169.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.304</td>
<td>Tawḥīdī, Baṣāʾir 1:117.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.305</td>
<td>Āmīdī 102; Zamakhsharī, Rabī‘ 591.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.306</td>
<td>Ishāq 179; Thaqafi 1379; Kulaynī 6:381; Ibn ‘Abd Rabbih 2:91; Māmātīrī 146; Muwaffaq bi’llāh 589; Ṣadūq, Khiṣāl 209; Ṣadūq, ‘Uyūn 2:218; Mu‘addib 132; Maydānī 2:454.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.307</td>
<td>Ṭabārī, Tārīkh 4:444; Mas‘ūdī, Murūj 2:235.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.310</td>
<td>Mu‘addib 90; Zamakhsharī, Rabī‘ 2:171; Warrām 2:460.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.312</td>
<td>Ṭabārī, Tārīkh 5:552; Ṭabārī, Taḥfīz 2:370; Baghawi 3:698.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.313</td>
<td>Huṣrī 1:80; Āmīdī 202, 308.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.314</td>
<td>Nu‘mān, Da‘āʾim 1:245; Fattāl 454; Āmīdī 108; Ṭabrīsī, Misḥkāt 228.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.315</td>
<td>Mu‘addib 59.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.316</td>
<td>Āmīdī 97; Zamakhsharī, Rabī‘ 5:278.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.320</td>
<td>Kūfī 81; Kulaynī 3:259; Ṣadūq, ‘Uyūn 1:43; Muḥīd, Amālī 309.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.321</td>
<td>Dajājī 11.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.322</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 112; Ṣadūq, Khiṣāl 621.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text no.</td>
<td>References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.323</td>
<td>Makkī 2:272 (attrib. anon.); Mu'addib 64; Ghazālī, <em>Iḥyāʾ</em> 1:86 (rendered in <em>rajaz</em> verse); Irbīlī 3:139.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.324</td>
<td>Āmidī 292; Maydānī 2:454.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.326</td>
<td>Āmidī 221; Muḥammad al-Watwāt 81.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.327</td>
<td>Mu'addib 66, 472; Āmidī 57; Sibṭ 135.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.328</td>
<td>Mu'addib 472; Āmidī 101, 224.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.332</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 88; Kulaynī 8:19; Quḍā'ī 36; Maydānī 2:454; Zamakhshārī, <em>Rabi'ī</em> 2:328; Warrām 2:382.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.333</td>
<td>Yaʾqūbī 2:207; Kulaynī 1:37; Ḥarrānī 10, 21; Karājīkī, <em>Ma'ḍīn</em> 33; Mu’addib 404; Fattāl 466; Warrām 2:378.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.334</td>
<td>Tanūkhī 1:177; Āmidī 416.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.336</td>
<td>Āmidī 68; Ḥarrānī 203.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.337</td>
<td>Kulaynī 6:17; Māmaṭīrī 394.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.340</td>
<td>Mu'addib 15; Āmidī 77.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.344</td>
<td>Ḥulwānī 48; Āmidī 43.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.345</td>
<td>Ḥulwānī 48.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.346</td>
<td>Ḥulwānī 48; Maydānī 2:454.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.347</td>
<td>Ḥulwānī 48; Āmidī 250.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text no.</td>
<td>References</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.350</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 221.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.351</td>
<td>Bāqillānī 146; Quḍāʿī, <em>Dustūr</em> 56; Muʿaddib 90; Zamakhsharī, <em>Rabiʿ</em> 1:88; Warrām 274.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.353</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 222; Māmaṭīrī 173; Ṣadūq, <em>Khīṣāl</em> 197; Hārūnī 207; Muwaffaq bīllāh 531; Ibn al-Ṭuyūrī 2:538; Fattāl 1:6; Maydānī 2:454; Ţabrīsī, <em>Mishkāt</em> 241; Muwaffaq Khwārazmī 368; Sibṭ 159; Ḥammūʿī 1:403; Hasan al-ʿAskarī, 402–403.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.354.2</td>
<td>Māmaṭīrī 227–228.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.354.3</td>
<td>Nuʿaym 1:69; Qummī 1:213; Muʿaddib 153; Āmīdī 11, 152; Ghazālī, <em>Iḥyāʾ</em> 2:311.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.355</td>
<td>Ibn Aʿtham 2:395; Balāḏurī 5:533.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.356</td>
<td>Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih 4:170; Fattāl 502; Ibn Munqidh 90, 393.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.357</td>
<td>Jāḥiẓ, <em>Miʿāt</em> 228; Ḥarrānī 66; Fattāl 385; Ṭarṭūshī 204.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.360</td>
<td>Ṣadūq, <em>Man</em> 4:388; Muʿaddib 63; Fattāl 469; Muḥammad ibn Ṭāhir 318.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.361</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 74; Ṣadūq, <em>Man</em> 2:626; Muʿīd, <em>Ikhtiṣāṣ</em> 231; Quḍāʿī, <em>Dustūr</em> 80; Muʿaddib 530, 526.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.362</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 409; Ṣadūq, <em>Man</em> 2:628; Āmīdī 77.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.363</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 59, 62; Maydānī 2:454; Ibn Ṭalḥah 280.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.364</td>
<td>Āmīdī 304.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.365</td>
<td>Quḍāʿī, <em>Dustūr</em> 34; Maydānī 2:454; Muʿaddib 456; Ibn Ṭalḥah 280.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.367</td>
<td>Barqī 2:345; Ḥarrānī 203; Ṣūʿi, <em>Amālī</em> 147; Maydānī 2:260 (attrib. Prophet David); Irbīlī 211.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.368</td>
<td>Muʿaddib 84; Warrām 3:215.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Appendix of Sources for the Texts of Nahj al-Balāghah

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text no.</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>3.369</td>
<td>(See 3.134; second part is the same; no citations for first part).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.370</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 78; Muwaffaq bi’llāh 545; Āmidī 117.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.371</td>
<td>Mu’addib 266; Āmidī 133; Maydānī 1:290 (unattrib.).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.372</td>
<td>Maydānī 2:2454.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.373</td>
<td>Kulañyn 8:21; Ḥarrānī 95, 207; Maydānī 2:303 (attrib. Aws ibn al-Ḥārith); Warrām 2:298, 3:215.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.374</td>
<td>Āmidī 171; Taṭūshī 204.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.376</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 345; Quḍā’, Dustūr 126.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.378</td>
<td>Mas‘ūdī, Murāj 4:261; Makkī 2:88; Tha’labī 2:261; Muwaffaq bi’llāh 584; Khaṭīb, Tārikh 11:81, 13:87; Maydānī 2:2454.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.379</td>
<td>Āmidī 232.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.380</td>
<td>Mufīd, Irshād 1:300; Quḍā’, Dustūr 32; Maydānī 2:454; Zamakhshari, Rabi’ 3:418; Ibn Ţalḥah 280.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.381</td>
<td>Maydānī 2:2454.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.382</td>
<td>Zamakhshari, Rabi’ 2:238.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.383</td>
<td>Mu’addib 524; Āmidī 253.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.384</td>
<td>Ḥulwānī 144; Kulañyn 8:22; Ḥarrānī 97.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.385</td>
<td>Ibn ‘Abd Rabbih 3:255 (in verse); Māmaṭīrī 291; Māwardī, Adab 264; Mu’addib 162; Āmidī 121.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.386</td>
<td>Māwardī, Adab 264; Mu’addib 42; Rāghib, Muhādarāt 2:401; Fattāl 441; Āmidī 32; Maydānī 2:454; Ţabrānī, Mīshkāt 468; Ibn Ţalḥah 279.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.387</td>
<td>Kulañyn 8:72; Ṣadūq, Khiṣāl 139; Mu’addib 519; Āmidī 257; Ibn ‘Asākir 42:508; Ibn Shahrāshūb 1:378.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.388</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 197; Tha’labī 8:315; Rāzī, Mafātīḥ 3:471 (attrib. Abū Idrīś).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.389</td>
<td>Mu’addib 38.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.390</td>
<td>Mufīd, Ikhtiṣāṣ 342; Murtaḍā, Amālī 1:156; Mu’addib 488; Āmidī 236; Zamakhshari, Rabi’ 2:342; Muwaffaq Khwārazmī 377.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.391</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 89; Ṣadūq, Khiṣāl 637; Ibn Shahrāshūb 1:380.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.392</td>
<td>Āmidī 177.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.393</td>
<td>Āmidī 253.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.394</td>
<td>Kulañyn 8:307; Ṣadūq, Amālī 87; Ṣadūq, Khiṣāl 129; Ṣadūq, Man 4:396; Fattāl 442.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.396</td>
<td>Ibn Abī al-Dunyā, Qaḍā’ 23 (attrib. Prophet); Ṭabarānī, Mu’jam awṣāt</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## Appendix of Sources for the Texts of Nahj al-Balāghah

(continuation)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text no.</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>3.397</td>
<td>Mu'addib 141; Āmīdī 76; Ţabrīsī, Mishkāt 546 (attrib. Prophet); Muḥammad ibn Ṭāhir 321.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.398</td>
<td>Āmīdī 212; Ţabrīsī, Mishkāt 369.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.399</td>
<td>Fattāl 354.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.400</td>
<td>Māmāṭīrī 355; Fattāl 498; Muwaffaq bī'illāh 580; Warrām 2:232.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.401</td>
<td>Āmīdī 82.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.402</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 82; Āmīdī 150.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.403</td>
<td>Abū Nu'aym 110 (attrib. Jesus); Mu'addib 160.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.404</td>
<td>Āmīdī 48.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.405</td>
<td>Thaʿlab (Raḍī's stated source).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.406</td>
<td>Mu'addib 482; Āmīdī 230.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.407</td>
<td>Fattāl 466.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.408</td>
<td>Mu'addib 459; Fattāl 434; Zamakhsharī, Rabi'ī 2223.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.409</td>
<td>Maydānī 2:453; Ibn Ṭalḥah 279.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.410</td>
<td>Mu'addib 481.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.411</td>
<td>Ibn Ṭalḥah 279.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
| 3.412    | Thaqafi 1:15; Māmāṭīrī 268; Mu'addib 416; Āmīdī 262; Zamakhsharī, Rabi'ī 1182; Majd al-Din Ibn al-Athir s.v. "F-N-D"; Ibn Manṣūr s.v. "F-N-D."
<p>| 3.413    | Zamakhsharī, Rabi'ī 3:459. |
| 3.414    | Maydānī 2:454; Ibn Ṭalḥah 279. |
| 3.415    | Zamakhsharī, Rabi'ī 2:256; Zamakhsharī, Fā'īq 210; s.v. &quot;Dh'-Dh-'&quot;; Majd al-Din Ibn al-Athir s.v. &quot;Dh'-Dh-'.&quot; |
| 3.416    | Mu'addib 437; Maydānī 2:453; Ibn Ṭalḥah 279. |
| 3.417    | Ibn ʿAbd Rabbih 3121 (attrib. Ibn al-Ḥanafiyyah); Mu'addib 437; Maydānī 2:453; Ibn Ṭalḥah 279. |
| 3.418    | Mu'addib 480; Āmīdī 232; Zamakhsharī, Rabi'ī 5:11. |
| 3.419    | Āmīdī 135. |
| 3.420    | Mubarrad, Kāmil 2:11; Māmāṭīrī 408; Šadūq, ʿīlal 1:276; Ābī 1:299; Muwaffaq bī'illāh 577; Mu'addib 479; Fattāl, Rawdah 412; Maydānī 2:453; Ibn Ṭalḥah 279. |
| 3.421    | Āmīdī 23. |
| 3.422    | Zamakhsharī, Rabi'ī 5:224. |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text no.</th>
<th>References</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>3.426</td>
<td>Ḥarrānī 223.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.427</td>
<td>Ibn al-Mu‘tazz 21; Ibn ‘Abd Rabbih 2:143; Māmaṭīrī 380; Bāqillānī 68; Muwaffaq biʾllāh 576; Ṭarṭūshī 83, 87.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Bibliography

Primary Sources


ʿAlī ibn Abī Ṭālib (d. 40/661), attrib. Medieval compilations of orations, aphorisms, epistles, treatises, prayers, and poetry are listed under the compiler's name: Āmidī, Ḥarrānī, Ḥātim, Jāḥiẓ, Kaydarī, Nuʿmān, Raḍī, Qūṭāʾ, Sulaym, and Ẓābrīsī, as are modern compilations by Ḥaydar, Jindī, Kāshīf al-Ghiṭāʾ, Maḥmūdī, Mīr-Jahānī, Qūbānchī, and Shams al-Dīn.

ʿAlī ibn Abī Ṭālib (d. 40/661), attrib. Medieval compilations of orations, aphorisms, epistles, treatises, prayers, and poetry are listed under the compiler's name: Āmidī, Ḥarrānī, Ḥātim, Jāḥiẓ, Kaydarī, Nuʿmān, Raḍī, Qūṭāʾ, Sulaym, and Ẓābrīsī, as are modern compilations by Ḥaydar, Jindī, Kāshīf al-Ghiṭāʾ, Maḥmūdī, Mīr-Jahānī, Qūbānchī, and Shams al-Dīn.

ʿAlī ibn Abī Ṭālib (d. 40/661), attrib. Medieval compilations of orations, aphorisms, epistles, treatises, prayers, and poetry are listed under the compiler's name: Āmidī, Ḥarrānī, Ḥātim, Jāḥiẓ, Kaydarī, Nuʿmān, Raḍī, Qūṭāʾ, Sulaym, and Ẓābrīsī, as are modern compilations by Ḥaydar, Jindī, Kāshīf al-Ghiṭāʾ, Maḥmūdī, Mīr-Jahānī, Qūbānchī, and Shams al-Dīn.

ʿAlī ibn Abī Ṭālib (d. 40/661), attrib. Medieval compilations of orations, aphorisms, epistles, treatises, prayers, and poetry are listed under the compiler's name: Āmidī, Ḥarrānī, Ḥātim, Jāḥiẓ, Kaydarī, Nuʿmān, Raḍī, Qūṭāʾ, Sulaym, and Ẓābrīsī, as are modern compilations by Ḥaydar, Jindī, Kāshīf al-Ghiṭāʾ, Maḥmūdī, Mīr-Jahānī, Qūbānchī, and Shams al-Dīn.

ʿAlī ibn Abī Ṭālib (d. 40/661), attrib. Medieval compilations of orations, aphorisms, epistles, treatises, prayers, and poetry are listed under the compiler's name: Āmidī, Ḥarrānī, Ḥātim, Jāḥiẓ, Kaydarī, Nuʿmān, Raḍī, Qūṭāʾ, Sulaym, and Ẓābrīsī, as are modern compilations by Ḥaydar, Jindī, Kāshīf al-Ghiṭāʾ, Maḥmūdī, Mīr-Jahānī, Qūbānchī, and Shams al-Dīn.

ʿAlī ibn Abī Ṭālib (d. 40/661), attrib. Medieval compilations of orations, aphorisms, epistles, treatises, prayers, and poetry are listed under the compiler's name: Āmidī, Ḥarrānī, Ḥātim, Jāḥiẓ, Kaydarī, Nuʿmān, Raḍī, Qūṭāʾ, Sulaym, and Ẓābrīsī, as are modern compilations by Ḥaydar, Jindī, Kāshīf al-Ghiṭāʾ, Maḥmūdī, Mīr-Jahānī, Qūbānchī, and Shams al-Dīn.


Hārūnī, Abū Ṭālib Yaḥyā ibn al-Ḥusayn al-Zaydī (d. 424/1033), thematic edition by Jaʿfar


Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
via Open Access.
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0


---

1 For a fuller list of *Nahj al-balāghah* translations, see Esḥāqī, “Manbaʿ-shināsī,” *passim*. 


Secondary Sources


asıfuddin, Asma. “Abū Dharr al-Ghifārī.” *EI* 3


Halm, Heinz. “Golāt.” EIr.


Lecomte, G. “Al-Sakīfa.” *EI²*.

Madelung, Wilferd. “Shī’a.” *EI²*.


Morgan, David. “Mongols.” *EI²*.

Morony, M. “Al-Nahrawān.” *EI²*. 


Pellat, Charles. “Al-Khīrīt.” *EI*.


Stillman, N.A. “Yahūd.” *EI2*.


al-Ṭabāṭabā’ī, ‘Abd al-‘Azīz. “Ma tabaqqa min makhtūṭāt Nahj al-balāghah,” *Turāthunā* 7/8 (1407/1987), pp. 13–36. Online: https://arabic.balaghah.net/content/%D9%85%D8%A7-%D8%AA%D8%A8%D9%82%D9%89-%D9%85%D9%86-%D9%85%D8%AE%D8%B7%D9%88%D8%B7%D8%A7%D8%AA-%D9%86%D9%87%D8%AC-%D8%A7%D9%84%D8%A8%D9%84%D8%A7%D8%BA%D8%A9.

Accessed January 31, 2024.


Viré, F. “Ḍabuʿ.” *EI*.

Zetterstéen, K.V. “al-Nu’man ibn Bashir.” *Es*.

**Online Resources for *Nahj al-balāghah***

All accessed January 1, 2024.

Aviny.com (*Nahj al-balāghah*), website affiliated with the office of the late Sayyed Morteza Aviny, includes sections on “sources, contents, commentaries, and misconceptions” regarding *Nahj al-balāghah*, in English.

Balaghah.net (*Fī Riḥāb Nahj al-balāghah*), website supervised by the office of Ayatollah Sistani, begun 2004, aims to edit and publish all materials related to *Nahj al-balāghah*.

Haydarya.com (*al-Maktabah al-mukhtašah bi-l-Imām Amīr al-muʾminīn. Shurūḥ Nahj al-balāghah*), online access to all *Nahj al-balāghah* commentaries and other relevant works in Arabic.

Hadith.net (Shi’a Ḥadīth Web Site), text, translation, sources, *Encyclopedia of Imam Ali*.

Al-Islam.org (*Nahj al-balāghah*), text, translation, sources, studies.

Imamalinet.net (*Pāyigāh-i Imām ʿAlī*), text, translation, studies.

Nahjalbalaghah.org, text, translation, manuscripts, commentaries, studies (under construction).

Shiaonlinelibrary.com (*al-Maktabah al-Shi‘īyyah*), text, commentaries, studies.
Index of Names and Places

This Index lists names from the Detailed Contents and Translation (and from the footnotes in parentheses)

Aaron (Ar. Hārūn) 447
al-ʿAbbās ibn ʿAbd al-Muṭṭalib 56, 125
al-ʿAbbās ibn Mīrūd al-Sulāmī (631n2)
Abbasids  (99n1, 245n3, 521n5, 717n2, 805n2, 81n4)
ʿAbd al-ʿAzīz ibn Marwān  (197n4)
ʿAbd al-Malik ibn Marwān  (197n4, 257n2, 321n4)
ʿAbd al-Muṭṭalib ibn Ḥāshim 547, 571, 619
ʿAbd al-Rahmān ibn ʿAttāb ibn Asīd 78, 501
ʿAbd al-Rahmān ibn ʿAwf (121n2)
ʿAbd al-Rahmān ibn ʿĀʃāfīn (531n2)
ʿAbd Manāf ibn ʿUqbah 501, 547
ʿAbd Shams 711
ʿAbdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās 59, 82, 84–85, 88–89, 123, 153, 157, 527, 549, 553, 599, 665, 671, 675, 781, 825, (187n3, 605n1–2, 789n2)
ʿAbdallāh ibn ʿAwf al-Yashkūrī See Ibn al-Kawwār
ʿAbdallāh ibn al-Ḥāḍramī (179n1)
ʿAbdallāh ibn Jaʿfar (71n2, 733n3)
ʿAbdallāh ibn ʿĀmmār ibn Dajnah 523
ʿAbdallāh ibn Masʿūd  (153n3)
ʿAbdallāh ibn Qays (307n2)
ʿAbdallāh ibn ʿUmar 763, (39n1, 68n3)
ʿAbdallāh ibn Zamaḥā 79, 521
ʿAbdallāh ibn al-Zubayr (127n2)
ʿAbdu, Muhammad (Abbr. "A", passim)
Abel (Ar. Ḥābīl) See Cain and Abel
Abraham (Ar. ʿIrāhīm) 567, 703
Abū al-ʿĀwar al-Sulāmī (545n1)
Abū Ayyūb al-Anṣārī 413
Abū Bakr 80, 537, (149n1, 125n2, 145n3, 189n2, 191n2, 349n2, 367n1, 371n3, 471n, 563n4, 569n1, 613n1, 655n3, 683n3, 733n1)
Abū Dharr al-Ghifārī 311, (317n2, 487n1, 769n4)
Abū Dhūʿayb al-Hudhali (569n2)
Abū Fīrās Hammām ibn Ghālib See Farazdaq
Abū Hurayrah al-Dawṣī al-Yamānī (649n2)
Abū Jahl ʿAmr ibn Hishām (459n3, 567n2)
Abū Juḥayyah Wahb ibn ʿAbdallāh al-Suwāʿī (797
Abū Jundub al-Hudhali (145n1)
Abū Lahab (215n1, 567n5)
Abū Mūsā al-ʿAshrāf 88–89, 525, 659, 675, 159n2, 401n3, 483n1, 681n3
Abū Muslim al-Khawlānī (539n2)
Abū Sufyān 56, 125, 369, 547, 605, 61n, (215n1, 459n3, 567n2–3, 603n3, 609n2, 657n1, 659n4, 661n2)
Abū ʿṬālib 125, 149, 159, 231, 299, 389, 547, 613
Abū Thawr (653n2)
Abū ʿUbayd al-Harāwi 755
Abū ʿUmar al-Bahlī (563n2)
Adam (Ar. ʿĀdām) 56, 75, 107, 111, 239, 241, 441, 447, 451
son(s) of 399, 685, 733, 749, 763, 807, 815
ʿAffī ibn Qays (202n2)
Aḥmad ibn Qutaybah al-Hamdānī 523
al-Aḥnaf ibn Qays 69, 307, (68n3)
Ahwaz 551
ʿĀʾishah bint ʿAbī Bakr 64, 72, 80, 531, (129n4, 139n2, 157n2, 203n1, 335n1, 345n3, 347n5, 353n2, 389n3, 483n3, 535n2, 595n1, 619n3, 661, 707n2, 715n4)
ʿAlī ibn ʿAbī Ṭālib passim
ʿAli ibn ʿAbī Ṭālib passim
ʿAli ibn al-Ḥusayn al-Sajjād Zayn al-ʿĀbidīn (101n1, 767n2)
ʿAli ibn Muhammad al-Zanjī (307n4)
Allies (Ar. ʿAnṣār) 189, 531, 569, 819. See also Emigrants and Allies
Amalekites (Ar. ʿumālīq) 411
ʿAmr b. ʿAbī Yūsīn 413, 803, (265n1, 317n2, 531n1, 652n2)
ʿAmr ibn ʿAbd Wadd (179n3, 459n3)
ʿAmr ibn ʿAbī Sufyān (661n2)
ʿAmr ibn al-ʿĀṣ 59, 64, 74, 84, 86, 147, 215, 525, 603, 783, (145n2, 159n2, 165n1, 165n3, 191n1, 401n3, 405n1, 405n4, 405n4,
INDEX OF NAMES AND PLACES 945

(‘Amr ibn al-‘Āṣ (cont.) 47m, 483m, 499n2, 565m7, 599m, 62m1, 649m12, 657m, 675m3)

‘Amr ibn al-Hamīq al-Khužā‘ī (48yn)

‘Amr ibn Salamah al-Hamdānī al-‘Arḥābī 82, (533n2, 549m3)

Anas ibn Mālik 777, (68yn3)

Anbar 59, 147, 689, 761

Antichrist. See Dajjāl

‘Aqīl ibn Abī Tālīb 79, 84, 513, 599

Arabs 59, 66, 125, 145, 157, 261, 267, 301, 323, 331, 341, 385, 457, 467, 531, 547, 615, 655, 755

Ardashīr-khurrāh 85, 669, (169m3, 407m1, 605m1)

‘Aṛj 525

Asad 72, 367, (50m2, 567m3)

al-‘Aṣbagh ibn Nubātah (153n2, 325m1, 715n4)

Ashā Maymūn 757, (119n2)

al-‘Aṣḥāth ibn Qays 58, 79–80, 91, 137, 535, 771, 835, (201n2, 513m3–4, 699m3, 703m4)

Ashtar. See Mālik ibn al-Ḥārith al-Ashtar

‘Āṣim ibn Ziyād al-Ḥārithi 77, 487

al-Aswād ibn Qūbah 87, 653

‘Ayn al-Tamr 60, 63, (165m1, 190m3)

Azerbaijan 80, 535

Badr, Battle of Badr 539, 541, 571, (179m2, 459m3, 567m2, 567n4, 661n2, 664n4)

Baghdad (309m1, 665m4)

Bahrain 85, 607, (375m1, 485m3, 563m3)

Bahārīn, Maytham (abbr. “B,” passim)

Basra 57, 60, 69, 72, 78, 80, 82–83, 85, 87, 89, 129, 157, 195, 259, 307, 319, 335: 353, 385, 389, 485, 501, 521, 531, 533: 549, 551, 571, 611, 651, 675, 777, (127n4, 139n2, 139n4, 153n1, 179m1, 203m1, 253m4, 255n4, 257n3, 261n3, 265n1, 279m1, 293n3, 321m, 331n2, 345n3, 355n3, 387n3, 393n1, 439n4, 48m1, 487n1, 517n4, 533m2, 599n1, 605m1, 647m2, 661n, 685m2, 707n2, 715m2, 715n4, 731n2, 753n2, 781m1, 795n4)

Basran 5, 64, 73, 385, (57m6)

Baṭḥā. See Mecca

Bishr ibn Abī Khāzim al-Asadi (661n3)

Bishr ibn Marwān (197n4)

(The) Book (Ar. al-Kitāb) 113, 135, 199, 217, 221, 229, 299, 303, 315, 321, 333, 335, 385, 405, 475, 577, 673, 719. See also Qur’an, Wise Remembrance

Boys-of-Hellfire 567

Burak ibn ‘Abdallāh al-Tamīmī (165m3)

Būr ibn Mus’hīr al-Ṭā’ī 74, 449

Busr ibn Abī Ṭātāt 143

Byzantium (Ar. Rūm) 453

Caesar (Ar. Qaysar) 535

Cain (Ar. Qābīl) and Abel (443n2)

Camel (Ar. Jamal), Battle of the Camel 56–63, 63–64, 68, 70–73, 78–80, 82, 87–89, 129, 153, 195, 203, 385, 501, 521, 573, 659, 761, (123n2, 125n4, 127m1–2, 13unm, 159n2, 159n4, 157n2, 167n2, 169n1, 243m3, 253m4, 255n4, 257n3, 265n1, 279m1, 293n3, 299n2, 307n3, 319n3, 321m, 331m2, 335m4, 345m3, 353m2–3, 357m1, 375n4, 387m1, 389m1, 391m1, 457m3, 457n3, 481m1, 488n3, 485n3, 487n1, 515n2, 517n4, 533m1–2, 535m2–3, 537m1, 539n1, 549m1, 559m1, 611m, 619n3, 647n2, 651n2, 663m1, 669m1, 673n2, 675m1, 684n4, 685m2, 715n2, 715n4, 727m1, 731n2–3, 753n2, 763m1, 777m1, 795n4)

Chiefs-of-the-Youth-of-Paradise 567. See also al-Ḥasan ibn ‘All; al-Husayn ibn ‘All

Chosroes (Ar. Kūsra) 535

Confederates (Ar. Ahzāb), Battle of the Confederates 459

al-Dahhāk ibn Qays al-Fihrī 59, 84, 599, (151n2)

Dajjāl, the Antichrist (257n2)

Damascus (169m1, 369m1, 537m1, 537n3, 539m1, 603m1, 623n3, 669m1, 649m1, 659m3, 661m1, 669m1, 671n2, 781m1)

Dārī 375–379

David (Ar. Dā‘ūd) 72, 90, 363, 411, 707

Dhakwān (311n)

Dhī‘lib al-Yamānī 74, 403, (43n3, 523n3)

Dhū al-Rummah 291

Dhū al-Shahādatayn. See Khuzaymah ibn al-Thābit

Dhū al-Thudayyah (457n2, 73m2)
INDEX OF NAMES AND PLACES

Dhū Qār 59, 79, 87, 157, 521, (1259n4, 1279n4, 319n3, 339n3, 387n1, 517n4, 659n2, 659n1)

Dīrār ibn Damrah al-Ḍibābī 90, 697

Dūmat al-Jandal (1299n2, 679n3)

Durayd ibn al-Šīmāh (1619n3)

Egypt 62, 83–87, 191, 559, 561, 597, 599, 603, 625, 655, (1459n2, 1659n1, 169n1, 1979n4, 405n1, 499n2, 571n6, 617n1, 659n1, 783n1, 819n5)

Emigrants (Ar. Muhājirūn) 531, 547, 549, 565, 569, 649

and Allies 455, 525, 537, 571, 661. See also Allies

Euphrates (Ar. Furāt) 173, 175, 757, (1659n1, 659n1)

Fadak 85, 613, (1259n2)

Family of the Prophet See Muḥammad, Family of

Farazdaq 101, 815

Fars 531, 825 (605n1, 609nn1–2, 669n2). See also Persia

Fāṭimah al-Zahra 76, 479, 555, (1259n2, 354n2, 567n4–5, 613n1, 779n3)

Firās ibn Ghanam 145

Followers-in-Virtue (Ar. al-tābiʿūna bi-iḥsān)

88–89, 113, 247, 411, 571

Freedmen (Ar. tulaqāʾ) 547, 563, 565, (311n2, 559n2, 727n1, 809n3)

Fustāt (659n3)

Gabriel (Ar. Jibrīl) 409, 455

Ghadir Khumm (992n2, 669n3)

Ghālib ibn Ṣaʿṣaʿah 815

Ghāmidī

God, Lord passim

assigning partners/peers to 82, 219, 285, 315, 337, 347, 401, 553

(no) attributes of 105, 107, 109, 229, 371, 427, 445, 467, 489, 581


bounty of 75, 185, 187, 205, 227, 267, 279, 291, 355, 403, 407, 417, 421, 423, 431, 453, 469, 495, 561, 563, 621

decree of 109, 113, 163, 187, 273, 409, 445, 495, 517
direction of 105, 185, 217, 231, 333, 395, 469, 579, 739

Emissary of 195, 267, 411


grace of 64, 66, 82, 205, 255, 289, 327, 429, 497, 549, 631, 749, 789, 797, 825

kingdom of 229, 233, 273, 351, 435, 447, 581, 627


messeger(s) of See messengers (in Index of Terms)


https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0

proof of 74, 91, 113, 139, 203, 217, 229, 239, 269, 327, 365, 395, 397, 407, 415, 433, 601, 723

prophets of See prophets (in Index of terms)


return to 147, 151, 155, 167, 213, 231, 273, 287, 301, 311, 343, 407, 413, 415, 429, 471, 479, 517, 579, 595, 607, 615, 647, 677, 696, 733, 735, 739, 741, 801

servants of passim

signs of 113, 173, 229, 231, 233, 265, 269, 327, 355, 403, 409, 415, 493, 743

threat of 697

throne of 109, 115, 235, 361, 409, 415

unity of See God, oneness of

Hādirīn 573, (747n2)
Hajar 563
al-Hajjaj ibn Yusuf al-Thaqafi 293, (179n5, 795n3)
Ḥakim ibn Jabalah al-ʿAbdī (335n4)
Ḥamal ibn Badr 571
Ḥamal ibn Saʿd al-ʿAshīrah (571n3)
Ḥammām 75, 461, 465, (715n1, 783n4)
Ḥamzah ibn ʿAbd al-Muṭṭalib 539, (179n2, 565n4, 567n3)
Ḥanẓalah ibn Abī Sufyān (541n3, 571n4, 661n4)
Ḥarb ibn Shurahbil al-Shibāmī 781
Ḥarb ibn Umayyah ibn ʿAbd Shams 547
al-Hārith (al-Aʿwar) al-Hamdānī 88, 667, (709n1, 777n3)
al-Hārith ibn Hawt al-Laythī 761, 763
(The) Harlot (Ar. al-Nābighah) 215, (405n4)
Ḥarūriyyah (sing. Ḥarūrī), Ḥarūrāʾ 703
al-Ḥasan ibn ʿAlī 77, 83, 86, 90, 121, 195, 485, 555, 573, 607, 617, 689, 743, 805, (125n2, 153n1, 193n1, 38un3, 53un1, 567n4, 609n2, 651n2, 659n1, 679n1, 699n5, 747n2, 769n4, 775n13, 80un1)
Hāshim ibn ʿAbd Manāf 547
Banū 90, 329, 571, (531n2, 565n4, 567n1, 567n6)
Hāshim ibn ʿUtbah ibn ʿAbd Shams 547
Ḥātim al-Ṭāʾī (613n2)
Ḥawāzin 161, 759
He-of-the-Two-Wings 565, See also Jaʿfar ibn Abī Talib
He-who-Soars-in-Paradise 565, See also Jaʿfar ibn Abī Talib
Hijāz 613, (607n1)
Himyar 535
Hiraʾ 457
Hishām ibn ʿAbd al-Malik (197n4)
Hishām ibn Muḥammad ibn al-Sāʿīb al-Kalbī 673
Hit 87, 655
House of God See Kaʿbah
Hudaybiyyah (471n1)
Hujr ibn ʿAdī 84, (483n1, 599n3)
Hulwān 87, 653
 Hunayn, Battle of Ḥunayn 759, (16un3)
Hurayth 81, 88
al-Ḥusayn (or al-Ḥudayn) ibn al-Mundhir al-Raqāshī (699n4)
al-Ḥusayn ibn ʿAlī 86, 121, 195, 413, 485, 555, 607, 617, (153n2, 567n4, 729n3)
Iblīs (Eng. Lucifer) 75, 82, 111, 439, 441, 443, 445, 449, 451, 549, 669
Ibn Abī al-Ḥadīd (Abbr. “Ḥ”, passim)
Ibn Abī Rāfiʿ See ʿUbaydallāh ibn Abī Rāfiʿ
Ibn al-ʿAbbās See ʿAbdallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās
Ibn al-ʿArābī 811
Ibn al-Ḥaḍramī See ʿAbdallāh ibn al-Ḥaḍramī
Ibn al-Ḥanafiyyah See Muḥammad ibn ʿAlī ibn Abī Talib
Ibn al-Kawwāʾ (265n1, 779n4)
Ibn al-Sikkīt 123
INDEX OF NAMES AND PLACES

Ibn al-Tayyihān Abū al-Haytham al-Anṣārī 413
Ibn al-Zubayr  See 'Abdallāh ibn al-Zubayr
Ibn Funduq al-Bayhaqi (Abbr. "F", passim)
Ibn Ḥunayf  See 'Uthmān ibn Ḥunayf al-Anṣārī
Ibn Masʿūd  See 'Abdallāh ibn Masʿūd
Ibn Muljam (or Ibn Muljim) al-Murādī 62, 413, 553, 617, (165n3, 183n4, 735n5)
Ibn Nubātah al-Saʿdī al-Khaṭīb (433n6)
Ibn ʿUmar  See 'Abdallāh ibn ʿUmar
ʿIkrimah ibn Abī Jahl (459n3)
ʿImrān ibn al-Ḥuṣayn al-Khuzāʿī 647
Imruʾ al-Qays 815, (369n1)
Iraq 70, 80, 84, 153, 165, 545, 547, (125n4, 161n4, 165n1, 183n1, 197n4, 215n1, 259n1, 293n1, 307n4, 385n2, 534n9, 630n2, 617n1, 651n3, 653n2, 655n1, 669n1, 689n1, 773n2, 795n3)
Isaac (Ar. Isḥāq) 453
Ishmael (Ar. Ismāʿīl) 453
Iṣṭakhr 88, (669n2)
Jābir ibn ʿAbdallāh al-Anṣārī 92, 119, (795n1)
Jaʿdah ibn Hubayrah al-Makhzūmī 83, (571n6)
Jaʿfar al-Ṣādiq 227, (131n3, 719n2)
Jaʿfar ibn Abī Ṭālib 539, (565n5)
Jāḥiẓ 157
Jarīr (Umayyad poet) 101
Jarīr ibn ʿAbdallāh al-Bajalī 60, 80–81, 169, 539, (537n1, 537n3, 541n1, 795n1)
Jāriyah ibn Qudāmah al-Saʿdī 83, (571n6)
al-Jārūd al-ʿAbdī 669
Jesus (Ar. ʿĪsā) 72, 90, 363, (201n1, 811n3)
Jibrīl  See Gabriel
Jumayḥ 501
Jumayḥ ibn al-Sharīd al-Taghlibī (365n1)
Kalb 309
Khabbāb ibn al-Aratt 691, (715n2)
Khadijah bint Khuwaylid 459
Khālid ibn al-Walid 137
Kharijites 60, 62, 64, 68–69, 74, 81, 89, 165, 181, 183, 201, 299, 303, 305, 407, 419,
675, 703, 735, 781, 809, (137n1, 159n1, 161n4, 165n1, 297n1, 307n1, 433n6, 457n2–2, 71n13, 731n2, 779n4, 807n1)
Khaybar, Battle of Khaybar  (613n1)
al-Khirrit ibn Rashīd al-Nāji (407n1)
Khurasan (485n3)
Khushnūshak (689n1)
al-Khūtbah/Khuṭbat
al-ʿAshbāḥ (Ethereal Forms) 65, 227
al-Gharrāʾ (The Radiant Oration) 64, 205, 213 (187n1, 419n3)
al-Qāṣiʿah (The Crushing Oration) 75, 439 (57n6)
al-Shiqshiqiyah (The Camel-Stallion's Roar) 56, 119 (396n1, 517n4)
al-Wasīlah (The Intercessor) (329n4, 695n1, 707n3, 711n1, 733n2, 785n1, 793n5)
Khuzaymah ibn Thābit al-Anṣārī (413n1)
King of Martyrs 565. See also Ḥamzah ibn 'Abd al-Muṭṭalib
Kirman (or Kerman) 551
Kitāb
al-Bayān wa-l-tabyīn (by Jāḥiẓ) 157 (131n3, 76n4)
Gharib al-ḥadīth (by Abū 'Ubayd) (755n1)
Iṣlāḥ al-manṭiq (by Ibn Sikkīt) 123
al-Jamal (by Wāqidī) 673
al-Khaṣāʾiṣ (by Raḍī) 139 (99n1–2)
al-Maghāzī (by Saʿīd ibn Yaḥyā al-Umawī) 675
Majāzāt al-āthār al-nabawiyyah (by Raḍī) 821
al-Maqāmāt (by Abū Jaʿfar al-Iskāfī) 647
al-Muqṭaḍab (by Mubarrad) 821
Kufa, Kufan 58, 61, 63, 74, 80–81, 87–88, 91, 137, 143, 171, 227, 251, 257, 323, 407, 533, 653, 659, 709, 715, 781 (and passim in footnotes)
Kulayb al-Jarmī 387
Kumayl ibn Ziyād al-Nakhaʿī 87, 91, 655, 721, 749
Laylā bint Masʿūd (367n3)
Lion-of-God 7, 567. See also Ḥamzah ibn 'Abd al-Muṭṭalib
Night of Clamor (Ar. laylat al-harīr) (187n3, 697n1)

Nukhaylah 81, 86, 761, (159n1, 173n1, 249n1, 543n3, 621nn–3, 651n, 653n3)
al-Nu‘mān ibn ‘Ajlān al-Zuraqī 607
al-Nu‘mān ibn Bashir al-Anṣārī (165n1, 191n3)

Palestine (317n1)
Persia, Persian(s) 71, 331, 453. See also Fars
Pharaoh (Ar. Firʿawn) 339, 411, 447, 453–535
Psalms (Ar. Zabār) 363

Qādisiyyah (33nn1)
Qarqīsiyā (Latin: Circesium) 655
Qādisiyyah (331n)


reader, reciter 523, 743

Quraysh 78, 84, 90, 149, 157, 189, 245, 329, 389, 459, 499, 531, 539, 631, 711
Qutham ibn Sa‘d al-Lakhmī 161
Qatīf (329n)
Qays ibn Sa‘d 413


reader, reciter 523, 743

Quraysh 78, 84, 90, 149, 157, 189, 245, 329, 389, 459, 499, 531, 539, 631, 711
Qutham ibn al-‘Abbās 84, 88, 597, 665

Rabbadah 69, 311, (125n4, 157n2, 317n2, 53nn1)
al-Rabī‘ ibn Ziyād al-Ḥārithī (485n3)
Rabī‘ah 89, 457, 673


Ramaḍān 279
Ramhormoz 81
Raqqah (543n4)
Rass 411
Rāwandi (Abbr. “R” passim)

Sabā (Sheba) 249, (38nn4)
Sacred House 75, 447, 449. See also Ka‘bah
Sa‘d ibn Abī Waqqāṣ (121n1, 319n1, 681n3, 763n2)
Ṣaḥīḥah bint ‘Abd al-Muṭṭalib (53nn4)
Ṣafwān ibn Umayyah al-Jumāḥī (459n3)
Sahl ibn Ḥunayf al-Anṣārī 88, 669, 709, (611n)
Sa‘d ibn al-‘Āṣ 63, (199n2)
Sa‘d ibn Nīmār al-Hamḍānī 143
Sa‘d ibn Yahyā al-Umawī 675
Sa‘d ibn Zayd (681n3)
Salmān ibn Ṭayy (691n1)
Ṣaḥīḥ (Arabian prophet) (407n2)
Ṣaḥīḥ ibn Sulaym (691n1)
Salmān al-Fārisī 88, 665, (487n1, 711n4, 773n2)
Saqqāfah (Portico) 62, 189, (569n1)
Ṣa‘ṣa‘ah ibn Śuḥān al-‘Abdī (669n2, 699n1, 753n2)
Shaybah ibn Rabī‘ah ibn ‘Abd Shams (179n2, 459n3)
Shibām (or Shabām) 781
Shūrā (Electoral) Council 63, 70, 80–81, 87, 197, 323, 537, 693, 711, 733, 739, (199n1, 367n1, 369n1, 389n1, 499n2, 683n3)
Shurayḥ ibn al-Ḥārith 80, 533
Shurayḥ ibn Hānī al-Ḥārithī 81, 87, 651, (543n3, 545n1)
Ṣifīn, Battle of Ṣifīn 61, 73, 81–84, 87–88, 187, 267, 485, (127n1, 159n2, 163n4, 165n3, 215n2, 243n1, 297n1, 299n1, 301nn–2, 369n1, 387n2, 413n1, 483n1, 539nn–2, 543n2, 547n4, 551n2, 563n2, 573n1, 595n2, 607n5, 619n2, 649n1, 659n3, 669n1, 675n2, 697n1)
Solomon (Ar. Sulaymān) 411
Sufyān ibn ‘Awf al-Ghāmīdī 59, 87, (147n2, 655n1, 76nn1)
Sufyānī (321n4)
Suhayl ibn ‘Amr ibn ‘Abd Shams 459
Sulaym ibn Qays al-Hilālī al-‘Amīrī (203n1, 487n1)
Sulaymān ibn ‘Abd al-Malik (197n4)
Sumayyah (or Asmā‘) bint al-A‘war 609
Syria (Ar. Shām), Syrians 60–61, 64, 68, 77, 81–82, 84–87, 89–90, 159, 169, 171, 173, 179, 191, 215, 251, 257, 267, 299, 303, 323, 483, 525, 543, 547, 609, 649, 651,
Syria (Ar. Shām), Syrians (cont.) 689, 697, (165n, 177n2, 177n4, 249n2, 291n1, 295n1, 457n1, 47vn1, 491n2, 545n1, 573n2, 597, 621n, 655n1, 709n1, 763n1, 783n1)

Ṭalḥah ibn ʿAbī Ṭalḥah al-ʿAbdārī (179n3)

Ṭalḥah ibn ʿUbaydallāh 57, 59, 70–71, 73, 77–78, 80, 87, 123n2, 125, 153, 319, 321, 393, 481, 501, 531, 647, 659, 737, 777, (127n3, 139n2, 157n2, 177n2, 335n1, 335n4, 345n3, 387n1, 389n3, 391n1, 431n1, 533n2, 699n3, 707n2, 715n4, 731n1, 781n1)

Tamīm 82, 549, (101n1, 439n4)

Ṭaybah 365. See also Medina

Ṭaym (501n2)

Thaʿlab 81n1

Thaʿlabiyah 59, (151n2)

Thamūd 74, 76, 427, 479

Thaqif 293

Tigris (Ar. Dīlah) 173, (161n4, 183n1)

Ṭubbaʿ 535

Turks 309

ʿUbaydah ibn al-Hārith ibn ʿAbd al-Muṭṭalib 539

ʿUbaydallāh ibn al-ʿAbbās ibn ʿAbd al-Muṭṭalib 143. (551n3)

ʿUbaydallāh ibn Abī Rāfīʿ 779

Ubud, Battle of Ubud 355, 539. (317n2, 565n4)

ʿUkāz 61, 171

ʿUmar ibn Abī Salamah al-Makhzūmī 85, 607

ʿUmar ibn al-Khaṭṭāb 69, 71, 80, 331, 61n, 765, (199n1, 197n2, 197n5, 245n1, 317, 399n2, 367n1, 371n3, 471n1, 485n3, 517n3, 537, 563n4, 603n3, 683n3)

Umayyads 62–63, 65–66, 72–73, 87, 191, 197, 199, 223, 245, 263, 359, 381, 819, (199n1, 181n1, 449n2, 253n1n2–2, 307n1, 311n2, 373n1, 524n5, 567n3, 567n6, 795n3)

Umayyah ibn ʿAbd Shams 547. (459n3)

Umm Hāni bint Abī Ṭalib (311n2)

Umm Jamil bint Ḥarb (567n5)

Usāmah ibn Zayd (319n1, 681n3)
Index of Terms

This Index lists terms from the Detailed Contents and Translation (not footnotes).

abrogation, abrogated act 113, 489
act(s), action(s) passim
adder 145
adornments 197, 283, 347, 363, 825
adultery 271. See also fornication
advice 81, 247, 249, 265, 317, 331, 351, 483, 537, 581, 591, 595, 699, 717, 739. See also counsel
affection 88, 141, 271, 285, 455, 493, 629, 659, 675, 721, 739, 741, 747, 775
afterlife 195, 275, 283, 285, 713. See also hereafter
Age of Ignorance (Ar. Jāhiliyyah) 245, 261, 381, 385, 443, 445, 455, 543, 545
alms, almsgiving, alms levy (Ar. sadaqāt) 76, 277, 279, 449, 451, 477, 533, 559, 679, 799, 721, 747, 751, 765
ambition 251, 443, 497, 587, 707
ancestors 101, 253, 267, 415, 443, 445
angel(s) 56, 65, 67, 109, 111, 115, 177, 233, 235, 237, 273, 277, 283, 387, 397, 409, 415, 417, 441, 457, 471, 481, 509, 527, 717, 735, 807
of death 67, 283
anger 69, 159, 227, 267, 285, 297, 311, 367, 393, 417, 443, 451, 469, 499, 533, 603, 647, 667, 669, 675, 687, 729. See also rage
animals 61, 73, 83, 177, 199, 289, 421, 447, 557, 565, 607, 613. See also bat, beast, bull, camel, carnivore, cattle, dog, goat, horse, hyena, lamb, pig, ram, sacrificial animal, sheep, wolf
anklets 147
annihilation 175, 207, 411, 419, 427, 429, 575, 585, 717
ants 75, 241, 379, 423, 409, 421, 515
apostasy 355
arbitrators 74, 307, 401, 525, 675
archer 131, 325, 785. See also hunter
arguments 78, 203, 205, 389, 419, 451, 509, 511, 569, 601, 627, 771. See also proofs
armies 61, 64, 77, 81–82, 84, 87, 155, 175, 244, 259, 281, 295, 303, 307, 309, 331, 389, 391, 407, 411, 433, 437, 443, 445, 477, 535, 541, 543, 545, 559, 571, 599, 627, 639, 651, 655, 765. See also battalions, cavalry, forces
arrogance 117, 211, 247, 317, 347, 439, 441, 443, 447, 459, 461, 465. See also pride
artisan 421, 425, 437, 631, 639
assayer 157
atone 209, 683, 703. See also expiation
autumn 381, 753
baker 735
balance 337
banner(s) 117, 191, 221, 235, 257, 269, 323, 329, 355, 373, 419, 467, 509
barley 363, 593
Barzakh 507
bat(s) 351
battalions 157, 245, 261, 295, 303, 543, 669
battle 56–57, 60, 66, 73, 103, 107, 139, 147, 151, 159, 169, 177, 179, 183, 215, 225, 243, 251, 267, 299, 321, 347, 393, 455, 473, 521, 533, 539, 543, 545, 547, 573, 599, 609, 639, 649, 661, 681, 687, 759, 769, 825. See also fighting, war
beacon 99, 219, 221, 233, 239, 245, 265, 329, 343, 419, 461, 469, 473, 475, 587
beads 331
beard 413, 697
beauty, beauties 133, 205, 239, 253, 259, 505, 541, 585
Bedouins (Ar. aʿrāb) 267, 331, 343, 383, 455, 489, 609, 753
beetle 293
beggars 449, 559, 607, 639, 775
belief 75, 91, 107, 115, 179, 201, 209, 233, 269, 277, 311, 339, 343, 399, 405, 421, 433.
belief (cont.) 455, 461, 463, 467, 475, 563, 567, 651, 659, 703, 713, 747, 817. See also faith, unbelief
benedictions 227
betrayal 167, 739
bigots 441. See also zeal, zealotry
birds 72, 119, 129, 207, 241, 271, 375, 423, 427, 447, 459, 813. See also cockerel, crow, dove, eagle, ostrich, peacock, pigeon
blade 85, 139, 155, 187, 301, 269, 603, 609, 647, 809. See also sword
blood 86, 103, 135, 139, 145, 147, 175, 177, 179, 241, 319, 343, 393, 399, 411, 417, 439, 483, 503, 549, 537, 541, 543, 553, 609, 619, 645, 651, 663, 675
-clot 211
blossoms 90, 239, 685, 711. See also flowers
boatman 375, 379
bondage, bondsman 339, 417, 495, 499, 525, 555, 729. See also slave
booby 305, 609, 733. See also war gains
bracelets 147, 447
brain 815
bread 363, 611, 613, 615
brick 253, 359, 745
bridle, bridle-strap 207, 257, 259, 343, 527
brigands 183
brother(s), brethren 68, 73, 73, 91, 165, 179, 209, 213, 225, 249, 251, 271, 283, 285, 293, 297, 299, 301, 303, 323, 325, 383, 411, 413, 441, 483, 559, 569, 571, 589, 591, 621, 625, 629, 661, 719, 727, 755, 761, 769, 791, 825
build, builder 287, 365, 411, 423, 575, 629, 717, 735, 785
bull 59, 153
burn, burning 159, 209, 235, 249, 267, 329, 417, 475, 509, 519, 613, 623, 651, 653, 661, 715, 759
butcher 199
caiph 57–58, 61, 63, 79, 81, 83, 197, 481, 517, 531, 557, 569, 673
buck 89, 679
calf 199, 457
erd of 121, 815
herders 159, 177, 453
mare 76, 123, 175, 321, 323, 469, 479, 739
stallion 56, 119, 123, 237, 271, 407, 659
cameleer 805
camp 81, 155, 221, 303, 395, 413, 543, 667, 675, 805
caprice, capricious opinions 58, 121, 133, 135, 223, 263, 321, 341, 635, 675
caravan 137, 313, 357, 405, 513
carcass 245, 273, 341, 615
carnivore 271
cattle 115, 239, 269, 327, 347, 383, 387, 427, 593, 615, 723
cauldon 131, 353, 435, 533, 547
cavalry 57, 127, 147, 155, 303, 441, 443, 609
cemetery 715, 721
certainty 111, 117, 163, 207, 219, 235, 239, 285, 343, 357, 493, 497, 463, 467, 517, 547, 559, 575, 587, 657, 703, 713, 723, 725, 767, 795. See also conviction
chameleon 467
chamomile 377
charity, charitable 88, 279, 469, 513, 551, 643, 705, 721, 743, 795
chastise ment 65, 68–69, 73, 75, 88, 217, 259, 455
chastity, chaste 247, 271, 463, 465, 693
chickpeas 611
Christian 86, 147, 623
clay 80, 99, 111, 371, 441, 451, 523
clemency 359, 437, 807, 817
companion(s), companionship 76, 80, 103, 111, 141, 171, 193, 259, 291, 333, 335, 337, 349, 367, 415, 417, 445, 461, 471, 531, 553, 573, 679, 709, 715, 733
Companions of the Prophet 61, 65, 79, 251, 383, 389, 487, 489, 539, 563
compassion 70, 83, 86, 141, 323, 327, 405, 487, 509, 511, 549, 617, 625, 627, 631, 637, 641, 701
complain, complaint 68, 82, 135, 263, 327, 371, 487, 547, 549, 635, 643, 655, 743, 761, 771, 809
conceit 219, 449, 461, 583, 675, 689, 713, 815
See also vanity
consequence(s) 109, 463, 589, 629, 635, 645, 697, 811
consultation 537, 693, 711, 733, 739
contemplation 103, 711
contentment 92, 155, 447, 535, 693, 743, 787, 793, 825
conviction 90, 117, 127, 233, 287, 319, 593, 685. See also certainty
cooking pot 271
coral 227
corpse 60, 78, 161, 275, 337, 501, 503, 713, 781, 815
 corrupt, corruption 59, 69, 121, 143, 155, 253, 397, 311, 313, 333, 401, 461, 471, 491, 497, 603, 635, 687, 711, 749, 781

courage 61, 179, 189, 211, 299, 301, 303, 305, 471, 501, 631, 679
course 68, 207, 251, 295, 297, 299, 357, 369, 385, 387, 393, 409, 435, 443, 499, 475, 511, 517, 633, 637, 643, 653, 717. See also path, way
covenant (Ar. ‘ahd) 111, 455, 539, 631, 643, 645, 663, 727. See also testament
coward, cowardice 57, 127, 157, 159, 261, 407, 629, 659, 679, 745
cowrie shell 271. See also seashells
| Craft, crafting, craftsman, craftsmanship | 77, 133, 343, 354, 375, 425, 427, 429, 489 |
| Crimes, criminal, criminal penalties | 78, 211, 265, 323, 347, 369, 389, 441, 443, 599, 571, 585, 607, 629, 657, 747, 749, 765 |
| Crop | 397, 423, 523 |
| Crow | 377, 423 |
| Cunning | 167, 299, 465, 479, 637, 711 |
| Cure | 105, 139, 153, 251, 279, 297, 329, 353, 355, 359, 397, 407, 427, 463, 473, 475, 493, 509, 511, 589, 717. See also heal |
| Curse | 69, 77, 137, 181, 311, 317, 341, 413, 483, 809 |
| Custodian | 195, 331, 389, 501, 557, 703, 783 |
| Custom | 129, 181, 689 |
| Damn, damnation | 455, 597, 599, 571, 711, 821 |
| Darkness. See light and darkness |
| Date(s) | 355, 593 |
| Palms | 181, 555 |
| Daughter | 76, 479 |
| Death, the dead passim |
| Debt pools of | 767 |
| Debt | 141, 275, 757 |
| Debtor | 151, 309, 345, 559, 573 |
| Decay, deception | 79, 84, 111, 193, 205, 219, 225, 279, 283, 293, 299, 479, 483, 515, 541, 559, 573, 581, 603, 645, 663, 751, 785 |
| Deed(s) passim. See also act bad, evil, hateful, mis-, vile, wicked | 275, 339, 357, 417, 431, 445, 495, 511, 667, 767 |
| Good and bad | 451, 567, 585, 687 |
| Deliverance | 213, 367, 787 |
| Demons | 157, 233 |
| Dens | 67, 181, 359, 535, 609 |
| Destined | 165, 353, 435, 619, 791. See also fates, ordained |
| Destitution, destitute | 239, 243, 289, 313, 429, 447, 453, 513, 559, 637, 639, 665, 713. See also indigence, poverty |
| Deviation, deviate | 209, 237, 267, 297, 299, 353, 383, 403, 437, 439, 573, 593, 621, 687 |
| Devil(s) | 111, 235, 357, 417, 513, 687. See also Iblis (in Index of Names), Satan |
| Devotees | 59, 92, 147, 225, 353, 361, 789, 805, 811 |
| Dignity | 515, 557, 787, 791 |
| Dihqān (landowner or merchant) | 82, 549 |
| Dinar | 251, 429, 533 |
| Dirt | 155, 199, 251, 281, 445, 595, 515, 615 |
| Discernment, discern | 64, 157, 167, 179, 203, 205, 209, 217, 219, 223, 249, 259, 275, 345, 349, 361, 365, 475, 595, 597, 703, 721, 725, 737, 767 |
| Discipline | 411, 525, 695, 791, 805 |
| Dispatch(es) | 80, 84, 87, 109, 111, 173, 195, 267, 317, 413, 437, 531, 533, 535, 537, 543, 597, 599, 655, 783 |
| Disposition | 133, 195, 231, 269, 577 |
| Dispute | 199, 319, 633, 667, 687, 755 |
| Dissolute, dissolution | 219, 587, 723 |
| Dog | 197, 341, 585, 603, 619 |
| Doubt(s) | 60, 93, 103, 105, 111, 115, 121, 131, 133, 163, 187, 207, 221, 223, 233, 235, 285, 287, 293, 299, 335, 393, 439, 449, 493, 597, 547, 555, 579, 595, 633, 641, 663, 687, 703, 709, 723, 767, 803. See also suspicion |
doves 115, 175
(strong) drink 159, 287, 429, 591, 657, 747. See also wine
drought 281, 289, 291, 327, 345, 387, 473, 581, 635, 753. See also famine
duel 563, 743
dunes 241, 379
eagle 307, 423
earrings 147
earth passim
East and West 363, 705, 773
easygoing 783
eggs 127, 377, 381
Eid (Ar. ʿĪd)
blessing of 809
sermon 59, 60, 61, 177
elite 627, 631
embezzlement 559
emerald 377, 379, 449
endurance 179, 397, 479, 711. See also forbearance, patience
effigy passim
envy, envier 81, 83, 141, 219, 235, 275, 287, 311, 385, 443, 445, 467, 569, 741, 749, 763, 787, 793
epistle 81, 86, 101, 529, 537, 621, 625, 637, 651, 653, 655, 657, 671
error 71, 103, 127, 131, 135, 143, 151, 163, 195, 201, 221, 223, 267, 269, 303, 305, 333, 335, 337, 341, 345, 397, 407, 415, 445, 473, 493, 499, 509, 593, 545, 573, 575, 579, 601, 613, 625, 633, 663, 787, 809. See also sin, transgression
eternity, eternal 177, 225, 273, 277, 281, 283, 301, 343, 357, 367, 369, 371, 411, 415, 449, 423, 425, 435, 443, 713
ethics 397
evil passim
struggle against 99, 685, 687, 797
excuse(s) 61, 119, 151, 179, 333, 357, 499, 509, 511, 537, 599, 623, 645, 647, 653, 667, 769, 783
exile 69, 78, 213, 283, 311, 333, 357, 411, 501, 593, 679, 715
expiation 477. See also atone
extravagance 82, 551, 731
factions 68, 74, 75, 249, 349, 355, 405, 439, 441, 443, 445, 453, 455, 467, 543, 787
falsehood 127, 131, 143, 151, 157, 173, 191, 261, 271, 311, 319, 325, 357, 511, 517, 643, 657, 667, 763, 817. See also lie
famine 289. See also drought
farmlands, farmers 423, 637, 753
fasting 203, 279, 297, 449, 719, 747
fat, fat-tail, fatty 143, 293, 381, 517, 527, 557, 681, 805
fate(s) 71, 99, 155, 161, 175, 179, 185, 209, 211, 215, 273, 281, 287, 313, 329, 343, 543, 569, 573, 575, 589, 601, 613, 649, 683, 697, 733, 735, 739, 769, 771, 787, 817
feast 85, 527, 611, 809
feelings 64, 217, 275
female 291, 309, 375, 379, 409
fetus 211, 283, 341, 371
the fifth (share, Ar. khums) 765
fire, the Fire 111, 113, 131, 137, 201, 219, 277, 295, 329, 381, 395, 417, 421, 435, 443, 449, 451, 463, 473, 475, 477, 493, 513, 547, 561, 623, 627, 651, 675, 759, 787, 793, 801, 811. See also flame(s), hell
fish 471. See also whale
flame(s) 249, 417, 455, 473, 475, 513, 649, 759. See also fire
flattery 78, 499, 515, 645, 787
flaws 361, 365, 679, 693, 741, 801, 809
flint 151, 161, 247, 269
flock 257, 323, 411, 557. See also herd
flowers, flowerbeds 239, 377, 449, 595. See also blossoms, chamomile, rose
fodder 121, 613, 615
food 145, 225, 227, 239, 273, 287, 327, 351, 359, 363, 401, 409, 413, 421, 423, 457, 487, 581, 589, 611, 613, 721, 783, 791. See also grain, fruit
fool, foolishness 64, 161, 175, 215, 323, 327, 451, 497, 589, 593, 603, 645, 655, 689, 711, 721, 739, 741, 747, 771, 787, 791, 793
forbearance 72, 93, 119, 199, 463, 527, 679, 685, 739, 741, 809. See also endurance, patience
forces 195, 261, 301, 423, 655
forest 76, 227, 471
fornication, fornicator 305, 493, 747. See also adultery
fortifications 147, 345, 493
fortress 321, 357, 439, 441, 455, 469, 475, 593, 631
free 169, 195, 251, 325, 339, 359, 417, 463, 555, 587, 701, 717, 745, 805, 817
Friday sermon 66 (191n 4, 151n 2, 153n 2, 217n2, 253n4, 255n1, 291n1, 391n1)
frivolity 215, 791
frolic 127, 215, 505, 575, 613, 723
fur 271
future 62, 219, 269, 289, 359, 415, 671. See also past, present
gallop 131, 205, 211, 237, 443, 531, 601, 683
gambler 757, 759
Garden 99, 109, 353, 367, 379, 381, 437, 441, 447, 449, 553, 793, 801, 811. See also paradise
gemstones 377. See also coral, emerald, pearl, ruby
gentle, gentleness 123, 141, 189, 195, 235, 463, 465, 509, 557, 617, 669
girls 519, 735, 753, 755
gold 155, 225, 357, 377, 447, 557, 607, 623, 661
good tidings 66, 277, 695
 glutton, gluttony 271, 613, 629, 790
gnat 241, 379, 409, 427, 807
goal(s) 78, 99, 101, 149, 151, 201, 207, 211, 231, 253, 261, 265, 317, 349, 357, 379, 397, 503, 517, 543, 579, 643, 687, 695, 803, 819
goat 86, 121, 251, 253, 311, 359, 419, 557, 607, 623, 661
good passion
good and evil 383, 809. See also deeds
governing, governance, governor, governorate 62–63, 65, 80, 82–89, 143, 191, 241, 321,

grace 82, 195, 505, 549, 749. See also God, grace of (in Index of Names)
grain 271, 273, 331, 449, 493, 513, 547, 609, 615, 639. See also barley, wheat

grandchildren 209
grandfather 541, 571, 617, 661, 717

grass 92, 121, 293, 387, 503, 557, 587, 613, 615, 791


grace, greedy 121, 131, 153, 235, 331, 363, 463, 467, 549, 621, 629, 633, 635, 679, 707, 709, 729, 741, 743, 767, 793. See also gluttony

guest(s) 219, 281, 325, 485

harmony 375, 451, 629

harvest 141, 215, 225, 315, 453, 521

hate, hatred 193, 219, 281, 307, 443, 711, 821

heal 67, 183, 207, 243, 269, 279, 287, 345, 357, 359, 365, 403, 437, 467, 471, 475, 517, 561, 763. See also cure

health, healthy 78, 141, 209, 213, 247, 281, 287, 335, 413, 471, 453, 495, 595, 557, 585, 595, 711, 717, 723, 741, 749, 809

hearts passim

heaven(s) 59, 75, 109, 147, 157, 395, 379, 499, 429, 433, 441, 509, 523

heir 245, 255, 297, 313, 409, 519, 573, 765, 785, 805, 811. See also inherit

hell, hellfire 131, 149, 151, 167, 185, 189, 211, 213, 225, 309, 329, 345, 357, 413, 433, 435, 463, 467, 477, 487, 489, 513, 561, 567, 583, 607, 685, 689, 697, 743, 781. See also fire

herd 83, 121, 207, 243, 341, 349, 395, 477, 753, 815. See also flock

hereafter passim. See also afterlife, (this) world and the hereafter

heresy, heresies, heretical, heretical innovations 70, 133, 139, 173, 221, 263, 331, 343, 347, 349, 365, 373, 385, 397, 399, 413, 713

hermits 175

Hijrah (Migration) 75, 365, 433, 455, 525

honest, honesty 60, 79, 167, 275, 309, 635, 637, 649

honey, honeybees 379, 421, 613, 779


false 151, 185, 209, 219, 279, 283, 287, 353, 541, 615, 761

horn 59, 153, 177, 183, 257, 419, 457, 469, 543

horses, horsemen 147, 235, 259, 265, 303, 397, 441, 467, 541, 623, 755. See also cavalry, colt, mount, stallion, steed

hot spring 477
lightning  237, 257, 289, 501, 511
    bolt  343, 409, 741
and thunder  343, 825
limbs  11, 117, 159, 231, 239, 283, 337, 351,
        357, 367, 369, 379, 499, 421, 425, 439,
        449, 499, 477, 505, 583, 661, 701, 741,
        799
lineage  367, 443, 445, 609, 611, 683, 689,
        711, 747
lion  303, 311, 603, 625, 763, 771
lizard  68, 191, 301, 335, 351
loan  225, 417, 433, 479, 583, 637
locust  75, 423, 515
loincloth  245
loins  57, 129, 183, 225, 241, 247, 273, 585, 659,
        739
longbow  191, 441
love  67, 227, 235, 273, 279, 307, 363, 397, 453,
        473, 597, 625, 645, 711, 821
loyalty  60, 76, 129, 167, 281, 305, 493, 751
luck  693, 743
lute player  707
madness  243, 605, 749
maggots  209
magician  201, 459, 461
male  399, 377, 703
maledictions  93
malice  235, 271, 277, 299, 317, 335, 353, 451,
        463, 547, 645, 727, 729, 779, 803
mansion(s)  225, 789
march  61, 64, 69, 71, 81, 84–87, 93, 157, 171,
        297, 307, 525, 543, 689, 697
marshland  387
martyr(s), martyrdom  74, 84, 141, 295, 355,
        387, 437, 539, 565, 599, 647, 701
master  57, 127, 143, 185, 187, 245, 249, 253,
        285, 343, 399, 517, 567, 579, 587, 803,
        807
meadows  239, 291, 475, 573
merchandise  639
messenger(s)  70, 73, 75, 111, 113, 115, 137, 161,
        181, 195, 205, 233, 237, 255, 267, 277,
        285, 313, 315, 327, 341, 349, 493, 413, 415,
        417, 433, 437, 447, 453, 459, 467, 471,
        581, 659, 775. See also Muhammad (in
        Index of Names), prophet
metaphor  151, 183, 759, 821
meteors  233. See also stars
might  64, 75, 109, 115, 159, 205, 207, 229, 237,
        249, 253, 271, 273, 367, 381, 409, 413, 419,
        427, 429, 439, 447, 451, 453, 455, 475,
        477, 491, 503, 535, 567, 601, 631, 645,
        793. See also strength
migration  75, 365, 433, 455, 525. See also
        Hijrah
military  599, 621, 661, 757
milk  119, 207, 223, 361, 663
mimic  737
mind(s)  85, 107, 109, 111, 131, 147, 149, 159,
        177, 203, 207, 215, 219, 223, 229, 243, 247,
        251, 273, 277, 295, 311, 329, 339, 361,
        365, 377, 449, 421, 427, 433, 441, 445, 451,
        471, 495, 503, 517, 523, 537, 545,
        577, 579, 583, 597, 605, 609, 655, 661,
        689, 701, 727, 735–739, 741, 755, 779, 793
mindful  199, 211, 399, 527, 703, 717, 723
mine(s)  247, 277
mirage  469, 657, 689
mirror  377, 679, 791
miser, miserliness  309, 313, 629, 689, 713,
        735
mission  65–66, 69, 71, 76, 151, 245, 305, 453,
        673, 731
mites  241
moderation  82, 551, 721. See also temper-
        ance
modesty  443, 595, 635, 711, 741, 787
money  57, 79, 131, 199, 305, 521, 533, 605,
        607, 779, 809
moon  409, 423. See also sun and moon
morals  399, 495
morning  78, 87, 99, 153, 251, 279, 339, 345,
        351, 365, 395, 415, 465, 479, 495, 531,
        593, 587, 651, 665, 717, 729, 749
mortal, mortality  187, 323, 705. See also
        human
mortgage  503, 573
mosque  129, 227, 717
mother  75, 80, 125, 167, 199, 283, 289, 339,
        351, 371, 429, 457, 543, 607, 717, 755,
        775
mount  72, 113, 201, 309, 363, 449, 457, 543,
        569, 573, 611, 689. See also horse, steed
mountain  57, 67, 103, 109, 129, 163, 221, 227,
        235, 237, 239, 241, 253, 275, 289, 291, 375,
        387, 409, 421, 447, 473, 477, 491, 539,
        541, 543, 639, 709, 813
mourn, mourner 91, 123, 139, 213, 241, 281, 307, 335, 477, 513, 771, 799, 825
murder, murderer 305, 313, 347
musical instruments. See lute, oud, drum
musk 379
mutiny 133, 195, 225. See also rebel
necklace 147, 239
neighbors 117, 175, 207, 288, 337, 417, 451, 465, 503, 515, 561, 593, 617, 623
night and day 387, 421, 425, 641, 733
nomadic 753
noose 205, 787
novelties 103, 701, 735
oath 113, 179, 245, 321, 343, 415, 429, 615, 649, 749. See also pledge
of allegiance (Ar. bayʿah) 70, 163, 319, 387
ocean 77, 101, 471, 489, 491, 797. See also sea
offspring 241, 444, 445, 749. See also children
opportunity 167, 169, 191, 333, 383, 583, 589, 593, 605, 615, 645, 683, 711, 747, 791
oration(s) passim
oratory, orate, orator 101, 105, 407, 487, 753
orbit 233, 387
ordained 74, 205, 233, 239, 275, 297, 339, 371, 405, 437, 489, 543, 631, 735, 767, 797. See also destined
ordeal 209, 213, 449, 787
organ 209, 343, 425, 443, 505, 707
ornament 91, 121, 231, 233, 277, 297, 363, 365, 631, 675
orphan 607, 617, 639, 763
ostich 129, 307, 423
oud player 707
overthinking 687
palace 195, 267, 273, 515
palm-fronds 143, 497
parables 113, 205, 207, 399
paradise 64, 72, 111, 131, 149, 151, 185, 203, 211, 217, 239, 265, 267, 277, 283, 301, 309, 341, 349, 345, 357, 363, 365, 379, 383, 387, 395, 397, 413, 435, 461, 493, 477, 561, 565, 567, 583, 685, 691, 717, 817. See also Garden
pardon 189, 337, 359, 437, 509, 571, 585, 625, 627, 631, 639, 667, 727, 729, 739, 809
pastures 265, 283, 289, 303, 345, 395, 427, 449, 453, 503, 559, 581, 607, 613, 661, 753, 791
path passim. See also course, road, way
INDEX OF TERMS

patient, patience 239, 253, 385, 393, 437, 463, 465, 469, 479, 505, 525, 575, 593, 601, 623, 627, 633, 641, 643, 645, 667, 685, 693, 699, 703, 721, 725, 731, 737, 739, 773, 783, 811, 817. See also endurance, forbearance

peace 133, 233, 495, 497, 535, 537, 539, 541, 545, 549, 551, 557, 595, 601, 605, 609, 617, 621, 643, 647, 649, 657, 659, 663, 665, 669, 673, 675, 791

of mind 793

peacock 72, 375, 377

pearl 229, 379

pebble 57, 629, 335, 545, 661, 689

percussionist 707. See also drummer


ploughshare 479, 593

plunder 181, 235, 259, 281, 357, 439, 453, 609, 663, 733, 775

poet(s), poetry 145, 161, 613, 759, 815

poison 281, 449, 711, 741

polytheism 91, 549, 747

pools 241, 279, 409, 473, 475, 557. See also death, pools of possessions

poverty 239, 279, 429, 445, 513, 515, 629, 665, 679, 689, 693, 695, 707, 747, 713, 727, 779, 785, 791, 801. See also destitution, indigence

power, powerful 83, 109, 125, 155, 187, 205, 213, 215, 243, 281, 313, 327, 383, 385, 443, 455, 459, 493, 495, 514, 515, 547, 561, 573, 607, 617, 645, 651, 667, 681, 693, 703, 727, 733, 735, 785, 793. See also God, power of (in Index of Names)


niche 697

ritual 76, 86, 227, 277, 449, 477, 563, 617, 623, 641, 719, 747

precious objects 765

predators 271, 347, 585

pregnant 63, 193, 443, 445, 555

prejudice 451, 641

present 211, 219, 285, 329, 355, 481, 777, 797, 811. See also future, past

pride 75, 101, 111, 121, 125, 237, 347, 439, 441, 443, 445, 449, 451, 459, 497, 503, 617, 627, 629, 641, 745, 747, 793. See also arrogance

prisoner(s) 195, 573, 635, 789

profit 74, 115, 133, 269, 287, 311, 395, 407, 437, 561, 639, 689, 709, 737, 765
prohibition(s) 113, 623, 747, 799, 821. See also commands and prohibitions
promise 113, 201, 207, 215, 279, 361, 385, 397, 419, 479, 509, 621, 641, 645, 697
proof(s) 74, 91, 113, 115, 127, 139, 161, 203, 217, 229, 239, 251, 265, 269, 327, 345, 361, 365, 375, 395, 397, 399, 405, 407, 411, 415, 421, 433, 475, 545, 601, 723. See also arguments
distribution of 82, 305, 553
prophet(s), prophecy 56, 61–62, 65–66, 70, 72, 75, 111, 113, 115, 133, 141, 157, 223, 225, 239, 247, 261, 269, 277, 309, 315, 359, 391, 414, 445, 447, 459, 461, 523, 541, 547, 697, 703, 777. See also Muhammad (in Index of Names), messenger
prostration 115, 251, 297, 441
protected peoples (Ar. ahl al-dhimmah) 631
providence 585, 591, 743
prudence 575, 643, 651, 731
pulpit 58, 137, 143, 145, 155, 227, 793
Qiblah (direction of prayer) 391
quarrel 315, 329, 589, 655, 753, 755–791, 819
queen bee 91, 753, 779
rabbles 141, 219, 267, 525, 721, 735
race 149, 151, 207, 209, 527
-cause 265, 813, 819
rage 277, 331, 347, 465, 591, 667, 673, 707, 733, 749. See also anger
raid 68, 84, 147, 149, 456151, 757, 761
ram 197
rare words (Ar. gharīb) 91, 291, 379, 753, 759
reason 265, 317, 323, 335, 361, 451, 689, 689, 745, 747, 801, 803
rebel, rebellion 56, 121, 125, 161, 177, 309, 391, 445, 457, 617, 687. See also mutiny
reconciliation 60, 169
reed-pen 779
refinement 449, 577, 693, 709
regret 111, 123, 149, 161, 179, 185, 275, 281, 295, 299, 447, 439, 477, 479, 599, 619, 627, 653, 707, 711, 717, 731, 807
reins 69, 121, 123, 131, 163, 221, 225, 239, 315, 375, 423, 433, 437, 445, 465, 467, 475, 517, 537, 569, 589, 615, 619, 625, 683, 689, 711. See also halters
relatives 141, 193, 209, 467, 519, 643, 705, 747, 753, 755. See also family, kin
religion passim
renunciants, renunciation 79, 85, 103, 105, 155, 157, 209, 283, 521, 575, 679, 709, 813
repent, repentance 149, 185, 207, 213, 239, 247, 313, 327, 333, 415, 509, 559, 527, 585, 627, 701, 703, 719, 723, 725, 749, 793, 813
reptiles. See adder, chameleon, lizard, snake, viper
repute, reputation 297, 637, 699, 727, 739
resolution(s) 239, 321, 347, 447, 453, 527, 693, 813
restraint 86, 549, 587, 611, 629, 679, 685, 687, 709, 737, 787, 793
retribution 73, 245, 313, 327, 383, 401, 407, 441, 455, 701, 733, 747
revenue 295
reward passim
and punishment 207, 347, 535, 697, 703
ribs 159
riches, rich man 241, 429, 447, 451, 495, 611, 691, 693, 701, 717, 783, 791, 807. See also wealth
rider 123, 131, 225,1, 259, 343, 449, 547, 601, 611, 683, 753, 825
right(s) passim
river 60, 161, 183, 237, 355, 379, 449, 453, 475, 543
road passim. See also course, path, way
robes 75, 81, 123, 147, 219, 225, 277, 309, 377, 439, 441, 471, 541, 571, 671, 679, 703, 707, 709, 741. See also garments
rocks, rocky 107, 151, 237, 269, 363, 381, 403, 407, 421, 447, 453, 455, 469, 491, 515, 661, 783
rope(s) 61, 83, 109, 117, 121, 125, 175, 177, 219, 221, 223, 231, 239, 267, 281, 293, 297, 303, 321, 335, 343, 399, 419, 435, 455, 467, 469, 475, 493, 503, 513, 571, 575, 587, 593, 595, 613, 627
rose 377
ruby 449
ruler 87, 165, 245, 249, 251, 271, 321, 455, 495, 497, 503, 533, 535, 541, 593, 625, 627, 629, 637, 639, 641, 643, 653, 689, 733, 761, 763, 781, 783, 797, 821
ruling(s) 86, 263, 307, 313, 401, 415, 453, 483, 489, 665
sacrifice, sacrificial animal 61, 177
saddle, saddle-pad 119, 447, 449, 611, 709, 825
safety 209, 241, 293, 307, 395, 413, 447, 615, 805
sage 209, 629, 689, 701
sail 375, 379
salutations 76, 479
salvation 56, 125, 199, 219, 265, 353, 367, 507, 511, 581, 721
sand 161, 241, 381, 417, 447
storms 62, 181
sandal 157, 363, 407, 591, 671
sated 127, 319, 693
scales 99, 115, 273, 285, 403, 609, 639
scorpion 319, 357, 467, 505, 695
scribe(s) 631, 637, 641
scripture(s) 59, 66, 113, 115, 117, 133, 157, 261, 697
sea 57, 129, 131, 155, 201, 219, 225, 237, 257, 349, 379, 421, 449, 469, 475, 491, 541, 595, 639, 769, 779, 787. See also ocean
seashells 227, 241. See also cowrie shell
seasons 84, 217, 225, 421, 427, 597
secrets 101, 151, 211, 225, 239, 271, 273, 279, 327, 341, 395, 441, 481, 517, 621, 679, 685, 693, 727
self-respect 693, 815
semen 211, 241, 815 See also sperm
separation 209, 213, 275, 281, 297, 367, 369, 435, 479, 507, 581, 621, 717
shadow 86, 173, 185, 205, 207, 271, 337, 351, 561, 623
shame 63, 147, 169, 207, 273, 279, 301, 387, 415, 429, 431, 439, 455, 467, 475, 503, 545, 555, 559, 569, 575, 585, 627, 649, 657, 693, 735, 741, 781, 801
Shari‘ah 91
shears 155
sheep 289, 291, 293, 307, 395, 413, 447, 615, 805
sheikh(s) 649
shepherd 349, 413, 587
shield 62, 147, 167, 183, 265, 279, 293, 309, 411, 473, 475, 477, 539, 541, 545, 605, 679, 693, 735
shining spot 755
sick, sickness 105, 209, 305, 335, 471, 519, 595, 711. See also illness
sight, eyesight 179, 247, 269, 275, 315, 351, 363, 365, 373, 421, 471, 493, 499, 669, 769, 821
signs 113, 115, 123, 173, 209, 215, 229, 231, 233, 261, 265, 269, 273, 331, 337, 403, 409, 415, 425, 475, 493, 503, 743. See also waymarks
silk and brocade 309
silver 227, 377, 533, 557, 623, 789, 799
sins 64, 70, 113, 131, 133, 145, 149, 175, 179, 201, 211, 213, 221, 233, 239, 275, 279, 289, 301, 305, 313, 323, 327, 347, 339, 343, 359, 381, 383, 399, 401, 403, 437, 471, 477, 509, 511, 549, 615, 683, 691, 699, 703, 711, 723, 725, 773, 783, 787, 807, 825. See also errors, transgressions
sky passim
slander, slanderer 253, 261, 443, 603, 627, 635, 745, 817, 821
slaughterhouse 177
slave 131, 169, 187, 245, 253, 267, 275, 383, 389, 393, 499, 573, 587, 591, 607, 623, 657, 683, 745, 765, 783. See also bondage
smoke 233
snake(s) 88, 253, 261, 279, 363, 381, 489, 533, 547, 555, 563, 571, 573, 599, 613, 619, 685, 733, 749, 771, 775, 789, 807
sodomy 749
soldiers 155, 631, 641. See also warriors
son(s) 64, 69, 91, 113, 125, 137, 179, 207, 213, 271, 299, 317, 393, 399, 405, 425, 445, 453, 547, 555, 563, 571, 573, 599, 613, 619, 685, 733, 749, 771, 775, 789, 807
my dear son 90, 92, 95, 157, 173, 195, 581, 583, 585, 591, 689, 779, 805
soothsayer 201
sorrow 92, 149, 239, 253, 305, 359, 373, 585, 783, 791. See also grief
appetitive 395
sentient 78, 209, 225, 233, 247, 255, 267, 305, 403, 409, 501, 549, 705
stealing, stolen 88, 239, 669, 745, 765
steed(s) 117, 131, 135, 185, 199, 225, 253, 271, 309, 445, 455, 475, 503, 511, 573, 575, 753, 759. See also mount
stinginess 679, 745, 797
stomach 199, 297, 343, 347, 363, 421, 613, 615, 769
stoning 341
strangers 137, 175, 489, 513, 681, 693
students 105, 187, 722
suffering 113, 377, 449, 451, 453, 469, 473, 577, 639, 689, 691, 713, 787
summer 145, 149, 241, 377, 623, 661
sun 86, 211, 221, 351, 371, 377, 509, 599, 623, 773
and moon 199, 225, 233, 363, 387, 421
Sunnah 113, 133, 229, 265, 279, 303, 313, 321, 337, 373, 385, 413, 477, 483, 497, 553, 559, 633, 675
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Index of Terms</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Supplication(s) (Ar. <em>duʿāʾ</em>) 61, 64, 67, 70–79, 81, 171, 201, 229, 469, 493, 515, 517, 519, 545, 565, 721</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Suppliant 409, 509, 639, 695</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Suspicion 233, 241, 281, 319, 355, 525, 571, 643, 663, 677, 711, 741, 775, 787</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>See also doubt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sword passim</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mashrāfi 159</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Talons 215</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tax(es) 83, 165, 623, 631, 635, 637, 705, 739, 637, 655, 669, 707</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Collectors 80, 83, 86, 531, 555, 559, 631, 637, 655, 669, 707</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Land- 621, 625, 631, 635, 635, 825</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Poll- 631</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>See also levy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tear, teardrop 117, 155, 279, 375, 377, 435, 463, 467, 509, 525, 615</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Teeth 129, 135, 187, 299, 301, 321, 399, 423, 759, 789, 821</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Temperance 463, 467, 695, 747, 785</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>See also moderation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tenants 225, 259, 469</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tent 157, 253, 359, 557</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>See also trial</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Testament (Ar. <em>wasīyyah, ʿahd</em>) 80, 82–83, 117, 277, 337, 409, 531, 533, 555, 559, 563, 575, 577, 579, 617, 625, 647</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>See also covenant</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thanks 67, 75, 203, 285, 407, 415, 431, 433, 437, 621, 719, 737, 745, 767, 783</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>See also gratitude</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thieves 183, 305, 349, 635, 767</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>See also stealing</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tongue(s) passim</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Torch 207, 267</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Torture 211, 213, 277, 333, 417, 453, 463, 619</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Trade, trader 69, 78, 185, 245, 251, 355, 467, 477, 507, 589, 709, 795</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Traitor 137, 537, 743</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tranquility 351, 793</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>See also errors, sins</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Transience 67, 69, 72, 367, 481, 713</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Travel, traveler(s) 61, 171, 185, 253, 261, 291, 365, 379, 447, 473, 475, 581, 587, 593, 603, 695, 713, 753, 757, 805</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>See also journey</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>See also date-palm, forest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Forbidden 239</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lote 263</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>See also test</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
tribe(s), tribal, tribesmen 72, 75, 81–82, 89, 11, 137, 145, 149, 173, 303, 309, 309, 309, 307, 307, 439, 451, 467, 539, 547, 549, 557, 601, 603, 609, 661, 673

trousers 61, 62, 68–69, 71, 81, 87, 177, 207, 397, 331, 411, 413, 623, 633, 634, 655

troubles 473, 789, 541, 645, 679, 709. See also calamities, hardships


trustee(s) 73, 145, 195, 247, 267, 391, 419, 623, 825

trustworthy, untrustworthy 155, 251, 437, 595, 629, 637, 723

truth, untruth passim. See also falsehood, lie

udder(s) 119, 179, 321, 519, 597, 679

ʿumrah 279

unbelief 90, 137, 181, 231, 397, 405, 479, 547, 563, 573, 659, 687. See also belief

unbeliever, disbeliever 137, 157, 165, 201, 205, 319, 341, 455, 539, 545, 563, 697, 797, 809. See also believer

usurp 381, 513, 607, 727

valley 369, 381, 409, 427, 447, 449, 453, 475, 587

vanity 235, 441, 629, 709, 729, 739. See also conceit

vegetation 237, 279, 289. See also plants

veil, veiled 109, 137, 155, 173, 185, 225, 229, 233, 239, 269, 343, 351, 357, 361, 369, 371, 377, 399, 395, 409, 413, 419, 441, 469, 481, 505, 509, 511, 519, 583, 595, 647, 769, 777, 809

vessel 91, 117, 193, 261, 499, 721, 737, 821

victim 309, 343, 394, 393, 365, 371

victory 57, 63, 68, 71, 80, 129, 143, 179, 211, 245, 305, 317, 331, 387, 393, 419, 469, 473, 475, 499, 533, 565, 591, 605, 693, 723

vigor 359

violation 153, 257, 423, 555, 631, 731, 825

violin 381, 771


viti o (Ar. baras) 777

vows 211

wailing women 209

war, warfare 61, 77, 147, 149, 159, 175, 177, 191, 245, 251, 257, 305, 311, 331, 339, 387, 391, 453, 455, 485, 521, 539, 541, 547, 605, 609, 621, 627, 653, 765. See also battle

gains 313, 605, 765. See also booty

warriors 103, 145, 179, 295, 301, 317, 565, 571, 607, 613, 657, 781, 789


carriers 473

hole 61, 117, 127, 135, 137, 177, 205, 215, 219, 221, 265, 267, 269, 289, 301, 319, 355, 359, 397, 473, 475, 493, 503, 519, 553, 557, 587, 609, 615, 663, 697

waves 56, 109, 125, 237, 241, 257, 373, 437, 449, 467, 469, 473, 537, 595, 615

way passim. See also course, path, road

waymarks 76, 195, 221, 225, 247, 261, 313, 343, 409, 469, 473, 475, 497, 573, 643, 663. See also signs

wealth, wealthy passim. See also riches

weapons 147, 423, 623. See also arrows, blades, bow, longbow, shields, spears, swords

weaver 137, 735

wedding banquet 61
weep, weeper, weeping 253, 275, 283, 291, 297, 369, 401, 439, 503, 509, 511, 521, 525, 681, 697, 781, 813

well 125, 211, 297, 745, 757

- spring 101, 229, 269, 271, 369, 399, 427, 455, 473, 475, 631

(The) Well 459. See also Badr (in Index of Names)

whale 379

wheat 449, 513, 613


widow 193, 551, 607

wife, wives 313, 363, 389, 487, 595, 705, 715, 719, 807

wilderness 221, 291, 507, 613

will 82, 231, 239, 383, 393, 535, 649


wine 355, 379, 747. See also drink


winter 145, 149, 241, 363, 381, 623


wolf, wolves 165, 271, 307, 413, 607

wombs 129, 183, 211, 225, 247, 273, 283, 309, 371, 567, 609


worker 639, 735

(this) world, worldly passim

and the hereafter 69, 315, 595, 705, 785. See also afterlife, hereafter

worldliness 561

rejection of 64, 90, 203, 685, 707

worry 575, 721, 791


wound 119, 183, 287, 299, 301, 341, 443, 499, 675


yearnings 151, 167, 229, 235, 251, 463, 613

youth 99, 209, 211, 281, 293, 523, 567, 673, 699, 701

zeal, zealotry 387, 441, 443, 451, 655, 757. See also bigots
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Surah number</th>
<th>Surah name</th>
<th>Verse number</th>
<th>Verse text</th>
<th>Verse translation</th>
<th>Text number</th>
<th>Page number</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Baqarah</td>
<td>20, 109, 148</td>
<td>انَّ اللَّهَ عَلَى كُلِّ شَيْءٍ قَدِيرٌ</td>
<td>Truly, God is powerful over all things.</td>
<td>1.190.1</td>
<td>458–459</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Baqarah</td>
<td>34</td>
<td>اَمْضُوا لَادَمَ فَسَفَدُوا إِلَّا مُوسَى</td>
<td>prostrate before Adam, and they all prostrated except Iblis.</td>
<td>1.1.5</td>
<td>110–111</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Baqarah</td>
<td>117</td>
<td>كَنْ فِي كُونٍ</td>
<td>Be!—and it is.</td>
<td>1.184.2</td>
<td>424–425</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Baqarah</td>
<td>156</td>
<td>إِنَّا تَوَلَّوْا مِنْ يَوْمٍ وَالِيَوْعَانِيَةَ</td>
<td>We belong to God, and to him we shall return.</td>
<td>1.80.12, 1.127, 1.200, 3.89</td>
<td>212–213, 310–311, 478–479, 702–705</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Baqarah</td>
<td>197</td>
<td>إِنَّ حِبَّ الْعَزَّةِ الْمُقْوَى</td>
<td>The best provision is piety.</td>
<td>3.119</td>
<td>714–715</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Āl ʿImrān</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>الرَّاحِضُنَّ فِي الْقُرْآنِ</td>
<td>Men rooted in knowledge</td>
<td>1.88.2, 1.142.1</td>
<td>228–229, 328–329</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Āl ʿImrān</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>المُعَفِينَ مِنْ كُرْبَةِ الْقِلْفَاءِ</td>
<td>those among you who impede, who say to their brothers, “Come help us,” while they themselves seldom enter the fray.</td>
<td>2.28.4</td>
<td>568–569</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Āl ʿImrān</td>
<td>68</td>
<td>إِنَّ أُولَئِكَ الَّذِينَ يَعْبُرُونَ</td>
<td>Those who have the most claim on Abraham are the ones who followed him, and this Prophet, and those who profess belief. God is the believers’ master.</td>
<td>2.28.2, 3.86</td>
<td>566–567, 702–703</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Āl ʿImrān</td>
<td>85</td>
<td>مَنْ يَبْتَغِ غَيْرِ الْإِسْلَامِ دِينًا</td>
<td>whoever seeks a religion other than Islam</td>
<td>1.159</td>
<td>364–365</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Qur’an (direct quotes)**

* al-Sharif al-Radi - 978-90-04-68260-3
  Downloaded from Brill.com 05/24/2024 05:31:30PM
  via Open Access.
  https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-nc-nd/4.0
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Surah number</th>
<th>Surah name</th>
<th>Verse number</th>
<th>Verse text</th>
<th>Verse translation</th>
<th>Text number</th>
<th>Page number</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Āl 'Imrān</td>
<td>97</td>
<td>وَلِيْتَنَّ قَيْدً الْأَّلَامَ</td>
<td>Pilgrimage to the House is compulsory for all who are able to find a path. As for those who disbelieve, they should know that God has need of no one from all the worlds.</td>
<td>1.1.8</td>
<td>114–115</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Āl 'Imrān</td>
<td>102</td>
<td>أَتَّقُنَّ اللَّهَ</td>
<td>be conscious of God as you should, and make sure you die submitting to him</td>
<td>1.1.11.3</td>
<td>288–289</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Āl 'Imrān</td>
<td>134, 148</td>
<td>واللَّهُ يُبْحَثُ الْمَحْسُونِينَ</td>
<td>God loves those who do good.</td>
<td>3.188</td>
<td>736–737</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Āl 'Imrān</td>
<td>165</td>
<td>إِنَّ اللَّهَ عَلَى كُلِّ شَيْءٍ قَبِيرٌ</td>
<td>Truly, God is powerful over all things.</td>
<td>1.190.12</td>
<td>458–459</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Āl 'Imrān</td>
<td>198</td>
<td>وَمَا عِنْدَ اللَّهِ خَيرٌ لِلَا إِلَيْرَ</td>
<td>What God has prepared for people of virtue is the best!</td>
<td>2.23</td>
<td>552–553</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Nisā’</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>إِمَّا أَنَّكُنَّ عَلَى اللَّهِ الْزِّنِينَ</td>
<td>God accepts the repentance of those who do wrong in ignorance then repent soon thereafter; they are the ones whose repentance God accepts; God is knowing and wise.</td>
<td>3.124</td>
<td>718–719</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Nisā’</td>
<td>48, 116</td>
<td>إِنَّ اللَّهَ لَا يَغْفِرُ أَن يُشَرَّكُنَّ بِهِ</td>
<td>God does not forgive being assigned partners</td>
<td>1.174.8</td>
<td>400–401</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Nisā’</td>
<td>58</td>
<td>يَا أَيُّهَا الْذِينَ آمَنُوا أَطِيعُوا اللَّهَ وَأَطِيعُوا الرَّسُولَ وَأُولِي الْأَمْرِ</td>
<td>Believers, obey God, obey the Messenger, and the people in command among you. If you disagree over something, refer it to God and the Messenger.</td>
<td>2.53.8</td>
<td>632–633</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Surah number</td>
<td>Surah name</td>
<td>Verse number</td>
<td>Verse text</td>
<td>Verse translation</td>
<td>Text number</td>
<td>Page number</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>-------------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Nisā‘</td>
<td>59</td>
<td>ُهوُّدُرَفٍءْيَشيِفْمُتْعَزاَنَتنِإَف</td>
<td>If you disagree about something, refer it to God and his Messenger.</td>
<td>1.123</td>
<td>302–303</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Nisā‘</td>
<td>82</td>
<td>مَا فُرُطَا في الْكِتَابِ من نَيِّ ؟</td>
<td>If it had come from someone other than God, they would have found it to have many inconsistencies.</td>
<td>1.18</td>
<td>134–135</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Nisā‘</td>
<td>103</td>
<td>كَانَتْ عَلَى الْمُؤْمِنِينَ كَابَا موقوتاً</td>
<td>prescribed for believers at fixed times</td>
<td>1.197</td>
<td>476–477</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Nisā‘</td>
<td>110</td>
<td>وَمِنْ يَعْمَلُ سُوءَ أو يَظْلِمُ تَسْعِيرُ الَّذِي يُلْعَنُ اللَّهُ غَفُورًا رَحِيماً</td>
<td>Whoever does wrong or oppresses his soul, but then seeks forgiveness from God, will find that God is forgiving and merciful.</td>
<td>3.124</td>
<td>718–719</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>Mā‘idah</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>إِنِّي لَا أَمَلُ إِلَّا نَفْسِي وَأَخِي</td>
<td>I have jurisdiction only over myself and my brother</td>
<td>3.254</td>
<td>760–761</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>Mā‘idah</td>
<td>93</td>
<td>اللَّهُ يُحِبُّ الْمُحْسِنِينَ</td>
<td>God loves those who do good.</td>
<td>3.188</td>
<td>736–737</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>An‘ām</td>
<td>38</td>
<td>وَلَوْ كَأَنَّا مِنْ عِندِ غَيْرِ اللهِ لَوَجَدُوا فِي الأَخْلَاقِ كِتَارًا</td>
<td>We have omitted nothing from the Book.</td>
<td>1.18</td>
<td>134–135</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>An‘ām</td>
<td>56</td>
<td>قَدْ ضَلَتْ إِذَا وَمَا أَنَا مِنَ الْمُهْتَدِينَ</td>
<td>I should stray from the path if so, no longer among the guided</td>
<td>1.57</td>
<td>180–181</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>An‘ām</td>
<td>95</td>
<td>فَأَلْتَوْفَكُونَ</td>
<td>how are you deluded</td>
<td>1.80,13</td>
<td>212–213, 1.84,2, 220–221, 1.105,2, 270–271</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>A roar</td>
<td>87</td>
<td>حَيْنَ يَبْعِرُ اللَّهُ بِيَتَّنَا وَهُوَ خَبَرُ الْحَكِيمِينَ</td>
<td>until God judges between us—and he is the best of judges</td>
<td>2.55</td>
<td>648–649</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Index of Qurʾan, Hadith, Poetry, and Proverbs

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Surah number</th>
<th>Surah name</th>
<th>Verse number</th>
<th>Verse text</th>
<th>Verse translation</th>
<th>Text number</th>
<th>Page number</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>Aʿrāf</td>
<td>89</td>
<td>اَنِمْوَقَنْيَبَواَنَنْيَبْحَتْفااَنَّبَر</td>
<td>Lord, decide between us and our tribesmen with truth, for you are the best conqueror.</td>
<td>2.15</td>
<td>546–547</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>Aʿrāf</td>
<td>99</td>
<td>فَلا يَأْمُنُ مَكْرِ اللَّهِ إِلَّا الْقُوُمُ</td>
<td>Only losers feel secure against God's reckoning.</td>
<td>3.356</td>
<td>796–797</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>Aʿrāf</td>
<td>138</td>
<td>أَجِيبُ لَهُمُ اللَّهُ كَأَمَّا هُمُ اللَّهُ فَقَالَ إِنَّ كُلُّ قَوْمٍ مُّجَهَّلُونَ</td>
<td>Make for us a god like their gods! He said, you are an ignorant people!</td>
<td>3.393</td>
<td>778–779</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>Anfāl</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>كَأَنَا إِسْأَلَتُ إِلَى الْمَوْتِ وَهُمْ يَتَظَرَّونَ</td>
<td>as though driven to a death they could see in front of their eyes</td>
<td>1.39</td>
<td>164–165</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>Anfāl</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>وَأَعْلَمُ أَنَّ أَمْوَالَكُمْ وَأَوْلَادُكُمْ فَتَنَةً</td>
<td>Know that the riches you own and the children you beget are nothing but trials!</td>
<td>3.39</td>
<td>700–701</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>Anfāl</td>
<td>51</td>
<td>مَا كَانَ اللَّهُ لَيْعِدُهُمْ وَأَنَتْ فِيهِمْ مَا كَانَ اللَّهُ مُعَذِّبُهُمْ وَهُمْ يَسْتَغْفِرُونَ</td>
<td>God will not punish them while you are among them, and he will not punish them if they repent.</td>
<td>3.79</td>
<td>700–701</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>Anfāl</td>
<td>51</td>
<td>أَنَّ اللَّهَ لَا يُسْتَبِعُ الْعَيْدُ</td>
<td>God is not unjust to his servants.</td>
<td>1.176.2</td>
<td>402–403</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>Tawbah</td>
<td>109</td>
<td>شَفَّا جَرْفَ هَارَ</td>
<td>the lip of a crumbling cliff</td>
<td>1.102.2</td>
<td>262–263</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>Yūnus</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>عَدْدُ السَّيِّئَاتِ وَالْخَسَابِ</td>
<td>reckoning and calculation of years</td>
<td>1.88.6</td>
<td>232–233</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Surah number</td>
<td>Surah name</td>
<td>Verse number</td>
<td>Verse text</td>
<td>Verse translation</td>
<td>Text number</td>
<td>Page number</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>-------------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>Yūnus</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>لاَلَّضلااَّلِإِّقَحْلاَدْعَباَذاَمَف</td>
<td>But what is there after truth save error?</td>
<td>2.65</td>
<td>662–663</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>Yūnus</td>
<td>32</td>
<td>قُدْأَا بَعْدَ الْحَقِّ إِلَّا الْضُّلَالُ</td>
<td>how are you deluded?</td>
<td>1.180.13</td>
<td>212–213, 1.84.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>Hūd</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>بِلَوْكَ كَيْبَرْ أَحْسَنَ عَمَّالا</td>
<td>put you to the test, to see who among you performs the best of deeds.</td>
<td>1.181.3</td>
<td>416–417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>Hūd</td>
<td>49</td>
<td>إِنَّ الْعَالَمَةَ لِلْمُتَّقِينَ</td>
<td>the best outcome is reserved for the pious.</td>
<td>1.95</td>
<td>252–253</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>Hūd</td>
<td>83</td>
<td>وَمَا هُوَ مِنَ الْظَّالِمِينَ بِيَعْدِلُ</td>
<td>is never far from the wicked</td>
<td>2.28.5</td>
<td>570–571</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>Hūd</td>
<td>88</td>
<td>إِلاَّ الإِصْلاَحُ مَا أُسْتَطِعْتُ وَمَا تَوْفِقُي إِلَّا بِاللَّهِ أَلَّا تَكُنْ تَوَلَّتُكُمْ</td>
<td>only to set things right as much as I can. My direction comes from God. In him I place my trust.</td>
<td>2.28.4</td>
<td>570–571</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>Hūd</td>
<td>89</td>
<td>لَا يُبْعِثُ شَفَاقِي لَا يُجْرِمُ نَفْسٌ يَدُوُّندُ</td>
<td>Let not your enmity of me drive you to accuse me of lies.</td>
<td>1.98.2</td>
<td>256–257</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>Hūd</td>
<td>95</td>
<td>بَعْدًا يَا بَعْدَةً مُثْوَدُ</td>
<td>Away with ... as the Thamūd were done away with!</td>
<td>1.179</td>
<td>406–407</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12</td>
<td>Yūsuf</td>
<td>53</td>
<td>إِنِ النَّفْسُ لَأَمَارةٌ بِالسُّوءٍ إِلَّا مَا رَجَمَ رِبَّهُ</td>
<td>the sentient soul commands vice unless God shows it mercy.</td>
<td>2.53-1</td>
<td>624–625</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Surah number</td>
<td>Surah name</td>
<td>Verse number</td>
<td>Verse text</td>
<td>Verse translation</td>
<td>Text number</td>
<td>Page number</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>-------------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12</td>
<td>Yūsuf</td>
<td>87</td>
<td>ِهّٰللٱِحْوَّرنِمُسَٔـْياَلاَّلُهَّنِإ</td>
<td>Only unbelievers despair of God's grace.</td>
<td>3.356</td>
<td>796–797</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13</td>
<td>Raʿd</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>من في السماوات والأرض طوعاً وركاً</td>
<td>all who are in the skies and the earth, obedient or unwilling</td>
<td>1.183.4</td>
<td>422–423</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13</td>
<td>Raʿd</td>
<td>38</td>
<td>لكلٍّ أُجِرْتُمُ ِکَابُ</td>
<td>each term is written.</td>
<td>1.105.2</td>
<td>270–271.1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14</td>
<td>Ibrāhīm</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>َوَهُوَ العَزِيزُ ِلِلْحَكِيمِ</td>
<td>and he is mighty and wise.</td>
<td>1.181.3</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14</td>
<td>Ibrāhīm</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>َأَن شُكَّرُكُمْ أَلْدَكَرُ</td>
<td>If you give thanks, you will be given more.</td>
<td>3.124</td>
<td>718–719</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14</td>
<td>Ibrāhīm</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>َفَأَمَنْتُمْ فَإِنْ َمُصيرُ َكِلِيِإْلَٰ</td>
<td>Say: Take pleasure if you wish! Your last stop is hellfire.</td>
<td>1.28</td>
<td>150-151</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14</td>
<td>Ibrāhīm</td>
<td>42</td>
<td>يَومُ تَشُخصُ فيهِ الابصَارُ</td>
<td>the day when eyes stare fixedly in terror</td>
<td>1.193</td>
<td>468–469</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15</td>
<td>Hijr</td>
<td>37–38</td>
<td>ِيَلِكَ ِمن المنظرين إِلَى يَومٍ</td>
<td>You have been placed among those who have been granted respite until the day of destiny.</td>
<td>1.1.5</td>
<td>110–111</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15</td>
<td>Hijr</td>
<td>39</td>
<td>َقَالَ رَبِّي أَغْوي ْنِي َلأَبَيْنَ ْنِمُ في الأَرض َلاَغَويْنِكَمْ أَجْمَعِينَ</td>
<td>He said: My Lord, because you caused me to stray, I shall place temptations before them on earth and lead them all astray.</td>
<td>1.190.2</td>
<td>440–441</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16</td>
<td>Nahl</td>
<td>77</td>
<td>ِإِنَّ اللَّهَ عَلَى كُلِّ شَيْءٍ قَدِيرُ</td>
<td>Truly, God is powerful over all things.</td>
<td>1.190.12</td>
<td>458–459</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16</td>
<td>Nahl</td>
<td>97</td>
<td>ُفِحَيْنِهِ ِحَيَاةٍ طَيِّبَةٍ</td>
<td>we shall grant him a good life.</td>
<td>3.214</td>
<td>742–743</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16</td>
<td>Nahl</td>
<td>125</td>
<td>ُالْحَكِيمَةِ وَالْمُوْظَّفَةِ</td>
<td>wisdom and counsel</td>
<td>1.92</td>
<td>246–247</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Surah number</td>
<td>Surah name</td>
<td>Verse number</td>
<td>Verse text</td>
<td>Verse translation</td>
<td>Text number</td>
<td>Page number</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>-------------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16</td>
<td>Nahl</td>
<td>90</td>
<td>إِنَّ اللَّهَ يَأْمُرُ بِالْعَدْلِ وَالإِحسَانِ</td>
<td>God commands justice and goodness</td>
<td>3.216</td>
<td>742–743</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16</td>
<td>Nahl</td>
<td>128</td>
<td>إِنَّ اللَّهَ مَعَ الَّذِينَ أَطَأُوا وَالذِينَ هُمْ مُنْسُونُ</td>
<td>God is with those who are pious and do good.</td>
<td>1.191</td>
<td>460–461</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17</td>
<td>Isrāʾ</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>لَتَيْهِي أُمُومٌ</td>
<td>the path that is straight-est</td>
<td>1.145.3</td>
<td>332–333</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17</td>
<td>Isrāʾ</td>
<td>61</td>
<td>أَجَدُواْ آَلَّادِمَ فَسَجَدُواْ إِلَّا أَبِيَسْ</td>
<td>prostrate before Adam, and they all prostrated except Iblis</td>
<td>1.1.5</td>
<td>110–111</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18</td>
<td>Kahf</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>أَيْمَ أَحْسَن عِمْلاً</td>
<td>who among them performs the best deeds</td>
<td>1.142.1</td>
<td>328–329</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18</td>
<td>Kahf</td>
<td>45</td>
<td>كَمَا أَزَزَاهُمْ مِنَ السَّمَاءِ فَمَخْلَطَنَّ بِنِيَاتٍ الْأَرْضِ فَأَصْحَبَهُمْ عِينُبُو</td>
<td>like water that we sent down from the sky: the earth's vegetation drew from it, then became dry straw, and was scattered by the winds. God has power over all things</td>
<td>1.108.1</td>
<td>268–269</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20</td>
<td>Tāhā</td>
<td>16, 116</td>
<td>أَجَدُواْ آَلَّادِمَ فَسَجَدُواْ إِلَّا أَبِيَسْ</td>
<td>prostrate before Adam, and they all prostrated except Iblis</td>
<td>1.1.5</td>
<td>110–111</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20</td>
<td>Tāhā</td>
<td>61</td>
<td>حَبْنَا مِنْ أَلْقَآئِ</td>
<td>those who lie will fail</td>
<td>1.16</td>
<td>132–133</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20</td>
<td>Tāhā</td>
<td>132</td>
<td>وَأَمْرَهُمْ بِالصَّلَاةِ وَاصْطُرِرْ عَلَيْهِ</td>
<td>command your family to pray, and adhere to it yourself</td>
<td>1.197</td>
<td>476–477</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21</td>
<td>Anbiyāʾ</td>
<td>26–27</td>
<td>بِثَلَجِهِدٍ مُكْرُومٍ لَا يَسِيقُونَهُ بِالْقُولِ وَهُمْ يَأْخُرُونُ</td>
<td>Rather, they are his honored servants, they speak when he has spoken, and act on his command.</td>
<td>1.88.6</td>
<td>232–233</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Surah number</td>
<td>Surah name</td>
<td>Verse number</td>
<td>Verse text</td>
<td>Verse translation</td>
<td>Text number</td>
<td>Page number</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>-------------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21</td>
<td>Anbiyā'</td>
<td>101</td>
<td>ىَنْسُحْلٱْمُهَلْتَقَبَسَنيِذَّلٱ</td>
<td>those for whom blessings have been decreed</td>
<td>1.50</td>
<td>172–173</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21</td>
<td>Anbiyā'</td>
<td>104</td>
<td>ُهُديِعُّنٍقْلَخَلَّوَأآَنْأَدَباَمَك</td>
<td>As I brought the first creation into being, so I shall bring it forth anew—this is my pledge, and I shall bring it to pass.</td>
<td>1.108.3</td>
<td>282–283</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22</td>
<td>Hajj</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>خُسْرُ الدِّينَانِ وَالآخِرَةُ ذَلِكُ هَوَى الخَسَرانِ، أَلَا يُنَفِّضُونَ</td>
<td>having lost this world and the hereafter—that is the most catastrophic loss!</td>
<td>3.327</td>
<td>784–785</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22</td>
<td>Hajj</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>سَوَاءَ الْعَاكِفِ فِيهِ وَالْمُبَادَأةِ</td>
<td>its resident and the foreigner are equal</td>
<td>2.67</td>
<td>664–665</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22</td>
<td>Hajj</td>
<td>64</td>
<td>هُوَ الدِّينُ أَحْلَدُ ْنَعْمَلُ مِنْ طَيْنٍ</td>
<td>He is rich and praised</td>
<td>1.181.3</td>
<td>416–417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23</td>
<td>Mu’minūn</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>مِنْ سَلَةَ مِنْ طَيْنٍ َلاَّ أَنْقْصَبُ الْمَعْلُوَّنَ</td>
<td>an extraction of clay</td>
<td>1.161.2</td>
<td>370–371</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23</td>
<td>Mu’minūn</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>إِنَّ ذَلِكَ لَآيَاتٍ وَإِنَّا لِلْمُتَّقِينِ</td>
<td>Truly there are signs in that, truly we shall put you to the test.</td>
<td>1.190.3</td>
<td>260–261</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23</td>
<td>Mu’minūn</td>
<td>55</td>
<td>أَجَسَدُ أَنَّا مَتَّهَمْهُ بِمِنْ مَالٍ وَبَيْنِ نَصْرَعٍ فِيهِمْ فِي الخَيْرَاتِ بَلْ لَا يُشَعْرُونَ</td>
<td>Do they think we supply them with wealth and sons in order to increase their comforts? No indeed, they have no idea!</td>
<td>1.190.4</td>
<td>444–445</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24</td>
<td>Nūr</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>أَلاَّ يَجْعَلُونَ أَنْ يُغَفِّرِ اللَّهُ لَنْكَ</td>
<td>Do you not wish that God should forgive you?</td>
<td>2.23</td>
<td>552–553</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24</td>
<td>Nūr</td>
<td>37</td>
<td>رَجُلٌ لَا تَلْهِيْهِ جَرَاهُ وَلَا يَعِنَّ يُزَرِّعُ اللَّهُ وَفَقَامُ الصَّلَاةَ وَأَيْتَاءَ الزَّكَاةَ</td>
<td>men whom neither trade nor commerce divert from remembering God, from performing the prayer, or submitting the alms-levy</td>
<td>1.197</td>
<td>476–477</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Surah number</td>
<td>Surah name</td>
<td>Verse number</td>
<td>Verse text</td>
<td>Verse translation</td>
<td>Text number</td>
<td>Page number</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>-------------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24</td>
<td>Nūr</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>up upon the deep ocean</td>
<td>Truly, God is powerful over all things.</td>
<td>3.354.2</td>
<td>796–797</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24</td>
<td>Nūr</td>
<td>45</td>
<td>Truly, God is powerful over all things.</td>
<td></td>
<td>1.190.12</td>
<td>458–459</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26</td>
<td>Shu'arā'</td>
<td>97–98</td>
<td>By God, we were clearly misguided when we equated you with the Lord of the worlds!</td>
<td></td>
<td>1.88.3</td>
<td>230–231</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26</td>
<td>Shu'arā'</td>
<td>157</td>
<td>They slaughtered the mare, and in the morning, they had cause to regret.</td>
<td></td>
<td>1.199</td>
<td>478–479</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28</td>
<td>Qaṣaṣ</td>
<td>5</td>
<td>We intend to bless those rendered weak on earth with abundant favors.</td>
<td></td>
<td>3.193</td>
<td>738–739</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28</td>
<td>Qaṣaṣ</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>My Lord, I am in dire need of whatever you may bestow!</td>
<td></td>
<td>1.158.3</td>
<td>362–363</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28</td>
<td>Qaṣaṣ</td>
<td>83</td>
<td>We shall reserve the hereafter for those who do not seek to exalt themselves on the earth or spread corruption. The good end is for the god-fearing</td>
<td></td>
<td>1.3.4</td>
<td>120–121</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>29</td>
<td>'Ankabūt</td>
<td>1–2</td>
<td>Alif Lām Mim. Do people think they can claim, “we believe,” without being tested?</td>
<td></td>
<td>1.154.4</td>
<td>354–355</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>29</td>
<td>'Ankabūt</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>Truly, God is powerful over all things.</td>
<td></td>
<td>1.190.12</td>
<td>458–459</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Surah number</td>
<td>Surah name</td>
<td>Verse number</td>
<td>Verse text</td>
<td>Verse translation</td>
<td>Text number</td>
<td>Page number</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>-------------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>31</td>
<td>Luqmân</td>
<td>34</td>
<td>إن الله عنده عَلَى السَّاعَةِ وَيَنَزَّلُ الْعَيْبَةَ وَيَعْلَمُ مَا في الأَرْحَامِ وَمَا تَدري نفس مَاذا تَكَبَّسْ عَدَى وَمَا تَدْرَي نفس بأَيْ أَرْضٍ تَمْوتُ إِن الله علم خِيرٍ</td>
<td>God has knowledge of the coming hour, he sends down rain, and knows what is in wombs. No man knows what he will earn tomorrow, and no man knows the land in which he will die, but God is all-knowing, all-aware.</td>
<td>1.126</td>
<td>308–309</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>33</td>
<td>Aḥzāb</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>وأُولو الأرحام بعضهم أولي بعض في كَابِ اللَّهِ</td>
<td>Those who are from the same womb have more claim upon each other according to God’s Book.</td>
<td>2.28.2</td>
<td>566–567</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>33</td>
<td>Aḥzāb</td>
<td>72</td>
<td>الإنسان فإن كان ظلوماً جهولاً</td>
<td>the human, for he was a tyrant, an ignoramus.</td>
<td>1.197</td>
<td>476–477</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>34</td>
<td>Sabaʾ</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>وَقَيلَ مِن عَبَءِي الشَّكُورُ</td>
<td>few among my servants are truly grateful</td>
<td>1.189</td>
<td>436–437</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>34</td>
<td>Sabaʾ</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>وَهُمْ أَكْثَرُ مَنْ أُولِي الْوَرْثَةِ وَمَا تَعْمَدُونَ بَعْضَيْنِ</td>
<td>We have more wealth and more children; we shall never have to endure suffering.</td>
<td>1.190.7</td>
<td>450–451</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35</td>
<td>Fāṭir</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>أَوْلِي جَهَةٍ</td>
<td>with sets of wings</td>
<td>1.88.6</td>
<td>232–233</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35</td>
<td>Fāṭir</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>إِن الله عَلَى كُلِّ شَايُهٍ قَدِيرٌ</td>
<td>Truly, God is powerful over all things.</td>
<td>1.190.12</td>
<td>458–459</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35</td>
<td>Fāṭir</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>فَأَنَّى تُؤْفَكُونَ</td>
<td>How are you deluded?</td>
<td>1.80.13, 1.84.2, 1.105.2</td>
<td>212–213, 220–221, 270–271</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Surah number</td>
<td>Surah name</td>
<td>Verse number</td>
<td>Verse text</td>
<td>Verse translation</td>
<td>Text number</td>
<td>Page number</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>-------------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35</td>
<td>Fāṭir</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>ْمِهْيَلَعَكُسْفَنْبَهْذَتاَلَف</td>
<td>Do not grieve over their actions, for God knows all that they do!</td>
<td>1.160</td>
<td>368–369</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35</td>
<td>Fāṭir</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>لَوْلاَ يُنْبِكُ مِثْلَ خَيْرٍ</td>
<td>No one informs you as well as one who is fully aware</td>
<td>1.151.2</td>
<td>346–347</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>38</td>
<td>Ṣād</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>وَلاَتَ حِينَ مَنَاصِرٍ</td>
<td>and it is too late to escape!</td>
<td>1.189</td>
<td>438–439, 2.41</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>38</td>
<td>Ṣād</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>وَلَاءُ الرَّسُولُ وَمَا بَيْنَهُم بِأَطَالًا</td>
<td>and the earth in vain. That is the claim of those who do not believe—woe and hellfire to unbelievers!</td>
<td>3.70</td>
<td>394–395</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>38</td>
<td>Ṣād</td>
<td>71–74</td>
<td>إِنِّي خَالِقُ بَشْرٍ مِن طَينٍ</td>
<td>I shall create a human out of clay; when I have fashioned him in good proportion and breathed into him my spirit, bow before him in prostration. The angels prostrated, every one of them, except Iblīs</td>
<td>1.190.1</td>
<td>440–441</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>38</td>
<td>Ṣād</td>
<td>80–81</td>
<td>إِنَّكَ مِنَ النَّظَرِينِ إِلَى يَوْمِ أُلْتِمُشَاتِ الدُّلْوَاعِ</td>
<td>You have been placed among those who have been granted respite until the day of destiny</td>
<td>1.1.5</td>
<td>110–111</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>38</td>
<td>Ṣād</td>
<td>88</td>
<td>وَتَعَلَّمُونَ بَعْدَ حِينٍ</td>
<td>You shall surely learn the truth of its report, but only after a while.</td>
<td>1.68</td>
<td>192–193</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>39</td>
<td>Zumar</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>يَنْثَبُ فِي الْأَرْضِ</td>
<td>flow out in streams</td>
<td>1.164.2</td>
<td>380–381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Surah number</td>
<td>Surah name</td>
<td>Verse number</td>
<td>Verse text</td>
<td>Verse translation</td>
<td>Text number</td>
<td>Page number</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>-------------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>39</td>
<td>Zumar</td>
<td>73</td>
<td>ىَلِإْمُهَّبَراْوَقَّتاَنيذلاَقِسَو</td>
<td>Those who were conscious of their Lord will be led in groups into paradise</td>
<td>1.188</td>
<td>434–435</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40</td>
<td>Ghāfir</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>دَعَوْنِي أَسْتَجِبْ لَكُرَ</td>
<td>Pray to me and I will answer.</td>
<td>3.124</td>
<td>718–719</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40</td>
<td>Ghāfir</td>
<td>62</td>
<td>فَأَيْنَ تَفْقُونَ</td>
<td>How are you deluded?</td>
<td>1.80.13</td>
<td>212–213,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1.84.2</td>
<td>220–221,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1.105.2</td>
<td>270–271</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40</td>
<td>Ghāfir</td>
<td>78</td>
<td>وَخَسِرَ هُمُّ الْمَطْلُونَ</td>
<td>There shall the falsifiers lose everything.</td>
<td>2.3</td>
<td>534–535</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>41</td>
<td>Fuṣṣilat</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>قَالُوا مِنْ أَشْدَادُ نَفْوَة</td>
<td>who said: is anyone mightier than we are?</td>
<td>1.108.3</td>
<td>280–281</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>41</td>
<td>Fuṣṣilat</td>
<td>30</td>
<td>إِنَّ الَّذِينَ قَالُوا رَبَّنَا الْحَلِيمُ</td>
<td>As for those who proclaim that Our Lord is God, and then remain upright, angels come to them, saying, do not fear and do not grieve, but rejoice, for paradise, as promised, is yours!</td>
<td>1.174.4</td>
<td>396–397</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>44</td>
<td>Dukhān</td>
<td>29</td>
<td>فَبَكُّوا عَلَى الْسَّمَاةِ وَالْأَرْضِ وَمَا كَانُوا مُنْتَظِرِينَ</td>
<td>Then, neither the sky nor the earth weeps over them, and they are not granted a reprieve.</td>
<td>1.189</td>
<td>438–439</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>47</td>
<td>Muḥam-mad</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>إِنْ تَصَرُّوا اللَّهُ يَنْصُرَ كُرَ</td>
<td>If you help God, he will help you and give you a firm foothold.</td>
<td>1.181.3</td>
<td>416–417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>47</td>
<td>Muḥam-mad</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>وَأَتَمُّ الْعَالَمَانَ وَاللَّهُ مَعَكُرَ</td>
<td>You shall overcome. God is with you, and he will not let your deeds go to waste</td>
<td>1.63</td>
<td>188–189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Surah number</td>
<td>Surah name</td>
<td>Verse number</td>
<td>Verse text</td>
<td>Verse translation</td>
<td>Text number</td>
<td>Page number</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>-------------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>48</td>
<td>Fath</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>جَوَّد الْسَمَاءَاتِ والأَرْضَ</td>
<td>the legions of the skies and the earth</td>
<td>1.181.3</td>
<td>416–417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>48</td>
<td>Fath</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>وَكَانُوا أَحْقَ بِهَا أَوْلَاهَا</td>
<td>and they were worthy of it and deserving</td>
<td>1.188</td>
<td>434–435</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50</td>
<td>Qāf</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>كُلّ نَاسٍ مِّعَنَا سَائِلٌ وشَهِيدٌ</td>
<td>Each soul is accompanied by its driver and its witness</td>
<td>1.82.2</td>
<td>214–217</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>57</td>
<td>Ḥadīd</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>مِنَ الَّذِي يُفْرَضُ اللٰهُ فِرْضًا حَسَناً فِيَاعْطَهُ لَهُ وَلِه جَرِيرٌ كَرِيمٌ</td>
<td>Who will offer God a beautiful loan of deeds, that he may multiply it for him, and give him a generous recompense?</td>
<td>1.181.3</td>
<td>416–417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>57</td>
<td>Ḥadīd</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>ذَلِكَ فَضَّلَ اللٰهُ عِنْدَهُم مَّن يَتَأَتَّؤُوّلَلَل هَيَّةَ اللٰهُ مَنْ يَفْطَرُ</td>
<td>That is God's bounty, which he bestows on whom he wills—great is God's bounty!</td>
<td>1.181.3</td>
<td>416–417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>57</td>
<td>Ḥadīd</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>لَا تَبَكَّرُوا بِمَا آتَيْكُمْ وَلَا تَفْرَخُوا بِمَا أَنتَكُرُ</td>
<td>Do not weep over what you have lost, and do not exult over what you have gained.</td>
<td>3.409</td>
<td>812–813</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>58</td>
<td>Mujādalah</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>أَلَيْكَ حَزُبُ الشِّيَطانِ أَلَا إِنَّ حَزُبَ الشِّيَطانِ هُمَّ الخاسِرونَ</td>
<td>These are Satan's faction. Hark! Satan's faction are losers.</td>
<td>1.192</td>
<td>466–467</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>61</td>
<td>Ṣaff</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>كَبِيرٌ مُثَانٌ عِنْدَ اللٰهِ أَنْ تَقْولُوا مَا لاَ تَعْلَمُونَ</td>
<td>God deems it a great outrage when you say what you do not do.</td>
<td>2.53.21</td>
<td>644–645</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>62</td>
<td>Jumʿah</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>ذَلِكَ فَضَّلَ اللٰهُ عِنْدَهُم مَّن يَتَأَتَّؤُوّلَلَل هَيَّةَ اللٰهُ مَنْ يَفْطَرُ</td>
<td>That is God's bounty, which he bestows on whom he wills—great is God's bounty!</td>
<td>1.181.3</td>
<td>416–417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Surah number</td>
<td>Surah name</td>
<td>Verse number</td>
<td>Verse text</td>
<td>Verse translation</td>
<td>Text number</td>
<td>Page number</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>-------------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>63</td>
<td>Munāfiqūn</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>جَوَّازَنَ السَّمَائَاتِ</td>
<td>the treasures of the skies and the earth</td>
<td>1.181.3</td>
<td>416–417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>65</td>
<td>Ṭalāq</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>مَن يَتَّبَعُ اللَّهَ يَجْعَلُ لهُ مُجَرَّا</td>
<td>God shows the God-conscious a way out</td>
<td>1.181.3</td>
<td>414–415</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>65</td>
<td>Ṭalāq</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>جَلَّلَ اللَّهُ لِكَيْ شَيْءًا فَقُرِّوا</td>
<td>God has appointed for each thing a measure</td>
<td>1.181.1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>66</td>
<td>Tahrim</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>يَكُنِّي عَلَى كُلِّ شَيْءٍ قَدِيرٍ</td>
<td>You are powerful over all things</td>
<td>1.88, 1.222</td>
<td>242–243, 514–515</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>71</td>
<td>Nūḥ</td>
<td>10–12</td>
<td>أَسْتَفْرَأُوا وَإِنَّ كَانَ غَفَارًا يُرْسِلُ السَّمَاءَ عَلَيْكُمْ</td>
<td>Ask your Lord for forgiveness, for he is ever forgiving—he will make the sky pour rain and provide you with wealth and children.</td>
<td>1.141.1</td>
<td>326–327</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>74</td>
<td>Mud-daththir</td>
<td>38</td>
<td>كُلُّ نَفْسٍ مَا كَسْبَتْهَا رَيْهَةٌ</td>
<td>Every soul is mortgaged to what it has earned</td>
<td>3.327</td>
<td>784–785</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>74</td>
<td>Mud-daththir</td>
<td>42–43</td>
<td>مَا سَلَكَوْا فِي سَرْقَةِ نَفْسٍ لَّكُمْ مِنَ المُصْلِينَ</td>
<td>What led you into the Fire? and they answered, We were not among those who prayed</td>
<td>1.197</td>
<td>476–477</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>77</td>
<td>Mursalāt</td>
<td>21–22</td>
<td>فِي قَرَارٍ مُكْيَنٍ إِلَى قَدْرٍ مَفْوَعٍ</td>
<td>a safe abode for a known term</td>
<td>1.161.2</td>
<td>370–371</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>79</td>
<td>Nāziʿāt</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>إِنِّي فِي ذَلِكَ لِعَبْرَةٍ لِنَبِيِّي</td>
<td>There is a lesson here for all who venerate God.</td>
<td>1.209</td>
<td>490–491</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>81</td>
<td>Takwir</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>فَأَيْنَ نَذَهَبُونَ</td>
<td>So where do you go?</td>
<td>1.84.2</td>
<td>220–221</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>82</td>
<td>Infiṭār</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>يَأَيُّهَا الْإِنسَانُ مَا غَرِّكَ بِرِيكَ النَّجْمِ</td>
<td>O human, what has deceived you into neglecting your Generous Lord?</td>
<td>1.220</td>
<td>408–409</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Surah number</td>
<td>Surah name</td>
<td>Verse number</td>
<td>Verse text</td>
<td>Verse translation</td>
<td>Text number</td>
<td>Page number</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>-------------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>102</td>
<td>Takâthur</td>
<td>1–2</td>
<td>ىَّتَحُرُثاَكَّتلاُمُكاَهْلَأَمْلاِكَمْلا</td>
<td>You are obsessed with gathering more and more until you visit your graves</td>
<td>1.218</td>
<td>500-501</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Qur’an (references and modified quotes)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Surah Number</th>
<th>Surah Name</th>
<th>Verse Number</th>
<th>Text Number</th>
<th>Page Number</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Baqarah</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>1.181.3</td>
<td>417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Baqarah</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>1.188.9</td>
<td>239</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Baqarah</td>
<td>88</td>
<td>2.64</td>
<td>661</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Baqarah</td>
<td>125</td>
<td>1.190.5</td>
<td>449</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Baqarah</td>
<td>143</td>
<td>1.125</td>
<td>397</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Baqarah</td>
<td>156</td>
<td>1.27</td>
<td>147</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Baqarah</td>
<td>163</td>
<td>2.31.9</td>
<td>581</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Baqarah</td>
<td>189</td>
<td>1.152.2</td>
<td>349</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Baqarah</td>
<td>224</td>
<td>2.69</td>
<td>667</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Baqarah</td>
<td>231</td>
<td>3.212</td>
<td>743</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Baqarah</td>
<td>237</td>
<td>3.435</td>
<td>821</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Baqarah</td>
<td>255</td>
<td>1.158.1</td>
<td>361</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Baqarah</td>
<td>264</td>
<td>2.53.21</td>
<td>645</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>Baqarah</td>
<td>265</td>
<td>1.131.1</td>
<td>315</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Āl ’Imrān</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>1.196.2</td>
<td>473</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Āl ’Imrān</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>1.88.11</td>
<td>243</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Āl ’Imrān</td>
<td>103</td>
<td>2.31.3</td>
<td>575</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Āl ’Imrān</td>
<td>134</td>
<td>2.69</td>
<td>667</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Āl ’Imrān</td>
<td>139</td>
<td>1.164.3</td>
<td>381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Āl ’Imrān</td>
<td>169</td>
<td>1.84.2</td>
<td>221</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>Āl ’Imrān</td>
<td>173</td>
<td>1.181.3</td>
<td>419</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Nisā’</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>3.406</td>
<td>813</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Nisā’</td>
<td>69</td>
<td>1.181.3</td>
<td>417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Nisā’</td>
<td>97</td>
<td>1.187</td>
<td>433</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Nisā’</td>
<td>88</td>
<td>2.45.4</td>
<td>615, 653</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>Mā’idah</td>
<td>110</td>
<td>3.406</td>
<td>719</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>Mā’idah</td>
<td>164</td>
<td>1.180.3</td>
<td>499</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>Mā’idah</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1.83.3</td>
<td>217, 473</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>Mā’idah</td>
<td>19</td>
<td>1.149.1</td>
<td>341</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>An’ām</td>
<td>27–31</td>
<td>1.190.2</td>
<td>443</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>An’ām</td>
<td>57</td>
<td>1.94.3</td>
<td>251</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Surah Number</td>
<td>Surah Name</td>
<td>Verse Number</td>
<td>Text Number</td>
<td>Page Number</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>Anʿām</td>
<td>160</td>
<td>3.296</td>
<td>775</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>Arāf</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>2.44</td>
<td>609</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>Arāf</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>1.27</td>
<td>147</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>Arāf</td>
<td>46–49</td>
<td>1.150.2</td>
<td>347</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>Arāf</td>
<td>130</td>
<td>1.141.2</td>
<td>327</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>Arāf</td>
<td>155</td>
<td>1.141.2</td>
<td>327</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>Arāf</td>
<td>157</td>
<td>1.151.2</td>
<td>347</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>Anfāl</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>1.190.2</td>
<td>443</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>Tawbah</td>
<td>10–12</td>
<td>3.141</td>
<td>727</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>Tawbah</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>3.354.1</td>
<td>795</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>Tawbah</td>
<td>52</td>
<td>1.23</td>
<td>133</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>Tawbah</td>
<td>59</td>
<td>2.53.24</td>
<td>647</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>Tawbah</td>
<td>60</td>
<td>2.26.2</td>
<td>559</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>Hüd</td>
<td>70</td>
<td>1.4</td>
<td>125</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12</td>
<td>Yūsuf</td>
<td>53</td>
<td>1.84.1,</td>
<td>219, 395</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1.174.1</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13</td>
<td>Raʿd</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>1.183.4</td>
<td>423</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14</td>
<td>Ibrāhīm</td>
<td>7</td>
<td>1.155,</td>
<td>355, 813</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>3.406</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14</td>
<td>Ibrāhīm</td>
<td>37</td>
<td>1.190.5</td>
<td>449</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15</td>
<td>Hijr</td>
<td>17–18</td>
<td>1.88.6</td>
<td>233</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15</td>
<td>Hijr</td>
<td>88</td>
<td>1.190.4</td>
<td>445</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15</td>
<td>Hijr</td>
<td>94</td>
<td>1.228</td>
<td>521</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16</td>
<td>Nahl</td>
<td>51</td>
<td>2.31.9</td>
<td>581</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16</td>
<td>Nahl</td>
<td>89</td>
<td>1.83.3</td>
<td>217</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17</td>
<td>Isrāʿ</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>1.88.5</td>
<td>233</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17</td>
<td>Isrāʿ</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>2.46</td>
<td>617</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17</td>
<td>Isrāʿ</td>
<td>34</td>
<td>2.74</td>
<td>673</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17</td>
<td>Isrāʿ</td>
<td>64</td>
<td>1.190.2</td>
<td>441</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18</td>
<td>Kahf</td>
<td>45</td>
<td>1.17</td>
<td>135</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19</td>
<td>Maryam</td>
<td>59</td>
<td>1.23</td>
<td>141</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20</td>
<td>Tāhā</td>
<td>39</td>
<td>1.196.2</td>
<td>473</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20</td>
<td>Tāhā</td>
<td>67</td>
<td>1.4</td>
<td>125</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21</td>
<td>Anbiyāʾ</td>
<td>102</td>
<td>1.181.3</td>
<td>415</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22</td>
<td>Hajj</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>1.131.1</td>
<td>315</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22</td>
<td>Hajj</td>
<td>36</td>
<td>2.53.14</td>
<td>639</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23</td>
<td>Muʿminūn</td>
<td>77</td>
<td>3.350</td>
<td>793</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23</td>
<td>Muʿminūn</td>
<td>99–100</td>
<td>1.181.3</td>
<td>417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23</td>
<td>Muʿminūn</td>
<td>115</td>
<td>1.61.1,</td>
<td>185, 217,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1.83.3,</td>
<td>793</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>3.351</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24</td>
<td>Nūr</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>1.197</td>
<td>477</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25</td>
<td>Furqān</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>3.170</td>
<td>731</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25</td>
<td>Furqān</td>
<td>38</td>
<td>1.180.4</td>
<td>411</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Surah Number</td>
<td>Surah Name</td>
<td>Verse Number</td>
<td>Text Number</td>
<td>Page Number</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>------------</td>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26</td>
<td>Shuʿarāʾ</td>
<td>84</td>
<td>1.23</td>
<td>141</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28</td>
<td>Qaṣaṣ</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1.190.4</td>
<td>445</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>29</td>
<td>‘Ankabūt</td>
<td>41</td>
<td>1.17</td>
<td>133</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30</td>
<td>Rūm</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>3.350</td>
<td>793</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>32</td>
<td>Sajdah</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>2.41</td>
<td>607</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>33</td>
<td>Ahzāb</td>
<td>45</td>
<td>1.102.1</td>
<td>263</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>33</td>
<td>Ahzāb</td>
<td>58</td>
<td>1.72</td>
<td>199</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>33</td>
<td>Ahzāb</td>
<td>67</td>
<td>1.190.3</td>
<td>445</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>34</td>
<td>Sabaʿ</td>
<td>15–16</td>
<td>1.164.2</td>
<td>381</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>34</td>
<td>Sabaʿ</td>
<td>52</td>
<td>1.218.1</td>
<td>503</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35</td>
<td>Fāṭir</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>1.180.2</td>
<td>499</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35</td>
<td>Fāṭir</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>3.133</td>
<td>721</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35</td>
<td>Fāṭir</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>1.181.3</td>
<td>407</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>36</td>
<td>Yāsīn</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>1.23</td>
<td>139</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>36</td>
<td>Yāsīn</td>
<td>89</td>
<td>1.131.1</td>
<td>315</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>37</td>
<td>Šāfāt</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>1.88.6</td>
<td>233</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>42</td>
<td>Shūrā</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>1.23</td>
<td>141</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>42</td>
<td>Shūrā</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>1.148.3</td>
<td>339</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>42</td>
<td>Shūrā</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>1.112</td>
<td>289</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>43</td>
<td>Zukhruf</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>1.46</td>
<td>171</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>44</td>
<td>Dukhān</td>
<td>10</td>
<td>1.88.5</td>
<td>233</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>45</td>
<td>Jāthiyah</td>
<td>9</td>
<td>3.212</td>
<td>743</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>48</td>
<td>Fāṭh</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>2.58</td>
<td>653</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>49</td>
<td>Ḥujurāt</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>1.72</td>
<td>199</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>49</td>
<td>Ḥujurāt</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>1.154.4</td>
<td>355</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50</td>
<td>Qāf</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>1.180.4</td>
<td>411</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50</td>
<td>Qāf</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>1.181.3</td>
<td>417</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>55</td>
<td>Raḥmān</td>
<td>41</td>
<td>1.158.1</td>
<td>361</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>56</td>
<td>Wāqīʿah</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>1.102.1</td>
<td>263</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>56</td>
<td>Wāqīʿah</td>
<td>93–94</td>
<td>1.80.12</td>
<td>213</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>62</td>
<td>Jumʿah</td>
<td>6–7</td>
<td>2.69</td>
<td>667</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>62</td>
<td>Jumʿah</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>1.147</td>
<td>337</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>64</td>
<td>Taḥābun</td>
<td>15</td>
<td>3.277</td>
<td>773</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>66</td>
<td>Taḥrīm</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>1.69, 195, 243</td>
<td>1.88.11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>67</td>
<td>Mulk</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>2.45.4</td>
<td>615</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>68</td>
<td>Qalam</td>
<td>42</td>
<td>1.149.3</td>
<td>343</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>73</td>
<td>Muzzammil</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>2.28.2</td>
<td>567</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>75</td>
<td>Qiyaṃmah</td>
<td>36</td>
<td>1.61.1, 185, 217, 1.83.3, 793</td>
<td>3.351</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>78</td>
<td>Nabaʿ</td>
<td>18</td>
<td>1.193</td>
<td>469</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>81</td>
<td>Takwīr</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1.193</td>
<td>469</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>81</td>
<td>Takwīr</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>1.190.10</td>
<td>453</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Index of Qurʾan, Hadith, Poetry, and Proverbs

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Surah Number</th>
<th>Surah Name</th>
<th>Verse Number</th>
<th>Text Number</th>
<th>Page Number</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>82</td>
<td>Infiṭār</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>1.223</td>
<td>517</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>82</td>
<td>Infiṭār</td>
<td>10–11</td>
<td>1.181.3</td>
<td>415</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>83</td>
<td>Muṭaffifūn</td>
<td>14</td>
<td>2.10</td>
<td>541, 653</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>85</td>
<td>Burūj</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>1.87</td>
<td>225</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>93</td>
<td>Dūḥā</td>
<td>11</td>
<td>2.28.2,</td>
<td>565, 667</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>2.69</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>111</td>
<td>Masad</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>2.28.2</td>
<td>567</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>112</td>
<td>Ikhlāṣ</td>
<td>1</td>
<td>2.31.9</td>
<td>581</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>112</td>
<td>Ikhlāṣ</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>1.180.2,</td>
<td>409</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>1.184.2</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Hadith (direct quotes)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text</th>
<th>Translation</th>
<th>Text number</th>
<th>Page number</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>إِنَّ اللَّهَ يَحْبُبُ الْعَبْدَ وَيَحْبُبْ عَمْلَهُ وَيَحْبُبْ الْعَمَلَ وَيَغْفِرْ بَدْنَهُ.</td>
<td>When one of us dies, he is not dead. When his body disintegrates in the ground, it has not disintegrated.</td>
<td>1.152.2</td>
<td>348–349</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>إِنَّ أَمَاتِي سَيَفْتُونَ مِنْ بَعْدِي إِنَّ الْقُومَ سَيَفْتُونَ بِأَمَامِهِمْ وَيُدْعَوْنَ بِعِينَهُمْ عَلَى رَبِّهِمْ وَيَطْلُبُونَ رَحْمَتَهُ وَيَأْمُونَ سَفُطُهُ وَيَتَسْحَلُّونَ حَرَامَهُ بِالْشَّهَابَةِ وَأَهْلَهُ السَّاهِمَةَ فِيَتَسْلَحُونَ الخَمْرَ بِالْبَيْدَ فَيَسْحَتْ بَيْدَهُ وَالرِّبَا بَالْبَيْدَ.</td>
<td>God can love a servant and yet hate his deeds or love his deeds and yet hate his being.</td>
<td>1.154.4</td>
<td>354–355</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>غَيْبَيْهِ عَيْنُي فَإِذَا نَظَرْتَ إِلَيْهِ ذَكَرْتَ الْدِّينَا وَزَخَارِفَهَا.</td>
<td>My community will be thrown into turmoil when I die. ... people will be tested with regard to wealth—thinking their support of Islam a favor to their Lord, they will feel entitled to his mercy and believe themselves secure against his punishment. By raising false suspicions and wayward passions, they will legalize the things he has forbidden—they will drink wine, calling it date juice, take bribes, calling it gift-giving, and practice usury, calling it trade.</td>
<td>1.158.4</td>
<td>362–363</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>رَفُّهُ إِلَى مَيِّتِي إِذَا نَظَرْتَ إِلَيْهِ ذَكَرْتَ الْدِّينَا وَزَخَارِفَهَا.</td>
<td>Remove it from my sight—it reminds me of the world and its ornaments!</td>
<td>1.158.4</td>
<td>362–363</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text</td>
<td>Translation</td>
<td>Text number</td>
<td>Page number</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-------------------------------------------</td>
<td>--------------------------------------------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>يؤمن يوم القيامة بالإمام الجائر وليس معه نصير ولا عاذر فلقي في جهيم فيدور فيها كما ندور الرحي ثم يربط في قفرها.</td>
<td>On the day of resurrection, the unjust leader will be brought for judgment, and he will not have a single person to help him or speak on his behalf. He will be thrown into the Pit of Gehenna and spin there like a millstone, then he will be tethered in its lowest point.</td>
<td>1.162.2</td>
<td>372–373</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>إن الجنّة حجبت بالمكاره وإن النار حجبت بالشهوات.</td>
<td>Paradise is veiled by torments, while the Fire is surrounded by delights.</td>
<td>1.174.1</td>
<td>394–395</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>لا يستند إيمان عبد حتى يستند قلبه ولا يستند قلبه حتى يستند لهان.</td>
<td>A person’s belief is right only when his heart is right, and his heart is right only when his tongue is righteous.</td>
<td>1.174.5</td>
<td>398–399</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>يا ابن آدم أعمل الخير ودع الشر فإذا أنت جواد قاصد.</td>
<td>Son of Adam, do good and avoid evil, and you will race ahead like a thoroughbred.</td>
<td>1.174.7</td>
<td>398–399</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>هذا الشيطان قد أَسَى من عبادته إنّك تسمع ما أسمع وترى ما أرى إلا أنك لست بني وإنك لو زور وإنك لعل خير.</td>
<td>This is Satan, who now despairs of being worshipped. You see what I see and hear what I hear, ‘Alī, though you are not a prophet, but my vizier, and on the path of virtue.</td>
<td>1.190.12</td>
<td>458–459</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>من كذهب على متعمدًا فليلبأ مقعده من النار.</td>
<td>Whoever deliberately misattributes something to me will take possession of a seat in hellfire.</td>
<td>1.208</td>
<td>486–487</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>إياً لا أخف على أمتي مؤمنًا ولا مشركًا أَمَّا المؤمن فيمنعه الله بإمكاه وأَمَّا المشرك في يجعله الله شرًا وكليّ أُخَذ علىكم كل منافق الجنان عالم اللسان يقول ما تعرفون وي فعل ما تكون.</td>
<td>I do not fear harm for my community from either believer or unbeliever. As for the believer, God holds him back because of his belief. As for the unbeliever, God thwarts him because of his unbelief. I fear harm for you from every man whose heart harbors hypocrisy while his tongue spouts knowledge, who says what you know to be good, but does what you know is evil.</td>
<td>2.27.5</td>
<td>562–563</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>صالح ذات البين أفضل من عامّة الصلاة والصيام.</td>
<td>To reconcile with kin is even better than to pray and to fast.</td>
<td>2.47.1</td>
<td>616–617</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
(cont.)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text (Qur’ān)</th>
<th>Translation</th>
<th>Text number</th>
<th>Page number</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>لن تَفْدِسْ أَمَّةٌ لَا يُؤْخُذُ لِلضَّعِيفِ فِيْهَا حَقَّهَا مِنَ القُوِيِّ غير مَتَمَعَّرٍ</td>
<td>A nation in which the weak are not given justice against the strong except by anxiously stammering will never be made holy.</td>
<td>2.53.14</td>
<td>640–641</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>صَلِّ بِهِمْ كِسَالَة أَضْعَفْهُمْ وَكُنْ بِالمُؤْمِنِينَ رَحِيمًا.</td>
<td>Pray the prayer of the weakest among them—show compassion to all believers.</td>
<td>2.53.16</td>
<td>640–641</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>غَيْرَوا الْشَّيْبِ وَلَا نَشْبَوا بَالْهِبْدَ.</td>
<td>Dye your white hair and don't emulate the Jews.</td>
<td>3.13</td>
<td>682–683</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>لا يَبِغْضَكَ مَوْمَنٌ وَلَا يُحَبَّكَ مَن أَفَاقٌ.</td>
<td>No believer will hate you, and no hypocrite will love you.</td>
<td>3.38</td>
<td>690–691</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>لا طَائِعَةٌ لِخَلْقٍ فِي مَعَصِيَّةِ الْخَالِقِ.</td>
<td>Do not obey humans if it means you will disobey God.</td>
<td>3.149</td>
<td>726–727</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>الآنَ حَمَيَّ الزَّوْلِيَس.</td>
<td>Now the furnace burns.</td>
<td>3.253</td>
<td>748–759</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Hadith (references)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text (Hadith)</th>
<th>Translation</th>
<th>Text number</th>
<th>Page number</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>الإمَامَةُ فِي الْقَرْيَةِ.</td>
<td>The Imamate is vested in Quraysh.</td>
<td>142.1</td>
<td>329</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>أنا مِنْ دِينِ الْعَلَمِ وَلِيْ بِابِهَا.</td>
<td>I am the city of knowledge and 'Ali is its gateway.</td>
<td>1.152.2</td>
<td>349</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>سَقَاءَلَ بَعْدِ النَّاكِئِينَ وَالقَاسِطِينَ والْمَارِقِينَ</td>
<td>You will battle the pledge-breakers, the wrongdoers, and the faith-leavers after me.</td>
<td>1.190.11</td>
<td>457</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>لا طَائِعَةٌ لِخَلْقٍ فِي مَعَصِيَّةِ الْخَالِقِ.</td>
<td>Do not obey humans if it means you will disobey God.</td>
<td>2.33</td>
<td>598</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text</td>
<td>Translation</td>
<td>Poet</td>
<td>Text number</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------------------------------------------------------------------</td>
<td>-----------------------------------------------------------------------------</td>
<td>-------------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>These are my ancestors, Jarīr, bring on yours!</td>
<td>Who will be your boast in our gatherings?</td>
<td>Farazdaq</td>
<td>0.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>O how different my days today, always in the saddle,</td>
<td>and the days spent in the company of Jābir’s brother, Ḥayyān!</td>
<td>A’shā</td>
<td>1.3.2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>By the life of your virtuous father, I swear</td>
<td>My pot has nothing but smudges of fat.</td>
<td>anonymous</td>
<td>1.25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>When you call out</td>
<td>Their men rush to you</td>
<td>Abū Jundub</td>
<td>1.25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I gave you my considered opinion</td>
<td>At the place of the winding sands</td>
<td>Durayd ibn al-Śimmah</td>
<td>1.35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Emaciated camels</td>
<td>fodderless in the night when they kneel down to rest,</td>
<td>Dhū al-Rummah</td>
<td>1.112</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>forget about the looting that caused screams in the neighborhood</td>
<td>that is a disease whose shame is external to you</td>
<td>Imru’ al-Qays</td>
<td>1.160</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>when morning comes, the night-traveler will be praised.</td>
<td>forget about the looting that caused screams in the neighborhood</td>
<td>Jumayḥ ibn al-Sharid al-Taghlibi</td>
<td>1.158.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>forget about the looting that caused screams in the neighborhood</td>
<td>forget about the looting that caused screams in the neighborhood</td>
<td>Imru’ al-Qays</td>
<td>1.160</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>that is a disease whose shame is external to you</td>
<td>That is a disease whose shame is external to you</td>
<td>Abū Dh'u'ayb</td>
<td>2.28.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text</td>
<td>Translation</td>
<td>Poet</td>
<td>Text number</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>وَقَدْ بَشَّرَتْ الْقَلْبِهَا المَتَمَحَّ</td>
<td>Sometimes, the only benefit a well-wisher derives is suspicion</td>
<td>anonymous</td>
<td>2.28.4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>لَيْتْ فَقْيلًا لَتَحْيَهُ الْفِيحَا حَسَل</td>
<td>Wait just a little</td>
<td>Hamal ibn Badr</td>
<td>2.28.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>فَإِنّي نَشُأْتُ كَيْفَ أَنْتُ فَأْنَيّ</td>
<td>If you asked, “How do you fare?”</td>
<td>‘Abbās ibn Mirdās al-Sulāmī</td>
<td>2.36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>يَضُرُّ عَلَيْكَ ۣ أَنْ تُرِي بَيْنَ كَيْسَة</td>
<td>I would answer:</td>
<td>Ḥamal</td>
<td>2.28.5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Qَيْزَمْتَ عَيْدًا أوَّيْسَاء حِيْبَ</td>
<td>I am patient and I am strong in the face of fate’s attacks.</td>
<td>‘Abbās ibn Mirdās al-Sulāmī</td>
<td>2.36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bِيْلَصِنْمَّزلا بِبْىَرَى عُرُبَص</td>
<td>I do not allow myself to show distress,</td>
<td>Ḥātim al-Tā’ī</td>
<td>2.45.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bِيْبَحُءا سُيْوَأ دَعَتْمْشَيَف</td>
<td>Lest my enemy gloat, and my friend grieve.</td>
<td>Ḥātim al-Tā’ī</td>
<td>2.45.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>﴿وَحُسْبَنِ دَائِنَآ أَنْ تَشْفَنْ بَيْطَنَةً ﴾</td>
<td>How sick you are! You sleep with a full belly</td>
<td>Ḥātim al-Tā’ī</td>
<td>2.45.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>﴿وَحُوالِكَ أَحْيَادْ تَحْنَى إِلَى الْقَدْ ﴾</td>
<td>Surrounded by hearts yearning for a mouthful of dry hide.</td>
<td>Ḥātim al-Tā’ī</td>
<td>2.45.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>﴿مُسَتْقَّلِينَ رَبَّانِ رَمَّاهُ تَضْرُّبُهُمْ ﴾</td>
<td>They advance into the burning winds of high summer</td>
<td>Bishr ibn Abī Khāzīm al-Asadī</td>
<td>2.64</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>﴿فَإِنْ كَتَبَ الْيَلِّعُ مَلِكَتْ أُمَرَّهُمْ ﴾</td>
<td>As they enter the lowlands it blows dust, and pebbles, and rocks in their faces.</td>
<td>Bishr ibn Abī Khāzīm al-Asadī</td>
<td>2.64</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>﴿وَإِنْ كَتَبَ بِلَقَنِي جَحَّتْ خَصِيفُهُمْ ﴾</td>
<td></td>
<td>Ḥātim al-Tā’ī</td>
<td>2.45.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>﴿فَمَرَكَّ أَوْلَى بِالْيَلِّعِ وَأَقَرِبَ ﴾</td>
<td></td>
<td>Ḥātim al-Tā’ī</td>
<td>2.45.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>﴿مَعَ يُعْلِعُ الجَدَّ الْقُلْبُهَا الَّذِى ﴾</td>
<td></td>
<td>Ḥātim al-Tā’ī</td>
<td>2.45.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>﴿جَبَّ صِبْعَ الْيَلِّعِ المَأْتِرَ ﴾</td>
<td></td>
<td>Ḥātim al-Tā’ī</td>
<td>2.45.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>﴿مَشَّ الْقُلْبُهَا إِذَا مَا طَمّا ﴾</td>
<td></td>
<td>Ḥātim al-Tā’ī</td>
<td>2.45.3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>﴿يَمَدُّ فَيَبُوُصُصُصُ وَلَمَّا ﴾</td>
<td></td>
<td>Ḥātim al-Tā’ī</td>
<td>2.45.3</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Proverbs (direct quotes)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text</th>
<th>Translation</th>
<th>Poet</th>
<th>Text number</th>
<th>Page number</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>بعد الدنيا والتي لا كان يطاع قصير أمر</td>
<td>after the small calamity and the large one</td>
<td>anonymous</td>
<td>1.5</td>
<td>125</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>متفرّقين أيادي سيا they will disperse like the hands of Sabā</td>
<td>O if only Qaṣīr’s command had been obeyed!</td>
<td>anonymous</td>
<td>1.35</td>
<td>161</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ناقش الشروكة بالشروع a person who extracts a thorn with a thorn</td>
<td>they will disperse like the hands of Sabā</td>
<td>anonymous</td>
<td>1.94.1</td>
<td>249</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>حامل ضبي</td>
<td>he carries a spiny-tailed lizard</td>
<td>anonymous</td>
<td>1.118</td>
<td>297</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>الرائد لا يكذب أهله The scout does not lie to his people.</td>
<td>more hidden than the mating of a crow</td>
<td>anonymous</td>
<td>1.153.1</td>
<td>349</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>أخفى من سفاد الغراب  آئر الداء الكبي لا تعمّر لهم قاّة ولا تفرّع لهم صفاء</td>
<td>their spear became hard, their rock uncrushable.</td>
<td>anonymous</td>
<td>1.163.2</td>
<td>377</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>كافقل التمر إلى جمر like the man who carried dates to sell in Hajar</td>
<td>Their spear became hard, their rock uncrushable.</td>
<td>anonymous</td>
<td>1.166</td>
<td>385</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>حن قدح ليس منها An arrow has whirred that does not belong to the quiver!</td>
<td>Cauterizing is the last resort!</td>
<td>anonymous</td>
<td>1.190.10</td>
<td>455</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>من مالك يهزم إليه Để one whose arrows pursued an animal that veered to one side</td>
<td>Cauterizing is the last resort!</td>
<td>anonymous</td>
<td>2.28.1</td>
<td>563</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>إيائك وما يعتذر منه Beware of an action you must justify!</td>
<td>Cauterizing is the last resort!</td>
<td>anonymous</td>
<td>2.28.2</td>
<td>565</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>كلا ولا Like no and no</td>
<td>Cauterizing is the last resort!</td>
<td>anonymous</td>
<td>2.33</td>
<td>597</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Index of Qurʾan, Hadith, Poetry, and Proverbs (cont.)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Text</th>
<th>Translation</th>
<th>Poet</th>
<th>Text number</th>
<th>Page number</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ﮔ ﮝ ﯣ ﯤ ﮗ ﯣ ﯤ ﮝ When I saw a successful man who was victorious</td>
<td>anonymous</td>
<td>3.252</td>
<td>758–759</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Text</td>
<td>Translation</td>
<td>Text number</td>
<td>Page number</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------------------------</td>
<td>-------------------------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>٢٤١ ٦٠٥</td>
<td>Turned the face of his shield</td>
<td>2.41</td>
<td>605</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>٣١٨٦ ٧٣٧</td>
<td>The two sons of 'inān have made their run.</td>
<td>3.186</td>
<td>737</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(continues)
This index lists a large selection of ethical and religious concepts from the Arabic text of *Nahj al-Balāghah* (only substantives are listed, not verbs, and the sequence is based on root letters). For names, places, and a wider range of terms, please see the English indexes. You can also search the online version of this volume digitally.

1 From 'Ali's texts only, not Raḍī's introduction.

خيانة 814، 1782، 2242
الأخلاق، 1106، 276، 284، 2114، 4466، 382، 572, 582، 436

خلاطة 680

خلاف، خلافة 386، 1260، 160، 142، 4134
1738، 1706، 664، 636، 572، 480، 436

خليفة 744

خلاق، خلاق 492، 1456، 1450، 1398، 2222، 1728
1724، 1708، 688، 636، 634، 574، 1510
808، 1802

خُمس 764

خوف، خاف 234، 2224، 218، 2028، 156، 1154
1392، 1360، 1358، 284، 278، 250، 1244
1462، 1452، 1428، 1422، 1412، 406، 404
1560，1548، 1542، 1538، 1510، 502، 488
758، 1706، 686، 650، 614، 612، 602

خائف 722، 1346، 1342، 1332، 1326، 1154

خيرية 682، 240، 138

خير 240، 220، 194، 168، 152، 142، 140، 132
1278، 1266، 1262، 1260، 1248، 246، 1242
1364، 1362، 1324، 1306، 1296، 1286، 284
1552، 1546، 1534، 1492، 1458، 400، 390
1628، 1594، 1590، 1584، 1576، 1574، 1566
1698، 1692، 1682، 1670، 1648، 1638، 1636
1742، 1730، 1726، 1720، 1714، 1704، 702
820، 1812، 1796، 1794، 1790، 770، 746

وسَرِّ 1382، 1336، 1308، 1282، 1212، 1144، 116
586، 1560، 1548، 1516، 1464، 1450، 398
808، 800، 686، 596، 588

استغارة 576

خيرات 702، 684، 444، 344، 326
348، 440، 416، 408، 392، 378، 368، 358
780
القرص

جزيرة

عوقولاريثك

نهاكم 726

706

704

702

700

698

696

694

692

690

688

686

684

682

680

678

676

674

672

670

668

666

664

662

660

658

656

654

652

650

648

646

644

642

640

638

636

634

632

630

628

626

624

622

620

618

616

614

612

610

608

606

604

602

596

592

586

582

576

570

564

558

552

546

540

534

528

522

516

510

504

502

496

490

484

478

472

466

460

454

448

442

436

430

424

418

412

400

392

384

376

368

360

354

340

330

320

312

304

296

288

280

276

270

264

260

240

232

224

216

208

200

192

184

176

168

160

152

144

136

128

120

112

104

96

88

80

72

64

56

48

40

32

24

16

8

0

00

01

02

03

04

05

06

07

08

09

10

11

12

13

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

26

27

28

29

30

31

32

33

34

35

36

37

38

39

40

41

42

43

44

45

46

47

48

49

50

51

52

53

54

55

56

57

58

59

60

61

62

63

64

65

66

67

68

69

70

71

72

73

74

75

76

77

78

79

80

81

82

83

84

85

86

87

88

89

90

91

92
مصادقة 688
ضرم 588
صفح 624 1576
صلاح، استصلاح 710، 1706، 1670، 1634، 624
ذات البين 616
صلاة 456، 476، 432، 266، 202، 192
746، 718، 702، 1640، 622، 616، 1564
مصلّ 716
صلوات 448، 194
صلاة، تواصل، انظر "صمت 830، 1586، 526، 464، 1348، 248، 1730، 782، 1740
أعمال 452، 230، 144
صلاة صواب 784، 762، 1746، 636، 582، 462
718، 1616، 448، 296، 276، 202
صوم، صيام 808، 1746، 1720
وفقية 176
ضغون، أضاغان، ضاغان 544، 1530
ضلال، ضلال، ضالة، ضلال 5134، 1332، 124، 1112
304، 4270، 1288، 1230، 1178، 1162، 1448
406، 396، 344، 1340، 1334، 1332، 1322
502، 498، 492، 488، 482، 472، 1444
1656، 612، 600، 578، 574، 536، 1516
760، 1730، 1686، 662
إطراط 546
طعن 536، 1530، 450، 442، 404، 1300، 186
356
صوقد، مشتاق 722، 684، 462، 1378
شيء، تغيير لن 822، 682، 262
شيء 1118، 1338، 298، 284، 264، 238، 202، 198، 1354
1452، 1430، 1416، 1396، 1392، 1390، 1354
592، 574، 524، 482، 478، 464، 462
710، 1698، 1692، 684، 678، 644، 626
804، 1770، 1738، 1730، 1720
صبار، صبور 1642، 1600، 1478، 1464، 1300
782، 1724
صحبة، صحّة 800، 748، 1584، 1274
وسقط 416، 1208
صحبة، صحّة، صحّ 178، 170، 156، 142، 1120
1306، 1304، 1280، 1250، 1248، 1244، 1218
1366، 1362، 1336، 1334، 1332، 1316، 1314
1556، 1532، 1486، 1482، 1460، 1404، 1398
1666، 1664، 1652، 1622، 1620، 1592، 1570
1794، 1788، 1786، 1762، 1756، 1748، 1706
822
صدق 4212، 1208، 178، 466، 140، 1122
452، 404، 1356، 1326، 302، 250
748، 1716، 1690، 686، 640، 634، 628
782
وكذب 816، 1642، 574، 486، 270
1626، 460، 446، 358، 264، 106
1712، 1650
صدق 1376، 1348، 1334، 1226، 1218، 1150
550، 536، 510، 500، 498، 394
1678، 1558، 1554، 1512، 278
764، 1750، 1720، 1718، 1704
صدق، صدقات 724، 740، 1718، 1592، 1588، 1580
772
فهرس المفاهيم الدينية والأخلاقية

1005

علم، علوم (cont.) 722, 720, 710, 706, 702
794, 799, 784, 768, 766, 750, 736
822, 810

عالم، علماء 798, 796
160, 134, 123, 120, 116, 110, 108
1312, 1302, 1269, 1258, 1220, 1190, 1186
474, 462, 456, 448, 446, 440, 342
1706, 1664, 1648, 1628, 1562, 1522, 1490
794, 778, 770
368, 336, 308
1578, 1576, 1436, 1308, 1200, 1158
1158
694

علياء، علو 816, 578
686, 228

عم 816
202, 120, 110, 100, 98, 96, 94, 92, 90, 88, 86, 84, 82, 80, 78, 76, 74, 72, 70, 68, 66, 64, 62, 60, 58, 56, 54, 52, 50, 48, 46, 44, 42, 40, 38, 36, 34, 32, 30, 28, 26, 24, 22, 20, 18, 16, 14, 12, 10, 8, 6, 4, 2, 0

عمَلُ، عَمَّلَ 816
686

عَمَلَ 816
686, 228

عمَّلَ 816
686, 228

عمَّلَ 816
686, 228

عمَّلَ 816
686, 228

عمَّلَ 816
686, 228

عمَّلَ 816
686, 228

عمَّلَ 816
686, 228

عمَّلَ 816
686, 228

عمَّلَ 816
686, 228

عمَّلَ 816
686, 228

عمَّلَ 816
686, 228
ÍNDICE DE CONCEPTOS RELIGIOSOS Y ÉTICOS, ÁRABE
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
<th>Religious and Ethical Concepts</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>702</td>
<td>تواضع، متواضع</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>702</td>
<td>وعذ، عذة</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>706</td>
<td>1396، 336، 4288، 4554، 4666، 4466، 1258، 2236، 236</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>710</td>
<td>تلقى، أتيت، تلقى</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>714</td>
<td>تلقى، أتيت، تلقى</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>752</td>
<td>يسوع الدين، المؤمنين</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>778</td>
<td>يسوع الدين، المؤمنين</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>792</td>
<td>سمعة الصدر</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>804</td>
<td>804، 722، 1716، 1654، 1628، 1516</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>810</td>
<td>810، 1804، 1788، 1722، 1716، 1654، 1628، 1516</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>824</td>
<td>824، 738، 738، 738، 738</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Nahj al-Balāghah, the celebrated compendium of orations, letters, and sayings of ‘Ali ibn Abī Ṭalib (d. 40/661) compiled by al-Shārīf al-Rādī (d. 406/1015), is a masterpiece of Arabic literature and Islamic wisdom studied and memorized avidly and continually for over a thousand years. Showcasing ‘Ali’s life and travails in his own words, it also transcribes his profound reflections on piety and virtue, and on just and compassionate governance. Tahera Qutbuddin’s meticulously researched critical edition based on the earliest 5th/11th-century manuscripts, with a lucid, annotated facing-page translation, brings to the modern reader the power and beauty of this influential text, and confirms the aptness of Rādī’s title, “The Way of Eloquence.”

Tahera Qutbuddin, Ph.D. (1999), Harvard University, is AllBabtain Laudian Professor of Arabic at the University of Oxford. Author of the award-winning Arabic Oration: Art and Function (Brill, 2019), she has published widely on Islamic preaching, Muhammad’s hadith, ‘Ali’s sermons, Fatimid poetry, Tayyibi Bohra literature, and Arabic in India.

“‘Below the speech of the Creator but above the speech of created beings’—this is how commentator Ibn Abī al-Hādīd (d. ca. 1258) famously described Nahj al-Balāghah, recognizing this collection as the pinnacle of eloquence in the Arabic language. Tahera Qutbuddin presents in this volume a painstaking new edition of this monument of Arabic literature, based on the oldest and most reliable manuscripts and thorough consideration of the commentarial tradition. Her brilliant translation is faithful to the original text, precise, and elegant, capturing the force of pithy aphorisms, the cadence of Arabic oratory, and contemplative reflection on the trials and tribulations of human experience, the ethical quandaries of social and political life, and the wonders of the natural world.”

– Devin J. Stewart, Samuel Candler Dobbs Professor of Arabic and Middle Eastern Studies, and Chair of the Department of Middle Eastern and South Asian Studies, Emory University